

W O M E N
A N D W A R

W O M E N
A N D W A R

*A Historical Encyclopedia
from Antiquity to the Present*

V O L U M E O N E

B E R N A R D A . C O O K , E D I T O R

A B C  C L I O
Santa Barbara, California Denver, Colorado Oxford, England

Copyright © 2006 by ABC-CLIO

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, or otherwise, except for the inclusion of brief quotations in a review, without prior permission in writing from the publishers.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data is available from the Library of Congress.
ISBN 1-85109-770-8 1-85109-775-9 (e-book)

10 09 08 07 06 10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

This book is also available on the World Wide Web as an eBook.
Visit abc-clio.com for details.

ABC-CLIO, Inc.
130 Cremona Drive, P.O. Box 1911
Santa Barbara, California 93116-1911

The acquisitions editor for this title was Alicia Merritt, the project editor was Carla Roberts, the media editor was Ellen Rasmussen, the media manager was Caroline Price, the editorial assistant was Alicia Martinez, the production manager was Don Schmidt, and the manufacturing coordinator was George Smyser.

This book is printed on acid-free paper (∞).
Manufactured in the United States of America

*To my children, Bernie and Jennifer;
their spouses, Jen and Bora;
and my grandchildren, Lucy and Emmett*

CONTENTS

Foreword, Judith Lawrence Bellafaire, xxvii

Acknowledgments, xxix

Introduction, Bernard A. Cook, xxxi

Topic Finder, xxxix

V O L U M E O N E

A

Addams, Jane (1860–1935), 1

Afghanistan, 2

Agustina de Aragón (née Agustina Zaragoza y Domenech) (1786–1857), 4

AIDS, War and the Spread of, 6

Aishah (Aisha) (ca. 614–648), 7

Alexandra, Czarina of Russia (1872–1918), 8

Algeria, Women in the War of National Liberation, 9

Allen, Eliza (b. 1826), 11

Amazons, 12

American Revolution, Role of Women in the, 13

Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth Century, 15

Anderson, Louisa Garrett (1873–1943), 18

Arab-Israeli Wars, 19

CONTENTS

- Argentina, Dirty War against Civilians, 22
Argentina, Mothers of the Plaza de Mayo, 24
Armenian Holocaust, 26
Armenian Women Victims of Genocide, 29
Artemisia of Caria, 31
Ashwari, Hanan (1946–), 32
Ashwell, Lena Margaret Pocock (1872–1957), 33
Atkins, Vera H. (1908–2000), 34
Aubrac, Lucie (b. 1912), 35
Australia, Women in Service during World War II, 36
Australian Army Nursing Service (AANS)/Royal Australian Army Nursing
Corps (RAANC), 37
Avenger Field, 38
“Axis Sally” (Mildred Elizabeth Gillars) (1901–1988), 39
Azurduy de Padilla, Juana (1781–1862), 40

B

- Baader-Meinhof Gang, 43
Baez, Joan Chandos (1941–), 44
Bagot, Lady Theodosia (1865–1940), 46
Bailey, Anne Trotter (ca. 1742–1825), 46
Baissac, Lise de (1905–2004), 48
Baker, E. H. (Mrs.) (n.d.), 48
Balch, Emily Green (1867–1961), 49
Balkan Wars, 50
Ballestrem-Solf, Countess Lagi (ca. 1919–1955), 52
Barry, James Miranda (1795–1865), 53
Barton, Clara (1821–1912), 54
Baseden, Yvonne (1922–), 56
Baumgartner, Ann (b. 1918), 57

CONTENTS

- Beatty, Bessie (1886–1947), 58
- Beekman, Yolande (1911–1944), 59
- Belgium, Women during World War I, 60
- Bell, Gertrude Margaret Lowthian (1868–1926), 63
- Bennett, Agnes Elizabeth Lloyd (1872–1960), 63
- Bilien, Valentina (n.d.), 64
- Biological Warfare Experimentation, Japanese, 65
- Black, Catherine (b. 1883), 65
- Black Sash, 66
- Blackwell, Elizabeth (1821–1910), 67
- Blanche of Castile (1188–1252), 67
- Bochkareva, Maria (Mariya or Yasha) (b. 1889), 68
- Bonney, Therese (1894–1978), 70
- Borden, Mary (1886–1968), 71
- Borginis, Sarah (1812–1886), 72
- Borrel, Andrée (1919–1944), 73
- Boudicca, Queen of the Iceni (d. ca. 60–61), 74
- Bourke-White, Margaret (1904–1971), 76
- Bower, Ursula Graham (1914–1988), 76
- Boyd, Isabelle (Belle) (1843–1900), 77
- Brant, Mary (Molly) (ca. 1735–1796), 79
- Braun, Eva (1912–1945), 80
- Braunsteiner, Hermine (1920–1999), 81
- Bray, Linda (1960–), 82
- Brewer, Lucy (b. ca. 1793), 83
- Brion, H el ene (1882–1962), 84
- Brittain, Vera Mary (1893–1970), 85
- Brown, Mary-Agnes (1902–1998), 86
- Brown, Ruth Humphries (1920–), 87
- Bruskina, Masha (1924–1941), 88
- Bubley, Esther (1921–1998), 89

CONTENTS

- Buch, Eva Maria (1921–1943), 90
Bulgaria, Women and World War II, 90
 Bulgarian Horrors, 91
Bullwinkel, Vivian (1915–2000), 93
Bunke, Tamara (1937–1967), 95
Byck, Muriel (1918–1944), 95

C

- Campaign for Nuclear Disarmament (CND) and the Greenham
 Common Women, 97
Cannan, May Wedderburn (1893–1973), 98
Catt, Carrie Chapman (née Clinton Lane) (1859–1947), 99
 Cavell, Edith Louisa (1865–1915), 100
Chamberlain (Tamblin), Margaret Lenora (1918–), 102
Chapelle, Dickey (Georgia Lou Meyer, G. L. Meyer) (1919–1965), 102
 Chechnya, Impact on Women of Wars in, 103
 Cherokee War Woman, 107
China, Women and the Communist Revolution, 107
China, Women on the Home Front in World War II, 110
 China to 1911, Women Warriors in, 112
Chisholm, Mairi Lambert (1896–1981), 113
 Churchill, Jennie (1854–1921), 114
 Civil War, American, and Women, 115
 Civil War, American, Women Combatants during the, 118
Civil War, American, Women in the Medical Services in the, 120
 Clayton, Frances (n.d.), 122
Cleopatra VII, Queen of Egypt (69–30 B.C.), 123
Cochran, Jacqueline (ca. 1906–1980), 124
Colenso, Harriette (1847–1932), 125
Colombia, Women and Political Violence in, 126

CONTENTS

- Conquest, Joan, pseud. (Mary Eliza Louise Gripper Martin-Nicholson)
(1876–1941), 128
- Conscientious Objectors in the United States during World War II,
Women and, 128
- Corbin, Margaret Cochrane (1751–1800), 130
- Cormeau, Yvonne (1909–1988), 131
- Cornum, Rhonda (1955–), 131
- Craig, May (1889–1975), 132
- Crusades, Women and the, 133
- Cuban Revolution, Women in the, 134
- Curie, Maria Skłodowska (Madame Curie) (1867–1934) and the
Little Curies, 136
- Curtis, Cathrine (1918–1955), 137
- Cushman, Pauline (1833–1893), 138

D

- Dahomey, Women Warriors, 141
- Dalrymple, Mildred Inks Davidson (1920–), 143
- Damerment, Madeleine (1917–1944), 144
- Darragh, Lydia (1729–1789), 145
- Dawidson (Draenger), Justina (1917–1943), 146
- De Jongh, Andrée (Dédée) (1916–), 147
- De Pizan, Christine (1364–ca. 1430), 147
- Deavers, Bridget (b. 1839), 148
- Delano, Jane Arminda (1862–1919), 149
- Detzer, Dorothy (1893–1981), 150
- Devlin, Bernadette (1947–), 151
- Dietrich, Marlene (1901–1992), 152
- Dilling, Elizabeth (1894–1966), 153
- Dix, Dorothea (1802–1887), 154

CONTENTS

- Douglas-Pennant, Violet (1869–1945), 155
Dromgoole, Will Allen (1860–1934), 155
Durova, Nadezhda Andreyevna (1783–1866), 156
Duston, Hannah (1657–1736), 157

E

- Earley, Charity Adams (1918–2002), 159
East Timor, Abuse of Women during War, 160
Edmonds, Sarah Emma (1841–1898), 161
Einsatzgruppen (Special Action Groups), 162
El Salvador, Women and the Civil Strife in, 163
Eleanor of Aquitaine (ca. 1122–1204), 165
Emerson, Gloria (1929–), 166
Engel, Regula (1761–1853), 167
Eriksen, Vera (aka Vera de Cottani de Chalbur) (b. 1912), 168
Eritrea, Women and the Struggle for Independence of, 169
Eskimo Scouts, 170
Espín Guillois, Vilma (1930–), 171
Etheridge, Anna (1839 or 1844–1913), 172

F

- Fairchild, Helen (1884–1918), 175
Falklands War and Thatcher, Margaret (1925–), 176
Fallaci, Oriana (1930–), 177
Farmborough, Florence (1887–1980), 178
Farrell, Mairead (1957–1988), 179
Fawcett, Millicent (1847–1929), 180
Fedutenko, Nadezhda Nikiforovna (1915–1978), 181
Fernig, Félicité (1770–1841), and Fernig, Théophile (1775–1819), 183

CONTENTS

- Finland, Lotta Svärd, 184
- Finland, Women in the Winter War, 185
- First, Heloise Ruth (1925–1982), 186
- Fittko, Lisa (1909–2005), 187
- Fomicheva-Levashova, Klavdiia Iakovlevna (1917–1958), 188
- Fonda, Jane (1937–), 189
- Forced Labor, Nazi Germany, 191
- Fourcade, Marie-Madeleine (1900–1989), 191
- France, Resistance during World War II, Women and, 192
- France, Revolution of 1848, 195
- France, Wars of Religion, 197
- France, World War I, Psychological Impact on French Women, 199
- France, World War I, Women and the Home Front, 200
- France, World War II, Women and the Home Front , 204
- Frank, Anne (1929–1945), 206
- French Revolution (1789–1799), Impact of War on Women’s Protest
during the, 207
- Friang, Brigitte (1924–), 209
- Frontier Soldiers, U.S., Wives of, 209
- Fuld, Bracha (1926–1946), 211
- Fulton, Sarah Bradlee (1740–1835), 212
- Fulvia (d. 40 B.C.), 212
- Furse, Lady Katherine Symonds (1875–1952), 213

G

- Galla Placidia (ca. 390–450), 215
- Gandhi, Indira (1917–1984), 216
- Garibaldi, Anita (1821–1849), 218
- Gellhorn, Martha (1908–1998), 220
- Germany, Armed Forces (Wehrmacht), World War II Atrocities of, 221

CONTENTS

- Germany, Revolution of 1918–1919, Women in the, 222
- Germany, Women and the Home Front, World War I, 224
- Germany, Women and the Home Front, World War II, 227
 - Ghesquière, Virginie (ca. 1755–1854), 229
 - Gierczak, Emilia (1925–1945), 230
 - Goldstein, Vida (1869–1949), 231
 - Gonne, Maud (1865–1953), 232
- Grajales Cuello (also Coelho), Mariana (1808–1893), 233
- Granville, Christine, pseud. (Krystyna Skarbek Gizycki) (1915–1952), 233
- Great Britain, Women, Social Impact of World War I on, 235
 - Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I, 237
 - Great Britain, Women in Service during World War II, 241
- Great Britain, Women in Service in the Seventeenth, Eighteenth, and Early Nineteenth Centuries, 244
 - Great Britain, Women on the Home Front during World War II, 246
- Great Britain, Women’s Royal Naval Service (WRNS), Reorganization before World War II, 248
- Greece, Resistance during World War II, Women and, 249
- Greece, Women and Female Imagery in Greek Warfare, 251
 - Greek Civil War, Women in the, 253
 - Greek Revolution, Women and the, 255
 - Greek Women and War in Antiquity, 256
- Greene, Catharine Littlefield (Caty) (1755–1814), 258
 - Greenhow, Rose O’Neale (1814–1864), 259
 - Grese, Irma (1923–1945), 261
- Grizodubova, Valentina Stepanovna (1910–1993), 262
 - Grossman, Chaika (1919–1996), 263
- Guatemala, Civil Conflict and Women, 263
- Gulf War (1990–1991), Women and the, 266
 - Guljamal-Khan(um) (ca. 1836–1919), 267
- Gwynne-Vaughan, Helen (1879–1967), 268

CONTENTS

H

- Haas, Elena (1912/13–1945), 271
- Hall, Virginia (1906–1982), 271
- Hamilton, Cicely Marie (1872–1952), 273
- Harnack-Fish, Mildred (1902–1943), 275
- Hart, Nancy (1735–1830), 275
- Hart, Nancy (ca. 1841–ca. 1902), 276
- Haverfield, Evelina (1867–1920), 277
- Helen of Troy, 278
- Hello Girls, 279
- Herero of Namibia, Repression of the, 280
- Hernández Rodríguez del Rey, Melba (1921–), 281
- Higgins (Hall), Marguerite (1920–1966), 282
- Hiroshima, Nagasaki, and Women, 283
- Hirsch, Ilse (b. 1922), 284
- Hobby, Oveta Culp (1905–1995), 284
- Hobhouse, Emily (1860–1926), 286
- Hodges, Katherine (1888–1982), 288
- Hoge, Jane Currie Blaikie (1811–1890), 289
- Holocaust and Jewish Women, 290
- Hughan, Jessie Wallace (1875–1955), 292
- Hull, Peggy, pseud. (Deuell, Henrietta Eleanor Goodnough)
(1889–1967), 294
- Hutton, Lady Isabel Galloway (née Isabel Emslie) (1887–1960), 295

I

- Ibárruri, Dolores (La Pasionaria) (1895–1989), 297
- India to 1857, Women Warriors in, 298
- Inglis, Elsie (1864–1917), and the Scottish Women's Hospitals, 300

CONTENTS

- International Congress of Women: Antiwar Protest of Women in
World War I, 303
 - International Manifesto of Women (1915), 305
- Iran-Iraq War and Gulf War, Impact on Women of Iraq, 306
 - Ireland, Easter Rising of 1916, 310
 - Ireland, War of Independence, 312
- Islamic Resistance Movements, Women and, 314
 - Israeli Military, Women in the, 316
- Italy, Women in the Resistance during World War II, 318
- Italy, Women on the Home Front and in the Services during World War I, 321

J

- Japan, Women and the Home Front, World War II, 323
- Japan, Women Warriors in Ancient and Medieval Japan, 326
 - Japanese Interned in U.S. Camps, 327
 - Jehovah's Witnesses in Nazi Germany, 329
 - Jewish Women of Antiquity and War, 329
- Joan of Arc (Jeanne d'Arc) (ca. 1412–1431), 331
 - Johnson, Amy (1903–1941), 332
- Journalists, American Women, during World War I, 333
- Junge, Gertraud (Traudl) (1920–2002), 334

K

- Kashmir, Conflict in, Women and, 337
 - Kea, Salaria (1917–1990), 338
 - Kempner, Vitka (1920–), 339
- Khan, Noor Inayat (1914–1944), 340
 - King, Olive (1885–1958), 341
- Kirchner, Johanna (1899–1944), 342

CONTENTS

- Koch, Ilse (1906–1967), 342
Kollontai, Alexandra (1872–1952), 343
Kollwitz, Kathe (1867–1944), 344
Korczak, Rozka (1921–1988), 346
Korea: Comfort Women, 347
Korea, Women and the Home Front, World War II, 349
Korean War, American Women and the, 350
Korean War, Women and the, 353
Kuckhoff, Greta (1902–1981), 355
Kuczynski, Ursula (aka Werner, Ruth [Sonja]) (1907–2000), 355
Kufrin, Milka (1921–), 356
Kurmanjan-Datkha (ca. 1811–1907), 356

V O L U M E T W O

L

- “Lady Haw Haw” (Margaret Cairns Joyce) (1911–1972), 359
Lakshmi Bai (ca. 1830 –1858) and Sepoy Rebellion, 360
Landau, Emilia (1924–1943), 361
Lange, Dorothea (1895–1965), 362
Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements in, 364
Lawrence, Dorothy (b. 1896), 367
Lebanon, Women and the Fighting in, 367
Lebrón, Lolita (1919–), 369
Lederer, Edith (Edie), 370
Lee, Mary Anna Randolph Custis (1808–1873), 371
Lefort, Cecily (1903–1945), 372
Leigh, Vera (1903–1944), 373
Leroy, Catherine (1944–), 373

CONTENTS

- Leska-Daab, Anna (1921–), 374
- Lewandowska (née Dowbor-Musnicki), Jania (1908–1940), 375
- Lidice Massacre, 376
- Literature of World War II, U.S., Depiction of Women in, 377
- Litviak, Lidiia (Liliia) Vladimirovna (1921–), 379
- Livermore, Mary Ashton Rice (1820–1905), 380
- Locke, Elsie (1912–2001), 381
- Lowther, Barbara (Toupie) (b. 1890), 382
- Luce, Clare Boothe (1903–1987), 383
- Ludington, Sybil (1761–1839), 384
- Luxemburg, Rosa (1871–1919), 385

M

- Makarova, Tat'iana Petrovna (1920–1944), and Belik, Vera Luk'ianovna
(1921–1944), 387
- Malta, Women and Wars in, 388
- Mandela, Winnie (1936–), 390
- Marianne, 392
- Marie, Queen of Romania (1875–1938), 393
- Markievicz (née Gore-Booth), Countess Constance (1868–1927), 394
- Markovic, Mirjana (1941–), 395
- Martin, Grace (n.d.), and Martin, Rachel (n.d.), 396
- Mata Hari, pseud. (Margaretha Gertruida MacLeod, née Zelle)
(1876–1917), 397
- Matilda of Tuscany (1046–1114), 397
- Mau Mau Rebellion, Women in the, 398
- McCarthy, Emma Maud (1858–1949), 401
- McDougall, Grace Ashley-Smith (1889–1963), 402
- McDowell, Mary Stone (1876–1955), 402
- McGee, Anita Newcomb (1864–1940), 403

CONTENTS

- Mead, Lucia Ames (1856–1936), 404
- Medical Specialist Corps: U.S. Women in Military Service, World War II, 405
- Meir, Golda (née Golda Mabovitz) (1898–1978), 406
- Meiselas, Susan (1948–), 407
- Mercy Ship, 408
- Mexican American Women and World War II, 409
- Michel, Louise (1830–1905), 411
- Milosavljevic, Danica (1925–), 412
- Mitford, Unity (1914–1948), 413
- Molly Pitcher, 414
- Monte, Hilda, pseud. (aka Hilda Meisel) (1914–1945), 415
- Moon, Lottie (1829–1895), and Moon, Ginnie (1844–1925), 415
- Moore, Eleanor May (1875–1949), 416
- Moreau-Evrard, Emilienne (1898–1971), 417
- Morgan, Anne Tracy (1873–1952), 418
- Mowlam, Marjorie (Mo) (1949–2005), 419

N

- Nanking, Rape of, 421
- Napoleon's Marshals, Wives of, 422
- National Legion of Mothers of America (NLMA), 424
- Nearne, Jacqueline (1916–1982), 425
- Nicaragua, Women and War in, 426
- Niederkirchner, Käthe (Katja) (1909–1944), 428
- Nightingale, Florence (1820–1910), 428
- Nikulina, Anna Vladimirovna (b. 1904), 431
- Nirouet, Collette (1926–1944), 432
- Nongqawuse (1841–1898), 433
- Nonhelema (or Grenadier Squaw) (ca. 1720–1786), 434
- Norway, Resistance Movement during World War II, Women and, 435

CONTENTS

- Norway, Women and the Home Front during World War II, 436
Norway, Women's Collaboration during World War II German
Occupation of, 438
Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War I, 439
Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War II, 441

O

- Olmsted, Mildred Scott (1890–1990), 445
Olschanezky, Sonya (1923–1944), 446
Onions, Maude (b. 1885), 447
Oradour-sur-Glane Massacre, 447
Orczy, Baroness Emma (1865–1947), 448

P

- Pankhurst Family: Emmeline, Christabel, E. Sylvia, and Adela
Pankhurst Walsh, 451
Paris Commune, Women and the (1871), 454
Parrish, Marie O'Dean Bishop (Deanie) (1922–), 456
Pavliuchenko, Liudmila Mikhailovna (1916–1974), 457
Peace People Movement (Northern Ireland), 458
Peake, Felicity (1913–2002), 458
Peasants' War, 459
Peru: Shining Path, 460
Peruvian Truth and Reconciliation Commission: Women and
Political Violence, 462
Petacci, Clara (1912–1945), 463
Petit, Gabrielle (1893–1916), 464
Philippines, Women during the American Suppression of the Insurrection in, 464
Pilots of the IL-2 (1941–1945), 467

CONTENTS

- Plater, Emilia (1806–1831), 468
Plavsic, Biljana (1930–), 469
Plewman, Eliane (1917–1944), 470
Poland, Resistance during World War II, Women and, 471
Polish Auxiliary Air Force (PLSK), 473
Polish Independent Women’s Battalion, Emilia Plater (1943–1945), 474
Posters, U.S., Images of Women in World War II, 476

R

- Rape: Red Army in World War II, 479
Rape in War, 481
Raskova (née Malinina), Marina Mikhailovna (1912–1943), 483
Ravensbrück, 484
Red Army Faction, West Germany, Women of the, 485
Red Brigades, Italy, Women of the, 486
Red Cross of the United States: World War I and World War II, 487
Reed, Esther De Berdt (1746–1780), 489
Reik, Haviva (1914–1944), 490
Reitsch, Hanna (1912–1976), 491
Riedesel, Friederike Charlotte Luise von Massow von (1746 –1808), 492
Rolfe, Lilian (1914–1945), 493
Roman Women and War, 493
Roma/Sinti, 495
Roosevelt, Eleanor (1884–1962), 496
Rosenberg, Ethel (1915–1953), 497
Rosenstrasse and Intermarriage of Jews and German Gentiles, 498
Rosie the Riveter, 500
Ross, Ishobel (1890–1965), 501
Rowden, Diana (1915–1944), 502
Rudellat, Yvonne (1897–1945), 502

CONTENTS

- Russia, Women in the Armed Forces (1700–1917), 503
- Russia, Women Recipients of the Order of St. George (1808–1917), 504
- Russian Republic, Women in the Armed Forces (1991–), 505
 - Russian Revolution and Women, 506
- Rwanda: Women and the Genocide, 508

S

- Salomon, Charlotte (1917–1943), 513
 - Salvation Army in World War I, 514
- Samson (Sampson), Deborah (1760–1827), 514
- Sánchez Manduley, Celia (1922–1980), 515
 - Sandes, Flora (1876–1956), 516
- Sansom, Odette (1912–1995), 518
- Santamaría Cuadrado, Haydée (1922–1980), 519
 - Saumoneau, Louise (1875–1949), 520
- Schaft, Jeannette Joanna (Hannie) (1920–1945), 520
 - Schindler, Emilie (1907–2002), 521
 - Schmidt, Kitty (1882–1954), 522
 - Scholl, Sophie (1921–1943), 523
- Scholtz-Klink (née Treusch), Gertrud (b. 1902), 524
 - Schulze-Boysen, Libertas (1913–1942), 525
 - Schuyler, Philippa (1931–1967), 526
- Scotland: War Widows and Refugees in, 1640s and 1688–1690, 527
 - Secord (née Ingersoll), Laura (1775–1868), 529
 - Seele, Gertrud (1917–1945), 530
 - Semmer, Marcelle (1895–ca. 1944), 531
 - Senesh, Hannah (1921–1944), 531
- Sicilian Revolutions of 1820 and 1848, Women and the, 532
 - Smith, Winnie (1944–), 534
- Smyrna Tragedy, Continuing Ordeal for Women Survivors of the, 534

CONTENTS

- Snell, Hannah (1723–1792), 536
- Sophie, Duchess von Hohenberg (1868–1914), 536
- Sosnowska-Karpik, Irena (1922–1990), 537
- Souliè, Geneviève (b. 1919), 538
- Soviet Union, 46th Taman Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment
(May 1942–May 1945), 538
- Soviet Union, 125th M. M. Raskova Borisov Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment
(January 1943–May 1945), 539
- Soviet Union, Order of Glory, I Class, Soviet Women Recipients
(1943–1948), 541
- Soviet Union, Order of the Red Banner, Women Recipients (1918–1928), 542
- Soviet Union, Women and the Home Front during World War II, 543
- Soviet Union, Women in the Armed Forces (1917–1991), 544
- Soviet Union Air Defense, 586th Fighter Aviation Regiment, 549
- Soviet Union/Russian Federation, Women Heroes of the (1938–1995), 551
- Spanish Civil War, Women and the, 556
- Spanish-American War, Women and the, 558
- Spartan Women, 561
- Stark, Dame Freya (1893–1993), 562
- Stein, Edith (1891–1942), 563
- Stimson, Julia Catherine (1881–1948), 564
- Stobart, Mabel (1862–1954), 565
- Stowe, Harriet Beecher (1811–1896), 566
- Street, Jessie (1889–1970), 567
- Streeter, Ruth Cheney (1895–1990), 568
- Sudan, Women and the Civil War in, 569
- Summerskill, Edith Clara (1901–1980), and Women’s Home
Defence Corps, 571
- Suttner, Baroness Bertha Sophie Felicita von (1843–1914), 572
- Svobod, Maria (d. 1944), 573
- Szabo, Violette (1921–1945), 573

CONTENTS

T

- Tackaberry (Blake), Betty Guild (1920–), 577
- Talbot, Mary Anne (1778–1808), 578
- Tamar (1160–1213), 579
- Tamils, Women and the Conflict in Sri Lanka, 580
- Teodoroiu, Ecaterina (1894–1917), 581
- Terrorists, Women, 582
- Terwiel, Maria (1910–1943), 585
- Thadden, Elizabeth von (1890–1944), 585
- Thirty Years' War (1618–1648), 586
- Thurstan, Violetta (1879–1978), 587
- Tillion, Germaine (b. 1907), 587
- “Tokyo Rose” (Iva Ikuko Toguri d’Aquino) (1916–), 588
- Tomara, Sonia (1897–1982), 590
- Tower, Ellen May (1868–1899), 591
- Trauma and Brutalization Unleashed by World War I, 592
- Travers, Susan (1909–2003), 594
- Trotta, Liz, 595
- Trümmerfrauen (Rubble Women), 596
- T’Serclaes, Baroness Elizabeth de (née Shapter) (1884–1978), 597
- Tubman, Harriet (ca. 1820–1913), 599

U

- Ulster, Women during the Troubles in, 601
- United States, Home Front during World War I, 602
- United States, Home Front during World War II, 605
- United States, Marine Corps Women’s Reserve (MCWR), 609
- United States, Military Service of Women in World War II, 610
- United States, Navy Women’s Reserve (WAVES), 614

CONTENTS

- United States, Opposition to U.S. Entry into World War II by Right-Wing
American Women, 615
- United States, Women Airforce Service Pilots (WASP), 616
- United States, Women Reserves in the Coast Guard (known as SPARs), 618
- United States, Women's Army Auxiliary Corps (WAAC), 619
- United States, Women's Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron (WAFS), 620
- United States, Women's Flying Training Detachment (WFTD), 621

V

- Van Devanter (Buckley), Lynda (1947–2002), 623
- Van Kleeck, Mary (1883–1972), 624
- Van Lew, Elizabeth Louise (1818–1900), 625
- Viannay, Hélène (1917–), 626
- Vietnam, U.S. Women Soldiers in, 626
- Vietnam, Women in the Buddhist Peace Movement, 630
- Vietnam, Women in War and Resistance before 1954, 631
- Vivandières (also known as Cantinières) in the French Army, 632

W

- Wake, Nancy (1912–), 637
- Walker, Mary Edwards (1832–1919), 638
- Ward, Nancy (ca. 1738–ca. 1824), 639
- Washington, Marguerite Pat Beauchamp Waddell (b. 1900), 640
- Washington, Martha Dandridge Custis (1731–1802), 641
- Watts, Jean (1909–1968), 642
- Wertheimer, Martha (1890–1942), 643
- Wexford Rising, Women of, 644
- Whittle, Reba Zitella (1919–1981), 645
- Wilhelmina, Queen of the Netherlands (1880–1962), 646

CONTENTS

- Williams, Jody (1950–), 647
Winema (Tobey Riddle) (ca. 1848–1920), 648
Winnemucca, Sarah (ca. 1844–1891), 649
Witherington, Pearl (b. 1914), 650
Wohlauf, Vera, 651

Y

- Yorck von Wartenburg, Countess Marion (1904–), 653
Young Men's Christian Association (YMCA), World War I, 654
Yugoslavia, Mother and Bride Images of Militant Serbian Nationalism, 655
Yugoslavia, Women in the Military during World War II, 655
Yugoslavia, Women and the Wars That Accompanied the Disintegration
of Yugoslavia, 656

Z

- Zane, Elizabeth (Betty) (1766–1831), 663
Zenobia, Queen of Palmyra (d. after 274), 664

Acronyms, 665

Bibliography, 671

List of Contributors, 675

Index, 683

About the Editor, 741

FOREWORD

Much of history is shaped by warfare, and women's history is no exception. Across the centuries, noncombatant women have been victims of war, and their multitude of stories have left a sad and enduring legacy. Women's active participation in battle and direct contributions to defense, however, have traditionally been overlooked. Accomplished unofficially, undercover, in disguise, and, until recently, by legislatively limited numbers of participants, women's often obscure activities have been difficult to trace and research and thus have been ignored and forgotten. Within the past twenty years, as military and feminist historians have begun to look more carefully at women in uniform, it has become apparent that historically women have been propelled into ever-increasing military roles by national need.

Limited in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries to medical and supply-related functions that reflected their societal roles, women served in secret, nursed the wounded, or became involved in the production, collection, and dissemination of food, medicines, clothing, and equipment. Women moved into communications and clerical work at the turn of the century. By 1917, few men possessed these skills, so when the American Expeditionary Force in Europe discovered it needed telephone operators to route commands from headquarters to the front lines and efficient clerks to manage masses of records, the Army recruited women to work under contract. Meanwhile, Army and Navy nurses cared for soldiers and sailors at home and abroad, the influenza epidemic lending increased urgency and importance to their role.

During World War II, a general manpower shortage meant that the nation had to turn to women to serve in widely diverse jobs in both the civilian and military sectors. Servicewomen were assigned not only as nurses and administrators but also to jobs traditionally held by men and became mechanics, truck drivers, and air tower control operators. The function of need even superseded traditional concerns for military women's safety and placed Army nurses on the front lines in North Africa and Anzio and members of the Women's Army Corps in London during the German bombing.

Since then, paralleling women's wider roles in the economic and social sectors of society, servicewomen have entered into a continuously growing array of military occupations, from technical jobs to intelligence, law enforcement, logistics, command, and combat roles. The number of women serving in the Armed Forces has expanded rapidly; women now represent approximately 15 percent of the force. A consequence of this expansion is that women are now an essential part of the force, vital to the mission integrity of a majority of fighting units.

In the recently published memoir of her service in Iraq in 2003, Navy nurse Commander Cheryl Lynn Ruff explained why she wanted to serve with U.S. forces in Iraq: "These guys need us now." In this she speaks for women who served with and in the U.S. Armed Forces across time. Need was the reason that compelled Mary Ann Bickerdyke and Clara Barton to bring food and medicines to soldiers languishing in Army hospitals. Army nurses and female contract surgeons served at casualty clearing stations near

the front lines in France and Belgium during World War I because their skills were needed, and Army nurses arrived in North Africa with the invading troops and served under fire at Anzio so that wounded soldiers would receive the best possible medical care. The Navy assigned Lieutenant Commander Bernice Walters, MD, to the hospital ship *Consolation* off the coast of Korea because she was a highly skilled physician anesthetist. The Marine Corps sent Sergeant Barbara Dulinsky to Vietnam because they needed a trained documents manager in Saigon.

During every American war, women sacrificed their lives because they perceived a need and a duty. The roster of their names includes Revolutionary War heroine Jemima Warner, killed by enemy fire during the siege of Quebec, and Civil War Union soldier Rosetta Wakeman who died in disguise during the Louisiana Red River Campaign of 1864. Two Army nurses were among the first U.S. military personnel to die in World War I, and sixteen servicewomen were killed in action during World War II. Army nurse Lieutenant Sharon Lane was killed by an enemy mortar at Chu Lai, Vietnam. Air Force flight nurse Captain Mary Klinker died in the ill-fated Operation Babylift in 1975. As the proportion of women serving in the armed forces grew, so did the numbers of female casualties. Since the beginning of the war in Iraq in 2003, more servicewomen have died from enemy fire than in any past conflict.

Military women's service on the front lines under fire and amid primitive field conditions as well as their deaths in past wars have frequently been overlooked or discounted by military historians, and even some feminist historians, simply

because such service did not interest them. Military historians, immersed in battlefield tactics, paid scant attention to women and their activities, and feminist historians were disinclined to write about war. At the Women in Military Service for America Memorial Foundation, our mission is to collect, preserve, and disseminate women's contributions to the defense of the United States. The importance of our efforts was reinforced recently when some politicians questioned how close to the front lines we want our servicewomen assigned and how gender-integrated we want our armed forces to be. During a time when the full extent of women's military roles are being debated, it is essential that we as a nation possess a full and complete understanding of the roles that women have played during times of war throughout the history of the nation.

Historian Bernard Cook of Loyola University has undertaken and brought to fruition the mammoth task of coalescing women's travails during war and their contributions to defense throughout world history. He has included the well known as well as the obscure and missed very few. Readers will quickly realize that the overarching themes of serving because of need and forgotten service remain true no matter which country's history is being studied. This encyclopedia belongs on the reference shelf of every scholar of military history, women's studies, and modern civilizations. May it serve as a starting point for further research in a new and emerging historical field and an inspiration to scholars everywhere.

*Judith Lawrence Bellafaire,
Women in Military Service for America
Memorial Foundation*

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

To my wife, Rosemary, I must express my gratitude for her patience and advice. Her invaluable and tireless assistance proofreading has rendered the book more readable. My secretary, Vicki Horrobin, always demonstrated with this project as with others, cheerful support and extraordinary effort. Victoria McCardel, my student assistant, provided most helpful assistance keeping records, handling correspondence, and doing research. Patricia Doran, the Interlibrary Loan Coordinator at the Loyola University Library, offered her talent and assistance on this project, locating needed books and articles.

I am particularly grateful for the suggestions from many of the contributors to this encyclopedia, who have made it a more comprehensive work. Lee Ann Ghajar and Judith Bellafaire at the Women in Military Service for America

Memorial in Arlington, Virginia, were encouraging and most helpful. Britta Granrud, the curator of collections at the Memorial's archives patiently provided me with a wealth of unpublished letters, diaries, memoirs, and photographs.

I am grateful for the talent and effort provided by the professionals at ABC-CLIO. My special thanks to Alicia Merritt, the acquisitions editor, for her encouragement and assistance with all sorts of details; to Carla Roberts, the production editor; to Peter Westwick and Alexander Mikaberidze for their assistance and helpful suggestions; to Ellen Rasmussen for her work in locating illustrations; and to all of the other professionals who helped with this project, including Deborah Lynes and the staff of D&D Editorial Services.

INTRODUCTION

This encyclopedia deals with the experiences of women in traditional wars between territorially based armies, but it also approaches war in a much broader sense. It includes the involvement of women in a wide range of organized violence, guerrilla warfare, low-intensity warfare, struggles for national liberation, insurgencies, revolutions, and terrorism. It considers the impact of all sorts of war on women and their role on the home front as well as on the front line. One historian has asserted “women *are* invisible (in history) unless we are looking straight at them” (Rosenhaft 1992, 140). It is hoped that this encyclopedia will contribute to the visibility of women in this unfortunate aspect of the human experience.

War has been a constant plague afflicting humanity. Throughout history, women have been involved in war. Sometimes they were compelled to fight and resist in desperation as their tribes, villages, or towns were under assault. The widow Kenau Hasselaer led the resistance of the women of Haarlem against the besieging Spaniards in 1572–1573 until the city was starved into submission and its defenders massacred. Sometimes a woman would move to the fore to replace male leaders, husbands, fathers, or brothers who had been killed or had failed to provide adequate leadership. Boudicca, who led the Iceni of Britain against the Romans, and Queen Durgautti (Durgawati) of Gurrah (Gondwana) in Hindustan are among the number who fit this category. Trieu Thi Trinh, who led the Vietnamese against the Chinese in 248 and declared, “I wish to ride the tempest, tame the waves, kill the sharks. I want to drive the enemy

away to save our people,” “merely” rose to the occasion (Bergman 1974, 54).

More frequently and throughout history, women have been the victims of war. They have been forced to grieve slain husbands and children. They have been brutalized and killed. Women have been viewed as property to be seized in war and enslaved. In April 1822, the Turks massacred or enslaved thousands of Greek women on the island of Chios in retaliation for the atrocities perpetrated by Greek insurgents at Tripolitsa. By the time of the rampage of the Turks, which was depicted by Eugene Delacroix in his painting *Massacre of Chios*, was over, the population of the island had been reduced from 120,000 to 30,000. Atrocities against women constantly reoccur in ethnic conflict. Women have been singled out as bearers of the nation. Women were targets of violence in the Bulgarian horrors of 1877 and during the Balkan Wars (1912–1913). Rape has been recurrent in warfare whether or not the warfare was primarily ethnically based. Victorious soldiers felt a right to misuse the women of their conquered foe. Frequently the phenomenon was an act of power, subjecting the enemy, disrupting familial traditions, and inflicting shame on the vanquished—females but also males, who were powerless to protect their women. In World War I, rape and brutality were committed by soldiers of all invading armies—the Germans in the west, the Russians in East Prussia, and even the French when they moved into Alsace (Audoin-Rouzeau and Becker 2002, 34). Stéphane Audoin-Rouzeau and Annette Becker commenting on atrocities committed by

Austro-Hungarian soldiers in Serbia wrote, “facial mutilations, particularly of the eyes, were most frequent, and done to men and women, though women were also the victims of sexual violence and mutilations of the genital organs. Anthropologists of violence have long recorded that such attacks aim at people’s most human features, the face and reproductive organs. Women are victimized twice over, as human beings and as future child-bearers, and they are the first whom the invaders want to humiliate” (Audoin-Rouzeau and Becker 2002, 47). The Nazis were single-minded in their desire to wipe out Jewish women to exterminate the Jewish people. Heinrich Himmler, the head of the SS, declared, “How is it with the women and children? I decided to find a clear solution here as well. I did not consider myself justified to exterminate the men—that is, to kill them or have them killed—and allow the avengers of our sons and grandsons in the form of their children to grow up. The difficult decision had to be taken to make this people disappear from the earth” (“Famous Speeches by Heinrich Himmler”). Visibly pregnant women and women with small children were among those selected for immediate gassing on arrival at the death camps.

The dreadful phenomenon of rape in war continued in the twentieth century and into the twenty-first. Wholesale rape was committed by members of the Red Army as it advanced into Germany in 1945, but other Allied forces also raped Germans. Jill Stephenson writes, “foreign troops sometimes regarded Germany’s women as part of spoils of war” (Stephenson 2001, 107). Alison Owings writes that U.S., British, and Canadian soldiers “stole, robbed, raped women. It was indescribable” (Owings 1994, 97). French soldiers did the same (Stephenson 2001, 175–176). The rapes committed by the Red Army as it advanced into Germany eclipsed that of the other Allied powers. According to Rita Botwinick, “women were raped without concern or consideration of age or appearance. Many victims felt that the Soviet troops treated such sexual abuse as a victor’s justly earned prerogative” (Botwinick 1992, 106). Rape was utilized

as a weapon of demoralization in the wars that accompanied the disintegration of the former Yugoslavia during the 1990s. This occurred as well during the twenty-year civil war between the Sudanese government and rebels in the south of the country and was repeated in Sudan during the bloody rampage of the Janjaweed, government-backed militias, against the people of the Darfur region. Amnesty International accused the Janjaweed of using “rape and other forms of sexual violence ‘as a weapon of war’ to humiliate black African women and girls” (Lacey 2004). Nicholas Kristof, in one of his many moving and graphic reports on the plight of the people of Darfur, wrote of a refugee in Chad who was “pregnant with the baby of one of the twenty Janjaweed raiders who murdered her husband and then gang-raped her.” The Janjaweed told her and the women with her, “You are black women, and you are our slaves.” One of the women cried and was killed. Another, who survived gang rape, “had her ears partly cut off as an added humiliation” (Kristof 2004).

If women survived war, many found themselves psychologically and economically ravaged by it. Spartan women reputedly told their men to come back with their shields or on them, but most women have been less sanguine about the loss of fathers, husbands, or sons. Although bereaved women have been universal in time and place, the sheer level of bereavement that accompanied the wars of the twentieth century was unprecedented. World War I left behind numbers of widows and orphans, which eclipsed previous conflicts. “In 1920 600,000 widows in France were eligible for state pensions” (Phillips 1996, 136). In addition, women like Vera Brittain survived burdened with the loss of brothers, fiancées, and friends. Of World War I’s impact on France, Audoin-Rouzeau and Becker wrote, “two-thirds or even three-quarters of the population were affected directly or indirectly by bereavement or, more accurately, *bereavements*, the intensity of which was much greater than that experienced in peace time. Young people had died violent deaths, having suffered unprecedented mutilations of the body. Their fam-

ilies often did not even have the corpses of their loved ones to honor. So the mourning process was complicated, sometimes impossible, always protracted” (Audoin-Rouzeau and Becker 2002, 8–9). In addition to the pain of loss, many women were fated to live their lives in involuntary solitude. The imbalance between men and women in the age group between 20 and 35 in 1919 was such that many women who desired to marry were unable to find suitable husbands. Roderick Phillips writes, “In Britain more than a quarter of women in the 30 to 34 age group in 1921 had not married, and almost one-fifth of them never did” (Phillips 1996, 139). For many women, the return of a husband was a mixed blessing. Thousands of surviving soldiers were so physically or psychologically impaired that they were economic, physical, and emotional burdens to their wives. According to Phillips, “A million French soldiers were permanently disabled: Of them 125,000 had lost at least one limb and more than 40,000 had been completely or partially blinded” (Phillips 1996, 137).

Apart from the women whom chance, opportunity, or inclination thrust forward into positions of military leadership, those who were compelled to fight by necessity, and the ubiquitous women survivors and victims of war, other women followed and serviced armies.

One writer has referred to camp followers in the vans of the armies of World War II (Stephenson 2001, 107). However, the phenomenon was more common and even a necessity in earlier wars. Women were historically part of the world of camp and train of European armies. The women entrepreneurs who served as *vivandières* or *cantinières*, in addition to providing food and passing out drink on credit during the heat of battle, cooked and did sewing and laundry between engagements. Some were married to soldiers, but many also provided intimate female companionship to soldiers for a price. In the heat of combat, *vivandières* often replaced fallen soldiers from their unit in battle. The legend of Molly Pitcher is a composite of a number of *vivandières* during the American Revolution. A particularly heroic *vivandière* and medic in the

Union Army during the American Civil War, Annie Etheridge, was decorated for saving wounded under fire.

Through the Thirty Years’ War (1618–1648), the women who followed and serviced armies were largely outside the control of military authorities. Until the time of Louis XIV, private contractors were even used to transport artillery. Like transport, which was integrated into the army, the women, who served as *vivandières* or *cantinières* in armies before supply and medical services were organized in a regular fashion, were increasingly supervised by military authorities in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries.

In addition to the *vivandières*, women fought, disguised as men, as regular soldiers and sailors. Almost 700 did so in the American Civil War. Women disguised themselves for a number of reasons. Some were desperate to escape oppressive relationships. Some were attracted by pay and rations. Some sought adventure. Some followed lovers, and some were patriots. Fighting disguised as men became more difficult in the late nineteenth century as European armies were regularized and put in standard uniforms and recruits were subjected to more than pro forma physicals. Nonetheless, a number of women disguised as men served in the Russian army in World War I. One, Yasha Bochkareva, distraught over the collapse of discipline in the Russian army, organized the first of several women’s battalions. Bochkareva felt that men could be shamed into action by the example of women soldiers. Her hopes were shattered. A British woman, Flora Sandes, openly served as a soldier in the Serbian army during World War I and was promoted to the rank of major.

As armies were put in standard uniform and professionalized, the traditional military roles of women as *vivandières* was largely eliminated. Apart from the few women military leaders, camp followers, *vivandières*, and women disguised as men generally came from lower classes. This changed as armies were professionalized. Women, frequently from the middle class, in accord with Victorian view in Great Britain and the United States of women as succorers,

increasingly offered their services as nurses. They served as independent contract labor in the Spanish-American War and as volunteer nurses in the Boer War. In the early twentieth century, women, inspired by the ideology of equality, formed voluntary aid societies. Under the aegis of these, women served as nurses in the Balkan Wars and during World War I. The unprecedented dimensions of World War I led to the mobilization of whole nations in support of the war. Women were recruited for war industries in most belligerent states. Thousands of British women served near the front lines as nurses, ambulance drivers, and mechanics. Thousands of others worked in armament factories and replaced men throughout the workforce. Many of the munitionettes worked with dangerous chemicals. TNT yellowed their skin and won them the sobriquet “canary girls.” Although the lives of many were, in all probability, shortened by their exposure to hazardous chemicals, several hundred died during the war due to explosions and other accidents. In one explosion at a factory in the Silvertown area of London, the government admitted that 69 workers were killed and 400 injured, but it was suspected that real total was much greater (Adie 2003, 101).

The war forced Great Britain and the United States not only to organize uniformed nursing components but also to put women in uniform as auxiliaries to the regular male military. Great Britain was the first country to place women in formal military service through the formation of the Women’s Auxiliary Army Corps (WAAC), the Women’s Royal Air Force (WRAF), and the Women’s Royal Naval Service (WRNS, referred to as the Wrens). By the end of the war, 100,000 women had volunteered to serve in these auxiliaries.

Although the British and American auxiliary units were frequently disbanded after the end of the war, they were reactivated or vastly expanded during World War II. Women were again encouraged to replace men in the economy in Great Britain and the United States, where Rosie the Riveter became a symbol for war service on the home front. The front lines of total war during

World War II were incredibly far flung. World War II brought the violence of war directly to women, who died in the bombardment of cities from London to Tokyo. In addition to the bombing of Hiroshima and Nagasaki, in July 1945, U.S. planes fire bombed 66 Japanese cities killing as many as 500,000 civilians. On August 6 and 9, Tokyo was fire bombed, and another 100,000 Japanese civilians were incinerated (Boggs 2005, 174). Women were caught up as casualties and combatants in street fighting from Warsaw to Stalingrad. In addition, they were directly involved as voluntary or conscripted combatants to an unprecedented extent. In the Soviet Union, women were utilized to supplement numbers in the Soviet military out of necessity and because of the insistent desire of many. Women saw combat duty in both mixed and all-female units. By the end of 1943, the number of women serving in Soviet armed forces numbered between 800,000 and 1 million, 8 percent of the total strength of the Soviet military. Approximately half of these women served at the front (Cottam 1980, 345). Soviet women served as combat pilots, snipers, tank drivers, and regular soldiers. In addition to women volunteers, 400,000 Soviet women were drafted, of these 100,000 served in air defense units (Cottam 1998, xx). Soviet women also played an important role in the Soviet Resistance movement. By February 1944, 26,707 women were serving with partisan units and constituted 16 percent of partisan strength in Belarus (Cottam 1982, 367; Herspring 1997, 47).

Women served in partisan movements in France, Italy, and Poland as well. It was in Yugoslavia, however, that their role was of particular numerical and symbolic significance: 100,000 women served as soldiers in the National Liberation Army (NLA). Initially 1 out of 10 NLA soldiers were women, but the proportion rose to 1 in 8. In addition, 2 million women were mobilized in the Anti-Fascist Front of Women (AFZ). These women ran local government, provided support to the front fighters, and engaged in sabotage. According to Barbara Jan-car, “from 1941 to 1945 8.5 percent of the total female population of Yugoslavia was killed or

died” (Jancar 1982, 91). Although 25 percent of the women who joined the NLA died, versus 11 percent for the men, there was an even higher casualty rate among the AFZ (Jancar 1982, 93). The AFZ members were not formally soldiers, but this was a guerrilla war, and the front was elusive. When the Nazis and their allies overran villages, AFZ women fought and were killed or captured. Often capture led to rape, torture, and murder. The casualty rate for female Partisans exceeded that for males. Some have asserted that the higher casualty rate for women fighters resulted from their inexperience. Milovan Djilas, a Communist leader within the Yugoslav resistance asserted, however, that the women, in general, fought more bravely than the men (Djilas 1977, 210). Despite their wartime contribution, after the war women were largely excluded from the Yugoslav military. Nevertheless, according to Barbara Jancar “their political and social emancipation was the product of the military campaign” (Jancar 1982, 92).

The British and the French also officially utilized women in combat during World War II. Of the 400 agents recruited and dispatched to Nazi-occupied Europe by the British Special Operations Executive 39 were women. Women were often used as couriers, who, it was hoped, would be less conspicuous on a bicycle in the French countryside or on a train than a young man. In all, 104 agents, 13 of them women, were killed. Some were killed outright; others were captured, tortured, and then killed (see “Atkins, Vera H.”).

Because of the increasing insistence for equal rights and opportunities for women, auxiliaries were not disbanded after the war but were, in fact, integrated into the regular military forces of most developed industrial nations. Women gained the right to serve at sea as ensigns and officers, to fly combat aircraft, and to serve with ground forces short of the front line, not that this makes a great difference in wars of insurgency. The role of women in the Israeli military is perhaps a harbinger of future developments in the military of the industrial democratic states. Women played armed roles in the birth of the Is-

raeli state. During the Arab-Israeli War of 1948, more than 12,000 women served in the Israeli military and 114 died in combat (Gal 1986, 46). After independence, this military tradition continued, although in altered form. Israel is the only state in which women are conscripted. The fear of losing women in combat and opposition from Israel’s religious parties led the government to exclude women from combat. There was resentment among women against their second-class status in the military. Lawsuits in the 1990s paved the way toward full participation by women in the Israeli military. By the end of 2001, Israeli women held combat positions in air defense, the air force, and artillery; as combat engineers; and in border patrol units.

If states felt compelled to integrate women into their armed forces to one degree or another, insurgent and guerrilla forces, depending on various cultural restraints, tended to utilize women as logistical support or even as fighters. In Latin America, women were involved in the Cuban Revolution. Celia Sánchez and Melba Hernández participated in Fidel Castro’s failed attack on the Moncada Barracks in 1953. They subsequently changed his opinion about allowing women to fight with the guerrillas and, later, to participate in the national military. With a number of other women, they joined him in the mountains after his return from exile. Hernández formed the Mariana Grajales Brigade, a platoon consisting exclusively of women. The fact that women worked and fought alongside their male comrades had a significant impact on their place in the revolutionary movement after its victory. After the revolution, women were not drafted by the Cuban military but could volunteer for any branch and many rose to various levels of command. Elsewhere in Latin America, women since the 1950s have constituted approximately 30 percent of the 50,000 or so participants in armed revolutionary struggle (see “Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements”).

A Vietnamese saying states, “When the enemy comes, even the women should fight” (Bergman 1974, 32). Vietnamese women have fought successive foreign interlopers—the Chinese, the

French, and the Americans. In 1907, Nguyen Thi Ba, a female innkeeper poisoned 200 French soldiers. In 1931, in Nghe Ahn and Ha Tinh provinces, a guerrilla band of 120 fighters, 40 of whom were women, temporarily drove out local functionaries and established a short-lived soviet. When Nguyen Thi Ngia, a twenty-three-year-old Nghe Tinh guerrilla fighter, was captured, she cut off her tongue to avoid breaking under torture. After the French left Vietnam in 1954, Vietnamese women fought for the South Vietnamese regime but, more significantly, for the North Vietnamese and Viet Cong.

Women played a significant role in the thirty-year-long armed struggle of Eritrea for independence from Ethiopia. By the end of the conflict in 1993, women had constituted 30 percent of Eritrea's approximately 100,000 soldiers (Wax 2004, A4). The Eritrean government attempted to rally its people with images of female soldiers, such as a poster with the legend "Mother Eritrea," which depicted a female fighter with a baby on her back brandishing an AK-47.

If women have so often been victims of violence, they have also proved to be capable of being agents of violence. Women historically have been assassins. Judith killed Assyrian general Holofernes, and Charlotte Corday killed the French revolutionary Jean Paul Marat. With the liberatory ideology unleashed by the French Revolution, however, women have increasingly been involved in revolutionary movements, and when the opposed power seemed impregnable, they have resorted to the weapon of the weak and desperate: terrorism. Women were among the populist terrorists who plotted the assassination of Alexander II in Russia in 1881, and one, Sophia Perovskaya, died on the scaffold for the deed. The execution of Gesia Gelfman was delayed because she was pregnant. She died in prison of peritonitis after giving birth. Women terrorists are an increasing phenomenon even in societies with strictly ascribed sexual differentiation. A woman killed the Indian president Rajiv Gandhi and eighteen others when she blew herself up near him in 1991. Women played a significant role in the Italian Red Brigades and

were significant not only as participants in Germany's Red Army Faction but also as its leaders. Christian Lochner, a German antiterrorist, has asserted that women terrorists are more ruthless and dangerous. He said, "For anyone who loves his life, it is a very clever idea to shoot the woman first. From my experience women terrorists have much stronger characters, more power, more energy. There are some examples where a man waited a moment before they [sic] fired, and women shot at once. This is a general phenomenon with terrorists" (MacDonald 1991, xiv). In Muslim Chechnya, Palestine, and Iraq, women have been suicide bombers. They were among the Chechen terrorists at a Moscow theater in October 2002 and at the school at Beslan in 2004.

Reflecting on the pictures of Private First Class Lynndie England of the U.S. National Guard, inside the Abu Ghraib prison in Baghdad, Melissa Sheridan Embser-Herbert wrote, "Just as women have proven themselves capable of leading troops in difficult situations, so they have now shown that they can become vulnerable to the power of a role, the power of wielding power. Images of a woman giving a 'thumbs up' beside a hooded, naked man have highlighted the horrors of war in a way I don't believe would have happened had we seen only more traditional images of men at war. Putting a woman's face on war's brutality has I believe, prompted a depth of discussion that might not otherwise have occurred" (Embser-Herbert 2004, B1 and 4).

—Bernard A. Cook

References and Further Reading

- Adie, Kate. 2003. *Corsets to Camouflage: Women and War*. Published in association with the Imperial War Museum. London: Hodder and Stoughton.
- Audoin-Rouzeau, Stéphane, and Annette Becker. 2002. *14–18 Understanding the Great War*. Translated by Catherine Temerson. New York: Hill and Wang.

INTRODUCTION

- Bergman, Arlene. 1974. *Women of Vietnam*. San Francisco: Peoples Press.
- Boggs, Carl. 2005. *Imperial Delusions: American Militarism and Endless War*. Lanham, MD: Rowman and Littlefield.
- Botwinick, Rita S. 1992. *Winzig, Germany, 1933–1946: The History of a Town under the Third Reich*. Westport, CT: Praeger.
- Cottam, Jean. 1980. "Soviet Women in Combat in World War II: The Ground Forces and the Navy." *International Journal of Women's Studies* 3 (July/August 1980) 4: 345–357.
- . 1982. "Soviet Women in Combat in World War II: The Rear Services, Resistance behind Enemy Lines and Military Political Workers." *International Journal of Women's Studies* 5, no. 4 (September/October 1982) 367.
- . 1998. *Women in War and Resistance*. Nepean, Canada: New Military.
- Djilas, Milovan. 1977. *Wartime*. New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovitch.
- Embser-Herbert, Melissa Sheridan. 2004 "When Women Abuse Power Too." *Washington Post* (May 16): B1, B4.
- "Famous Speeches by Heinrich Himmler." On October 6, 1943, Himmler's speech to Gau and Reich chiefs of the party in Posen (Poznan), <http://www.scrapbookpages.com/DachauScrapbook/HimmlerSpeeches.html> (accessed March 8, 2005).
- Gal, Reuven. 1986. *A Portrait of the Israeli Soldier*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Herspring, Dale R. 1997. "Women in the Russian Military: A Reluctant Marriage." *Minerva: Quarterly Report on Women in the Military* 15 (summer) 2: 47
- Jancar, Barbara. 1982. "Yugoslavia: War of Resistance." In *Female Soldiers—Combatants or Noncombatants? Historical and Contemporary Perspectives*, edited by Nancy Loring Goldman. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Kristof, Nicholas D. 2004. "Magboula's Brush with Genocide." *New York Times*, June 23.
- Lacey, Marc. 2004. "Rape Used as Weapon in Sudan, Group Says." *Times-Picayune* (New Orleans) (July 19).
- MacDonald, Eleineen. 1991. *Shoot the Woman First*. New York, Random House.
- Owings, Alison. 1994. *Frauen, German Women Recall the Third Reich*. New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers.
- Phillips, Roderick. 1996. *Society, State, and Nation in Twentieth-Century Europe*. Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall.
- Reiss, Rodolphe Archibald. 1916. *Report upon the Atrocities Committed by the Austro-Hungarian Army during the First Invasion of Serbia*. Translated by F. S. Copeland. London: Simpkin, Marshall, Hamilton, Kent.
- Rosenhaft, Eve. 1992. "Women in Modern Germany." In *Modern Germany Reconsidered, 1870–1945*, edited by Gordon Martel. Pages 140–158. London and New York: Routledge.
- Stephenson, Jill. 2001. *Women in Nazi Germany*. Harlow, England: Longman/Pearson Educational.
- "Vera Atkins, CBE, Légion d'honneur," 64 Baker Street. http://www.64-baker-street.org/also/also_vera_atkins_her_story.html (cited January 10, 2006).
- Wax, Emily. 2004. "Respected in Battle, Overlooked at Home: Eritrea's Female Veterans Seek Peacetime Role." *Washington Post* (April 2): A4.

TOPIC FINDER

Administrators

Atkins, Vera H.
Bagot, Lady Theodosia
Barton, Clara
Blackwell, Elizabeth
Cleopatra VII, Queen of Egypt
Cochran, Jacqueline
Dix, Dorothea
Eleanor of Aquitaine
Furse, Lady Katherine Symonds
Haverfield, Evelina
Hobby, Oveta Culp
Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's
Hospitals
Livermore, Mary Ashton Rice
Lowther, Barbara
McCarthy, Emma Maud
McGee, Anita Newcomb
Nightingale, Florence
Peake, Felicity
Scholtz-Klink, Gertrud
Streeter, Ruth Cheney
Van Kleeck, Mary

American Revolution

American Revolution, Role of Women in the
Bailey, Anne Trotter
Brant, Mary
Corbin, Margaret Cochrane
Fulton, Sarah Bradlee
Greene, Catharine Littlefield
Ludington, Sybil
Martin, Grace, and Martin, Rachel
Molly Pitcher
Reed, Esther De Berdt
Samson, Deborah

Washington, Martha Dandridge Custis
Zane, Elizabeth

Antiquity

Artemisia of Caria
Cleopatra VII, Queen of Egypt
Fulvia
Greek Women and War in Antiquity
Helen of Troy
Japan, Women Warriors in Ancient and
Medieval Japan
Jewish Women of Antiquity and War
Roman Women and War
Spartan Women
Zenobia, Queen of Palmyra

Atrocities

Armenian Holocaust
Armenian Women Victims of Genocide
Bulgarian Horrors
East Timor, Abuse of Women during War
Germany, Armed Forces, World War II
Atrocities of
Herero of Namibia, Repression of the
Lidice Massacre
Oradour-sur-Glane Massacre
Rwanda, Women and the Genocide
Smyrna Tragedy, Continuing Ordeal for
Women Survivors of the
Sudan, Women and the Civil War in

Auxiliary Corps

Ashwell, Lena Margaret Pocock
Australia, Women in Service during World
War II
Bulgaria, Women and World War II

TOPIC FINDER

Finland, Lotta Svärd
 Finland, Women in the Winter War
 Frontier Soldiers, U.S., Wives of
 Great Britain, Women in Service during
 World War I
 Great Britain, Women in Service during
 World War II
 Great Britain, Women's Royal Naval Service,
 Reorganization before World War II
 Gwynne-Vaughan, Helen
 Hello Girls
 Onions, Maude
 Polish Auxiliary Air Force
 Red Cross of the United States: World War I
 and World War II
 Salvation Army in World War I
 Summerskill, Edith Clara, and Women's
 Home Defence Corps
 United States, Marine Corps Women's
 Reserves
 United States, Navy Women's Reserve
 United States, Women Reserves in the
 Coast Guard
 United States, Women's Airforce Service
 Pilots
 United States, Women's Auxiliary Ferrying
 Squadron
 United States, Women's Flying Training
 Detachment

Bystanders/Facilitators

Junge, Gertraud

Civil War, American

Baker, E. H.
 Barton, Clara
 Blackwell, Elizabeth
 Boyd, Isabelle
 Civil War, American, Women and
 Civil War, American, Women Combatants
 during the
 Civil War, American, Women in the Medical
 Services in the
 Clayton, Frances
 Cushman, Pauline
 Dix, Dorothea
 Edmonds, Sarah Emma

Etheridge, Anna
 Greenhow, Rose O'Neale
 Hart, Nancy
 Hoge, Jane Currie Blaikie
 Moon, Lottie, and Moon, Ginnie
 Stowe, Harriet Beecher
 Tubman, Harriet
 Walker, Mary Edwards

Collaborationists

Norway, Women's Collaboration during
 World War II German Occupation

Combatants/Military Personnel

Agustina de Aragón
 Allen, Eliza
 Amazons
 Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth
 Century
 Azurduy de Padilla, Juana
 Bailey, Anne Trotter
 Belik, Vera Luk'ianovna (*see* Makarova,
 Tat'iana Petrovna)
 Bochkareva, Maria
 Borginis, Sarah
 Bower, Ursula Graham
 Bray, Linda
 China to 1911, Women Warriors in
 Civil War, American, Women Combatants
 during the
 Clayton, Frances
 Corbin, Margaret Cochrane
 Dahomey, Women Warriors
 Deavers, Briget
 Durova, Nadezhda Andreyevna
 Duston, Hannah
 Earley, Charity Adams
 Edmonds, Sarah Emma
 Engel, Regula
 Eritrea, Women and the Struggle for
 Independence
 Espín Guillois, Vilma
 Farrell, Mairead
 Fedutenko, Nadezhda Nikiforovna
 Fernig, Félicité, and Fernig, Théophile
 Fomicheva-Levashova, Klavdiia Iakovlevna
 Fulvia

TOPIC FINDER

- Garibaldi, Anita
 Gierczak, Emilia
 Great Britain, Women in Service in the
 Seventeenth, Eighteenth, and Early
 Nineteenth Centuries
 Greek Civil War, Women in the
 Greek Revolution, Women and the
 Greek Women and War in Antiquity
 Hall, Virginia
 Hart, Nancy
 Hello Girls
 Hernández Rodríguez del Rey, Melba
 Hirsch, Ilse
 India to 1857: Women Warriors in
 Israeli Military, Women in the
 Japan: Women Warriors in Ancient and
 Medieval Japan
 Jewish Women of Antiquity and War
 Joan of Arc
 Kufrin, Milka
 Kurmanjan-Datkha
 Lakshmi Bai and Sepoy Rebellion
 Landau, Emilia
 Lawrence, Dorothy
 Lewandowska, Jania
 Litviak, Lidiia Vladimirovna
 Makarova, Tat'iana Petrovna, and Belik,
 Vera Luk'ianovna
 Markievicz, Countess Constance
 Martin, Grace, and Martin, Rachel
 Mau Mau Rebellion, Women in the
 Michel, Louise
 Milosavljevic, Danica
 Molly Pitcher
 Nicaragua, Women and War in
 Nikulina, Anna Vladimirovna
 Nirouet, Collette
 Nonhelma
 Pavliuchenko, Liudmila Mikhailovna
 Pilots of the IL-2
 Plater, Emilia
 Poland, Resistance during World War II,
 Women and
 Polish Independent Women's Battalion,
 "Emilia Plater"
 Russia, Women in the Armed Forces
 (1700–1917)
 Russia, Women Recipients of the Order of
 St. George (1808–1917)
 Samson, Deborah
 Sánchez Manduley, Celia
 Sandes, Flora
 Santamaría Cuadrado, Haydée
 Snell, Hannah
 Sosnowska-Karpik, Irena
 Soviet Union, 46th Taman Guards Bomber
 Aviation Regiment
 Soviet Union, Order of the Red Banner,
 Women Recipients (1918–1928)
 Soviet Union Air Defense, 586th Fighter
 Aviation Regiment
 Talbot, Mary Anne
 Teodoroiu, Ecaterina
 Travers, Susan
 United States, Military Service of Women in
 World War II
 Vietnam, Women in War and Resistance
 before 1954
 Ward, Nancy
 Winema
 Winnemucca, Sarah
 Yugoslavia, Women in the Military during
 World War II
 Zane, Elizabeth
 Zenobia, Queen of Palmyra
- Combat Units (Female)***
 Dahomey, Women Warriors
 Polish Independent Women's Battalion,
 Emilia Plater
 Soviet Union, 46th Taman Guards Bomber
 Aviation Regiment
 Soviet Union, 125th M. M. Raskova Borisov
 Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment
 Soviet Union Air Defense, 586th Fighter
 Aviation Regiment
- Companions***
 Alexandra, Czarina of Russia
 Braun, Eva
 Frontier Soldiers, U.S., Wives of
 Greene, Catharine Littlefield
 Lee, Mary Anna Randolph Custis
 Markovic, Mirjana

TOPIC FINDER

Mitford, Unity
Napoleon's Marshals, Wives of
Petacci, Clara
Riedesel, Friederike Charlotte Luise von
Massow von
Washington, Martha Dandridge Custis

***Concentration/Detention Camps and
Internees***

Hobhouse, Emily
Holocaust and Jewish Women
Japanese Interned in U.S. Camps
Jehovah Witnesses in Nazi Germany
Ravensbrück

***Concentration/Death Camp
Guards/Personnel***

Braunsteiner, Hermine
Grese, Irma
Koch, Ilse

Conscientious Objector

Conscientious Objectors in the United
States Women during World War II,
Women and
McDowell, Mary Stone

Correspondents, War

See Journalists; Photographers

Courier

Ludington, Sybil
Secord, Laura

Entertainers

Ashwell, Lena Margaret Pocock
Dietrich, Marlene

Ethnic Attacks

Armenian Holocaust
Armenian Women Victims of Genocide
Bulgarian Horrors
Guatemala, Civil Conflict and Women
Herero of Namibia, Repression of the
Smyrna Tragedy, Continuing Ordeal for
Women Survivors of the

Frontier Fighters

Bailey, Anne Trotter
Duston, Hannah

Governmental Figures

Alexandra, Czarina of Russia
Ashwari, Hanan
Blanche of Castile
Falklands War and Thatcher, Margaret
Gandhi, Indira
Kurmanjan-Datkha
Marie, Queen of Romania
Markovic, Mirjana
Meir, Golda
Mowlam, Marjorie
Plavsic, Biljana
Sophie, Duchess von Hoenberg
Wilhelmina, Queen of the Netherlands

Guerrillas

Bunke, Tamara
Hart, Nancy

Holocaust Victims

Frank, Anne
Holocaust and Jewish Women
Jehovah's Witnesses in Nazi Germany
Roma/Sinti
Rosenstrasse and Intermarriage of Jews and
German Gentiles
Salomon, Charlotte
Stein, Edith

Home Front

China, Women on the Home Front in World
War II
France, World War I, Women and the Home
Front
France, World War II, Women and the
Home Front
Germany, Women and the Home Front,
World War I
Germany, Women and the Home Front,
World War II
Great Britain, Women, Social Impact of
World War I on

TOPIC FINDER

- Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I
- Great Britain, Women on the Home Front during World War II
- Greek Women and War in Antiquity
- Iran-Iraq War and Gulf War, Impact on Women of Iraq
- Italy, Women in the Resistance during World War II
- Italy, Women on the Home Front and in the Services during World War I
- Japan, Women and the Home Front, World War II
- Korea: Women and the Home Front during World War II
- Malta, Women and Wars in
- Norway, Resistance Movement during World War II German Occupation, Women and
- Roman Women and War
- Rosie the Riveter
- United States, Home Front during World War I
- United States, Home Front during World War II
- Impact of War***
- Civil War, American, and Women
- France, World War I, Psychological Impact on French Women
- Trauma and Brutalization Unleashed by World War I
- Journalists***
- Chapelle, Dickey
- Emerson, Gloria
- Fallaci, Oriana
- Friang, Brigitte
- Gellhorn, Martha
- Higgins, Marguerite
- Hull, Peggy, pseud.
- Journalists, American Women, during World War I
- Lederer, Edith
- Luce, Clare Boothe
- Schuyler, Philippa
- Tomara, Sonia
- Trotta, Liz
- Watts, Jean
- Medical Service***
- Anderson, Louisa Garrett
- Australian Army Nursing Service/Royal Australian Army Nursing Corps
- Bagot, Lady Theodesia
- Barry, James
- Barton, Clara
- Bennett, Agnes Elizabeth Lloyd
- Black, Catherine
- Blackwell, Elizabeth
- Chisholm, Mairi Lambert
- Civil War, American, Women in the Medical Services in the
- Conquest, Joan, pseud.
- Cornum, Rhonda
- Curie, Maria Sklodowska, and the Little Curies
- Dix, Dorothea
- Etheridge, Anna
- Fairchild, Helen
- Farmborough, Florence
- Furse, Lady Katherine Symonds
- Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I
- Hamilton, Cicely Marie
- Haverfield, Evelina
- Hodges, Katherine
- Hoge, Jane Currie Blaikie
- Hutton, Lady Isabel Galloway
- Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's Hospitals
- Kea, Salaria
- King, Olive
- Livermore, Mary Ashton Rice
- Lowther, Barbara
- McCarthy, Emma Maud
- McDougall, Grace Ashley-Smith
- McGee, Anita Newcomb
- Medical Specialist Corps, United States Women in Military Service, World War II
- Mercy Ship
- Nightingale, Florence

TOPIC FINDER

Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War I

Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War II

Red Cross of the United States: World War I and World War II

Ross, Ishobel

Sandes, Flora

Smith, Winnie

Stark, Dame Freya

Stobart, Mabel

Tower, Ellen May

Thurstan, Violetta

T'Serclaes, Baroness Elizabeth de

Van Devanter, Lynda

Walker, Mary Edwards

Washington, Marguerite Pat Beauchamp Waddell

Whittle, Reba Zitella

Military Awards

Russia, Women Recipients of the Order of St. George

Soviet Union, Order of Glory, I Class, Soviet Women Recipients

Soviet Union, Order of the Red Banner, Women Recipients

Soviet Union/Russian Federation, Women Heroes of the

Military Leaders

Aishah

Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth Century

Artemisia of Caria

Azurduy de Padilla, Juana

Boudicca, Queen of the Iceni

Cherokee War Woman

Cleopatra VII, Queen of Egypt

Eleanor of Aquitaine

Fulvia

Gandhi, Indira

Guljamal-Khan(um)

Kurmanjan-Datkha

Matilda of Tuscany

Ward, Nancy

Zenobia, Queen of Palmyra

National Liberation

Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth Century

Azurduy de Padilla, Juana

Black Sash

Colenso, Harriette

Devlin, Bernadette

First, Heloise Ruth

Fuld, Bracha

Garibaldi, Anita

Gonne, Maud

Islamic Resistance Movements, Women and Lakshmi Bai and Sepoy Rebellion

Lebrón, Lolita

Mandela, Winnie

Markievicz, Countess Constance

Mau Mau Rebellion, Women in the

Nongqawuse

Philippines, Women during the American Suppression of the Insurrection in

Polish Independent Women's Battalion, Emilia Plater

Ulster, Women during the Troubles in Wexford Rising, Women of

Nations, War Experience of Women in Various Nations

See Home Front

Native American

Warriors/Scouts/Intermediaries

Nonhelema

Ward, Nancy

Winema

Winnemucca, Sarah

Nobel Peace Prize Winners

Balch, Emily Green

Peace People Movement

Suttner, Baroness Bertha Sophie Felicita von

Williams, Jody

TOPIC FINDER

Pacifists

McDowell, Mary Stone

Peace Activists

Addams, Jane
Balch, Emily Green
Catt, Carrie Chapman
Curtis, Cathrine
Dilling, Elizabeth
Fonda, Jane
Goldstein, Vida
Hobhouse, Emily
Locke, Elsie
Luxemburg, Rosa
McDowell, Mary Stone
Mead, Lucia Ames
Moore, Eleanor May
Mowlam, Marjorie
Olmsted, Mildred Scott
Onions, Maude
Pankhurst Family: Emmeline, Christabel,
E. Sylvia, and Adela Pankhurst Walsh
Peace People Movement
Saumoneau, Louise
Street, Jessie
Suttner, Baroness Bertha Sophie Felicita
von
Williams, Jody

Peace Movements

International Congress of Women: Antiwar
Protest of Women in World War I
International Manifesto of Women
National Legion of Mothers of America
Peace People Movement
Ulster, Women during the Troubles in
United States, Opposition to U.S. Entry
into World War II by Right-Wing
American Women
Vietnam, Women in the Buddhist Peace
Movement

Photographers

Bonney, Therese
Bourke-White, Margaret

Bubley, Esther
Chapelle, Dickey
Lange, Dorothea
Meiselas, Susan

Pilots

Avenger Field
Baumgartner, Ann
Belik, Vera Luk'ianovna (see Makarova,
Tat'iana Petrovna)
Brown, Ruth Humphries
Chamberlain, Margaret Lenora
Cochran, Jacqueline
Dalrymple, Mildred Inks
Fedutenko, Nadezhda Nikiforovna
Fomicheva-Levashova, Klavdiia
Iakovlevna
Grizodubova, Valentina Stepanovna
Hobby, Oveta Culp
Johnson, Amy
Leska-Daab, Anna
Lewandowska, Jania
Litviak, Lidiia Vladimirovna
Makarova, Tat'iana Petrovna, and Belik
Vera Luk'ianovna
Parrish, Marie O'Dean Bishop
Peake, Felicity
Pilots of the IL-2
Raskova, Marina Mikhailovna
Reitsch, Hanna
Sosnowska-Karpik, Irena
Soviet Union, 46th Taman Guards
Bomber Aviation Regiment
Soviet Union, 125th M. M. Raskova
Borisov Guards Bomber Aviation
Soviet Union Air Defense, 586th Fighter
Aviation Regiment
Tackaberry, Betty Guild
United States, Women's Airforce Service
Pilots
United States, Women's Auxiliary
Ferrying Squadron
United States, Women's Flying Training
Detachment

Political Violence

Guatemala, Civil Conflict and Women
 Peru: Shining Path
 Peruvian Truth and Reconciliation
 Commission: Women and Political
 Violence

Prisoners of War

Cornum, Rhonda
 Whittle, Reba Zitella

Propagandists

“Axis Sally”
 Farmborough, Florence
 Ibárruri, Dolores
 “Lady Haw Haw”
 Orczy, Baroness Emma
 Stark, Dame Freya
 “Tokyo Rose”

Protest Movements, Antiwar

Baez, Joan Chandos
 United States, Opposition to U.S. Entry into
 World War II by Right-Wing
 American Women

Publicists

Cannan, May Wedderburn

Rape in War

AIDS, War and the Spread of
 East Timor, Abuse of Women during War
 Guatemala, Civil Conflict and Women
 Kashmir, Conflict in, Women and
 Korea: Comfort Women
 Nanking, Rape of
 Rape: Red Army in World War II
 Thirty Years’ War
 Yugoslavia, Women and the Wars That
 Accompanied the Disintegration of

Rescuers

Schindler, Emilie
 Tubman, Harriet
 Wertheimer, Martha

Reserves

See War Service

Resistance, Belgian

Cavell, Edith Louisa
 De Jongh, Andrée
 Petit, Gabrielle

Resistance, Czech

Haas, Elena

Resistance, Dutch

Schaft, Jeannetje Joanna

Resistance, French

Aubrac, Lucie
 Borrel, Andrée
 Fourcade, Marie-Madeleine
 Hall, Virginia
 Moreau-Evrard, Emilienne
 Souliè, Geneviève
 Tillion, Germaine
 Viannay, Hélène
 Wake, Nancy
 Witherington, Pearl

Resistance, German

Ballestrem-Solf, Countess Lagi
 Buch, Eva Maria
 Fittko, Lisa
 Harnack-Fish, Mildred
 Kichner, Johanna
 Kuckhoff, Greta
 Monte, Hilda, pseud.
 Niederkirchner, Käthe
 Scholl, Sophie
 Schulze-Boysen, Libertas
 Seele, Gertrud
 Terwiel, Maria
 Thadden, Elizabeth von
 Yorck von Wartenburg, Countess Marion

Resistance, Greek

Greece, Resistance during World War II,
 Women and

Resistance, Hungarian

Senesh, Hanna
Svobod, Maria

Resistance, Italian

Italy, Women in the Resistance during
World War II

Resistance, Jewish

Bruskina, Masha
Dawidson, Justina
Fittko, Lisa
Fuld, Bracha
Grossman, Chaika
Kempner, Vitka
Korczak, Rozka
Landau, Emilia
Reik, Haviva
Senesh, Hannah

Resistance, Norway

Norway, Resistance Movement during
World War II, Women and

Resistance, Polish

Dawidson, Justina
Granville, Christine, pseud.
Poland, Resistance during World War II,
Women and

Resistance, Soviet

Bruskina, Masha

Resistance, Yugoslav

Yugoslavia, Women in the Military during
World War II

Revolutions

Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth
Century
China, Women and the Communist
Revolution
Cuban Revolution, Women in the
El Salvador, Women and Civil Strife in
France, Revolution of 1848

French Revolution, Impact of War on
Women's Protest during the
Germany, Revolution of 1918–1919,
Women in the
Greek Civil War, Women in the
Greek Revolution, Women and the
Guatemala, Civil Conflict and Women
Paris Commune, Women and the
Peru: Shining Path
Russian Revolution and Women
Sicilian Revolutions of 1820 and 1848,
Women and the
Wexford Rising, Women of

Revolutionaries

Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth
Century
Bunke, Tamara
Espín Guillois, Vilma
Farrell, Mairead
First, Heloise Ruth
French Revolution, Impact of War on
Women's Protest during the
Garibaldi, Anita
Germany, Revolution of 1918–1919,
Women in the
Hernández Rodríguez del Rey, Melba
Kollontai, Alexandra
Latin America, Women in Guerrilla
Movements in
Luxemburg, Rosa
Markievicz, Countess Constance
Mau Mau Rebellion, Women in the
Michel, Louise
Peru: Shining Path
Plater, Emilia
Sánchez Manduley, Celia
Santamaría Cuadrado, Haydée

Service Organizations

Red Cross of the United States, World War I
and World War II
Salvation Army in World War I
Young Men's Christian Association, World
War I

Sieges

Malta, Women and Wars in
Paris Commune, Women and the

**Spies/Secret Agents/Diplomatic
Services/Women Accused of Spying**

Atkins, Vera
Baissac, Lise de
Baker, E. H.
Bell, Gertrude Margaret Lowthian
Borrel, Andrée
Boyd, Isabelle
Brant, Mary
Cormeau, Yvonne
Cushman, Pauline
Darragh, Lydia
Eriksen, Vera
Granville, Christine, pseud.
Greenhow, Rose O'Neale
Hall, Virginia
Harnack-Fish, Mildred
Khan, Noor Inayat
Kuczynski, Ursula
Martin, Grace, and Moon, Rachel
Mata Hari, pseud.
Moon, Lottie, and Moon, Ginnie
Petit, Gabrielle
Rolfe, Lilian
Rosenberg, Ethel
Rudellat, Yvonne
Sansom, Odette
Schmidt, Kitty
Schulze-Boysen, Libertas
Secord, Laura
Senesh, Hannah
Stark, Dame Freya
Szabo, Violette
Tubman, Harriet
Van Lew, Elizabeth Louise
Wake, Nancy
Witherington, Pearl

Survivors

Brittain, Vera Mary
Scotland: War Widows and Refugees in,
1640s and 1688–1690
Trümmerfrauen

Symbols

Greece, Women and Female Imagery in
Greek Warfare
Marianne
Posters, U.S., Images of Women in World
War II
Rosie the Riveter
Yugoslavia, Mother and Bride Images of
Militant Serbian Nationalism

Terrorists

Baader-Meinhof Gang
Hirsch, Ilse
Islamic Resistance Movements, Women and
the
Red Army Faction, West Germany, Women
of the
Red Brigades, Italy, Women of the

Vietnam

Baez, Joan Chandos
Fonda, Jane
Gellhorn, Martha
Van Devanter, Lynda
Vietnam, U.S. Women Soldiers in
Vietnam, Women in the Buddhist Peace
Movement
Vietnam, Women in War and Resistance
before 1954

War Crimes

Armenian Holocaust
Armenian Women Victims of Genocide
Belgium, Women during World War I
Biological Warfare Experimentation,
Japanese
Einsatzgruppen
Forced Labor, Nazi Germany
Holocaust and Jewish Women
Lidice Massacre
Nanking, Rape of
Oradour-sur-Glane Massacre
Rape in War
Ravensbrück

War Criminals

Bilien, Valentina

TOPIC FINDER

- Grese, Irma
Koch, Ilse
Plavsic, Biljana
- Wars**
Afghanistan
Algeria, Women in the War of National Liberation
American Revolution, Role of Women in the
Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth Century
Arab-Israeli Wars
Argentina, The Dirty War against Civilians
Civil War, American, and Women
Crusades, Women and the
Cuban Revolution, Role of Women in the
Eritrea, Women and the Struggle for Independence
Falklands War and Thatcher, Margaret
France, Wars of Religion
Greek Civil War, Women in the
Iran-Iraq War and Gulf War, Impact on Women of Iraq
Ireland, Easter Rising of 1916
Ireland, War of Independence
Kashmir, Conflict in, Women and
Korean War, American Women and the
Nicaragua, Women and War in
Peasants' War
Spanish Civil War
Spanish-American War, Women and the
Sudan, Women and the Civil War in
Thirty Years' War
Vietnam, Women in the Buddhist Peace Movement
Yugoslavia, Women and the Wars That Accompanied the Disintegration of Yugoslavia
- War Service/Women's Reserves**
Australia, Women in Service during World War II
Brown, Mary-Agnes
Dalrymple, Mildred Inks
Douglas-Pennant, Violet
Furse, Lady Katherine Symonds
Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I
Great Britain, Women in Service during World War II
Great Britain, Women's Royal Naval Service, Reorganization before World War II
Gwynne-Vaughan, Helen
Hamilton, Cicely Marie
Hello Girls
Hobby, Oveta Culp
Reed, Ester De Berdt
United States, Marine Corps Women's Reserves
United States, Women Airforce Service Pilots
United States, Women Reserves in the Coast Guard
United States, Women's Auxiliary Army Corps
United States, Women's Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron
United States, Women's Flying Training Detachment
Vietnam, U.S. Women Soldiers in
- War Supporters**
Fawcett, Millicent
Hamilton, Cicely Marie
Orczy, Baroness Emma
Pankhurst Family: Emmeline, Christabel, E. Sylvia, and Adela Pankhurst Walsh
- War Work**
Trümmerfrauen
- Writers**
Brittain, Vera
Cannan, May Wedderburn
De Pizan, Christine
Gellhorn, Martha
Hamilton, Cicely Marie
Literature of World War II, U.S., Depiction of Women in
Smith, Winnie
Suttner, Bertha Sophie Felicita von
Van Devanter, Lynda

A

AANS

See Australian Army Nursing Service/Royal Australian Army Nursing Corps

ACQUIRED IMMUNODEFICIENCY SYNDROME

See AIDS, War and the Spread of

ADDAMS, JANE (1860–1935)

Sociologist, social reformer, and pacifist. Jane Addams is probably best remembered as the administrator of a settlement house in Chicago called Hull House and for her effort to improve conditions for racial and ethnic minorities, women, and the poor. She was also an ardent pacifist, however.

Addams, already well known and respected for her work at Hull House and for her support of women's suffrage, developed deep concern about the growing international tension when

she traveled to Europe in 1913 as part of the American delegation to the International Suffrage Alliance. In 1914, she became chairman of a pacifist group called the Women's Peace Party, and the following year, she was elected president of the National Peace Federation. Addams called for neutral countries to become involved in continuous mediation in an effort to end hostilities. With her delegates, she visited fourteen countries and spoke personally with many key governmental figures. In 1915, several of her colleagues set sail to Europe on a Norwegian ship dubbed the *Peace Ship*. Addams was ill and did not make the trip, but she was also against the project, fearing the public would regard it negatively. As she had predicted, many Americans labeled the group traitorous.

In 1915, Addams gave a speech at Carnegie Hall in New York in which she stated that many of the young soldiers she had met related being customarily provided with stimulants before advancing with bayonets. The press interpreted her as stating that no American soldier would carry out a bayonet charge unless he was intoxicated, causing a firestorm of protest against her and other pacifists. Despite mounting criticism, Addams continued to protest the war. Nevertheless, in 1917, Herbert Hoover, director of the Department of Food Administration, commissioned her

AFGHANISTAN



Jane Addams. (National Archives)

to assist in relief for the hungry, a job she eagerly accepted.

Prior to U.S. involvement in World War I, Addams published *New Ideals of Peace* in 1907 in which she made reference to the work of Leo Tolstoy. Addams published some reflections on her wartime activities in *Women at the Hague* in 1915, *The Long Road of Woman's Memory* in 1916, *Peace and Bread in Times of War* in 1922, and *The Second Twenty Years of Hull House* in 1930. Addams was awarded the Nobel Peace Prize in 1931. Four years later, in 1935, she died of cancer in Chicago. Her funeral service was held at the Hull House.

—Leonard A. Steverson

See also Balch, Emily Green; International Congress of Women: Antiwar Protest of Women in World War I; International Manifesto of Women

References and Further Reading

- Levine, Daniel. 1971. *Jane Addams and the Liberal Tradition*. Madison: State Historical Society of Wisconsin.
- Linen, James Weber. 1935. *Jane Addams: A Biography*. New York: Appleton-Century.

AFGHANISTAN

Fate of women in Afghanistan under the Taliban regime, which came to power as a result of the armed struggle with the Soviet Union and its Afghan allies and continued to fight the anti-Taliban Northern Alliance until the U.S. invasion of 2001. When the Taliban took control of Afghanistan in 1996, it not only reversed all of

the gains that women had made in defining their personal rights and in expanding their professional opportunities, it also engaged in a brutal persecution of women that reflected a deep-seated misogyny. This misogyny likely had its roots in the fact that a large percentage of the generation of Afghani men born during the insurgency against Soviet intervention had been raised in refugee camps in Pakistan, where they had been segregated from women and schooled in especially militant forms of Islamic fundamentalism. Apologists for the Taliban have pointed to the requirements it placed on Afghani men as well, as if there were some sort of underlying equivalency in the conditions under which men and women were expected to live. The most salient demand made on men was the requirement that they grow beards, hardly the equivalent of the wholesale restrictions placed on women.

In an article for *The Australian*, Michael Phillips detailed the abuse of women under the Taliban regime, emphasizing that what might have seemed to be egregious incidents had actually become commonplace occurrences. A group of Taliban dragged one woman from her vehicle and beat her to death for having allowed her bare arm to show while she was driving. Actually, this woman could have been killed simply for being behind the wheel because women were proscribed from driving any sort of vehicle.

Another woman was sentenced to death by stoning for attempting to travel overseas with a man who was neither her husband nor a blood relation. Any hint of extramarital or of premarital contact between men and women provoked a severe response. In one of the more infamous tableaux associated with the Taliban regime, public executions were regularly conducted on the field of the Kabul soccer stadium, and a staple of these events was the execution by gunshot to the back of the head of women accused of adultery.

Indeed, under the Taliban, any man had the right to enforce restrictions on women. That is, any man could, on the spot, beat or even kill a woman for a perceived violation of law or cus-

tom. There are stories of women having been whipped by men passing them on the streets because the wind had raised their dresses and had provided a glimpse of their ankles, even though they were wearing heavy, dark stockings.

Beyond the outrageous injustices committed in the name of righteousness, the Taliban simply but brutally reduced the women of Afghanistan to a very circumscribed existence. Before the Taliban had come to power, a large percentage of the professionals in Afghanistan had been women, including some 40 percent of the physicians (*Christian Science Monitor*, November 23, 2001, 10). Although Soviet troops were guilty of atrocities against Afghani women, the Soviet-backed regime did follow the Soviet model in encouraging a progressive attitude toward women's involvement in public life. Women's entry into the professions and other arenas of public life thus became associated, in the eyes of the Islamic insurgents, with the influence of a hated regime. Under the Taliban, women were forbidden to practice any profession. The grimly logical extension of this prohibition was the further proscription of women from any sort of public education.

Moreover, women were forbidden to appear in public unless accompanied by a male relative unless they had covered themselves completely—had covered even their eyes—by wearing the burqa. Even while virtually imprisoned in their homes, women were reminded of their subservient status. To prevent women from being seen without their burqas, the windows of homes were painted. Women were also required to wear soft-soled shoes so that they could not assert their personalities even through their footsteps and so that their footsteps would not provide a reminder to men of their presence.

Women were forbidden to wear any cosmetics, even under the burqa or in the privacy of their own homes. Women could not be photographed, and pictures of women could not be shown in newspapers or periodicals or even displayed within the home. Women were not only banned from making musical recordings, films,

and television programs, they were not permitted to listen to music or watch any sort of visual media. This last restriction also applied to men, although the penalties imposed on men who violated it were not as severe or as rigidly imposed as the penalties on female violators.

In this oppressive environment, seeking psychological treatment for depression would have been viewed as an act of defiance rather than a gesture of desperation. In any case, the ban on female physicians and the severe restrictions on the ability of male physicians to provide meaningful diagnoses and care to female patients combined to make even basic medical care unavailable to most Afghani women. For the sizable number of women whose husbands and male relatives had been killed in the countries' prolonged period of conflict, there were no options other than to beg for handouts from the very men who despised them.

To bring this oppression to the attention of the world, expatriate Afghani women formed the Revolutionary Association of the Women of Afghanistan. This group created a documentary record of specific cases of abuse and supported underground efforts to provide Afghani women with at least rudimentary medical care and education. In large part because of their efforts, worldwide opinion was turned against the Taliban, and funding to improve the condition of Afghani women after the defeat of the Taliban came from many quarters.

—Martin Kich

See also Iran-Iraq War and Gulf War, Impact on Women of Iraq; Islamic Resistance Movements, Women and

References and Further Reading

“Afghan Women as Co-Leaders.” *Christian Science Monitor*, November 23, 2001: 10.
 “Afghanistan: Restrictions on Women Dictated by the Taliban.” *Women’s International Network News* 27(autumn 2001): 41.
 Meier, Andrew. “Stoners.” *New Republic*, October 7, 1996: 14–15.

Phillips, Michael. “Taliban Waging War against the Women of Afghanistan.” *The Australian*, 27 September 1999: 16.
 Spaeth, Anthony, and Alan Pearce. “A Peace That Terrifies.” *Time*, October 14, 1996: 62.
 “The Road to Koranistan.” *The Economist*, 5 October 1996: 21–23.

AGUSTINA DE ARAGÓN (NÉE
 AGUSTINA ZARAGOZA Y
 DOMENECH) (1786–1857)

Spanish heroine during the Peninsular War (1808–1814). Emperor Napoleon’s attempt to dominate Spain in 1808 was met with an outburst of fierce opposition by Spaniards from all walks of life—men, women, children, churchmen, nobility, civilians, peasants, and soldiers. One of the most spectacular examples of popular resistance occurred during the two French sieges-to-the-death on the city of Zaragoza in 1808 and 1809. It was during the first siege, 15 June to 14 August 1808, when the renowned heroine of Spain’s War of Independence, Agustina de Aragón, née Agustina Zaragoza y Domenech, displayed both bravery and temerity against the French besiegers. Agustina became known as *La Astillera* (the Gunner) and *La Defensora de Zaragoza* (the Defender of Zaragoza).

Agustina de Aragón was born on 6 March 1786 in Barcelona of Catalan parents. In 1803, she married Juan Roca Vilaseca, a corporal in the Spanish Artillery. After Roca Vilaseca had fought the French invaders in several battles, he proceeded to Zaragoza. Agustina eventually joined him there. She had acquired a basic knowledge of artillery from her husband, and thus Agustina offered her services to the artillery soldiers. This explains the presence of Agustina at the Portillo Gate battery on the day of the major French onslaught at Zaragoza.

The French siege started on 15 June under the command of Brigadier General Charles

AGUSTINA

LVI.

Her lover sinks—she sheds no ill-timed tear;
Her chief is slain—she fills his fatal post;
Her fellows flee—she checks their base career;
The foe retires—she heads the sallying host:
Who can appease like her a lover's ghost?
Who can avenge so well a leader's fall?
What maid retrieve when man's flushed hope is lost?
Who hang so fiercely on the flying Gaul,
Foiled by a woman's hand, before a battered wall?

—"Childe Harold's Pilgrimage," Lord Byron

The renown of the Maid of Zaragoza (Saragossa) served as an inspiration during the American Civil War.

"The girls, one hundred and three rank and file, each in herself a Joan of Arc or a Maid of Saragossa, have completed their military organization, and are in for the war. They will leave here by steamer for New Orleans on Monday morning. Give them a warm embrace. Hurra [*sic*] for Mississippi!"

—*Natchez Daily Courier* (Mississippi),

April 1, 1862, p. 1, c. 2;

www.uttyler.edu/vbetts/girls_and_guns.htm.

Lefebvre-Desnoettes. He was superseded by General Jean-Antoine Verdier, who started the attack in earnest on 30 June with a twenty-seven-hour bombardment of Zaragoza. This was a plan for an assault on several of the major fortified gates of the city. At the Portillo Gate, most of the Spanish defenders had been killed or wounded; as a result, the earthworks protecting a twenty-four-pound cannon had been destroyed. Early on 2 July, hundreds of French soldiers launched an offensive on the unmanned Portillo Gate battery. Observing the danger, twenty-two-year-old Agustina rushed forward to the cannon, retrieved the still-burning wick from the hands of a fallen gunner, and fired the cannon loaded with grapeshot at the advancing French column. Her bravery incited the Spanish defenders to continue the attack against the now-retreating French, who suffered five hundred casualties. Agustina's courageous single-

handed action and decisiveness had saved the Portillo Gate from falling into the hands of the French. The French soldiers were astounded to encounter women fighting against them. Her reputation spread throughout Spain and Europe. Agustina remained in Zaragoza during the first siege, which the French abandoned in mid-August. During the second siege of 1809, she was involved again in the defense of the city. Agustina was wounded twice during the two sieges. For her remarkable feats of bravery, Agustina was awarded military rank, the privilege to wear a special insignia, and a lifetime pension.

Throughout the remainder of the War of Independence, Agustina de Aragón fought against the French in numerous encounters; she was also present at the sieges of Teruel and Tortosa. When the war ended in 1814, she met King Ferdinand VII on his return to Spain. She later

accompanied her husband to various military posts throughout Spain—Barcelona, Segovia, and Valencia. After her husband's death in 1823, Agustina married a doctor from Cobos Mespezuza, and lived in Valencia, Sevilla, and Ceuta. She died in Ceuta on 29 May 1857, at the age of seventy-one and was buried there. The following inscription was etched on her tomb: "Here lie the remains of the illustrious Heroine, whose deeds of valor and virtue in the War of Independence filled the world with admiration." In June 1870 her remains were moved to Zaragoza and interred in the church of Our Lady of Pilar. In her honor, in 1876, King Alfonso XIII bestowed on her widowed husband and his legitimate descendants the title Baron Cobos de Belchite. On 15 June 1909, to commemorate one hundred years since the sieges, King Alfonso again honored the heroine of Zaragoza by his presence when her remains were moved to the parish church of Our Lady of El Portillo.

Agustina de Aragón personified the tenacious and heroic resistance of the Spanish nation against the French armies of Napoleon during the War of Independence. She became the subject of monuments, literary works, songs, philately, and movies. Agustina was also immortalized in paintings, especially that of Francisco de Goya, in the series, "The Disasters of War," with the title, *What Valor!*

—Gilbert G. Fernandez

See also Vivandières in the French Army

References and Further Reading

- Gomez de Arceche y Moro, Jose. 1868–1903. *Guerra de la Independencia, Historia Militar de España de 1808 a 1814*. 14 vols. Madrid: Imprenta del Deposito de la Guerra.
- Lovett, Gabriel. 1965. *Napoleon and the Birth of Modern Spain*. 2 vols. New York: New York University Press, 1965.
- Priego Lopez, Juan. 1966–2003. *Guerra de la Independencia 1808–1814*. 8 vols. Madrid: Editorial San Martin.
- Rudoff, Raymond. 1974. *War to the Death: The Sieges of Saragossa, 1808–1809*. New York: Macmillan.

AIDS, WAR AND THE SPREAD OF

The role of war in the spread of acquired immunodeficiency syndrome (AIDS) and its impact on women. More than 40 million people in the world today are positive for human immunodeficiency virus (HIV), and more than 20 million people have died from AIDS. In sub-Saharan Africa, the majority of HIV-positive people are women, and the trend in almost all nations is for women to represent an increasing proportion of new infections. Since its emergence, the spread of AIDS has been associated with military conflict, which has particularly affected the HIV rate among women (Beyrer 1998, 198–199).

Conflicts tend to spread HIV for a number of reasons (Irwin, Millen, and Fallows 2003, 35–37). Wars may so weaken national governments that they cannot implement AIDS prevention programs. Rural areas or entire sections of a country may be cut off from the government's health authority. For governments struggling to survive, HIV/AIDS may not be a priority, and warfare consumes resources that could otherwise be devoted to health education and programs. For people facing daily risks in a war zone, the long-term dangers of HIV/AIDS may also not be an immediate concern. During warfare the social order tends to collapse, and many women are put in a position in which it is difficult to deny men sex for protection or resources.

Armies at war can also serve to introduce or accelerate the transmission of HIV. In many developing countries, the HIV rate among soldiers is higher than in the general population and may be more than 50 percent in some armies in southern Africa (Irwin, Millen, and Fallows 2003, 36). By the mid-1990s, some army units in Thailand had a 10 percent HIV rate, whereas in Cambodia the rate reached 30 percent (Beyrer 1998, 140, 145). Historically, most soldiers are more likely to visit prostitutes and to have multiple partners (World Bank 1999, 161). The movement of soldiers thus presents opportunities for the transmission of the virus. The first appear-

ance of AIDS in Uganda (the African state most affected by AIDS early in the pandemic) was associated with the Tanzanian invasion that overthrew Idi Amin in 1978–1979. The virus first appeared in the subcounties through which the victorious troops initially traveled (Hooper 2000, 42–51). In civil wars from Colombia to Kosovo, combatants also have used rape as an instrument of terror, which can leave women not only traumatized but also HIV-positive.

The displacement of large numbers of people also creates opportunities for HIV to spread to new groups. From Africa to Southeast Asia, guerrilla groups have turned to trafficking women to support their activities. Soldiers stationed abroad for peacekeeping may have financial resources denied to local communities and have often fueled the sex trade, as has been the case in Kosovo. In Cambodia in the early 1990s, United Nations peacekeepers seem to have contributed to the rapid spread of HIV, which particularly affected women (Beyrer 1998, 63–65). High rates of HIV tend to weaken the state, which may lead to social unrest and exacerbate regional conflicts (Beyrer 1998, 199).

Warfare tends to seal borders. In some instances, this may have helped to isolate nations from the spread of HIV/AIDS. This appears to have been the case in Nicaragua in the 1980s, during which the Nicaraguan contras conducted warfare along its border, without penetrating deep into the country, or challenging the local authority of the state. But such wars are the exception. In most cases, the closing of borders has accelerated the spread of HIV/AIDS. Warfare impedes the ability of UNAIDS and other organizations to acquire accurate information about HIV rates and epidemiology. Danger and chaos also restrict the ability of nongovernmental organizations to educate and pressure governments to act, which has been the case in Burma and the Democratic Republic of the Congo. For this reason in many developing nations at war, it is difficult to obtain good information about HIV rates among women, although it is clear that they are heavily affected.

—Shawn Smallman

See also Rape in War

References and Further Reading

- Beyrer, Chris. 1998. *War in the Blood: Sex, Politics and AIDS in Southeast Asia*. New York: Zed.
- Hooper, Edward. 2000. *The River: A Journey to the Source of HIV and AIDS*. New York: Little, Brown.
- Irwin, Alexander, Joyce Millen, and Dorothy Fallows. 2003. *Global AIDS: Myths and Facts*. Cambridge, MA: South End.
- World Bank. 1999. *Confronting AIDS: Public Priorities in a Global Epidemic*. New York: Oxford University.

AISHAH (AISHA)
(CA. 614–678)

Wife of the Prophet Muhammad. Daughter of Abu Bakr of Mecca, Aishah belonged to the Bani Tamim clan of the tribe of the Quraysh. Aishah is said to have accepted Islam when she was still young and followed her family to Ethiopia around 615, where some early Muslims immigrated seeking refuge from persecution. After returning to Mecca, Aishah was betrothed to Muhammad and is usually described as his favorite wife. After Muhammad's death in 632, Aishah's father, Abu Bakr, became the first caliph, an event that eventually divided the Muslim community because a small group of Muslims believed that Muhammad's son-in-law Ali should have been chosen to lead. Abu Bakr's reign proved short, and he was succeeded by Umar in 634 and Uthman in 644. In the meantime, Aishah lived in Medina and made several pilgrimages to Mecca. After Uthman was killed in 656, Aishah ventured into political struggle for power against Ali and raised a small army, which confronted Ali's troops outside the city of Basra. Aishah personally directed her forces from the back of a

camel, but the battle, known as the Battle of the Camel, ended in a crushing defeat for her. She was captured and sent to Medina under military escort, where she lived a retired life until she died in approximately 678. Aishah's legacy was, and still is, hotly debated by the Sunni and Shia Muslim scholars. Two events in the early life of this woman, who was married at age nine and widowed at eighteen, became topics of interpretation and debate. The first was the accusation of adultery levied against her in 627 when she was fourteen years old. Although she was declared innocent by divine revelation, she has never been completely vindicated. Later scholars unfavorably compared her to Muhammad's first wife Khadija ("the best of Muslim women") and his daughter Fatima ("pure"). She thus has served the aims of Muslim men who wanted to cultivate the idea that women are the ultimate source of temptation and to whom Aishah represented the force of female sexuality that had to be feared and restrained. The second and even more consequential event was the Battle of the Camel, which served as a proof for arguments against political rights for Muslim women because of concern that they could do only harm to the political and social order.

—*Alexander Mikaberidze*

See also Islamic Resistance Movements, Women and; Zenobia, Queen of Palmyra

References and Further Reading

- Abbott, Nabia. 1942. *Aishah, the Beloved of Mohammed*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
- Keddie, Nikki, and Beth Baron. 1991. *Women in Middle Eastern History: Shifting Boundaries in Sex and Gender*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.
- Spellberg, D. 1994. *Politics, Gender, and the Islamic Past: The Legacy of 'A'isha Bint Abi Bakr*. New York: Columbia University Press.

ALEXANDRA, CZARINA OF RUSSIA (1872–1918)

Czarina of Russia at the time of World War I and the Russian Revolution. Alexandra of Hesse-Darmstadt, a German noblewoman, became empress (czarina) of Russia upon her marriage to the newly installed monarch, Nicholas II, in April 1894. Unpopular both at the imperial court and among the wider public, her influence during World War I played an important role in the decline of political stability within her adopted country. Following the outbreak of revolution in March 1917, Alexandra and her husband were forced from power. They were held captive by the new provisional government and, after a second revolution in November 1917, by the Bolshevik forces led by V. I. Lenin. As White (antirevolutionary) forces neared the Siberian city where they were confined in the summer of 1918, Alexandra, her husband, their children, and the members of their immediate entourage were executed on Lenin's order.

A strikingly beautiful woman, Alexandra suffered from a variety of physical and psychological ailments, including a weak heart. After her marriage to Nicholas, the empress quickly gave birth to four daughters; her failure to produce a son and heir to the throne frustrated her until ten years after her wedding. She was then crushed to learn that the boy, Alexis, was afflicted with hemophilia. Alexandra had long been prone to mystical religious feelings and attracted to religious charlatans. Starting in 1907, Alexandra fell under the influence of Rasputin, a dissolute, self-proclaimed holy man who seemed able to ease her son's suffering. Alexandra's apparent domination by Rasputin led to widespread and salacious rumors of a sexual liaison between the two.

The outbreak of World War I heightened Alexandra's influence. Although the empress's German origins intensified public hostility toward her, Nicholas's departure for the fighting front in the late summer of 1915 made Alexandra the key figure in the Russian monarchy. At the urging of Rasputin, she resisted political re-



Russian Czarina Alexandra Fyodorovna.
(Bettmann/Corbis)

forms such as giving more power to the Duma, Russia's representative assembly, and arranged the dismissal of capable government leaders such as the war minister, Andrei Polivanov. She also arranged the appointment of incompetent protégés of Rasputin, including Russia's new prime minister, Boris Stürmer, in January 1916. Alexandra ignored warnings that appointing a top official with a German name would be a grave provocation for the Russian public in the midst of a bitter war.

As Russia's wartime difficulties grew, Alexandra became increasingly determined to serve as a bastion of monarchical strength, even trying to influence the strategy of the Russian army. In the winter of 1916–1917, as starvation spread in the country's cities and the army was wracked by desertion, she insisted that the basic loyalty of Russia's peasant population would overcome such difficulties.

The outbreak of revolution in March 1917 led to the collapse of the monarchy as Nicholas abdicated and the imperial family was imprisoned. No foreign government would offer them sanctuary, and the former royalty, their children, and a few servants were subjected to increasingly harsh conditions of captivity. They were dispatched to western Siberia shortly before Lenin and the Bolsheviks took power in November 1917. Rescue seemed possible when civil war broke out and forces sympathetic to the czar approached Ekaterinburg where he and his family and servants were held. Late on the night of 16 July 1918, however, Alexandra and the rest of her family were shot.

—Neil M. Heyman

See also Russian Revolution and Women

References and Further Reading

- Carrère d'Encausse, Hélène. 2000. *Nicholas II: The Interrupted Transition*. Translated from the French by George Holoch. New York: Holmes and Meier.
- Erickson, Carolly. 2001. *Alexandra: The Last Empress*. New York: St. Martin's.
- King, Greg. 1994. *The Last Empress: The Life and Times of Alexandra Fedorovna, Tsarina of Russia*. New York: Birch Lanes.
- Massie, Robert. 1995. *The Romanovs: The Final Chapter*. New York: Random House.

ALGERIA, WOMEN IN THE WAR OF NATIONAL LIBERATION

The role of women in the Algerian people's armed struggle for independence waged against the French from 1954 until 1962. The French held on to Algeria more tenaciously than Vietnam because they regarded it to be an integral part of France and approximately 1 million French colons resided there. On the Algerian side, women played a decisive role in the

national liberation struggle. “The mobilization of a large segment of the population, particularly women, was a determining element in the victory” (Amrane 1982, 124). This was especially remarkable considering the traditional lives that most Algerian women led. They were excluded from the public sphere. They were almost entirely deprived of access to education; they were not allowed to vote; and they played no leading role in Algerian political parties. Nevertheless, during the war of liberation, they struggled “at the side of men, and rendered invaluable assistance and support to them” (Amrane 1982, 125). The women militants, like the majority of the Muslim population, were predominantly rural, and they operated in the countryside. Those more directly involved served as nurses; transported arms; or provided shelter, support, and information to fighters. A larger segment of Muslim women sympathized with the militants and provided assistance to those who directly assisted them. “[W]omen kept the network of male soldiers mobile, alive and protected” (Ladewig 2000, 247).

“The French realized that the participation of women in the war kept alive an organizationally and militarily overwhelmed resistance movement” (Ladewig 2000, 246). The French attempted to use Algerian women as their tool to break down traditional Algerian society. They promoted “unveiling” and trumpeted their opposition to patriarchal society. However, their effort failed. Algerian women coalesced behind the cause of national liberation. “Algerian women never envisioned female liberation as being a necessary component of national liberation” (Ladewig 2000, 246). Rather, in their struggle to liberate themselves from French colonial subjection, they reaffirmed their cultural distinctiveness. The veil, which could be put aside at will, proved a valuable tool during the struggle, enabling Algerian women to assume diverse identities at will. This was particularly valuable during the 1957 Battle of Algiers, during which the aid and action of militant women was essential.

Although on one level the French attempted to depict themselves as liberators of women, many Algerian women experienced violence perpetrated by the French during the war of liberation. “Many women were beaten, raped, and even tortured within their own homes” (Amrane 1982, 127). The fear of sexual violation by French soldiers motivated many young Algerian women, with the blessing of their families, to join the guerrilla resistance, the Army of National Liberation (ANL). Women aged between thirty-one and fifty-one, however, participated at a proportionately higher rate in the ANL resistance (Amrane 1982, 127). Nevertheless, it was exceptionally rare for a woman to be an actual fighter, for there were more men willing to fight than there were arms. Most women who joined the ANL were relegated to the “feminine” functions of nursing and cooking.

Women, because they roused less suspicion, did commit acts of terrorism, but this was extremely rare. Perhaps 2 percent of the women militants (Amrane 1982, 132) planted bombs, assisted in assassinations, or committed assassinations. Ladewig asserts that less than seventy women “directly worked with explosives or carried arms” (Ladewig 2000, 247). French courts condemned six women terrorists to death, but pardoned them because of their sex.

Frantz Fanon created a myth of the Algerian woman who liberated herself by participating in the struggle for national liberation on an equal basis with Algerian men (Helie-Lucas 1988, 175). After Algeria gained its independence in 1962, discrimination on the basis of sex was outlawed by the constitution. There was a dramatic increase in educational opportunities for females, and females were admitted to engineering, medical, and flight training in the national People’s Army. Nevertheless, despite the expectations of Fanon, women remained largely relegated to traditional roles and their participation in politics and the economy remained limited.

—Bernard Cook

See also Rape in War

References and Further Reading

- Amrane, Djamila. 1982. "Algeria: Anti-Colonial War." In *Female Soldier-Combatants or Noncombatants: Historical and Contemporary Perspectives*, edited by Nancy Loring Goldman, translated by Richard Stites, 123–135. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Helie-Lucas, Marie-Aimee. 1988. "The Role of Women during the Algerian Liberation Struggle and After." In *Women and the Military System*, edited by Eva Isakson, 171–189. New York: Harvester Wheatsheaf.
- Horne, Alistar. 1977. *The Savage War of Peace: Algeria 1954–1962*. London: Penguin.
- Ladewig, Nicole F. 2000. "Between Worlds: Algerian Women in Conflict." In *A Soldier and a Woman: Sexual Integration in the Military*, edited by Gerard J. DeGroot and Corinna Peniston-Bird, 240–255. Harlow, England: Pearson Education.

ALLEN, ELIZA (B. 1826)

Female volunteer who, disguised as a man, fought with the U.S. Army in the Mexican War of 1846–1848. Eliza Allen was born on January 27, 1826, in Eastport, Maine, where she enjoyed a life of comfort on the family estate. Trouble between Allen and her parents began after a man named Billings moved from Canada into the vicinity of Eastport. Billings was a poor man who worked as a day laborer to support his large family. His eldest son, William, also a day laborer, was frequently employed by Allen's father. Eliza and William Billings fell in love. After many secret meetings, Eliza pledged her troth to William despite knowing her parents would not approve of marriage to a man beneath their social status. Informed of the couple's intentions, the Allens forbade Eliza to see William. Eliza was told that if she pursued the relationship, she would be disinherited and turned out of the family mansion.

Allen received word that Billings was leaving Maine to restore harmony to the Allen family. Billings joined a volunteer company to fight in the Mexican War. Allen had read accounts of Deborah Sampson in the American Revolution and Lucy Brewer in the War of 1812 disguising themselves as men. Thanks to family wealth, she had enough personal money to go in search of Billings. She left home, cut her hair, dressed in men's clothing, and caught a ship to Portland. Using the name George Mead as her alias, she found an officer who would muster her without any formal examination. Allen then sailed with her company to join General Zachary Taylor's forces in Texas.

In March 1847, Allen participated in General Winfield Scott's spectacular landing of nearly 10,000 troops in the Mexican port city of Veracruz. Scott successfully carried out the largest amphibious attack in history to that date, but Mexican guerrilla fighters consistently harassed his troops as they advanced toward Mexico City. Allen received a severe cut to her left arm from a Mexican sword at the battle of Cerro Gordo. There she was also reunited with her beloved Billings, who was also wounded in the battle. Remaining behind with the sick and wounded, Allen and Billings entered the Mexican capital after Scott had taken possession of it. Allen, who did not reveal herself to Billings, was quartered with him in a private house during the U.S. occupation. After a peace treaty was signed, Allen and her fellow Americans sailed to New York City, where they were discharged.

Billings and his mates soon lost their military pay gambling. They took work as crewmembers aboard a ship to California, where they would pay off their passage prospecting for gold. In pursuit of Billings, Allen also boarded a ship bound for California. In the Strait of Magellan, Allen's ship rescued Billings and his shipwrecked companions. Still disguised as a man, Allen panned for gold in California. After regaining funds, the group of former volunteers sailed from San Francisco to Boston, arriving in September 1849. Allen then revealed her true

identity to Billings, and the couple was eventually married with the consent of Allen's parents. Allen described her experiences in her 1851 memoir, *The Female Volunteer; or the Life, and Wonderful Adventures of Miss Eliza Allen, A Young Lady of Eastport, Maine*, a highly emotional plea and warning to parents to allow children to choose their own spouses.

—David M. Carletta

See also Borginis, Sarah

References and Further Reading

Allen, Eliza. 1851. *The Female Volunteer; or the Life, and Wonderful Adventures of Miss Eliza Allen, A Young Lady of Eastport, Maine*. Ohio: H. M. Rulison.

AMAZONS

Greek legends of Amazons, warrior women who lived beyond the borders of civilization and inverted normal gender roles. According to legend, this tribe of female warriors was descended from Ares, Greek god of war, and the nymph Harmonia. They were devotees of Artemis, goddess of the hunt. The first mention of the Amazons appears in Homer's *Iliad*, which tells that they assisted the Trojans in the Trojan War. Accounts of Amazons usually placed them even further back in a mythic past, and only the legends of Alexander the Great place them in historical time. The historian Arrian reports an account in which Alexander met Amazons, but adds that he does not believe it.

Most often, legends place the Amazons on the southeastern shore of the Black Sea, but as the Greeks explored and settled that region, the tales situated the Amazons still farther away, in Scythia or even North Africa, beyond civilization. There may have been a historic core to the legends of Amazons: archaeologists have discovered that in one Scythian tribe, which Hero-

dotus called the Sauromatians, women hunted and fought alongside their men, and weapons have been discovered in their tombs. The legend was popular in Greece, however, as an exotic example of the "barbarous" world where all natural human law was overthrown.

The historian Strabo tells that the Amazons were an exclusively female tribe. They reproduced by visiting their neighbors each year and engaging in promiscuous sex. When the children were born, the women kept the female infants, but sent the males back to their fathers. This in itself is an inversion of normal Greek practice, which valued male children over females. Diodorus presents an even more inverted picture, one that was probably deeply shocking to Greco-Roman audiences. He tells that the Amazons did indeed live with men, but men who served as househusbands while the women were warriors, hunters, and rulers. The Amazons preserved this reverse gender discrimination, according to Diodorus, by dislocating the legs of their boy children, crippling them for life. Later writers depict Amazons even abandoning the nurture of their female children. Some authors write that, to keep their breasts from growing, the Amazons fed their daughters mares' milk instead of breast-feeding them. More radically, later authors produced a spurious etymology for *a-mazon*, which can be interpreted as "without a breast." They report that the Amazons cut off or cauterized the right breasts of young girls, so they would not be discommoded when drawing a bow.

In legend, the Amazons are always gloriously defeated. Heracles defeated and killed the Amazon queen Hippolyta. The hero Theseus later married her sister Antiope, leading to an Amazonian invasion of Athens that was only repelled after a desperate struggle—the Athenian victory over the Amazons was carved on the shield of the great statue of Athena Parthenos on the Acropolis. Similarly, Queen Penthesilea brought her army to help Troy but was killed by Achilles in battle. Achilles falling hopelessly in love with Penthesilea as she died was a popular image in art. A recurrent theme was that the Amazon war-

riors were wild and had to be tamed by Greek men, who were endowed with the superior gift of reason. The ultimate purpose of these tales was to reinforce Greek ideas of gender, not to overturn them.

Fascination with Amazons—with the *possibility* that women could fight and triumph in the men's world of the battlefield—continues to the present, as attested by Wonder Woman and Zena the Warrior Princess. Legends of the Amazons have also been used to explain fighting women in other cultures, and it is thus that the Amazon River in Brazil got its name after explorers saw women fighting there alongside men.

—Phyllis G. Jestice

See also Greek Women and War in Antiquity

References and Further Reading

- Lefkowitz, Mary. 1986. *Women in Greek Myth*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press.
 Tyrrell, William B. 1984. *Amazons: A Study in Athenian Myth-Making*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press.

AMERICAN REVOLUTION, ROLE OF WOMEN IN THE

Women's roles during the Revolutionary War in America between 1776 and 1783. Americans declared independence from Britain in 1776, and the British sent troops to the colonies to quell the revolt. Patriots (Americans who supported the Revolution) fought against the British and colonial loyalists (Americans who did not want independence from Britain). During the war, some women helped the patriots, and others sided with the loyalists. Some women, although not loyalists themselves, were affected by their husbands' loyalty to Britain, which jeopardized their safety during the war. The same was true for women whose husbands were patriots.

Throughout the war, many women maintained the household economy (i.e., they tended

to farm work and family businesses) and protected their property while husbands and male relatives were at war. The wartime role of these women was to maintain such activities until the men returned home. In addition, both the British and American armies had women camp followers, who lived in the camps, helping out with chores. Some women even enlisted in the American Continental Army disguised as men, although this was illegal. The army's medical units included women who served as nurses. Women further supported the effort by feeding and providing clothing for the soldiers. Some loyalist women passed information about American troops to the British, and women could be accused of being spies or sympathizers simply by giving sanctuary to British soldiers in their homes. Married women faced property confiscation if their husbands were loyalists. Rape was another reality women faced during wartime when either army occupied an area. In Connecticut and New Jersey, rape and gang rape occurred. It became a symbol of power for the victorious side, with women the victims of this practice.

On January 1, 1776, the Continental Army began recruiting to build up its infantry, rifle, and artillery regiments, which included more than 20,000 men. If a woman wanted to enlist, she did so illegally by disguising herself as a man. For example, Deborah Sampson used the name Robert Shurtleff to enlist. It was not until she was wounded in battle and consequently undressed by a doctor that her true identity was discovered. However, her brave and patriotic behavior received compliments rather than punishment. A few women went onto the battlefield with their husbands or took their husbands' places after they were killed on the battlefield. For instance, Mary Hays fired artillery cannons against the British and stayed with her husband, a gunner, during the war. Margaret Corbin took over her husband's cannon when her husband was killed by enemy fire. The army allowed women to stay with their husbands, fathers, or sons mainly because some men might not have joined the regiments if their women were not



Women intelligence riders from South Carolina during the Revolutionary War intercepting dispatches. (Bettmann/Corbis)

allowed to go with them. Some women brought their children with them as well.

At first women camp followers were seen as a burden for the troops, but later even George Washington, commander in chief of the Continental Army, would see the value of women in the camps. They could cook and do laundry. They could also serve as nurses, although their status was low among the hospital staff, and their main duties were custodial. Nurses were also paid poorly because their work was not seen as skilled employment. Female nurses could, however, free up men from taking care of the wounded, allowing more men to fight for the army. In 1777, a Continental Army Medical Corp requirement indicated that every one hundred wounded needed one matron and ten female nurses. The nurses took nonmedical direction from the matron, who supervised the hospital and distributed medicine under the supervision of a surgeon. Women were involved in other activities at camps and battle sites as well; they molded bullets, carried water and gunpowder, and assisted at the cannons, for example.

Although women were seen as nonofficial auxiliaries, they did draw rations from the army; children who accompanied them received a half ration. When food supplies were tight, women and children used up part of the rations, which the soldiers desperately needed. Nonetheless, women did have their function in the army, and their tasks were valuable, especially because men were not adept at chores such as cleaning and mending and washing clothes.

At the start of the Revolution, the British army limited the number of women accompanying its troops to one woman for every ten men, but this ratio later increased. The Continental Army did not set a quota for the ratio of men to women in the regiments because this would force some refugee women to leave the camps when the army needed them to take care of various tasks.

In general, women's participation in combat depended on whether men were available to fight the enemy. As men left home to join the army, few, if any, were left to defend the towns and villages. Thus, many women defended their communities from the British by joining local militia groups or serving as guards. They dressed in men's clothing and armed themselves with muskets or pitchforks.

Other women were left behind after their husbands left for Britain or joined the British loyalists, and the wives of loyalists were regarded as enemies. Because married women were not considered independent from their husbands and did not have property rights, the leaders of the American Revolution seized the property and personal belongings of women married to loyalists; this included items such as carriages, jewels, clothes, and furniture. Loyalists' wives were eventually allowed to leave or were expelled by the patriots. When a woman's husband sided and served with the British, she automatically fell under suspicion of treason. If she wrote to her husband at all, she was considered a traitor. Mobs threatened women who were suspected of helping the British. Women who actually did so certainly risked their lives. In New Jersey, the penalty for treason was

death. Nevertheless, the first time a woman was convicted, she only had to pay a fine of three hundred pounds and serve one year in prison. If convicted a second time, she would receive the death penalty, and no reprieve would be granted.

In Pennsylvania, New Jersey, Maryland, and Virginia, some women helped to raise funds for the Continental Army. General Washington worried that giving money to soldiers directly was not a good idea and suggested that the women instead give the funds to the government. The women refused, and Washington then suggested they provide shirts to the soldiers instead of cash. The women agreed and used the money to buy linen to make clothing for the troops.

During the war, approximately 20,000 women served in various capacities with the Continental Army. A few hundred more were enlisted in various local and state units (Gundersen 1996, 164).

—Edy M. Parsons

See also Corbin, Margaret Cochrane; Fulton, Sarah Bradlee; Greene, Catherine Littlefield; Ludington, Sybil; Martin, Grace, and Martin, Rachel; Molly Pitcher; Samson, Deborah; Washington, Martha Dandridge Custis; Zane, Elizabeth

References and Further Reading

- Bohrer, Melissa Lukeman. 2003. *Glory, Passion, and Principle: The Story of Eight Remarkable Women at the Core of the American Revolution*. New York: Atria Books.
- DePauw, Linda Grant. 1981. "Women in Combat." *Armed Forces and Society* 7 (2): 220–225.
- Evans, Elizabeth. 1975. *Weathering the Storm: Women of the American Revolution*. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons.
- Gundersen, Joan R. 1996. *To Be Useful to the World: Women in Revolutionary America, 1740–1790*. New York: Twayne.
- Kerber, Linda K. 1980. *Women of the Republic: Intellect and Ideology in Revolutionary America*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina.

ANDEAN REBELLION OF THE EIGHTEENTH CENTURY

Role of women in eighteenth-century Andean rebellions against the Spanish. The eighteenth century in the Andes has been called the age of Andean rebellion. Starting in 1730 with a rebellion in Cochabamba, the era was marked by numerous localized village revolts, insurrections, and protests, culminating in the firestorm of the Great Rebellion of 1780–1782. This violent upheaval in southern Peru and territories in present-day Bolivia and northern Chile, according to probably exaggerated contemporary estimates, left more than 100,000 dead. The rebellion comprised two large insurgencies, which gradually merged during the first half of 1781: the Túpac Amaru uprising in southern Peru and the Túpac Catari uprising in Charcas (present-day Bolivia). Women played a central role in the Great Rebellion, as both protagonists and victims. The participation of rebel women in these insurgencies often stemmed from their insertion into the kinship network of a male insurgent leader, but they led as well as followed, and some acted entirely of their own volition. That they were able to do so owed much to the remarkable relative freedom that rural, especially indigenous, women enjoyed in eighteenth-century rural Andean society.

After two centuries of colonial rule, Andean women of the eighteenth century, despite legal provisions that ostensibly circumscribed their freedom of action, were deeply enmeshed in all areas of economic and social life. Restrictions bore more heavily on elite Hispanic women than on their indigenous or mixed-race counterparts. The exceptions to this rule were female slaves, as distinct from free blacks; the conditions in which the slaves lived ranged from poor to appalling. Yet here, too, ways were found to navigate legal prohibitions to one's own advantage. Domestic slaves, particularly those in urban areas, often enjoyed a fair measure of de facto liberty, at least in comparison to their counterparts on rural haciendas and coastal plantations, whose living conditions were often dire.

Women immersed themselves fully in productive and commercial endeavors, despite ostensibly being severely restricted by law from the freedom to work in a trade or to engage in commerce. Marriage, of course, was the most viable way of life for women of the time, but numerous middle- and lower-class Hispanic women earned their daily bread as market traders or tailors, by making and renting festive costumes, by conducting long-distance commerce, and as petty *rentières* and money lenders. Among the upper tiers of society, not a few women held sway over family haciendas and estancia operations; others ran textile manufactories both large and small. From surviving notarized testaments, it is evident that many such women accumulated impressive fortunes and exercised de facto influence, both over their extended families and within colonial society.

Away from the cities, rural women, especially indigenous women, appear to have had fewer constraints. It was among the overwhelmingly more numerous indigenous population that women came to exercise an influence that took them to war in roles ranging from leaders (*cacicas*, or female chiefs) to camp followers (*rabanas*). Rural areas, however far-flung, did have strong links to the cities; members of the indigenous communities realized that cities offered a chance to market their produce and a place where they might find work. It was the city that provided an opportunity for women to become wage earners. This was not a woman's individual decision, but a collective community, or at least familial, strategy to earn money for taxes and to obtain merchandise and foodstuff otherwise unavailable through subsistence farming and village markets. Urban domestic service in the coastal cities depended heavily on slave or free black workers, but in the highland cities such as La Paz and Cuzco, indigenous servants were the norm; young indigenous servant women, in particular, were ubiquitous in urban households. Indigenous and mixed-race women (*castas*, *mestizas*, *mulattas*, *cholas*, *pardas*) had a salient presence in late colonial protests, whether violent or peaceful.

In both cities and the country, indigenous and caste women shared the general malaise that led to the outbreak of the Great Rebellion of 1780–1782 in the southern Andes. Three women in particular stood out as leaders in 1780–1781: Micaela Bastidas, wife of José Gabriel Túpac Amaru; Bartolina Sisa, wife of Túpac Catari; and Túpac Catari's sister, Gregoria Apasa, who upon becoming the consort (*amante*) of Andrés Túpac Amaru, helped to unify the two insurgencies following the capture and execution of her brother. These three consorts were more than the “women behind the throne.” They played an active role that perhaps owed more to indigenous understandings of shared familial or clan responsibilities than to European notions of patriarchal leadership. In rural society, female authority was more pronounced among the upper tiers of indigenous society, manifest in the widespread phenomenon of female incumbency of the indigenous chieftainships (*cacicazgos*). These were the *cacicas*, whose authority spanned the full gamut of functions associated with this office. Their authority ranged from sole responsibility or shared responsibility with their spouses to nominal responsibility in which the woman inherited the office from a relative, the duties of which were performed thenceforth by her husband.

The most prominent of these three figures was Micaela Bastidas. At times, she appears to have directed rebel operations and to have had a better sense of military priorities than her husband, whose undoubted charisma was not always matched by a clear strategic vision or a recognition of the need to take urgent action to forestall looming military and logistical crises. Bastidas, on the contrary, combined strategic clarity with a heightened sense of urgency. Her demonstrated ability as a military planner and staff officer was superior to that of her husband. Moreover, Bastidas was reputed to have been fiercer than her husband, issuing threats to the fainthearted and ordering reprisals against deserters, peninsular Spaniards (*chape-tones*), and even creoles (*españoles*), although

she herself had been registered as a Creole (*española*) at her baptism. It was alleged that her orders and threats led to the death of many *chapetones* and Creoles in the provinces. She employed a mixture of menace and persuasion in forging and maintaining alliances and allegiances, oversaw prisoners and their interrogation, and directed recruiting efforts once the rebellion had commenced. She also made rebel loyalists and her “favorites” officeholders (*caciques*, *alcaldes*) in many highland villages. Bastidas received aid from her kinswomen, among whom Cecilia Túpac Amaru and Marcela Castro are the best known. She ruled with an iron hand at the rebel headquarters in Tungasuca while her husband was on expeditions. She sent written orders to the provinces, organized logistics, and even reprimanded her spouse over his lack of urgency and inability to understand the ebb and flow of the fortunes of war. Bastidas combined decisiveness in command with a clear appreciation of strategic and tactical considerations; her grasp of details was as assured as her astute appreciation of the strategic imperatives.

Bartolina Sisa did not exercise control over rebel partisans to nearly such a degree as did Bastidas, but she did accompany her husband and his army in battle. Indeed, her husband similarly lacked the stature of Túpac Amaru, such that Catari needed to shore up his own uncertain authority by invoking Amaru’s name. Nevertheless, Bartolina Sisa remained at the center of operations in upper Peru. In particular, she helped form, organize, and direct the *catarista* army. Gregoria Apasa, however, surpassed Sisa’s achievements and leadership status, and her role from mid-1781 was more akin to that of Bastidas in the northern movement. By that time, José Gabriel had been captured and executed, and his nephew Andrés (Mendigure) Túpac Amaru had taken effective control of the greater insurgency. His personal liaison with Túpac Catari’s sister facilitated the union of the two movements. Their relationship was part political, part personal, and it is impossible to ascertain precisely the extent to which An-

drés and Gregoria shared power. Clearly, however, she played a major role in the combined operations of the joint insurgency. In a notorious incident, when rebel forces took the town of Sorata, she and Andrés jointly sat in judgment of the captives, many of whom were summarily executed.

Gregoria Apasa became popularly known as queen (*reina*) of the southern insurgency. Micaela Bastidas was deferred to variously as *la cacica*, *señora gobernadora*, or simply “wife of the rebel.” There was, however, tacit recognition of her de facto regal status: Túpac Catari called himself viceroy and his wife *vicereine*, thereby acknowledging the sovereignty of José Gabriel Túpac Amaru; Micaela was thus implicitly regarded as queen, in contrast to Bartolina’s *vicereine*. Titles were important within indigenous society; rank lent elite authority. This held true for both women and men. Micaela derived her authority from José Gabriel’s status as Inca. There were, however, other women who collaborated closely during the rebellion whose elite status sprang from their high birth or innate talents. The *cacica* of the towns of Acos and Acomayo, Tomasa Tito Condemaita, led the Indians within her chiefdom to the field of battle. The *cacica* of Combapata, Catalina Salas Pachacuti, was of noble Incan lineage; her husband was Ramón Moscoso, who derived his local authority from her inherited office and who was the cousin of the powerful bishop of Cuzco. Therefore, Doña Catalina enjoyed an elite status in both town and country. We know less about a third rebel *cacica*, Francisca Herrera, who nevertheless is perhaps the most interesting of these three: she is also described as a *beata*, or holy woman. This intriguing aside hints at a religious well-spring of female political authority in rural areas.

There is similar testimony in two later movements: in Lircay (Huancavelica) in 1811 and in Ocongate in the Cuzco region in 1814–1815. During the former, which was a localized messianic revolt, the charismatic authority of the leader was said to derive from his mother, an

alleged sorceress (*bruja*); in the latter case, a major indigenous insurgency within the 1814 so-called revolution of the fatherland, the wife of the principal insurgent was also said to be a *bruja*. In any event, religious praxis and political authority were probably indivisible within native Andean society, and political authority in the colonial Andes encompassed the principle that a woman or a man might hold political office, either separately or jointly.

It was therefore right and proper that female leaders such as Bastidas, Sisa, Apasa, and Tito Condemaita should be tried for treason and related crimes; they could hardly expect a plea of mitigation, based on compulsion from their spouses, to succeed. It followed ineluctably that they would be found guilty, and the penalty for treason was death. Because of their culpability, many women died, because the death penalty was judged appropriate to their crimes. What was not consonant with due legal process, however, was the horrific manner of their execution. A few details will suffice: Bastidas's tongue was cut out, and she was then garroted. Because of the slenderness of her neck, this method was unsuccessful, and the two official executioners tied ropes around her neck, which each pulled, all the while punching her stomach and breasts until she died. Apasa was paraded with a crown made of nails, and Sisa was ritually humiliated in a similar manner. The corpses of all three were decapitated and dismembered, with their heads, arms, and hands placed on pikes at select villages throughout the southern highlands. If under prevailing legal norms they deserved death, the manner of their execution was unwarranted—and is resented to the present day by Peruvians and Bolivians. Today these women are venerated as martyrs and heroines in the struggle for freedom from Spanish tyranny.

—David Cahill

See also Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements in; Peru: Shining Path

References and Further Reading

- Campbell, Leon. "Women and the Great Rebellion in Peru, 1780–1783," *The Americas* 42, no. 2 (1985):163–196.
- Martín, Luis. 1983. *Daughters of the Conquistadores: Women of the Viceroyalty of Peru*. Dallas, TX: Southern Methodist University Press.
- Silverblatt, Irene. 1987. *Moon, Sun, and Witches: Gender Ideologies and Class in Inca and Colonial Peru*. Princeton: Princeton University Press.
- Socolow, Susan Migden. 2000. *The Women of Colonial Latin America*. Cambridge, England: Cambridge University Press.
- Stavig, Ward. 1999. *The World of Túpac Amaru: Conflict, Community, and Identity in Colonial Peru*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.
- Thomson, Sinclair. 2002. *We Alone Will Rule: Native Andean Politics in the Age of Insurgency*. Madison: University of Wisconsin.

ANDERSON, LOUISA GARRETT (1873–1943)

Cofounder of the British Women's Hospital Corps (WHC) during World War I. Dr. Louisa Garrett Anderson, surgeon and militant suffragette, was born at Aldeburgh, Suffolk, on July 28, 1873, to Elizabeth Garrett Anderson, first female doctor in Britain, and James G. S. Anderson, a shipping magnate. She graduated from London School of Medicine for Women in 1897. Louisa then began private practice. Unlike her mother, Louisa Garrett Anderson did not face opposition to her medical education. By the beginning of the twentieth century, the right of women in Britain to study medicine and enter private practice was accepted. Nevertheless, subtle discrimination remained. The women of Britain had to struggle for emancipation, and Louisa took a leading part in this struggle.

Louisa Anderson was a militant suffragette and joined the Women's Social and Political Union (WSPU) in 1906. The organization demanded voting rights for women. Its members

utilized illegal methods when their demand was rejected by Parliament in 1906. In 1912, Anderson was arrested in one violent incident when shops were attacked and stones thrown at the prime minister's residence, 10 Downing Street. At the outbreak of World War I, the suffragettes demanded the right to serve the nation. Anderson along with a fellow doctor and suffragette, Flora Murray, established the Women's Hospital Corps (WHC) in September 1914. Anderson was the chief surgeon of the corps between 1914 and 1918. Because there was still considerable opposition in the British War Office to using the services of female surgeons, both went to work for the French Red Cross. They set up military hospitals for the French army in Paris and Wimereux. The War Office then recognized the work they were doing and asked the WHC to manage the Endell Street Military Hospital in London, which was staffed completely by women—from its top surgeon to the cooks. Anderson's mother, Elizabeth Garrett Anderson, also worked at the hospital. She and the other women doctors experimented with new treatments and gained a high level of medical experience. The hospital functioned until 1919 and treated 26,000 patients.

The efforts of Anderson and the other suffragettes were vindicated when British women gained the right to vote in 1918. Anderson, who did not marry, wrote medical articles after the war and in 1939 authored a biography of her mother. Anderson died on November 15, 1943, and was buried near her home at Paul End.

—*Patit Paban Mishra*

See also Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's Hospitals; Stobart, Mabel

References and Further Reading

- Leneman, Leah. 1994. *In the Service of Life: The Story of Elsie Inglis and the Scottish Women's Hospitals*. Edinburgh: Mercat.
- Stobart, Mabel Annie Boulton. 1935. *Miracles and Adventures: An Autobiography*. London: Rider and Co.

ARAB-ISRAELI WARS

The impact on women of the wars fought between the Israelis and Arabs since the proclamation of an independent Jewish state in 1948. During any national emergency, such as a war, women's traditional roles in society are usually altered to meet the needs of the population in crisis. The Arab-Israeli conflict is no exception. For more than fifty years, Israeli and Palestinian women have fought with knives, guns, and bombs; they have formed clubs and associations to achieve peace; and they have fought against the traditional gender roles in Jewish and Arab societies. In other words, Palestinian and Israeli women have been fighting a multifront war: against each other, against those who wage war, and against their traditional roles in society.

Gender itself has been an important element of the conflict. For example, the Israeli prime minister, David Ben-Gurion, called on Jewish women to have at least four children each and stated that to do so was their duty and obligation to the newly established Jewish state. For Israeli women who had ten or more children, Ben-Gurion bestowed the title "heroine mothers" and distributed monetary awards. Palestinian women were considered to be the "mothers of the nation," and it would be through their reproductive prowess that the continued expression of a Palestinian reality would live on (Sharoni 1995, 34–35). For both Arabs and Jews, motherhood is seen as the highest expression of nationalism, sometimes referred to as "patriotic wombs" (Kandiyoti 1996, 91).

During the Great Revolt of 1936–1939, Palestinian women provided food, water, medical attention, and shelter for countless Palestinian guerillas, and they smuggled weapons through British checkpoints. During the Intifada (the Palestinian "uprising"; 1987–1993) Palestinian women threw stones, marched in protest, burned tires, and acted as field medics to the injured. Most recently, some Palestinian women have become suicide bombers. On January 27, 2002, Wafa Idris became the first Palestinian woman to do so. One month later, Darine

Abu Aisha, an undergraduate at the Al-Najah University in Nablus, blew herself up at an Israeli army checkpoint.

Israeli women must serve two years in the military, yet the vast majority of Jewish women perform what are described as traditional womanly roles as they fulfill their obligations to the state in such positions as clerks, secretaries, typists, kitchen workers, and entertaining the male troops. The rest are loaned out to various Israeli government agencies to work as teachers, nurse's aides, and other traditional womanly jobs (Sharoni 1995, 39). Israeli women in the military belong to a gender-specific organization called the Women's Corp, referred to as *chen* in Hebrew, which translates as "charm and grace" (Sharoni 1995, 46). As Rachel Persico, who spent two years in the Israeli military, points out, "women are the auxiliary force." When the October War began in 1973, all women, civilians and those in the military, were evacuated from the conflict zone (Kandiyoti 1996, 117).

The Palestinian Women's Union was the first all-woman Palestinian group and it was established in 1921 primarily to demonstrate against Jewish immigration and to halt Palestinian prisoners from being tortured by the British governing authority. The Arab Women's Congress called on Arab women to form women's groups throughout the country to fight politically against increased Jewish immigration in particular and the British Mandate in general (Sharoni 1995, 59).

Between the establishment of Israel in 1948 and the 1967 War, or the Six-Day War, Palestinian women continued to establish political organizations, such as the General Union of Palestinian Women in 1964. Yet increasing pressures from the governments of Jordan, Egypt, and Syria as well as the continued occupation resulted in a rather stunted political front. Nonetheless, Palestinian women found spaces for themselves in such political organizations as the Palestinian Women's Association (1964), which sent delegates to attend the Palestine National Council in Jerusalem in 1965. Their work in the West Bank, however, was officially termi-

nated in 1965 when King Hussein of Jordan declared that all organizations tied to the Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO) be officially disbanded (Sharoni 1995, 61–62).

When the Intifada broke out in 1983, numerous Jewish women's organizations emerged such as Women in Black, Israeli Women against Occupation, Peace Quilt, Women for Women Political Prisoners, and Women's Peace Net. Holding signs on Jerusalem street corners that read "Stop the Occupation" in Arabic, English, and Hebrew, the Women in Black endured verbal abuse and curses from others Jews, some with their own signs that read "The Women in Black Are Longing for Auschwitz" and "The Women in Black—A Knife in the Back of a Nation" (Emmett 1996, 23 and 33).

Palestinian women, for the most part, did not articulate a collective response to the Israeli occupation during the Intifada in part because of the fight for control of the leadership of the Intifada that was taking place between the PLO and a relatively new group, the Islamic Resistance Movement, or Hamas. Nevertheless, it was during the Intifada that Jewish and Arab women first began on a massive scale to work together to bring an end to the Arab-Israeli conflict. For example, in 1989, Israeli and Palestinian women met in Brussels. At this meeting, the binational group decided on three principles: (1) Israel needed to deal with the actual representatives of the Palestinian people, (2) resolution to the conflict would only come from negotiations, and (3) there must be mutual recognition of peace and self-determination. In other words, these women embraced the two-state solution before any official representative of the Israelis, Palestinians, or Americans (Sela and Ma'oz 1997, 215).

Palestinian and Israeli women also fought to alleviate the social, economic, and political problems that Arab and Jewish women suffered as a direct result of the decades-long Arab-Israeli conflict. In the 1970s, Palestinian women's organizations once again flourished as a result of increased Palestinian economic, social, and political pressure against the govern-



*Three young women from the suicide bomber unit of the Al-Aqsa Martyrs' Brigade, Gaza Strip, 2004.
(Jean Chung/Corbis)*

ment of Israel. Educated women who had been born after the establishment of Israel or who grew up in areas under Israeli occupation formed the Women's Work Committee (WWC) in 1978. The WWC first worked to identify the needs of Palestinian women under occupation, including educational resources and social services such as providing help against abusive spouses. Initially, the WWC was not affiliated with any Palestinian national movement, such as the PLO. When, however, some leaders of the WWC voted to join a rival PLO faction, the Democratic Front for the Liberation of Palestine, the WWC fractured as the women decided to join up with other groups of varying political platforms (Sharoni 1995, 66).

During the Intifada, Palestinian women, such as the novelist Sahar Khalifeh, established Women's Centers to help teach and train Pales-

tinian women to read, write, and become involved in women's issues that transcended the violence of the Arab-Israeli conflict. After the Intifada, Palestinian women continued to develop new organizations to meet the needs of the vast majority of Palestinian women who were in need of basic education and social services; however, those organizations split over disagreements of political ideology (Sharoni 1995, 83). In other words, the Arab-Israeli conflict transcended most Palestinian women's efforts to maintain a unified Palestinian women's organization.

Jewish women who were disappointed at being assigned what were considered "traditional" womanly roles in the developing social, political, and economic strategies of Jewish communities in Palestine founded the Women's Workers' Movement (WWM) in 1911. These women emphasized their equality with Jewish

men and called for men to recognize their important roles in developing their new society (Sharoni 1995, 91–92). Gender took a backseat to nationalism, and in 1930, the WWM became the Organization of Working Mothers; it brought legitimacy to gendered roles in society (Sharoni 1995, 93).

Between the establishment of Israel in 1948 and the 1967 War, the state limited Israeli women's groups to serving the needs of an increasingly militarized, nationalized, and Zionist program. In other words, women's goals, ideas, and pursuits were subjected to official government interference through which Israeli women's roles in society were limited to what the state believed to be their natural or traditional roles, such as raising children, cooking, and cleaning (Sharoni 1995, 96). After the 1967 War, Israeli women's groups typically embraced ideas and positions that were already widespread or popular among the Jewish population, for example, a Jewish women's group called the Women of the First Circle protested in the 1970s against Israeli withdrawal from the territories occupied as a result of the 1967 War. Israel's first woman prime minister, Golda Meir, despised feminism. She referred to feminists as "those crazy women who burn their bras and go around all disheveled and hate men" (Sharoni 1995, 98–99).

Arab and Jewish women have also worked to bring peace to the region. Israeli women founded the Women's Party in 1977 as both a political entity and as a mechanism to shed light on the plight of Israeli women and to link the problems that women in Israel faced to the larger Arab-Israeli conflict (Sharoni 1995, 104). Women against the Invasion of Lebanon and Parents against Silence were formed against the backdrop of the 1982 Israeli invasion of Lebanon. Both groups articulated a political message and sought the immediate end of the Israeli occupation of Lebanon. Although these and other Jewish women's groups disbanded after the Israeli army officially began its withdrawal from Lebanon in 1985, the Israeli invasion of Lebanon spurred the creation of new,

permanent, and more militant Jewish women's groups that continue to oppose the Arab-Israeli conflict and women's traditional roles in Israeli society (Sharoni 1995, 108).

—Jim Ross-Nazzari

See also Islamic Resistance Movements, Women and; Israeli Military, Women in the

References and Further Reading

- Emmett, Ayala. 1996. *Our Sisters' Promised Land: Women, Politics, and Israeli-Palestinian Coexistence*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan.
- Joseph, Suad, ed. 2000. *Gender and Citizenship in the Middle East*. Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University.
- Kandiyoti, Deniz, ed. 1996. *Gendering the Middle East*. Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University.
- Sela, Avraham, and Moshe Ma'oz, eds. 1997. *The PLO and Israel: From Armed Conflict to Political Solution, 1964–1994*. New York: St. Martin's Press.
- Sharoni, Simona. 1995. *Gender and the Israeli-Palestinian Conflict: The Politics of Women's Resistance*. Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University.
- Victor, Barbara. 2003. *Army of Roses: Inside the World of Palestinian Women Suicide Bombers*. New York: Rodale.

ARGENTINA, DIRTY WAR AGAINST CIVILIANS

The impact on women of the military crackdown and paramilitary assault against dissidents and suspected leftists in Argentina from 1975 to 1983. Argentina's Dirty War has become synonymous with a ruthless dictatorship, repression of civil society, systematic disappearance, and murder. It began on March 24, 1976, when Isabel Perón, the first woman president in the Western Hemisphere, was overthrown by a military junta. Isabel was the third wife of Argentina's notorious leader Juan Perón, who was president from 1946 until he was overthrown

by a coup in 1955. When he returned to Argentina in 1973 as president after eighteen years of exile, Isabel arrived as his wife and vice-president. The left-of-center Peronist supporters assumed that Perón would return Argentina back to its glory days. Instead, the right prevailed; the elderly Perón was no longer the champion of the *descamisados* (workers). Since 1970, Peronist guerrillas, Movimiento Peronista Montoñeros, had engaged in economic sabotage, which led to a military crackdown that weakened the organization by 1974. On July 1, 1974, Juan Perón died, leaving the inexperienced Isabel as president. The following year, she was kidnapped and eventually overthrown in a bloodless coup led by General Jorge Rafael Videla, Admiral Emilio Eduardo Massera, and Brigadier Ramón Agosti, who formed a military junta to govern the country.

In the wake of the coup, the military junta began to suppress popular expression and civil liberties. The junta suspended the Congress and removed judges from all branches of the judiciary. Besides its attack on the institutions that governed and preserved civil society, the junta turned its attention to its “enemies.” Using concepts of just war, the junta saw itself as the savior of Western civilization. The weakened guerrilla organizations, such as the Montoñeros, were targets, but so, too, were civilians who were viewed as accomplices or subversives. Any organization or person who opposed the regime became suspect.

The campaign against “subversives” resulted in the displacement, disappearance, torture, and murder of thousands and the terrorizing of a nation. The “disappeared” included union leaders; junior high, high school, and college students; opposition party members; journalists; doctors; priests and nuns; laypeople; lawyers; military conscripts; artists; professionals; and workers. The purpose of disappearance was to terrorize the people into submission to the junta. Women, like men, were targets. Although asserting themselves to be protectors of traditional values, the junta and the military, who “disappeared” women, used rape or the

threat of rape to further terrorize women. From the terror, though, emerged feminine voices of resistance that resonate in Argentine society to this day.

As so-called protectors of Western civilization and traditional values, the military junta confronted a confounding adversary: the Mothers of the Plaza de Mayo, the mothers of the disappeared. Women who lost their children and spouses sought their loved ones at the Ministry of Interior, which was controlled by the junta. Finding little help and at times jeopardizing their children’s friends and acquaintances by filing reports, the grieving mothers came to know one another. In 1977, fourteen mothers began to meet in the Plaza de Mayo. From 1977, the Mothers gathered in the Plaza de Mayo every Thursday at 3:30 demanding the return of their children. Despite the traditional values espoused by the junta, the mothers were attacked, disappeared, and murdered. Even so, others continued to demand the return of their children.

The emergence of the Mothers and their continued existence challenged and continues to challenge Argentine leaders and political processes. Although the Mothers were instrumental in the toppling of the regime, they continue to ensure that the past is not repeated. They challenged the amnesty given the military leaders by Argentine president Saúl Menem (1989–1999) in 1990, which reversed President Raúl Alfonsín’s (1983–1989) prosecution and imprisonment of eight military leaders of the Dirty War. Although Videla could not be prosecuted for the charges absolved by Menem, the Mothers, working with other human rights organizations, pushed for him to be tried for new charges: the kidnapping of children and pregnant women and illegal adoption. The Mothers continue to be a viable human rights organization and political influence in Argentina.

—*Elaine Carey*

See also Argentina, Mothers of the Plaza de Mayo

References and Further Reading

- Bouvard, Marguerite Guzman. 1994. *Revolutionizing Motherhood: The Mothers of the Plaza de Mayo*. Wilmington, DE: Scholarly Resources.
- Fisher, Jo. 1990. *Mothers of the Disappeared*. Boston: South End Press.
- Partnoy, Alicia. 1988. *The Little School: Tales of Disappearance and Survival*. San Francisco: Midnight Editions.

ARGENTINA, MOTHERS OF THE
PLAZA DE MAYO

Mothers during the Argentine dictatorship of 1976–1983 searching for their children who had been abducted by the military. The Mothers of the Plaza de Mayo (Madres de Plaza de Mayo) developed into a unique women’s movement of nonviolent resistance to tyranny.

The repression carried out by the Argentine military, which seized power on March 24, 1976, developed into a state terrorist plan targeting civilians. Men and women of all ages were abducted by security forces in clandestine operations and taken to one of the 360 hidden detention centers in the country. Usually tortured, victims were often killed in extrajudicial executions and buried in collective, unmarked graves or thrown to the sea from airplanes while still alive. Almost 10,000 people are officially reported as *desaparecidos* (“disappeared”), although human rights organizations estimate the real figure reaches 30,000.

Driven by anguish about the unknown fate of their children, the mothers of the disappeared—together with other relatives and human rights supporters—stood as the only civilian resistance to the military. Their denunciations contributed to the international discrediting of the regime and eventually to its fall. The Mothers of Plaza de Mayo did not manage to find their children. Instead, they provided a model of resistance against authoritarian dicta-

torship and greatly contributed to the reconstruction of Argentine civil society.

The mothers of the disappeared had met each other while trying to determine the whereabouts of their sons and daughters. As the mothers realized that abductions of their children followed similar patterns that amounted to a systematic plan, they decided to act together, uniting their efforts and making one claim out of their many personal sufferings. Because the higher authorities refused to grant them an audience, they gathered in front of the seat of the government at the Plaza de Mayo.

When they first demonstrated on April 30, 1977, there were only fourteen mothers. Ignored by passersby in central Buenos Aires and unacknowledged by the local press, they kept meeting every week, defying police intimidation. As policemen ordered them to keep moving, hoping to get them away from the square, the mothers began to walk in twos around the pyramid in the center of the Plaza de Mayo. Thus began their tradition of circling around this monument. They also began to wear white scarves, originally their children’s diapers, as a way of recognizing each other in public. Although branded by the military as terrorists or madwomen, they were generally middle-class housewives without any previous political experience. They gradually acquired consciousness of their resources and skills and increasingly politicized their action. The enormous risk these women took is illustrated by the fact that some of the Mothers themselves disappeared. Among them was the first president of the movement, Azucena Villaflor de Devicenzi, as well as two French nuns who supported the group, who were abducted after a church meeting in December 1977. Despite this, their movement soon counted some 150 members and had grown to comprise several thousand by the end of the dictatorship in 1983.

The prohibition and persecution of political parties, social organizations, and workers’ unions had left the victims and their relatives in a situation of helplessness and isolation. Fear of state terrorism on one side and public

indifference or even mild complicity with the military by broad sectors of Argentine society on the other left the Mothers standing alone against the regime. In the early phase of the movement, their only support came from a few engaged human rights activists and foreign journalists, who helped to make their struggle known abroad. Commitment to human rights by some U.S. State Department officials in the Carter administration, together with pressure exerted by exiled Argentines and a growing international network of humanitarian help, contributed to reverse the isolation of the Mothers. The visit of the Inter-American Commission on Human Rights (IACHR) in September 1979 backed their credibility by registering thousands of reports of serious human rights violations. The Mothers received further international recognition when the Nobel Peace Prize was awarded to Argentine pacifist Adolfo Pérez Esquivel in 1980. In his acceptance speech, he mentioned the Mothers of the Plaza de Mayo.

Even if they had evidence of their children's murders, the Mothers of Plaza de Mayo refused to consider them dead as long as the state did not account for and take responsibility for their deaths. When the military passed a law declaring all disappeared dead in 1979, they refused its benefits and insisted in calling their children *desaparecidos*. Together with other human rights organizations, the Mothers of Plaza de Mayo played a decisive role during the transition to democracy in Argentina, managing to place the problem of the missing persons on the agenda of the newly elected government. They were disappointed, however, that the trial of the military chiefs in 1985, ordered by President Raúl Alfonsín (1983–1989), dealt with only the senior members of the junta and did not divulge information about what happened to their children. The Mothers of Plaza de Mayo transformed themselves into a political group seeking a just and fair-minded society, maintaining their claim of justice for the military's crimes while adopting a broader definition of their plea for human rights.

Internal dissent about their role in post-dictatorship Argentina led in 1986 to the split of the Mothers of Plaza de Mayo into two groups. The groups differed in their willingness to cooperate with the state, in their involvement in wider social or political causes, and in the way they wished the disappeared to be commemorated or even defined. The Asociación Madres de Plaza de Mayo (Association of the Mothers of Plaza de Mayo) led by the charismatic Hebe Pastor de Bonafini, was opposed to the search for and identification of the corpses of the missing; it rejected any cooperation with the state. Considering themselves “revolutionary mothers,” members of the Asociación thought commemoration should consist of appropriating the political goals of their children and fighting for the ideals of social justice. They founded the Universidad Popular de las Madres (Popular University of the Mothers), where courses such as popular education, history, and political thought were taught.

The other group, Madres de Plaza de Mayo—Línea Fundadora (Founding Line), also stress the singularity of the category of the *desaparecido* but accepted a wider range of commemorative practices, including individual memorials. They cooperated with other human rights organizations and with official institutions in the identification of corpses and former detention centers and were active in the projected creation of a Museo del Nunca Más (the Never Again Museum) as well as the construction of a memorial including the names of all the disappeared. Both groups continue to demonstrate every Thursday at 3.30 P.M. in the Plaza de Mayo.

The struggle of the Mothers of Plaza de Mayo has been recognized worldwide as a leading example of pacific resistance to dictatorship and has had a significant moral impact in Argentine society. Among feminist scholars, however, there is controversy about the extent to which the Mothers of Plaza de Mayo meant to challenge patriarchal structures (Taylor 1997, 193–207). Some authors think that their struggle, although worthwhile and encouraging

for other oppressed women, was based on a traditional understanding of motherhood and reinforced the role of women as suffering, self-sacrificing housewives, leaving the patriarchal values of Argentine society intact. Other authors, such as Marguerite Bouvard (1994), think instead that these women called into question the very notion of motherhood, politicizing its otherwise merely biological definition. The Mothers of Plaza de Mayo consider themselves born by their own children, that is, that through searching for them, they were born anew into political consciousness. They decided to “socialize” their motherhood, stating that every disappeared person is the child of every mother. Such conceptualizations, according to Bouvard, go beyond all traditional definitions and revolutionize the notion of motherhood.

The original group also led to the formation of the Grandmothers of Plaza de Mayo, made up of women who had not only children but also grandchildren among the missing. They started demonstrating together with the other mothers but soon discovered that they shared the more specific goal of finding their abducted grandchildren. These children had been kidnapped with their parents or were born in captivity in clandestine detention centers, where their pregnant mothers were kept alive until delivery and killed shortly after giving birth. These infants were given up for adoption, often to families of military or police personnel, and because their true identities were hidden from them, they grew up not knowing their past. The Grandmothers of Plaza de Mayo dedicated themselves to the investigation of their whereabouts, the use of DNA testing to find their kin, and the restitution of their identity. By 2004, 79 out of an estimated 500 kidnapped children, who were now young adults, had been identified, and most were able to recover their true history and establish contact with their biological families.

—*Estela Schindel*

See also Argentina, Dirty War against Civilians

References and Further Reading

- Arditti, Rita. 1999. *Searching for Life. The Grandmothers of the Plaza de Mayo and the Disappeared Children of Argentina*. Berkeley: University of California Press.
- Bouvard, Marguerite Guzmán. 1994. *Revolutionizing Motherhood. The Mothers of the Plaza de Mayo*. Wilmington, DE: Scholarly Resources.
- Fisher, Jo. 1989. *Mothers of the Disappeared*. Boston: South End Press.
- Navarro, Marysa. 1989. “The Personal Is Political: Las Madres de Plaza de Mayo.” In *Power and Popular Protest: Latin American Social Movements*, edited by Susan Eckstein, 241–258. Berkeley: University of California Press.
- Taylor, Diane. 1997. *Disappearing Acts: Spectacles of Gender and Nationalism in Argentina's Dirty War*. Durham, NC: Duke.

ARMENIAN HOLOCAUST

Deliberate effort to eliminate the Ottoman Empire’s Armenian minority during World War I. Estimates for the number of people who perished in the ensuing genocide vary, but perhaps 1.5 million of the 2 million Armenians living in the Ottoman Empire died. One million were killed or died between 1915 and 1918, and another half million died as the Turkey of Mustafa Kemal “sought to free herself of foreign occupation and expel minorities” (Melson 2004, 122).

The Ottoman Empire’s violence against the Armenian minority predated World War I. Between 1894 and 1896, Sultan Abdul-Hamid launched a series of attacks on his Armenian subjects. Although between 100,000 and 300,000 predominantly male Armenians were killed, the purpose was not to eliminate the Armenian minority but to cow it into submission.

The campaign during World War I was different. The Young Turks (the Committee of Union and Progress) had seized power in 1908. The

PRESS REPORTS OF ARMENIAN HOLOCAUST

“500,000 Armenians Said to Have Perished”: A New York Times Report

“Reports reaching Washington indicate that about 500,000 Armenians have been slaughtered or lost their lives as a result of the Turkish deportation order and the resulting war of extinction. Turkish authorities drove the Gregorian Armenians out of their homes, ordered them to proceed to distant towns in the direction of Bagdad [sic], which could only be reached by crossing long stretches of desert. During the exodus of Armenians across the deserts they have been fallen upon by Kurds and slaughtered, but some of the Armenian women and girls, in considerable numbers, have been carried off into captivity by the Kurds.”

—*New York Times*, September 24, 1915, p. 2.

“Says Extinction Menaces Armenia”: A New York Times Report

“Dr. M. Simbad Gabriel, President of the Armenian General Progressive Association in the United States told a TIMES reporter last night that no American could possibly conceive of the atrocities which the Turks had perpetrated on the Christian Armenians. He said that from correspondence he had received from Nubar Pasha, the diplomatic representative in Paris of the Katholikos or head of [the Armenian Church] the number of Armenians put to death as more than 450,000, while 600,000 others had been driven from their homes to wander among the villages of Asia Minor all these out of a population of 1,500,000.

“‘We in America can’t begin to realize the extent of this reign of terror,’ says Dr. Gabriel, ‘because Armenians in Turkey are not allowed to write, nor even to converse with each other of what we are undergoing at the hands of the Turks. . . .

“‘I was talking to an Armenian woman two or three days ago,’ he continued, ‘who had come from Constantinople last month with her three children. Beseeching me not to reveal her name, lest vengeance be visited upon her husband, who is still in Constantinople, she told me of horrors that made my blood run cold. One morning twenty of her friends were taken out by the Turks and hanged in cold blood, for no other reason than that they were suspected of being unfriendly to the Turkish cause. This is but an example of what the Armenian in Turkey who has not been exiled wakes every morning to fear.’

“‘The doctor said that greed, religion, and politics all combined to induce the Turks to massacre the Armenians. The Government was always behind every massacre, and the people were acting under orders.

“‘When the bugle blows in the morning,’ he said, ‘Turks rush fiercely to the work of killing the Christians and plundering them of their wealth. When it stops in the evening, or in two or three days, the shooting and stabbing stop just as suddenly then as it began. The people obey their orders like soldiers.

“‘The dead are really the happiest,’ he continued. ‘The living are forced to leave their homes and wander in an alien country amid a hostile population. They are allowed as a food ration by the Government only half a pound of grain a day. The youngest and strongest of the men are forced into the army but not to fight. They are not armed and have to do all the trench digging and the supply carrying for the Turkish soldiers. Do you blame them that they do not favor their country’s cause?’ . . .

“‘What has occurred during the last few months in Cilicia and Armenia is unbelievable,’ he writes. ‘It is nothing more or less than the annihilation of a whole people.’

(continues)

PRESS REPORTS OF ARMENIAN HOLOCAUST (CONTINUED)

“A letter from Constantinople says that Armenians in all the cities and villages of Cilicia have been exiled to the desert regions south of Aleppo. ‘They have not been allowed to carry any of their possessions with them,’ the letter goes on, ‘and Moslems are occupying the lands and houses left vacant.’ . . .

“The villages in the vilayets of Van and Bitlis have been pillaged and the population put to the sword. . . . Christian martyrdom has at no time assumed such colossal proportions; and if the neutral powers, especially the United States of America, do not intercede, there will be very few left of the million and a half of the Christian Armenians in the Turkish Empire.’”

—*New York Times*, September 25, 1915, p. 3.

hope of the Young Turks of saving the empire by liberal reform foundered as Turkey continued to lose territory and population in the Italo-Turkish and Balkan Wars. The Young Turks then embraced ardent and exclusivist Turkish nationalism. As non-Turks and non-Muslims, the Armenians became a particular concern when the Ottoman Empire went to war with Russia in 1914. The Armenians, who were Christian, were concentrated in eastern Anatolia next to Russia. Other Armenians lived across the border in Russia. They were regarded as potential subversives and as an impediment to the creation of a Pan-Turkic state, which would extend eastward to China.

The 1915 genocidal campaign targeted the entire Armenian population of the Ottoman Empire. Turkey would be ethnically cleansed of this minority; the cultural heritage of the alien minority would be erased and its wealth confiscated. The thousands of Armenians in the Ottoman army were placed in labor battalions where they perished from exhaustion or were shot. Most male Armenians were then removed from towns and villages and shot. The remaining Armenians, the elderly, women, and children were brutally marched toward the Syrian Desert near Aleppo. Few on the death marches reached the supposed destination. Thousands died from exposure and starvation. Untold others were killed, often after rape and torture by killing squads (Teshkilat-I Makhsusiye), composed of

released convicts and by Turkish and Kurdish peasants manipulated into a murderous anti-Armenian frenzy. Some individuals survived physically through enslavement or adoption or as involuntary sex slaves.

Armenians living in European Turkey were shipped across the Sea of Marmara. Once in Anatolia, they and other Armenians living near rail lines were packed into cattle cars for shipment to the desert concentration camps, where most perished due to starvation and thirst. Those who survived the ordeal joined other Armenians who had fled Turkey earlier and formed the Armenian diaspora in the West.

—*Bernard Cook*

See also *Armenian Women Victims of Genocide; Smyrna Tragedy, Continuing Ordeal for Women Survivors of*

References and Further Reading

- Melson, Robert. 2004. “The Armenian Genocide.” In *Defining the Horrific: Readings on Genocide and Holocaust in the Twentieth Century*, edited by William L. Hewitt, 119–127. Upper Saddle River, NJ: Pearson/Prentice Hall.
- . 1995. *Revolution and Genocide: On the Origins of the Armenian Genocide and the Holocaust*. Chicago: University of Chicago.
- Suny, Robert. 1983. *Armenia in the Twentieth Century*. Chino, CA: Scholars Press.

ARMENIAN WOMEN VICTIMS OF
GENOCIDE

Female victims of the mass killing of Armenians by the Ottoman government (1915–1923) and their behavior in the killing fields. Armenian male leaders were arrested and killed; younger and able-bodied men were mostly rounded up and segregated in labor camps or murdered outright. As a result of this strategic approach, women, children, and the elderly were left unprotected and were easy targets. The women had to face tragic choices in their decision to live or die. Their ordeal in many cases was shaped by their gender because they endured sexual attacks, abduction, and dreadfully traumatic childbirth along deportation routes. The lot of women who were “rescued” (most of the time not with an altruistic motivation but for egotistic reasons) or abducted and forcibly converted to Islam was no better. Their experience as concubines in Moslem households was additionally burdened by their lifelong compunction for the compromise they had made. Unfortunately, their life stories are not recorded, and their image as victims of genocide remains obscure.

Mayr Hayastan (Mother Armenia)—the homeland ravaged and ruined under the yoke of foreign rulers—and female martyrs of Christianity became revered archetypes in the collective memory of the Armenian people, influencing the image of female victims of national catastrophes throughout time. Another view stemmed from the secularist nineteenth-century emancipation movement. National liberation was the goal and armed struggle the means to achieve it. Patriotism, aspiration for freedom, and acts of self-defense and retaliation were encouraged. In this context, the response of the Armenian woman to the victimization of son or husband deviated from the traditional response. She did not console herself with the vision of her beloved rising to heaven and embracing immortality as a reward for his sacrifice. Her words of sorrow projected a rebellious spirit against the Turk and also against God, who allowed the atrocity to

happen. She did not expect God to avenge her son’s murder, but she entrusted it to the “valiant men of Armenia” (Damadian 1917, 277–278). She was encouraged by her dying son not to weep but to be proud because his deed is a sacrifice to the altar of freedom. Even lullabies were fashioned to encourage heroism for the sake of Armenia (Patkanian 1917, 75–76).

The massacres of Ottoman Armenians from 1894 through 1896 (a precursor to the 1915 genocide) were such a catastrophe that traditional concepts shaping outlooks and responses to trauma were put to the test. An unnamed old woman, the lyrical hero of Daniel Varuzhan’s *Hayhoyank* (Curse), stands above the crowd of wretched survivors of a mass slaughter and, raising her clenched fists toward the sky, curses God for what befell the Armenian nation. She questions God’s judgment, protesting His indifference toward the persecution of a people who faithfully worshipped Him and sacrificed their lives for Him. Varuzhan’s *Jarde* (The Carnage) remains closer to ancient archetypes. Mother Armenia weeps not over the ruined land, but because her friends, meaning the European powers, abandoned her. She does not lament the loss of her sons but their servitude. Siamanto’s *Pare* (The Dance) is the poet’s artistic rendering of a German missionary’s testimony. She had helplessly watched the Turks round up young women and force them to dance naked. Then they had poured kerosene on them and set them on fire.

The horrors of genocide permeate the entire literary legacy of Suren Partevian, who depicts the traumatic experience of the Armenian women victims of the massacres of 1894–1896 and praises their “unbelievable interfusing of patience, endurance, docility, and superhuman tolerance for pain and suffering” (Partevian, 1911). In many ways, however, their behavior displays the collapse of moral order, the irreversible impact of the catastrophe on the human psyche. If they miraculously survive, they will come out of their forced predicament demoralized and tainted, incapable of building a new, healthy, and normal life.

In Partevian's narratives of the massacres and deportations of 1915, women are more sophisticated and heroic. Siranush is an educated woman. She can realistically judge the Turkish-Armenian relationship and see the imminent catastrophe. She is entrapped in the cunning intrigues of her Turkish admirer who arranges the arrest of her husband to abduct her. She surrenders herself to him to save the life of her young son. Soon after she arranges her son's escape, however, she commits suicide to put an end to her defiled existence. Partevian's *Anmah botse* (The Undying Flame, 1917) and *Dzaine hinchets* (The Sound Echoed, 1916) were published jointly in a single volume in 1917. Princess Sonia Asaturof, a Russified Armenian woman, lives a lavish life in Tbilisi but is suddenly sensitized to the Armenian plight and joins the Armenian volunteers fighting the Turks. Zaruhi also joins the volunteers and fights the Turks disguised as a man. These heroines symbolize Partevian's perception of women's role in the Armenian armed struggle. Resistance does not necessarily connote taking arms and fighting the assailant. It is also the strong determination to survive against all odds to tell the world about Turkish inhumanity and unparalleled atrocities.

Zapel Esayan records the Armenian massacres in Cilicia in 1909. At times, she portrays female victims as embodiments of cowardice and self-centered drives, ready to sacrifice anything for the sake of mere survival. At other times, they appear as symbols of courage and endurance. "We survived, but we will soon die. That is all right. But will our sufferings serve a purpose? Is there hope of deliverance for our nation?" She suffers, but only her doleful eyes and occasional shivering betray the consuming pain in her mutilated body (Esayan 1957, 57). The traditional catharsis is rejected. The only solace is the hope for a better future for Armenians. Another woman, whose son was killed defending the city, tearfully vows, "If the Turks attack us again, our sons will be on the ramparts to fight and die on the ramparts" (Esayan 1957, 20).

Henry Morgenthau, the U.S. ambassador to the Ottoman Empire, records horrifying scenes

of pillage, rape, and murder and the brutalities of the gendarmes accompanying the caravans of the deportees. "They even prodded pregnant women with bayonets; if one, as frequently happened, gave birth along the road, she was immediately forced to get up and rejoin the marchers. . . . Kurds would sweep down from their mountain homes. Rushing up to the young girls, they would lift their veils and carry the pretty ones off to the hills. . . . Turkish roughs would fall upon the women, leaving them sometimes dead from their experiences or sometimes ravingly insane." Women often committed suicide to save their honor by jumping into the river, their children in their arms. Morgenthau writes, "There were women who held up their babies to strangers, begging them to save them from their tormentors, and failing this, they would throw them into wells or leave them behind bushes, that at least they might die undisturbed. Behind was left a small army of girls, who had been sold as slaves—frequently for a medjidie, or about eighty cents—and who, after serving the brutal purposes of their purchasers, were forced to live lives of prostitution" (Morgenthau 1919, 315–317).

The brutality led to the collapse of religious, cultural, and traditional values. Aram Antonian reports instances of cannibalism in the desert of Der-El-Zor. After months of dehumanizing, incapacitating suffering, the wretched deportees come face-to-face with a choice between death and survival. They must either starve to death or eat the corpses of their own children who had died of starvation. A famine-stricken girl is lying in the desert sand with her helpless mother at her side. The girl smells meat cooking nearby. "Mother, go ask some for me. I cannot go on anymore." The mother returns empty-handed. "They didn't give you a piece?" the girl asks. "When I die, mother, you eat my flesh alone; share it with no one" (Antonian 1977, 116–117).

Lusik's last son's body is pulled out of the raging waters of Euphrates. The scene of her gradual loss of sense and reason surpasses any description of motherly love. She showers the body

with warm kisses; then, in a violent fit of madness, she sinks her teeth deep into her son's neck and the dark blood gushes out, painting the woman's face with the deadly color. Then she collapses unconscious, her teeth still clenched on the boy's neck, the blood oozing from the wound drop by drop, running into the desert sand, and tracing sinister configurations as though to record this horrifying scene (Antonian 1921, 66).

Life was a prolonged agony in the Armenian concentration camp in Meskeneh, and Antonian, an inmate of that same camp, tried to record this agony as close to the incommunicable reality as he could. An old woman fought with another deportee. They grappled with each other in the mud, shouted, and cursed. The man grabbed the old woman's hair and knocked her down, rubbing her face in the mud. The skirmish continued for a while; then the man stood up victorious. But why had she started the ridiculous fight? The man was able to bribe the undertakers to remove the body of his daughter from his tent. The old woman had no money, and the undertakers refused to take her grandson's body away. "Leave your dead outside, like others do," they told her. She begged them to carry the corpse away to make room for her last grandchild burning with fever. He, too, the last survivor of the family, had come down with typhus. The old woman, left with a rotting corpse and a dying child, in a nearly maddened state, attacked the man, another victim of that same tragedy. Femininity, moral standards, human dignity, and normal patterns of behavior had long lost their meaning (Antonian 1921, 134).

These women are the collective embodiment of all victims in modern times, subjected to the most unthinkable human suffering. They were not always the typical heroines who transcended torture and pain. At times, in their prolonged agony, they suffered physical and moral exhaustion and gave in. At other times, they fell, like unknown soldiers, holding up the dignity of their gender and the pride of their nation.

—Rubina Perroomian

See also Armenian Holocaust; Smyrna Tragedy, Continuing Ordeal for Women Survivors of

References and Further Reading

- Antonian, Aram. [1921] 1977. *Mets vochire* [The great crime]; 2nd ed. Reprint, Beirut: Ghukas Karapetian.
- Dadrian, Vahakn N. 1995. *The History of the Armenian Genocide*. Providence, RI, and Oxford: Berghahn.
- Damadian, Mihran. [1917] 1978. "The Lament of Martyred Smbat's Mother." In *Armenian Poems*, translated by Alice Stone Blackwell. Reprint, Delmar, NY: Caravan.
- Esayan, Zapel. 1957. *Averaknerun mej* [Amid the ruins]. Beirut: Etván.
- Hovannisian, Richard G., ed. 2003. *Looking Backward, Moving Forward: Confronting the Armenian Genocide*. New Brunswick, NJ/London: Transaction.
- Morgenthau, Henry. [1919] 1975. *Ambassador Morgenthau's Story*. Reprint, Plandome, NY: New Age.
- Partevian, Suren. 1911. *Hayuhin* [The Armenian woman]. Constantinople: P. Palents.
- . 1917. *Anmah botse* [The undying flame]/*Dzaine hinchets* [The sound echoed]. Alexandria, Egypt: Aram Stepanian.
- Patkanian, Rapael. [1917] 1978. "Lullaby." In *Armenian Poems*, edited by Alice Stone Blackwell. Reprint, Delmar, NY: Caravan.
- Perroomian, Rubina. 1993. *Literary Responses to Catastrophe: A Comparison of the Armenian and The Jewish Experience*. Atlanta, GA: Scholars.

ARTEMISIA OF CARIA

Admiral in the fleet of the Persian emperor Xerxes; reputedly the first female admiral. Artemisia, daughter of Lygdamis, was the ruler of Caria in southwest Asia Minor in the second half of the fifth century B.C. As a vassal of the Persian Empire, she provided a contingent of five fighting ships when Xerxes I invaded Greece in 480 B.C. Unusually, Artemisia decided to command the

ships herself instead of appointing a male deputy; thus, she is the first known female admiral.

The Greek historian Herodotus, himself from the Carian city of Halicarnassus and in a good position to get information, was deeply impressed by Artemisia's role in the invasion of Greece, for which he is the sole source. He tells that her ships proved their worth by capturing a Greek scouting trireme. Despite the Persian fleet's large numerical superiority, however, Artemisia advised Xerxes against meeting the allied Greek fleet at Salamis. Her advice was overridden but, in hindsight, was clearly prophetic: through a combination of trickery, luck, and intimate knowledge of the sea around Salamis, the Greeks defeated the Persian fleet. In particular, the Persian fleet especially displayed tactical weakness by advancing in tightly packed lines of ships that proved to be unmaneuverable during the battle. After the tide of battle had turned, Artemisia found that her way of escape was blocked by another contingent of Persian ships. Thinking fast, she ordered her ship turned and rammed one of her own allies—the Greek ships that had been pursuing her thus thought she was on their side and left her alone. Ironically, Xerxes, watching from land, also saw Artemisia's ship fiercely attacking but did not realize that it was one of his own vessels that was being destroyed. He is said to have exclaimed admiringly at the sight of Artemisia's boldness: "My men have turned into women, my women into men" (Herodotus 1972, 8: 88). Luckily there were no survivors of the ship Artemisia sunk to accuse her. It is also fortunate that Artemisia was not captured by the Greeks, who resented the fact that a woman was bearing arms against them and had offered an enormous reward of 10,000 drachmae for anyone who captured her alive.

After the Battle of Salamis, Artemisia advised Xerxes to retreat from Greece, and this time he listened to her advice. As a further sign of his trust in her, Xerxes entrusted those of his children who had gone on the expedition to her care for the return to Asia Minor. After this, Artemisia vanishes from the historical record.

—Phyllis G. Jestice

See also Greek Women and War in Antiquity; Helen of Troy; Spartan Women

References and Further Reading

- Green, Peter. 1996. *The Greco-Persian Wars*. Berkeley: University of California.
 Herodotus. 1972. *The Histories*, rev. ed., translated by Aubrey de Sélincourt. Harmondsworth, England: Penguin.

ASHWARI, HANAN (1946–)

The highest-ranking woman member of the Palestinian movement, official spokesperson of the Palestinian delegation to the Middle East Peace Process (1991–1993). Hanan Ashwari is known for her staunch defense of Palestinian rights, her dedication to human rights, and her commitment to the emancipation of women.

Born a Christian in Palestine in 1946, before the creation of the state of Israel deprived her family and her people of their homes and their rights, Ashwari was educated in a Quaker school in Ramallah, now part of the West Bank. Like many Palestinian families, her parents taught her the history of her country. Her father also encouraged her to pursue an education and taught her that equality is women's right (Ashwari 1995, 47).

She became a political activist following Israel's annexation of the West Bank, the Golan Heights, and the Sinai during the 1967 War (the Six-Day War). At that time she was studying English literature at the American University in Beirut, Lebanon. After obtaining her degree, she was unable to return home to Ramallah because Israel forbade Palestinians who were outside the country in 1967 to come back. Offered a scholarship at the University of Virginia, she obtained her doctorate in English literature there. In 1973, Israel allowed Palestinian families to reunite, and she returned to Ramallah, where she taught English and became the head of the English Department at Ber Zeit University. In her dual role

as professor and activist, she participated in student demonstrations against the Israeli occupation of Palestine and their abuse of Palestinian rights, an activity for which the Israelis jailed her for a brief period. She also found time to form a feminist study group with other women and to speak out in defense of women's rights.

Ashwari's dual commitment to peace and women's rights led her to work with Israeli women who also supported Palestinian rights. In 1988, she participated in a women's conference in Belgium that brought Israeli and Palestinian women together for dialogue. That same year, she appeared on Ted Koppel's *Nightline*, along with other Palestinians and Israelis, to participate in a town meeting on the Palestinian-Israeli conflict. Recognizing the political importance of Palestine to peoples in the Middle East, U.S. Secretary of State James Baker attempted to engineer peace between Palestinians and Israelis following the Gulf War. Hanan Ashwari and other Palestinians met with Baker during the eight months that led up to the 1991 Arab-Israeli Peace Conference in Madrid. She was instrumental in projecting a positive image of the Palestinian people and dispelling an image that equated them with terrorists. Following the disclosure of the Palestine Liberation Organization Chairman Yasser Arafat and Israeli Prime Minister Yitzak Rabin's behind-the-scenes formulation of the 1993 Oslo Accords, Ashwari temporarily withdrew from official politics.

Later she established the Palestinian Independent Commission for the Occupied Territories to help build institutions "as an essential component of the reconstruction of a nation" (Ashwari 1995, 15). She served as minister of higher education and research for the Palestinian Authority from 1996 until her 1998 resignation in protest against corruption within the Palestinian government and against Arafat's leadership. Since that time, she has dedicated herself to a just peace and a humanitarian solution to the Israeli-Palestinian conflict through the Palestinian Initiative for the Promotion of Global Dialogue and Democracy.

—Margaret Power

See also Arab-Israeli Wars; Islamic Resistance Movements, Women and

References and Further Reading

- Ashwari, Hanan. 1995. *This Side of Peace*. New York: Touchstone Book.
- Bouvard, Marguerite Guzman. 1996. "Hanan Mikhail Ashwari." In *Women Reshaping Human Rights*. Wilmington, DE: Scholarly Resources, 1996.

ASHWELL, LENA MARGARET
POCOCK (1872–1957)

Actress, playwright, feminist, and suffragette who organized a network of entertainers with the Young Men's Christian Association (YMCA) for allied troops at various fronts during World War I and received the Order of the British Empire for her contributions.

Lena Margaret Pocock was born aboard a ship, the *Wellesley*, on the River Tyne in England on March 13, 1872. She was raised and educated in Canada and then studied music in Switzerland and at the Royal Academy of Music in London. Her voice proved inadequate, and she turned to the theater, first as an actress using Ashwell as a stage name and then as an administrator. In 1908, she married the royal obstetrician, Sir Henry Simpson. Ashwell cofounded the Women's Emergency Corps (WEC) with fellow members of the Actresses' Franchise League (AFL). The WEC provided industrial training and organized a registry of qualified women who wanted to contribute to the wartime efforts.

In 1914, Ashwell began organizing traveling companies to perform at military bases in Britain with the AFL. She coordinated companies of professional actors with the YMCA Concert Parties, which toured the fronts performing for the troops beginning in February 1915. Because these companies consisted mostly of women, Ashwell encouraged soldiers to volunteer to perform the male roles in their plays.

Ashwell raised more than £100,000 to fund entertainment tours for the troops by hosting special matinees at the London Coliseum, Chelsea Palace, and Lyric Theatres. She also organized entertainment for military families and soldiers within England. In 1918, Ashwell took over the Palace Theatre in Winchester, which was located near several military hospitals and bases. Ashwell's company performed for nearby soldiers, including prisoners of war.

By 1918, Ashwell had twenty-five companies at the fronts. Her companies performed for troops in France, Malta, Egypt, and Palestine. The companies remained at the front after the war's end to entertain soldiers still overseas.

Ashwell inspired the creation of the Entertainment National Service Association (ENSA), a government-funded organization that provided entertainment for the troops during World War II. She returned from retirement in 1939 to organize theatrical parties in France on behalf of ENSA. She died in London on March 13, 1957.

—Barbara Penny Kanner

See also Great Britain, Women in Service in World War I; Young Men's Christian Organization, World War I

References and Further Reading

Ashwell, Lena. 1936. *Myself a Player*. Plymouth, UK: Michael Joseph LTD.
 Kanner, Barbara Penny. 1997. *Women in Context*. New York: G. K. Hall.

ATKINS, VERA H.
 (1908–2000)

Intelligence officer in Great Britain's secret service during the World War II. Vera Atkins was born Vera Maria Rosenberg in Bucharest, Ro-

mania, on June 16, 1908. Her family moved to England in 1933, and she adopted her mother's last name. She attended finishing school in Lausanne, Switzerland, and studied modern languages at the University of Paris (Sorbonne). When Germany invaded France in 1940, Atkins returned to Britain and joined the Women's Auxiliary Air Force (WAAF). She worked as a secretary in the France or "F" section of the British Special Operations Executive. Colonel Maurice Buckmaster, the head of "F" section, recognized her ability and promoted her to an intelligence officer and made her his assistant. In that position, she directed covert operations, working with the Resistance in German-occupied France. She recruited, trained, and dispatched more than 400 agents, the "Buckmasters," to France, among whom 39 were women. Women were often used as couriers, who, it was hoped, would be less conspicuous on a bicycle in the French countryside or on a train than a young man. Atkins personally stood on the runway to see off each agent to be parachuted into occupied France. More than 100 of her agents were lost. Some were killed outright; others were captured, tortured, and then killed. Of the 104 dead agents, 13 were women. Among those lost were Yolande Beekman, Madeleine Damerment, Vera Leigh, Sonya Olschanezky, Elaine Plewman, Diana Rowden, and Violette Szabo. Odette Sansom was tortured but survived. Atkins, who is thought to have inspired Ian Fleming's "Miss Money Penny" of the 007 series, personally undertook the task of scouring concentration camp records and interviewing Nazi concentration personnel and staff officers to discover what had happened to her lost agents and to bring their killers to trial. In a three-month period, aided by a temporary commission as a WAAF squadron commander and an appointment from the War Office to the War Crimes Investigation Unit in the British Zone of occupation in Germany, she accomplished her task. Atkins subsequently lived alone in a cottage on the coast at Winchelsea from which, on a clear day, she could see the French coast. In

1987, she was honored by President François Mitterrand as a commandant of the Legion of Honor. She died on June 24, 2000.

—Bernard Cook

See also Beekman, Yolande; Damerment, Madeleine; France, Resistance during World War II, Women and; Khan, Noor Inayat; Leigh, Vera; Olschanezky, Sonya; Plewman, Elaine; Rowden, Diana; Sansom, Odette; Szabo, Violette

References and Further Reading

- Helm, Sarah. 2005. *A Life of Secrets: The Story of Vera Atkins and the Lost Agents of SOE*. London: Little, Brown.
- Martin, Douglas. "Vera Atkins, 92, Spymaster for British Dies." *The New York Times*, June 27, 2000.
- Stevenson, William. 2005. *Spymistress: The Secret Life of Vera Atkins*. New York: Arcade Publishing.
- "Vera Atkins, CBE, Légion d'honneur," 64 Baker Street. http://www.64-baker-street.org/also/also_vera_atkins_her_story.html (accessed January 10, 2006).
- "Vera Atkins," Women of the Special Operations Executive, http://www.64-baker-street.org/text_version/also/also_vera_atkins_obituary_2_txt.html (accessed September 23, 2004).

ATOMIC BOMB, WORLD WAR II

See Hiroshima, Nagasaki, and Women

AUBRAC, LUCIE (B. 1912)

Member of the French resistance during World War II. Lucie Aubrac was born in 1912, the daughter of wine growers in Burgundy. She attended the Sorbonne, earning a degree in history. Returning from study in the United States, she married Raymond Aubrac in 1938. When

war broke out, she joined the communist wing of the Resistance in Lyon. She founded Liberation-Sud with her husband and worked on and helped distribute its illegal newspaper, *Libération*. Her duties also included leading an armed group that freed jailed resistance members. For safekeeping, her infant son was in other people's care and, by summer of 1940, in a children's home. When her husband was arrested in May 1940, she boldly threatened the French prosecutor with reprisals, and he was released. Raymond Aubrac was arrested again in June 1940 in Caluire at a meeting of leaders that included Jean Moulin. This sweep, under the direction of Klaus Barbie, was disastrously successful, but at first, the Germans seemed unaware of the identities of some captives, including Raymond Aubrac and Moulin. Lucie Aubrac, now pregnant, disguised herself as the mistress of the arrested "Claude Ermelin" (aka Raymond Aubrac) to convince an influential German officer that the prisoner should be made to marry her. They were able to meet frequently to work out the "marriage" details. The ruse enabled the armed group she led to free Raymond Aubrac and two others while they were in transit. Moulin and others were tortured and killed, although the details of this remain unclear. The Germans sought both Aubracs, and they escaped to England with their son. The Aubracs' baby girl was born two days after their arrival. With the liberation of France, Aubrac served as a delegate to the provisional government and resumed her teaching career. She later opposed France's role during the Algerian War of Independence.

Disputes have arisen since the end of the war over who betrayed the Caluire meeting; resistance members at the time pointed to René Hardy, but this has never been proved. Gérard Chauvy implicated the Aubracs in his *Aubrac: Lyon 1943*, but the couple successfully sued him.

—Page Delano

See also Borrel, Andrée; Fourcade, Marie-Madeleine; Hall, Virginia; Moreau-Evrard,

AUSTRALIA, WOMEN IN SERVICE DURING WORLD WAR II

Emilienne; Souliè, Geneviève; Tillion, Germaine;
Wake, Nancy; Witherington, Pearl

References and Further Reading

- Aubrac, Lucie. 1993. *Outwitting the Gestapo* (English translation of *Ils partiront dans l'ivresse*, 1984). Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.
- Diamond, Hanna, and Claire Gorrara. 2001. "The Aubrac Controversy." *History Today* 51 no. 3 (March): 26.
- Gorrara, C. 1995. "Reviewing Gender and Resistance: The Case of Lucie Aubrac." In *The Liberation of France: Image and Event*, edited by H. R. Kedward and N. Wood, 143–155. Oxford, England: Berg.
- Weitz, Margaret Collins. 1995. *Sisters in the Resistance*. New York: J. Wiley.



Women officers in the Australian Armed Forces.
(Time Life Pictures/Getty Images)

AUSTRALIA, WOMEN IN SERVICE DURING WORLD WAR II

Role of Australian women during World War II. During World War II, Australian women played a broader and more active role in the war effort than they had in World War I. The Australian Army Nursing Service served abroad as it had done in World War I. In addition, Voluntary Aids Detachments (VADs) were set up to provide needed service in Australia. The women's services of the Australian army, navy, and air force were initially organized to provide radio operators. By June 1941, voluntary aides, who had been mobilized into special Australian Army Voluntary Aid Detachments, were permitted to volunteer for service in North Africa. By December 1941, the Australian Army Medical Women's Service was formed from VADs working in military hospitals. Fifty thousand women enlisted for the various Australian female military services, and in 1945 the number serving was forty-two thousand.

Some 3,600 women of the Australian Women's Army Service (AWAS) were assigned to anti-aircraft searchlights and coastal defense batteries. Japanese mini-submarines entered Sydney Harbour in 1942, and there was concern about both naval and air attacks. The women assigned to air and coastal defense did everything except load and fire weapons. Colonel Sybil Irving, the controller of AWAS, did not believe that women should actually fire the guns. In her opinion, because women would one day be mothers, they would not wish to have the death of another woman's son on their conscience.

In addition, women played an essential role in the labor market depleted by male conscription. A developing manpower shortage in 1941 led to the formation of a women's Land Army to provide rural labor. Developing shortages in indus-

try, commerce, munitions work, and food processing led to an extension of the program into the other sectors and the introduction of compulsion. Without the contribution of its women workers, Australia could not have contributed to the Allied war effort as it did. In 1942, Australia conscripted women who did not have dependents for war work, and they were not allowed to change jobs without permission of a government commission. The number of women employed in Australian industry peaked at 710,000 in 1943.

—Bernard Cook

See also Australian Army Nursing Service/Royal Australian Army Nursing Corps; Bullwinkel, Vivian

References and Further Reading

- Harvey, Joyce. 2002. *A.W.A.S. in the Australia Women's Army Service, 1942–1945: A Personal Narrative in Retrospect as told to Harvey J. Pierce*. Perth, Australia: Pearce.
- Jeffrey, Betty. 1998. *White Coolies*. Tellamarine, Australia: Bolinda.
- Scott, Jean. 1996. *Girls with Grit: Memories of the Australian Women's Land Army*. St. Leonards, Australia: Allen and Unwin.
- Simons, Jessie Elizabeth. 1985. *In Japanese Hands: Australian Nurses as POWs*. Melbourne: Heinemann.

AUSTRALIAN ARMY NURSING
SERVICE (AANS)/ROYAL
AUSTRALIAN ARMY NURSING
CORPS (RAANC)

Australia's military nursing service. The first military nursing service in Australia, the Army Nursing Service, was established in New South Wales in May 1899, and army nurses sailed for the Boer War in South Africa with the second contingent of the New South Wales Medical

Corps. In July 1902, the Australian Army Nursing Service Reserve was organized to provide trained nurses for Australia's military in the event of war.

New recruits joined reservists in the expanded Australian Army Nursing Service (AANS) of World War I. Nurses of the AANS served in Egypt and aboard hospital ships during the Gallipoli campaign, on the western front, on the Salonika front, and in Mesopotamia and Palestine. During the war, 2,139 nurses served abroad, and a further 423 served in military hospitals in Australia; 29 died while serving ("Australian Army Nursing Service [AANS]" 1995, 62). Nurses of the AANS had the nominal rank of officers without the pay or privileges of army officers. The pay of the nurses was little more than that of a corporal, but unlike corporals the nurses had to pay for their food and laundry. Nurses of the AANS were subjected to strict regulations and supervision. They could not drink alcohol or wear lipstick while wearing their uniforms and were required to wear their inappropriate heavy uniforms with starched collars even while working in the heat of Egypt.

During World War II, the service, which had reverted to reserve status after World War I, was reactivated. The professional nurses were now given the full rank of military officers with all of the duties and privileges attached to it. They served in Africa, Europe, and the Middle East as well as in the Pacific theater. Seventy-one nurses died as a result of hostilities, forty-one of them in Malaya ("Australian Army Nursing Service [AANS]" 1995, 62). In 1942, sixty-five Australian army nurses were evacuated from Malaya shortly before Singapore fell to the Japanese. Two days later, the Japanese bombed and sank their ship. Fifty-three of the nurses survived, but twenty-one of these were killed when they reached the shore; the remaining were taken prisoner and remained in Japanese prisons until the end of the war.

In July 1949, the AANS was incorporated into the regular Australian Army as the Royal AANS (RAANS), and in February 1951,

RAANS and the Australian Army Medical Women's Service were combined in the new Royal Australian Army Nursing Corps (RAANC). Companies of the RAANC were formed in each command of the Australian Army. RAANC nurses were stationed in Malaya in 1955 during the guerrilla war against communist insurgents and remained in Malaysia until 1971. They were also stationed in Papua New Guinea in 1966 and were dispatched to Vietnam in 1967 with the 8th Field Ambulance and then the 1st Australian Field Hospital. The last of the forty-three RAANC nurses was withdrawn from Phouc Tuy in 1971. During the 1991 Gulf War, RAANC nurses served on the U.S. medical support ship *Comfort*.

As of 1970, nurses who married were allowed to continue their service in the RAANC. Subsequently, married women were allowed to join the RAANC. In 1975, nurses who had children were allowed to remain in the service. The first male nurse was admitted in 1972. In 1988, RAANC nurses were required to carry sidearms when on duty in theaters of combat. The same year, all other ranks were transferred to the Royal Australian Army Medical Corps, and the RAANC became the preserve of nurse-officers.

—Bernard Cook

See also Bullwinkel, Vivian

References and Further Reading

"Australian Army Nursing Service (AANS)." 1995.

In *The Oxford Companion to Australian Military History*, edited by Peter Dennis, Jeffrey Grey, Ewan Morris, and Robin Prior, with John Connor, 61–62. Melbourne: Oxford University Press.

Bassett, Jan. 1992. *Guns and Brooches: Australian Army Nursing from the Boer War to the Gulf War*. Melbourne: Oxford University Press.

"Royal Australian Army Nursing Corps (RAANC)." 1995. In *The Oxford Companion to Australian Military History*, edited by Peter Dennis, Jeffrey Grey, Ewan Morris, and Robin Prior, with John Connor, 513. Melbourne: Oxford University Press.

AVENGER FIELD

The first and largest all-female air base in U.S. history. Located outside Sweetwater, Texas, Avenger Field most notably served as the training site for the Women Airforce Service Pilots (WASP) from March 1943 to December 1944. It was later used to train male pilots and housed several Cold War defense units.

Originally christened the Sweetwater Municipal Airport, the airfield opened on August 10, 1929. It survived the Depression era thanks to a construction project sponsored by the Works Progress Administration (WPA). In 1940, the town of Sweetwater voted to allow the federal government to use the airport as a training facility.

On April 1, 1942, the Plosser-Prince Air Academy leased the six-hundred-acre site for \$1 a year as part of President Roosevelt's Lend-Lease program to train British pilots of the Eagle Squadron of the Royal Air Force. The Sweetwater newspaper held a contest to give the airport a new name, thus Sweetwater Municipal Airport became Avenger Field on May 14, 1942. The first and only group of British cadets arrived in May 1942 and graduated three months later.

Beginning with Class 43-W-5, WASP training was transferred from Houston to Sweetwater in March 1943 while men were still using the base. The men then moved elsewhere, and Avenger Field served only female pilots for the next twenty-one months. In all, fourteen WASP classes graduated from Avenger Field before the program was disbanded in December 1944. After the women pilots left, Avenger Field was used to train fighter pilots for the remainder of World War II.

Although few buildings associated with the WASP program at Avenger Field remain standing, there is evidence that the women pilots were once there. The wishing well, into which each female pilot was thrown following her first solo flight, still stands, along with two Texas granite walls later erected that bear the names of each WASP to come through train-

“AXIS SALLY”

ing. The thirty-eight WASPs who died are identified by gold stars. WASP veterans occasionally held their reunions on Avenger Field, and an educational organization called *Wings across America* has proposed building a WASP museum on the site.

—Rebekah Crowe

See also United States, Women Airforce Service Pilots; United States, Women’s Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron; United States, Women’s Flying Training Detachment

References and Further Reading

Alexander, Thomas E. 2000. *The Stars Were Big and Bright: The US AAF and Texas During World War II*. Austin, TX: Eakin.

WASP-WWII Museum, <http://www.wasppwwii.org/museum> (accessed on March 21, 2004).



Mildred Elizabeth Gillars in a prison cell in Germany, 1947. (National Archives)

“AXIS SALLY” (MILDRED ELIZABETH GILLARS) (1901–1988)

Commentator on Radio Berlin who broadcast German propaganda to Allied troops during World War II. Mildred Elizabeth Gillars was born in Portland, Maine. Her mother divorced her father, Vincent Sisk, when the young girl was seven, and married Robert Bruce Gillars, who adopted her. Mildred Gillars studied drama at Ohio Wesleyan University but left before graduating. Unsuccessful as an actress, in 1933 she went first to Algiers and then to Germany. In Germany, she taught English at a Berlitz Language School. In 1940, she was employed as an announcer on “Bremen Sender,” part of *Rundfunk*, the German Radio Service. Her passport was confiscated by a U.S. vice-consul in the spring of 1941. Max Otto Koischwitz, an official in the German Foreign Office with whom she was romantically involved, persuaded Gillars to join him on broadcasts

beamed to U.S. soldiers. With some reluctance, she agreed and was transferred to the main German Radio Service station, Radio Berlin. There she aired shows with Koischwitz and her own shows, *Home Sweet Home*, *Midget-at-the-Mike*, and *Medical Reports*. The American soldiers to whom she directed her defeatist appeals nicknamed her *Axis Sally*. When Gillars found out that a competitor using that name was broadcasting from Rome, she used her influence to have the imposter yanked from the air.

The Americans detained Gillars briefly in 1945, but in 1948, she was brought back to the United States and tried. After a six-week trial, Gillars was convicted of treason on March 10, 1949, and sentenced to ten to thirty years imprisonment. In prison, Gillars converted to Catholicism, and, upon her release on parole in 1961, she taught music at a Catholic school

in Columbus, Ohio. She also resumed her own education and earned a degree in speech from Ohio Wesleyan in 1973. She died on June 25, 1988.

—Bernard Cook

See also “Lady Haw Haw”; “Tokyo Rose”

References and Further Reading

- Edwards, John Carver. 1991. *Berlin Calling: American Broadcasters in Service to the Third Reich*. New York: Praeger.
- Harper, Dale. 1995. “Axis Sally: American-born Axis Sally made propaganda broadcasts for Radio Berlin in Hitler’s Germany.” *World War II Magazine* (November 1995), <http://womenshistory.about.com/library/prm/blaxissally1.htm> (accessed October 29, 2003).

AZURDUY DE PADILLA, JUANA (1781–1862)

Heroine of the South American struggle for independence from Spain. Juana Azurduy de Padilla was born in Chuquisaca (now Sucre, Bolivia) in the Viceroyalty of Río de la Plata in 1781. Chuquisaca was the seat of the Audencia of Charcas, an important colonial court. The city was also residence to the wealthy owners of mines in nearby Potosí, South America’s greatest source of silver. After being educated in a convent to become a nun, Azurduy renounced a religious vocation in 1805 to marry a soldier, Manuel Ascencio Padilla, with whom she had five children.

Chuquisaca was the first city in colonial Spanish America to experience political unrest as a result of the 1808 French invasion of the Iberian Peninsula and the Spanish king Ferdinand VII’s forced abdication on orders of Napoleon Bonaparte. In Buenos Aires, the vice regal capital of Río de la Plata, the independence struggle against Spain began in 1810. The

United Provinces of Río de la Plata was created. It consisted of the modern states of Argentina, Uruguay, Paraguay, and southern Bolivia, which was called Upper Peru during the colonial era. After joining the patriotic forces of Upper Peru, the Padillas recruited soldiers and organized and commanded battalions.

The numerous incursions of liberating Argentine forces from the south during the more than fifteen years of fighting for independence devastated the Upper Peruvian countryside. Small enclaves independent of Spanish colonial rule called *republiquetas* (little republics) were formed in Upper Peru to keep the cause alive. The patriots also strengthened their resolve by aligning with Cumbay, Upper Peru’s most important leader of the Chiriguano people. The Padillas shared power and combat in their *republiqueta* until Manuel’s death in 1816. Thereafter, Juana withdrew to the city of Salta in what is now northwest Argentina. There she became a valued fighter with the local independence leader, Martín Güemes, who had been elected governor by Salta’s municipal council the previous year. After recognizing Azurduy’s military and leadership skills, Güemes secured permission from Juan Martín Pueyrredón, supreme director of the United Provinces, to make Azurduy a lieutenant colonel in the rebel army with all the rights and privileges of that rank without regard to her sex. Azurduy’s reputation was further acknowledged when General Manuel Belgrano, commander of the Army of the North and creator of the blue and white banner that became the Argentine national flag, bestowed the sword of an officer on her.

Upper Peruvian patriots declared independence in 1825 and named their new country Bolivia, in honor of Simón Bolívar, the foremost leader of Spanish American independence. Azurduy retired to her birthplace, renamed Sucre in honor of Marshal Antonio José de Sucre, the first constitutional president of Bolivia. Azurduy’s first four children had contracted malarial fever and died even before their

AZURDUY DE PADILLA, JUANA

father's death in the Battle of Viloma. Azurduy lived out life quietly with her fifth child, Luisa, until her death in 1862. Today the town and province of Azurduy bear tribute to Bolivia's most famous heroine of independence. In 1903, the Bolivian Congress changed the name of Pomabamba to Villa Azurduy. The municipality of Azurduy was created in 1917.

—*David M. Carletta*

See also Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth Century; Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements in

References and Further Reading

- Joaquín, Gantier. 1980. *Doña Azurduy de Padilla*. 3d ed. La Paz, Bolivia: Editoria y Libería Ichthus.
- Urquidi , José Macedo. 1918. *Bolivianas Ilustres*. La Paz, Bolivia: Escuela Tipográfica Salesiana.

B

BAADER-MEINHOF GANG

Terrorist group in Germany in the 1960s and 1970s. Baader-Meinhof Gang was the name given by the international press to the West German Red Army Faction (RAF). The name Baader-Meinhof was taken from the names of leading members Andreas Baader (1943–1977) and Ulrike Meinhof (1934–1976). In 1967, Baader and his friend Gudrun Ensslin, a member of the German Socialist Student Organization (SDS), were active in radical student politics at the Free University of Berlin.

At night on April 2, 1968, Ensslin, Baader, Horst Söhnlein, and Thorwald Proll fire-bombed two Frankfurt department stores. All four were arrested, convicted of arson, and sent to prison. Released on appeal, Baader and Ensslin fled to the Middle East, where they received training from the Popular Front for the Liberation of Palestine. Baader returned to Germany and was arrested, and then, on May 14, 1970, in a dramatic and violent jailbreak, he was freed by Ulrike Meinhof, Irene Goergens, and Ingrid Shubert.

Meinhof was born in Oldenburg, Lower Saxony, on October 7, 1934. She was strongly influenced by her foster mother, Professor Renate Riemeck, who was a widely known activist. Riemeck was a historian, Christian-pacifist, so-

cialist, and an advocate for the West German extra-parliamentary opposition to the coalition between the Social Democrats and Christian Democrats in the mid-1960s. Meinhof, who had studied psychology and pedagogy, joined the SDS and participated in protests against atomic weapons. In 1960, she moved to Hamburg where she became the editor of the left-wing student monthly *konkret*. Like her mother, she was active within the External Parliamentary Opposition (APO, *Ausserparlamentarische Opposition*), but became increasingly radical and convinced that violence was the key to revolution. When the APO failed to achieve the objective of radical reform, Meinhof and other radical intellectuals joined with Baader and those responsible for arson in Frankfurt.

Meinhof produced the group's first manifesto, *The Concept of the Urban Guerilla*. Marxist-Leninist in ideology, it borrowed heavily from South American Carlos Marighella's theories of urban guerilla warfare. Its goal was to push the government into repressive opposition that would reveal its latent fascism. Meinhof's theory was that urban warfare would be in the antifascist tradition of the resistance in World War II and that it would awaken the working masses.

In 1970 and 1971, Meinhof, Ensslin, Baader, and other members of the RAF robbed a number of banks. They also engaged in several

running gun battles with the police in the streets of German cities. In May 1972, the RAF launched a “people’s war.” They claimed their action was military support for the “liberation struggle of the Vietnamese people.” They bombed a number of prominent targets including the Fifth United States Army Corps headquarters in Frankfurt and the U.S. Army Headquarters Europe (USAREUP) in Heidelberg. Nearly two dozen people were injured and four U.S. soldiers were killed.

The German police launched a massive manhunt. Eventually Ensslin, Meinhof, Baader, and other leaders were arrested. The Baader-Meinhof trial lasted from May 21, 1975, until April 28, 1977. They were sentenced to life imprisonment for murder, arson, robbery, and other charges. To prevent their escape, they were put into solitary confinement in the Stammheim prison. On May 8, 1976, Meinhof hanged herself in her cell.

In the autumn of 1977, remaining members of the RAF conducted a number of operations designed to free Ensslin, Baader, and the others. They kidnapped several German industrialists and hijacked a Lufthansa jet. A German government operation freed the plane’s hostages, and Germany refused to negotiate the release of the imprisoned RAF leaders. On the night of October 18, 1977, Baader and Jan-Carl Raspe used pistols hidden in their cells to shoot themselves. Ensslin hung herself. Irmgard Moeller failed in her suicide attempt with a table knife. The members of the RAF were predominantly women from middle-class backgrounds. Among them were Ingrid Jakobsmeier, Birgit Hogefeld, Brigitte Asdonk, Brigitte Mohnhaupt, Irene Gorgens, Ingrid Shubert (who committed suicide on November 13, 1977), Margrit Schiller, Illse Stachowiak, Christa Eckes, Ingrid Jakob Meier, Barbara Ernst, Beate Sturm, Susanne Albrecht, Christine Duemlein, Monika Helbing, and Eva Sybille Haule-Frimpong.

—Andrew Jackson Waskey

See also Red Army Faction, West Germany, Women of the

References and Further Reading

- Becker, Jillian. 1978. *Hitler's Children: The Story of the Baader-Meinhof Terrorist Gang*. New York: Panther.
- Horchem, Hans Josef. 1974. *West Germany's Red Army Anarchists*. London: Institute for the Study of Conflict.
- Laqueur, Walter. 1978. *Terrorism Reader: A Historical Anthology*. New York: New American Library.

BAEZ, JOAN CHANDOS (1941 -)

American folk singer and antiwar activist. Joan Baez, who experienced the height of her popularity in the 1960s and 1970s, successfully combined her musical career with a philosophy of nonviolence and anti-Vietnam War activism. Her views on nonviolence were the result of her Quaker upbringing by her parents Joan Bridge and the physicist and antinuclear activist Albert V. Baez, as well as the influence of Ira Sandperl, a Gandhi scholar, and Martin Luther King, Jr.

Baez started her singing career during the folk revival movement of the late 1950s. The political ferment of the early 1960s and the socially critical topical songs, especially those written by Bob Dylan, urged her to combine music with activism. She was first drawn to civil rights protest in the South, taking part in acts of civil disobedience. Baez first expanded her range of protest to the nuclear arms race, and when the debate over the U.S. intervention in Vietnam emerged, she declared herself a conscientious objector, withholding taxes that would pay for the war. For ten years, beginning in 1964, she refused to pay a large portion of her income tax.

Baez increased her use of music to oppose the expanding war. After performing in 1965 at the Easter March, the first major antiwar demonstration in Washington, D.C., and at the “Sing-In for Peace in Vietnam” in Carnegie Hall in 1966, Baez took the antiwar cause overseas.



Joan Baez, American folk singer, in performance at an Anti-Vietnam War demonstration in Trafalgar Square, London, 1965. (Sally Soames/The Observer/Getty Images)

Government agencies, including the Federal Bureau of Investigation and Central Intelligence Agency, followed her movements and attempted to silence her; she was also censured by various mainstream media and conservative organizations.

Baez's pacifist ideology was based on Gandhi's principle of sanctity of life, which states that no person has the right to kill or harm another person, and noble objectives or notions such as enemy cannot justify violent acts. Her goal was a nonviolent revolution to create a world of peace, love, and equality. In 1965, her founding of the Institute for the Study of Nonviolence in Carmel, California, evidenced her commitment to peace. She financed the school and became involved in its mission of teaching nonviolence. In 1967, she became active in Resistance, an organization that opposed the draft. After picket-

ing and confronting authorities at the Armed Forces Induction Center in Oakland, California, both the singer and her mother were jailed for forty-five days.

The political commentary she incorporated into her concerts persuaded young men to hand her their draft cards on stage. A poster Resistance issued in 1968 photographed Baez together with her sisters under the caption "GIRLS SAY YES to boys who say NO." Although the poster's message enraged feminists, Baez argued that women should share a responsibility for peace. Baez married David V. Harris, founder of Resistance and himself a draft resister, in 1968. Soon after their marriage, he was arrested. They were divorced shortly after his release in 1971.

Baez and Coretta Scott King, together with Women Strike for Peace, organized the antiwar

BAGOT, LADY THEODOSIA

demonstration Ring around the Congress in 1972. The culmination for Baez's antiwar effort was her trip to Hanoi, Vietnam, at the end of that year. While visiting Hanoi, she witnessed the United States' Christmas bombing aerial attack. Baez wrote the antiwar song "Where Are You Now, My Son?" after witnessing the destruction and suffering the war caused.

Since the U.S. withdrawal from Vietnam, Baez's activism has focused mainly on human rights with Amnesty International and the organization known as Humanistas, which she founded in 1979.

—Avital H. Bloch

See also Fonda, Jane

References and Further Reading

- Baez, Joan. 1987. *And a Voice to Sing With: A Memoir*. New York: Summit.
DeBenedetti, Charles. 1990. *An American Ordeal: The Antiwar Movement of the Vietnam War*. Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University.
Fuss, Charles J. 1996. *Joan Baez: A Bio-Bibliography*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.

BAGOT, LADY THEODOSIA
(1865–1940)

Member of the Church Army (CA) who was instrumental in organizing several war hospitals during the Boer War and World War I. Lady Theodosia Bagot's service was recognized with several medals including the South Africa Medal, the 1914 Star, and the Medal of Queen Elizabeth of Belgium.

In October 1899, Dr. George Stoker inspired Lady Bagot to begin a voluntary mobile hospital unit for the war effort in South Africa. After soliciting funds for the unit, she established Portland Hospital at Bloemfontein, South Africa, which operated until August 1900. Although she had little nursing experience at the beginning of

this war, she was soon assisting in every aspect of the hospital and came to enjoy her work in the surgical wards.

At the start of World War I, Lady Bagot began organizing a CA hospital for the British war effort. Her hospital unit left for France on September 12, 1914, and established itself at Caen under the auspices of the French Red Cross. She split her time between the CA hospital and nearby railway sheds where she tended wounded soldiers, often until the early hours of the morning.

In January 1915, Lady Bagot left the CA Hospital at Caen to establish the Hospital of Friendship in Adinkerke, Belgium. She and her staff worked under constant bombardment, yet according to her fellow war worker, Sarah Macnaughtan, her hospital was happy and serene. In 1917, the hospital was forced to evacuate, and Lady Bagot returned to London to establish Charmy's, a CA club for ex-servicemen.

—Barbara Penny Kanner

See also Hobhouse, Emily

References and Further Reading

- Bagot, Theodosia. 1901. *Shadows of the War*. London: E. Arnold.
Macnaughtan, Sarah. 1919. *My War Experiences*. London: John Murray.

BAILEY, ANNE TROTTER
(CA. 1742–1825)

Pioneer heroine of border warfare in the Kanawha Valley in what is now West Virginia, immortalized in an 1861 poem, "Anne Bailey's Ride" by Charles Robb. Born Anne Hennis in Liverpool, England, around the year 1742, Bailey went to live with relatives in the colony of Virginia after her parents died in 1761. In 1765, after the French and Indian War, she married a local settler, Richard Trotter, from

Staunton in the Shenandoah Valley. The couple had one son, William.

The onrush of new settlers to the western portions of the Appalachian Mountains inevitably led to clashes with the Native American inhabitants. In an effort to quell the fighting, Virginia governor John Murray Lord Dunmore organized a border militia in 1774, and Richard Trotter enlisted. On October 10, 1774, in what is sometimes referred to as the first battle of the American Revolution, Trotter was killed at Point Pleasant. The Virginia militia successfully subdued Shawnee leader Cornstalk and his tribe, and a Native American alliance with the British was averted.

Trotter's death forever changed Anne's life. Leaving her seven-year-old son to the care of others, Anne "became a skilled frontier scout, horsewoman, hunter, messenger, and storyteller, wearing buckskins, carrying hatchet, knife and long rifle" (Hoffman). During the American Revolution, she aided the cause of the new nation by drumming up support for General George Washington's Continental Army. She often rode alone from one recruiting station to another, from the Potomac River to the Roanoke, later boasting, "I always carried an ax and auger, and I would chop as well as any man" (Cammarata). A valuable frontier messenger for the colonial forces, she frequently traveled the 160-mile route between Fort Savannah (now Lewisburg) and Fort Randolph at Point Pleasant.

After the American Revolution, Trotter met and married John Bailey, a border leader and member of the Rangers, a group of frontier scouts. In 1788, Bailey was assigned to Fort Clenendin (now Charleston). Settler and Native American conflicts had been reignited as more and more settlers were pushing their way westward into Kentucky and Ohio.

Anne continued her duties as a scout and messenger for the fort, warning the soldiers and nearby settlers of Indian movements. Her most famous ride, commemorated in the poem by Robb, took place in 1791. Word had been sent from Point Pleasant to Fort Clenendin that a large-scale Indian attack was about to take

place. At the time, the fort was low on ammunition. Anne rode 100 miles across wilderness trails to Lewisburg to obtain gunpowder. Riding day and night, as legend has it, Anne raced up the Kanawha Valley to the Greenbriar Mountains, where she secured the gunpowder and an extra horse to carry it back to the fort. The soldiers were able to repulse the attackers the following morning after she returned. Local folklore has it that her ride to Lewisburg was the most daring feat recorded in the annals of what was then considered the frontier West.

Anne, also known as Mad Anne (the Native Americans believed she was possessed by an evil spirit) and the White Squaw of Kanawha, continued her scouting duties until 1795 when the Greenville Treaty ended the Indian Wars. After John Bailey died in 1802, she went to live with her son and became a storyteller and trader. In 1817, they moved across the Ohio River to Gallia County, Ohio. She died peacefully on November 22, 1825.

—Charles F. Howlett

See also American Revolution, Role of Women in the; Duston, Hannah

References and Further Reading

- Cammarata, Kathy. "Won't You Come Home Anne Bailey?" <http://www.ohiou.edu/southeastohio/marchives> (accessed July 22, 2005).
- Case, Fred M. 1944. *Anne Bailey*. Charleston, WV: Telfords, 1944.
- Hall, Grace McCartney. 1955–1956. "Anne Bailey in West Virginia Tradition." *West Virginia Historical Quarterly Magazine* 17: 22–85.
- Hoffman, Jean. "Mad' Anne Bailey," <http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.com> (accessed July 22, 2005).
- Lewis, Virgil Anson. 1891. *Life and Times of Anne Bailey: The Pioneer Heroine of the Great Kanawha Valley*. Charleston, WV: Butler.
- Poffenbarger, Livia Simpson. 1907. *Anne Bailey: Thrilling Adventures of the Heroine of the Kanawha Valley*. Point Pleasant, WV: L.S. Poffenbarger, 1907 (private printing).
- Royall, Anne. 1826. *Sketches of History, Life and Manners in the United States*. New Haven, CT: Anne Royall, 1826 (private printing).

BAISSAC, LISE DE
(1905–2004)

British operative during World War II. Lise Baissac was born on May 11, 1905, to well-to-do French parents settled in Mauritius. With her brother Claude de Baissac (b. 1907), she went to Paris in 1920 to study. After the German invasion of France in 1940, she went to London, where she worked as an assistant in a shop. Both she and her brother joined the Special Operations Executive (SOE). Baissac had basic training under the First Aid Nursing Yeomanry (FANY) and was assigned the task of helping the French Resistance movement.

Baissac, under the code name of “Odile,” and Andrée Borrel became the first female agents to be parachuted into France. The first attempt had failed because of adverse weather conditions, and they landed in the Loire Valley on September 24, 1942, on their second attempt. Baissac’s task was to liaison between various networks such as “Prosper,” “Scientist,” and “Bricklayer.” From her base at Poitiers, she had to go either to Paris or to her brother’s home in Bordeaux to send and receive important messages. She formed a new circuit called “Artist” for helping agents. Masquerading as a widow named Madame Irene Brisse who had come to Poitiers for a tranquil life, Baissac lived near the Gestapo headquarters and was even cordial with the Gestapo chief. The Gestapo did not suspect Baissac, and with her charm and dexterity, she performed her mission well. Without a wireless set, she traveled by bicycle for her task. After the Gestapo penetrated spying networks and apprehended Borrel and others, Baissac and her brother were flown back to Britain in August 1943.

Baissac could not return to France right away because she broke her legs while training new agents. Only in April 1944 was she able to parachute again to France with the code name “Marguerite.” Her liaison with the “Pimento” circuit was tense because of political differences, and Baissac joined her brother in Normandy, where his circuit, “Scientist,” was engaged in arming

the resistance groups and preparing groundwork for D-day. She also went to Paris to induct new agents. After receiving a message informing her of D-day, she made her way through hostile territory on bicycle, avoiding the Gestapo and returned to Normandy.

Baissac actively took part in attacks and often covered 40 miles a day on a bicycle with explosives and arms for resistance groups. Lucky to survive, Baissac returned to Britain in September 1944. She joined the parade on the VE day and was received by Queen Elizabeth at Buckingham Palace. She was named Member of British Empire, and the French Government made her a chevalier de la Legion d’Honneur and awarded her the Croix de Guerre.

After the war, Baissac worked for the BBC and then married her childhood sweetheart Henri Villameur, an artist and interior decorator. The Valençay SOE Memorial, inaugurated on May 6, 1991, in the Indre department of France was a tribute to her and other operatives. She died on March 29, 2004, in her apartment at Marseilles.

—Patit Paban Mishra

See also Borrel, Andrée; Rudellat, Yvonne

References and Further Reading

- Binney, Marcus. 2002. *The Women Who Lived for Danger, the Women Agents of SOE in the Second World War*. London: Hodder and Stoughton General.
- Foot, MRD. 1984. *SOE: The Special Operations Executive 1940–46*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Kramer, Rita. 1995. *Flames in the Field: The Story of Four SOE Agents in Occupied France*. London: Michael Joseph.

BAKER, E. H. (MRS.) (N.D.)

Union spy during the American Civil War. Mrs. Baker successfully delivered intelligence about undersea vessels being developed by the Con-

federacy in the race for naval technologic superiority during the American Civil War.

Mrs. E. H. Baker had been employed by Allan Pinkerton's detective agency in Chicago prior to being dispatched as a spy to Richmond, Virginia, in November 1861. Pinkerton was General George McClellan's secret service chief and had learned that the Confederates were developing torpedoes and submarine vessels in response to the Union blockade. Pinkerton believed that Richmond's Tredegar Iron Works was the leading producer of this technology, and he sent Mrs. Baker to investigate.

Baker had once lived in Richmond and was acquainted with a captain in the Confederate navy. He took Baker to an exhibition along the James River of a submarine vessel intended for use against the Union fleet blocking the river's mouth. She recorded her observation of the submarine vessel that attached a floating magazine to the side of a ship. Baker watched as the submarine backed away and detonated the charge, sinking the ship in a large explosion.

Atwater also gave Baker a tour of Tredegar Iron Works, where she saw a much larger undersea vessel being produced, one she said was a larger version of the submarine used in the demonstration. Baker promptly returned north and reported her findings to Pinkerton, who then duly informed General McClellan.

There is some speculation about what Baker saw. The submarine she saw demonstrated was likely that designed by William Cheeney, and the larger vessel at Tredegar might in fact have been a larger model. The armor plating for the CSS *Virginia* (also known as the *Merrimack*) was being produced at this time as well. Pinkerton claims that Baker's intelligence thwarted a submarine attack on the USS *Minnesota* in Hampton Roads, which captured a Confederate submarine using grappling hooks, although the capture took place a month prior to the time that Pinkerton reported that Baker was in Richmond.

—Kristen L. Rouse

See also Civil War, American, and Women; Civil War, American, Women Combatants during the

References and Further Reading

- Coski, John M. 1996. *Capital Navy: The Men, Ships, and Operations of the James River Squadron*. Campbell, CA: Savas Woodbury.
- Pinkerton, Allan. 1883. *The Spy of the Rebellion; Being a True History of the Spy System of the United States Army during the Late Rebellion*. New York: G. W. Carleton.

BALCH, EMILY GREEN (1867–1961)

Awarded the Nobel Peace Prize in 1946. Emily Balch was born into a prosperous Boston family on January 8, 1867. She was a member of the first graduating class at Bryn Mawr College and continued her studies in sociology and economics at Harvard, as well as in Paris, Chicago, and Berlin. Her active involvement in social reform led to her friendship and collaboration with Jane Addams. Balch's concern for the plight of Slavic immigrants to the United States led to her 1910 study, *Our Slavic Fellow Citizens*. She became a full professor at Wellesley College in 1913 and chair of its Department of Sociology and Economics. Although she had devoted herself intellectually and practically to issues of social justice and women's rights, with the outbreak of World War I, Balch decided that her prime work in life would be the promotion of peace. She was as devoted to this cause as she had been to social reform—to the detriment of her personal life. She served as a delegate to the International Congress of Women at the Hague in 1915 and was a founder of the Women's International Committee for Permanent Peace, which became the Women's International League for Peace and Freedom (WILPF). She participated in the Neutral Conference for Continuous Mediation in Stockholm sponsored by Henry Ford. She spoke and wrote opposing entry into the war by the United States. Because of her peace activity, Wellesley's board refused to approve additional leave and dismissed her.

BALKAN WARS



Emily Greene Balch. (Library of Congress)

Balch attended the 1919 conference of the International Congress of Women in Zurich and agreed to become secretary of its Geneva-based Women's International League for Peace and Freedom (WILPF). She left that position when the league experienced financial difficulty in 1922 but assumed it again in 1934 for a year and a half without compensation. She was an early critic of the Versailles Treaty that ended World War I. Between the wars, she participated in League of Nations programs related to peace and international cooperation and served on a WILPF commission investigating conditions in Haiti under U.S. occupation. The plight of the victims of Nazism led Balch to alter her pacifism in favor of a forceful defense of human rights. Nevertheless, she continued to emphasize internationalism and cooperation. After receiving the Nobel Prize, which she donated to the WILPF, Balch continued to serve the league in an honorary capacity. During her

last years, she lived in a retirement home with limited economic resources.

—Bernard Cook

See also Addams, Jane; International Congress of Women: Antiwar Protest of Women in World War I; International Manifesto of Women

References and Further Reading

- Balch, Emily Green. 1918. *Approaches to the Great Settlement*. Introduction by Norman Angell. New York: Husbach.
- Balch, Emily Green, Jane Addams, and Alice Hamilton. 1915. *Women at the Hague: The International Congress of Women and Its Results*. New York: Macmillan.
- Randall, John Herman. 1946. *Emily Greene Balch of New England: Citizen of the World*. Washington, DC: Women's International League for Peace and Freedom.

BALKAN WARS

Two wars fought in the Balkans in 1912 and 1913. In the first, which began on October 17, 1912, Bulgaria, Greece, Montenegro, and Serbia, hoping to take advantage of Turkish weakness following the victory of Italy in Tripolitania in 1911–1912, fought the Ottoman Empire and surprisingly drove the Turks back almost to Constantinople. However, the allies immediately were at odds over the distribution of the unexpected gains. A second war, which began on June 29, 1913, pitted Bulgaria against its old allies, Turkey and Romania, and in the end they took advantage of Bulgaria's vulnerability. In both wars ethnic hostility led to atrocities against civilians. This was particularly true in the contested area of Macedonia.

In 1913, the Carnegie Foundation commissioned an inquiry into the causes, character, and results of the Balkan Wars. The commission reported that the wars were rooted in pas-

INCIDENTS OF ETHNIC VIOLENCE DURING THE BALKAN WARS REPORTED BY
THE CARNEGIE COMMISSION

“[I]n the final result [of the Macedonian uprising against the Turks in 1903], 200 villages ruined by Turkish vengeance, 12,000 houses burned, 3,000 women outraged, 4,700 inhabitants slain and 71,000 without a roof. . . . The burning of villages and the exodus of the defeated population is a normal and traditional incident of all Balkan wars and insurrections. It is the habit of all these peoples. What they have suffered themselves, they inflict in turn upon others. . . . Donchev, a notoriously cruel [Macedonian] guerilla chief[’s] . . . band massacred [Turkish] women and children. . . . While marching through Gumurjina, the [Macedonian] legion saw the dead bodies of about fifty murdered Bulgarian peasants. The dead body of a woman was hanging from a tree, and another with a young baby lay dead on the ground with their eyes gouged out [by the Turks]. . . . [R]aces whose minds have been molded for centuries by the law of reprisal and the practice of vengeance, tend to a common level of degradation. . . . Women and children to a number of over a hundred were massacred in a single house, and the slaughter was carried out with every conceivable circumstance of barbarity. . . . Deny that your enemies are men [human], and presently you will treat them as vermin. . . . [A]ll the Balkan races have grown up amid Turkish models of warfare. Folk-songs, history and oral tradition in the Balkans uniformly speak of war as a process which includes rape and pillage, devastation and massacre. . . . In the villages of Pichman, Ouroun-Béglé and Mavro, the Greeks . . . outraged more than 400 women. . . . A woman of Haskovo described how her little child was thrown up in the air by a Turkish soldier who caught it on the point of his bayonette . . . three young women threw themselves into a well after their fiancés were shot . . . the Turkish soldiers went down into the well and dragged the girls out. Two of them were dead; the third had a broken leg; despite her agony she was outraged by two Turks. . . . [T]he Greeks and Turks spared none from little girls of twelve up to an old woman of ninety. . . . On September 20 . . . in all of these villages the Servians committed acts of horrible massacre and outrage on women, children, and old people. . . . In Has-Keuï . . . all the [Bulgarian] women were collected in a spacious barn and the [Turkish] soldiers banqueted for twenty-four hours, outraging all the women from eight to seventy-five. . . . At Kolibia a young girl, pursued by a soldier, fell from a window . . . while her body was still breathing the soldier assaulted her. . . . The Turks are fleeing before the Christians, the Bulgarians before the Greeks and the Turks, the Greeks and the Turks before the Bulgarians, the Albanians before the Servians and the Bulgarians. . . . Widespread and almost universal maltreatment of women and girls by the soldiers of the . . . nations has left behind moral consequences which cannot be estimated.”

— *The Other Balkan Wars: A 1913 Carnegie Endowment Inquiry in Retrospect with a New Introduction and Reflection on the Present Conflict* by George F. Kennan.

Washington, DC: Carnegie Endowment for International Peace,
1993, Pages 34, 73, 74, 76, 78, 80, 95, 108, 131, 132, 154, 267.

Printed with permission of the Carnegie Endowment for International Peace.

sion, race antagonism, and desire for national aggrandizement. Ethnic violence was not new to the Balkans. Present atrocities as well as memories of past atrocities evoked reprisals. During the wars of 1911 and 1912, competing national ambitions fueled by antipathy for and

fear of rival nationalities led to acts of unrestrained brutality, the victims of which were women and children as well as men.

—Bernard Cook

See also Armenian Holocaust; Bulgarian Horrors

References and Further Reading

Carnegie Endowment for International Peace, 1993 [originally published 1914]. *The Other Balkan Wars: A 1913 Carnegie Endowment Inquiry in Retrospect with a New Introduction and Reflection on the Present Conflict* by George F. Kennan. Washington, DC: Carnegie Endowment for International Peace.

BALLESTREM-SOLF,
COUNTESS LAGI
(CA. 1919–1955)

Member and cofounder of the Solf tea parties, which brought together anti-Nazi intellectuals and helped Jews obtain hiding places and falsified passports to escape the Third Reich. Lagi Countess Ballestrem-Solf was the daughter of Wilhelm Solf (1862–1936), an opponent of national socialism and ambassador to Japan under the Weimar Republic. The countess spent the early and mid-1930s living in Shanghai, China, where she aided several Jewish refugees who had escaped to Asia. The Gestapo learned of her activities and questioned her upon her return to Berlin in 1938. When she was released, both she and her mother, Johanna (1887–1954), began work in Germany, hiding Jewish families in their apartment and planning escape routes to other parts of Europe for them. The Gestapo, however, caught several of these Jews, who then implicated the Solfs in helping them to escape; consequently, the German police increased their surveillance of the women and began tapping their phone lines.

Undaunted, the countess and her mother continued to resist the Nazi regime by holding tea parties, which were actually secret meetings aimed at organizing anti-Nazi intellectuals. The members of these meetings, known as the Solf Circle, were prominent members of society, including Otto Keip, a high-ranking official in the Foreign Office; Father Erxleben, a well-known

Jesuit priest; Countess Hanna von Bredow, the granddaughter of Bismarck; Albrecht von Bernstorff, a diplomat, banker, and Rhodes Scholar; and Elisabeth von Thadden, head of a respected girls' school near Heidelberg.

On September 10, 1943, von Thadden brought a new guest with her to the tea party, the Swiss Dr. Reckzeh, who unbeknownst to von Thadden was working as an undercover Gestapo agent. When the group's anti-Nazi sentiments became clear to Reckzeh, he reported the members to the Gestapo, who four months later, on January 12, 1944, arrested each of the tea-party guests. The countess and her mother were held for two days and eventually transferred to the Ravensbrück concentration camp, where they underwent sleep deprivation, starvation diets, and other intense interrogation methods.

Between 1944 and 1945, all of the members of the Solf Circle were executed for their political activities, except for the countess and her mother. On February 3, 1945, the two were being tried by the Berlin People's Court when a U.S. bombing raid occurred. The prisoners were rushed to their cells by the court's guards, but the president of the court, Roland Freisler, was killed in the raid when a bomb made a direct hit on the building, and the Solfs' file was destroyed. The women were rescheduled to be tried in the same court on April 27, but by that time the Russians had invaded Berlin. As a result, the countess and her mother, who were previously facing death sentences, were released. The war ended in Europe two weeks later.

—Tricia Jenkins

See also Von Thadden, Elizabeth

References and Further Reading

Boehm, Eric. 2003. *We Survived: Fourteen Stories of the Hidden and Hunted in Nazi Germany*. Boulder, CO: Westview Press.
Shirer, William. 1990. *The Rise and Fall of the Third Reich*. New York: Simon and Schuster.

DR. JAMES BARRY: THE WOMAN WHO SERVED AS A BRITISH MILITARY SURGEON

“An incident is just now being discussed in military circles so extraordinary that, were not the truth capable of being vouched for by official authority, the narration would certainly be deemed incredible. Our officers quartered at the Cape between 15 and 20 years ago may remember a certain Dr Barry attached to the medical staff there, and enjoying a reputation for considerable skill in his profession, especially for firmness, decision and rapidity in difficult operations. The gentleman had entered the army in 1813, had passed, of course, through the grades of assistant surgeon and surgeon in various regiments, and had served as such in various quarters of the globe. His professional acquirements had procured for him promotion to the staff at the Cape. About 1840 he became promoted to be medical inspector, and was transferred to Malta. He proceeded from Malta to Corfu where he was quartered for many years. He . . . died about a month ago, and upon his death was discovered to be a woman. The motives that occasioned and the time when commenced this singular deception are both shrouded in mystery. But thus it stands as an indisputable fact, that a woman was for 40 years an officer in the British service, and fought one duel and had sought many more, had pursued a legitimate medical education, and received a regular diploma, and had acquired almost a celebrity for skill as a surgical operator.”

—*Manchester Guardian*, August 21, 1865.

From “Theses Alive! at Edinburg University Library.”

http://www.thesesalive.ac.uk/ta_exemplary_theses.shtml (accessed March 3, 2006).

“He was clever and agreeable, save for the drawback of a most quarrelsome temper, and an inordinate addiction to argument, which perpetually brought the former peculiarity into play. He was excessively plain, of feeble proportions, and laboured under the imperfection of a ludicrously squeaking voice. Any natural ‘chaffing’ with regard to these, however, especially roused his ire, but was at length discontinued on his ‘calling out’ a persevering offender, and shooting him through the lungs. About 1840 he was promoted to be medical inspector, and was transferred to Malta. There he was equally distinguished by his skill and by his pugnacious propensities, the latter becoming so inconveniently developed upon the slightest difference of opinion with him, that at last no notice was allowed to be taken of his fits of temper.”

—*Malta Times and United Service Gazette*, September 7, 1865.

From Savona-Ventura, C. “Dr James Barry: An Enigmatic Army Medical Doctor,”

<http://www.geocities.com/hotsprings/2615/medhist/barry.html> (accessed April 20, 2005).

BARRY, JAMES MIRANDA
(1795–1865)

An inspector general in the British Army Medical Corps. James Miranda Barry, a woman who posed as a man, was born in London around 1795. She earned a doctorate in medicine from the University of Edinburgh in 1812. Although disguised as a man, she was the first woman to graduate from a medical school in the United Kingdom. Barry passed the Army Medical Board examination and

became a hospital assistant with the British army. She was posted to the Cape of Good Hope as assistant surgeon in 1816, to Mauritius in 1828, and to Jamaica in 1831.

In 1835, Barry was assigned to St. Helena as principal medical officer. There she became involved in dispute with the island’s administrators and was arrested and sent back to England. After being demoted to staff surgeon, she was sent back to the West Indies. There she successfully devoted herself to the improvement of the

conditions of the soldiers and was promoted to principal medical officer. In 1845, she returned to England after a bout with yellow fever. During that illness, a colleague discovered her true sex, but he was sworn to secrecy and maintained his silence. In 1846, Barry was sent to Malta as the principal medical officer. She served there and at Corfu until 1857.

Barry was a contentious character confident in her own expertise gained through long experience. Although personally generous with her time and resources, she was intolerant of colleagues whose expertise and diagnoses fell short of her standards. At Malta as elsewhere, she demanded better sanitary conditions and food for the men in the ranks, whose health was her concern. As a result of her efforts during a cholera epidemic in 1850, she was promoted to deputy inspector general of hospitals and posted to Corfu. There she supervised the care of sick and wounded soldiers from the Crimean campaign. In 1857, she was promoted to inspector general of hospitals and posted to Canada. On December 7, 1858, she was promoted to inspector general, a rank equivalent to that of major general. In 1859, after a bout of influenza, she was declared unfit for service and returned to England. She died in London on July 26, 1865. She had ordered that she be buried without an autopsy, but during the preparation of her body for burial, her sex was finally discovered.

—*Bernard Cook*

See also Great Britain, Women in Service in the Seventeenth, Eighteenth, and Early Nineteenth Centuries

References and Further Reading

- Rae, I. 1958. *The Strange Story of Dr. James Barry, Army Surgeon, Inspector-general of Hospitals, Discovered on Death to Be a Woman*. London: Longmans.
- Savona-Ventura, C. "Dr. James Barry: An Enigmatic Army Medical Doctor," <http://www.geocities.com/hotsprings/2615/medhist/barry.html> (accessed April 20, 2005).

BARTON, CLARA (1821–1912)

American battlefield nurse, founder of the American Red Cross. Born on December 25, 1821, in North Oxford, Massachusetts, Clara Barton was the youngest child of Captain Stephen and Sarah Stone Barton. Raised by doting elder siblings, Barton was a precocious learner and became an excellent marksman and rider. In the 1840s, however, these skills did not offer career prospects beyond school teaching, which Barton pursued in Massachusetts and New Jersey until 1850, when she founded a public school in New Jersey, only to be removed to make way for a male principal. Until the outbreak of the Civil War, Barton worked in a Republican patronage job as a clerk in the U.S. Patent Office, one of only four women employed by the federal government before 1862.

Barton became involved in the Civil War when she saw how badly friends and relatives in the 6th Massachusetts Regiment fared without medical supplies or food after being hurt in the Baltimore riots. Using her own salary and calling on a wide network of women's organizations in Massachusetts, Barton assembled a warehouse of goods that she began distributing to troops on the battlefield. Encouraged by her dying father, who urged her to take action as a respectable lady, Barton used her connections in Washington, D.C., to receive permission from the War Office to accompany the Army of the Potomac. From the battles of Culpepper Court House to Bull Run, Sharpsburg, Fredericksburg, and Antietam, Barton became the "angel of the battlefield," often the only person organizing care for the wounded and doling out food, blankets, and comfort. Ironically, having won acclaim for working under fire on the battlefield, Barton made it possible for women like Dorothea Dix and her Sanitary Commission nurses to cross gender barriers and work with the army, yet she found herself excluded from their activities.

Barton was present at the siege of Charleston in April 1863, where she developed a deep antipathy for slavery and an appreciation for feminists

CLARA BARTON, CIVIL WAR NURSE

“In my feeble estimation, General McClellan, with all his laurels, sinks into insignificance beside the true heroine of the age, the angel of the battlefield.”

— Dr. James Dunn,
Surgeon at Antietam Battlefield.

Letter from Clara Barton to Her Cousin

Head Quarters 2nd Div.
9th Army Corps-Army of the Potomac
Camp near Falmouth, Va.
December 12th, 1862 – 2 o'clock A.M.
My dear Cousin Vira:

Five minutes time with you; and God only knows what those five minutes might be worth to the many-doomed thousands sleeping around me.

It is the night before a battle. The enemy, Fredericksburg, and its mighty entrenchments lie before us, the river between—at tomorrow's dawn our troops will assay to cross, and the guns of the enemy will sweep those frail bridges at every breath.

The moon is shining through the soft haze with a brightness almost prophetic. For the last half hour I have stood alone in the awful stillness of its glimmering light gazing upon the strange sad scene around me striving to say, “Thy will Oh God be done.”

The camp fires blaze with unwanted brightness, the sentry's tread is still but quick—the acres of little shelter tents are dark and still as death, no wonder for us as I gazed sorrowfully upon them. I thought I could almost hear the slow flap of the grim messenger's wings, as one by one he sought and selected his victims for the morning. Sleep weary one, sleep and rest for tomorrow's toil. Oh! Sleep and visit in dreams once more the loved ones nestling at home. They may yet live to dream of you, cold lifeless and bloody, but this dream soldier is thy last, paint it brightly, dream it well. Oh northern mothers wives and sisters, all unconscious of the hour, would to Heaven that I could bear for you the concentrated woe which is so soon to follow, would that Christ would teach my soul a prayer that would plead to the Father for grace sufficient for you, God pity and strengthen you every one.

Mine are not the only waking hours, the light yet burns brightly in our kind hearted General's tent where he pens what may be a last farewell to his wife and children and thinks sadly of his fated men.

Already the roll of the moving artillery is sounded in my ears. The battle draws near and I must catch one hour's sleep for tomorrow's labor.

Good night near cousin and Heaven grant you strength for your more peaceful and less terrible, but not less weary days than mine.

Yours in love,
Clara

—“Clara Barton”
<http://americancivilwar.com/women/cb.html>
(accessed May 7, 2005).



Clara Barton. (National Archives)

and abolitionists such as Frances Gage who were educating former slaves. Barton took particular pride in the all-black 54th Massachusetts Regiment and saw to the treatment of many black soldiers who otherwise would have been ignored. Barton was a master letter writer and crafted clever appeals to the women of the North, assuring them of the importance of their donations of medical supplies for wounded soldiers. She was also a dedicated Republican, who publicly supported Abraham Lincoln and his execution of the war. While in South Carolina, Barton carried on a discreet affair with married Lt. Colonel John Ellsworth, but this was not known until long after her death.

As the war ended, Barton took up the cause of finding and identifying missing and dead soldiers, securing a \$15,000 appropriation from Congress to carry out her work. She led a party to Andersonville Prison in Georgia, where she located more than 13,000 dead prisoners and collected

evidence later used to convict Andersonville's camp administrator, Henry Wirz. After a successful national lecture tour, Barton sailed for Europe to recuperate in 1869. While there, she learned of both the Geneva Convention and the International Red Cross, whose activities she witnessed on the battlefields of the Franco-Prussian War in 1870. Upon returning to the United States, she lobbied tirelessly for the United States to join the Geneva Convention, which happened in 1882. She also founded the American Red Cross, serving as its first president from 1881 to 1904. While in charge, she extended the charge of the organization into disaster relief in peacetime, and led Red Cross volunteers on both the battlefields of the Spanish-American War and the battered aftermath of the Galveston Flood in 1900.

Barton retired from the Red Cross in 1904 and died at her home in Glen Echo, Maryland, on April 12, 1912.

—Margaret Sankey

See also Dix, Dorothea; Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War I

References and Further Reading

- Boyleston, Helen. 1955. *Clara Barton: Founder of the American Red Cross*. New York: Random House.
- Burton, David H. 1995. *Clara Barton: In the Service of Humanity*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Oates, Stephen. 1994. *Woman of Valor: Clara Barton and the Civil War*. New York: Free Press.

BASEDEN, YVONNE
(B. 1922)

Wireless operator parachuted into France as a British Special Operations Executive (SOE) operative during World War II and later imprisoned in the Ravensbrück concentration camp. Yvonne Baseden was one of many women who parachuted into France to work with the French resistance. Baseden began her career in Britain

with the WAAF (Women's Auxiliary Air Force), and because of her foreign language skills, she was recruited to the SOE. Baseden transmitted wireless information regarding the delivery and parachuting of supplies in the Dôle region of France before being captured by the Gestapo.

Baseden began her service in the WAAF as an airwoman clerk at age eighteen. Stationed at Kenley in 1941, Baseden helped teach French pilots technical English. She was born and raised in Paris by her French mother and English father and was therefore ideal for work in wartime France. Baseden became the assistant section officer in Intelligence and later worked for the Directorate of Allied Air Co-operation and Foreign Liaison. She was accepted into the Special Operations Executive in 1943 and was trained as a wireless operator. Baseden, whose code name was Odette, was parachuted into France on March 19, 1944, near Toulouse and served as a wireless operator in a cheese factory in the Dôle region. Baseden worked on a resistance circuit called Scholar along the Swiss border. In June 1944, after the Allied landings, Baseden and her associates faced increased danger. The Germans were becoming more alarmed about the resistance movement and the damage it was creating to German infrastructure. On June 26, 1944, the Gestapo discovered Baseden's safe house, and she and her associates were arrested. Baseden was taken to Dijon, questioned, and held in solitary confinement until August 1944, at which point she was sent to Saarbrück concentration camp. Facing interrogation by the Gestapo, Baseden was believed to be a French helper, not an English spy, because of her fluent French and apparent ignorance of any important information; the Gestapo did not suspect that she was integral to the safe delivery of supplies to the French Resistance. Baseden was transferred to Ravensbrück concentration camp in Germany; during her time at Ravensbrück, she contracted tuberculosis and because of this was to be sent to Belsen concentration camp. A friend intervened, however, and on April 28, 1945, Baseden and others were traded by the Swedish Red Cross for German prisoners and released from Ravens-

brück. Baseden returned to Britain and is an example of the significant roles of women in the war effort against the Axis powers during World War II.

—J. Lyndsey Rago

See also Atkins, Vera H.; Ravensbrück

References and Further Reading

- Escott, Beryl E. 1991. *Mission Improbable: A Salute to the RAF Women of SOE in Wartime France*. Somerset, England: Patrick Stephens.
- Miller, Russell. 2002. *Behind the Lines: The Oral History of Special Operations in World War II*. New York: St. Martin's Press.
- "The WAAF Agents—Yvonne Baseden," 64 Baker Street, http://www.64-baker-street.org/text_version/agents/agent_waaf_yvonne_baseden_txt.html (accessed December 30, 2004).

BATTALION, EMILIA PLATER

See Polish Independent Women's Battalion, Emilia Plater

BAUMGARTNER, ANN (B. 1918)

The first American woman to fly a jet aircraft. Ann Baumgartner was born in August 1918 in Augusta, Georgia, while her father served with U.S. forces in France. She grew up in New Jersey and graduated from Smith College with a degree in biology.

Baumgartner and her mother were visiting family in England at the outbreak of World War II. She learned to fly in 1940 and began training as a Women Airforce Service Pilot (WASP) in early 1943 at the Houston (Texas) Municipal Airport. A temporary illness sent her home midway through her WASP training. She was able to

BEATTY, BESSIE

return and finish her training at Avenger Field near Sweetwater, Texas, graduating with class 43-W-5 in September 1943. She was then assigned to Camp Davis, North Carolina, a base notorious for its poor treatment of the women stationed there and the site of several accidents in which WASP were killed. There, as part of a tow-target squadron, she flew planes trailing cloth targets for target practice from the ground.

In February 1944, Baumgartner moved temporarily to Wright Field near Dayton, Ohio, to test high-altitude, low-temperature equipment for WASP and other female pilots. She helped design a female attachment to the relief tube that allowed pilots to urinate in flight. Baumgartner transferred permanently to Wright Field the next month when she reported to the Fighter Flight Test (FFT) Branch to test a variety of airplanes. For a few weeks, she even flew for the Bomber Flight Test (BFT) Branch. When she returned to the FFT Branch, Baumgartner became the first American woman to pilot an airplane powered by jet propulsion, the top-secret YP-59A, on October 14, 1944.

Orville Wright, who visited Wright Field often, is said to have enjoyed his conversations with Baumgartner. She met her husband, Bill Carl, at Wright Field where he was an aeronautical engineer serving as the liaison officer between the National Advisory Committee for Aeronautics (NACA) and Wright Field. His conceptual design, which Baumgartner helped test, of two P-51 Mustang fighters connected into one aircraft became the XP-82, the “fastest prop-driven fighter . . . with the longest range” (Carl 1999, 105). The WASP was disbanded in December 1944, and they married in May 1945.

When the National Air and Space Museum opened in Washington, D.C., in 1976, the Flight Testing Gallery exhibit included the XP-59A, the first plane powered by jet propulsion, and recognized Baumgartner as the first woman to fly a jet, although the plane she flew was the YP-59A. In 1992, Baumgartner gave a lecture with General Laurence Craigie, the first U.S. Air Force pilot to fly a jet, at the National Air and Space Museum to celebrate fifty years of jet flight. In

March 2001, she was inducted into the Women in Aviation International Pioneer Hall of Fame.

—Rebekah Crowe

See also United States, Women’s Airforce Service Pilots

References and Further Reading

Carl, Ann B. 1999. *A WASP among Eagles*. Washington, DC: Smithsonian Institution Press.

BEATTY, BESSIE
(1886–1947)

War correspondent during World War I and the Russian Revolution. Bessie Beatty grew up in Southern California and began her career at the *Los Angeles Herald* while still in college, eventually becoming the drama critic and editor of the women’s pages. From Southern California, she moved to Nevada, living in a cabin near the gold mines and writing a book, *Who’s Who in Nevada: Brief Sketches of Men Who Are Making History in the Sagebrush State*. For the next ten years, she worked as a correspondent for *The San Francisco Bulletin*. In April 1917, Beatty was headed for an assignment in Asia when the United States entered World War I. Beatty traveled to Japan, then on to China, followed by a twelve-day trip on the Trans-Siberian Express to Petrograd, Russia. From Petrograd, she traveled south to the eastern front, where she wrote that she had gotten within 150 yards of the trenches. Beatty, along with U.S. writer and war correspondent Rheta Childe Dorr, met with the Women’s Battalion of Death, interviewing its leader Marie Bochkareva. In 1918, Beatty had articles published in *Asia, Century, Outlook, and Woman’s Home Companion*. She returned to the United States to write a book about her experiences, *The Red Heart of Russia*, which was followed by a lecture tour around the country. In 1921, Beatty traveled back to Russia with the intent to spend nine

weeks there. Instead, she stayed for nine months and interviewed both Vladimir Lenin and Leon Trotsky, sending stories home to the *San Francisco Bulletin*. Upon her return to the United States, Beatty became the editor of *McCall's Magazine*. She later worked for other magazines, broadcast on radio, and supported charitable causes for veterans. Beatty died in 1947.

—*Katherine Burger Johnson*

See also Bochkareva, Mariya; Russian Revolution and Women

References and Further Reading

- Beatty, Bessie. 1918. *The Red Heart of Russia*. New York: Century.
- Edwards, Julia. 1988. *Women of the World: The Great Foreign Correspondents*. New York: Ivy Books.
- Emery, Michael. 1995. *On the Front Lines: Following America's Foreign Correspondents across the Twentieth Century*. Washington, DC: American University Press.
- Higonnet, Margaret R. 1999. *Lines of Fire: Women Writers of World War I*. New York: Plume.
- Paneth, Donald. 1983. *The Encyclopedia of American Journalism*. New York: Facts on File.
- Ross, Ishbel. 1936. *Ladies of the Press: The Story of Women in Journalism by an Insider*. New York: Harper and Bros.

BEEKMAN, YOLANDE (1911–1944)

British secret agent during World War II. Yolande Elsa Maria Unternährer, the daughter of a Swiss businessman, was born in Paris in 1911. Her family moved to London when she was a child. She was educated in England and Switzerland. Her French and German were as impeccable as her English.

At the beginning of World War II, she joined the Women's Auxiliary Air Force and became a radio operator. After training, she was posted to several flight command stations. Her language

skills and her expertise with the wireless attracted the interest of the British Special Operations Executive (SOE) when she volunteered. Her training for work in France began in February 1943. In August of that year, she married Jaap Beekman, a sergeant in the Dutch army, and the following month, on September 18, she was flown to a site near Tours in German occupied France. In France, Beekman, known by the codenames Yvonne (Foot 1984, 466) or Mariette (Women of the SOE), worked in the north of the Aisne department as a wireless operator for the Musician network, headed by the Canadian Gustave Biéler. In addition to her communications work, Beekman was armed and present at twenty parachute drops of weapons and supplies. One of their team members described Beekman and Biéler as “both of the finest stuff imaginable” (Foot 1966, 268). Her mother described her as “a gentle, quiet, self-effacing child with a core of steel” (Women of the SOE).

Beekman made the fatal mistake of transmitting messages from the same location, on the same wavelength, at the same hour, on the same three days of the week for months. Using a direction finder, the Germans located the transmission site. Beekman and Biéler were arrested at the Café Moulin Brulé in St. Quentin on January 13, 1944. Apparently she and Biéler had decided, contrary to their training, that it was safer to send messages from a well-hidden transmitter than to risk seeking another secure house and moving the transmitter there. Foot (1966, 106) also blames London for not introducing changing schedules of transmission earlier. An informant from the Prosper network in Paris, however, broken through torture, might well have provided the information, which led to their capture (Women of the SOE).

After undergoing torture at the Gestapo headquarters in St. Quentin, Beekman was taken to the Fresnes prison in Paris and subjected to additional brutal interrogation. Despite repeated brutalization, she never revealed information to her captors. In May, she was transferred with seven other female agents to the Karlsruhe civil prison. On September 10, 1944, on the direct

BELGIUM, WOMEN DURING WORLD WAR I

order of Ernest Kaltenbrunner, the head of the SS Security Office, Beekman was transferred with Madeleine Damerment, Noor Inayat Khan, and Eliane Plewman to Dachau. There, on September 11, 1944, the day after their arrival, the four agents were told to kneel down. Kneeling in pairs and holding hands, they were executed with shots to the back of the neck.

Beekman was posthumously awarded the Croix de Guerre. Her name is inscribed on the SOE Runnymede Memorial and on the Valençay SOE memorial in France.

—Bernard Cook

See also Atkins, Vera H.; Damerment, Madeleine; Khan, Noor Inayat; Plewman, Eliane

References and Further Reading

Foot, M. R. D. [1966] 1984. *SOE in France: An Account of the Work of the British Special*

Operations Executive 1940–1944. Reprint, Frederick, MD: University Publications of America.

“The WAAF Agents—Yolande Beekman,” The Women of the Special Operations Executive, http://www.64-baker-street.org/agents/agent_waaf_yolande_beekman.html (accessed September 29, 2004).

“Yolande Beekman,” Spartacus Web, <http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/SOEbeekman.htm> (accessed September 29, 2004).

BELGIUM, WOMEN DURING WORLD WAR I

The fate of women during the German invasion of Belgium in 1914 and the subsequent occupation of the country by Germany until 1918. In

THE GERMAN ATTACK ON THE CIVILIANS OF LOUVAIN (LEUVEN) IN AUGUST 1914

Report of Hugh Gibson, Secretary of the American Legation in Brussels, on His Visit to Louvain (Leuven) during the German Violence against Civilians of That City

“[W]e began to see more ghastly sights—poor civilians lying where they had been shot down as they ran—men and women—one old patriarch lying on his back in the sun, his great white beard nearly hiding his swollen face. . . .

“In harmony with the policy of terrorising the population, the Germans have trained them to throw up their hands as soon as any one comes in sight, in order to prove that they are unarmed and defenseless. And the way they do it, the abject fear that is evident, shows that failure to comply with the rule is not lightly punished.

“Our worst experience of this was when in coming around a corner we came upon a little girl of about seven, carrying a canary in a cage. As soon as she saw us, she threw up her hands and cried out something we did not understand. Thinking that she wanted to stop us with a warning of some sort, we put on the brakes and drew up beside her. Then she burst out crying with fear, and we saw that she was in terror of her life. We called out to reassure her, but she turned and ran like a hunted animal.

“It was hard to see the fear of others—townspeople, peasants, priests, and feeble old nuns who dropped their bundles and threw up their hands, their eyes starting with fear. The whole thing was a nightmare.”

—Gibson, Hugh. 1917. *A Journal from Our Legation in Belgium by Hugh Gibson, Secretary of the American Legation in Brussels*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday, Pages 158 and 170.

Brand Whitlock, the U.S. Minister to Belgium, on the German Action in Louvain and One Incident at Dinant

“The number of citizens of Louvain slain was 210, of both sexes and all ages, from infants of three months to persons of eighty years. Several thousand were taken prisoner; over 600, of which 100 were women and children, were deported to Germany.

“ . . . the people were held there [at Dinant], evidently as a screen, while the Germans began to construct a temporary bridge over the river. The French were on the other side, and now and then they shot at the soldiers working there. The Germans . . . sent a citizen of Dinant, one of the prisoners, across the river to inform the French that unless they ceased firing the civilians would be shot. . . . But a few stray bullets still sped across the river. Then was committed the atrocious crime. The prisoners were massed together, nearly ninety of them—old men and young, women, girls and boys, little children, and babies in mothers’ arms. A platoon was called up, the colonel in command gave the word to fire, and the grey soldiers in cold blood shot down those ninety persons as they stood huddled together. Among them were twelve children under the age of six years, six of whom were little babies whose mothers, as they stood up to face their pitiless murderers, held them in their arms.”

—Brand Whitlock.

1919. *Belgium: A Personal Narrative*.
New York: D. Appleton, Pages 178 and 203.

A Belgian Account of German Violence against Civilians in Herve and Mélen-la-Bouxhe

“On the 8th of August, about 10 o’clock in the morning, some fresh troops arrived, who immediately began to fire in every direction. They burned the railway station, as well as the house of Mme. Christophe, who was asphyxiated, with her daughter. Seeing that the fire was reaching her house, a neighbour, Mme. Hendrickx, rushed into the street, a crucifix in her hand; she was immediately shot down. After this, other murders took place; houses were sacked and burned; forty persons, of whom five were women, were assassinated; the town was pillaged from end to end, and more than 300 houses were burned.

“ . . . At Mélen-la-Bouxhe the victims were no fewer than 120. Entire families were exterminated, on the 5th and 8th of August, by German troops infuriated by the resistance of the forts [at Liège]. Among the victims were old men of eighty years and children of five or six. One young girl, Marguerite W—, was sacrificed to the lust of twenty soldiers before she was shot beside her father and mother.”

—Commandant De Gerlache de Gomery.

1918. *Belgium in War Time*.

Translated by Bernard Mall. New York: George H. Doran, Pages 48–49.

the summer of 1914, as the Germans prepared to set their Schlieffen Plan in motion, they had hoped that Belgium would not resist. It did, and the German response was brutal. The Germans took male and female hostages and at times used them as human shields. People—including a number of women—suspected of being guer-

rillas, of committing acts of sabotage, or of providing support to Belgian soldiers were executed summarily. In response to resistance or perceived resistance, houses, villages, and parts of towns were put to the torch. Ordinary German soldiers undoubtedly believed that Belgian civilians were firing on them and inflicting casualties.



American cartoon of Germany holding Belgium, "What Will You Give for Her?" (Bettmann/Corbis)

The execution of hostages and reprisals against hostages was ordered or condoned by the German military in an effort to cow the civilian population of Belgium. In the largest killing of civilians, between 150 and 200 male civilians were executed on August 23 in Leffe near Dinant. Altogether, the Germans killed approximately 5,500 Belgian civilians. Women were among the number, but the majority were undoubtedly men. There were also reports of an array of individual acts of brutality against women and children. Although the diaries of German soldiers disclose fearful brutalities (Horne and Kramer 1994, 7, 11, 22), British propaganda exaggerated the number and character of German atrocities.

According to Arnold J. Toynbee "the destruction of Louvain (today Leuven) was the greatest

organized outrage which the Germans committed in the course of their invasion of Belgium and France" (Toynbee 1917, 88). On the evening of August 25, German soldiers in Leuven were in a high state of tension, and many were inebriated. There was fighting in nearby Mechelen, where the Belgians were conducting a counterblow against the invading Germans. Artillery fire from the battle was clearly audible in Leuven. German troops billeted near the train station apparently mistook new arrivals for Belgians and opened fire. The Germans in the street thought that they were being fired on by Belgians. An orgy of arson and killing followed: 2,441 houses were burned, and 2,722 were looted; 251 civilians were killed; and 831 civilians, women as well as men, were temporarily deported to an internment camp in Germany.

Under German occupation, Belgian women and children suffered. The Germans imposed heavy war contributions on the Belgians and resorted to widespread requisitioning, sometimes with inadequate compensation but often with none. The Germans curtailed U.S. relief to Belgian civilians in May 1916 because they believed that it was hampering their effort to lure Belgian workers to Germany to bolster the depleted German workforce. Between October 1916 and February 1917, the Germans forcibly deported approximately 120,000 Belgians to work in Germany. In general, the war was a time of hunger and hardship.

—Bernard Cook

See also Cavell, Edith Louisa; Petit, Gabrielle; Stobart, Mable

References and Further Reading

- Cook, Bernard A. 2002. *Belgium: A History*. New York: Peter Lang.
- Horne, John, and Alan Kramer 1914. "German 'Atrocities' and Franco-German Opinion, 1914: The Evidence of German Soldiers' Diaries." *Journal of Modern History* 66 (March): 1–33.
- Toynbee, Arnold J. 1917. *German Terror in Belgium: An Historical Record*. New York: George H. Doran.

BELIK, VERA LUK'IANOVNA
(1921–1944)

See Makarova, Tat'iana Petrovna, and Belik, Vera Luk'ianovna

BELL, GERTRUDE MARGARET
LOWTHIAN (1868–1926)

British intelligence agent in the Middle East during and after World War I, political officer of the British army, author, and amateur archaeologist. Gertrude Bell advocated self-rule for the Arabs and played a decisive role in developing the postwar Mesopotamian state of Iraq.

Gertrude Margaret Lowthian Bell was born in Washington Hall, Durham County, England, on July 14, 1868. After homeschooling, she attended Lady Margaret Hall at Oxford. She was the first woman to obtain first-class honors at Oxford. Bell's fluent Arabic and her experiences in Arabia and other parts of the Middle East on archaeological expeditions would have seemed to give her a unique level of expertise of immense value to the British government during World War I, but initially the Middle East was considered too dangerous for women. Instead, she traced missing soldiers for the Red Cross in London and Boulogne, France, until November 1915, when she left for Cairo.

Bell's knowledge of Arabia indeed proved invaluable to the British Intelligence and influenced Britain's decision to support the Arab revolt against the Turks. Bell possessed unpublished maps that she had made herself during her travels. These maps helped the British army move across uncharted territory toward Baghdad. In Basra (now in Iraq), Bell gathered firsthand information from locals. She knew many of the leaders of the nomadic tribes personally and encouraged the British to foster local support among the Arabs.

When the British occupied Baghdad in 1917, she was assigned to the city and given the post of Oriental secretary by Sir Percy Cox. She

served as the intermediary between the British and the Mesopotamian people. Bell also worked in Delhi, facilitating communications between the Arab Bureau at Cairo and Indian officials. With her political ally and friend T. E. Lawrence, she represented Mesopotamia at the Paris Peace Conference.

In 1921, Bell was the only woman attending the Cairo Conference, where Winston Churchill agreed to an Arab government in Iraq with Faisal, Bell's personal pick, as king. Bell's friendships and connections helped secure prominent Iraqis for government posts and the job of drawing Iraq's borders.

Bell authored several books including *Persian Pictures*, *Desert and the Sown*, *Amurath to Amurath*, and a white paper, *Review of the Civil Administration of Mesopotamia*. She lived in Baghdad until her death.

—Barbara Penny Kanner

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I

References and Further Reading

Wallach, Janet. 1996. *Desert Queen*. New York: Doubleday.

BENNETT, AGNES ELIZABETH
LLOYD (1872–1960)

Australian doctor, who headed the 7th Medical Unit, Scottish Women's Hospitals in World War I. Agnes Elizabeth Lloyd Bennett was born on June 24, 1872, at Neutral Bay, New South Wales, to Amelia Hays and William Christopher Bennett. She, her sister, and her mother left for Great Britain in 1878 because her mother believed that she would receive a better education there. Agnes attended school at Cheltenham and Dulwich. After her mother died of smallpox in 1881, Agnes returned to Australia and received a bachelor of science degree in 1884

from the University of Sydney with honors in biology and geology. Despite her excellent academic credentials, she faced many impediments because of her gender. She went to Britain to study medicine and graduated in 1899 from the College of Medicine for Women, University of Edinburgh. In 1911, after completing her thesis on breast-feeding, she received the degree of doctor of medicine. She worked in private practice in Sydney from 1901 to 1904 and in Wellington, New Zealand, from 1905 to 1908 despite prejudice against women doctors.

From 1908 until 1936, she served as the chief medical officer at St. Helen's maternity hospital in Wellington. During that period, she accepted various assignments all over the world and received accolades for her service to the medical profession. She was commanding officer of the 7th Medical Unit, Scottish Women's Hospitals for Foreign Service. Bennett was put in charge of a wing of Scottish Women's Hospitals in Serbia (1916–1917) and performed her duties amid the harsh and dangerous environment of World War I on the Serbian front. She was forced to leave in 1917 after contracting malaria. She was subsequently decorated with the Order of St. Sava of Serbia and the Cross of Honor of the Serbian Red Cross. She recovered sufficiently to work in Glasgow during the influenza epidemic of 1918 and then returned to New Zealand. She was the first president of the Wellington branch of the International Federation of University Women in 1923. At St. Helen's Hospital, she reduced maternal and infant mortality rates by applying new methods, and by 1936, New Zealand had one of the lowest rates of maternal and infant mortality in the whole world, largely due to her efforts.

During World War II, Bennett organized the Women's War Service Auxiliary in Wellington and gave lecture tours in New Zealand on sex education for service women. She also worked with the Women's Voluntary Services for Civil Defense in the United Kingdom. While serving at Chatham Islands in 1947, she was awarded the Order of the British Empire. Bennett devoted her life to the betterment of humankind with special emphasis on amelioration of

women's lives; she did not marry. She died in Wellington on November 27, 1960.

—*Patit Paban Mishra*

See also Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's Hospitals

References and Further Reading

"Agnes Elizabeth Lloyd Bennett." 1960. *The Press* (Christchurch, NZ), December 10.

Manson, Cecil, and Celia Manson. 1960. *Doctor Agnes Bennett*. London: Michael Joseph.

BILIEN, VALENTINA (N.D.)

German convicted of war crimes following World War II. Bilien was an ethnic German who had been married to a Russian and taught school in Russia. She sought refuge in Germany in February 1944. There she was appointed by Heinrich Gerike to administer a children's home at Velpke, a village near Helmstedt. The home housed children of Polish women forced to work on German farms. The mothers were compelled to hand over their children when they were four months old. Under Bilien, who was eventually assisted by four young Polish and Russian female forced-laborers, the infants were deprived of sufficient nourishment, and within months, eighty of them had died. After the war, a British military court in Brunswick tried Gerike, Bilien, and six others associated with the Velpke children's home. Gerike and Georg Hessling were sentenced to death. Bilien, the only woman to be tried, was sentenced to fifteen years imprisonment.

—*Bernard Cook*

See also Grese, Irma; Koch, Ilse; Plavsic, Biljana

References and Further Reading

The United Nations War Crimes Commission. 1948. *Law-Reports of Trials of War Criminals*. Volume VII. London: HMSO.

“Trial of Heinrich Gerike and Seven Others (The Velpke Children’s Home Case),” Stuart Stein’s Web site, <http://www.ess.uwe.ac.uk/WCC/velpke.htm> (accessed April 19, 2005).

BIOLOGICAL WARFARE EXPERIMENTATION, JAPANESE

Japanese use of men and women in the testing of biological weapons. Before and during World War II, the Japanese military pursued a vigorous program to develop biological weapons. The use of humans as experimental subjects facilitated the development of these weapons and new drugs. The program, headed by Dr. Shiro Ishii who became a lieutenant general, took place at various sites in Manchuria after 1934.

Human experimentation was regarded as an essential part of the program. It enabled the researchers to test the results of their work. The Japanese secret police, the Kenpeitai, provided Dr. Ishii’s team with Chinese and Russians, both soldiers and civilians. To optimize the testing, the human guinea pigs were male and female, young and old. Prisoners were injected with various pathogens and then observed. Some had their blood replaced with horse plasma. Prisoners were vivisected. To experiment with techniques for reviving frozen subjects, prisoners were sprayed with water in freezing prison courtyards until their limbs froze. Flamethrowers were used to inflict terrible burns for burn experimentation. Bombs containing pathogens were dropped on the Anta testing ground where prisoners had been chained to stakes to test their reaction. At the Pingfan complex, 24 kilometers south of Harbin, an estimated 3,000 males and females were murdered with approximately 500 to 600 prisoners suffering ghastly deaths yearly (Swanger 2004, 183).

In the middle of 1945, the Pingfan testing complex was destroyed to prevent it from falling into enemy hands, and the surviving prisoners were all murdered. The Russians executed some

of the perpetrators whom they had captured. The U.S. government, however, protected Ishii and many of his colleagues and used the results of the Japanese testing for its own biological warfare program.

—Bernard Cook

See also China, Women on the Home Front in World War II

References and Further Reading

- Harris, Sheldon H. 2002. *Factories of Death: Japanese Biological Warfare, 1932–1945, and the American Cover-Up*. Revised ed. New York: Routledge.
- Swanger, Andrew J. 2004. “Japanese Scientists Conducted Biological Research Experiments on Human Subjects in the Isolated Region of Manchuria.” In *Defining the Horrific: Readings on Genocide and Holocaust in the Twentieth Century*, edited by William L. Hewitt, 180–184. Upper Saddle River, NJ: Pearson/Prentice Hall.

BLACK, CATHERINE (B. 1883)

Professional nurse who volunteered for Queen Alexandra’s Imperial Military Nursing Service (QAIMNS) during World War I. She went to France in 1916 and worked at several hospitals and clearing stations until the end of the war. She was appointed private nurse to King George V.

Black was on the private nursing staff of the London Hospital when the war broke out. She volunteered for QAIMNS and was sent to the Cambridge Hospital in Aldershot, England. In the fall of 1916, she was assigned to the No. 7 Hospital in St. Omer, England, where she treated shell-shocked officers. She was moved to the casualty clearing station at Poperinghe, Belgium, to replace a nurse who had been killed there, then to the 41st Stationary Hospital in Sailly-Lorette, where she was in charge of treating self-inflicted wounds.

BLACK SASH

In March 1918, the 41st Stationary Hospital was ordered to join the Allied retreat. Catherine and a fellow nurse came upon a group of abandoned wounded soldiers, and they assembled a makeshift hospital. Afterward, Black was sent to the No. 5 General Hospital at Rouen and then to various other clearing stations until the end of the war.

—*Barbara Penny Kanner*

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I; Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's Hospitals; Stobart, Mabel

References and Further Reading

- Black, Catherine. 1939. *King's Nurse—Beggar's Nurse*. London: Hurst and Blackett.
- Kanner, Barbara Penny. 1997. *Women in Context*. New York: G. K. Hall.

BLACK SASH

White, liberal, women's human rights organization in South Africa that opposed the apartheid regime and provided free legal and other aid to black South Africans. Six women—Jean Sinclair, Ruth Foley, Elizabeth McLaren, Tertia Pybus, Jean Bosazza, and Helen Newton-Thompson—originally formed the Women's Defence of the Constitution League in 1955 in reaction to a proposed Senate Bill that would have removed colored (mixed-race) voters from the common voters role. They organized 20,000 women across the country against the bill, and at one rally a black sash draped across a symbolic replica of the constitution gave the organization its name.

Although they lost this battle, the women continued to organize, officially adopting the name Black Sash in 1956. It then became the practice for members to hold protest "stands" (standing silently in front of Parliament, courts, and other symbols of apartheid injustice), each wearing a black sash. During the apartheid era, women led

the way in resisting many race-related restrictions, particularly the pass laws. These required Blacks to carry so-called books of life, which documented where they lived and worked and that permitted them to be in whites-only areas. The Black Sash led the struggle against such laws, establishing pass-law advice centers in many cities, monitoring pass-law courts, and providing bail and free legal assistance to pass-law violators. The advice centers also handled other problems relating to employer-employee problems, work compensation, unemployment insurance, inferior education, and pensions. Black Sash members, using a variety of nonviolent methods including petitions, protests, marches, and vigils, also fought against the broader, harsher aspects of the apartheid system such as forced removals, indefinite detention without trial, and the death penalty. The organization also used well-documented press releases and publications to report on the extent of the discrimination, inequality, human suffering, hardship, and poverty that apartheid legislation was causing and to protest against these laws. Black Sash members sought to raise white South Africans' awareness of apartheid abuses, to play on white consciences by keeping the issues continually before the public, and to replace white complacency and apathy with action.

Black Sash members were frequently arrested, held in detention, kept under surveillance, and harassed, particularly during the darkest days of apartheid rule in the 1960s and 1970s. Black Sash worked with a number of other organizations, including the Federation of South African Women, the End Conscription Campaign, and particularly the United Democratic Front to fight apartheid. After Nelson Mandela's release from prison in 1990 and the legalization of political parties, the Black Sash helped prepare for a peaceful transition to a new democratic nation by sponsoring debates, advising on the new constitution, and engaging in extensive voter education campaigns. After the 1994 elections, the Black Sash was transformed into a professional nongovernmental organization, with a national director and board of trustees, overseen by the

BLANCHE OF CASTILE

Black Sash Trust. The focus remains on the socioeconomic rights of the poorest and most vulnerable sectors of South African society.

—Roger B. Beck

See also First, Heloise Ruth; Mandela, Winnie

References and Further Reading

- Michelman, Cherry. 1975. *The Black Sash of South Africa*. New York: Oxford University Press.
- Spink, Kathryn. 1991. *Black Sash: The Beginning of a Bridge in South Africa*. London: Methuen.

BLACKWELL, ELIZABETH (1821–1910)

Pioneer woman physician, who worked as an administrator with the U.S. Sanitary Commission during the American Civil War, providing medical assistance to the wounded and sick. Elizabeth Blackwell was born in Bristol, England, the third daughter in a large, closely knit family. In 1832, when she was eleven, her family immigrated to New York and later moved to Ohio. A dying friend suggested that Elizabeth enter the field of medicine. Although she was initially opposed to the idea, the possibility of becoming a physician gradually appealed to her, especially when she was continually told that a female entering the male-dominated field was an outlandish plan.

Blackwell obtained teaching positions in North and South Carolina, but she continued her independent study of medicine, reading medical books provided to her by local physicians. In 1847, she moved to Philadelphia with the intention of entering medical school, but male administrators were unsympathetic. Rejected by medical schools in both Philadelphia and New York City, she was eventually accepted at Geneva University in rural western New York.

After graduation Blackwell worked with patients at an almshouse in Philadelphia where

she learned much about epidemiology. From 1841 to 1851 she continued her studies in Europe where she met and became friends with Florence Nightingale. Blackwell returned to New York in 1851 and adopted an Irish immigrant child whom she nicknamed Kitty. When the Civil War began, medical assistance was needed for the massive number of wounded soldiers; to meet this end, Blackwell helped create the Women's Central Association of Relief. In addition to the relief organization, she and her sister Emily, also a physician, worked with the U.S. Sanitary Commission during the war.

In 1868, Blackwell and her sister founded the Women's Medical College of the New York Infirmary. She returned to England in 1869 where she started the London School of Medicine. There she served as a professor of gynecology from 1875 until 1907. She died three years later in England.

—Leonard A. Steverson

See also Barton, Clara; Civil War, American, and Women; Dix, Dorothea; Nightingale, Florence

References and Further Reading

- Blackwell, Elizabeth. 1895. *Work in Opening the Medical Profession to Women*. London: Longmans, Green.
- Wilson, Dorothy Clarke. 1970. *Lone Woman: The Story of Elizabeth Blackwell, the First Woman Doctor*. Boston: Little, Brown.

BLANCHE OF CASTILE (1188–1252)

Queen of France, regent for Louis IX, and expert at military logistics. Blanche of Castile (1188–1252) was one of the greatest rulers of France; historians have commented that by right she should be listed as one of the *kings* of France because she was so much more than simply a queen consort. Blanche's career was extraordinary and provides evidence of women's roles in medieval war not only in the making of treaties

between states and in support from the home front but also in the much rarer form of active planning and directing of military campaigns.

Blanche was a Spanish princess, the daughter of Alfonso VIII of Castile and Eleanor, a daughter of Henry II of England. In 1200, she was married to Louis, heir to the French throne, as one of the terms in a treaty between the French and English (she was dowered with lands that had been contested between the two kings). Little more is known of her until 1216, when she began to display the firm, resourceful personality that won her fame. In that year, Prince Louis invaded England at the invitation of rebellious English barons, claiming the throne of England in Blanche's name. Blanche was her husband's chief supporter. She established herself at Calais, where she organized two fleets and an army for the invasion. Although the campaign failed, Blanche's own position as head of logistics had been beyond reproach.

It is unclear what role Blanche played during her husband Louis VIII's brief (1223–1226) rule; queen consorts were not expected to be politically active in this period. However, Louis died young, and left Blanche as regent and guardian of their twelve-year-old son Louis IX (later canonized as St. Louis). The situation was dangerous. The nobles of France had deeply resented Philip II Augustus's strong rule (1180–1223) and further despised Blanche as a woman and a foreigner. A league of barons was established in 1226 to seize the regency from Blanche and generally weaken royal authority. Blanche responded so vigorously, showing her talent for military organization by raising an effective army and engaging in adroit diplomacy, that the league dissolved. The nobles of Poitou went on to make an alliance with the English against Blanche's regency, but she fought down this combined English-Poitevin attack in 1230.

From 1248 until her death at the end of 1252, Blanche served France as regent a second time when her son Louis IX decided to go on crusade despite Blanche's strong disapproval. She succeeded in keeping peace in France and yet again showed her talent for lo-

gistics, channeling ever more men and money to the East to support Louis's ruinously expensive and ultimately disastrously defeated venture. She died before her son's return, worn out by her efforts to provide the logistical support for a war that stretched France's resources to their limits.

—Phyllis G. Jestice

See also Eleanor of Aquitaine

References and Further Reading:

Pernoud, Régine. 1975. *Blanche of Castile*. New York: Coward, McCann and Geoghegan.

BOCHKAREVA, MARIA (MARIYA OR YASHA) (B. 1889)

Commander of the Russian Women's Battalion of Death. Maria (Yasha) Bochkareva was born in Nikolsko, Siberia. She was physically abused by her alcoholic peasant father. At age fifteen, she married Afansi Bochkareva, who also abused her. She left him and her job as a construction worker and worked on a river steamer. Her second husband, Yakov Buk, was also violent. In 1914, Maria left him and was allowed to join the Russian 25th Reserve Battalion as a woman soldier. She was wounded twice and awarded three times for her bravery.

In May 1917, she was able to persuade Alexander Kerensky, then minister of defense of the provisional Russian government, to allow her to form a women's battalion. She reputedly said, "If the men refuse to fight for their country, we will show them what the women can do!" (Farmborough 1975, 299). She was able to recruit 2,000 women. There were young women from prominent families and university students swept away by patriotic emotion, and perhaps sometimes "drawn to battle through personal sorrow or failure in love" (Stites 1978, 297). Some of these became officers, but after

MARIA BOCHKAREVA

Yasha Bochkareva's Dream

"I had a vision. I saw millions of Russian soldiers rise in an invincible advance after I and my three hundred women had disappeared into No Man's Land on the way to the German trenches. Surely, the men would be shamed at the sight of their sisters going into battle. Surely the front would awake and rush forward like one man, to be followed by the powerful armies of the rear. No force on earth could withstand the irresistible momentum of fourteen million Russian soldiers.... I felt that Russia's manhood was ready to follow the Battalion and strike the final blow for the salvation of the country. It was an illusion and my disenchantment was not very long delayed."

—Maria L. Bochkareva with Don Levine.

Yashka: My Life as a Peasant Officer and Exile.

New York: Frederick A. Stokes, 1919, Pages 207 and 191.

Bochkareva culled the ranks and drove away most of her recruits with her draconian discipline, only 300, predominantly peasant women, remained. Those who remained were instructed by men from the Volhynia Regiment. Before shipping to the front, the battalion was praised by the British suffragette turned patriot Emmeline Pankhurst.

The battalion, bolstered by officers and rank-and-file male volunteers, fought credibly in the July offensive, driving through three German trench lines. Bochkareva thought, "Surely, the men would be shamed at the sight of their sisters going into battle. Surely, the front would awake and rush forward like one man" (Bochkareva 1919, 207). To her dismay, the battalion was left in the lurch by all-male units, who refused orders to support its attack. Some of her own unit and their reinforcements faltered. During the fighting, Bochkareva discovered one of her women making love with a Russian male soldier. She ran the woman through with a bayonet, but the man escaped before she could kill him (Bochkareva 1919, 217). The women were forced to fall back to avoid encirclement and suffered staggering casualties, between 109 and 210 of its 300 soldiers (Stites 1978, 297), including Bochkareva, who was wounded. After recovering, she was attacked and almost lynched by disgruntled male onlook-

ers when she attempted to impose discipline on a women's unit in Moscow. She returned to the front and her unit, but defeatism was rampant. Her effort to shame men into fighting led to insults and threats. Finally, twenty of her soldiers were lynched by defeatist men (Bochkareva 1919, 256). At that point, Bochkareva dissolved her unit.

Asked by an old officer acquaintance to confer with General Lavr Kornilov, she went to an area in the south where Kornilov and the Bolsheviks were fighting. Captured by the Bolsheviks, she narrowly escaped execution. Through luck, being recognized as a soldier who had saved wounded soldiers on the battlefield at great personal danger, and the help of acquaintances, she was released. She was able to make her way to Vladivostok, and on April 18, 1918, she was transported to the United States on a U.S. ship. There she told her story, which was turned into a book by Isaac Don Levine. She left the United States in July and returned via England to Archangel, Russia. There she disappeared in 1919.

The 135 women soldiers stationed in the Winter Palace in Petrograd at the time of the October Revolution are frequently identified as members of the Women's Battalion of Death. They were not part of Bochkareva's unit, but a



Commandant Maria Bochkareva, leader of the Russian military's Women's Death Battalion. (Duncan-Clark, S. J., *Pictorial History of the Great War*, The John A. Hertel Co., Toronto, 1919)

company from a women's battalion formed in Petrograd after Bochkareva disbanded her unit and left the front. They were almost the sole defenders of Kerensky's Provisional Government against the Bolsheviks. Kerensky left the women soldiers and young male cadets to fight while he escaped in an automobile commandeered from the U.S. embassy. His effort to rouse reinforcements failed, and the company of women left their barricades and surrendered. The women were taken to various barracks for the night. They were insulted and beaten; three were raped, and one committed suicide. Despite wild rumors, there was no massacre and no mass rape. The next day, the women were marched to the Finland station and sent to their barracks, after which they disbanded.

—Bernard Cook

See also Russia, Women in the Armed Forces

References and Further Reading

- Bochkareva, Maria L., with Don Levine. 1919. *Yashka: My Life as a Peasant Officer and Exile*. New York: Frederick A. Stokes.
- Daniels, Robert V. 1967. *Red October: The Bolshevik Revolution of 1917*. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons.
- Farmborough, Florence. 1975. *With the Armies of the Tsar: A Nurse at the Russian Front 1914–18*. New York: Stein and Day.
- Sites, Richard. 1978. *The Women's Liberation Movement in Russia: Feminism, Nihilism, and Bolshevism, 1860–1930*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University.

BONNEY, THERESE
(1894–1978)

War photographer. The first correspondent to capture the coming of the Russo-Finnish War in 1939 and the only woman photographer on the Finnish and Western Fronts during the major part of the fighting, Bonney's photos of the aftermath of World War II lead to the founding of UNICEF.

Bonney was born in Syracuse, New York, in 1894 but spent most of her youth in California. After graduating from the University of California, she earned a master's degree in romance languages at Harvard. In the midst of studying for her Ph.D. at Columbia, she moved to Paris to study at the Sorbonne, where in 1921 she was the tenth American and fourth woman to earn a Ph.D.

She launched the European branch of the American Red Cross's Correspondence Exchange between European and American children, hoping to foster cultural relationship between the two continents. While lecturing and touring Europe, she wrote for newspapers and magazines in the United States, France, and England. Finding it impossible to locate appropriate images to accompany her articles, she established the Bonney Service, the first U.S. illustrated press service in Europe, which sup-

plied images for newspapers and periodicals in thirty-three countries.

Before World War II, Bonney organized several photography exhibits in Europe and the United States and coauthored guide and cooking books with her sister, Louise Bonney Leicester. On the pretext of shooting photos of the Finland's preparations for the Olympics Games, Bonney scooped the Russo-Finnish War and was decorated with the highest honor of Finland, the White Rose. Sometime after 1940, she was involved in a secret mission in Finland for the Office of Strategic Services. Leaving Finland in 1940, she returned to France, where she worked with the American Red Cross and Anne Morgan's section of the American Friends of France and helped evacuate refugees. At the time of the German invasion, she was the only foreign correspondent at the Battle of the Meuse and made the most complete record of the Battle of France.

Returning to the United States, she exhibited her war photos at the Library of Congress. The Carnegie Corporation granted her money to return to Europe to comment on the war's aftermath. In 1943, Bonney published a shocking book, *Europe's Children*, which documented the ravages of the war on children. With her lens, Bonney's images horrified Americans and Europeans alike in a manner that words could not. Making her home in Paris after the war, she wrote a column for the French daily *Le Figaro* and translated French plays that were produced on Broadway. For her bravery and humanitarian efforts, the French government awarded her the Croix de Guerre in 1941.

—Rebecca Tolley-Stokes

See also Buble, Esther; Chapelle, Dickey; Lange, Dorothea; Meiselas, Susan; Red Cross of the United States: World War I and World War II

References and Further Reading

Kolosek, Lisa Schlansker. 2002. *The Invention of Chic: Therese Bonney and Paris Moderne*. New York: Thames and Hudson.

"Therese Bonney." 1944. In *Current Biography*, 51–54. New York: H. Wilson.

BORDEN, MARY
(1886–1968)

American writer and nurse who wrote about her nursing experiences in World Wars I and II. Mary Borden, the daughter of a wealthy businessman, was born in Chicago. She began her nursing career in France working for the French Red Cross in 1914. At her own expense, Borden equipped and ran a mobile surgical hospital along the French-Swiss border. For her medical effort, she was awarded the Croix de Guerre by the French government. In March 1918, she married Edward Spears, the head of the British Military Mission in France.

After the war, she turned to writing. She published a novel, *Flamingo*, in 1928. She then wrote about her experiences in the war in her 1929 book, *The Forbidden Zone*. The tone of *Forbidden Zone* is pessimistic, and the accounts in her collection are to be taken as interpretations of events rather than factual reports. Borden's writing employed modernist styles, including free movement between fiction, poetry, and prose. Her narrator downplays her own achievements and abilities.

In Borden's writing, "No Man's Land" is inhabited by a select few women. Accounts written by nurses like Borden refuted the idea that only soldiers could write an authoritative account of the war. Scholars praised Borden's writing as brilliant and as a form of important historical documentation. Borden's work is typical of the chaotic influence of the war's new technology and of the experimental art employed by women out of a desire to be innovative. In "Conspiracy," one of the essays in *Forbidden Zone*, Borden argues that the war changed the balance between male and female, with women suddenly holding power at the expense of men. Nurses were partly guilty for causing pain and breaking men's bodies, a symbol of the fragmentation evident in modernist literature. Women were stripped of their own identity and forced to take on one that was more akin to that of an animal. Men were literally emasculated, and she often uses the metaphor of X-rays peering into their bodies.

In 1940, Borden returned to nursing creating a mobile hospital in France. Her 1946 *Journey down a Blind Alley*, considered to be her autobiography, described her work without supplies in a casino that had been converted into a hospital and her work at the frontline. She explored the political difficulties that came with her status as the wife of a British official and revealed her growing frustration with the French, whom she accused of collaborating with the Germans. She also attacked the personal ambition, marketing, and hypocrisy of the medical profession. Finally, U.S. volunteers received her scorn. She derided them as merely in the war out of curiosity and “sensation seeking.”

—*Laura Finger*

See also Nurses, United States Army Nurse Corps in World War I

References and Further Reading

- Higonnet, Margaret R. 2001. *Nurses at the Front: Writing the Wounds of the Great War*. Boston: Northeastern University Press.
- Smith, Angela K. 2000. *The Second Battlefield: Women, Modernism and the First World War*. New York: Manchester University Press.

BORGINIS, SARAH (1812–1886)

American heroine in the Mexican War (1846–1848). Sarah Borginis was born in Clay County, Missouri, in 1812. Married to a soldier by 1840, she worked for the U.S. Army as a laundress. Her duties included washing clothes and cooking for officers, as well as caring for the sick and wounded. Strong, athletic, and graceful, she stood over six feet tall with an hourglass figure. Borginis’s striking appearance brought her much attention. Her nickname, the Great Western, was inspired by the largest steamer afloat in its day.

Anticipating trouble in 1845 over the U.S. annexation of Texas, President James K. Polk au-

thorized General Zachary Taylor to assemble the largest number of military troops since the Revolutionary War. Borginis and her husband joined Taylor’s forces in Corpus Christi, Texas. Borginis, who idolized Taylor, was outspokenly confident in the general’s leadership ability. When orders came from Washington for Taylor’s forces to move into Mexico, Sarah drove her donkey cart full of supplies south with great skill. On the Rio Grande River opposite Matamoras, Mexico, Taylor hurriedly constructed Fort Texas. After the war officially began, Taylor maneuvered to protect his supply base, leaving Major Jacob Brown in charge of the fort and its 500 inhabitants. In May 1846, the Mexicans laid siege to Fort Texas for seven days. Borginis frequently exposed herself to danger as she served meals, dressed wounds, and loaded rifles. Brown was killed before Taylor returned to save Fort Texas, which was renamed Fort Brown in his honor.

Borginis achieved national attention when word of her courage and composure under attack appeared in U.S. newspapers. The Great Western became a notable part of western lore as the heroine of Fort Brown. Borginis maintained her reputation accompanying Taylor’s forces in several battles. After her first husband was killed in combat, she had several other male companions and husbands. Borginis, a woman of great business acumen despite being able neither to read nor write, managed two hotels, both called the American House, in the Mexican cities of Saltillo and Monterrey. The hotels provided soldiers with entertainment, food, lodging, liquor, and women.

The war’s end in early 1848 coincided with the discovery of gold in California. Borginis eventually moved to what became El Paso, Texas, where federal troops were ordered to protect westward migrating Americans. Borginis is remembered as El Paso’s first Anglo female resident, as well as its first madam. After a few years in El Paso, Borginis headed west with a new man, Albert Bowman, a European immigrant and Mexican War veteran. They settled in Fort Yuma, Arizona, where Borginis, Yuma’s first Anglo female resident, started a business cook-

ing and cleaning for officers while her husband pursued mining. Soon she was running a restaurant, bar, boarding house, and brothel across from the fort. Her final years were spent managing her various businesses in Arizona, most of them in Yuma. Borginis, the only woman laid to rest in Fort Yuma's cemetery, was buried with full military honors in 1866. Her body and others there were reinterred at San Francisco National Cemetery, where her gravestone is marked Sarah A. Bowman.

—David M. Carletta

See also Allen, Eliza

References and Further Reading

Sandwich, Brian. 1921. *The Great Western: Legendary Lady of the Southwest*. El Paso, TX: Texas Western.

BORREL, ANDRÉE
(1919–1944)

British secret agent during World War II. André Borrel was born outside Paris on November 18, 1919, to working-class parents. She imbued the socialist sentiments prevalent in her class and left school when she was fourteen to become a seamstress. She moved to Paris in 1933 and took a job as a shop assistant. During her free time, she was an avid hiker and cyclist, pastimes that would later serve her well. At the beginning of the war, she moved to Toulon. She trained as a nurse with the Red Cross and attended wounded French soldiers. Following the fall of France in June 1940, Borrel and her friend, Maurice Dufour, joined a Resistance group, which helped downed Allied airmen escape France. When the group was uncovered, Borrel and Dufour made their way to Portugal, where she was able to find employment with the Free French Propaganda Office of the British Embassy. In April 1942, she went to

England. The Gaullists in England were suspicious of her because of her socialist sympathies. After interrogation to determine whether she might be a secret agent of the Nazis, Borrel was cleared to join the British Special Operations Executive (SOE). Bearing the code name Denise, Borrel parachuted into France with Lise de Baissac on September 24, 1942. She was assigned as a courier to the Prosper network led by Francis Suttill. Foot (1984, 156) judged Borrel, Madeleine Damerment, and Nancy Wake “three of F section’s best couriers.” Borrel proved herself much more than a courier. Her left-wing political outlook was useful among the workers of Paris’s Red Belt suburbs. She became an organizer, trainer, and active participant in sabotage operations. By March 1943, she had risen to second in command in “Prosper.” Suttill said, “Everyone who has come into contact with her in her work agrees with myself that she is the best of us all” (Foot 1984, 257).

On June 23, 1943, Borrel, Suttill, and Gilbert Norman, their radio operator and the other key figure in Prosper, were arrested. After interrogation at the hands of the Gestapo during which “she treated them [the interrogators] with fearless contempt throughout” (Foot 1984, 316), Borrel was held in the Fresnes prison in Paris. On May 13, 1944, she was sent from Fresnes with seven other captured British women agents to the Karlsruhe civil prison in Germany. On July 6, 1944, on the direct order of Ernest Kaltenbrunner, the head of the SS Security Office, Borrel, Sonia Olschanezky, Vera Leigh, and Diana Rowden were moved to the Natzweiler-Struthof concentration camp. The day of their arrival, the women were ordered to undress in front of a camp doctor. They refused, but, when told that they were to be inoculated against typhus, bared their arms and were injected with phenol. They fell into a stupor and were put directly into a crematorium. As the last was being shoved into the oven, she regained consciousness and resisted but was nevertheless burned alive. A watercolor of Borrel and her three companions executed by Brian Stonehouse, an SOE

agent who as a prisoner had witnessed their arrival at Natzweiler-Struthof, has a place of honor in the Special Forces Club in London.

—Bernard Cook

See also Atkins, Vera H.; Leigh, Vera; Olschanezky, Sonya; Rowden, Diana

References and Further Reading

- “Andrée Borrel,” Spartacus Web, <http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/SOEBorrel.htm> (accessed September 30, 2004).
- Foot, M. R. D. [1966] 1984. *SOE in France: An Account of the Work of the British Special Operations Executive 1940–1944*. Reprint, Frederick, MD: University Publications of America.
- Kramer, Rita. 1995. *Flames in the Field: The Stories of Four SOE Agents in Occupied France*. New York: Viking Penguin.
- Nicholas, Elizabeth. 1958. *Death Be Not Proud*. London: Cresset.
- “The FANY Agents—Andrée Borrel,” The Women of the Special Operations Executive, http://www.64-baker-street.org/agents/agent_fany_andree_borrel.html (accessed September 28, 2004).

BOUDICCA, QUEEN OF THE ICENI (D. CA. 60–61)

Leader of a massive rebellion against Roman rule of Britain. The Romans had previously antagonized the Iceni, long-standing clients of Rome, by demanding that they disarm while Rome conquered Wales. This was further aggravated by the demands of the nearby military colony constructed at Colchester (Camulodunum) and the sudden death of Prasutagus in the year 59. Boudicca, who probably married him around 43–45, had two daughters and seems to have inherited the chieftaincy of the Iceni. A Roman observer later described her as very tall, red haired, and wearing the torque and armor of an Iceni war leader. The Roman

procurator for the area, Catus Decianus, demanded that the Iceni honor a legacy by Prasutagus to Rome, which left the emperor Nero half of the Iceni lands and property. This will was probably a forgery, made to convert previous gifts to the Iceni into a loan, which was being repaid. When Boudicca refused to comply, a Roman force invaded the royal compound, flogged Boudicca and raped her two daughters, then declared the Iceni royal family stripped of its land.

This insult to Boudicca and her tribe could not be ignored, and other Celtic Britons rallied to them, including rogue elements of the Catuvellauni and Dobrunni, and the full body of the Trinovantes, Coritani, Durotriges, and Brigantes. The fury of the Celts only increased when they learned that the Roman general Suetonius had massacred druids on the sacred island of Anglesey. In response, the Celts attacked Colchester, sacking the town and killing its inhabitants. When a relief force under Petilius Cerealis from the IX Legion attempted to come from Lincoln to help them, they were attacked and defeated in a separate battle in the fens. Boudicca is credited with leading the Celts at both battles, although they occurred too closely together for this to be possible. Notified in Wales, Suetonius raced to London, only to learn that he could get no help from the II Augusta Legion at Gloucester and that the civil administrators in London, including Catus Decianus had fled to Gaul. With no options, he returned to meet his infantry marching from Wales, abandoning London to Boudicca’s swelling army, which attacked and burned it to the ground, looting and displaying the severed heads of the Roman inhabitants.

Despite overwhelming success, Boudicca’s army was racing the clock. Leadership of this large tribal force was fragmented; supplies were dwindling; and the tribes had fought all summer rather than sow their crops. Although she still had superior numbers, Boudicca sought a decisive battle, maneuvering to meet Suetonius somewhere between the towns of Wall and Trenchester. Although the Celts may have outnumbered them handily, Roman discipline and use of the

BOUDICCA, QUEEN OF THE ICENI



*Celtic Queen Boudicca, who led Britons in rebellion against the Romans during the first century A.D.
(Library of Congress)*

terrain allowed Suetonius to hold off the Celts and, even though the numbers are probably exaggerated, may have killed 80,000 while losing only 400 Roman legionaries. Boudicca could expect no clemency from Rome after the atrocities committed at London and left the battlefield for Iceni lands, where she died shortly after the battle, although from wounds or self-administered poison is not known. She was buried secretly, probably with a royal horde of gold.

In the aggressive Romanization of the tribes that followed, Boudicca faded from importance, surfacing again in British history when Elizabethan scholars rediscovered Tacitus and Suetonius, and she quickly became a favorite martial and nationalistic model for Elizabeth I of England and a subject for John Fletcher's drama and for John Milton. Victorian fascination for

Boudicca centered on her maternal role, emphasized by Tennyson's "Boudicca," which inspired Prince Albert to push for a statue of Boudicca and her daughters, finally erected on the Thames embankment in 1902. Most recently, Margaret Thatcher was frequently caricatured as Boudicca during the Falkland War.

—Margaret Sankey

See also Artemisia of Caria; Zenobia, Queen of Palmyra

References and Further Reading

- Cotterell, Leonard. 1958. *The Great Invasion*. New York: Coward-McCann.
- Dudley, Donald, and Graham Wilster. 1962. *The Rebellion of Boudicca*. New York: Barnes and Noble.

BOURKE-WHITE, MARGARET
(1904-1971)

The first accredited American woman war correspondent and the first woman correspondent to accompany an aerial bombing mission. Born June 14, 1904, in New York, Margaret Bourke-White gained her photography skills from her father and funded her college tuition by taking photographs, eventually casting aside her plans of becoming a biologist. A pioneer in the new field of photojournalism and an original staff photographer for *LIFE* magazine, Margaret Bourke-White captured the likenesses of the leading political figures of her time. She and her second husband, Erskine Caldwell, a southern novelist, were the only foreign journalists in the Soviet Union when the Germans invaded that summer. A decade earlier, she had made a trip to Russia and collected her photographs and reminiscences in *Eyes on Russia* (1931). Those contacts and her reputation garnered her special privileges during the early days of the war. She evaded the military ban on civilian cameras and was eventually the only foreigner with photographic privileges, although the censorship she endured made her work impossible. She scooped other journalists during the summer and fall of 1941, and her articles received prominent treatment in *LIFE*.

After the attack on Pearl Harbor on December 7, 1941, Bourke-White felt it was her patriotic duty to lend her skills to the fight. She was accredited to the U.S. Air Force as a correspondent in 1942. She survived a torpedo attack on her way to Algiers to cover the fighting in North Africa. On January 22, 1943, she became the first woman correspondent to accompany a bombing mission. Flying in the 97th Bomb Group's *Little Bill*, a B-17, on its way to destroy an airfield at El Aouina near Tunis, Bourke-White shot photographs of the crewmen at their posts and the *Peggy Dee*, another B-17, beside them. She claimed that she was too busy shooting photographs to be frightened. She accompanied the U.S. 5th Army in Italy. In 1945,

Bourke-White accompanied General George Patton when he liberated Buchenwald.

Bourke-White published three books recounting her experiences on the various European fronts during World War II: *Shooting the Russian War* (1942), *"Purple Heart Valley," A Combat Chronicle of the War in Italy* (1944), and *"Dear Fatherland, Rest Quietly," A Report on the Collapse of Hitler's "Thousand Years"* (1946).

In the spring of 1952, Bourke-White went to Korea as a correspondent accredited to the United Nations. She felt that journalists had neglected an essential topic: the Korean people. Roaming through central Korea, she documented the activities of Communist guerrillas, and before she had finished, there was a price on her head. In 1958, she was diagnosed with Parkinson's disease. She died in Darien, Connecticut, on August 27, 1971.

—Rebecca Tolley-Stokes

See also Chapelle, Dickey; Emerson, Gloria; Gellhorn, Martha; Higgins, Marguerite; Lederer, Edie; Luce, Claire Boothe

References and Further Reading

Bourke-White, Margaret. 1963. *Portrait of Myself*. New York: Simon and Schuster.

BOWER, URSULA GRAHAM
(1914-1988)

World War II jungle fighter. Ursula Violet Graham Bower was born in 1914 in England. She attended school at Roedean, but the Depression kept her from attending Oxford. In 1937, she went to Manipur in the extreme northeastern corner of India along the border with Burma (now Arundachal Pradesh on the border with Myanmar) where she took photographs of the Zemi Naga people. They had only recently given

up headhunting. One group of Nagas decided she was the reincarnation of the prophetess Gaidiliu and worshipped her as a goddess.

After the start of World War II, Ursula joined the Women's Auxiliary Corps (India)—WAC(I). In March 1942, she recruited a team of Naga volunteers to be jungle scouts. In August 1942, Colonel Rawdon Wright, who had retired from the Assam Rifles years before, gave Bower valuable military assistance. Unfortunately Wright died from an injury and the strain of age after three weeks. Bower was able to gain weapons and supplies. She then set the Naga to work gathering intelligence on the Japanese. She was aided by a Naga named Namkia who served as her assistant and bodyguard.

"Bower's Force," as it was known, of Nagas was one of the V forces that were part of the 14th British Army fighting in the Forgotten War. In May 1944, the Japanese offensive advanced to the center of Nagaland but was stopped at the Battles of Kohima and Imphal. Ursula found herself in the frontline between two armies. Her V Force fought so effectively that the Japanese put a price on her head.

Bower engaged in patrolling and treating the wounded before sending them to the rear. Rescued British pilots called her the Naga Queen. Americans called her the Jungle Queen, which was the name used in a U.S. comic strip about her (*True Comics*, winter 1945). Her favorite weapon was a Sten gun.

Bower's Naga Watch and Ward mission ended in November of 1944 because the Japanese threat had retreated. She was then assigned to training troops in jungle survival and warfare. In May 1945, Ursula married Lieutenant Colonel F. N. Betts, with whom she would later have two daughters, Trina and Alison. That same year, she was awarded the Lawrence of Arabia Memorial Medal by the Royal Society for Asian Affairs (formerly the Royal Central Asian Society). She was made a Member of the Order of the British Empire (MBE) for her wartime work.

In 1950, Ursula received a doctorate in anthropology from the University of London. In

1960, she began aiding the Nagas who were being suppressed by the Indian government. Ursula's husband died in 1973, and she died on November 12, 1988.

—Andrew Jackson Waskey

See also Lakshmi Bai

References and Further Reading

Bower, Ursula Graham. 1950. *Naga Path*. London: John Murray, 1950.

———. 1950. *Drums behind the Hill*. New York: William Morrow.

———. 1953. *The Hidden Land*. London: John Murray.

Thompson, Julian. 1998. *The Imperial War Museum Book of War behind Enemy Lines*. London: Sidgwick and Jackson.

BOYD, ISABELLE (BELLE) (1843–1900)

Confederate spy during the American Civil War. Born to Mary Rebecca Glenn and Reed Boyd on May 9, 1843, in Martinsburg, Virginia (now West Virginia), Belle Boyd became one of the Confederacy's most active and well-known female spies. Boyd's success as a Civil War spy resulted in part from her ability to use her femininity to escape detection and punishment. Belle Boyd's early support of the Confederacy came in the form of traditional female roles. She served as a nurse and raised money for the Confederacy, and she organized groups of women to visit Southern troops. Approximately a week after shooting and possibly killing a Northern soldier who broke into her house, Boyd began her career as a Confederate spy. As a spy, Boyd played on her femininity to gather information. After gleaning details from federal soldiers through flirtatious conversations, she passed information on Union troop movements and plans to Confederate officials.

MARRIAGE OF A CONFEDERATE HEROINE

“On the 25th [August, 1864], a most interesting ceremony of marriage took place at the church of St. James, Piccadilly, London. The bridegroom, Lt. Samuel Wilde Hardinge, who is about 30 years of age, was an officer in the United States navy, holding the rank of Lt. on board the American war steamer *Connactacu*. The lady, who is about the same age as the gallant bridegroom, was the daughter of Gen. Boyde, of the army of the Southern States, who lately expired in prison, having been made a prisoner by the Federals. The lady’s career is full of the most eventful, heroic, and romantic features. Her father, who possessed vast estates in Virginia [and] early embraced the cause of Southern independence ... was soon entrusted with command, obtaining the rank of general. His daughter, the bride, enthusiastically embraced the cause, followed her father to the field and accompanied him throughout his campaign with the celebrated ‘Stonewall’ Jackson, and on two occasions, heroically, as a modern Joan of Arc led on the troops to battle. She was, however in a skirmish captured, and made prisoner, and conveyed to Washington where she was imprisoned. Here she remained 13 months, when she was exchanged for Gen. Cochrane, who had been made prisoner by the Confederates. On her return to the South, she went on board the *Greyhound* Confederate steamer which was captured by the Federal steamer *Connactacu* while running the blockade. Lt. Hardinge was sent on board the *Greyhound* as a prizemaster, with his young heroine as a prisoner. The result was that they mutually became enamoured and escaped together from the ship, and found their way to this country, the bride having succeeded in withdrawing her lover from his allegiance to the United States flag, and enlisted his sympathies and support for the South. It is the intention of Lt. Hardinge with his bride to leave this country at the latter end of Sept. to run the blockade and enter the service of the Southern States. The marriage cortege was comparatively private, being confined to the bridesmaid and two or three lady friends, the bridegroom being attended by a number of American gentlemen connected with the South. After the conclusion of the ceremony the parties repaired to the Brunswick Hotel Jermyn street, where the bridegroom has resided since his sojourn in this country, and partook of an elegant dejeuner.”

—*Bellville Countryman* (Texas), November 1, 1864, p. 1.

“Women Soldiers, Spies, and Vivandieres,”

http://www.ultyl.edu/vbetts/women_soldiers.htm (accessed March 4, 2006).

Boyd most often shared information with two prominent Confederate generals, P. G. T. Beauregard and Thomas Stonewall Jackson. These two commanders used Boyd as a courier, and she repeatedly carried information, supplies, and weapons successfully across enemy lines. In the spring of 1862, after delivering information to Jackson as he launched an offensive in the Shenandoah Valley, Boyd’s part in this successful campaign was discovered. Consequently, Union forces arrested her on July 29, 1862, and held her in Washington’s Old Capitol prison for the next month. In June 1863, she was again arrested for her role as a spy and imprisoned in Washington’s Carroll Prison. After

contracting typhoid, Boyd was released in December 1863 and banished to the South. Union officials hoped this was the end of her espionage career.

The arrests did not deter Boyd. In May 1864, she boarded a blockade-runner headed toward England to deliver Confederate dispatches. Before the mission could be carried out, Union forces captured Boyd’s ship and placed her under arrest. In Boston, Boyd escaped from federal custody. She fled first to Canada and then England. Union officials held Ensign Samuel Wylde Hardinge, Jr., the officer in command of the captured ship, responsible for Boyd’s escape. Hardinge followed Boyd to



Belle Boyd, Confederate spy during the American Civil War. (National Archives)

England where they married in August and later had a daughter. He died soon after that. From England, Boyd published her memoirs, *Belle Boyd in Camp and Prison* (1865) in her continuing effort to recruit support for the Confederacy.

After the Civil War, Boyd pursued a stage career, with most of her performances centered on her activities as a Confederate spy. In the 1880s, Boyd lectured throughout the United States about her wartime activities, stressing the importance of national unity and reunion. Her speeches became especially popular among Union veterans. Belle Boyd died of a heart attack on June 11, 1900.

—Lisa Tendrich Frank

See also Civil War, American, and Women; Civil War, American, Women Combatants during the

References and Further Reading

- Boyd, Belle. [1865] 1968. *Belle Boyd in Camp and Prison, Written by Herself*. Edited by Curtis Carroll Davis. Reprint, New York: Thomas Yoseloff.
- Leonard, Elizabeth D. 1999. *All the Daring of the Soldier: Women of the Civil War Armies*. New York: W. W. Norton.

BRANT, MARY (MOLLY) (CA. 1735–1796)

Native American Loyalist during the American Revolution. Mary or Koñwatsi-tsiáiéñni was the oldest surviving child of Margaret, a Mohawk from Canajoharie Castle, New York (along the Mohawk River). Mary, sometimes called Molly, was baptized as an infant by an Anglican missionary at Fort Hunter in 1735. Margaret's last marriage to Brant Canagaraduncka (also called Niklaus Brant) in 1753 provided the surname by which all of her children, including Mary, became known. Mary received a mission school education and could read and write in English. She came of age during the French and Indian War. In 1754, Mary was part of a delegation of Mohawk who traveled to Philadelphia to discuss issues related to land fraud.

Mary's father hosted Sir William Johnson, a very wealthy trader who often served as a British Indian agent. In 1759, Molly Brant bore Sir William Johnson a child. Johnson's sexual relationships with influential Mohawk women had been a key to his trading success. He also had had a long-standing relationship with his housekeeper, Catherine Weissenberg, whom he married shortly before her death in 1759.

Over the next fifteen years, Mary and Johnson had eight children, and she served as hostess and housekeeper for his large and complex household. When Johnson died in 1754, his will provided for her and her children. A powerful clan matron in her own

right, Mary retired to Canajoharie and opened a trading business.

Mary Brant risked all with her strong support of the British during the American Revolution. She sheltered Loyalists and passed information to the British during the British invasion in 1777. The runner she sent warning the British of an approaching American force allowed the British to surprise and defeat the Americans at Oriskany. After the battle, Mary, her children, her mother, and servants fled to Niagara. The rebels confiscated her property. She moved from Niagara to Montreal in 1779 but spent part of the bitter winter of 1779–1780 at Fort Haldimand on Carlton Island. Throughout these years, she was a major force in keeping most Iroquois loyal to the British, including the several thousand Mohawk refugees who had sought shelter near the British forts. At the end of the war, she settled on lands provided as compensation from the British Loyalist Claims Commission and received a £100 annual pension. She remained devoted to the British, the Mohawk, and the Anglican Church and was buried in the churchyard at Kingston, Ontario, in 1796.

—Joan R. Gundersen

See also American Revolution, Role of Women in the

References and Further Reading

- Gundersen, Joan. 1996. *To Be Useful to the World: Women in Revolutionary America, 1740–1790*. New York: Twayne.
- Kelsay, Isabel Thompson. 1984. *Joseph Brant, 1743–1807: Man of Two Worlds*. Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University.
- McKenna, Katherine M. J. 2000. "Mary Brant: (Konwatsi 'tsiaienni Degonwadonti) 'Miss Molly,' Feminist Role Model or Mohawk Princess?" In *The Human Traditions in the American Revolution*, edited by Nancy L. Rhoden and Ian K. Steele. Wilmington, DE: Scholarly Resources.

BRAUN, EVA (1912–1945)

Hitler's companion with whom he committed suicide shortly after their marriage on April 30, 1945. Eva Braun was born on February 7, 1912, in Munich. Hitler met her in 1929 through his photographer, Heinrich Hoffmann, with whom she worked as an assistant. Hitler was impressed by her attempted suicides in 1932 and 1935, which had the perhaps intended effect of attracting his attention and admiration. His career had been shaken by the suicide of his beloved niece, Gele Rabaul, on September 18, 1931.

Braun, who never joined the Nazi Party, was a shadow figure. In 1935, Braun moved into Hitler's villa at Berchtesgaden. Although Hitler's inner circle knew her, she and her position were unknown to the German public. Hitler believed that his appeal to German women required him to project the image of a powerful and all-consumed bachelor. On April 15, 1945, Braun went to Berlin to be with Hitler. At the end, Hitler gratified Braun's desire that their relationship be legally recognized. In his political testament, Hitler wrote, "I have decided to take as my wife the girl who after long years of faithful friendship entered this city, already almost besieged, of her own free will, in order to share my fate with me" (Fest 1973, 746). They were married in the underground bunker in the chancellery garden as the Russians closed in. After a celebration with cake and champagne the two retired to their private quarters where they committed suicide. Robert Waite asserts that Hitler trusted no one but Eva and asked her to execute the coup de grace with a pistol after he took the cyanide capsule his aides provided (Waite 1977, 508–515). Eva then took poison. As Hitler had ordered, their bodies were taken above ground and set afire with gasoline. Because of the ferocity of the Russian bombardment, the cremation was incomplete, and the Russians found

BRAUNSTEINER, HERMINE



Eva Braun dines with Adolf Hitler. (National Archives)

their charred cadavers when they occupied the chancellery grounds.

—Bernard Cook

See also Petacci, Clara

References and Further Reading

- Fest, Joachim C. 1973. *Hitler*. Translated from the German by Richard and Clara Wilson. New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich.
- Gun, Nerin E. 1968. *Eva Braun: Hitler's Mistress*. New York: Meredith.
- Waite, Robert G. L. 1977. *Adolf Hitler: The Psychopathic God*. New York: New American Library.

BRAUNSTEINER, HERMINE
(1920–1999)

Nazi concentration camp guard and the first person accused of war crimes to be extradited from the United States. From 1941 to 1942, Hermine Braunsteiner was a guard at the Ravensbrück concentration camp for women. In 1943, she was transferred to the Maidanek death camp in Poland. She was convicted by an Austrian court of infanticide and murder in 1949 and sentenced to three years imprisonment. Upon her release, an Austrian court gave her immunity from future prosecution in Austria. She married an American, Russell Ryan, in

1959, and moved to New York City. In 1963, she became a U.S. citizen, but Simon Wiesenthal, director of the Federation of Jewish Victims of the Nazi Regime, accused her of war crimes and pressed the U.S. Immigration and Naturalization Service to deport her. She was accused of brutally kicking prisoners, even kicking them to death, a crime that gained her notoriety as the Mare (Graham, 1981). Survivors stated that she had thrown children by their hair onto trucks bound for the gas chamber and personally supervised the hanging of a young woman who had aggravated her (Maeder 2001). In 1971, Braunsteiner was stripped of her U.S. citizenship because she had not indicated that she had been a concentration camp guard. A German court issued a warrant for her arrest, and Braunsteiner was extradited in 1973. In Germany, she was tried with another woman, Hildegard Lächert, and seven men in the Majdanek Trial, which lasted for five years, the longest of West Germany's war crime trials. Braunsteiner was sentenced to life imprisonment. Lächert, whom witnesses referred to as Bloody Brigitta (Graham 1981), was sentenced to twelve years. Six males received lesser terms, and one was acquitted.

—Bernard Cook

See also Grese, Irma; Koch, Ilse

References and Further Reading

- Graham, Bradley. 1981. "Eight Are Sentenced for Nazi Crimes," *Washington Post*, July 1, 1981, p. A1.
- Maeder, Jay. 2001. "The Nazi Next Door." *Daily News* (New York), September 6, p. 37.

BRAY, LINDA (1960–)

First American woman soldier to command troops in battle. When the U.S. military entered Panama in December 1989 during Operation Just Cause, Captain Linda Bray became the first female to lead U.S. troops in battle. Her leader-

ship became a catalyst for controversy over the role of women in the U.S. armed forces.

Captain Bray commanded the 988th Military Police Company in Fort Benning, Georgia. In charge of three simultaneous missions, 29-year-old Bray commanded more than 100 troops, 2 two-and-a-half ton trucks, and 12 Humvees. Her orders included securing a suspected stronghold of the Panamanian Defense Forces (PDF). Designated as a military dog kennel, intelligence reports estimated that 12 to 30 members of the PDF were inside.

On December 20, 1989, Captain Bray positioned members of the 988th Military Police Company outside the kennel and called for the surrender of PDF forces inside. They refused, and the anticipated routine mission turned into a three-hour, infantry-style firefight. When they crashed through the kennel gate to secure the area, Captain Bray's troops discovered a mini-arsenal, including more than a dozen AK-47s, M-16 assault rifles, cases of fragmentation grenades, and thousands of rounds of ammunition. Forty military cots, a cache of Cuban money, and spare uniforms suggested that the dog kennel served as barracks for Special Operations troops. Three PDF soldiers were killed and one taken prisoner. There were no U.S. casualties. Later, Bray estimated that twelve of the fifteen women under her command had been in combat.

The invasion of Panama was the largest deployment of U.S. troops since Vietnam, and approximately 800, or 4 percent, of the 18,400-member force were women. Those assigned to helicopters and ground troops served under fire, yet in 1989, military exclusion policies prohibited women's assignment to combat positions. The army's Direct Combat Probability Coding (DCPC) system, established in 1983, rated each assignment along a continuum. Jobs with low probability of enemy contact were on one end, and those of high probability were on the other—and closed to women.

By definition, military police units such as Captain Bray's were designated to perform tactical operations at the rear of a battlefield. Even

though they were combat-ready, their mission was classified as noncombatant. The 988th's assault on the dog kennel shifted the boundaries between noncombat and combat missions. News coverage of the action brought these issues of women in combat into the public forum.

Congresswoman Patricia Schroeder (D-Colorado), then a member of the House Armed Services Committee, immediately called for legislation to open up all jobs in the army to women, pointing out that combat-exclusion policies failed to keep women out of combat while restricting women's careers. Controversy about the role of Linda Bray in the battle and the role of women in war flew in the press, Congress, the Department of Defense, and among the public; Captain Bray swirled at the epicenter. She requested and received an official discharge from the army in April 1991. No policy changes concerning women's role in the U.S. Armed Forces occurred as a direct result of Operation Just Cause.

—Lee Ann Ghajar

See also Gulf War, Women and the

References and Further Reading

Franke, Linda Bird. 1997. *Ground Zero: The Gender Wars in the Military*. New York: Simon and Schuster.

BREWER, LUCY
(B. CA. 1793)

By her own account, the first woman U.S. Marine. Born in the late 1700s, on a farm 40 miles outside Boston, Massachusetts, Lucy Brewer supposedly disguised herself as a man and served in the U.S. Marine Corps during the War of 1812, serving on the USS *Constitution*. As a sixteen year old, a trader's son seduced her. Leaving her family, she journeyed to Boston, seeking anonymity and sanctuary for herself and

her unborn child. When she could not secure employment, she found lodging at a brothel. After the death of her newborn daughter, Brewer apparently assumed the life of a prostitute. After three years, according to her accounts, she learned about cross-dressing. In male attire, she experienced complete freedom as George Baker and was able to ignore female gender roles of nineteenth-century U.S. society. That she enlisted in the U.S. Marines during the War of 1812 and served with patriotic distinction during three sea battles aboard the USS *Constitution* is a legend. The U.S. Marines regard Brewer's claim as a colorful story. She recounted her supposed adventure in *The Female Marine; or, Adventures of Miss Lucy Brewer*. She also used the pseudonym Louisa Baker in some of her writings. According to her account, she returned home after her maritime exploits, redeemed and welcomed back into her family. She eventually married, becoming what nineteenth-century respectability dictated for women.

Whether or not Lucy Brewer actually served in the United States Marines, the fact that she was able to experience male freedom and follow her own ambitions is phenomenal. Brewer never displayed remorse for those years of her life when she dressed as a man. She only showed repentance for her life as a prostitute.

—Deanne Nuwer

See also Civil War, American, Women Combatants during the; Great Britain, Women in Service in the Seventeenth, Eighteenth, and Early Nineteenth Centuries; Edmonds, Sarah Emma; Samson, Deborah

References and Further Reading

Cohen, Daniel A., ed. 1997. *The Female Marine and Related Works: Narratives of Cross-Dressing and Urban Vice in America's Early Republic*. Amherst: University of Massachusetts Press.

West, Lucy Brewer. 1966. *The Female Marine; or, Adventures of Miss Lucy Brewer who served three years on board the U.S. frigate Constitution during the late war with Great Britain*. 4th ed. Cambridge, MA: Da Capo Press.

BRION, HÉLÈNE
(1882–1962)

French pacifist, tried for her active opposition to World War I. On November 18, 1917, over three years after the beginning of World War I, the front page of the newspaper *Le Matin* announced to the French people that a traitor had been lurking in their midst. The accused was Hélène Brion, a nursery schoolteacher from the Parisian suburbs. The author of the article claimed Brion to be well known for “the violence of her anti-patriotic feelings.” The paper accused her of being an advocate of birth control, a defeatist, an anarchist, and a spy. Other papers also took an avid interest in this unusual woman, following the story from her arrest to her trial four months later, as Hélène Brion became the first French woman tried by a military tribunal in France (*Le Matin*, November 18, 1917).

Pacifism was the cause for which Brion was arrested, but it was neither her first nor her only passion. Prior to 1914, Brion dedicated much of her free time to working-class and feminist causes. She helped run an orphanage for poor children, and she was an active member of the socialist party and of the National Federation of Teachers’ Unions. As devoted as she was to working-class politics, Brion also maintained that full equality between the sexes was an absolute prerequisite to a just society. Her beliefs led her to join a number of feminist organizations and, in 1916, to publish a brief treatise titled *La Voie féministe* (The Feminist Path).

When war erupted in 1914, Brion initially responded by helping to start a soup kitchen in her community. She also agreed to head the national teachers’ union as the male leadership was called up for duty. At this early date and with German troops entrenched on French soil, Brion saw the war as a necessary act of self-defense. A year later, however, the justice of the war appeared less clear, and Brion became an outspoken advocate of an immediate, negotiated peace. Brion began sending pacifist propaganda to fellow teachers and to soldiers at the

frontlines, activities that eventually led to her arrest.

Although she was to stand trial for pacifism, Brion’s sex and her feminist commitment never ceased to be an issue in the case. *Le Matin* printed a picture of the accused with the caption, “Hélène Brion in Masculine Clothing.” Another paper described Brion as she appeared at her trial: “A small man’s hat placed devilishly on her blond hair, tied in back without any attempt to please, a loose lavalier, a jacket which strangely resembles a man’s coat, definitely a somewhat masculine and neglected ensemble” (*La Voix nationale*, March, 25, 1918). Clearly, it was not Brion’s pacifism alone that raised questions about her loyalty to the nation. Journalists cast her as a dangerous “New Woman,” whose unconventionality was as dangerous to the nation as her ideas.

The press was not alone, however, in making gender an important issue. Brion saw to it that her trial, which opened on March 25, 1918, would serve as a soapbox not only for the pacifism for which she was arrested but also for the feminism that defined all of her political and social engagement. “I am an enemy of war because I am a feminist,” Brion explained. “War is the triumph of brutal force; feminism can only triumph by moral force and intellectual worth” (*La Revue des causes célèbres, politiques et criminelles*, May 2, 1918, 153). Prominent feminists and socialists also spoke in her defense, and the trial garnered Brion widespread sympathy among war-weary compatriots. Ultimately, the judges returned a mixed verdict. Brion was found guilty, but the court suspended her sentence, effectively setting her free.

The end of the trial marked the end of Hélène Brion’s active public life. From the 1920s to the end of her life in 1962, Brion turned her intellectual and rhetorical talent to another purpose: the research and writing of a massive feminist encyclopedia. To the end of her days, Brion remained devoted to the feminist principles and cause that had animated the turbulent actions of her younger years.

—Mona L. Siegel

See also Addams, Jane; Balch, Emily Green; Catt, Carrie Chapman; Curtis, Cathrine; Dilling, Elizabeth; Fonda, Jane; Goldstein, Vida

References and Further Reading

- “La Propagande défaitiste. Une Institutrice arrêtée.” 1917. *Le Matin*, November 18.
- “Les Procès de trahison. Le Procès Hélène Brion et Mouflard devant le Premier Conseil de Guerre.” 1918. *La Revue des causes célèbres, politiques et criminelles*, 5 (May 2): 152–154.
- Sant’Andrea, N. 1918. “Le Procès d’Hélène Brion devant le 3e Conseil de guerre.” *La Voix nationale*, March 25.

BRITTAIN, VERA MARY (1893–1970)

British survivor and author. Vera Brittain is best known for her “generational” autobiography of World War I: *Testament of Youth* (1933). Dedicated to the memory of her fiancé, Roland Leighton and her brother Edward Brittain, the autobiography traces her journey from what she called her “provincial young ladyhood”; to World War I when she nursed in England, Malta, and France and watched as, one by one, her closest male companions were killed; through to a post-war commitment to the politics of pacifism. *Testament of Youth* is unusual in its integration of the generational experience with the woman’s voice. Drawing on her own wartime diaries and letters exchanged between her and her male counterparts, Brittain successfully created a work that was an elegy to those who had died in the war and at the same time legitimized the woman’s war experience both as the waiting and grieving woman and as the war worker.

Vera Mary Brittain was born in Newcastle-under-Lyme, Staffordshire, England, on December 29, 1893. At school she encountered the suffrage movement and was especially influenced by Olive Schreiner’s *Women and Labour*. Unwilling to accept the dull routine laid out for

the provincial upper-middle-class woman, she worked for and won an exhibition to Somerville College at Oxford. She fully expected to go to Oxford in the autumn of 1914 with her brother Edward and his friend Roland Leighton, but the war intervened, with both Edward and Roland joining up. Although Brittain found undergraduate life at Somerville stimulating, the presence of the war increasingly intruded, particularly after Leighton, with whom she had fallen in love, went to the front in April 1915.

At the end of her first year, determined to come as close as possible to the war experience of her male counterparts, Brittain began training as a VAD (Voluntary Aid Detachment) nurse, first in Buxton and then at the First London General, where she started to realize the horror of war through the wounds of the men she nursed. During Roland Leighton’s leave in August 1915, the two became engaged, but Leighton was killed on the western front on December 23, 1915, the day before he was due home on leave. His death left Brittain desolate, and she only gradually recovered some of her former energy and interest in life after she was sent to Malta to nurse in September 1916. In the spring of 1917, however, two more close male friends were killed. Brittain returned home but requested to be sent to France when Edward, who had been wounded in 1916, went back to the front later in the year. In France, she nursed through the German push in the spring of 1918. She would later date her commitment to pacifism to this period when, nursing German prisoners, she recognized the absurdity of her nursing them when only days before her brother had been trying to kill them. In July 1918, her brother was killed in Italy, a final blow after the physical and emotional misery of the war and one from which she would never recover.

After the war, she returned to Oxford, burdened by a legacy of grief and emotional exhaustion from the war. Friendship with the writer Winifred Holtby aided in restoring her equilibrium, and after graduating, the two shared a flat in London where Brittain committed herself to international relations and pacifism through the

League of Nations and Canon “Dick” Shepard’s Peace Pledge Union. With the publication of *Testament of Youth* in 1933, she became much sought after as a lecturer and journalist, and she continued to work on fiction. Her novel *Honourable Estate*, which deals extensively with World War I and its aftermath, was published in 1936. Holtby’s death in 1935 was necessarily a severe blow to Brittain, who had only just begun to let go of the ghosts from her wartime past.

Throughout World War II, Brittain maintained her pacifism in the face of much criticism and even ostracism. She published the ongoing *Letters to Peace Lovers* throughout the war, during which she lived mostly in London, and she was outspoken in her revulsion at Britain’s blanket bombing of German cities. She continued to lecture and write and to work for international peace almost until her death on March 29, 1970.

Renewed interest in Brittain’s life and work was stimulated by a television series based on *Testament of Youth*, broadcast in 1979, closely followed by Alan Bishop’s edition of Brittain’s World War I diaries (*Chronicle of Youth*, 1981). Further editions of Brittain’s diaries (*Chronicle of Friendship*, 1986; *Wartime Chronicles*, 1986) reveal an interesting commentary on Europe and Britain in the 1930s, including a visit to Hitler’s Germany and a day-by-day account of life in London during the blitz and throughout the war years.

—Carol Acton

See also Great Britain, Women, Social Impact of World War I on

References and Further Reading

- Berry, Paul, and Mark Bostridge. 1995. *Vera Brittain: A Life*. London: Chatto and Windus.
- Bishop, Alan, and Mark Bostridge, eds. 1998. *Letters from a Lost Generation: First World War Letters of Vera Brittain and Four Friends*. London: Little, Brown.
- Brittain, Vera. [1933] 1978. *Testament of Youth*. Reprint, London: Virago.
- . [1936] 2000. *Honourable Estate*. Reprint, London: Virago.

- . 1981. *Chronicle of Youth*. Edited by Alan Bishop. London: Victor Gollancz.
- . 1986. *Chronicle of Friendship: Vera Brittain’s Diaries of the Thirties*. Edited by Alan Bishop. London: Victor Gollancz.
- . 1986. *Wartime Chronicle: Vera Brittain’s Diary 1939–1945*. Edited by Alan Bishop. London: Victor Gollancz.
- Gorham, Deborah, 1996. *Vera Brittain: A Feminist Life*. Oxford, England: Blackwell.

BROWN, MARY-AGNES (1902–1998)

Officer in the U.S. Women’s Army Corps. Mary-Agnes Brown served as executive officer (1943–1944) to Colonel Oveta Culp Hobby, director of the Women’s Army Corps (WAC), and as WAC staff director in the Southwest Pacific Area (1944–1945). She was awarded the Legion of Merit. A lawyer for the Veterans Administration, she joined the Women’s Army Auxiliary Corps in 1942 and advanced to top leadership positions. She was among the first women officers promoted to the ranks of major and lieutenant colonel in the WAC during World War II. Once the war ended, Lieutenant Colonel Brown served as advisor to Veterans Administration head General Omar N. Bradley on matters pertaining to women veterans.

Born on February 13, 1902, in Washington, D.C., Mary-Agnes Brown was a graduate of George Washington University, where she also earned two law degrees. In 1919, she began a longtime career in veterans-related issues when she worked as a clerk for a predecessor agency of the Veterans Administration. She served as executive secretary to the medical director of the Veterans Bureau (1921–1931) and as an attorney for the Veterans Administration (1931–1941). Brown coedited *Federal Laws Relating to Veterans of Wars of the United States (Annotated) August 1, 1932 and Supplement 1: July 21, 1932*

to January 1, 1937 (U.S. Government Printing Office 1932, 1937).

In September 1942, she graduated from Officer Candidate School at the WAAC Training Center at Fort Des Moines, Iowa. Brown served as public relations officer for the Third Service Command and as Women's Auxiliary Army Corps staff director for the Eighth Service Command (1942–1943) before she assumed her position as executive officer to Director Hobby in Washington, D.C. Colonel Hobby appointed Lieutenant Colonel Brown as WAC staff director in the Southwest Pacific Area, and in mid-March 1944, she arrived in Australia to prepare for the arrival of the first contingent of members of the WAC in May. There she confronted a lack of adequate clothing and supplies, as well as resistance from male officers to recognizing WAC officers' authority over enlisted women. Several years later, Brown wrote, "In my opinion the service of WAC members was essential to the success of Army operations in New Guinea and the Philippines. I deplore the failure of those immediately over the Staff Director . . . to accept my recommendations on procedures to assure the well-being of WAC personnel, but the WAC mission was accomplished in spite of these and other obstacles and at not too great a sacrifice" (Treadwell 1954, 461).

After the war, she returned to work at the Veterans Administration as head of the women's division (1945–1946), as chief of the legislative projects division (1946–1948), and as a member of the Board of Veterans Appeals (1949–1959).

On May 28, 1952, she married Dr. Gordon Lewis Groover, who had practiced medicine in Savannah, Georgia, before working at the Veterans Administration in Washington, D.C. Mary-Agnes Brown Groover died on July 22, 1998, in Washington, D.C., and is buried at Arlington National Cemetery.

—Sharon Ritenour Stevens

See also Hobby, Oveta Culp

References and Further Reading:

- Morden, Bettie J. 1990. *The Women's Army Corps, 1945–1978*. Washington: U.S. Government Printing Office.
- Treadwell, Mattie E. 1954. *The Women's Army Corps*, a volume in the *United States Army in World War II*. Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office.

BROWN, RUTH HUMPHRIES
(1920–)

Women's Air Force Service (WASP) pilot. Born November 11, 1920, the daughter of pilot Albert Humphries, Brown flew across the nation on her father's small yet plush passenger plane. Her only recollections of this childhood experience are of the nausea she suffered during every flight. Brown's dreams while a student at Farmington Preparatory School in Connecticut were not of becoming a pilot but of performing in the theatre. World War II created the need for female pilots, however, and Brown, always adventurous, viewed participation in the WASP as an exciting option. In 1943, she began flight training in Denver, Colorado, logging thirty-five hours of flight time and receiving her private pilot's license before applying for admission to the WASP. After passing flight tests and a thorough physical, Brown reported for WASP training on July 5, 1943, in Sweetwater, Texas. After obtaining flight experience in the PT-19, BT-13, and the AT-6, Brown graduated with forty-eight other women on December 17, 1943. She then received additional training at instrument school in Orlando, Florida, from January to May 1944. Brown was sent to Childress Air Force Base (Texas) for two months, where she flew bombardier missions at low altitudes to test the accuracy of the AT-11. Brown and other members of the WASP astonished their male counterparts with their skill at hitting ground targets, often with more success than the male pilots. As

the summer of 1944 came to an end, Brown was transferred to a gunnery school in Harlingen, Texas, where she flew targets from her B-26 for shooting practice. Such a perilous assignment would frighten most pilots, but Brown's bold nature made her the perfect candidate for the job. By October 1944, Brown grew tired of small towns in Texas and obtained a transfer to March Air Force Base in California, where she served as squadron leader until December when the WASP was deactivated. Brown would only fly once more after leaving the WASP.

Two weeks later, Brown returned to Denver where she opened *The Smuggler*, a small but successful gift shop. On September 13, 1947, she married former PT boat Captain David R. C. Brown.

—*Amanda Gibbens*

See also United States, Women's Airforce Service Pilots

References and Further Reading

Brown, Ruth Humphries. Interview. September 12, 2000 with Deanie Parrish. Aspen, Colorado. Wings across America Project and the WASP WWII Museum, Sweetwater, Texas, <http://www.wasp-wwii.org/wings/information.htm> (accessed November 18, 2004).

BRUSKINA, MASHA (1924–1941)

Jewish nurse from Minsk executed by the Nazis during World War II for assisting Soviet soldiers to escape from Nazi-occupied territories. Masha Bruskina was hung along with two male comrades in the first and best photographically documented public execution of partisans in the occupied Soviet Union. Born into a Jewish family in Minsk, Masha was incarcerated in the Minsk ghetto shortly after the German occupation of Belorussia. She escaped by adopting her

mother's last name, which was not distinctively Jewish, and by bleaching her hair. She volunteered as a nurse in a local hospital for Soviet prisoners of war (POWs) where she joined one of the first partisan cells formed in Nazi-occupied Soviet territories. Her role as a partisan was to smuggle medicines, civilian clothing, and false documents to captured Soviet soldiers to facilitate their escape. She occasionally supplemented these supplies with leaflets describing the situation at the front. The actual process of escape was then arranged by male members of the partisan cell. During World War II, the proportion of women in Soviet partisan cells averaged no more than 2 to 5 percent, and women who participated in the partisan movement generally functioned like Bruskina as messengers and distributors of information and supplies. Hence, Bruskina was a typical representative of women's participation in the Soviet underground World War II resistance, although the majority of partisan women did not become involved until 1943 and 1944.

On October 14, 1941, a POW informed on Bruskina and other members of the cell. This led to her prompt arrest and execution on October 26. At the time of her hanging, a Lithuanian photographer, who collaborated with the Germans, documented every step of the execution, taking seven pictures. These photographs were made public at the war's end and were displayed in museums around the world. Two out of the three people in the photographs were immediately identified as Volodia Shcherbachevich and Kirill Trus, both members of the early partisan movement in Minsk. The young woman in the photographs, however, remained unidentified until the investigation in 1968 discovered that "the unknown girl" was Masha Bruskina. Soviet authorities, however, refused to recognize the identity of this woman or to award her a medal for heroism posthumously.

Many believed that the refusal of the Soviet authorities to honor or recognize Bruskina's heroism was prompted by her Jewishness, and her image was subsequently appropriated as a symbol of the anti-Jewish policies of the Soviet

regime. In the 1990s, several historians argued that Bruskina's early date of execution was likely the reason she was denied recognition. Her heroic deed could not be allowed to overshadow or precede that of the renowned Soviet, and Russian, partisan girl, Zoya Kosmodemianskaia, who was executed two months after Bruskina and immediately became a symbol of Russian women's resistance to the Nazi occupation. The heroism of Masha Bruskina remains widely unrecognized.

—*Irina Mukhina*

See also Soviet Union, Women in the Armed Forces (1917–1991)

References and Further Reading

- Arkadiev, Lev, and Ada Dikhtiar. 1987. "The Unknown Girl: A Documentary Story." *Yiddish Writers' Almanac*. 1: 161–204.
- Tec, Nechama, and Daniel Weiss. 1997. "A Historical Injustice: The Case of Masha Bruskina." *Holocaust and Genocide Studies* 11, no. 3: 366–377.

BUBLEY, ESTHER (1921–1998)

Photographer who gained fame during World War II for her pictures depicting the lives of U.S. civilians during wartime. The interest of Esther Bublely was the home front aspects of war. She is probably best remembered for the photographs she took on a bus trip across country showing civilian life during this period.

Bublely was born in Wisconsin to Russian Jewish immigrants and developed an early love of photography. She graduated from art school in Minnesota and in the early 1940s found her way to New York City, working for a short time with the popular magazine *Vogue*. She later moved to Washington, D.C., with the hope of working with Roy Stryker, the head of the Office of War Information (OWI). Stryker was well

known as an artist and mentor of many young photographers, and Bublely wanted to learn the trade from this greatly admired figure. Stryker hired Bublely as a lab technician in his office. During her free hours, she began taking pictures of people around the capital. These photographs impressed Stryker, and he decided to give her some assignments because of her potential as a photojournalist.

Bublely did not possess a driver's license, so her ability to travel was limited, and she was passed over for some assignments. When an assignment to photograph people for a story on wartime transportation materialized, she was selected for the task. Bublely toured the United States on crowded Greyhound buses, taking pictures of the riders, the drivers, and sites in the cities, towns, and rural areas she visited. Her subjects included passengers who were tourists, salespersons, youngsters, family members of soldiers, and the servicemen themselves. The bus drivers were interesting subjects also and were depicted as promiscuous but always concerned about the safety of the passengers. Her pictures were effective in providing a feeling of what life was like for civilians during the war. Viewers of these photographs can sense feelings of displacement, fatigue, and concern, as well as a perception of isolation because the roads were empty due to wartime gas and tire rations.

In 1943, Stryker resigned from the Office of War Information and asked his prize student to join him at his new job at Standard Oil. In 1947, she photographed another cross-country bus tour under the guidance of her mentor. Bublely's fame grew as she continued to produce photo essays for popular magazines. She is best remembered, however, for the bus stories and her portrayal of the life of Texas oil workers. The demand for photojournalists waned in the 1960s, and Bublely married and settled down in New York City. She became an avid gardener and began publishing books on plants and animals in the 1960s and 1970s. Esther Bublely died in 1998.

—*Leonard A. Steverson*

See also Bonney, Therese; Chapelle, Dickey; Lange, Dorothea; Meiselas, Susan

References and Further Reading

- Fleischhauer, Carl, and Brannan, Beverly W. 1988. *Documenting America, 1935–1943*. Berkeley: University of California.
- Library of Congress. 1995. *Women Come to the Home Front: Journalists, Photographers, and Broadcasters during World War II*. Washington, DC: Library of Congress.
- Yochelson, Bonnie. "Esther Bublely, Photojournalist: Biographical Sketch," http://estherbublely.com/bio_main.htm (accessed October 25, 2004).

BUCH, EVA MARIA
(1921–1943)

German opponent of the Nazis. Eva-Maria Buch, who was born in Berlin on January 31, 1921, received a Catholic education from the Ursuline nuns and studied linguistics at Humboldt University. She worked as an assistant at the university and at a secondhand bookstore. At the bookstore, she met William Guddorf, who introduced her to the Red Orchestra (Rote Kapelle) Communist-oriented resistance group led by Harro Schulze-Boysen and Arvid and Mildred Harnack. After her arrest on October 10, 1942, Buch courageously insisted that she had written an appeal in French to forced laborers, calling on them to sabotage the weapons on which they were working. She was sentenced to death by a Nazi court, which asserted that she combined the deviousness of a Catholic with the hostility of a Communist. Hitler personally rejected the appeal of her parents for clemency. She was executed at the Plötzensee prison on August 5, 1943.

—Bernard Cook

See also Harnack-Fish, Mildred; Schulze-Boysen, Libertas

References and Further Reading

- Bryson, Shareen Blair. 2000. *Resisting Hitler: Mildred Harnack and the Red Orchestra: The Life and Death of an American Woman in Nazi Germany*. New York: Oxford University Press.

BULGARIA, WOMEN AND
WORLD WAR II

Service of Bulgarian women during the World War II. Bulgaria joined the Anti-Comintern League but did not declare war against the Soviet Union. As Soviet forces approached Bulgaria in 1944, conservative elements in the country attempted to withdraw from the war. The Soviet Union declared war on Bulgaria, however, and demanded that the country surrender. Bulgaria's exit from the war was followed by attacks from the German army on Bulgarian territory and troops. The Bulgaria declaration of war on Germany was popular among the Bulgarian people. A great number of volunteers formed the National Guard, a company of which was attached to every regiment of the army. Former partisans, concentration camp inmates, and men and women aged eighteen to forty-five volunteered. Traditionally, according to Bulgarian law, women were not supposed to enter the military. Nevertheless, a great number of mainly young women applied. Most were supposed to go to medical and communication units. Among the women who volunteered was Nedialka Kocheva. She was given the task of recruiting volunteers in her village. At first she had no success. Then she wrote her name at the top of the list, and this inspired many of her fellow villagers to volunteer.

The new pro-Allied government proclaimed the slogan: "Everything for the Front, Everything for the Victory!" The nation was totally mobilized. The Women's Section of the Fatherland Front called on all Bulgarian women to de-

vote their intellectual and physical effort to support Bulgaria's soldiers. Under the leadership of the Bulgarian National Women's Union, which had about 250,000 members, and, after November 1944, the Central Committee of the Assisting Organization, which was also a women's organization, Bulgarian women were mobilized to assist the country's fighters. At factories and in towns and villages, women cared for the people going to war and for their families. Women prepared clothes and food packages for the soldiers. The country was turned into a big working camp, where the women were the main productive force.

The activity of the Bulgarian People's Women's Union on behalf of the army during World War II received recognition at the International Women's Congress, held in Paris on November 26, 1945. The congress was informed that Bulgarian women volunteers, despite harsh economic conditions, devoted an aggregate of 12,076 unpaid working days to projects for soldiers, 900 for wounded and sick soldiers, and 940 for Yugoslav child refugees.

—*Dimitre Minchev*

See also Norway, Resistance Movement during World War II, Women and; Poland, Resistance during World War II, Women and

BULGARIAN HORRORS

Brutal attacks against Bulgarian civilians by Turkish irregulars in 1876. At the end of April 1876, the accumulated mass of exactions, exploitation, and humiliation imposed on the Bulgarian people by the Turks produced a desperate rising. Inspired by an insurrection in Bosnia and hoping for redress rather than independence, a few Bulgarians, educated and inspired by the ideas and movements of the nine-

teenth century, planned a rising. The leaders belatedly realized the futility of their plans. The Bulgarians were without arms and lacked preparation. Although the leaders attempted to abort their plans, word did not reach all of the desperate people whom they had inspired. In the district of Silven, a group of almost sixty men rallied. There was practically no response around Turnovo. There was none in the district of Vratsa, other than a small band of rebels, led by Hristo Botev, who had hijacked an Austrian boat on the Danube. After advancing about 20 kilometers from the river, they were surrounded and slaughtered by Turkish irregulars. Elsewhere the results were worse. Georgi Benkovski and his followers had won over the men in a number of villages around Philippopolis (today Plovdiv). A hundred or so rebels, some with old muskets, but most with clubs, headed for the Balkan Mountains to the northeast of Sofia. The Turkish authorities were alerted and the band of rebels was crushed. Those not killed were imprisoned. At Panagurishta, Benkovski had persuaded a young woman, Raina, a school mistress and the daughter of a priest, to ride a horse in a procession and carry a flag, which she had embroidered with a Bulgarian lion and the words "Freedom or Death." After the Turks had taken the young woman prisoner, they derided her as "The Queen of the Bulgarians."

Aziz Pasha, the governor of Philippopolis realized that the situation was under control. His moderation cost him his job. Irregular companies of Turkish vigilantes, Bashi-Bazouks, were formed, and the new governor, Abdul Hamid Pasha, gave them free rein. They left a trail of blood and horror. Sixty to seventy villages were burned. The current estimates of the number of Bulgarians slaughtered runs from 25,000 to 100,000. Although the exact number of the dead will never be known, atrocities can be specified with precision. In Batak, 200 women and children were burned alive in a school. There Achmed Aga's Bashi-Bazouks slaughtered as many as 5,000

BULGARIAN HORRORS

“Panagurishta (Otluk-kui) was attacked by a force of regular troops, together with Bashi-Bazouks, on the 11th of May. Apparently no message to surrender was sent. After a slight opposition on the part of the insurgents the town was taken. Many of the inhabitants fled, but about 3,000 were massacred, the most of them being women and children. Of these about 400 belonged to the town of Panagurishta, and the others to nine neighbouring villages, the inhabitants of which had taken refuge there. Four hundred buildings, including the bazaar and the largest and best houses, were burned. Both churches were completely destroyed, and almost leveled to the ground. In one an old man was violated on the altar, and afterwards burned alive. Two of the schools were burned, the third—looking like a private house—escaped. From the numerous statements made to me, hardly a woman in the town escaped violation and brutal treatment. The ruffians attacked children of eight and old women of eighty, sparing neither age nor sex. Old men had their eyes torn out and their limbs cut off, and were then left to die, unless some more charitably disposed man gave them the final thrust. Pregnant women were ripped open and the unborn babes carried triumphantly on the points of bayonets and sabers, while little children were made to bear the dripping heads of their comrades. This scene of rapine, lust, and murder was continued for three days, when the survivors were made to bury the bodies of the dead. The perpetrators of these atrocities were chiefly regular troops commanded by Hafiz Pacha. The Turks claim and the villagers admit the death of fourteen Mussulmans, two of whom were women who were killed with arms in their hands during a conflict with a party that refused to surrender to the insurgents.

“While pillage reigned supreme at Koprishitsa, and lust at Panagurishta, at Batak the Turks seems to have no stronger passion than the thirst for blood. This village surrendered without firing a shot, after a promise of safety, to the Bashi-Bazouks, under the command of Ahmed Aga, of Burutina, a chief of the rural police. Despite his promise, the few arms once surrendered, Ahmed Aga ordered the destruction of the village and the indiscriminate slaughter of the inhabitants, about a hundred young

Bulgarians—men, women, and children. From the region of Philippopolis to Sofia, women and children were raped, tortured, and murdered. Bashi-Bazouks bragged about beheading children, whose bodies momentarily flailed about like decapitated chickens.

This orgy of violence, brought to the attention of the West by journalist Januarius MacGahan and diplomat Eugene Schuyler, both American, generated foreign pressure on the Ottoman government to reform. When the reforms proved stillborn, the Russians intervened. The Russian defeat of Turkey in 1877–1878 led to the formation of an independent Bulgaria.

—Bernard Cook

See also Armenian Holocaust; East Timor, Abuse of Women during War; Germany, Armed Forces, World War II Atrocities of; Herero of Namibia, Repression of the; Lidice Massacre; Oradour-sur-Glane Massacre; Rwanda: Women and the Genocide; Smyrna Tragedy, Continuing Ordeal for Women Survivors of the; Sudan, Women and Civil War in

References and Further Reading

Crampton, R. J. 1997. *A Concise History of Bulgaria*. New York: Cambridge University.

girls being reserved to satisfy the lust of the conqueror before they too should be killed. I saw their bones, some with the flesh still clinging to them, in the hollow on the hill side, where the dogs were gnawing them. Not a house is now standing in the midst of this lovely valley. The saw mills—for the town had a large trade in timber and sawn boards—which lined the rapid little river, are all burned, and of the 8,000 inhabitants not 2,000 are known to survive. Fully 5,000 persons, a very large proportion of them women and children, perished here, and their bones whiten the ruins, or their putrid bodies infect the air. The sight of Batak is enough to verify all that has been said about the acts of the Turks in repressing the Bulgarian insurrection. And yet I saw it three months after the massacre. On every side were human bones, skulls, ribs, and even complete skeletons, heads of girls still adorned with braids of long hair, bones of children, skeletons still encased in clothing. Here was a house the floor of which was white with the ashes and charred bones of thirty persons burned alive there. Here was the spot where the village notable Trandafil was spitted on a pike and then roasted, and where he is now buried; there was a foul hole full of decomposing bodies, here a mill dam filled with swollen corpses; here the school house, where 200 women and children who had taken refuge there were burned alive, and here the church and churchyard, where fully a thousand half-decayed forms were still to be seen, filling the enclosure in a heap several feet high, arms, feet, and heads protruding from the stones which had vainly been thrown there to hide them, and poisoning all the air.”

—Eugene Schuyler, “Preliminary Report,”
in *The Turkish Atrocities in Bulgaria: Letters of the Special Commissioner of the “Daily News,”*
J. A. Macgahan, Esq. *With an Introduction and Mr. Schuyler’s Preliminary Report.*

London: Bradbury, Agnew, 1876, Pages 89–94.

Also to be found as an attachment to No. 106, *United States Legation, Constantinople November 21, 1876, Mr. Maynard to the Secretary of State, Subject: The Bulgarian Tragedy Mr. Schuyler’s Report.*
National Archives, Washington, D.C., M46, roll 31.

MacGahan, J. A., and Eugene Schuyler. 1876. *The Turkish Atrocities in Bulgaria: Letters of the Special Commissioner of the Daily News*, J. A. MacGahan, Esq. *with an introduction and Mr. Schuyler’s Special Report.* London: Bradbury, Agnew.

BULLWINKEL, VIVIAN
(1915–2000)

Nurse who enlisted in the Australian Army Nursing Service (AANS) during World War II,

the sole survivor of the Banka Island Massacre, when almost ninety nurses and soldiers were shot and bayoneted by the Imperial Japanese Army following the fall of Singapore in 1942.

Vivian Bullwinkel enlisted with the AANS in 1941 and later that year she embarked for Singapore, eventually being assigned to the 13th Australian General Hospital in Johore Bahru, Malaya. Following the invasion by the Japanese in December 1941, the nurses were among those evacuated to Singapore, but this was to provide only temporary safety in the face of the Japanese Imperial Army’s relentless march south. By the third week of January 1942, alarmed at the progress of the enemy, Colonel

A. Derham repeatedly requested that Major General H. Gordon Bennett evacuate the AANS. His requests were denied. Finally, a matter of days before the Japanese commenced an aerial assault on Singapore, orders were given to evacuate the nurses (Goodman 1988, 151). Bullwinkel and sixty-four of her colleagues boarded the *Vyner Brooke*, which was already seriously overloaded prior to their embarkation. When it left the port of Singapore, more than 300 people were on board, mostly civilian women and children. Two days after sailing, the small ship was spotted by Japanese aircraft, which fired on the vessel, eventually sinking it. The seamen and nurses loaded as many of the civilians as they could into the few seaworthy lifeboats. Those who could not be accommodated left the sinking vessel relying on life jackets, makeshift rafts, and their swimming skills to reach land.

Twelve of the nurses drowned. Thirty-one of the nurses who survived the sinking reached the shore and almost immediately became prisoners of war. Bullwinkel and twenty-one of her colleagues, plus scores of the women and children, found themselves on the shore of Banka Island at Radji Beach. British soldiers who had survived the sinking of their ship soon joined them. When it became clear that it was only a matter of time before those who remained on Radji Beach would also be captured, they decided to surrender voluntarily. A naval officer went to contact the Japanese base at Muntok, the civilians began to walk to the nearest village, and the soldiers and nurses waited along with the wounded for the arrival of the Japanese. When the Japanese soldiers arrived at Radji Beach, the British and Australian servicemen and women expected to become POWs. Instead, the Japanese marched half of the British and Australian servicemen further along the beach, out of sight of the remainder of the group, reappearing almost immediately to collect the rest of the men. According to Bullwinkel, the Japanese soldiers “came back and cleaned their rifles and bayonets in front of

us” a short while later, leaving no doubt as to what had happened to the servicemen (Bassett 1992, 140). But the fate of the twenty-two members of the AANS was also sealed. The Japanese ordered them to form a line and march into the sea, whereupon the nurses were machinegunned. All but Bullwinkel died; she feigned death until the Japanese left the area and then struggled back to shore to hide. Eventually she met up with a British soldier who had also survived the massacre, although he was later to die of his wounds. They managed to escape detection for more than a week before finally being captured by the Japanese and made POWs. Bullwinkel was reunited with the thirty-one nurses who had survived the original sinking and been captured earlier by the Japanese, although eight died while incarcerated. At war’s end, Bullwinkel and her remaining colleagues returned to Australia. For her wartime bravery and subsequent peacetime work as a nursing professional, Bullwinkel was awarded a number of honors, including the Officer of the Order of Australia, Member of the British Empire, Associate of the Royal Red Cross, Efficiency Decoration, and the Florence Nightingale Medal.

—Susan R. Allan

See also Australia, Women in Service during World War II; Australian Army Nursing Service/Royal Australian Army Nursing Corps

References and Further Reading

- Bassett, Jan. 1992. *Guns and Brooches: Australian Army Nursing: From the Boer War to the Gulf War*. Oxford, England: Oxford University Press.
- Goodman, Rupert. 1988. *Our War Nurses: The History of the Royal Australian Army Nursing Corps 1902–1988*. Bowen Hills, Australia: Boolarong.
- Kenny, Catherine. 1986. *Captives: Australian Army Nurses in Japanese Prisoner Camps*. St. Lucia, Australia: University Queensland Press.

BUNKE, TAMARA
(1937–1967)

Revolutionary who died fighting in Bolivia. Tamara Bunke was born on November 19, 1937, in Buenos Aires (Argentina) to German parents who had emigrated from Nazi Germany. In 1952, her parents returned to the Communist German Democratic Republic (East Germany), where Bunke joined the Communist youth movement. From that point, it is difficult to establish the political and personal development of young Tamara, because her life was later widely used for Communist propaganda purposes and was posthumously streamlined to fit the image of a Communist heroine. The official history asserts that Tamara met the revolutionary Che Guevara when he visited East Berlin, and the Spanish-speaking Bunke served as a translator during his talks with representatives of the East German Communist government. She decided to join Che Guevara in his revolutionary activities, but it is unclear whether she also became his mistress. After training in Cuba, she went to Bolivia, and following clandestine activities, she joined an armed partisan group. Cuban and Eastern bloc media began to celebrate Bunke as “Tania la guerrillera” by the mid-1960s. She was depicted as a young European Communist joining the people of the Third World in their struggle for liberation from capitalism and imperialism. On August 31, 1967, Tamara Bunke was killed either in combat with Bolivian government troops or after being captured. She was celebrated as the female Che Guevara. Her grave has not yet been found. Up to the collapse of the German Democratic Republic in 1989–1990, more than 200 schools, factories, and other facilities had been named after Bunke. The Bunke cult did not reach the level of Che Guevara’s; nevertheless, the story of a young woman engaging in and perishing in revolutionary combat inspired many young people not only in former Eastern bloc countries with their all-dominant state propaganda, but also in the West. Recent re-

search on the life and death of Tamara Bunke has been overshadowed by court injunctions. The mother of Tamara Bunke took legal action against a book claiming that Tamara Bunke was not only an idealistic freedom fighter but had strong links to the East German and other Eastern bloc security services.

—*Oliver Benjamin Hemmerle*

See also Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements in

References and Further Reading

- Panitz, Eberhard. 2000. *Tamara Bunke. Mit Che Guevara in Bolivien*. Berlin: GNN.
 Rojas, Marta. 1993. *Tania, guerrillera heroica*. Buenos Aires, Argentina: Cedenio.
 Zapata, Jose A. Friedl. 1997. *Tania. Die Frau, die Che Guevara liebte*. Berlin: Aufbau.

BYCK, MURIEL
(1918–1944)

Radio operator who parachuted into France with Britain’s Special Operations Executive (SOE) during World War II. Muriel Byck is representative of the many women who were integral to the fight against the Nazis in France during World War II. Byck joined the SOE through the Women’s Auxiliary Air Force in Britain, where, like many other women, her ability to speak fluent French allowed her to be of great use to the French Resistance. Byck translated and sent messages to London regarding recruits to the resistance and also worked as a courier. She died in 1944 in France of meningitis.

Byck was born in the London borough of Ealing on June 4, 1918, of French Jewish parents who were British citizens; she also spoke Russian and spent time in Germany. She joined the Women’s Auxiliary Air Force in December 1942, working with the First Aid Nursing Yeomanry and the records office. In July 1943, Byck was

recruited by the SOE because of her grasp of the French language and was parachuted into France in April 1944 under the code names “Michele” and “Violette.” Byck worked as a radio operator in the Resistance circuit known as “Ventriloquist” under Philippe de Vomécourt in the Loire and Cher area. She translated messages into ciphers and tapped them into Morse code; she also received messages from London and deciphered them. Byck trained local wireless operator recruits and transferred recruiting information to London. She also served as a courier when necessary, delivering or receiving messages for the Resistance. Byck moved daily to and from four wireless receivers to avoid discovery by the Gestapo. She narrowly escaped capture when a German spy discovered her at work in her safe house in April 1944, but Byck was quickly transferred to a new location under the guise of recuperating from an illness. In early May, London and the Resistance circuit bombed the German ammunition supply in Michenon, and the explosions physically and psychologically traumatized Byck. She was transferred to numerous safe houses, but she never recovered; Byck contracted meningitis as a child and hid this fact from the SOE, but she contracted the disease again while in France and

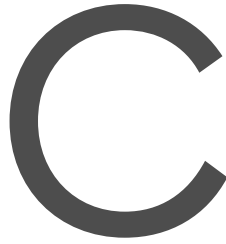
was taken to the hospital. The hospital staff could have informed the Gestapo, but the nuns at the hospital where she was taken did not do so. Byck died of meningitis on May 23, 1944. She was originally buried under a false name, and Vomécourt was almost arrested by the Gestapo at her funeral. Byck’s grave was later moved to the War Cemetery at Pornic for British lost in the war effort. Like other female participants in the war effort, Byck is honored in several war memorials in England and is commemorated in the town of Romorantin, France, where she was originally buried.

—J. Lyndsey Rago

See also Atkins, Vera H.; Khan, Noor Inayat; Sansom, Odette; Witherington, Pearl

References and Further Reading

- Escott, Beryl E. 1991. *Mission Improbable: A Salute to the RAF Women of SOE in Wartime France*. Somerset, England: Patrick Stephens Limited.
- “The FANY Agents—Daughter of Yael: Yvonne Baseden,” 64 Baker Street, http://www.64-bakerstreet.org/text_version/agents/agent_fany_muriel_byck_yael_txt.html (accessed December 30, 2004).



CAMPAIGN FOR NUCLEAR DISARMAMENT (CND) AND THE GREENHAM COMMON WOMEN

The involvement of women in anti-nuclear weapon protests in the United Kingdom. The Campaign for Nuclear Disarmament (CND), founded in January 1958, soon achieved fame as one of Britain's largest extra-parliamentary protest movements. Women have played an important role in the CND since its earliest days. The organization went into decline in the mid-1960s, only to revive during the early 1980s as a result of renewed Cold War tensions. In 1981, a group of women organized the Greenham Common Peace Camp to protest against the introduction of cruise missiles to Britain.

Britain detonated its first hydrogen bomb in 1957. Both major political parties, the governing Conservatives and the opposition Labour party, agreed on the need for an independent British nuclear capability. Nonetheless, the intensification of the Cold War, the steady buildup of nuclear stockpiles, and the continuous testing of nuclear devices in the late 1950s alarmed many in Britain. The emergence of the CND in 1958 reflected the opposition in Britain to nuclear escalation. The CND attracted a number of prominent British intellectuals, including philosopher Bertrand Russell (who became the

first president of the CND) and author Doris Lessing. Canon John Collins became the chairman, and Peggy Duff, who had been active in an earlier, smaller antinuclear organization, became the organizing secretary. The objective of the CND was to "ban the bomb" worldwide. The first step would be British unilateral nuclear disarmament and the declaration of a neutral foreign policy. The CND was mainly a middle-class movement that initially favored lobbying politicians of the two major parties. The CND had some success in 1960 when the Labour party membership adopted a unilateral disarmament resolution at its annual party conference. That decision was reversed one year later, however. The activity of the CND that gained the most public notice was an annual Easter weekend protest march from Trafalgar Square in London to Aldermaston in Berkshire, home of the British Atomic Energy Authority's main research center. These marches, which covered a 50-mile route over 4 days, attracted between 50,000 to 150,000 supporters during the peak years of 1960 to 1963 (Byrne 1988, 45).

Some in the CND became impatient with the slow progress of the movement and left to join groups that advocated nonviolent civil disobedience. The rapid reduction of East-West hostility following the near miss of the Cuban Missile Crisis of 1962 seemed to indicate that the great

powers had learned a lesson. The CND declined in strength in the late 1960s as activists turned their attention to campaigning against the Vietnam War.

Cold War tensions escalated again in the late 1970s and early 1980s, and the CND gained renewed support. The North Atlantic Treaty Organization's (NATO) December 1979 decision to station U.S. cruise missiles and Pershing II intermediate missiles in Britain prompted one of the most celebrated episodes of social protest in modern British history, the Greenham Commons women's peace camp. Greenham Common was a U.S. air base slated to receive cruise missiles. In September 1981, "Women for Life on Earth," a group of thirty-six, marched from Cardiff and set up camp outside the main gate of the Greenham Common air base. Supporters soon joined in increasingly large numbers. In February 1982, camp members voted to become a women-only movement. The Greenham protestors endured harsh weather, police harassment, arrests, attempted evictions, and occasional outbreaks of violence. In December 1982, an estimated 30,000 women joined hands around the base perimeter in an "embrace the base" protest. The CND broke with its traditional lobbying tactics and extended support to the protestors. In April 1983, 70,000 CND supporters formed a human chain that linked Greenham with Aldermaston and Burghfield, site of another nuclear base. In December of that year, 50,000 women encircled the Greenham base holding mirrors. The women protestors maintained a continual presence at Greenham Common, with some staying for only a short time and others for many months. The international situation relaxed in the late 1980s as the Cold War wound down, and in August 1989, NATO started withdrawing the cruise missiles from Greenham Common following signature of the Intermediate Nuclear Forces Treaty two years earlier. The last missile left in 1991. The base was returned to civilian ownership in 1997. A small group of protestors stayed on until 2000, however, demonstrating against Britain's nuclear arsenal.

—Paul W. Doerr

See also Peace People Movement; Ulster, Women during the Troubles in; Vietnam, Women in the Buddhist Peace Movement

References and Further Reading

- Byrne, Paul. 1988. *The Campaign for Nuclear Disarmament*. London: Croom Helm.
- Junor, Beth, ed. 1995. *Greenham Common Women's Peace Camp: A History of Non-Violent Resistance, 1984–1995*. London: Working Press.
- Liddington, Jill. 1991. *The Road to Greenham Common: Feminism and Anti-Militarism in Britain Since 1820*. Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University Press.
- Taylor, Richard. 1988. *Against the Bomb: The British Peace Movement, 1958–1965*. Oxford, England: Clarendon.

CANNAN, MAY WEDDERBURN (1893–1973)

World War I poet and memoirist. May Wedderburn Cannan was the second daughter of Charles Cannan, dean of Trinity College, Oxford, and his wife Mary, née Wedderburn. During the war, May Cannan was a member of the Voluntary Aid Detachment and worked at the Clarendon Press, which produced pamphlets and books for the government's propaganda bureau. The four weeks she spent in France as a canteen worker form the basis of one of her finest poems, "Rouen." Her first volume of poetry, *In War Time*, was published in 1917. She was working for British Intelligence, MI5, in Paris when the armistice was declared. May Cannan was engaged to her childhood friend, Major Bevil Quiller-Couch, son of Arthur Quiller-Couch ("Q"), professor of English literature at Cambridge. Their happiness was short-lived, for although Bevil survived the war, he died in the influenza epidemic in 1919. Cannan's grief inspired some of the most poignant

poems of the war, including “When the Vision Dies.” She published two more collections, *The Splendid Days* (1919) and *The House of Hope* (1923). *The Lonely Generation*, her fictionalized memoir, appeared in 1934. She died in 1973.

Unlike Vera Brittain, May Cannan did not ascribe to the idea that World War I was a futile waste of a generation. Her posthumously published autobiography, *Grey Ghosts and Voices* (1976) is an evocative portrait of her Oxford childhood and a moving account of her experience of war and its aftermath.

—Jane Potter

See also Brittain, Vera Mary

References and Further Reading

- Cannan, May Wedderburn. 1976. *Grey Ghosts and Voices*. Kington, England: Roundwood.
 Fyfe, Charlotte. 2000. *The Tears of War*. Wiltshire, England: Cavalier Books.

CANTINIÈRES

See Vivandières in the French Army

CATT, CARRIE CHAPMAN
 (NÉE CLINTON LANE)
 (1859–1947)

Women’s suffrage and peace activist. Carrie Chapman Catt played a critical role in the passage in the United States of the Nineteenth Amendment to the U.S. Constitution that granted women the right to vote. As the president of the National American Women’s Suffrage Association (NAWSA), she lobbied Congress to enfranchise women at the same time the United States faced world war. Despite pacifist leanings, Catt tied women’s suffrage to patri-

otism and supported U.S. participation in World War I.

Carrie Clinton Lane was born in Ripon, Wisconsin, on January 9, 1859, and at the age of seven years moved with her family to Charles City, Iowa. She entered Iowa Agricultural College in 1877 and was the only woman graduate in the class of 1880. After college, she worked as a teacher and served as the superintendent of schools in Mason City, Iowa. In 1885, she resigned her post to marry Leo Chapman, editor of the *Mason City Republican*. Their marriage ended with his death from typhoid fever. She later married George Catt, a former college classmate.

Catt joined the Women’s Christian Temperance Union and launched her career as a social reformer and suffragist. Between 1895 and 1899, she served the Iowa Woman Suffrage Association, where she quickly made a name for herself and worked on a number of state suffrage referenda with Susan B. Anthony, the president of NAWSA. In 1900, Catt was handpicked by the retiring Anthony to take over the leadership of NAWSA, where she served as president from 1900 to 1904 and again from 1915 to 1920. In between these years, she worked toward international suffrage, and in 1915, she helped found the Women’s Peace Party.

In 1915, the suffrage movement divided over the defection of younger, more radical members led by Alice Paul. Catt agreed to return as the president of NAWSA, and in 1916 she presented her “Winning Plan.” With this plan, NAWSA became a single-issue group, focused on suffrage to the exclusion of other reform efforts. The organization abandoned the state-by-state approach and concentrated on winning a federal amendment. Despite criticism from other organizations, Catt believed that women’s patriotism would be rewarded if the NAWSA endorsed United States involvement in the war. In vindication of her approach, Congress ratified the Nineteenth Amendment in 1919.

Following the suffrage victory, Catt continued to encourage female political participation through the Women’s League of Voters (WLV)

and she campaigned for world peace. Through the WLV, she promoted U.S. support of the League of Nations, and in 1924, she founded the National Council for the Cause and Cure for War (1924–1948) to promote peace and to influence the U.S. government to embrace internationalism. During World War II, she worked to save German Jews from the Nazis. She formed the Protestant Committee of Non-Jewish Women against the Persecution of the Jews in Germany and served on the Women's Action Committee for Victory and Lasting Peace. Catt retired from public life in 1941 when she was honored with the Chi Omega Achievement Award at the White House. She died in New Rochelle, New York, on March 9, 1947.

—Danelle Moon

See also Livermore, Mary Ashton Rice

References and Further Reading

Van Voris, Jacqueline. 1987. *Carrie Chapman Catt: A Public Life*. New York: The Feminist Press.



Edith Cavell. (Duncan-Clark, S. J., *Pictorial History of the Great War*, The John A. Hertel Co., Toronto, 1919)

CAVELL, EDITH LOUISA
(1865–1915)

British nurse executed by the Germans during World War I. Edith Cavell was born on December 4, 1865, in Swardston, England. After studying nursing at London's Fever Hospital, she dedicated herself to the service of poor children. In 1907, she was hired as an administrator and teacher at the École Belge d'Infirmières Diplômées (The Belgian School for Certified Nurses) in Brussels. When the Germans occupied the city during World War I, Cavell was also administering St. Giles Hospital. On August 4, 1915, she and others were arrested for hiding Belgian, British, and French soldiers and assisting them to escape. Cavill did not deny the charges. In fact, she had helped nearly 200 sol-

diers elude the Germans. She and seven members of the clandestine network, including Elizabeth Thuliez, were sentenced to death by firing squad. Despite appeals of the neutral U.S. and Spanish governments, Cavell's sentence was carried out on October 12, 1915. Before her execution, Cavell declared to the chaplain, Stirling Gahan, "I know now that patriotism is not enough. I must have no hatred and no bitterness towards anyone" (Grey 1961, 181). Besides Cavell, only Philippe Baucq was executed. The sentences of the others were commuted to hard labor.

The execution of Nurse Cavell was exploited by British wartime propaganda, despite her obvious guilt, as a manifestation of German barbarity. After the war, her remains were brought back to Britain with much ceremony. After a funeral at Westminster Cathedral, they were interred in Norwich Cathedral.

—Bernard Cook

THE EXECUTION OF MISS EDITH CAVELL

An Account by Hugh Gibson, Secretary of the American Legation in Brussels

“It seems that Miss Cavell was prosecuted for having helped English and French soldiers, as well as Belgian young men, to cross the frontier into Holland in order that they might get over to England. She had made a signed statement admitting the truth of these charges and had further made public acknowledgment in court. She frankly admitted that not only had she helped the soldiers to cross the frontier but that some of them had written her from England thanking her for her assistance. This last admission made the case more serious for her because if it had been proven only that she had helped men to cross the frontier into Holland, she could have been sentenced only for a violation of the passport regulations, and not for the ‘crime’ of assisting soldiers to reach a country at war with Germany.

“ . . . Last night Mr. Gahan [an Anglican priest] got a pass and was admitted to see Miss Cavell shortly before she was taken out and shot. He said she was calm and prepared and faced the ordeal without a tremor. She was a tiny thing that looked as though she could be blown away with a breath, but she had a great spirit. She told Mr. Gahan that soldiers had come to her and asked to be helped to the frontier; that knowing the risks they ran and the risks she took, she had helped them. She said she had nothing to regret, no complaint to make, and that if she had it all to do over again, she would change nothing. And most pathetic of all was her statement that she thanked God for the six weeks she had passed in prison—the nearest approach to rest she had known for years.

“They partook together of the Holy Communion, and she who had so little need of preparation was prepared for death. She was free from resentment and said: ‘I realise that patriotism is not enough. I must have no hatred or bitterness toward any one.’

“She was taken out and shot before daybreak.

“She was denied the support of her own clergyman at the end, but a German military chaplain stayed with her and gave her burial within the precincts of the prison. He did not conceal his admiration and said: ‘She was courageous to the end. She professed her Christian faith and said that she was glad to die for her country. She died like a heroine.’”

—Gibson, Hugh. 1917.

*A Journal from Our Legation in Belgium, by Hugh Gibson
Secretary of the American Legation in Brussels.*

Garden City, NY: Doubleday,
Pages, 347–348, 360.

See also Belgium during World War I, Women
in; Mati Hari, pseud.

CHALBUR, VERA DE
COTTANI DE

References and Further Reading

See Eriksen, Vera

Grey, Elizabeth. 1961. *Story of Nurse Edith Cavell*.
Boston: Houghton Mifflin.

Ryder, Rowland. 1975. *Edith Cavell*. London:
Hamilton.

CHAMBERLAIN (TAMBLIN),
MARGARET LENORA (1918–)

One of the first women to pilot U.S. military aircraft in the Women's Airforce Service Pilots (WASP) program. Part American Indian, Margaret Chamberlain was born in Vinita, Oklahoma, where her father was born two decades earlier on the Indian reservation. After graduating from Centenary College in Shreveport, Louisiana, Chamberlain enrolled in a Civilian Pilot Training course sponsored at her alma mater. Chamberlain first soloed in a J-3 Piper Cub in 1941 and with seventy hours under her belt became a WASP in April 1944. During her training, she flew PT-19s, PT-17s, BT-13s, and AT-6s. On April 22, 1944, Chamberlain received her first orders to report to Love Field in Dallas, Texas, one of the four main military ferrying bases. At Love Field, she served as a ferry pilot along with more than ninety other WASPs at the base. Her ferrying assignments included piloting new aircraft from the factories to bases across the country, taking airplanes from one base to another, and flying planes to a salvage site when they became too dilapidated to be flown. Often the women piloted planes their male counterparts refused to fly, and such was the case with Chamberlain as a ferry pilot in Dallas. She received advanced instrument training to prepare her to instruct pilots to fly in inclement weather. At her final base assignment, Perrin Army Air Base in Sherman, Texas, Chamberlain served as an instrument instructor on BT-13s. She stayed at Perrin until the WASP was disbanded in December 1944. The military leaders at the base gave the women a full review and allowed them to choose their own pilot and plane to fly them home instead of making them pay their way.

Following her service as a WASP, she completed an extensive program to obtain her instructor's rating, allowing her to teach others to fly. A few years later, she joined the American Red Cross and lived in Korea, Burma, Indonesia, and Canada before retiring to Arizona.

—*Caressa Lattimore*

See also United States, Women's Airforce Service Pilots

References and Further Reading

Chamberlain (Tamblin), Margaret Lenora. Interview. Wings across America and the WASP WWII Museum, Sweetwater, Texas, <http://www.wasp-wwii.org/wings/information.htm> (accessed November 18, 2004).

CHAPELLE, DICKEY (AKA
GEORGIA LOU MEYER, G. L.
MEYER) (1919–1965)

Award-winning journalist and photographer who was one of the first women reporters in the United States to report on combat situations from the front lines of the battlefield. Georgia Lou Meyer was born in suburban Milwaukee, Wisconsin, in 1919. She was a youngster with immense energy and a fixation for airplanes. When she was fourteen, she submitted an article on flying to the U.S. Air Service magazine under the name G. L. Meyer; the article was published, probably because the editor thought she was male. This article began the career of the person who would eventually become known as Dickey Meyer and, after her marriage, Dickey Chapelle.

Dickey Meyer entered the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, but her love for being around airplanes outweighed her scholastic efforts. After failing college, she became a press release agent for local air shows in Florida and Cuba. She later moved to Manhattan and married Tony Chapelle, a World War I navy photographer from whom she learned the art of photography. Shortly before the outbreak of World War II, Dickey Chapelle wrote two books for the government, *Needed: Women in Government Service* and *Needed: Women in Aviation*. These books reflected the government's need for women in the upcoming war effort but continued to reflect gender biases.

When World War II began, Dickey was assigned as a correspondent and photographer to a U.S. Marine unit with which she saw battle activity firsthand. She returned to the United States as staff photographer for *Seventeen* magazine. Chapelle later left that magazine and began work as a photographer for relief agencies in Europe, India, and the Middle East.

Chapelle eventually separated from her husband, whom she learned was already married when he married her. She wrote articles on the marines and began work as a public relations officer with the Research Institute of America with which she wrote about and photographed the marines in Lebanon during political disturbances in that country. She also was assigned to Cuba to cover the nation's growing civil unrest and subsequent revolution.

Chapelle became a celebrity and was a guest on popular television shows of the era. She published another government book along with an autobiography titled *What's a Woman Doing Here? A Reporter's Report on Herself*. When the Vietnam War began, Chapelle was there, despite injuries suffered while parachuting and in a jeep accident. In 1962, as a result of her coverage of the war in Vietnam, she became the second woman to win the George Polk award. In 1965, Chapelle became the first American female journalist killed in action. For her efforts, she received a marine color guard at her funeral, a rarity for a civilian. A year later, a monument was erected in her honor in Chu Lai, South Vietnam.

—Leonard A. Steverson

See also Bonney, Therese; Buble, Esther; Lange, Dorothea; Meiselas, Susan

References and Further Reading

- Chapelle, Dickey. 1962. *What's a Women Doing Here? A Reporter's Report on Herself*. New York: William Morrow.
- Ostroff, Roberta. 1992. *Fire in the Wind: The Life of Dickey Chapelle*. New York: Ballantine.

CHECHNYA, IMPACT ON WOMEN OF WARS IN

The impact of the Russo-Chechen wars on women. Since 1994, Chechnya has experienced two destructive wars. Indeed, the wars have triggered a transformation of gender roles. If female Chechen suicide bombers, who made their first appearance in 2000, embodied a new involvement of women in the war and terror, they only represent a small fraction of the Chechen female population. They, however, do reflect the societal changes brought about by war.

In 1991, the small North Caucasian Republic of Chechnya unilaterally declared its independence from the nascent Russian Federation. After two and a half years of political and economic pressures and negotiation, President Boris Yeltsin's Russian administration decided to launch a military campaign. Lasting from December 1994 to August 1996, the war, according to various estimates, caused between 50,000 and 100,000 deaths (Cherkasov 2004, 7–8). In the aftermath of the conflict, a problematic political situation prevailed and new tensions appeared between the two former belligerents. At the same time, the persisting tensions significantly strengthened the Chechen's opposition to Aslan Maskhadov, the newly elected Chechen president. An open conflict arose between the moderate Chechen president and the warlords who converted to radical Islam. By 1997, Chechnya was plagued by anarchical lawlessness.

On October 1, 1999, the Russian armed forces launched a second campaign in Chechnya as a result of two events. In August 1999, the radical warlord Shamil Basayev led an invasion of neighboring Dagestan, a constituent republic of the Russian Federation, with the aim of creating an independent Islamic north Caucasian state. Then in September, the bombing of three apartment buildings killed 300 people in Moscow and southern Russia. The Russian government blamed the attacks on Chechnya and argued that Chechen terrorism justified Russian military action. The military operations quickly turned into a tremendously destructive war. In



A woman, one of fifty armed Chechens who seized a crowded Moscow theater in October 2002, poses with a pistol somewhere inside the theater in this image from a Russian television station. Some of the women claimed to be widows of ethnic Chechen insurgents. (AP Photo/NTV Russian Channel)

2003, after a referendum managed by the Russians, the Chechen Republic adopted a new constitution and organized a contested election that led to the nomination of a pro-Russian Chechen president. Russia subsequently claimed that the situation was improving, but, by early 2005, it remains dramatically unchanged.

From the start of the first war, the Chechen civilian population has endured harsh conditions and extreme violence on a daily basis (Tishkov, 2004). The first conflict produced many documented atrocities against civilians, but the second has proved to be even more violent. The Russian armed forces have introduced new tactics, called mop-up or cleansing opera-

tions (*zachistka*) during which widespread human rights abuses are committed. At the same time, the Chechen resistance radicalized and some rebel groups have developed new strategies based on terror.

Throughout the Russo-Chechen wars, violence has primarily targeted men who are suspected of being fighters or of having links with pro-separatist or Islamist groups. They have been subjected to arbitrary arrest and detention in the filtration camps. They have frequently been tortured, if not executed. The violence, however, has never spared women. Although Chechen women rarely complain or openly express their sufferings, they have been undergoing two main types of violence. War first brought symbolic violence. Chechen women have been living in extreme precariousness and an insecure environment since the beginning of warfare. Many of them have lost one or several relatives who were either killed or abducted. Extrajudicial killings, illegal reprisals, arbitrary arrests, disappearances, torture, and looting have been pervasive. A ruined Chechnya has become a no man's land where total impunity dominates. Many women have also experienced physical violence. As in other wars, rape of women has been part of the war in Chechnya. These sexual crimes are certainly underreported but are presumed to widely occur, particularly during nighttime raids and mop-up operations. Rape is extremely shameful in the traditional Chechen Muslim context. A woman who experiences sexual assault brings dishonor on her family and could be repudiated and even killed in the name of family honor.

This insecure and extremely violent context has been a catalyst for social changes. Indeed, it has had strong effects on gender roles within the Chechen society. In Chechen society, women are assigned the roles of housekeeper and guardian of ancestral traditions. On one hand, men typically insist on the central role of women in society, yet on the other, the men always relegate them to a subordinate position. Under the Soviet regime, women were granted better access to education. Hence, many of them played

new roles in education, medicine, and commerce. Since the 1957 return of the Chechens from the deportation inflicted on them by Stalin, however, identity tensions arose between traditional representations and social injunctions and the effective roles women were playing within the society. These tensions were heightened after Dzhokhar Dudayaev, the first proseparatist president of Chechnya, encouraged a return to tradition. Even though this political move proved to have little impact on the private sphere, it aroused new frustrations for women, who were excluded from all public and political affairs.

The first war, in such a context, represented a turning point. While men took up arms to fight the Russian army, women became wholly responsible for their families. They became deeply involved in small commercial activities, selling on local markets either their own products or the merchandise that they had bought in the neighboring Ingushetia. Women relied on their traditional image of harmlessness to go through checkpoints and to cross the frontiers. Such trips were indeed hazardous; although the women may commonly have aroused less suspicion than men, they had to deal with the hostile soldiers' attitudes, the widespread practice of extortion at checkpoints, and the risk of being kidnapped and raped.

This image of harmlessness has also served other purposes. Since the first war, women have played the role of negotiators or intermediaries with the Russian soldiers. For instance, they have bought the release of their relatives from the filtration camps or obtained the corpse of a relative for a fee. Since 2003, they have protested in the streets against arrests and arbitrary disappearances and denounced the inertia of the local pro-Russian Chechen administration. It seems that these demonstrations have not been spontaneous but have been encouraged by either opponents to the Chechen pro-Russian government or human rights activists. Women may thus become a *de facto* political force and assume a traditional male social role. This evolution has, of course, taken place in

other wars, but it appears to be particularly significant in the Chechen case.

Far from being passive actors, Chechen women took an active part in the war. Those who fight represent an insignificant minority. Much more common is their support of the fighters. They have provided fighters with information, materials, and arms, as well as food and medical care. Since the first suicide attack was carried out by a woman in June 2000, however, the perception of the role of women in the Russo-Chechen war deeply changed. This act symbolized two concomitant evolutions. Suicide terrorism marks the radicalization of some rebel groups and the importation of new tactics. These attacks have become more numerous than other types of terrorism, and women have committed more than 50 percent of them. Since 2000, about 42 women have become martyrs (*Shahidki*), although no exact figures exist.

Female suicide bombers, while having their own personal histories, show some common characteristics (Juzik 2003, 161–168; Reuter 2004, 19). Most were young, educated Chechen women coming from a middle-class or privileged social milieu. All were directly or indirectly affected by the wars and lost at least one relative. Finally, only a few have links with Islamist groups. Three of the Chechen female suicide bombers were arrested before committing attacks. Their testimonies have to be viewed cautiously because they have been distorted and instrumentalized by both parties to their own purposes.

The Russians have interpreted the onset of suicide attacks as a sign of an Al Qaeda presence in Chechnya and suspect the existence of "*Shahidki* battalions." For some experts, women who fall into the hands of extremists are blackmailed after having been kidnapped, drugged, and raped; according to this view, they have been indoctrinated and forced to become suicide bombers to avoid dishonor. The Chechens, on the other hand, offer another explanation; according to them, the involvement of women shows the commitment of the whole nation to fighting the Russian invaders. Women commit suicide bombing on their own because of despair

or to avenge their killed or abducted relatives. This version gave birth to the black widows myth, a term referring to the female members of the commando that took hostage the audience in Moscow's Dubrovka theatre in October 2002.

All these interpretations are ideologically biased. To understand fully the commitment of these women, a distinction should be made between individual motivations and collective strategies. A strong correlation can be seen between the Russian mop-up operations and the rise of female suicide attacks. Hence, extreme personal commitment could be explained in most cases by motives of revenge and despair (Reuters 2004, 4). In July 2001, Sveta Tsagaroeva killed the military commandant responsible for the death of her husband and brother. Vengeance could have led her to suicide terrorism. In some other cases, religion may have played a more decisive role. Khava Barayeva had strong connections to the Islamist milieu; she was the niece of Arbi Barayev, the radical Chechen warlord killed in 1999, and the sister of Movsar Barayev, head of the Moscow commando. Individual motivations evidently vary.

Suicide terrorism must also be considered in light of a larger strategy that some of the rebel groups adopt. Indeed, the organizational dimension of Chechen terrorism is revealed by the targets of the suicide-bombing operations, which were first directed against military and political objectives, well before hitting civilians, and the logistic required for large-scale hostage-takings (the Moscow theatre and the school in Beslan in September 2004). This moreover suggests that while the involved groups claim to belong to radical Islam, religion assumes an instrumental role in most cases. Chechen terrorist attacks are part of a local conflict. The Chechen field commanders who are behind these attacks, although indisputably influenced by the *Jihadi* mercenaries who came to Chechnya during the first war and after, have not extended their agenda to a more global struggle against Infidels. Even the most radical leaders, such as Shamil Basayev or Movladi Udugov, who both rely on the Islamist symbols and rhetoric make the independence of

Chechnya and the retreat of the Russian armed forces from North Caucasus their sole objectives. Those facts strongly undermine the Russian thesis. Suicide bombings appear in this regard as a worrying sign of the radicalization of Chechen society (Larzillière 2003, 162). Political violence and the strong social uncertainties provoked by the conflict make women more vulnerable or more desperate, so that they have become a new military and psychological arm in the hands of radical warlords.

Some songs and poems celebrate the female suicide bombers and praise them for their devotion to the nation. It seems, however, that suicide terrorism rouses indignation and revulsion within the Chechen society. Notwithstanding the incomprehension and the disgust they incite, female suicide bombers symbolize the social transformations engendered by war.

—Aurélie Campana

See also Rape in War

References and Further Reading

- Cherkasov, Alexander. 2004. "Book of Numbers. Book of Losses. Doomsday Book. Demography, population Losses and Migration in the Armed Conflict Area, Chechnya," Moscow, February 2004, <http://eng.kavkaz.memo.ru/analyticstext/enganalytics/id/645415.html> (accessed June 7, 2004).
- German, Tracey. 2003. *Russia's Chechen War*. London and New York: Routledge Curzon.
- Juzik, Julija. 2003. *La fidanzate di Allah. Volti e destini delle kamikaze cecene* [Allah's fiancées. Portraits and destinies of the Chechen suicide bombers]. Rome: Manifestolibri.
- Larzillière, Pénélope. 2003. "Tchéchénie: le Jihad territorialisé" [Chechnya: territorialized Jihad]. *Critique Internationale* 20: 151–164.
- Reuter, John. 2004. *Chechnya's Suicide Bombers: Desperate, Devout or Deceived?* The American Committee for Peace in Chechnya, <http://www.peaceinchechnya.org/reports.htm> (accessed September 23, 2004).
- Tishkov, Valery 2004. *Chechnya: Life in a War-Torn Society*. Berkeley and Los Angeles: University of California Press.

CHEROKEE WAR WOMAN

Title given to Cherokee Indian women who were mothers or wives of great warriors or to those who distinguished themselves in time of war by wisdom or in deed. The title bestowed on these women varied. *Ghigau* can be translated as “Beloved Woman.” In the form *Agigau*, it is translated as “War Woman.”

The position of War Woman arose out of the social and governmental structure of the Cherokee. The social system of the Cherokee was matrilineal. Marriage was exogamous, or outside of the clan. Women held the property, and a man would move to his wife’s home after marriage. A child was born into one of the seven Cherokee clans—Deer, Wolf, Bird, Wild Potato, Paint, Blue, or Long Hair—would trace descent through the mother’s kin in her clan.

To accommodate the clan system the Cherokee lived in compact villages. Council houses were built to accommodate representatives of the seven clans. Government was dual with a peace government (White) and a war government (Red). The War Woman would be a member of the Red government or war council.

The Cherokee War Woman had several functions. She was responsible for preparing the Black Drink that was used in a purification ritual by the warriors preparing for battle. She could also declare the fate of captives and prisoners who were taken in times of war.

The most famous of the Cherokee War Women was Nancy Ward, whose Cherokee name was *Nanye-hi*. Another important War Woman was Maggie Axe Wachacha, who was a healer, teacher, and leader. Cuhtalatah is cited in the Wahnenuhi manuscript for distinguishing herself in battle.

Two other War Women were Cornblossom and Standing Fern. They were part of the Thunderbolt Cherokees who lived on the Cumberland Plateau. Cornblossom’s son was the war chief Peter Troxell. Cornblossom, daughter of War Chief Thunderbolt, and Standing Fern were planning to relocate with other traditionalist Cherokee to the Sequatchie Valley just

west of Chattanooga, Tennessee. They and a number of children were killed in the Great Cherokee Children Massacre at Ywahoo Falls in southeastern Kentucky on August 10, 1810, by Americanizing Cherokee from the Free State of Franklin in Western North Carolina, led by Big Tooth Gregory.

Until recently, the title of War Woman was not used among the Cherokees of either the Eastern (North Carolina) or the Oklahoma Bands after the Trail of Tears. Joyce Dugan, principal chief of the Eastern Band of Cherokees in North Carolina, however, was given the title of War Woman in 1995.

—Andrew Jackson Waskey

See also Wake, Nancy

References and Additional Reading

- Hatley, Thomas. “Nancy Ward: The Last Beloved Woman of the Cherokees.” *Tennessee Historical Quarterly* 21 (1962): 354–364.
- Swan, Patricia A. “Maggie Axe Wachacha, Beloved Woman of the Cherokees.” *Now and Then: The Appalachian Magazine* 3 (1986, autumn) 3.

CHINA, WOMEN AND THE COMMUNIST REVOLUTION

The role of women in the revolutionary struggle in China. The Chinese Communist revolutionary period lasted from the mid-1920s until the founding of the People’s Republic of China in 1949 during which time the successes of the Chinese Communist Party (CCP) depended in part on the political participation of women. The party embraced gender equality as a theoretical maxim and devoted considerable resources to cultivating women’s allegiance in the civil war against the Nationalist Chinese.

The CCP was founded in 1920, when post-World War I upheavals presaged a radical break with China’s tradition-bound past. With

its large foreign communities and vibrant industrial economy, the city of Shanghai became an early focus of Communist activism in China. Shanghai's small female working class and foreign-influenced feminist elite both gravitated toward the newly introduced Communist ideology. Despite Communism's apparently egalitarian stance, male Communists dominated the party, and a handful of female activists struggled for inclusion. These included Wang Huiwu, who argued against China's paternalistic tradition of arranged marriages and who, in 1921, organized the earliest women's program endorsed by the CCP. In the northern Chinese city of Tianjin, another feminist leader, Deng Yingchao, became a prominent pamphleteer, leader of the city's Women's Rights League, and editor of the *Women's Daily* newspaper. In late 1923, Deng married Zhou Enlai, a rising Communist leader and future premier of the People's Republic of China. By 1925, Deng emerged as a party leader in her own right, and she remained an influential force on women's issues through the 1960s.

Efforts to develop a broader base of support among women workers in urban centers such as Shanghai and Tianjin faced formidable obstacles, including resistance within the party's overwhelmingly male leadership. The party's 1925 Resolution on the Labor Movement, for example, downplayed the revolutionary potential of women factory workers, and party discipline required even fervent feminist activists to minimize their recruitment of female laborers. In February 1925, however, when female mill workers in Shanghai went on strike because experienced workers were fired in favor of lower paid trainees, party policy changed. Sympathy strikes spread throughout China's coastal cities, and the party quickly endorsed and tried to guide the strike movement. A new Women's Bureau was organized, but its female leader, Xiang Jiangyu, was ostracized by male party officials, and the bureau became a vehicle for Nationalist, rather than Communist, activities.

During the First United Front Period (1925–1927) of cooperation between the fledg-

ling CCP and the growing Nationalist Party (Guomindang or Kuomintang [KMT]) led by Jiang Jieshi (Chiang Kaishek), an unprecedented political mobilization of both urban and rural women took place. As the CCP-KMT alliance fought against China's many warlord armies, women provided such services as cooking, nursing, and intelligence gathering. A special all-women propaganda team of more than 100 members was organized by the KMT Women's Bureau in Guangxi province, and scores of women's associations were organized as the joint CCP-KMT Northern Expedition moved northward through central China. The Communists renewed their independent organizing work, targeting female peasants and urban workers. Soong Quingling, the U.S.-educated widow of revered nationalist leader Sun Yatsen, promoted women's emancipation, organized feminist women's groups, and helped change local laws in the regional capital of Wuhan city, where marriage, property, and civil rights were extended to women. The CCP's radical actions soon provoked a violent break with the stronger Nationalists, who decimated urban Communist networks in eastern and southern China. As the CCP slowly rebuilt its popular support during the 1930s under Mao Zedong, its focus shifted from urban to rural recruitment, including the women of China's huge peasant class.

While the Nationalist government dominated China's major coastal cities and fought the warlords of northern China, it also tried to eliminate the Communist movement. In 1934, to escape encirclement by Nationalist troops, some 100,000 Communists, including at least 1,000 women, began a perilous, yearlong trek through central China. Pursued by Nationalist armies, the Communists suffered heavy losses during the Long March. Settling in remote Shensi province, the survivors revitalized the outlawed party by gaining support from the agricultural peasants. New programs attracted their support, including a land-to-the-tiller campaign that redistributed agricultural lands from landlords to poor farmers. This movement helped rebuild CCP political

power and popular appeal. Paternalistic landholding patterns meant that women benefited little from the program, but in the accompanying propaganda campaigns, the Communists enlisted thousands of young women, many of whom were former employees of local landlords who could reveal the landlords' political "crimes." These women increasingly found permanent roles as party propagandists, helping to launch the land reform movement and staffing the growing Communist Party bureaucracy. Later, these propaganda specialists helped to organize troupes of female speakers, actresses, singers, and musicians who gave politically oriented performances to peasant audiences.

The Nationalists bore the primary burden of the war against Japan's invading forces during the late 1930s and early 1940s, but the Communists, concentrated in remote provincial border regions, consolidated their own bases of support. Priority was assigned to creating large-scale party, military, and economic organizations with manpower drawn from the local peasantry. Women's organizations were vital to the Communists' successes in this period. Women farmed on a larger scale, while female administrators directed production programs in the agricultural, textile, and other industries, allowing male managers and employees to take up military duties. Meanwhile, at the leadership level, three women joined the policy-setting Party Central Committee in 1945, and the China Liberated Areas Women's Federation was organized to enlist more women in the Communist movement.

In the long-running civil war between the Communists and Nationalists that flared again in 1947, women played a key role in the Communists' mobilization programs. Huge manpower drafts by both armies caused industrial and food production to drop, but only the Communists actively encouraged women to make up the shortfall. Communist women's groups focused on maintaining morale and enhancing women's status within the family and the Communist movement, even as party cadres esca-

lated their demands for more output. The Communist leadership was forced to recognize the central importance of women's support in maintaining production. Land redistribution campaigns, which were seldom directly beneficial to women, were scaled back, and women's issues, including expanded property rights, received greater attention at party meetings.

During 1949, the Communists achieved a final victory over the Nationalists, and party interest shifted toward integrating all classes of Chinese women into the new Communist-led state. General policies for this process were outlined at the First Congress of Women in March-April 1949, and several senior female revolutionists were given prominent, if not always powerful, positions in the new government. Furthermore, the international significance of women's participation in the Chinese revolution was highlighted at the December 1949 Asian Women's Conference held in Beijing. At this meeting, 165 female delegates from fourteen Asian countries heard how they might follow the Chinese revolutionary model by enlisting women in Communist-led political and guerrilla movements.

—*Laura M. Calkins*

See also French Revolution, Impact of War on Women's Protest during the; German Revolution of 1918–1919; Russian Revolution and Women

References and Further Reading

- Chesneaux, Jean. 1968. *The Chinese Labor Movement, 1919–1927*. Stanford, CA: Stanford University Press.
- Davin, Delia. 1976. *Woman-work: Women and the Party in Revolutionary China*. London: Clarendon.
- Gilmartin, Christina Kelley. 1995. *Engendering the Chinese Revolution: Radical Women, Communist Politics, and Mass Movements in the 1920s*. Berkeley: University of California.
- Johnson, Kay Ann. 1983. *Women, the Family, and Peasant Revolution in China*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

CHINA, WOMEN ON THE HOME
FRONT IN WORLD WAR II

The experience of women in China during World War II. China's long wartime experience was punctuated by extremely violent attacks against civilians, including women, by Japanese military forces. The brutality of Japanese troops deepened Chinese women's nationalism and fueled their demands for personal, political, and civil rights and for representation. Vast numbers of women enrolled in a variety of auxiliary assistance and armed resistance movements led by independent warlords and sects as well as by the much larger Chinese Communist and Nationalist Parties.

China's experience of World War II is variously dated from 1931, when Japanese forces occupied Manchuria, or from 1937, when Japan's troops seized control of the principal cities of Beijing, Shanghai, and Nanjing (Nanking). Popular anti-Japanese sentiments predate these main-force military incursions, however, and as early as 1927, Chinese women were instrumental in the success of long-running anti-Japanese consumer boycotts.

Japan's creation of a puppet government in Manchuria in 1932 was followed in 1935 by military operations in northern China, and in 1937 Japan embarked upon an all-out invasion of eastern China. The Japanese advance forced the Nationalist government under Jiang Jieshi (Chiang Kaishek) to abandon its capital at Nanjing in late 1937 in favor of Chongqing (Chungking) in remote Sichuan province. As early as Japan's July 1937 attack on Beijing, small networks of women in coastal Chinese cities began organizing to provide nursing and food services to Chinese Nationalist troops. During the battle for Shanghai in September and October 1937, some 2,000 women residents of the city enrolled in emergency nursing courses. Other women who supported the rival Chinese Communist Party (CCP) joined its small guerrilla detachments as propagandists or communications specialists; a handful also acted as spies, providing information on both

Japanese and Nationalist troop movements to Communist leaders in China's interior.

In Japanese-occupied areas, China's relatively new personal and civil rights laws were abandoned in favor of martial law—or of no law at all. The often anarchic conditions that accompanied the advance of Japanese troops placed women at high risk for kidnapping, rape, and murder. Japanese servicemen were trained to view the Chinese as subhuman, and Chinese women were particularly reviled. Virtually as a matter of course, at least before 1938, Japanese troops systematically captured, raped, and often killed as many Chinese women as they found in their paths. In Chinese Communist-run areas, especially in northern China, Japan's troops employed particularly brutal “pacification” methods to quell and control civilian populations, including widespread use of rape as a weapon of intimidation. The most well known of the many attacks on civilian Chinese women occurred in the former capital of Nanjing in late December 1937, when tens of thousands of civilians were viciously raped and killed, in an episode known as the rape of Nanjing. Estimates of the total number of casualties vary widely, with some Western and Chinese Communist sources suggesting as many as 400,000 Chinese civilian and military victims; Japanese sources offer considerably lower figures (Masaaki 2000, 70–71).

Whatever the actual scale of the brutalities at Nanjing, the incidents gained international notoriety and profoundly accelerated the political mobilization of Chinese women against the Japanese invaders. As a result, in 1938, the Nationalist Chinese government made its first major effort to attract women's support by convening a conference to establish a Women's Advisory Committee. This committee centralized control over many wartime initiatives, including providing food for Nationalist troops, aiding wounded soldiers, and raising funds for orphanages. The committee's funds and scope were limited, however. Well-organized female Communists, including party leader Deng Yingchao, turned the committee's efforts toward recruiting rural women as auxiliaries for the Communists'



Women's Defense Corps training at Canton, China, 1938. (Hulton-Deutsch Collection/Corbis)

armed guerrilla forces. The Nationalists, fearing that social disturbances might accompany the growth of feminism, soon returned to endorsing conservative positions on women's issues, particularly on the proper roles for women in the anti-Japanese resistance. In 1941, the Nationalists issued directives instructing women to have more children and to limit their concerns to family issues, leaving politics and the prosecution of the war to men.

The Chinese Communist Party, on the other hand, actively sought to mobilize women throughout the war, especially peasants in the rural areas of China's interior provinces. Several pro-Communist, women-only paramilitary organizations were formed under Communist leadership to promote women's self-defense activities against the invading Japanese. These included the Hunan War Service Corps, the Yunnan Women's Battlefield Service Unit, the Guangxi Province Women's Brigade, and the

Northwest Women's Battlefield Group, the last of which was headed by female propaganda expert and feminist leader Ding Ling.

Even the Communists, however, did not always fully address the security concerns of those peasant women directly confronted by the unpredictable actions of Japanese troops. In October 1941, an armed revolt against local Communist authorities occurred in Shanxi province, led by a sect known as the Li Gua Dao (Salvationist Sect of the Goddess from the Southern Sea). At least 10 percent of this millennial group's members were women, who joined chiefly because the sect's emphasis on mutual self-defense seemed to offer protection against Japanese troops who had moved through the area several times during 1940–1941 (Goodman 1997). Local Communist militia units quelled the uprising, but party cadres investigated the cult's popular appeal, especially to women. Local policies were changed to provide more resources to

the Communists' own Women's National Salvation Association, an organization that supported paramilitary training for women and the formation of anti-Japanese resistance cells in the villages under Communist control.

The Japanese military itself was also affected by the international scandal over the rape of Nanjing. The indiscipline of its troops caused tremendous embarrassment to the Japanese Imperial Army's officer corps. To prevent a recurrence, Japanese leaders decided in 1938 to expand the existing system of officially sponsored brothels, known colloquially as comfort stations, to occupied mainland China. At these stations, Japanese soldiers were given sexual access to women. The number of women involved remains uncertain. An official report on Japan's 21st Army stationed in Guangzhou (Canton) indicated that some 1,000 women were made available to that unit's 40,000 men. In the Shanghai area, the so-called comfort women received army rations and worked under the direct supervision of Japanese military officials. Some of the comfort women were Japanese and Korean, but many were Chinese, recruited or kidnapped from poor families. Special discriminatory practices, including lower pay or no pay at all, were the rule for Chinese comfort women.

Chinese women's resistance to the Japanese occupiers was an important theme in public discussion, popular literature, and films. After the fall of Shanghai, Japanese troops occupied only part of the city until 1942, allowing many elements of the city's prewar public culture to flourish, including filmmaking. One of this period's most popular movies, *Hua Mulan Joins the Army* (1939), portrayed a traditional Chinese story about a young woman who, disguised as a man, takes her father's place in China's conscript army to fight a foreign invasion force. The self-assured star of the film, Chen Yunshang, infused the role with defiant patriotism and her portrayal of a female warrior became a symbolic heroine for China's wartime female filmgoers.

—*Laura M. Calkins*

See also Biological Warfare Experimentation, Japanese; China to 1911, Women Warriors in; Korea: Comfort Women; Nanking, Rape of

References and Further Reading

- Fogel, Joshua, ed. 2000. *The Nanjing Massacre in History and Historiography*. Berkeley: University of California Press.
- Goodman, David S. G. 1997. "The Licheng Rebellion of 1941: Class, Gender and Leadership in the Sino-Japanese War." *Modern China* 23, no. 2 (April): 216–245.
- Hicks, George. 1996. "The 'Comfort Women.'" In *The Japanese Wartime Empire, 1931–1945*, edited by Peter Duus, Ramon H. Myers, and Mark R. Peattie, 305–323. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.
- Massaki, Tanaka. 2000. *What Really Happened in Nanking: The Refutation of a Common Myth*. Tokyo: Seka Shuppan.
- Soong, Ching-ling. 1952. *The Struggle for New China*. Peking: Foreign Languages Press, 1952.

CHINA TO 1911, WOMEN WARRIORS IN

Exceptional women, who were warriors, bandits, and rebels in Imperial China. Ancient China has handed down many legends and stories of women war leaders and warriors. China's most celebrated woman warrior was the legendary Hua Mulan or Fa Mu Lan, who in the fifth century A.D. reputedly took the place of her conscripted but ill father. According to Chinese legend, Hua Mulan, with her hair cut short and wearing her father's armor, fought for ten years with valor without her sex being discovered. Tradition lauds her for preserving her chastity and desiring nothing but to cast off her armor and return home. Her exploits are touted in the traditional Chinese "Mulan Play" and, more recently, in an animated Disney movie.

Women are remembered in Chinese history as defenders of the castles in which they resided

and as bodyguards to the masters whom they served. Women served as military leaders as well. The Tang Empress Wu Chao (684–704) had learned martial arts as a child. She avenged her murdered father and seized the throne. She then directed an ongoing war with Korea to a successful conclusion. During the Sung Dynasty (960–1126), Liu Chin Ting, a sixteen-year-old Tartar, led her people's resistance against rival clans and then against the emperor himself. Her forces defeated and captured General Chun Pao, sent by the emperor to pacify the Tartars. Liu Chin Ting ordered Chun Pao executed, but her admiration for his courage grew into love. She pardoned him and then married him. For the emperor, Chun Pao's marriage to an imperial enemy was treasonous. To gain pardon from the emperor for her husband's betrayal, Liu Chin Ting went over to the side of the emperor. As a general with Chun Pao as her second, she successfully commanded Sung armies for thirty years. Liu Chin Ting was not the only woman military commander of the Sung. Mu Guiying served as a Sung commander in chief.

During the Ming dynasty (1368–1644), Ch'in Liang-Yu fought along side her husband Ma Sian-cheng. Before his death, she had been appointed commander of a division, and after his death she succeeded him as commander. During the Ming dynasty, women fought in the armies of the empire and among rebels. Women played a key role in the nationalist White Lotus Society. There had been women bandits in China, such as Nie Yin-Niang, who, schooled in the martial arts as a girl by a nun, became a Chinese counterpart to the later Western Robin Hood. During the Manchu period, Hsi Kai Ching was the chief of an immense pirate fleet. Unable to subdue her, the Chinese government persuaded her to retire with a pardon and a rich bribe.

At the end of the imperial period, Ch'iu Chin joined the Nationalist movement of Sun Yat-sen at its inception in 1904. As principal of the Ta-t'ung School of Physical Culture in Shao-hsing, she trained her students for struggle against the corrupt imperial regime. In 1907, when she was thirty-two, she was arrested, tortured, and be-

headed. After the empire fell in 1911, Ch'iu Chin was given a hero's burial by the new Chinese republic.

—Bernard Cook

See also China, Women and the Communist Revolution; India to 1857, Women Warriors in; Vietnam, Women in the War and Resistance before 1954

References and Further Reading

- Ayscough, Florence. 1975. *Chinese Women*. New York: Da Capo.
- Jones, David E. 1997. *Women Warriors: A History*. Washington, DC: Brassey's.

CHISHOLM, MAIRI LAMBERT (1896–1981)

First aid worker and ambulance driver during World War I. Mairi Chisholm and Elizabeth "Elsie" Knocker (who later married for a short time a Belgian pilot and became known as the Baroness de T'Serclaes) ran a first aid post near the front. They were the only two women officially allowed to work at the Belgian lines. Chisholm and Knocker were decorated by the Belgians as Knights of Leopold II and by the British with Military Medals and the Order of St. John of Jerusalem.

At the start of the war, Chisholm, who came from a wealthy Scottish family, rode her motorcycle to London and volunteered as a motorcycle dispatcher with the Women's Emergency Corps. Another dispatcher, Elsie Knocker, whom Chisholm had met at motorcycle races, recruited Chisholm to join her in Hector Munro's Ambulance Corps. The corps was sponsored by the Belgian Red Cross and began work overseas in September 1914.

The hectic ambulance work, in which many of the wounded were dead on arrival or soon after, inspired Knocker to establish a first aid

post near the front lines to treat men for shock to improve their chances of surviving the traumatic journey to the base hospitals. Despite Munro's disapproval of women living in close vicinity to soldiers, Chisholm and Knocker left the ambulance corps to establish their post in a cellar in Pervyse in late November 1914.

Chisholm and Knocker experienced immense difficulties when living on the front lines, including lack of supplies and funds as well as their cellar house being temporarily overrun by the Germans. Despite these obstacles, they ventured into the trenches to rescue wounded and provide them with medical care; the Germans agreed not to target them if they wore their nurse's veils.

The Two, as they were known among the Allied troops in Belgium, continued their work until they were affected by a gas attack in 1917, which forced them to return to England for their health. Chisholm briefly joined the British Women's Royal Air Force (WRAF) and after the war raced cars until the effects of her gassing forced her to give up strenuous activity.

—Barbara Penny Kanner

See also: Great Britain, Women in Service in World War I; T'Serclaes, Baroness Elizabeth de

References and Further Reading

Mitton, G. E. 1917. *The Cellar-House of Pervyse; a Tale of Uncommon Things, from the Journals and Letters of the Baroness T'Serclaes and Mairi Chisholm*. London: A. and C. Black.

CHURCHILL, JENNIE
(1854–1921)

Mother of Winston Churchill and war-service volunteer. Jennie Churchill was the daughter of Leonard Jerome, a New York financier and

sportsman, and his wife Clara. Much of her youth was spent in France, until she, her sisters, and mother left there for England as a result of the fall of the Second Empire in 1871. At age nineteen, she met Lord Randolph Churchill, second son of the duke of Marlborough, on a visit to the yachting center at Cowes and became engaged to him three days later. Their marriage followed. In November 1874, their first child, Winston, was born prematurely, and he was followed by a second son, Jack.

Lively and beautiful, Churchill swiftly became part of the social world and had a number of affairs as her husband's meteoric political career was torpedoed by a wrongheaded resignation and his health by the effects of the tertiary stage of syphilis. She later married two other men, both far younger than herself.

Revered by but distant from Winston, they became closer after Lord Randolph's death in 1896. Using her social and political connections, she greatly assisted him in the furtherance of his military and journalist career, especially his participation in Horatio Herbert Kitchener's drive against the Mahdi in the Sudan in 1898, which ended in the Battle of Omdurman and Winston's famous cavalry charge.

In 1899, Winston went to South Africa as a soldier and journalist in the war against the Boers, and her younger son, Jack, enlisted in the army. Jennie Churchill gained a great deal of attention by leading the effort to bring the hospital ship *Maine*, sponsored by a group of American women and named after the battleship sunk in Havana Harbor in Cuba, to Durban. Jennie took charge, and a number of troops were treated or evacuated, including her son Jack.

During World War I, Jennie again became an active volunteer. She entertained troops on the piano, served meals to soldiers, helped with convalescent homes, and raised money for an American's Women's War Hospital. She also became head matron of a hospital at Lancaster Gate. In addition, she edited a book, *Women's War Work*, and contributed in numerous other ways. Fi-

nally, she had to worry about her son Jack, who was fighting, as well as about the fate of Winston, whose career seemed greatly damaged as a result of the disastrous execution of the campaign against Turkey in 1915 at the Dardenelles, which was his brainchild.

—Marc L. Schwarz

See also: Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I

References and Additional Reading

- Leslie, Anita. 1969. *Lady Randolph Churchill*. New York: Scribner's Sons.
 Martin, Ralph. 1969–1971. *Jennie: The Life of Lady Randolph Churchill*. 2 Vols. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice Hall.

CIVIL WAR, AMERICAN, AND
 WOMEN

Women across the United States took on active—and often new—roles during the American Civil War. They encouraged men to enlist, organized and worked in aid societies, spied on the enemy, worked as nurses and in factories, ran farms and households, and fought as soldiers. By the end of the hostilities in 1865, the war and emancipation had transformed the lives of women.

Women proved vital to both the Union and Confederate war efforts. At times, women urged family members to enlist, and when their men left to fight, they managed their families' homes, farms, businesses, and plantations. They also took jobs outside the home. Through their work in aid societies and factories as well as on farms, white women became major suppliers of food, uniforms, and other goods in both the Union and Confederacy. During the first few weeks of the war, women formed more than 20,000 aid societies. Most towns had their own aid soci-

eties that provided local soldiers with socks, undergarments, shirts, gloves, blankets, shoes, handkerchiefs, scarves, bandages, and food. As the war lengthened, supplies were sent where needed and not only to local regiments. Women in rural areas where there were no organized societies often worked as individuals to supply the troops.

Many white women also planned and attended bazaars, fairs, concerts, raffles, and dances to raise money for army supplies. These events, although invaluable to the causes they supported, faced resistance from some men in both regions as “unladylike.” Nevertheless, women ran public fundraisers throughout the war. They often justified their participation and behavior by stressing the important services they offered to the men at the front.

During the Civil War thousands of white women became nurses, an occupation that had traditionally been filled by men. In the North approximately 20,000 women served as nurses. The Women's Central Relief Association and the U.S. Sanitary Commission coordinated, enlisted, and oversaw white women's relief work, including their duties as nurses. Both of these organizations helped women participate in the war while restricting them to the domestic spheres. They also shielded women from the horrors of the battlefield. Other women refused to conform to such restrictions and worked directly on the battlefields.

Without a centralized organization, relief work and nursing in the Confederacy remained local throughout the war. Southern women set up makeshift hospitals in homes, churches, town halls, and railway stations, as they took on the care of the wounded as best they could. As Southern towns became battlefields, many white women unwittingly became frontline nurses. Unlike their Northern counterparts, they could not be shielded from the horrors of the battlefield.

Although nursing was often seen as a natural outgrowth of women's nurturing natures, some women crossed the boundaries of womanhood

CONFEDERATE FEMALE VOLUNTEER

Mrs. Laura J. Williams of Arkansas

“Among the registered enemies of the United States government who have been recently sent across the lines from New Orleans, there is now in Jackson, Mississippi, a lady whose adventures place her in the ranks of the Mollie Pitchers of the present revolution. At the breaking out of the war Mrs. Laura J. Williams was a resident of Arkansas. Like most of the women of the South, her whole soul was enlisted in the struggle for independence. Her husband was a Northern man by birth and education, and a strong Union man. After Arkansas seceded from the Union he went to Connecticut, he said, to see his relations and settle up some business. Mrs. Williams suspected his purpose and finally she received information that he had joined the Yankee army. The Jackson Mississippian gives the rest of her history:

“She disguised herself in a Confederate uniform, and adopting the name of ‘Henry Benford,’ she proceeded to Texas, where she raised and equipped an independent company and went to Virginia with it as 1st Lieutenant. She was in the battle of Leesburg and several skirmishes, but finally, her sex having been discovered by the surgeon of the regiment—the 5th Texas Volunteers, to which the company had been attached—she returned to her home in Arkansas. After remaining there a short time she proceeded to Corinth, and was in the battle of Shiloh, where she displayed great coolness and courage. She saw her father on the field, but, of course, he did not recognize her and she did not make herself known to him. In the second day’s fighting she was wounded in the head, and was ordered to the rear. She wrote to her father, and then came on down to Grenada, where she waited for some time, but never saw or heard from him.

“She then visited New Orleans, was taken sick, and while sick the city was captured. On recovery she retired to the coast, where she employed herself in carrying communications and assisting parties to run the blockade with drugs and cloths for uniforms. She was informed on by a negro and arrested and brought before Gen. Butler. She made her appearance before Gen. B. in a Southern homespun dress. She refused to take the oath—told him she gloried in being a rebel—had fought side by side with Southern men for Southern rights, and if she ever lived to see ‘Dixie’ she would do it again. Butler denounced her as the most incorrigible she rebel he had ever met with. By order of the Beast she was placed in confinement, where she remained three months. Some time after her release she was arrested for carrying on ‘contraband correspondence,’ and kept in a dungeon fourteen days on bread and water, at the expiration of which time she was placed in the State Prison as a dangerous enemy. Her husband, it so happened, was a Lieutenant in the 13th Conn. regiment, and on duty as provost guard in the city. He accidentally found her out and asked if she wanted to see him. She sent him word she never wanted to see him so long as he wore the Yankee uniform. But he forced himself upon her, tried to persuade her to take the oath, and get a release, when he said he would resign and take her to his relations in Connecticut. She indignantly spurned his proposition, and he left her to her fate. When Gen. Banks assumed command he released a great many prisoners, but kept her in confinement until the 17th of May last, when she was sent across the lines to Meadesville with the registered enemies.

“ . . . [S]he has attached herself to the medical staff of a brigade now in this city [Jackson, Mississippi], and will render all the assistance in her power to the wounded in the approaching struggle for possession of the great Valley of the Mississippi.”

—*Savannah Republican* (Georgia), June 30, 1863, p. 1.
http://www.uttyl.edu/vbetts/women_soldiers.htm
 (accessed January 22, 2006).

by dressing as men and enlisting as soldiers. Scholars have documented hundreds of women who donned military uniforms to fight during the Civil War. Some fought alongside male family members, and others enlisted on their own. Often female soldiers' true identity was only revealed when they were injured or killed in battle. As a result, there is no way to calculate accurately the number of women who served in the Civil War armies.

Other women worked as spies during the Civil War. Because white women were rarely searched when they passed through enemy lines, they easily smuggled information, guns, medicine, and other valuable items under their skirts, in their shoes, or in the elaborate hairstyles of the day. Because of the secretive nature of the work, it is impossible to determine an accurate count of female spies. Some left written accounts of their wartime work, however. Confederate spy Belle Boyd and Union spy Sarah Emma Edmonds published accounts of their successes and experiences during the Civil War. African American women also served as spies during the war. Harriet Tubman, who escaped from slavery in the 1840s and served as a conductor on the Underground Railroad, continued to lead slaves to freedom during the war and alerted slaves to the location of Union troops.

Slave women also took an active role in the American Civil War. They found ways to escape from slavery, protect their children, and reunite with family members. The arrival of Union troops provided black women, especially those in the Upper South, the opportunity to run toward freedom with their children and reunite with other loved ones. With emancipation, whether claimed or granted, the lives of African American women changed dramatically.

For many women, the war demanded that they find work outside of the home to support their families. Some found work in occupations that had been open to them in antebellum America as maids, laundresses, seamstresses, and boardinghouse keepers. Those who lived in

towns and cities also found work in factories, often helping to produce war-related materiel such as minié balls, paper cartridges, percussion caps, fuses, and shells. Other women became teachers, both for the children on the home front and the freed people in the South. Union and Confederate women also found positions as government workers. Finally, the Civil War promoted the growth of prostitution in U.S. cities.

Not all white women supported the war. In the South, food shortages, inflation, and government policies provoked bread riots in several Confederate cities in 1863. In Richmond, more than 1,000 women looted shops for food and other necessities. The Northern home front experienced similar problems. In New York City, poorer men and women protested the loopholes of the 1863 Draft Law that allowed wealthy men to buy out or hire a substitute to escape conscription. Although the riot began to end draft exemptions, it degenerated into racial violence. After six days of rioting, hundreds of women were arrested and convicted for their participation.

—Lisa Tendrich Frank

See also Boyd, Isabelle; Civil War, American, Women Combatants during the; Clayton, Frances; Dix, Dorothea; Edmonds, Sarah Emma; Livermore, Mary Ashton Rice; Moon, Lottie, and Moon, Ginnie; Stowe, Harriet Beecher; Tubman, Harriet; Walker, Mary Edwards

References and Further Reading

- Edwards, Laura F. 2000. *Scarlett Doesn't Live Here Anymore: Southern Women in the Civil War Era*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press.
- Leonard, Elizabeth D. 1994. *Yankee Women: Gender Battles in the Civil War*. New York: W. W. Norton.
- Schwalm, Leslie A. 1997. *A Hard Fight for We: Women's Transition from Slavery to Freedom in South Carolina*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press.

CIVIL WAR, AMERICAN,
WOMEN COMBATANTS
DURING THE

Women served as combatants in both the Union and Confederate Armies. Throughout the American Civil War, hundreds of women pretended to be men to allow them to serve as soldiers and sailors in the Union and Confederate armies and navies. It is impossible to document the exact number of women who disguised themselves as men to enlist in the military and then effectively carried out their roles as soldiers. Historians can only track down those “unsuccessful” women whose sex was discovered and reported. Those who successfully mustered in as men and remained incognito throughout their service remain men on the military rolls as well as in the history books.

Although most women took on home-front roles during the Civil War, many refused to remain at home as the men of their families marched off to war. At least several hundred passed themselves off as men and reported to enlisting officers as new recruits. They bound their breasts, cut their hair, donned masculine clothing, took up smoking, gambled, and otherwise tried to look and act like men. Some female soldiers were cross-dressers before the war, making their decision to act like men and become soldiers less dramatic. For all of these women, cursory and hurried medical exams at their enlistment allowed them to hide their sex and qualify for military service.

When women joined the army, they did so in contexts and for reasons similar to male soldiers. Some women joined the Union or Confederate militaries with the knowledge of their husbands, brothers, or fathers. A few even served alongside members of their family. Others enlisted without their family’s knowledge or approval. Female soldiers cited reasons that were similar to those of men for joining the military. They justified their decision to enlist by pointing to their patriotism, abolitionist or proslavery sentiments, desire for vengeance or

adventure, or need for money. Many joined the military to escape a bad home situation.

Once in the army, all soldiers, male and female, dealt with the everyday difficulties of military life. They had to survive training, camp life, and the general risks of the battlefield. Female combatants were promoted, captured, injured, and killed in the line of duty. In addition to these general wartime experiences, female combatants lived with a constant fear that their identities would be detected. They knew the dangers of discovery and worked daily to hide their sex. They found ways to change clothes, bathe, deal with menstruation, lie about their backgrounds, and otherwise elude discovery. A fear of exposure led many female soldiers to resist medical care unless it was absolutely necessary.

Despite their desire to avoid detection, the identities of hundreds of female soldiers were uncovered during the war. This unmasking often occurred after female combatants were injured, sick, captured, or killed. In these situations, close examination and treatment by medical personnel inevitably resulted in the discovery of their sex. In addition, a few women’s sexual identities were discovered when they became pregnant or gave birth. Other women had their identities revealed during more mundane activities such as changing clothes or dealing with menstruation. Still others unwittingly gave themselves away when their feminine behavior or appearance led to suspicions and then accusations by fellow soldiers. In these instances, a lack of an Adam’s apple, an unusually high voice, or a beardless face eventually led to their inability to pass as a man.

Women whose sex was discovered in active duty were typically discharged from service and immediately sent home. After their discharge, some determined female combatants reenlisted in other units and continued to fight until they were discovered again. Discharge was not the only punishment for female soldiers. Army officials could also arrest and jail those soldiers discovered to be women—and often did so. In addition, instead of punishing female combatants

WOMEN COMBATANTS IN THE AMERICAN CIVIL WAR

A Confederate Woman Soldier

“Among the strange, heroic and self sacrificing acts of woman in this struggle for our independence, we have heard of none which exceeds the bravery displayed and hardships endured by the subject of this notice, Mrs. Amy Clarke. Mrs. Clarke volunteered with her husband as a private, fought through the battles of Shiloh, where Mr. Clarke was killed—she performing the rites of burial with her own hands. She then continued with Bragg’s army in Kentucky, fighting in the ranks as a common soldier, until she was twice wounded—once in the ankle and then in the breast, when she fell a prisoner into the hands of the Yankees. Her sex was discovered by the Federals, and she was regularly paroled as a prisoner of war, but they did not permit her to return until she had donned female apparel.”

—*Southern Confederacy* (Atlanta), January 11, 1863, p. 3.
http://www.uttyl.edu/vbetts/southern_confederacy.htm
(accessed January 22, 2006).

Woman Appointed Major

“Governor Yates has paid a rather unusual but well merited compliment to Mrs. Reynolds, wife of Lieut. Reynolds, of Co. A, 17th Illinois, and a resident of this city. Mrs. Reynolds has accompanied her husband through the greater part of the campaign through which the 17th has passed, sharing with him the dangers of a soldier’s life. She was present at the battle of Pittsburg Landing, and like a ministering angel, attended to the wants of as many of the wounded and dying soldiers as she could, thus winning the gratitude and esteem of the brave fellows by whom she was surrounded.

“Gov. Yates, hearing of her heroic and praiseworthy conduct, presented her with a commission as Major in the army, the document conferring the well-merited honor being made out with all due formality, and having attached the great seal of the State. Probably no lady in America will ever again have such a distinguished military honor conferred upon her. Mrs. Reynolds is now in this city, and leaves to join her regiment in a day or two.”

— *Dubuque Herald*, May 1, 1862, p. 2.
http://www.uttyl.edu/vbetts/women_soldiers.htm
(accessed January 22, 2006).

Female Soldiers in the Union Army of the West

“A Pennsylvania girl, who has been serving as a soldier in the Army of the West for ten months, says that she has discovered a great many females among the soldiers, one of whom is now a Lieutenant. She has assisted in burying three female soldiers at different times, whose sex was unknown to any one but herself.”

— *Peoria Morning Mail* (Illinois), May 16, 1863, p. 1.
http://www.uttyl.edu/vbetts/women_soldiers.htm
(accessed January 22, 2006).

by sending them out of the army, some officials reassigned the female combatants to perform feminine duties as regimental laundresses, cooks, and seamstresses.

After the war, some female combatants maintained their wartime identities and received pensions for their service. Most did not and instead returned to their lives as nineteenth-century women.

—*Lisa Tendrich Frank*

See also Clayton, Frances; Deavers, Brigitte; Etheridge, Anna

References and Further Reading

- Blanton, DeAnne, and Lauren M. Cook. 2002. *They Fought Like Demons: Women Soldiers in the American Civil War*. Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press.
- Leonard, Elizabeth D. 1999. *All the Daring of the Soldier: Women of the Civil War Armies*. New York: W. W. Norton.

CIVIL WAR, AMERICAN, WOMEN IN THE MEDICAL SERVICES IN THE

Nurses during the American Civil War (1861–1865). The Civil War gave women a chance to leave the domestic sphere and enter the public sphere; it provided them with paid work and built their self-confidence, and they thrived on the satisfaction and feeling of accomplishment they received. Their work also helped make nursing more acceptable as a career for women and led to the establishment of more nursing schools.

There was much hostility directed at female nurses, from family members and husbands who believed women belonged at home and from male doctors, surgeons, and officers who often resented the presence of female nurses and their frequent challenges to male authority. Many people believed it was an indecent envi-

ronment because the male patients were often undressed. Women were also thought to be too weak physically and emotionally to endure the rigors of nursing.

The term *nurse* was used much more broadly than it is now. Although some nurses did help surgeons with amputations and other operations or helped clean and dress wounds, many did little actual medical work. The majority of the time, nurses prepared and distributed food, administered medicines, washed laundry, provided comfort and company for the wounded, changed bedding, and bathed patients. They also did much of the cleaning and helped distribute supplies.

Somewhere between 2,000 and 10,000 women worked as nurses during the Civil War. Nurses in the North worked under the auspices of either Superintendent of Women Nurses Dorothea Lynde Dix (1802–1887) or the Sanitary Commission (including more than 600 nuns from twelve orders). Still others were independent volunteers, many of whom had followed husbands or other family members to the camps. Union nurses were better organized than Confederate nurses because there was no equivalent to Dix or the Sanitary Commission in the South. In fact, Confederate female nurses were not given official status until 1862. The majority of nurses, North and South, were untrained and working class. African American women comprised 10 percent of the Union's female relief workers. Some volunteered, others were paid workers, and some were runaway slaves who worked in exchange for the relative safety of Union hospitals and camps. Nurses who worked under Dix in the North were paid forty cents a day.

Nursing could be dangerous work. Nurses were often under enemy fire and exposed to life-threatening diseases. The work was also taxing both mentally and physically given the long hours, scanty rations, and unsanitary conditions. In 1892, some of the surviving nurses were compensated through the Army Nurses' Pension Act. Only nurses who had official records or some proof that they had served for more than six months were eligible to collect a

pension, however, and then only if they were not already collecting a widow's pension.

Mary Ann Ball Bickerdyke (1817–1901) was one of the most famous of the Union nurses, known particularly for her resourcefulness, dogged personality, and calico dresses. Nicknamed Mother Bickerdyke and the Cyclone in Calico, she was both a force to contend with and a favorite with wounded soldiers. She battled administrators, officers, surgeons, and anyone else to protect the rights of soldiers, and she had several incompetents dismissed. It is said that Major General William T. Sherman once claimed that she outranked even him. She was born July 19, 1817, in Knox County, Ohio. In 1847, she married Robert Bickerdyke. They had three children, but one died in infancy. She was widowed in 1859. In March 1861, the townspeople of Galesburg, Illinois (where she then resided) chose her to accompany \$500 worth of supplies they had donated to an army camp in Cairo, Illinois, where Galesburg men were stationed. When she arrived at the camp in June, the conditions she found horrified her. She immediately set to cleaning and organizing the makeshift hospital and feeding and clothing the patients. Following the Battle of Shiloh, she worked as a field agent for the Sanitary Commission. Bickerdyke was assigned to Ulysses S. Grant's army and then William T. Sherman's forces. She worked at nineteen battles, often on the front line. She was particularly talented at obtaining and distributing supplies, building hospitals, and establishing mobile laundries and kitchens. She was known to search the battlefields at night with a lantern, worried that there might be wounded left among the dead. She did not resign from the commission until the last Illinois soldier was discharged in May 1866. She then helped veterans and nurses obtain pensions and continued welfare work throughout the United States. She died November 8, 1901, in Bunker Hill, Kansas. In 1943, a hospital ship was named in her honor.

Sally Louisa Tompkins (1833–1916) was a well-known Confederate nurse and the only woman commissioned into the Confederate

Army. She was nicknamed Captain Sally, Dearest of Captains, and the Little Lady with the Milk-White Hands. She was born into wealth and privilege, November 9, 1833, in Matthews County, Virginia, to Colonel Christopher Tompkins and Maria Patterson Tompkins. After the death of her father, she moved to Richmond. She never married. Following the first Battle of Bull Run, the Confederate government asked for help caring for the wounded. Tompkins asked a friend, Judge John Robertson, if he would donate his home. He agreed, and she turned the house into a hospital, naming it after him. Robertson Hospital opened August 1, 1861. She used her inheritance to run it. What makes Tompkins particularly noteworthy is the level of care that patients received at her hospital. She was militant about cleanliness. Of the more than 1,300 wounded who were sent to Robertson Hospital, only 73 died. Her 94 percent survival rate was unparalleled in both North and South. It is even more impressive given the fact that some of the worst cases were sent to her because of her good record. She was commissioned an unassigned captain in the cavalry on September 9, 1861. Some private hospitals had been overcharging the Confederate government, so a regulation was passed that all hospitals were to be run by military personnel. Tompkins protested this, and given her excellent record, President Jefferson Davis bent the rules and made her an officer. The hospital closed in June of 1865, but she continued her charity work, including work with veterans, until her fortune had been exhausted. She died July 25, 1916, in the Confederate Women's Home in Richmond and was buried with military honors in Matthews County.

Mary Edwards Walker (1832–1919) served as both a nurse and a physician for the Union Army during the Civil War. She was the first female surgeon in the U.S. Army and the only woman in the Civil War to receive the Congressional Medal of Honor. She was born November 26, 1832, in Oswego, New York. Her father, Alvah, was an abolitionist, farmer, teacher, and doctor. He encouraged her to pursue her dreams. She became

one of the first female doctors in the United States when she graduated from Syracuse Medical College. In 1855, dressed in men's clothes (as she would be for most of her life), she married Doctor Albert Miller. The two opened a practice together in Rome, New York, that eventually closed given the reticence of most people to go to a female doctor. She and her husband began a ten-year separation in 1859, which finally culminated in divorce. She volunteered her medical expertise following the Battle of Bull Run. When her commission was turned down, she became a nurse until she was finally made an assistant surgeon to the 52nd Ohio Infantry, although without military rank. She served at the Patent Office Hospital in Washington, D.C., and as a field surgeon on the front lines. Following the Battle of Chickamauga, she was captured and imprisoned in Richmond. She remained there from April 10, 1864, until August 12, 1864. Upon her release, she continued her work as a physician. After the war, President Johnson awarded her the Congressional Medal of Honor, and she worked as a writer and lecturer on temperance, dress reform, and women's rights. In 1917, Congress rescinded her Medal, and those of more than 900 others, to make it more prestigious. She refused to return it and continued to wear the medal until her death in Oswego on February 21, 1919. In 1977, President Jimmy Carter reinstated it, and in 1982, she was honored on a postage stamp.

—Paula K. Hinton

See also Barton, Clara; Civil War, American, and Women; Dix, Dorothea; Livermore, Mary Ashton Rice; Walker, Mary Edwards

References and Further Reading

- Donahue, M. Patricia. 1985. *Nursing, the Finest Art: An Illustrated History*. Illustrations edited and compiled by Patricia A. Russac. St. Louis, MO: C. V. Mosby.
- Haerman, Keppel. 1996. *Dearest of Captains: A Biography of Sally Louisa Tompkins*. Whitestone, VA: BrandyLane.

- Maggiano, Ron. 2002. "Captain Sally Tompkins: Angel of the Confederacy." *OAH Magazine of History* 16 (2002, winter).
- Robbins, Peggy. 1979. "General Grant's Calico General." *American History Illustrated* 14 (1979) 1: 4–7, 43–48.
- Roberts, Joan I., and Thetis M. Group. 1995. *Feminism and Nursing: An Historical Perspective on Power, Status, and Political Activism in the Nursing Profession*. Westport, CT: Praeger.
- Schultz, Jane E. 1994. "Race, Gender, and Bureaucracy: Civil War Army Nurses and the Pension Bureau." *Journal of Women's History* 6 (1994) 2: 45–69.

CLAYTON, FRANCES (N.D.)

An enlisted soldier in the American Civil War, who altered her appearance and gender-specific conduct to assume a male role. The Boston Public Library possesses a startling pair of photographs showing Frances Clayton in both uniform and hoop skirts, yet, like many female soldiers of the era, the historical record yields little about her. Available sources are filled with contradictions; the National Archives states she served with Missouri Volunteers, whereas the Library of Congress lists her with a Minnesota regiment. She is said to have fought with artillery or infantry, although the photograph shows her dressed as a cavalry trooper. Additionally, she may appear as Frances Clalin or Lalin.

Frances Clayton enlisted with her husband and successfully disguised her gender. She served in the western theater under General William Starke Rosencrans, where she was wounded in combat. Her husband was marching in the front rank at Stone's River, several paces ahead of her, when he was hit and instantly killed. She continued the charge with the unit, stepping over her husband's body to keep her place in formation. Several Minnesota infantry regiments fought at Stone's River, as well as two

Missouri artillery regiments, and Clayton may have participated with any of them.

Clayton remained with her unit following her husband's death. Noted as a fine horseman, excellent swordsman, and good fighter, she carried herself in a soldierly manner and performed all the tasks of the men in the field. Whether standing guard or doing picket duty, she acquitted herself well and never raised suspicions about her true identity. She was badly wounded in the battle for Fort Donelson in February 1863 and discharged after her convalescence. Several newspapers covered her return home in 1863. She claimed to have lost her papers and valuables when she was robbed by Confederate guerrillas on the way home.

Clayton was tall and plain, and she adopted masculine social characteristics to enhance her appearance as a private soldier. She drank alcohol, used tobacco, and altered her speech patterns to include profanity as a means of concealing her sex. By altering the culturally constructed patterns of her gender, she was able to maintain her position as a man until medical necessity required a revelation. There is no available record of her life after the war.

—*Dawn Ottevaere*

See also Civil War, American, Women
Combatants during the

References and Further Reading

- Blanton, DeAnne. "Women Soldiers of the Civil War." *Prologue* 25, no. 1 (1993, spring), <http://www.archives.gov/publications/prologue/1993/spring/women-in-the-civil-war-1.html> (accessed January 30, 2005).
- Blanton, DeAnne, and Lauren M. Cook. 2002. *They Fought Like Demons: Women Soldiers in the American Civil War*. Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press.
- Hall, Richard. 1993. *Patriots in Disguise: Women Warriors of the Civil War*. New York: Paragon House.
- Library of Congress. "Women in the Union Armies," <http://memory.loc.gov/learn/features/timeline/civilwar/northwar/women.html> (accessed January 30, 2005).

Middleton, Lee. 1993. *Hearts of Fire: Soldier Women of the Civil War*. Franklin, NC: Genealogy Publishing.

Tsui, Barbara. 2003. *She Went to the Field: Women Soldiers of the Civil War*. Guilford, CT: TwoDot.

CLEOPATRA VII, QUEEN OF EGYPT (69–30 B.C.)

Egyptian queen. Queen Cleopatra VII of Egypt is a rare example of a ruling queen who raised armies and conducted wars, although she does not appear to have led her troops in person. She was the daughter of King Ptolemy XII, who when he died in 51 B.C. willed his throne to his son Ptolemy XIII (age ten) and his daughter Cleopatra (age seventeen), who then married in typical Ptolemaic fashion.

Ptolemy's advisors feared the charming, intelligent Cleopatra and soon drove her from Egypt. She responded by raising an army against her brother. The Roman dictator Julius Caesar attempted to mediate between the two, but Ptolemy refused to cooperate, and Caesar's and Cleopatra's troops together defeated and killed Ptolemy. Cleopatra was then wed to her youngest brother (Ptolemy XIV) but soon became Caesar's lover.

Cleopatra's liaison with Caesar strengthened her precarious position as the last independent ruler of the Mediterranean world. This need to protect Egypt also led her, after Caesar's death, to begin an affair with the Roman general Mark Antony, who had gained control of the eastern Roman provinces. Antony returned to Rome for a time, but his relationship with Cleopatra began afresh in 37 B.C. In 32, he went so far as to marry Cleopatra, who had borne him three children. To do so, Antony had to divorce his Roman wife Octavia, the sister of his arch-rival Octavian (the future Augustus Caesar).

Octavian naturally saw his sister's divorce as a personal insult and seized the opportunity to declare war on both Antony and Cleopatra. It was a war over who would rule the Roman world, but Octavian's skilful propaganda caused many to regard it as a struggle specifically against Cleopatra—an unnatural woman who exercised a thoroughly un-Roman dominance over Antony. The resources of Egypt made it possible for Cleopatra to provide a large squadron of ships to the struggle and also to provide the wages for much of Antony's army. She did not command troops in battle but did act unusually for the age by insisting on being with the army and fleet during the campaign.

Octavian's admiral succeeded in trapping Cleopatra's and Antony's combined fleet at Actium on the west coast of Greece. They finally attempted a desperate breakout in September of 31 B.C. Cleopatra's squadron sailed straight for the open Mediterranean, leaving Antony's contingents to fight, and Antony soon broke loose and followed her. A legend perhaps begun by Octavian himself tells that Cleopatra lost her nerve and ran, while the besotted Antony abandoned his command to follow. This story is not plausible. Because all accounts agree that Cleopatra's ships had their masts and sails aboard, her flight must have been intended from the beginning, apparently in the hope of getting the war chest to Egypt so her party could regroup and continue the fight from there. Octavian's army pursued Cleopatra and Antony to Egypt, where both soon committed suicide to avoid falling into his hands.

—Phyllis G. Jestice

See also Fulvia; Helen of Troy; Roman Women and War; Zenobia, Queen of Palmyra

References and Further Reading

- Pomeroy, Sarah B. 1984. *Women in Hellenistic Egypt: From Alexander to Cleopatra*. New York: Schocken.
- Walker, Susan, and Peter Higgs, eds. 2001. *Cleopatra of Egypt: From History to Myth*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

CND

See Campaign for Nuclear Disarmament and the Greenham Common Women

COCHRAN, JACQUELINE

(CA. 1906–1980)

Director of women's flight training, later of women pilots, for the U.S. military during World War II. Highly respected and an award-winning test pilot in her own right, Jacqueline Cochran first suggested the idea of female military pilots to Eleanor Roosevelt in 1939. For Cochran, every woman pilot serving in a training or ferrying capacity freed a male pilot for combat. Although the suggestion did not win immediate support from the U.S. government, Cochran continued to lobby for a women's pilot training program. In June 1941, she became the first woman to ferry a bomber across the North Atlantic. By late 1941, inspired by British female ferry pilots, she recruited twenty-four American women to join her in Britain's Air Ferrying Command. Returning to the United States in late 1942, Cochran was appointed director of the Women's Flying Training Detachment (WFTD), a paramilitary group. The WFTD merged with the Women's Air Ferrying Squadron (WAFS), headed by Nancy Love, in July 1943, forming the Women's Airforce Service Pilots (WASP). General Henry "Hap" Arnold appointed Cochran to the general staff of the U.S. Army Air Forces as director of the WASP.

Against great opposition, Cochran worked constantly to keep her female pilots above reproach and rumor. She personally interviewed each applicant and chose only those who would reflect well on her leadership and her program. She recruited few ethnic minority women and no African Americans because she feared controversy over race would doom her fragile pro-

gram. Even though the women were considered civilians employed by the military, Cochran insisted that her recruits undergo army military training and live under military regulations. She also secured for the WASPs their own training facilities in Sweetwater, Texas, and arranged for clothing designer Bergdorf Goodman to create WASP uniforms that fit her sense of style.

Full military status for the WASP appeared imminent by the end of the war, but support for the program remained limited. Cochran's insistence that the WASP should not be absorbed into the Women's Army Corps (WAC), and active lobbying against the program from out-of-work male pilots afraid of being sent to the front, sealed the fate of the organization. Even after the WASP were disbanded in 1944 Cochran remained dedicated to the idea of women military pilots. She also supported plans for an air force separate from the army.

Cochran received numerous awards for her contributions to the war effort, including the U.S. Distinguished Service medal in 1945, the French Legion of Honor in 1949, and the Distinguished Flying Cross with two oak leaf clusters in 1969, along with citations for civilian service and recruitment. In 1975, the Air Force Academy honored her as the first woman with a permanent display. Cochran remained supportive of the women pilots, hosting WASP reunions at her ranch until her death in 1980.

—*Rebekah Crowe*

See also United States Women's Airforce Service Pilots

References and Further References

- Cochran, Jacqueline, and Maryann Bucknum Brinley. 1987. *Jackie Cochran: An Autobiography*. New York: Bantam.
- Douglas, Deborah G. 1990. *United States Women in Aviation: 1940–1985*. Smithsonian Studies in Air and Space No. 7. Washington, DC: Smithsonian Institution.

COLENZO, HARRIETTE (1847–1932)

British evangelical humanitarian, eldest child of the famous Anglican bishop, John William Colenso, and tireless advocate of and campaigner for civil and human rights for the Zulu people in their struggle against British imperialism and colonial injustice. Harriette accompanied her family to South Africa in 1852 when her father came to establish a new diocese in Natal. She spent much of her youth and adult life on the family homestead and mission station, Bishoptowe, east of Pietermaritzburg, and became fluent in Zulu. Support for her father's and her own causes filled her life with controversy. Soon after his arrival in Natal, Bishop Colenso angered not only the local settler population by siding with the Zulu but also Church of England clergy and lay believers by questioning biblical truth, for which he was excommunicated. Harriette served as her father's secretary; because of the guidance and support she gave him, the Zulu called her *Udlwedlwe* (the staff).

In the early 1870s, she aided her father in his defense of the Hlubi chief Langelibalele; through her petitions to the imperial government, she had his banishment on Robben Island relocated to a farm in the Cape. She also helped her father with his writings, particularly his *Digest of Zulu Affairs*. During the Zulu War (1879) and its aftermath, the Colensos defended the Zulu king Cetshwayo. After her father's death in 1883 and the king's death the following year, Harriette took it upon herself to protect the new king, Dinuzulu, from attempts by British imperial authorities to break up the Zulu kingdom and reduce the king's royal powers. She believed the king held the Zulu together as a people and that the loyalty paid him by the lesser chiefs and the commoners gave them a united front to resist outsiders. In 1888, the British colonial authorities banished Dinuzulu to St. Helena on trumped-up charges. Harriette spent the next ten years traveling between Natal, St. Helena, and London, writing, speaking, petitioning, and meeting with British officials to gain his release

and to protest imperial exploitation of Zulu lands and people. She also wrote withering public critiques of the arch-imperialist Cecil Rhodes and his South African Company. Through her efforts, Dinuzulu was allowed to return to the Cape in 1898. After Bambatha's Rebellion in 1906, the king was arrested again on spurious charges, and Harriette again took up his defense, only to see him sentenced to prison where he died in 1913.

The Church Properties Act of 1910 forced Harriette and her family off of Bishoptowe. She and her sister Agnes lived the remainder of their lives near Pietermaritzburg and carried on missionary work until they died in relative obscurity in 1932.

—Roger B. Beck

See also First, Heloise Ruth; Hobhouse, Emily; Mandela, Winnie; Mau Mau Rebellion, Women in the; Nongqawuse

References and Further Reading

Guy, Jeff. 1979. *The Destruction of the Zulu Kingdom. The Civil War in Zululand, 1879–1884*. London: Longman.

———. 1983. *The Heretic. A Study of the Life of J. W. Colenso*. Johannesburg, South Africa: Ravan Press.

———. 2002. *View across the River. Harriette Colenso and the Zulu Struggle against Imperialism*. Charlottesville: University of Virginia.

Marks, Shula. 1963. "Harriette Colenso and the Zulus, 1874–1913." *Journal of African History* 4, no. 3: 403–11.

Rees, W., ed. 1958. *Colenso Letters from Natal*. Pietermaritzburg, South Africa: Shuter and Shooter.

COLOMBIA, WOMEN AND
POLITICAL VIOLENCE IN

Impact on women of the lengthy political violence in Colombia. Corruption, social inequal-

ity, class antagonism, U.S. Cold War policies, and drug trafficking are the sources of the political violence that has haunted Colombia since the 1940s. The continued civil war has led to hundreds of thousands of dead and displaced.

Colombia's civil war can be traced back to what is commonly referred to as *La Violencia* (the violence). *La Violencia* emerged in part due to an election that took place in 1945 ensuring conservative rule; however, midyear elections gave liberals a majority in the Colombian Congress. In 1947, workers' strikes led to political violence and economic sabotage. When liberal populist leader Jorge Eliécer Gaitán led a popular movement in Bogotá demanding that the president restore order, he was targeted for death. Two months later, Gaitán was assassinated, thus ushering in *La Violencia*. Liberal supporters formed guerrilla groups to engage in armed conflict. Under siege, ruling elites, while trying to maintain the status quo in the urban centers and in the countryside, destroyed the urban populist movement. In the countryside, Communists formed peasant self-defense groups. That, in turn, led to the establishment of paramilitaries funded by landowners and conservatives. With the emergence of guerrilla groups that closely identified with the left, the anti-Marxist liberals joined the conservatives to share power under the National Front in 1958, thus ensuring a complete monopoly of power by elites.

From *La Violencia* one of the first and most successful guerrilla movements emerged, the Revolutionary Armed Forces of Colombia (Fuerzas Armadas Revolucionarias de Colombia, FARC) formed by Manuel Marulanda and Jacobo Arenas. FARC has direct ties to the peasant land movements and Communist insurgency of the 1940s. With the formation of the National Front, FARC was joined by other organizations that took up arms against the political repression of the National Front. The National Liberation Army, the ELN (Ejército de Liberación Nacional), was organized in the mid-1960s by Fabio Vazquez and Colombian

Priest Camilo Torres. Both groups, FARC and ELN, embraced Che Guevara's method of insurrectionary armed enclaves. In the mid-1970s, the FARC, ELN, and other groups were joined by the April 19 Movement (M-19), which emerged as a result of the political corruption that took place during the 1970 presidential election. In that election, the National Popular Alliance (Alianza Nacional Popular, ANAPO) candidate, Gustavo Rojas Pinilla, a populist, was defrauded.

Because of the continued social unrest, women have played roles in all sides of the conflict. In M-19, young women could identify with Rojas Pinilla's daughter María Eugenia Rojas de Moreno. Rojas de Moreno took over ANAPO upon the death of her father in 1975. Although she has attempted to disassociate herself and ANAPO from M-19, the two remained tied. One of the founders of M-19 was an ANAPO senator, Carlos Toledo Plata. In the ELN, Catholic women also came to the revolution through a linkage between a religiously motivated desire for social justice and the social revolutionary movement. A number of ELN leaders and activists have been priests. In an interview with Colombian journalist Patricia Lara Saliver, an ELN member whose nom de guerre was Doña Margarita, the revolutionary explained that she was introduced to the ELN by a priest who had created a youth club that introduced young people to revolutionary ideas. When he was arrested, she received a one-word message from him: "ENLIST" (Lara Saliver 2000).

As women became combatants, certain rules were established by the guerrilla groups. FARC leaders have attempted to address the issues of gender. Like their counterparts in other parts of Latin America, they asserted on one hand that "guerrillas are like angels, they have not gender"; on the other hand, the FARC confronted sexism and family issues. The FARC commanders, male and female, insisted that women take birth control pills to ensure they would not become pregnant. To the FARC, the struggle was no place for children. FARC women who had children, how-



Paula Rodriguez, a member of the Fuerzas Armadas Revolucionarias de Colombia (FARC), checks a taxi near San Vicente del Caguan Airport, 1999. (Tore Bergsaker/Sygma/Corbis)

ever, whether before or after they join the struggle, had to find care for them. Olga Lucía Marín, a FARC commander, had a child with her FARC *compañero* (companion). She spent a year with the baby but then returned to the struggle. Like other female combatants, Marín argued that the struggle was to make a better world not only for her child, but also for all children (Lara Saliver 2000, 114).

By 2000, women accounted for one-third of FARC combatants. They joined the guerrillas for many reasons, but many reported that joining the guerrillas was their only option in a country whose economy and society is plagued by continued violence. Because of Colombia's tradition of a division of labor by gender, FARC commanders had to train men to accept the women as their equals. FARC issued specific guidelines calling for an end to discrimination against women (see www.farcep.org).

The ongoing civil war and the intervention of the United States in its War on Drugs have ensured that all Colombian women have experienced violence. Civilian men, women, and children are caught between the guerrillas, the military, the paramilitaries, and the drug traffickers. Many women have lost family members or have been displaced by the violence. Even those from wealthy and politically connected families are not immune to violence. As a senator and during her presidential campaign in 2002, Ingrid Betancourt challenged the status quo arguing that there must be reform at all levels of the Colombian government. While running for president, she was allegedly kidnapped in 2002 by the FARC and remains in captivity.

—*Elaine Carey*

See also Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements in

References and Further Reading

- Betancourt, Ingrid. 2002. *Until Death Do Us Part: My Struggle to Reclaim Colombia*. New York: HarperCollins.
- Dudley, Steven. 2004. *Walking Ghosts: Murder and Guerrilla Politics in Colombia*. New York: Routledge.
- FARC-EP Web site: www.farcep.org (accessed August 20, 2004).
- Lara Saliver, Patricia. 2000. *Las mujeres en la guerra*. Bogotá: Editorial Plantea.

CONQUEST, JOAN, PSEUD.
(MARY ELIZA LOUISE GRIPPER
MARTIN-NICHOLSON)
(1876–1941)

British novelist and nurse who volunteered with the British Red Cross in World War I. She served in Belgium, Russia, and France until she fell ill in 1916 and returned to Britain. She received the 1914 Star for her work.

Conquest arrived in Brussels, Belgium, with a contingent of nurses on August 20, 1914, the same day as German occupying troops. Cut off from British mail and news, she was separated from her fellow nurses and sent to a military hospital where, because of her fluent German, she was given charge over the German wounded. On October 6, 1914, the Germans sent all British nurses in Brussels back to England via Denmark. In Copenhagen, Conquest and three other nurses, including Violetta Thurstan, decided to offer their services to the Russian Red Cross rather than return to England.

After working briefly at a hospital in Petrograd, Russia, Conquest was assigned to the No. 1 Red Cross Military Hospital in Warsaw, Poland, which she found crowded and disorganized despite the steadfastness of the women doctors. Conquest returned to England for a brief period before she was reposted to a typhoid hospital in France, where she served until 1916.

—*Barbara Penny Kanner*

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I; Thurstan, Violetta

References and Further Reading

- Conquest, Joan. 1937. *Strange Beds: Life Story of Love, Thrills and Adventure*. London: Jarrolds.
- Kanner, Barbara Penny. 1997. *Women in Context*. New York: G. K. Hall.
- Martin-Nicholson, Mary. 1916. *My Experiences on Three Fronts*. London, George Allen and Unwin.

CONSCIENTIOUS OBJECTORS
IN THE UNITED STATES
DURING WORLD WAR II,
WOMEN AND

American women whose husbands were conscientious objectors during World War II. During World War II a number of men and women iden-

tified themselves as conscientious objectors opposing the war due to both religious and non-religious reasons. During the war there were 100,000 men who claimed conscientious objector status. The U.S. conscription law of 1940 exempted persons who could not participate in war because of their religious beliefs from combatant duties. The Selective Training and Service Act of 1940 created the Civilian Public Service (CPS), which offered a noncombatant work for conscientious objectors during the war. Conscientious objectors also worked in health care agencies, mental hospitals, and other civilian facilities. For those who did not object to taking noncombatant duties in the military forces—around 25,000 people—positions were found in military units. Some women followed their husbands or fiancés to the CPS camps. The men's status as conscientious objectors affected the lives of these women. Some women also opposed the war, so they supported their loved ones' decision. Many wives of the conscientious objectors who had decided not to follow their husbands maintained their relationships through letters. Some wives of the conscientious objectors brought their children with them to live near the CPS camps. These women had to find jobs in the communities around the CPS camps or ask for financial aid from their relatives and friends. Sometimes their husbands could find them jobs in their CPS camps. Between 1943 and 1946, a few hundred college women who were peace activists joined male conscientious objectors working in state psychiatric institutions.

The National Service Board for Religious Objectors (NSBRO) ran the CPS camps. The conscientious objector was assigned an eighteen-month tour of service, which was regarded as equal to the time a man was required to serve in the armed forces. The conscientious objectors who were assigned to the CPS camps worked without pay. About 12,000 men accepted CPS assignments. Between 1943 and 1945, the U.S. government also opened camps which were independent from the NSBRO, which was religious in its orientation.

In 1942, Congress passed the Servicemen's Dependents Allowance Act, which allowed the wives of those conscientious objectors who worked in CPS camps to receive a family allowance and obstetric care. Financial hardship pushed some conscientious objectors' wives to ask their husbands for a reclassification from CPS to noncombatant or even combatant status. The change of status could help them qualify for additional government benefits. The financial difficulty also caused some conscientious objectors' wives to divorce their husbands because of the lack of financial support.

Some female pacifists wanted to share the experience with the male conscientious objectors. These women chose to work in some peace-oriented church groups and could be assigned to CPS camps. They often studied at liberal arts colleges that were affiliated with the peace churches. They were recruited to the CPS program and worked side by side with the conscientious objectors. Before 1943, CPS openings for women were limited to dietitians, nurses, matrons, or secretaries. By 1943, more college women who identified themselves as conscientious objectors wanted to work in CPS sites; therefore, they pressed for more openings.

In 1944, three peace churches including the Mennonites, Brethren, and Society of Friends, raised funds to help the dependents of conscientious objectors as long as they demonstrated that they needed financial support. NSBRO also offered assistance to the wives of the conscientious objectors. Some branches of the Women's International League for Peace and Freedom also joined NSBRO to provide aid to the wives of the conscientious objectors.

After the end of the war, the U.S. government did not demobilize conscientious objectors at CPS camps immediately. The process of demobilization lasted until 1947.

—*Edy M. Parsons*

See also Balch, Emily Green; International Congress of Women: Antiwar Protest of Women in World War I; International Manifesto of Women

References and Further Reading

- Anderson, Richard C. 1994. *Peace Was in Their Hearts: Conscientious Objectors in World War II*. Watsonville, CA: Correlan.
- Eller, Cynthia. 1991. *Conscientious Objectors and the Second World War: Moral and Religious Arguments in Support of Pacifism*. New York: Praeger.
- Goossen, Rachel Waltner. 1997. *Against the Good War: Conscientious Objection and Gender on the American Home Front, 1941–1947*. Chapel Hill: The University of North Carolina.

CORBIN, MARGARET
COCHRANE (1751–1800)

The first woman awarded a pension by Congress for her service in the Revolution. Born in Franklin County, Pennsylvania, Margaret and her brother were raised by an uncle after Indians killed her father, Robert Cochrane, and took their mother captive. Margaret married Virginian John Corbin about 1772.

John Corbin enlisted in 1776 in Thomas Porter's First Company of Pennsylvania Artillery. Margaret accompanied him, probably serving as a regimental woman, who received half-rations in exchange for cooking, washing, or hauling water to the gun crews. On November 16, 1776, Porter's Company took part in the unsuccessful defense of Fort Washington again a much larger Hessian army. John Corbin was killed and Margaret took his place on the gun. Margaret Corbin was among the 2,818 Americans taken prisoner. Badly wounded by grape shot that mangled her left side and completely disabled her arm, Corbin's survival as a prisoner of war is surprising.

The Pennsylvania Supreme Council awarded her \$30 relief on June 29, 1779, and recommended action to the Congressional Board of

War because her ration allowance was inadequate. Congress voted her a half-pay pension on July 6, 1779. Corbin also was immediately assigned to the Corps of Invalids, created in 1777, to put to garrison work at West Point soldiers too injured for combat. In 1780, the Board of War increased her annual compensation to include a suit of clothes. In 1782, she married another invalid soldier (name unknown) and successfully had her pension increased to full rations including an allowance for spirits. Corbin received a regular discharge from the Invalid Corps in April 1783.

After discharge, "Captain Molly" remained in the West Point area until at least 1789. She was cared for in a private home while receiving supplies from the fort commissary. Although legend says she died in Pennsylvania in 1800, the grave authenticated as Corbin's was in Highland Falls, New York. In 1926, her remains were moved to West Point where a monument marks her grave.

—Joan R. Gundersen

See also American Revolution, Role of Women in the; Molly Pitcher; Samson, Deborah

References and Further Reading

- Hall, Edward H. 1943. *Margaret Corbin: Heroine of the Battle of Fort Washington, November 16, 1776*. New York: American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society.
- Parker, Amella C. 1926. "Revolutionary Heroine Interred in West Point Cemetery." *Daughters of the American Revolution Magazine* (June): 347–352.
- Teipe, Emily J. "Will the Real Molly Pitcher Please Stand Up?" *Prologue* XXXI (1999): 118–126.
- Ward, Harry. 1999. *The War for Independence and the Transformation of American Society*. London: UCL Press.
- Wensyl, James W. 1981. "Captain Molly." *Army* 31 (November): 48–53.

CORMEAU, YVONNE
(1909–1988)

British special agent during World War II. Yvonne Cormeau was one of the first female radio operators assigned by the British Special Operatives Executive (SOE), Section F, to work with the French Resistance movement. Using the code names Annette, Fairy, and Sarafan, she began work near Bordeaux but then operated with the Armagnac Battalion, a large group of fighters, under the command of the French Colonel Parisot. As the battalion moved throughout the southwest region of France before the liberation of Paris, Cormeau was wounded.

Cormeau was born Beatrice Yvonne Biesterfeld in Shanghai in 1909 to British parents. Her father was a consular official and moved his family to France, Belgium, and Switzerland. She had married, given birth to a daughter, and was leading a quiet life in London when the war broke out. Her husband, Charles Edouard Emile Cormeau, was killed in 1940 when their London apartment was destroyed in a German bombing raid. Their daughter escaped, having been sent to the country for safety. Cormeau joined the Women's Auxiliary Air Force in 1941 and began her training as a radio operator in August 1943. Cormeau served 13 months in the field and sent over 400 messages. By limiting her transmissions to only 15 to 20 minutes and a strategy of frequent relocation, Cormeau was able to avoid detection by the Germans. For her war service, she was appointed a Member of the British Empire (MBE) and was awarded the Croix de Guerre (Gold) and Medaille Combattant Volontaire de la Resistance. She died in England in 1988.

—Pamela Lee Gray

See also Atkins, Vera H.

References and Further Reading

Rossister, Margaret L. 1986. *Women in the Resistance*. New York: Praeger.

Sweets, John F. 1976. *The Politics of Resistance in France, 1940–1944*. De Kalb: Northern Illinois University Press.

CORNUM, RHONDA (1955–)

Female prisoner of war (POW) during the Gulf War of 1991. Rhonda Cornum, U.S. Army flight surgeon with the rank of major, became one of two American military women taken POW in Iraq during Operation Desert Storm of the Gulf War. Cornum had earned a Ph.D. in nutrition and biochemistry at Cornell University, joining the army in 1978 to work at the Letterman Army Institute of Research in San Francisco. In 1982, she entered the Uniformed Services University medical school in Washington, D.C., and earned her M.D. in 1986. As a wife and mother, Cornum became a focal point of national debate on the role of women in combat.

On January 12, 1991, the U.S. Congress had authorized the use of military force to drive Iraqi troops out of Kuwait following Iraq's failure to respond to United Nations Security Council Resolution 678 ordering this withdrawal. The war became the largest deployment of women to a combat theater: more than 40,000 were sent (Holm 1992, 469).

A flight surgeon for the army's 2–229th Attack Helicopter Battalion attached to the 101st Airborne division, Major Cornum was charged with the medical care of more than 300 soldiers. During attack missions, her job as the battalion flight surgeon required her to fly behind Apache attack helicopters, prepared to provide emergency medical care and rescue if the helicopters were shot down. On February 27, 2001, one day before the official cessation of hostilities, Cornum received assignment as flight surgeon aboard a Black Hawk helicopter on a search-and-rescue mission for a downed F-16 pilot. Her Black Hawk was shot down over Iraqi territory.

Five members of the eight-person crew died in the crash; the remaining, including Cornum, were taken prisoner.

Cornum had two broken arms, a bullet wound in the right shoulder, a broken, infected finger, and ligament tears in both knees. As a prisoner of war, she was interrogated, and an Iraqi guard sexually molested her. Their eyes covered as they were moved among various locations in Iraq, Cornum and fellow POWs from the helicopter crash discovered that the pilot they were charged with rescuing was also a POW. He identified himself and announced cessation of hostilities to a busload of blindfolded POWs, over the protests of their Iraqi captors. Prior to Cornum's release, an Iraqi surgeon performed an operation to align and set the bones in her arms temporarily until she could obtain definitive surgery and medical care at home.

Major Cornum was repatriated to friendly forces March 6, 2001, with other POWs. She received the Distinguished Flying Cross and Purple Heart for her actions in Operation Desert Storm.

—Lee Ann Ghajar

See also Whittle, Reba Zitella

References and Further Reading

- Cornum, Rhonda, as told to Peter Copeland. 1992. *She Went to War: The Rhonda Cornum Story*. Novato, CA: Presidio Press.
- Holm, Jeanne. 1992. *Women in the Military: An Unfinished Revolution*. Revised ed. Novato, CA: Presidio Press.

CRAIG, MAY (1889–1975)

American war correspondent. Elisabeth May Adams attended George Washington University School of Nursing and then married Donald A. Craig, head of the Washington bureau for the

New York Herald. A freak car accident changed her life. The car in which her husband was traveling, following President Warren Harding's motorcade, plunged off a cliff near Denver, Colorado, killing the driver and leaving Donald gravely injured and unable to work. Hesitantly at first, his young wife began to file political items, and gradually, May Craig became one of the leading female political correspondents in Washington. By the 1930s, she was penning a column called "Inside Washington" for the Gannett newspaper chain. During the New Deal years, fond male colleagues called her Quoddy, in reference to her advocacy of the Passamaquoddy power project in Maine. She became one of the few women accredited for President Franklin Roosevelt's press conferences.

When First Lady Eleanor Roosevelt breathed fresh life into Washington, among her innovations was holding press conferences at which only female reporters were allowed. A dismissive male press corps derided these women as "the incense burners," but Craig became one of Eleanor Roosevelt's inner circle of reporters. A suffragist, Craig had participated in a women's suffrage parade on the eve of Woodrow Wilson's inauguration in 1913. She ardently advocated women's rights, but her stance was strictly that of liberal feminism; she felt and said emphatically that equality demanded that male reporters should be allowed access to Mrs. Roosevelt's press conferences. Joseph Alsop observed that he never thought of May Craig as a woman. Instead, to him, she was a reporter.

Craig's insistence on gender fairness continued into the war years when she served on the five-woman committee to credential reporters who could attend Eleanor Roosevelt's press conferences after demand had swollen attendance. Her insistence on absolute fairness later led her to advocate successfully the barring of two longtime female veterans of the first lady's press conferences from asking questions because they had taken war jobs with the government. May Craig feared planted questions and opposed

“any hint of government propaganda” (Beasley 1987, 154). Advocating for her sex, she filed a protest in 1944 as president of the Women’s National Press Club, when female White House reporters were barred from the annual dinner of the Correspondents’ Association.

During World War II, May Craig filed stories from Europe, reporting on buzz bomb raids in London, the progress of the Normandy campaign, and the liberation of Paris. In the Cold War years, she flew in the Berlin Airlift and covered truce talks in Korea. It was a point of pride that in 1949 she was the first woman allowed on a battleship at sea. Late in her career, she noted wryly that “Bloody Mary of England once said that when she died they would find ‘Calais’ graven on her heart. When I die, there will be the word ‘facilities,’ so often has it been used to prevent me from doing what men reporters do” (Library of Congress n.d.).

In her later years, Craig enthusiastically covered the rise and career of Maine’s Margaret Chase Smith. Craig was always noted for her personal charm and attractiveness, as well as what one fellow correspondent called her “mind as sharp as cider vinegar and as retentive as a lobster trap” (Marzolf 1977, 59). She died in 1975.

—Pamela Tyler

See also Roosevelt, Eleanor

References and Further Reading

- Beasley, Maureen. 1987. *Eleanor Roosevelt and the Media: A Public Quest for Self Fulfillment*. Urbana: University of Illinois Press.
- Library of Congress. n.d. “May Craig,” Women Come to the Front: Journalists, Photographers, and Broadcasters During World War II, <http://www.loc.gov/exhibits/wcf/wcf0014.html> (accessed May 3, 2005).
- Marzolf, Marion. 1977. *Up from the Footnote: A History of Women Journalists*. New York: Hastings House.
- Ross, Ishbel. 1936. *Ladies of the Press*. New York: Harper and Bros.

CRUSADES, WOMEN AND THE

Camp followers, combatants, vivandières, leaders, and tenders of home property during the Crusades. The crusades—medieval European attempts to conquer and control Jerusalem and its surrounding territory—were the largest and longest military endeavor of the Middle Ages. Between 1096 and 1400, well over a million European men, women, and children “took the cross,” vowing to reach Jerusalem or die in the attempt. Besides the Holy Land crusades, there were holy wars against Muslim rulers of Spain, non-Christian Slavs, heretics in southern France, and, increasingly, the enemies of the papacy. Although women only bore weapons in the direst emergencies, they still played interesting roles in these conflicts because of the nature of crusading itself.

In the Middle Ages, the only women who normally accompanied troops were camp followers, but a crusade was a holy war and the reward for participation was remission of all penalties for sin. At a more mundane level, a Holy Land crusade could last for years, a long time for families to be separated. Thus, when the First Crusade was preached in November 1095, wives, daughters, and even nuns joined the cause. Pope Urban II tried to dissuade women from going without the permission of their legal guardians but recognized their right to participate. Because the crusade was a holy endeavor, attempts were made, especially on the First Crusade (1096–1099), to drive the prostitutes from camp and even to prevent sexual encounters between married couples. Still, the women played a useful role dealing with supplies, nursing the sick and injured—and of course providing sex.

The largest role played by a crusading woman was that of Eleanor of Aquitaine, queen of France and participant with her husband Louis VII in the Second Crusade (1147–1148). Eleanor went as spokesperson for the contingent of soldiers from her province of Aquitaine, who otherwise would not have been represented in military councils. Her command position was considered so outrageous that imaginative

chroniclers later decided that she and her female attendants must have dressed up as Amazons and that Eleanor must have behaved scandalously with her uncle the prince of Antioch. The truth of the matter seems to be that Eleanor disagreed with Louis on the conduct of the war (which was a miserable failure), and he exerted his husbandly rights by placing her under restraint. Arabic reports of the Third Crusade (1189–1192) also tell of female Europeans taking part in battles. These tales should not be taken at face value; the Arabic authors were eager to show how barbarous the westerners were, and to Muslims as to medieval Europeans, warrior women were the height of barbarity. The only certain cases of women participating in crusading battles are when they were in besieged cities or castles; the Albigensian crusade commander Simon de Montfort was killed by a stone shot by a woman during a siege. As always in premodern war the women of the losing side could expect rape or worse; one crusade chronicler commends the good Christian soldiers for not raping Muslim women but only killing them.

Because of the length of an average crusade, the role of women left behind was particularly important. Women controlled estates in their husbands' absence and acted diplomatically for their distant spouses. Queen Blanche of Castile even served as regent of France while her son Louis IX was off on the first of his two crusades and had to raise his ransom when he was captured.

—Phyllis G. Jestice

See also Blanche of Castile; Eleanor of Aquitaine

References and Further Reading

- Fulcher of Chartres. 1969. *A History of the Expedition to Jerusalem, 1095–1127*. Translated by Frances Ryan. Knoxville: University of Tennessee Press.
- Nicholson, Helen. 1997. "Women on the Third Crusade." *Journal of Medieval History* 23: 335–349.
- Owen, D. D. R. 1993. *Eleanor of Aquitaine: Queen and Legend*. Oxford, England: Blackwell.

CUBAN REVOLUTION, WOMEN IN THE

Part played by women in the Cuban Revolution. The role and position of women in Cuba has changed drastically for the better as a direct result of their participation in the Revolution in 1959. Earlier suffragist and feminist activity prepared women to organize and provide crucial support for the rebel forces throughout nearly a decade of insurrection. When Fidel Castro and Che Guevara returned from exile in what would be the beginning of their charge to victory, a surprising number of women joined the guerrilla troops in the Sierra Maestra. The persuasive powers of a few key women convinced Castro and Guevara that women could serve the revolution by bearing arms in addition to attending to the more domestic tasks of war. Although the ideological platform of the revolution already included the goal of eliminating racial, economic, and gender discrimination, the heroic efforts of the Mariana Grajales Brigade and women involved in espionage and grassroots organizing underscored the legitimacy of gender equality. During and since the revolution, fighting women such as Celia Sánchez and Haydée Santamaría have been all but canonized, and Cuba's leading actresses have positively portrayed guerrilla fighters in films such as *Manuela*. To the present, women have continued to serve in the police and the military both at home and in revolutionary efforts abroad, especially in Central America and Africa. Nevertheless, despite their historical and ongoing contributions to the success of the revolution, no women have been promoted to the highest government or military positions.

Over the course of history, Cuban women have faced the rigidly dividing and codifying gender and sex roles in Hispanic society. In the years between independence (1898) and the revolution, feminist groups and activists made many strides in the battle for equality, but for the most part, woman's place was still assumed

to be in the home. The most accepted symbol for a strong woman was still that of the self-sacrificing mother, like the historical icon Mariana Grajales, who heroically surrendered her sons to die fighting for Cuban independence (Smith and Padula 1996, 11). The Club Femenino, founded in 1917, organized Cuba's first National Women's Congress in 1923, where women with higher socioeconomic status debated a wide range of topics including employment, sexuality, and the vote. In the late twenties and early thirties, women attended the university in Havana, became involved in labor unions, and joined the Communist Party. In the 1940s, Fulgencio Batista sponsored a new constitution that instituted some political changes favorable to women. Feminist initiatives seemed to have reached a plateau by the early fifties, however, and Batista's 1952 military coup brought a more conservative agenda, the tightening of controls, and a ubiquitous military presence.

When Fidel Castro began to challenge Batista's administration, women from the middle and upper classes utilized their skills in organizing, writing, and networking to support his efforts. They were joined by women from all stations, who, according to Margaret Randall, made the difference in Fidel Castro's revolutionary drive. She asserts that thousands were "selling war bonds and producing rebel uniforms, taking part in propaganda work, participating in action and sabotage units in the cities, transporting arms, and fighting in the mountains" (Randall 1981, 22). Female support for Fidel Castro's July 26 Movement was originally culled from the Women's Martí Civic Front, headed by feminist activist Carmen Castro Porta. The Revolutionary Women's Union (UFR), organized in 1959 by communist activists Elena Gil, Clementina Serra, and Rosario Fernández, began an extensive campaign of door-to-door recruitment and fundraising (Smith and Padula 1996, 34).

According to Che Guevara, women would constitute a necessary part of the revolutionary



*Women Cuban rebel soldiers wave on arrival in Havana, Cuba, 1959.
(Lester Cole/Corbis)*

corps. He writes that women are capable of doing virtually every task that a man can do, including bearing arms and firing upon the enemy if need be, and that due to perceptions of female fragility, women could serve especially well in espionage and transmission of messages, supplies, and even arms. Nonetheless, the Argentine guerrilla ends his famous essay extolling the particularly "feminine" virtues that will also benefit the revolution, including women's ability to sew, cook palatable meals, and compassionately care for the wounded or despairing soldier (Guevara 1972, 131–33). In this way the Cuban women were thrust into a double duty role that resembles the contradictory and difficult expectations of women in any modern and developed nation.

As point of fact, it was Celia Sánchez and Melba Hernández who ultimately changed Fidel Castro's opinion about allowing women into the offensive ranks of the guerrillas, and later the national military (Smith and Padula 1996, 24). Sánchez and Hernández took part in Fidel's

abortive attack on the Moncada Barracks in 1953. They kept the home fires burning during their leader's exile and then, along with numerous other women, rejoined him in the mountains on his return. Hernández formed the Mariana Grajales Brigade, the first all-women platoon, who found themselves the subjects of great adulation after the triumph of the revolution. As Guevara had envisioned, women worked and fought alongside their male comrades, guaranteeing their place in the evolving hierarchy of the revolution.

Fighting as guerrillas, women had proved their efficacy in battle, a sure influence on Cuba's current armed forces, which contains thousands of women at varying levels of command. Although women do not participate in the draft, both voluntary service and enlistment into any branch of the service are options. Women have been key in numerous campaigns, both on the island and in foreign operations in Angola, Ethiopia, and Nicaragua. Not surprisingly, the principal women who have maintained political power over the last five decades were also key players in the insurrection (Randall 1981, 22).

On a less optimistic note, studies instigated by the Federation of Cuban Women (FMC) suggest that decades after the Cuban Revolution, the original objectives in terms of gender equality have not yet been realized. The suicides of revolutionary heroines Celia Sánchez and Haydée Santamaría were a blow to the image of women's progress on the island, as are statistics on women's involvement at the highest levels of policy making and government.

—Sara E. Cooper

See also Grajales Coelho, Mariana; Hernández Rodríguez del Rey, Melba; Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements in; Sánchez Manduley, Celia; Santamaría Cuadrado, Haydée

References and Further Reading

Cortázar, Octavio, et al., director. 1975. *Con las mujeres cubanas*. Havana: ICAIC.

Guevara, Ernesto (Che). 1972. "El papel de la mujer." In *Ernesto Che Guevara: Escritos y discursos*, edited by Juan J. Soto and Pedro Alvarez Tabío, 131–133. Havana: Instituto Cubano del Libro.

Maloof, Judy, ed. and trans. 1999. *Voices of Resistance: Testimonies of Cuban and Chilean Women*. Lexington: University of Kentucky Press.

Randall, Margaret. 1981. *Women in Cuba—Twenty Years Later*. New York: Smyrna.

Solás, Humberto, director. 1968. *Lucía*. Havana: ICAIC.

———, director. 1962. *Manuela*. Havana: ICAIC.

Smith, Lois M., and Alfred Padula. 1996. *Sex and Revolution: Women in Socialist Cuba*. New York: Oxford University Press.

Stone, Elizabeth, ed. 1981. *Women and the Cuban Revolution*. New York: Pathfinder.

Tetreault, Mary Ann, ed. 1994. *Women and Revolution in Africa, Asia, and the New World*. Columbia: University of South Carolina Press.

CURIE, MARIA SKLODOWSKA
(MADAME CURIE)
(1867–1934), AND THE
LITTLE CURIES

Contribution of Madame Curie to the care of France's war-wounded during World War I. Best known for her early-twentieth-century discovery of radium and its radioactive properties, Madame Maria Curie used her knowledge to help the French in World War I with the invention of portable X-ray machines, or Little Curies.

Born Manya Sklodowska in Warsaw, Poland, Curie broke boundaries in both science and gender when in 1903 she became the first woman to receive a Nobel Prize. Although the prize was given to her in conjunction with her husband, Pierre Curie, and A. Henri Becquerel, Madame Curie was not one to ride the coattails of others.

A dedicated and creative chemist, she won her own Nobel Prize in 1911 for the discovery of radium. Curie's second award made her the first person, man or woman, to win two Nobel Prizes. Coincidentally, it was her work leading up to the discovery of radium and its practical uses, rather than her many honors, that had the biggest impact on the people of France and the history of World War I.

During the course of her research on radium and radiation in France, Curie became familiar with the work of the German physicist Wilhelm Roentgen. In 1895, Roentgen discovered a new form of radiation that created transparent images on photographic paper, or X-rays. Curie believed that X-rays held numerous possibilities for modern medicine, but more specifically, she saw their value in terms of wartime medicine.

Curie felt that X-ray technology could aid military doctors in locating bullets and shrapnel hidden in the bodies of wounded soldiers. Yet because of the relative infancy of X-ray technology in 1914, most of the available X-ray machines were still located in research laboratories rather than hospitals. Curie used her influence and power of persuasion with the scientific community to arrange for all of the available X-ray machines in French laboratories to be moved to various hospitals. By the end of the war, she had helped set up 200 permanent X-ray stations throughout France. Curie was still concerned with the well-being of the soldiers being treated on the front lines. She knew that it was not always possible to transport wounded men to a hospital before operating, so she sought to provide the field surgeons with a more feasible alternative.

In response to the particular nature of wartime medicine, Curie developed the first transportable X-ray machine. The Petite Curies (Little Curies) were ordinary cars that had been outfitted with X-ray equipment and a generator. The car's engine was used to power the generator, which in turn powered the X-ray machine. In fact, the cars and the technology behind them were so unique that at first the

French army refused to take Curie seriously. It was not until military doctors on the front lines realized the lifesaving potential of Curie's invention that military leaders agreed to use the device.

Curie through her elite connections raised enough money to purchase and equip a small fleet of twenty cars. Because of the lack of trained radiographers, Curie and her teenage daughter, Irene, accompanied the trucks to the front lines. She and Irene ran machines themselves until they were able to properly train members of the military medical corps to take over the controls. By 1916, Curie was training women to work as radiological assistants to further aid doctors in the treatment of the wounded. It is impossible to tell exactly how many lives were saved by Madame Curie's efforts, but it is safe to assume that thousands of soldiers benefited from X-rays and the Little Curies.

—Catherine D. Griffis

See also Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's Hospitals; T'Serclaes, Baroness Elizabeth de

References and Further Reading

- Curie, Eva. 2001. *Madame Curie: A Biography*. Translated from French by Vincent Sheean, edited by Da Capo Press. New York: Doubleday and Company.
- Goldsmith, Barbara. 2004. *Obsessive Genius: The Inner World of Marie Curie*. New York: W. W. Norton.

CURTIS, CATHRINE
(1918–1955)

American isolationist who fused feminism with conservatism. Cathrine Curtis was distinguished by energy, charisma, combativeness,

and a talent for organization. She was a prominent figure in the mothers' movement, a right-wing women's coalition that sought to keep the United States out of World War II, and a leader of two of its principal organizations, the National Legion of Mothers of America and the Women's National Committee to Keep the U.S. Out of War.

Born to rich parents in Albany, New York, Curtis profited as a stock speculator during her teenage years. Later, she owned a citrus farm in Arizona and acted in Hollywood movies. In 1934, a New York City radio station began to air her program, which advocated women's financial independence and legal equality. After her program was canceled because of her strident criticism of the New Deal, she founded a non-profit organization, the Women Investors Research Institute, which combined anti-New Deal economic conservatism with women's rights. By 1939, the institute numbered 300,000 women members. Curtis became a well-known foe of the Roosevelt administration on many issues. Increasingly, her pronouncements encouraged anti-Semitism and notions of vast global conspiracies involving Jews, Communists, and European nations.

Convinced that Roosevelt was leading the nation into war, she founded the Women's National Committee to Keep the U.S. Out of War in September 1939. One of the committee's most visible charter members, aviator Laura Ingalls, made promotional flights and speeches on behalf of isolationism and dropped peace pamphlets written by Curtis over the White House. Ingalls would later be convicted of acting as a Nazi agent.

Curtis cultivated allies in the Senate and House of Representatives, who invited her to address congressional committees with her views on U.S. neutrality. Although childless, she prominently employed maternal arguments in her case against war. Curtis also held that when a nation is at war, the interests of women, including concern for their children, are inevitably sacrificed to the needs of the state. She asserted that

Great Britain planned to reincorporate the United States into its empire under cover of World War II. Germany, she claimed, posed no threat. In April 1941, Curtis wrote and circulated an antiwar Mothers' Day petition, which stated that war resulted from the exclusion of women in political decision making. She was usually able to attract tens of thousands of signatures from a large constituency of American women.

After Pearl Harbor the Women's National Committee to Keep the U.S. Out of War disbanded. Still, Curtis continued to denounce administration policies. Her Women Investors Institute focused on combating restrictions on the domestic economy, such as rationing and price controls. In the postwar era, Curtis attempted to remain an outspoken public figure, attacking the United Nations, the Truman Doctrine, the Marshall Plan, and the civil rights movement. Her influence declined rapidly, however, and her views appeared increasingly out of step with the times.

—Glen Jeansonne and David Luhrssen

See also Dilling, Elizabeth; National Legion of Mothers of America

References and Further Reading

Jeansonne, Glen. 1996. *Women of the Far Right*. Chicago: University of Chicago.

CUSHMAN, PAULINE
(1833–1893)

Union spy during the American Civil War. Famous for both her antebellum acting career and her role as a spy for the United States during the American Civil War, Pauline Cushman was born in New Orleans in 1833 but spent most of her childhood in Michigan. As a spy for the Union, Cushman employed her talents for both verbal and physical disguises.

PAULINE CUSHMAN, UNION SPY

“Shelbyville, June 18th.

“. . . Forrest’s forces on Friday last went in pursuit of a woman to whom suspicion had been attached. She had reached the Yankee pickets in front of Franklin when they came in sight, but on they dashed, driving in the Yankees and capturing their ‘booty.’ She proved to be a Miss Cushman, a theatre actress, claiming relationship with the celebrated Charlotte, and had upon her person plans and drawings of our fortifications, and the disposition made of the latter. It is said that she was a crinoline scout for McClellan in Virginia, and performed valuable services. Her fine talents are, doubtless, occupied at present time in planning an escape from Columbia, where she is under guard. . . .”

—*Savannah Republican*, June 22, 1863, p. 2.
http://www.uttyl.edu/vbetts/women_soldiers.htm
(accessed January 22, 2006).

“It is stated that Major Pauline Cushman called on President Lincoln a few days ago, in proper female attire, and preferred her claim for five months of back pay which had been refused her in the West after being wounded and her sex discovered. The President wrote a note to the Paymaster-General, saying that as she had received her pay the greater part of the time, he could see no reason why she was not entitled to the remainder, and therefore directed the payment of the balance.”

—*Nashville Dispatch*, September 29, 1864, p. 1.
http://www.uttyl.edu/vbetts/women_soldiers.htm
(accessed January 22, 2006).

Cushman’s espionage career began in Louisville, Kentucky, in 1863. During a performance at Wood’s Theater, a group of Confederate officers dared Cushman to offer a toast in Jefferson Davis’s honor. Cushman took this challenge and an unusual idea to the city’s Union provost marshal, Colonel Moore, suggesting that she offer the proposed toast and convince Confederates in Louisville that she supported their cause. Doing so, Cushman continued, would allow her to carry out activities on behalf of the Union without discovery. The provost marshal agreed, providing Cushman would take an oath of loyalty to the United States. She took the oath. At her performance the next evening, Cushman offered praise of Davis and the Confederacy to her shocked audience. The Northern theater company expelled her and sent her to Nashville. Once in occupied

Nashville, Cushman reported to the Union’s chief of army police to get her instructions.

In Nashville Cushman cultivated her reputation as an ardent secessionist and Confederate. This image allowed her inside access to valuable details about Confederate fortifications and operations. As part of her intelligence operations, Cushman also made lists of people who harbored what she considered dangerous anti-Union sentiments. She passed this list, as well as the names of local Confederate spies, on to Union officials. In addition, she served as a federal courier, moving information through Kentucky, Tennessee, Georgia, Alabama, and Mississippi. Cushman successfully passed through enemy lines, using her acting skills, disguises, and the enemy’s assumption that she supported the Confederacy. The Union army valued Cushman’s assistance and awarded her an honorary military commission.

CUSHMAN, PAULINE



Pauline Cushman. (National Archives)

Cushman's activities on behalf of the Union did not go unnoticed. Late in the spring of 1863, Confederate General John Hunt Morgan arrested Cushman on suspicion of espionage. After questioning Cushman, General Nathan Bedford Forrest gave her a death sentence. The hanging was not carried out, perhaps because it was interrupted by the sudden arrival of Union troops. The publicity surrounding Cushman's arrest by Morgan, however, brought her espionage activities to a halt.

After the Civil War Cushman went on a speaking tour. In addition, a biography celebrating Cushman's role on behalf of the United States was published in 1865. Pauline Cushman died on December 2, 1893, from an overdose of morphine. Local Civil War veterans gave her a full military burial.

—*Lisa Tendrich Frank*

See also Baker, E. H.; *Civil War, American, and Women*

References and Further Reading

Leonard, Elizabeth D. 1999. *All the Daring of the Soldier: Women of the Civil War Armies*. New York: W. W. Norton.

Sarmiento, F. L. 1865. *Life of Pauline Cushman*. Philadelphia: John E. Potter.

D

DAHOMY, WOMEN WARRIORS

Female warriors of the Kingdom of Dahomey in West Africa. Enemies of Dahomey described its women warriors as frenzied cannibals, Europeans called them Amazons, and the people of Dahomey knew them as *ahosi*, or wives of the king, or *mino*, “our mothers.” Initially these women of the palace served as the king’s guard. They fought for the kingdom as early as the beginning of the eighteenth century and, under the rule of Gezo (1818–1858), they became full-fledged warriors. By the mid-nineteenth century, their numbers averaged from 4,000 to 5,000, although some estimates went higher (Law 1993, 251). Gezo’s reign was characterized by constant warfare and slave trading, and his fear of a coup d’etat made him rely on women as his personal and political protectors.

The women warriors of Dahomey were exalted in Fon (Dahomey’s dominant ethnic group) society. Fon society allowed for this development because, although it was certainly male dominated, there were some arenas that allowed women a surprising amount of power. In all aspects of the national government and military, there were parallel positions for men and women, such as the king to the queen mother.

Both Fon and non-Fon women served in the military. In Dahomey, fathers brought their daughters to the palace, and only the tallest and strongest were selected. The bulk of the ranks entered Dahomey’s military either as slaves or prisoners of war. These women were not ethnically Fon, but their status as foreigners in the palace and lack of kin in the area facilitated their complete allegiance to the king, making them well-suited for their positions. All the Amazons lived in the king’s palace where men could not reside.

Visitors to the kingdom, especially Victorian Europeans, found the arrangement of the palace and the status of its female guards fascinating, and they recorded their impressions of the king and the women of the palace. Europeans were intrigued by the celibacy that most of these women practiced. As *ahosi*, they were permitted to have sex with no one but the king (although very few actually did), and adultery carried the death penalty. The threat of capital punishment did not deter all lovers, and when discovered, both the woman and her paramour would be executed. Contrary to popular mythology, there is evidence of neither clitoridectomy nor cannibalism, and reports of widespread lesbianism were created by the imaginations of European visitors to the kingdom. The women were supposed to

DAHOMY, WOMEN WARRIORS



An engraving entitled Armed Women with the King at Their Head by Francis Chesam (1749–1806). Published in The History of Dahomey by Archibald Dalzel in 1793. (Historical Picture Archive/Corbis)

channel the energy of their libidos into energy on the battlefield.

By all accounts, the female warriors were fierce no matter who the adversary or with what they fought. Firearms replaced less efficient bows and poisoned arrows. The women were usually outfitted with muskets that they fired from their shoulders. They also carried rope to tie up prisoners, along with gunpowder, cartridges, and short swords. Some carried razors from 18 inches to 3 feet in length that snapped into covers; they used these to take body parts as trophies.

The Amazons fought to subdue the enemy, to take prisoners, and to protect the king. Initially,

the king was surrounded by his royal female guard in the front and at the center of the army, and the women and king were buttressed by male soldiers. After King Agaja was injured, however, the kings continued to go on campaigns, but they stayed to the rear of the action, still surrounded by Amazons. These women were the elite of the elite. Other women warriors and their male counterparts wended their way silently through forests and high grasses to participate in the surprise attacks favored by Dahomey. Women warriors did not fight in units with men but had their own corresponding units and fought in the same battles; women's units were commanded by women.

The dress of the Amazons did not easily distinguish them as women. Even in the palace and on military parade, they wore sleeveless, kilt-length tunics and shorts. In the palace, their uniforms were blue and white striped, and on campaign they wore brown. Each unit sported its own hairstyle. Contrary to popular belief, they left both breasts intact.

The women underwent intense physical training accompanied by education in their traditions, use of weapons, gymnastics, and all they needed to know to be outstanding warriors. Because of their training and positions in Dahomey, the *ahosi* had a much greater degree of autonomy than other women in the kingdom. The Amazons disdained “women’s work.” They spent some of their leisure time drinking alcohol, dancing, and singing songs proclaiming that the men would stay in Dahomey planting crops while they would defeat and eviscerate their prisoners.

In 1851, Dahomey attacked the town of Abekuta after many counselors, including women of the palace, had advised the king against it. It ended in a crushing defeat for Dahomey, and nearly 2,000 women warriors, half their original number, perished. Years of warfare had weakened the kingdom and as French troops encroached, the Dahomey fought them off to the best of its ability. Considering the outdated weapons with which they fought, Dahomian forces inflicted considerable casualties but were unable to save the kingdom.

In fighting both Africans and Europeans, the Amazons raised the hackles of their adversaries because they were women. Legend says that when the men of Abekuta discovered that they fought women and that some of their ranks had been killed by the women warriors, their shame drove them to fight twice as hard to defeat the invaders. The French recounted stories that the Amazons drank themselves into drunken frenzies before battles. Some European men said that these women were hideously ugly, and others reported that they were beautiful. Commander Terrillon called them harpies, while many of his men greatly enjoyed watching defeated Ama-

zons bathe in a nearby pond, insisting that they were some of the loveliest women in the world (Markouis 1974, 253; Mercer 1964, 177).

The arrival of the French ended the once-strong kingdom of Dahomey, and the corps of women warriors disbanded. Some would marry (although some suffered from low fertility rates); many others refused to wed, declaring no desire to ever be subordinate to men. These women—who gained such respect, who were feared and revered—could not reconcile themselves to returning to a life in which, for reasons of gender, status, origin, or all of these, they could never again be part of society’s elite.

—*Jacqueline Woodfork*

See also Amazons

References and Further Reading

- Alpern, Stanley B. 1998. *Amazons of Black Sparta: The Women Warriors of Dahomey*. New York: New York University.
- Bay, Edna G. 1998. *Wives of the Leopard: Gender, Politics, and Culture in the Kingdom of Dahomey*. Charlottesville: University of Virginia.
- Law, Robin. 1993. “The ‘Amazons’ of Dahomey.” *Paideuma* 39 (1993): 245–260.
- Markouis, Thomas Constantine. 1974. *Warfare and society in the Kingdom of Dahomey: 1818–1894*. Ph.D. diss., Boston University.
- Mercer, Charles. 1964. *The Foreign Legion: The Vivid History of a Military Tradition*. London: Arthur Barker.

DALRYMPLE, MILDRED INKS
DAVIDSON (1920–)

Pilot Mildred “Millie” Inks was born in Austin, Texas, and grew up on a ranch in Llano. When she was a child, her grandfather rented a plane and took her and four other grandchildren for a flight over his ranch. Eventually four grandchildren became pilots. Later she flew with her first husband, Bill Davidson, after he received his

pilot's license. She studied at Texas State College for Women in Denton and earned a degree in journalism at the University of Texas, Austin.

While her husband was serving with the Air Corps in World War II, Millie worked as a secretary for the adjutant general's office in Austin. After Davidson was shot down over the North Sea, Millie and a co-worker, Kay McBride D'Arezzo, whose husband was missing in action, took flying lessons to qualify for the Women Airforce Service Pilots (WASP) training program. Millie said, "After Bill was killed, I had to do something. I couldn't just stay in the Adjutant General's department typing. I wanted to get this war over with" (Weigand 2002). After she and D'Arezzo had each logged thirty-five hours of piloting, they qualified for WASP training. On November 5, 1943, they entered the program at Avenger Field, Sweetwater, Texas. At the end of a prolonged training flight, Millie and another pilot, who were late, narrowly missed being part of a collision that killed one of her classmates.

On May 23, 1944, Millie was one of the fifty-two trainees to graduate out of the ninety-four who had entered with her. Following graduation, she worked at the Eastern Training Command at Maxwell Field in Montgomery, Alabama, as a utility pilot and an engineering test pilot, whose task was to fly and test planes after they had been repaired. She said that her "commanding officer, Colonel [Robert L.] Thomas, had no bias against women and he desperately needed pilots" (Weigand 2002). In addition to testing repaired aircraft, she flew officers from Montgomery to assignments all over the eastern United States and ferried planes, including B-17 bombers, from Montgomery to other fields. In all she logged 900 hours in the cockpit.

After the WASP program was deactivated on December 20, 1944, she married Edwin Dalrymple, a colonel. He later became an FBI agent, and they lived in various parts of the country. In addition to raising their three children, Millie Dalrymple worked at an ad agency and an insurance company, served in the Texas state legislature, and was a teacher. In her

spare time she played competitive tennis and did volunteer work.

—Bernard Cook

See also United States, Military Service of Women in World War II; United States, Women Airforce Service Pilots; United States, Women's Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron; United States, Women's Flying Training Detachment

References and Further Reading

- "Dalrymple, Mildred Davidson," WASP Oral History Project. Oral History Interview, March 1, 1996. Interviewed by Dawn Letson, the Woman's Collection, Texas Woman's University, Denton, Texas.
- "Mildred Dalrymple—See and Hear," WASP Site. <http://wasp-wwii.org/wasp/seenhear.htm> (accessed February 10, 2006).
- Van Ryzin, Jeanne Claire. 2003. "For Millie Dalrymple and Other Women, Answering World War II's Call to Arms Led to the Cockpit." *Austin American-Statesman* (Texas), January 11, 2003: E1.
- Weigand, Cindy. 2002. "Yankee Doodle Gals of World War II," *Texas Co-op Power*, June 2002 issue. <http://www.texas-ec.org/publications/texascoopower/archive/602wasp.aspx> (accessed February 10, 2006).

DAMERMENT, MADELEINE (1917–1944)

Participant in the French Resistance and a member of the British secret service in World War II. Madeleine Zoe Damerment was born in Lille, France, on November 11, 1917. Her family joined the Resistance after the Germans defeated France in 1940. Damerment worked as an assistant to Michael Trotobas with the PAT escape line, a group set up by Albert Guerisse, a Belgian army doctor, to help downed Allied airmen escape to England. Andrée Borel and Nancy Wake were also members of this group. When a traitor divulged particulars about the

group in 1942, Damerment was forced to make her way to Spain. There she was temporarily detained at a camp near Bilbao. After her release, she reached England where Damerment volunteered to work for the British Special Operations Executive (SOE). After training, she and two other agents were parachuted into France near Chartres on February 28, 1944. Damerment, described as unassuming and “brave and gentle” (Women of the SOE n.d.), was to join the Bricklayer network as a courier. The agents’ plans had been betrayed to the Germans, however, who were awaiting their arrival. Arrested as she landed, Damerment was taken to Gestapo headquarters in Paris and interrogated and tortured.

On May 12, Damerment was transferred with seven other captured female agents to the Karlsruhe civil prison. On September 10, 1944, on the direct order of Ernest Kaltenbrunner, the head of the SS Security Office, she was transferred with Yolande Beekman, Noor Inayat Khan, and Eliane Plewman to Dachau. There, on September 11, 1944, the day after their arrival, they were shot.

Damerment was posthumously awarded the Legion of Honor, the Croix de Guerre, and the Médaille combattant de la Résistance. Her name is inscribed on the SOE Runnymede Memorial and on the Valençay SOE Memorial in France.

—Bernard Cook

See also Atkins, Vera H.; Beekman, Yolande; Borrel, Andrée; Khan, Noor Inayat, Plewman, Eliane; Wake, Nancy

References and Further Reading

“Madeleine Damerment,” Spartacus Web, <http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/SOEdamerment.htm> (accessed September 29, 2004).

Foot, M. R. D. 1984 [1966]. *SOE in France: An Account of the Work of the British Special Operations Executive 1940–1944*. Frederick, MD: University Publications of America.

“The FANY Agents—Madeleine Damerment,” The Women of the Special Operations Executive, http://www.64-baker-street.org/agents/agent_fany_madelaine_damerment.html (accessed September 29, 2004).

D’AQUINO, IVA IKUKO TOGURI

See “Tokyo Rose”

DARRAGH, LYDIA
(1729–1789)

American Revolutionary patriot. In the winter of 1777, the British army commanded by Lord William Howe occupied Philadelphia after fighting General George Washington’s smaller force. Howe settled his headquarters into a Second Street townhouse and became the neighbor to William and Lydia Darragh, members of the Society of Friends. Lydia Barrington Darragh was born in Dublin, Ireland, in 1729 and married William Darragh, a teacher. In 1765, the couple immigrated to Philadelphia. A year after her arrival, Darragh advertised her services making grave clothes and other burial needs. In addition to caring for her large family, she built a career as a midwife, nurse, and mortician.

When the British occupied Philadelphia, the Darraghs decided to remain in the city and sent two of their children to the country. A son, Charles, was stationed with the Continental Army at Whitemarsh, a camp about eight miles away. Life in Philadelphia meant accommodating the British officers who commandeered a room in the house for staff meetings. On December 2, an officer informed Lydia Darragh of an eight o’clock meeting at her house and demanded that her family be asleep by that time. Surprised by this request, she agreed, and the family went to their rooms. Fired with curiosity, Lydia slid into a closet and listened through the thin wall. The officers planned to dispatch a large force for Whitemarsh in two days. Understanding that surprise attack meant the Americans’ destruction, Darragh resolved to warn General Washington. Without telling her family of her purpose, she arose early the next day and applied for permission to leave the city and buy flour.

Dropping her sack at the mill, Darragh started toward the Rising Sun Tavern located north of the city. She met a passing horseman who happened to be a friend and an American officer, Lieutenant Colonel Thomas Craig. Darragh walked with Craig as she explained Howe's plan and exacted a promise of secrecy. Craig escorted Darragh to a house for food and rest before he rushed to camp with the vital intelligence. Darragh returned to the mill, picked up her flour, and walked home.

The British army marched out as intended only to meet with fully prepared soldiers. Repulsed by Washington, Howe's contingent returned to Philadelphia and Washington moved to Valley Forge. Because it was clear that their plans had been betrayed, British officers closely questioned Darragh about the meeting at her house. She replied confidently that her family was in bed and unaware of these plans.

Lydia's story survived through family history and was first published in 1827. A different account emerged when the private diary of Elias Boudinot, Washington's chief intelligence officer, appeared. According to Boudinot, a little old lady approached him with a pocketbook at the Rising Sun Tavern. Boudinot searched the pocketbook and found a rolled slip of paper with Howe's plans. It is thought that Lydia Darragh may have wanted to make sure that her information would be taken into account and made sure that it got to Boudinot. Overall, with little contemporary documentation, the popular tale remains contested by historians.

—Lisa Porter

See also American Revolution, Role of Women in the

References and Further Reading

- Claghorn, Charles. 1991. *Women Patriots of the American Revolution: A Biographical Dictionary*. Metuchen, NJ, and London: Scarecrow.
- Somerville, Mollie. 1974. *Women and the American Revolution*. n.p.: Daughters of the American Revolution.

DAWIDSON (DRAENGER), JUSTINA (1917–1943)

Anti-Nazi underground activist. Justina (Gusta) Dawidson Draenger was born in Krakow, Poland. From her teens, she was attracted to Zionism and became a leading member of the Akiba movement established in 1901 for the defense of the Jewish people. She married Shimon Draenger, a leader of Akiba and editor of a Zionist weekly. Justina and Shimon were determined to respond to the brutality of Nazis.

In 1940, the Akiba leaders, including Shimon Draenger and Aaron Libeskind, considered armed resistance to defend the Jewish community, and they amalgamated different splinter groups of the Jewish anti-Nazi movement into the Jewish Warring Organization of Pioneer Youth (JWOPY). Justina arranged fake IDs, and Akiba was able to arrange for some Jews to escape from German-controlled Poland. On December 22, 1942, in a major operation, Akiba launched a grenade attack on coffee shops where German officers frequented. The Nazi officers were killed, and military trucks were destroyed. The operatives were betrayed by collaborators, however. Shimon was arrested on January 8, 1943. Justina surrendered to the Gestapo to suffer the fate of her husband and was sent to Montelupich prison. An ordeal of inhuman treatment, beating, and torture began. Some of the leaders of Akiba were executed in the Plaszow camp, and others were sent to Auschwitz. Between February and April of 1943, Justina wrote her diary titled, *Yomana shel Justina (Justina's Diary)*, a saga of the bravery of Jewish resistance fighters. Her memoirs were written amid intense mental and physical brutality on toilet papers and hidden in the doorpost of her cell. The couple managed to escape from the prison on April 29, 1943. They resumed resistance activities, carrying out hit-and-run tactics on German targets from a bunker in Wisnicz Forest near Bochnia. Justina and her husband even went to Warsaw with forged papers to buy a typewriter. Wide contacts were established to distribute their journal, *The Warrior Pioneer*, which attempted to lift the spirit of the

Jewish people. The last issue was printed on October 1, 1943.

Because of German pursuit of the resisters in Wisnicz Forest, Justina and Shimon went to Krakow towards the end of October 1943. While attempting to escape to Hungary in November 1943, the Germans caught and executed the couple. The heroic deeds of Justina and other members of the Jewish resistance in Nazi-occupied Poland were a testimony to Jewish armed resistance against Nazi repression.

—*Patit Paban Mishra*

See also Holocaust and Jewish Women

References and Further Reading

- Dawidson, Justina. 1996. *Justyna's Narrative*. Amherst: University of Massachusetts Press.
 Latour, Anny. 1981. *The Jewish Resistance in France, 1940–1944*. New York: Schocken.

DE JONGH, ANDRÉE (DÉDÉE)
 (1916–)

Belgian Resistance leader during World War II. Andrée (Dédée) de Jongh was born in Schaerbeek, Belgium in 1916. She dropped out of high school because of her distaste for mathematics, but later trained as a nurse. Dédée was working as a commercial artist in Malmédy when Belgium was invaded in May 1940. Inspired by the activity of Edith Clavell during World War I, de Jongh volunteered to serve as a nurse for wounded soldiers. After the surrender of Belgium on May 28 she moved to Brussels. With her father, Frederic de Jongh, a headmaster, and her older sister, Micheline (Michou), she organized the so-called Comet Line to shuttle British soldiers who had evaded capture at Dunkirk and downed Allied airmen through France to Spain and back to England. She set up safe houses and provided the men with civilian clothes and false identity cards. Dédée and her father were anti-

clerical and liberal, but they were able to recruit a broad spectrum of devoted helpers, including Elvire de Greef (Tante Go), who headed the southwest sector of the Comet Line. Assisted by local guides, Dédée (Nadine) personally crossed the Pyrenees 20 times, assisting a total of 118 escapees (Rossiter 1986, 56). She marched the servicemen at night and encouraged them by her endurance. Colonel Claude Dansey of MI6 lauded her “courage, tenacity and powers of personal endurance” (Rossiter 1986, 56). It is estimated that the Comet Line assisted in returning approximately 800 Allied servicemen to Britain.

In June 1943 Frederic de Jongh was arrested at Brussel's Gare du Nord. After interrogation by the Gestapo he was executed. Andrée de Jongh was arrested in January 1944 and sent to the women's concentration camp at Ravensbrück. She survived her imprisonment and subsequently worked at a hospital for lepers in Ethiopia. Andrée, her sister, Micheline, and Elvire de Greef were awarded the George Medal by the British and received the Medal of Freedom from the United States.

—*Bernard Cook*

See also Clavell, Edith; Petit, Gabrielle; Schaft, Joanna

References and Further Reading

- Rossiter, Margaret. 1986. *Women in the Resistance*. New York: Praeger.
 Spartacus Web. “Andrée de Jongh.” <http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/FRjonghl.htm> (accessed September 30, 2004).

DE PIZAN, CHRISTINE
 (1364–CA. 1430)

Author of a late medieval military handbook. Christine de Pizan was one of the most important European writers of the late Middle Ages, notable as probably the first woman who lived by the pen. While most famous for her “feminist”

works (such as the *Book of the City of Ladies*) in which she made a spirited attack on male misogyny, Christine was also an avid French nationalist during the Hundred Years' War against England (1337–1453). She wrote two important works on medieval warfare, the *Book of Deeds of Arms and of Chivalry* (ca. 1410) and a praise poem about Joan of Arc, written in 1429 when Joan was still alive, in which Christine hails the Maid of Orléans as the savior of France.

Christine's extraordinary life was made possible because her father, a court astrologer to King Charles V of France, gave his daughter a classical education comparable to that of noble boys of her time. Her husband, the scholar Étienne du Castel, further encouraged Christine's erudite tastes. Étienne died around 1390, however, leaving Christine nearly destitute with several children to support. She decided to make a living by writing, soon attracting noble patrons and a large circle of admirers.

In her works Christine displays a deep and insightful knowledge of medieval warfare. This is especially true of the *Livre des faitz d'armes, ci de chevalerie* (*Book of Deeds of Arms and of Chivalry*), intended as a textbook for noblemen on how to wage war. It was published anonymously, because Christine believed her contemporaries would despise the work if they knew the author was a woman. This book, in the French vernacular of her time, is essentially a compilation of treatises on warfare, relying especially on the classical Roman author Vegetius. Christine was selective, however, organizing her texts into a comprehensive work on warfare and carefully explaining which practices were still in use and which were obsolete. The *Deeds of Arms* offers a level of general moral instruction—war should only be waged to defend the kingdom, not for revenge or because of grudges—but also includes much useful information on the strategy, tactics, and technology of medieval war, clearly based on information received from men with battlefield experience. One of the notable features of the treatise is that Christine provides one of the few contemporary accounts of the use of artillery in war.

The *Deeds of Arms* became popular in Christine's lifetime and continued to be so throughout the fifteenth century. By the mid-1400s it could be found in the libraries of leading French commanders. It was also one of the earliest books to be printed. A French edition appeared in 1488, and in 1489 William Caxton published an English translation made at the request of King Henry VII. Until recently modern military historians have largely ignored the work, but a 1999 translation makes it likely that the book's obscurity has reached an end.

—Phyllis G. Jestice

See also Joan of Arc

References and Further Reading

- De Pizan, Christine. 1999. *Book of Deeds of Arms and of Chivalry*. Trans. Sumner Willard; edited by Charity Willard. University Park: Pennsylvania State University Press.
- Willard, Charity. 1984. *Christine de Pizan: Her Life and Works*. New York: Persea Books.

DEAVERS, BRIDGET (B. 1839)

Union soldier in the American Civil War. Born in Ireland about 1839, Bridget Deavers immigrated to the United States about 1849 and fought with the Union army during the Civil War. Known as Michigan Bridget, she rode with the First Michigan Cavalry during 1864 and 1865 but may have joined earlier. Deavers, who also appears in historical records as Irish Biddy, Divers, Devers, or Devens, served in battle as a vivandière, never disguising her gender. Some Victorian-era accounts indicate that she followed her husband into the army, but neither federal nor state records list a man of the same name on the cavalry rosters. As a working-class immigrant, she may have had a common-law spouse, but she has not been positively linked to any male patron. Her independence and status

DELANO, JANE ARMINDA

as a female member of the unit make her somewhat unique among women who fought in the Civil War.

Deavers was about twenty-six years old during her wartime service. She was small, weathered, and ruddy. She lived with the men and slept on the ground in the field, assuming all the tasks and hardships of the soldiers. Although she performed many traditional female roles in caring for the troops, she also fought alongside the men and had several horses shot from under her. During battles, she filled the ranks when men fell and acquitted herself well under fire and on campaign. She is mentioned in the contemporary accounts of several women, including Mrs. M. M. Husband, Rebecca Usher, and Mrs. Charlotte McKay. She was often sighted at City Point Hospital in Virginia; both the nurses and military staff there held a high opinion of her capabilities as a battlefield medic.

Described by the people who knew her as fearless, brave, heroic, enthusiastic, and compassionate, her actions on campaign at Five Forks exemplify her dedication to the men of the Michigan Brigade. During battle, the colonel was wounded and a captain killed in action. Deavers assisted the colonel to the rear and accompanied him to City Point Hospital before returning to the front. When she discovered the captain had been left on the field, she rode fifteen miles, identified the body, and tied it to her horse. Traveling several more miles she found a coffin and shipped the remains back to Michigan by rail. Many soldiers had been left without care on the battlefield, so Deavers notified the command of her regiment. She was furnished with ambulances to retrieve the wounded, traveling through Confederate territory with a single orderly to retrieve the men of her unit. Deavers encouraged more nurses to travel to the battlefields, but they were reluctant to defy convention and the general orders that kept them confined to specific areas. In response, Deavers claimed that she could not be stopped as she had General Sheridan's support in her efforts.

Bridget Deavers followed her cavalry unit out west to fight Indians at the end of the Civil War.

She disappeared in 1865, although numerous accounts verify that she accompanied the unit to Texas. There is no record of her death.

—*Dawn Ottevaere*

See also Civil War, American, Women
Combatants during the

References and Further Reading

- Brockett, L. P., and Mary C. Vaughn. [1867] 1993. *Women at War*. Facsimile of the first edition. Stamford, CT: Longmeadow.
- Hall, Richard. 1993. *Patriots in Disguise: Women Warriors of the Civil War*. New York: Paragon House.
- Massey, Mary Elizabeth. 1994. *Women in the Civil War*. 1966. Reprinted with Introduction by Jean V. Berlin. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.
- Middleton, Lee. 1993. *Hearts of Fire: Soldier Women of the Civil War*. Franklin, NC: Genealogy Publishing Service.
- Moore, Frank. 1867. *Women of the War: Their Heroism and Sacrifice*. Hartford, CT: S. S. Scranton.

DELANO, JANE ARMINDA
(1862–1919)

Superintendent of the Army Nurse Corps (ANC), 1909–1912, and founding chair of the American Red Cross (ARC) Nursing Service. Jane Arminda Delano was born in Schuyler County, New York, in 1862. She taught school before attending Bellevue Hospital Training School for Nurses, where she graduated in 1886. In 1888, she went to Florida to be superintendent of nurses during a yellow fever epidemic. Next Delano went to Arizona to nurse copper miners suffering with typhoid. In 1891, she moved to Philadelphia to be superintendent of Nurses at the University of Pennsylvania Hospital School of Nursing. She then served as superintendent at New York City's House of Refuge on Randall's Island. During the Spanish-American

DETZER, DOROTHY



Jane Arminda Delano. (Library of Congress)

War, she began her long association with the ARC by joining the New York Chapter. In 1902, she became superintendent at the Bellevue Hospital.

In 1908, Delano accepted the positions of president of the American Nurses Association and chair of the Board of Directors of the *American Journal of Nursing*. In 1909, she became chair of the ARC Nursing Service and superintendent of the ANC. She served in the office of the Surgeon General from 1909 to 1912, and her efforts kept the ANC viable. From 1912 on, she concentrated strictly on ARC work. Delano deserves much of the credit for the recruiting of more than 21,000 army nurses who served in World War I.

After the armistice, Delano went to France on an inspection tour and became ill with an ear infection. She died April 15, 1919, and was buried in Savenay, France. She was posthumously awarded the Distinguished Service Medal, and in 1920, her body was exhumed and moved to Arlington National Cemetery.

—Katherine Burger Johnson

See also Nurses, United States Army Nurse Corps in World War I; Stimson, Julia Catherine

References and Further Reading

Jane A. Delano: A Biography. 1950. Washington, DC: American National Red Cross.

DETZER, DOROTHY
(1893–1981)

Peace lobbyist. Radicalized by her war relief work with the American Friends Service Committee in Vienna and Russia after World War I, Dorothy Detzer became a committed pacifist and launched a twenty-year career as the National Executive Secretary of the U.S. Section of the Women's International League for Peace and Freedom (WILPF), where she lobbied for disarmament and economic justice.

Born in 1893, Detzer spent her youth in Fort Wayne, Indiana. After graduating from high school, she traveled to the Far East rather than attend college. She returned to the United States and pursued social work at Jane Addam's settlement house (Hull House) in Chicago. After World War I, she joined the American Friends Service Committee and traveled to Vienna and Russia to provide hunger relief. The starvation and economic devastation she witnessed, combined with the tragic death of her twin brother, who died from mustard gas poisoning, led her to pursue peace work.

DEVLIN, BERNADETTE

In 1924, despite her youth and limited experience, she was hired as the executive secretary of the U.S. section of WILPF to direct the organization's lobbying campaign to promote peace through disarmament legislation and economic justice. She became a quick study on foreign policy and the political process, and she used her connections with grassroots organizations to pressure legislators and the executive branch to promote U.S. neutrality, disarmament, and Good Neighbor policies.

As a lobbyist, she influenced numerous legislative investigations, including the munitions inquiry launched by Senator Gerald P. Nye to investigate allegations that U.S. bankers and arms manufacturers instigated World War I for profit. The investigation and resulting conclusions of the Nye Commission reinforced U.S. neutrality while Europe slid toward war. Detzer also played a key role in promoting anticolonial foreign relations with Africa and Central America, including the withdrawal of U.S. forces from Nicaragua. She believed that disarmament and self-determination could guarantee peace, and she strongly supported the League of Nations and formation of the World Court.

Peace organizations asserted tremendous power during the interwar years, both separately and together. WILPF relied on coalition building to promote peace through cooperation and collaboration with other groups such as the National Council for the Prevention of War, National Committee on the Cause and Cure of War, National Association for the Advancement of Colored People, National Peace Conference, League of Nations Association, and Emergency Peace Campaign. Together these organizations had a significant impact on U.S. foreign policy during the interwar years.

In 1944, Detzer retired from WILPF and subsequently wrote her memoir, *Appointment on the Hill*. She married Ludwell Denny and worked as a freelance foreign correspondent for several years before retiring in Monterey, California. She died in 1981.

—Danelle Moon

See also Addams, Jane; Olmstead, Mildred Scott

References and Further Reading

- Foster, Carrie A. 1995. *The Women and the Warriors: The U.S. Section of the Women's International League for Peace and Freedom*. New York: Syracuse University Press.
- Jeffreys-Jones, Rhodri. 1995. *Changing Differences: Women and the Shaping of American Foreign Policy, 1917–1994*. Piscataway, NJ: Rutgers University Press.

DEUELL, HENRIETTA ELEANOR
GOODNOUGH

See Hull, Peggy

DEVLIN, BERNADETTE
(1947–)

Irish civil rights activist and opponent of the British presence in Northern Ireland. Bernadette Devlin (MacAliskey) was born in Cookstown, County Tyrone, Northern Ireland. As a student at Queen's University in Belfast, she took part in the marches of the Northern Civil Rights Association in 1968 and 1969. In August 1969, Devlin was arrested when Catholics erected barricades in Derry to protect their neighborhood. She was convicted of incitement to riot and sentenced to six months in prison. She was a founder of People's Democracy and, as one of the party's candidates, was elected to the Parliament of the United Kingdom in 1969; she served as a member of Parliament until 1974. She was to be one of the speakers at the antiinternment rally in Derry on January 30, 1972, which was attacked by the British 1st Parachute Regiment at the cost of thirteen dead protestors. At Westminster, when

the British home secretary, Reginald Mauding, claimed that the soldiers had fired in self-defense, she called him a liar and hit him. In 1975, she was a founder of the Irish Republican Socialist party. In 1980–1981 she served H-Block Committee, set up to support Republican prisoners seeking to win the status of political prisoner through hunger strikes. On January 17, 1985, she and her husband were shot and seriously wounded in their home by a Loyalist death squad. After recovering, she still spoke out on political issues but was not affiliated with any major group. She was critical of the peace process, which led to the Good Friday Accords in 1999. In February 2003, she was stopped when she attempted to enter the United States on holiday and deported as a security threat.

—Bernard Cook

See also Farrell, Mairead; Mowlam, Marjorie; Peace People Movement; Ulster, Women during the Troubles in

References and Further Reading

- McAliskey, Bernadette Devlin. 1994. *On the Irish Freedom Struggle*. London: Pathfinder.
- Target, George William. 1975. *The Story of Bernadette Devlin*. London: Hodder and Stoughton.

DIETRICH, MARLENE (1901–1992)

German American actress and war volunteer for the Allies. Marlene Dietrich (originally Maria Magdalene von Losch) was born in Berlin, Germany. Her father, a policeman, died, and her stepfather was killed while serving in World War I. She later entered the world of the German theatre in the creative years of the postwar Weimar Republic. Dietrich received attention as a singer and dancer but she achieved greatest acclaim for her film roles, particularly as Lola in

The Blue Angel (1930). In 1923, she married Rudolph Sieber, with whom she had a daughter, Maria.

In 1930, Dietrich was invited to Hollywood and remained there, returning to Europe and Germany only occasionally. It became clear that she was unsympathetic to the Nazi dictatorship because of its censorship and anti-Semitism. In 1936, she refused the offer of Joseph Goebbels to return to Germany to make a film. She was offered £50,000 and promised that criticism of her by the German press would cease. Instead, she starred in the Hollywood production *Destry Rides Again*. In 1939, much to the consternation of the Nazis, she became a U.S. citizen.

During World War II, Dietrich was an enthusiastic supporter of the Allied cause, and in 1944–1945, she achieved legendary status, beginning with her work at the Stage Door Canteen and culminating in memorable tours entertaining the troops. This action she saw as affirming her patriotism, and, more mundanely, it came at a time when her film career had fallen on hard times. Dietrich, accompanied by a troupe that featured Danny Thomas as comedian and manager, began her tour in Algiers. She then traveled through Italy and Western Europe, and even Germany. Dietrich gained special access to the army through individuals such as General George Patton, with whom she established a close relationship, and General James Gavin of the 82nd Airborne, with whom she was on intimate terms. Working in all sorts of weather and ready to perform in any circumstance, Dietrich established a tremendous rapport with her soldier audiences, as she sang, played the musical saw, and exhibited the beautiful legs for which she was especially known. She also visited with wounded German prisoners of war and broadcast from London to Germany. In tribute to her efforts on behalf of the troops, Dietrich was presented the Medal of Freedom, the highest civilian honor, November 18, 1947, by General Maxwell Taylor at West Point.

—Marc L. Schwarz

References and Further Reading

- Riva, Maria. 1993. *Marlene Dietrich*. New York: Alfred Knopf.
- Spoto, Donald. 1992. *Blue Angel*. New York: Doubleday.

DILLING, ELIZABETH
(1894–1966)

A leading figure in the mothers' movement, the largely right-wing coalition of women's groups opposed to U.S. involvement in World War II. Dilling was born to a prosperous Chicago family on April 19, 1894. She became the most important woman of the U.S. far right in the 1930s, gaining notoriety as an anti-Communist crusader who laced her speeches with accusations about Communist influence in the United States and invectives against Franklin Roosevelt and the New Deal. Her numerous pamphlets were widely circulated. Foreshadowing a common practice during the McCarthy era, Dilling catalogued organizations and persons she accused of promoting Communism. By 1941, her book-length index of alleged Communists, *The Red Network*, had gone through eight printings. Dilling was so notorious that Sinclair Lewis based a character on her in his novel about American fascism, *It Can't Happen Here*.

When World War II began in 1939, Dilling was part of a national network of anti-Semites, anti-Communists, and Nazi sympathizers such as Father Charles Coughlin, Reverend Gerald L. K. Smith, Reverend Gerald Winrod, and William Dudley Pelley. Material generated by Nazi organizations in Germany to inspire race hatred and exploit dissatisfaction in the United States found its way into Dilling's publications. She spoke at rallies hosted by the leading U.S. Nazi organization, the German-American Bund, and had traveled to Germany, pronouncing the country as flourishing under Hitler.

Dilling called for appeasing Germany; she blamed the war on Jews and Communists and accused the Roosevelt administration of being controlled by Jewish Communists. She made common cause with the mothers' movement, spearheaded by the National Legion of Mothers of America (NLMA), which numbered several million women. After the Lend-Lease Bill to aid Great Britain passed the House of Representatives in February 1941, Dilling launched the Mothers Crusade to Defeat H.R. 1776 to lobby the Senate against Lend-Lease. Working closely with Dilling's Mothers Crusade were other isolationist groups, including the NLMA, the America First Committee, and the Daughters of the American Revolution. Dilling coordinated marches and protests by women in Washington, D.C., against Lend-Lease and was arrested for disorderly conduct on Capitol Hill. The Lend-Lease Act passed despite the efforts of the isolationists.

After Pearl Harbor, Dilling resisted wartime rationing and denounced the Allies. In July 1942, a grand jury indicted twenty-eight extreme rightists, including Dilling, for conspiring to cause insubordination in the military, largely for distributing virulent isolationist propaganda. In 1944, she was also charged with conspiring to overthrow the government with the aid of Nazi agents. The sedition trial hinged on free speech issues, with Dilling's supporters in Congress accusing the Roosevelt administration of trying to silence political foes. The government's case was vague and lacking evidence. In 1946, a federal judge dismissed the charges.

Dilling spent the remainder of her life publishing broadsides against the North Atlantic Treaty Organization, foreign aid, the income tax, racial mixing, the fluoridation of water, the Vietnam War, and the war on poverty. She had long been dismissed as a crank before her death in 1966, although some of her literature continues to be cited in right-wing circles.

—Glen Jeansonne and David Luhrssen

See also Curtis, Cathrine; National Legion of Mothers of America

References and Further Reading

Jeansonne, Glen. 1996. *Women of the Far Right*.
Chicago: University of Chicago.

DIX, DOROTHEA
(1802–1887)

The first U.S. superintendent of nurses. Dorothea Dix was born in Hampden, Maine, into a chaotic family. Her minister father had drinking and emotional problems, and her mother became bedridden with severe headaches when Dorothea was still young. As a result, Dorothea was frequently sent to spend time with her wealthy grandmother in Boston, and at age twelve, due to her father's increasing religious fanaticism and erratic behavior, she was sent to live with her grandmother. While still young, Dix became a teacher of small children. In 1824, she published a book, recommending equal education for both sexes.

Dix, a budding social reformer, was moved by the deplorable conditions of the mentally ill and began a crusade to improve their lives. She was able to convince Massachusetts legislators to provide more humane and effective services for the mentally ill and construct new hospitals. Her devotion to helping disabled people led to social activism on behalf of the blind and the imprisoned.

At the outbreak of the American Civil War, Dix and some volunteer nurses went to the War Department and offered assistance to the injured Union soldiers. The secretary of war commissioned her as the first superintendent of U.S. army nurses, the first such office of its kind. In her new position, she organized the training and activities of the volunteer nursing corps, a duty for which she drew on her administrative experience with mental hospitals. Dix was an autocratic leader but possessed much care and concern for the nurses under her supervision and the soldiers under her care.



Dorothea Lynde Dix (Library of Congress)

Likening herself to Florence Nightingale, she worked tirelessly in her position, but her persistence and unyielding style frequently caused some friction with military leaders and surgeons. Probably because of this friction with the military leadership, her post was abolished. This did not discourage her efforts, however. She continued volunteer work at makeshift hospitals until the end of the war. After the war, she assisted soldiers and their families and then returned to her work with mental patients, widows, and orphaned children.

—*Leonard A. Steverson*

See also Livermore, Mary Ashton Rice;
Nightingale, Florence; Nurses, United States
Army Nurse Corps in World War I

References and Further Reading

Brown, Thomas. 1998. *Dorothea Dix: New England Reformer*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Gollaher, David. 1995. *Voice for the Mad: The Life of Dorothea Dix*. New York: Free Press.

Marshall, Helen E. [1967] 1937. *Dorothea Dix: Forgotten Samaritan*. New York: Russell and Russell.

DOUGLAS-PENNANT, VIOLET
(1869–1945)

Head of the British Women's Royal Air Force (WRAF) in World War I. Born in 1869, Violet Blanche Douglas-Pennant was the sixth daughter of the second Lord Penrhyn. As a young adult, she joined the Conservative Party and was active in Welsh affairs. Her particular interests were social change and educational progress. She became an active supporter of the Workers' Educational Association, and in 1911, she was appointed the National Health Insurance Commissioner for Wales. This post reflected her committee experience and public influence, and she received a salary of £1,000 a year, an unusually high figure for a woman in the early twentieth century (Izzard 1969, 184).

When Great Britain entered World War I, Douglas-Pennant shifted her attention toward war work. She helped to establish several female ancillary organizations, including the Women's Army Auxiliary Corp (WAAC) and the Women's Royal Navy Service (WRNS). In the spring of 1918, she became involved with the formation of the WRAF and was named its commandant. Communications between the WRAF and the Royal Air Force were poor, and Douglas-Pennant found her organization lacking supplies, staff, and authority. These difficulties were compounded by personality clashes among her staff and with other auxiliary leaders—namely, Dame Katharine Furse, head of the WRNS. Rumors and innuendos swirled about Douglas-Pennant's ability and suitability to lead, with the most vicious attacking her mental stability, personal life, and character. Finally, six weeks into her

tenure, Sir William Weir, Secretary of State for Air, called for an inquest.

The resulting report was highly critical of Douglas-Pennant and led to her eventual dismissal by August 1918. Helen Gwynne-Vaughan replaced her as commandant, and Douglas-Pennant prepared for a full parliamentary investigation of the WRAF under her leadership. This inquiry came to a humiliating conclusion in late 1919, as the House of Lords agreed with the Air Ministry's management of the situation. Now branded "a woman of unreliable temperament," the scandal colored the remainder of her life, and any public contributions she had made before the war faded in the wake of the inquest (Izzard 1969, 213). Douglas-Pennant died in October 1945.

—Rachel Finley-Bowman

See also Furse, Lady Katherine Symonds; Great Britain: Women in Service during World War I; Gwynne-Vaughan, Helen

References and Further Reading

Izzard, Molly. 1969. *A Heroine in Her Time: A Life of Dame Helen Gwynne-Vaughan, 1879–1967*. London: Macmillan.

DRAENGER, JUSTINA

See Dawidson, Justina

DROMGOOLE, WILL ALLEN
(1860–1934)

American newspaper writer and naval reserve officer who reported on domestic base operations during World War I. Dromgoole was born in Murfreesboro, Tennessee, and studied law

with her father. Because Tennessee legal restrictions prevented her from practicing law, she turned to writing and stints as an engrossing clerk with the Tennessee legislature. Dromgoole edited and contributed to *Will Allen's Journal: A Literary Society Weekly*, published in Nashville for several years. In 1900, Dromgoole became literary editor for the *Nashville Banner*, writing book reviews and weekly features. Dromgoole's sentimental work and tales of natives in the Tennessee countryside invoked a feeling of familiarity with her readers and gave her credibility with the average reader. Her works were most widely read in the South, and she was named Poet Laureate of Tennessee and of the Poetry Society of the South.

Dromgoole was one of the first women to volunteer for service when the United States entered World War I in 1917. She entered the navy as a yeomanry warrant officer, becoming the first woman from Tennessee to do so, and she is often credited with being the first American woman to serve in that capacity. Lauding her achievement, the *Nashville Banner* praised her as holding the highest honor the United States military would bestow upon a woman at the time. Dromgoole spent most of her time stationed on shore duty at the naval base in Norfolk, Virginia. While in Virginia, Dromgoole was sent on recruiting cruises along the coasts of Virginia, Maryland, and North Carolina. One three-month tour took her to the area of Virginia's famous Lost Colony. While touring the area, Dromgoole used the opportunity to report on the folkways and history of the area interspersed with her daily reports of life for soldiers stationed stateside.

The *Banner* credited Dromgoole as being the only publicity woman working for the navy during World War I. She was notable for using her considerable public image to report firsthand on conditions for the average soldier stationed stateside during the war. She worked as a makeshift base librarian, living in a small white shack that consisted of a one-room canteen, a one-room library, and her living space of two rooms. She selected books for soldiers stationed

abroad. During her service, she served as the director of the base's YMCA, which was famous for having its own picture show. She also successfully sold government insurance.

After the war, Dromgoole returned to her role as writer, producing thirteen books, 8,000 poems, an operetta, numerous nonfiction articles, and more than 5,000 newspaper articles.

—*Laura Finger*

See also *Journalists, American Women*, during World War I

References and Further Reading:

- Lyday-Lee, Kathy. 1980. "Will Allen Dromgoole: Forgotten Pioneer of Tennessee Mountain Fiction." *University of Mississippi Studies in English* 1, New Series (1980): 71–81.
- . 1992. "Will Allen Dromgoole: A Biographical Sketch." *Tennessee Historical Quarterly* 51 (summer):107–112.
- . 1998. "Will Allen Dromgoole." In *The Tennessee Encyclopedia of History and Culture*, edited by Carroll Van West, 259–260. Nashville: Tennessee Historical Society.

DUROVA, NADEZHDA ANDREYEVNA (1783–1866)

Russian soldier during the Napoleonic Wars. Nadezhda Andreyevna Durova was born to a minor official's family in the Vyatka *gubernia* of Russia. In 1801, she married Vasily Chernov, a local official in Sarapul, and had a daughter the following year. The marriage soon ended, however, when Durova met a Cossack officer and decided to enlist in the army. She disguised herself as a nobleman named Aleksandr Andreyevich Aleksandrov and joined the Polish Horse Uhlan Regiment. She took part in the 1807 campaign in Poland, fighting at Guttstadt, Heilsberg, and Friedland, where she was promoted to ensign in the Mariupol Hussar Regi-

ment. She was wounded in one of the skirmishes, however, and her deception was revealed. Nevertheless, Emperor Alexander commended her for her valor and allowed her to remain in the army.

In 1812, Durova served with the Lithuanian Uhlan Regiment, fighting at Smolensk, Kolotsk, and Borodino, where she suffered a minor leg wound. In September–December 1812 she served on Kutuzov's staff, and the following year, she participated in the sieges of Modlin and Hamburg. In 1816, after the war, she retired with a rank of staff *rotmistr* and returned to her family in Sarapul. Durova is the only known female officer of the Russian army during the Napoleonic Wars. She wrote interesting and vivid military recollections titled *Kavalerist Devitsa* (Cavalry Maiden).

—Alexander Mikaberidze

See also Agustina of Aragón; Engel, Regula; Russia, Women in the Armed Forces (1700–1917)

References and Further Reading

- Durova, Nadezhda. 1988. *The Cavalry Maiden: Journals of a Russian Officer in the Napoleonic Wars*. Translated by Mary Fleming Zirin. Bloomington: Indiana University Press.
- Mikaberidze, Alexander. 2004. *The Russian Officer Corps in the Revolutionary and Napoleonic Wars, 1795–1815*. New York: Savas Beatie.

DUSTON, HANNAH
(1657–1736)

American frontier woman. At the end of the seventeenth century, Hannah Duston, a Puritan settler of Haverhill, Massachusetts, who escaped from Indian captivity during King William's War (1689–1698), was the most famous woman in New England. She was considered by many to be an American Amazon because of the circumstances of her capture and

escape from Indian captivity. On March 15, 1697, just a few days after giving birth to Martha, her eighth child, Indians raided Duston's village. The Indians, identified in various accounts as Mohawks or Eastern or Western Abenakis, entered Duston's home, removing her, the infant Martha, and Mary Neff, a woman from the village serving as Duston's nurse. Thomas Duston, Hannah's husband, witnessed the abduction, but at her entreaty led the other children to safety.

The next day, after the Indians killed or captured forty of the town's inhabitants and set Duston's home aflame, Duston, Martha, and Neff were marched toward Canada. Martha was wrested away from her mother and killed instantly when her head was crushed against a tree.

About two weeks later, after a 100-mile trek in the snow without shoes or adequate clothing, Duston arrived at a small island at the junction of the Merrimack and Contoocook Rivers, a few miles north of present-day Concord, New Hampshire. Duston's captors placed her in the custody of an Indian family who were Roman Catholic converts. Already in the household was another English captive, Samuel Lennardson.

On March 30, 1697, just before dawn, Duston, along with Neff and Lennardson, stole the family's hatchets and killed ten family members, six of whom were children. The threat of being stripped, scourged, and forced to run the gauntlet prompted Duston's actions. With Neff's assistance, Duston killed nine of the Indians, and Lennardson killed one. As proof of her deed, Duston scalped her victims using techniques Lennardson had learned from their captors. She then led Neff and Lennardson downstream in an appropriated Indian canoe.

Upon safely reaching Haverhill a few days later, Duston appeared at the General Court in Boston with her husband and requested a bounty for the scalps. Duston received £25, while Neff and Lennardson each received £12 and 10 shillings.

Duston's actions, lauded by Cotton Mather, were exonerated because they were fueled by

DUSTON, HANNAH

the death of her own child and her victims were Catholic. In 1836, Nathaniel Hawthorne decried Duston's violence as symptomatic of Puritan brutality against Native Americans, but in nineteenth-century New England Duston was revered and monumentalized as an archetypal pioneer heroine. A monument erected at Duston Island, New Hampshire, on June 17, 1874, the first public monument in the United States erected in honor of a woman, depicts Duston with a tomahawk in one hand, scalps in another. Another monument to Duston was erected in Haverhill on November 25, 1879.

—*Rebecca Tolley-Stokes*

See also *Frontier Soldiers, U.S., Wives of*; *Nonhelema*; *Ward, Nancy*; *Winema*; *Winnemucca, Sarah*

References and Further Reading

- Levernier, James A. 1998. "Hannah Duston." In *Dictionary of Literary Biography*, Vol. 200, *American Women Prose Writers to 1820*, 107–112. Detroit, MI: Gale Research.
- McKinley, Allida Shuman. 1999. "Hannah Duston." In *American National Biography*, 170–171. New York: Oxford University Press.
- Weis, Ann-Marie. 1998. "The Murderous Mother and the Solicitous Father: Violence, Jacksonian Family Values, and Hannah Duston's Captivity." *American Studies International* 36, no. 1: 46–65.

E

EARLEY, CHARITY ADAMS (1918–2002)

Commander of the only all-black U.S. Women's Army Corps (WAC) unit that served overseas during World War II. At a time when a segregated military provided few opportunities for African Americans, Charity Adams Earley achieved the rank of lieutenant colonel, the highest attainable rank for women in the army except the WAC director. Earley remained in the WAC until March 26, 1946.

Throughout her military experience, Earley confronted personal and institutional racial prejudice and discrimination—both latent and overt—that was endemic to a segregated military in a segregated society. “I had been raised in the South,” she wrote in her biography, *One Women's Army*, “and I knew there was no such thing as separate but equal” (Adams 1989, 60). She also experienced the reluctance of military men to accept women into a man's army. Her service in the WAC became emblematic of many of the firsts achieved by women and by African Americans during World War II.

Charity Adams grew up in Columbia, South Carolina. Her father was a minister in the A.M.E. (African Methodist Episcopal) Church and a scholar who was fluent in Greek and Hebrew. Her mother was a teacher. Earley gradu-

ated from Wilberforce University, an African American Episcopal school in Wilberforce, Ohio. She was attending graduate school at Ohio State when she joined the Women's Army Auxiliary Corps (WAAC) in 1942 and entered the first Officer's Candidate Class (OCS) at Fort Des Moines, Iowa. (In 1943, Congress removed auxiliary status and the WAAC became the Women's Army Corps [WAC], an official branch of the army.) She was among the twenty-nine black women chosen to fulfill the 10 percent quota the army allotted to African Americans. After graduation from OCS, she served as company commander for the Basic Training Company at Fort Des Moines, training African American recruits.

Racial issues loomed throughout the nation and the U.S. Armed Forces during World War II. The African American press was among the loudest voices calling for an end to segregation, and its efforts for equality included a campaign to send African American WACs overseas. Early in 1945, Charity Adams received orders to report to Birmingham, England, and assumed command of the 6888th Central Postal Directory in March. In May 1945, the unit transferred to Rouen, France. Called the Six-Triple-Eight, the battalion consisted of 824 enlisted women and 31 officers at its peak strength.

Under Earley's leadership, the Six-Triple-Eight assumed responsibility for redirecting mail to the estimated 7 million U.S. military, paramilitary, and civilian support personnel in the European theatre of operations (ETO). Under Earley's direction, the battalion broke all records for redirecting mail. They censored correspondence, repackaged undeliverable items, and developed record-keeping and tracking systems to trace the movements of personnel whose addresses could change two to three times weekly as they moved from combat zone to combat zone. The Six-Triple-Eight moved almost 200,000 letters and packages daily, living up to the motto, "No mail; low morale."

After her army years, Earley earned a master's degree in vocational psychology from Ohio State University and continued postgraduate work at the University of Zurich and at the Jungian Institute of Analytical Psychology in Zurich, Switzerland. She served as a college professor and dean and remained active in community affairs after her marriage and the birth of her children.

—*Lee Ann Ghajar*

See also United States, Military Service of Women in World War II; United States, Women's Army Auxiliary Corps

References and Further Reading

- Earley, Charity Adams. 1989. *One Woman's Army: A Black Officer Remembers the WAC*. College Station: Texas A&M University Press.
- Papers of Charity Adams Earley, 1928–2002 (bulk 1942–2002), Library of Congress.

EAST TIMOR, ABUSE OF WOMEN DURING WAR

Abuse of women by Indonesian forces during the struggle for independence in Timor. In the early stages of the more than quarter-century-long insurrection that led to the independence

of East Timor from Indonesia, rape was used primarily as a weapon against individual women detained under suspicion of being rebels or of being sympathetic to the rebel cause. In several instances, relatives of men prominent in the independence movement were detained and tortured to provoke those rebel leaders to reveal their whereabouts. The torments endured by the women in these families often included repeated rapes.

As the conflict became intensified in the late 1990s, rape became part of the strategy of the Indonesian military and of the paramilitary militia recruited as an ostensible alternative to the independence movement. In interviews conducted during the Human Rights Commission's investigation of atrocities committed during the conflict, the head of the Indonesian forces in East Timor, Brigadier-General Tono Suratman, admitted that both the regular military and the militia forces were encouraged to use rape as a weapon of intimidation (Powell 2001, 20). These forces sought to terrorize the population of East Timor into submission, to make the population associate the struggle for independence with an almost anarchic level of violence.

Moreover, as East Timorese men left their villages to join the rebel forces based in the highlands, the progovernment militias began to target pointedly the families the men had left behind. The women and girls were raped to undermine the morale of the rebel forces by making their husbands, fathers, and sons feel derelict for having left them vulnerable to such predatory attacks. The rapes also served as a warning to those men who had not yet left their villages for the highland camps of the rebels.

Initially established in response to the large numbers of refugees fleeing the conflict, the refugee camps in West Timor eventually became, in effect, relocation camps as the military and the militias sought forcibly to clear areas of East Timor in which there were high levels of rebel activity. The majority of the refugees were women, children, and the elderly. Frequently, the military and militias used

the refugee camps as informal brothels, forcing large numbers of the women and girls into sexual slavery.

Ironically, when these women and girls were permitted to return to East Timor, many—and especially those who had become pregnant as a result of the rapes—were subsequently stigmatized and traumatized by their victimization. They became painful reminders not only of the costs of independence but of the ineffectualness of the independence movement in shielding the most vulnerable noncombatants among its own population. Thus, in the patriarchal society of East Timor, the stigma attached to the victims of rape—the suggestion that they have been somehow complicit in their victimization, if only because they have endured it to survive—not only persisted in the aftermath of the conflict but also was even reinforced. Writing for *The Weekend Australian*, Sian Powell has reported that the women forced into sex slavery have often resorted to describing themselves as *isteri simpanan*, or “kept wives,” to euphemize their victimization and soften its stigma (Powell 2001, 20).

The threat of rape became such a widespread preoccupation among the East Timorese population that as the conflict gradually subsided, the militias were able to create distrust of the United Nations peacekeepers by spreading rumors that they, too, were taking advantage of the chaotic conditions and indiscriminately raping women and girls.

Kirsty Sword Gusmao, the Australian-born wife of East Timor’s first president, Xanana Gusmao, has emerged as a vocal advocate of women shunned simply because they were raped during the war. She has tried to move public opinion in the new nation toward a more reasonable view of these women as representative figures in the difficult struggle for independence. In the process, individual women such as Juliana dos Santos, who was in her midteens when she was coerced into sex slavery in a refugee camp, have been presented as exemplary figures of stoic fortitude and undaunted perseverance.

—*Martin Kich*

See also Rape in War

References and Further Reading

- Ansley, Greg. 1999. “Militia Reign of Terror Engulfs West.” *The New Zealand Herald*, November 22.
- O’Kane, Maggie. 2001. “Return of the Revolutionaries: The Conflict May Be Over, But for the Women of East Timor, There Is Another Battle to Be Won.” *The Guardian*, January 15: 8.
- Powell, Sian. 2001. “Rape: Just Another Weapon of War.” *The Weekend Australian*, March 10: 20.
- Shanks, David. “Overcoming Trauma Part of the Agenda Facing the New East Timor.” 2000. *The Irish Times*, January: 14.

EDMONDS, SARAH EMMA (1841–1898)

American Civil War combatant. Born and raised on a farm in New Brunswick, Canada, in 1841, Sarah Emma Edmonds came to the United States in 1860 posing as a man, Franklin Thompson. As Thompson, she served in the Union army for two years.

Edmonds enlisted on May 17, 1861, as Thompson in Company F of the Second Michigan Infantry in the Union Army. Her male identity went unquestioned. During her service, Edmonds served as a male nurse in the regimental hospital, witnessing the horrors of injuries arising from modern weaponry and outdated battle tactics. She would also become the regiment’s postmaster and then its mail carrier. Her first combat experience came at the Battle of Bull Run in July 1861. Edmonds emerged uninjured. She and her regiment continued to fight with George McClellan’s Army of the Potomac in 1862.

While in Lebanon, Kentucky, in April 1863, Edmonds deserted from the army. She later excused her desertion as necessary to avoid being discovered as a woman. Afterward, Edmonds traveled to Ohio and resumed her female identity. In June 1863, she began work as a female

nurse under the supervision of the U.S. Christian Commission in Union hospitals.

Edmonds wrote a memoir, which she later admitted contained fictionalized versions of her wartime experiences. First published in 1864 as *Unsexed; or, The Female Soldier*, the book was reissued in 1865 as *Nurse and Spy in the Union Army*. After revealing herself to her former comrades in arms, her fellow soldiers testified to her valor as a soldier. In July 1884, Congress granted Edmonds her pension for her service as Thompson and formally deleted the charge of desertion from Thompson's military record.

Edmonds died on September 5, 1898. She was buried with full military honors in Houston's Washington Cemetery.

—Lisa Tendrich Frank

See also Civil War, American, and Women; Civil War, American, Women Combatants during the

References and Further Reading

- Blanton, DeAnne, and Lauren M. Cook. 2002. *They Fought Like Demons: Women Soldiers in the American Civil War*. Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University.
- Edmonds, S. Emma E. 1865. *Nurse and Spy in the Union Army*. Hartford, CT: W. S. Williams.
- Leonard, Elizabeth D. 1999. *All the Daring of the Soldier: Women of the Civil War Armies*. New York: W. W. Norton.

EINSATZGRUPPEN (SPECIAL ACTION GROUPS)

Nazi mobile killing units, literally attack or operational groups, assigned the task of murdering Jews in occupied portions of the Soviet Union. Einsatzgruppen (special action groups) with the assistance of local militias killed an estimated 1.4 million Jews—women, children, as well as men (Hilberg 1967, 256). To this total must be

added unknown numbers of Roma (Gypsies), suspected communist operatives, and partisans, and others.

Einsatzgruppen had operated in Poland during the invasion of September 1939, but their targets were Polish priests and other members of the intelligentsia. The Einsatzgruppen of 1941 were new units, however, formed and trained for mass murder on Soviet territory. They operated independently of the regular army, which nevertheless provided logistical support to the Einsatzgruppen. Their personnel was drawn from the ranks of the SS: the Security Service (SD), the Order Police (Sipo), the Criminal Police, the Gestapo, the Waffen-SS, and police reserve battalions. The Einsatzgruppen ultimately received its orders from Heinrich Himmler and his second in command, Reinhard Heydrich. At Nuremberg, SS General Erich von dem Bach-Zelewski stated, "The principal task was the annihilation of the Jews, gypsies, and political commissars" (Taylor 1992, 259).

Four groups, A, B, C, and D, were formed to follow the North, Central, and South Army groups and the 11th Army into the Soviet Union. Each of these consisted of 600 to 1,000 men divided into 4 or 5 companies of Einsatzkommandos (operational commandos) or Sonderkommandos (special commandos). A typical action involved marching the residents of villages to pits dug by prisoners of war or to an area where the victims themselves would dig their own pits. The victims would be forced to strip, driven into the pits, and shot, or they would be shot on the edge of the pits so that the corpses would fall into the mass grave. When hard alcohol proved insufficient to numb the murderers, who were repeatedly ordered to shoot women and children, the SS experimented with special gas wagons, which used carbon monoxide to asphyxiate victims packed into vans. These killing operations thus provided a precedent for the gas chambers of the death camps.

One of the most infamous of the mass killings of the Einsatzgruppen occurred at the Babi Yar



Nazi *Shutzstaffel* *Einsatzgruppen* (SS mobile killing squads) line up Jews to execute them before a ditch, Babi Yar Massacre, Ukraine, 1941. (Hulton Archive/Getty Images)

ravine outside Kiev. There Sonderkommando 4a of *Einsatzgruppen* C, commanded by Paul Blobel, shot 33,771 Jewish men, women, and children on September 29–30, 1941.

—Bernard Cook

See also Holocaust and Jewish Women

References and Further Reading

- Edeiken, Yale F. "An Introduction to the EINSATZGRUPPEN," The Holocaust History Project, <http://www.holocaust-history.org/intro-einsatz/> (accessed February 5, 2004).
- Hilberg, Raur. 1967. *The Destruction of the European Jews*. Chicago: Quadrangle.
- Spector, Shmuel. 1990. "Einsatzgruppen." In *Encyclopedia of the Holocaust*, 433–439. New York: Macmillan.
- Taylor, Telford. 1992. *The Anatomy of the Nuremberg Trials: A Personal Memoir*. New York: Knopf.

EL SALVADOR, WOMEN AND THE CIVIL STRIFE IN

Impact of civil war in El Salvador on women. The civil war in El Salvador lasted from the mid-1970s to 1992, with much of the fiercest fighting taking place in the 1980s. Revolutionary forces led by the Farabundo Martí National Liberation Front (Frente Farabundo Martí para la Liberación Nacional, FMLN) battled the U.S.-backed military governments that ruled the country. Women played active roles in both the FMLN and the mass organizations that emerged during this time.

The FMLN was formed in 1980 when five leftist guerrilla groups merged. By the late 1980s, the FMLN controlled regions of El Salvador and established locally run governments. The FMLN opposed the lack of participatory democracy that characterized the country and

the abysmal living conditions in which the majority of Salvadorans lived. For example, in the 1970s, more than 40 percent of the rural population was landless, and 60 percent of Salvadoran children died before age 5. According to a 1988 study, 2 million Salvadorans out of a population of 5 million lived in extreme poverty (Golden 1991).

The poverty directly affected many Salvadoran women, who were primarily responsible for taking care of their families. In some of the poor neighborhoods in San Salvador, the capital, women headed 40 percent of the households in the 1970s, a figure that rose perhaps as high as 70 percent by the late 1980s (New American Press 1989). Many Salvadoran women became politically active through their involvement in the Christian Base Communities (CBCs) that spread through poor urban and rural areas in the late 1960s and 1970s. The philosophy of the CBCs reflected the changes then taking place in the Catholic Church throughout Latin America. Calling for a preferential option for the poor following the 1968 Catholic Conference in Medellin, Colombia, much of the work of the church focused on seeking social justice for the poor and marginalized. Women played an important role in the CBCs; they learned to read, discussed theological interpretations of the Bible, presided over meetings, and assumed leadership positions. These activities offered them concrete organizational experience, a new role for themselves as community leaders, and an identity that extended beyond the four walls of their homes (Golden 1991).

In the 1970s, women joined mass organizations that worked to alleviate poverty and obtain a higher standard of living for the population. One of the most significant of these groups was ANDES, the teacher's organization headed by Melida Anaya Montes. Montes subsequently became the second in command of one of the five organizations that made up the FMLN. Women also formed their own organizations that operated in conjunction with the various organiza-

tions that made up the FMLN. One of the first groups was AMES, the Association of Salvadoran Women, which formed in 1978. In the FMLN-run parts of the country, AMES participated in organizing the local governments, set up child care and health care projects, worked in food production, and helped to defend the area (Golden 1991). The military government targeted these groups, along with the other mass organizations that worked with the FMLN. Between 1979 and 1981 the U.S.-financed military disappeared and/or murdered tens of thousands of Salvadorans in an effort to eliminate opposition (New Americas Press 1989). As a result, many of the women (and men) active in the public movement went underground, fearful that their continued public activity signified a death sentence.

While some women continued their mass work clandestinely, others fled the cities and towns and joined the FMLN. During the 1980s, the FMLN distinguished itself by having a large percentage of women combatants; women made up 29 percent of the fighting forces and 36 percent of the political personnel. Women occupied positions at all levels within the FMLN. They were military and political commanders; they operated radios, became demolition experts, conducted political education classes, offered logistical support, carried out propaganda actions, and practiced battlefield medicine (New Americas Press 1989; Hipsher 2001). Women planned and fought in many of the major military operations carried out by the FMLN.

Women's participation in the FMLN and mass organizations, combined with the need to involve greater numbers of women in the struggle against the government, led to increased attention to and questioning of gender roles. AMES, for example, supported the collectivization of activities such as child rearing and food preparation to allow more women to join the political struggle. It also encouraged men to cook, clean, and take care of the children when female members of their families were conduct-

ing political or military activities that took them away from home and their daily chores. The main motivation behind these changes, however, was to enhance the ability of the population to fight the government, not to challenge male domination.

As in most war situations, women were frequently the victims of rape by the military. Captured activists were often subjected to savage torture. In a book published after her release from jail, Ana Guadalupe Martínez, a FMLN leader, recounts the abuse she experienced while she was imprisoned and tortured by the Salvadoran military. The Salvadoran military applied electric shocks to the most sensitive parts of her body, beat her repeatedly, and raped her (Martínez 1980).

In 1992, the FMLN and the military government signed the peace accords that effectively ended the war. The accords, however, made no mention of women's needs or demands. Dissatisfied with the lack of recognition they received and drawing on the political experience they had gained during the civil war, some women formed their own autonomous organizations in the 1990s to address the specific needs and concerns of women (Hipsher 2001).

—Margaret Power

See also Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements in

References and Further Reading

- Golden, Renny. 1991. *The Hour of the Poor, the Hour of the Women*. New York: Crossroad.
- Hipsher, Patricia. 2001. "Right and Left-Wing Women in Post-Revolutionary El Salvador." In *Radical Women in Latin America, Left and Right*, 133–164. University Park: Pennsylvania State University Press.
- Martínez, Ana Guadalupe. 1980. *The Secret Prisons of El Salvador*. Culiacán, Mexico: Universidad Autónoma de Sinaloa.
- New American Press, ed. 1989. *A Dream Compels Us: Voices of Salvadorian Women*. Boston: South End Press.

ELEANOR OF AQUITAINE (CA. 1122–1204)

Medieval political and military figure. Duchess Eleanor of Aquitaine was the only child of William X of Aquitaine and his wife Aenor. She became one of the most powerful and controversial figures of medieval Europe thanks to her position as heir of Aquitaine, which gave her a power base that was almost unheard of for a medieval woman.

Eleanor's father died in 1137, and for her protection from predatory nobles, a marriage was arranged almost immediately with Louis VII, who soon after became king of France. Their marriage was difficult because the high-spirited southern Eleanor had little in common with her husband; her behavior was widely criticized. A more important issue of contention was rule of Eleanor's duchy of Aquitaine, a task that automatically fell to her husband but in which she wanted a say.

The desire or need to represent her Aquitanian subjects led Eleanor to the most controversial action of her career: when her husband vowed in 1147 to go on the Second Crusade, Eleanor did as well. She took part in the crusade as the lord of the Aquitanian contingent; without a spokesperson at the crusade councils, they would have had little standing, and apparently the Aquitanian knights had held back from joining the crusade for that reason. Medieval chroniclers, eager to vilify an excessively manly woman, told that Eleanor set out on crusade garbed as an Amazon, with 300 ladies similarly dressed—this story is highly unlikely. Eleanor left daily command of her troops to a man but did indeed play an active role in councils. This caused trouble because she was blamed for choosing a poor campsite, leaving the army open to a devastating Turkish raid. She also argued policy independently, siding with her uncle (and perhaps lover) Raymond of Antioch against her husband and urging that the army's objective ought to be recovery of the principality of

Edessa. Louis retaliated by having her carried off by force. In the end, the crusaders made a pathetically misguided attack on Damascus and returned home without accomplishing anything but the estrangement of Eleanor and Louis.

Eleanor's marriage to Louis was annulled in 1152, and within six weeks she married Henry of Anjou, the future Henry II of England. Again, Aquitaine proved to be a contentious issue. Henry wanted to exert greater control; Eleanor wanted one of her younger sons to inherit the duchy, securing its future independence. With her support, three of Eleanor's sons rebelled against Henry in 1173–1174. Their uprising was soon suppressed, and Eleanor was captured while trying to join her sons. She was imprisoned for the next fifteen years, until her son Richard I came to the throne.

Richard spent most of his reign away from England on the Third Crusade and fighting on the Continent. Eleanor played an important role in controlling England, especially against her youngest son, John. When Richard was captured by the duke of Austria while returning from crusade, it was Eleanor who negotiated and raised his ransom.

Thus, while Eleanor did not bear arms or command troops, her life was much closer to warfare than that of most medieval women. Her life demonstrates the need for an heiress in feudal society to take on male roles and also how little the male-ruled society of her time accepted such a situation.

—Phyllis G. Jestice

See also Crusades, Women and the

References and Further Reading

- Meade, Marion. 1991. *Eleanor of Aquitaine*. London: Penguin.
- Weir, Alison. 2001. *Eleanor of Aquitaine: A Life*. New York: Ballantine.

EMERSON, GLORIA (1929–)

American journalist and novelist. In covering conflicts in Africa, Ireland, Vietnam, Central America, and the Middle East, Gloria Emerson often focused on the physical and psychological traumas wrought by war on combatants and civilians while simultaneously describing acts of courage and compassion. Rather than concentrating on military aspects, Emerson often detailed war's effects on children, families, and populations that received little attention elsewhere.

After beginning her career as a lifestyle reporter for the *New York Times*, Emerson in 1968 began to focus primarily on war. Her coverage of the Nigerian Civil War described the plight of civilians, especially children, university students and members of the Ibo tribe, and the bitterness of Biafrans living in London over Britain's support for Nigeria. During this period, Emerson also reported on the motivations of Protestants in Northern Ireland.

Emerson is best known for coverage of the Vietnam War from 1970 through 1972 for which she received the George Polk Award. Her portraits of the French and Vietnamese middle class, Vietnamese youth, U.S. civilians, soldiers in the South Vietnamese army, and Viet Cong prisoners illustrated that the war had a significant impact beyond American military casualties. These experiences provided the basis for her first book, *Winners and Losers*. A chronicle of the war's physical, psychological, and cultural impact on both Americans and Vietnamese, *Winners and Losers* surveyed the diverse and complex attitudes toward U.S. involvement in Vietnam held by those who fought in or lived through the war as well as those in the United States who had supported or opposed it. Despite having won the 1977 National Book Award for nonfiction, Emerson suggested that her descriptions of the trauma of Vietnam were insufficient.

As a professor of journalism, columnist, and speaker, Emerson reflected on her experiences and spoke against what she believed was a mythology of violent masculinity that glorified war in U.S. culture. She explored this topic in

Some American Men. Her coverage of the Middle East, Central America, and Algeria resulted in two books, *Gaza: A Year in the Intifada*, which explores the impact of the Israeli-Palestinian conflict on Palestinians, and *Loving Graham Greene*, her first novel, which takes place during the Algerian civil war.

—David Kieran

See also Chapelle, Dickey; Gellhorn, Martha; Higgins, Marguerite; Hull, Peggy, pseud.; Lederer, Edie; Luce, Claire Boothe; Schuyler, Philippa; Tomara, Sonia; Trotta, Liz; Watts, Jean

References and Further Reading

Emerson, Gloria. 1976. *Winners and Losers: Battles, Retreats, Gains, Losses and Ruins from a Long War.* New York: Random House.

EMILIA PLATER INDEPENDENT
WOMEN'S BATTALION

See Polish Independent Women's Battalion,
Emilia Plater

EMSLIE, ISABEL

See Hutton, Lady Idabel Galloway

ENGEL, REGULA
(1761–1853)

Woman combatant in the armies of Napoleon. Daughter of a Swiss mercenary from Zurich, Regula ran away from her family at thirteen, and in 1778, she married Florian Engel von Langwies, a sergeant major in the French army. By

1789, she had seven children, but during the French Revolution, her husband, who served in a Swiss unit in Paris, was arrested. She appealed to Maximilian Robespierre and impressed him enough to gain her husband's release. She then followed her husband to Italy in 1796–1797 and Egypt in 1798–1799. According to her memoirs, she chatted with General Napoleon Bonaparte on the ship sailing to Egypt. Pregnant during the voyage, she gave birth to twins in Alexandria, and they were baptized by Napoleon himself. She claims that she wore an officer's uniform during the campaigns and took part in actions. Returning to France, she and her sons took part in the 1800 campaign in which her two sons (Johann age twenty and Rudolph age twenty-one) were killed at Marengo; her son-in-law was also killed, and on hearing of his death, Engel's daughter died as well. In 1805, Regula followed her husband to Austerlitz, where, although pregnant, she took part in action and was slashed with a saber (the child, Joseph, was born in January 1806 and died at Waterloo in 1815). In 1808, Engel served in Spain, where another son, Conrad (age seventeen), was captured by the Spaniards and nailed to a tree to die. In 1809, she was pregnant with her twentieth child but took part in the operations in Bavaria and was captured by the Austrians near Regensburg. She gave birth to a child in captivity. Fortunately for her, Engel did not take part in the disastrous campaign in Russia in 1812 and subsequent battles in Germany and France. She did welcome Napoleon's return in 1815, however. At Waterloo, she fought alongside French troops and was shot in the neck and bayoneted in the side. Her husband was killed before her eyes, and her son was shot in the head. Engel survived this ordeal and later spent years looking for her surviving children. One of her sons, Caspar, immigrated to the United States, and Engel traveled to New Orleans. She arrived on January 6, 1817, only to find that her son had died of yellow fever three days before. Engel spent the rest of her life in Zurich, where she died on June 25, 1853, at the age of ninety-two.

—Alexander Mikaberidze

See also Durova, Nadezhda Andreyevna

References and Further Reading

Engel, Regula, 1977. *Frau Oberst Engel: von Cairo bis New York, von Elba bis Waterloo: Memoiren einer Amazone aus napoleonischer Zeit* [The wife of Officer Engel: From Cairo to New York, from Elba to Waterloo: memoirs of an Amazon from the time of Napoleon]. Zurich: Artemis-Verlag.

ERIKSEN, VERA (AKA VERA DE
COTTANI DE CHALBUR)
(B. 1912)

German secret agent during World War II. Vera Staritzka was born in Siberia on December 12, 1912. Her adoptive parents, the Eriksens, took her to Denmark after the Russian Revolution, and she eventually ended up in Paris dancing at the Folies Bergeres. In 1930, she married Count Sergei Ignatieff, who was involved in White Russian intrigues but disappeared in Russia in the mid-1930s. He apparently introduced Vera to the world of espionage and drugs. In the mid-1930s, after Vera's relationship with Ignatieff had soured, she was recruited by the German Intelligence Service (Abwehr). In 1937, she married a German Abwehr officer, Hans Friedrich von Wedel, an aristocrat who had persuaded her to become a German agent. He naturally lied about her ethnic background. The couple was sent to England to establish links with people in high levels of society sympathetic to Germany. In England, she had a child, the subject of much speculation regarding its paternity. The child was placed in an orphanage, and, after von Wedel died in an auto accident in the first part of 1940, Vera was transferred to Norway. There she became part of a team of spies who were to be landed in Britain. The team was to be

headed by Vera's current lover, Hilmar Dierks. Dierks was killed in an automobile accident the day before the launching of the mission, however, and it was delayed until the night of September 29, when Vera and two other spies were flown to the northeast coast of Scotland in a flying boat. They then set out in a rubber dinghy. Because of their distance from the shore and the rough water, they threw their bicycles overboard before reaching the shore of the Moray Firth between Buckie and Port Gordon. There they separated. Vera and Francois de Decker made their way to the station at Port Gibson. Their behavior roused the suspicion of a porter and the stationmaster, who telephoned the police, and the pair was arrested. Vera claimed to be Vera de Cottani de Chalbur, the niece of an elderly Italian countess who lived in Kensington. Their collaborator, Werner Heinrich Walti, had more success. He had boarded a train but was arrested at the Waverley Station in Edinburgh. The two men were tried, convicted, and executed. Vera, for her part, escaped both trial and execution. Some claim that the father of her English-born son was an Englishman of influence; others claim that Vera turned and provided useful information to the British. The latter seems probable in light of Vera's subsequent disappearance. Vera was sent back to Germany after the end of the war, and, in true undercover fashion, she vanished.

—Bernard Cook

See also Kuczynski, Ursula; Schmidt, Kitty

References and Further Reading

"Nazi Spy's Love Child Linked to Reprieve."
2000. *The Herald* (Glasgow). October 26:
13.

"Vera Eriksen," German Spies, <http://rgu-swim.rgu.ac.uk/history/German%20spies.htm>
(accessed October 25, 2003).

Wells, Matt. 1999. "Tragic Past Turned a Russian Ballerina into a Reluctant Spy." *The Scotsman*, January 27: 3.

ERITREA, WOMEN AND THE
STRUGGLE FOR
INDEPENDENCE OF

Role of women in the thirty-year armed struggle of Eritrea for independence from Ethiopia. By the end of the conflict in 1993, women comprised 30 percent of Eritrea's approximately 100,000 soldiers (Wax 2004, A1). The government used images of female soldiers to rally the Eritrean people. One government poster with the legend of "Mother Eritrea" depicted a female fighter with a baby on her back brandishing an AK-47. When fighting broke out again between Ethiopia and Eritrea in 1998 because of a border dispute, women again constituted a sizeable component of the Eritrean fighting force. In that conflict, which lasted until December

12, 2000, it is estimated that a quarter of the Eritrean fighters were women (Jenkins 1999).

After Eritrea won its independence on May 24, 1993, women were rewarded with legal guarantees, including the right to own property, to initiate divorce, and to gain custody of children. Thirty percent of the seats in the Eritrean parliament were set aside for women. One of independent Eritrea's leading political figures, Fawzia Hashim, the minister of justice, had gained prominence as a fighter during the war of independence. The independence war and the subsequent border war had a devastating impact upon Eritrea, however. More than 550,000 people were displaced and reduced to desperate conditions. The 30-year struggle left the countryside planted with 150,000 to 200,000 land mines. The death toll left 30 percent of Eritrean



Young female soldier of the Eritrean Liberation Front, Eritrea, 1975. (Patrick Chauvel/Sygma/Corbis)

families headed by women. In addition, some former fighters complained that their individuality was respected more when they were fighters than when they returned to a civilian life dominated by traditional patriarchal values.

—*Bernard Cook*

See also Algeria, Women in the War of National Liberation; Mandela, Winnie; Mau Mau Rebellion, Women in the; Sudan, Women and the Civil War in

References and Further Reading

- “Ethiopia/Eritrea War,” <http://www.globalsecurity.org/military/world/war/eritrea.htm> (accessed April 19, 2004).
- Jenkins, Cathy. 1999. “Battle in the Horn,” BBC News, July 22, http://news.bbc.co.uk/1/hi/special_report/1999/07/99/battle_in_the_horn/396183.stm (accessed April 19, 2004).
- Matthews, Jenny. 2003. “In a Sea of Troubles.” *The Guardian* (London), March 8: 32.
- Wax, Emily. 2004. “Respected in Battle, Overlooked at Home: Eritrea’s Female Veterans Seek Peacetime Role.” *The Washington Post*, April 2: A1.

ESKIMO SCOUTS

Women serving in the U.S. Alaska Territorial Guard (ATG). In 1941 during World War II, the United States faced the prospect of an enemy invasion of the territory of Alaska, an area comprising a half million square miles. U.S. military authorities did not have the forces necessary to defend the nation’s longest coastline and Alaska’s resource-rich interior. Their solution was to create an unorganized militia called the Alaska Territorial Guard. Alaskan Native women would be among the first recruits for this new armed force for the Arctic.

The ATG’s mission was to defend Alaska and provide intelligence on any enemy coastal or es-

tion operations. Alaska at that time was sparsely settled. Any invasion would likely come in remote areas, and thus military authorities wanted recruits who lived in these areas and could survive easily in the harsh Arctic conditions. Throughout 1942 and 1943, Major Marvin R. “Muktuk” Marston of the U.S. Army Air Corps traveled by dogsled, boat, and airplane throughout Alaskan Native villages to recruit volunteers for the Guard.

At the time, there were few white settlers in the remote Arctic coastal areas; most of the rural population consisted of Native Alaskans. As they enrolled in the Alaska Territorial Guard, they became known as the Eskimo Scouts. During World War II, approximately 3,000 Native Alaskans in western Alaska served in Eskimo Scout units. Both male and female recruits were accepted. Although there are no records of exactly how many women served in the units, surviving documents from the war show that their numbers were significant. For example, about thirty women signed up for the unit in Kotzebue (a small city in Western Alaska) and were issued rifles.

Perhaps the most famous World War II woman Eskimo Scout was Laura Beltz Wright of Haycock, Alaska, a Native Alaskan woman who shot forty-nine out of fifty bull’s eyes during marksmanship training, giving her the best score in her company. In addition to women who trained with rifles, other women and even children served as auxiliaries in Eskimo Scout units, serving food, helping with transportation, and operating radios.

The Eskimo Scout women continued to serve even after World War II ended. In 1949, as Alaska became a state, men who had served in the Alaska Territorial Guard were encouraged to join the new Alaska National Guard. The small unit organization and the coastal patrolling function of the Eskimo Scout units of World War II were preserved in the new Alaska Guard units, whose Cold War mission was to monitor the Alaska coastline for evidence of Russian activities. Although women were not formally allowed to join the units, they continued to ac-

company the men on scouting missions and to participate in training.

For several decades, the women were not given pay and benefits, despite participating on a regular basis. On October 1, 1971, however, women were officially permitted to join the Army National Guard, and the Alaska National Guard trained the first of its official Eskimo Scout women at Camp Carroll in Fort Richardson, Alaska. The women received official recognition of their service. By 1980, there were about sixty women assigned to Eskimo Scout units throughout Western Alaska.

In 2000, the Pentagon decided that it was no longer feasible to allow women to belong to the Eskimo Scouts, which were being retrained and reorganized to participate as infantry units with the prospect of worldwide combat deployment. The remaining Eskimo Scout women were reassigned to noncombat units, ending a proud tradition of service and an unusual episode in U.S. military history.

—Margaret D. Stock

See also United States, Home Front during World War II; United States, Military Service of Women in World War II

References and Further Reading

- Marston, Muktuk. 1969. *Men of the Tundra; Eskimos at War*. Introduction by Ernest Gruening and epilogue by C. F. Necrason. New York: October House.
- Salisbury, C. A. 1992. *Soldiers of the Mists; Minutemen of the Alaska Frontier*. Introduction by Major General John W. Schaeffer. Missoula, MT: Pictorial Histories.

ESPÍN GUILLOIS, VILMA
(1930–)

Cuban revolutionary. Vilma Espín Guillois was born in 1930 in Santiago de Cuba, the largest

urban center in the rustic eastern provinces of Cuba. Although Espín was a member of the Cuban elite, she grew up seeing firsthand the deprivation and scarcity in rural Cuba, one of the factors that influenced her early and sustained participation in the revolutionary process. She organized protests against Fulgencio Batista's coup with other students at the Universidad de Oriente, where she graduated with a degree in industrial chemical engineering. After additional studies at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology in the United States, she practiced engineering in Cuba for several years as a cover for her clandestine activities. After supporting the failed attack by Fidel Castro on the Moncada Barracks on July 26, 1953, she served in the Frank País underground, carrying messages to the exiled Castro in Mexico (Rodríguez Calderón 1992). In April 1957, she was named the July 26 Movement coordinator in the eastern provinces, where she also participated in the Revolutionary National Movement, Oriente National Action, and Revolutionary National Action (Shnookal 1992). When Espín's undercover persona, "Deborah," became too well known, it became necessary for her to leave behind her professional life, at which time she joined the guerrilla fighters in the mountains outside of Santiago. Known as Marianela, she bore arms with the Second Eastern Guerilla Front during the 1959 Cuban Revolution, where she met her future husband Raúl Castro (Rodríguez Calderón 1992). Vilma Espín's experience in the trenches and proven ideological commitment to social justice and economic restructuring, in addition to her standing as sister-in-law of Fidel Castro, allowed her to become perhaps the most influential woman in postrevolutionary Cuba. President of the Federation of Cuban Women since its inception in 1960, Espín also has occupied key positions on the Cuban Communist Party's Central Committee, the Political Bureau, and the Council of State, where she worked to achieve full equality and rights for women.

—Sara E. Cooper

See also Cuban Revolution, Women in the

References and Further Reading

- Brenner, Philip, et al. 1989. *The Cuba Reader*. New York: Grove.
- Rodríguez Calderón, Mirta. 1992. "This Is a Battle of the Advance Guard, Requiring Valiant Combatants." In *Cuban Women Confront the Future: Three Decades after the Revolution*, edited by Deborah Shnookal, 35–52. Melbourne, Australia: Ocean Press.
- Shnookal, Deborah, ed. 1992. *Cuban Women Confront the Future: Three Decades after the Revolution* (Collected interviews of Vilma Espín). Melbourne, Australia: Ocean Press.
- Stone, Elizabeth, ed. 1981. *Women and the Cuban Revolution*. New York: Pathfinder.

ETHERIDGE, ANNA (1839 OR 1844–1913)

American Civil War medic. Anna Blair was born on May 3 near Detroit, Michigan, but the year of her birth is uncertain; both 1839 and 1844 are cited. She moved to Wisconsin as a child, living a comfortable life as the daughter of a merchant farmer. She later married James Etheridge and returned to Detroit at the outbreak of the Civil War. As the Michigan Volunteer Infantry was mustered, there was a general need for the auxiliary support of nurses and laundresses. Anna Etheridge joined the 2nd Michigan Infantry as a daughter of the regiment, assuming the duties of a battlefield medic. Although many women initially responded to the call for volunteers, only two other women served with the 2nd Michigan for a significant time, nurse Jane Hinsdale and a disguised soldier, Sarah Emma Edmonds, who was known as Franklin Thompson. James Etheridge also enlisted and appears on the roster of the regiment.

Anna accompanied the unit to Washington, D.C., in May 1861 and participated in the battle of Blackburn's Ford, Virginia, in July. She served on the front lines, delivering water and first aid to the wounded on the battlefield during her first engagement with the enemy. She followed the 2nd Michigan on campaign, seeing combat at First Bull Run and nursing the sick in camp.

During the Battle of Williamsburg, Anna gained the attention of General Phil Kearny, who commended her work. Later, while treating the wounded at Second Bull Run, a soldier was hit and killed by artillery fire during her ministrations. General Kearny again commended her courage and promised her a horse and the rank of sergeant. Kearny was killed before she received the rank, but the regiment did provide a horse. Anna subsequently had two animals shot from under her. She was often seen riding through the lines, receiving cheers from the men, who called her Gentle Annie. In one incident, she incited the entrenched troops to cheer, giving away their position to the Confederates and drawing fire. In 1863, Anna received the Kearny Cross for courage.

Anna preferred to remain with the Army of the Potomac and moved from the 2nd Michigan to the 3rd and 5th Michigan Infantry. She was present at Fredericksburg and Chancellorsville, where she was wounded in the hand. In July 1863, she was seen in the Peach Orchard at Gettysburg and at the Third Corps Hospital. When General Ulysses S. Grant gained control of the Army of the Potomac in 1864, he ordered all women to rear echelon hospitals. Anna served at City Point, Virginia, and on hospital ships, although she also spent time with her unit in the field. She was mustered out with her regiment in 1865.

It is unclear what became of James Etheridge, but after the war, Anna married Connecticut infantry veteran Charles Hooks. He was disabled, and she worked for the Treasury Department until she was unfairly dismissed in 1878 so that another person could be hired. Many men from

her regiments wrote on her behalf, but she could not reclaim her employment. She applied for a wartime service pension in 1886 and received the stipend in 1887. Anna Etheridge died on January 23, 1913, in Georgetown and was buried at Arlington Cemetery.

—*Dawn Ottevaere*

See also Civil War, American, and Women; Civil War, American, Women Combatants during the

References and Further Reading

- Brockett, L. P., and Mary C. Vaughn. [1867] 1993. *Women at War*. A facsimile of the first edition. Stamford, CT: Longmeadow Press.
- Hall, Richard. 1993. *Patriots in Disguise: Women Warriors of the Civil War*. New York: Paragon House.
- Massey, Mary Elizabeth. 1966. *Women in the Civil War*. Reprinted with introduction by Jean V. Berlin. Lincoln: University of Nebraska Press.
- Michigan Adjutant General. 1988. *Record Second Michigan Infantry, Civil War, 1861–1865*. Reprint, Detroit, MI: Detroit Publishing Company.
- Michigan Soldiers and Sailors Alphabetical Index*. Detroit, MI: Detroit Publishing Company, 1984.
- Middleton, Lee. *Hearts of Fire: Soldier Women of the Civil War*. Franklin, NC: Genealogy Publishing Service, 1993.
- Moore, Frank. 1867. *Women of the War: Their Heroism and Sacrifice*. Hartford: S. S. Scranton and Company.

F

FAIRCHILD, HELEN (1884–1918)

The first American nurse to die while serving at the front in World War I. She served with the American Expeditionary Forces from May 1917 until her death in France in January 1918. Born in Milton, Pennsylvania, in 1884, Helen grew up in a well-to-do farm family with three sisters and four brothers and graduated from the Pennsylvania Hospital nursing school in 1913. She was among a preparedness medical team from Pennsylvania Hospital in Philadelphia who had pledged to the Red Cross to mobilize in the Army Reserve Corps in time of war. On Sunday, May 2, 1917, three weeks after the United States officially entered World War I, the twenty-three physicians and sixty-four nurses of her unit, Base Hospital Number 10, received orders to mobilize and prepare for departure to France. On May 19, 1917, the unit sailed to LeTreport, a fishing village on the Normandy coast to relieve the staff of the British-run, 2,000-bed General Hospital 16 (renamed Pennsylvania Base Hospital 10).

On July 22, 1917, five days after arrival at LeTreport, Helen Fairchild was sent on the first team with two physicians and an orderly to work at the front in Belgium near Passchen-

dale at Casualty Clearing Station Number 4. Casualty Clearing Stations were mobile units that served as the first step in the chain of medical evacuation from the front lines. Subjected to regular bombing attacks, the medical staff slept under the floor of their tents in shallow dugouts covered with a hinged section of the tent floor lined with a piece of sheet iron. “We . . . wade through mud to and from the operating room where we stand in mud higher than our ankles,” she wrote to her family (Fairchild collection).

Fairchild served in Station 4 during the third battle of Ypres, often working twelve to sixteen hours daily in the operating room. Internal and external blisters from mustard gas accounted for many of the wounded, and medical personnel as well became ill from vapors clinging to their clothing. Despite their grueling work, Helen later wrote, “it really has been surprising to me that the various hospitals are as well-fitted up as they are and that the men are gotten off the field so rapidly after being wounded” (Fairchild collection).

Casualty Clearing Station 4 temporarily closed August 17, 1917, a day of the heaviest of bombing and gassing to that point. Helen evacuated to Base Hospital 10. In early October, she became ill, suffering from severe abdominal



Helen Fairchild. (Courtesy Helen Fairchild's niece, Nelle Fairchild Hefty Rote)

pains. Her condition slowly progressed to jaundice and anemia. She requested exploratory surgery for suspected ulcers, lapsed into a coma following the operation, and died on January 18, 1918. According to autopsy reports, her death resulted from “acute yellow atrophy of the liver” and chloroform poison. Later medical analysis concluded that exposure to mustard gas through patient’s clothing probably exacerbated her condition.

She was buried with full military honors in a small cemetery at LeTreport and later removed

to Somme American Cemetery and Memorial at Bony, France.

—Lee Ann Ghajar

See also Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War I

References and Further Reading

- Helen Fairchild Collection. Donated by Nelle F. Rote. Arlington, VA: Women in Military Service for America Memorial Foundation.
- Hoerber, Paul B. 1921. *Pennsylvania Hospital Unit in the Great War*. New York: Paul B. Hoerber.
- Stimson, Julia. 1918. *Finding Themselves*. New York: Macmillan.

FALKLANDS WAR AND THATCHER, MARGARET (1925–)

War fought under the leadership of British Prime Minister Margaret Thatcher between Britain and Argentina from April to June 1982 following the Argentine occupation of the Falklands or Malvinas Islands in the southern Atlantic. The islands had been settled by the British in the nineteenth century, but Argentina had never relinquished its claim to the territory. Although the United Kingdom did not allow female members of the British military to participate in the battle zone, the leader of Britain during the war was the country’s first female prime minister, Margaret Thatcher (1925–). The war also saw the appointment of Linda Kitson as Britain’s first female official war artist. Kitson, selected by an Imperial War Museum committee, sailed with the British armada, was on the islands during the fighting, and produced 400 drawings that captured the experiences of the British combatants.

The war resulted from multiple miscalculations. The Argentine government did not be-

lieve that Britain would fight to retain the islands. It underestimated Thatcher. Thatcher's government for its part failed to make it clear to the Argentine government that it would fight to retain control of the islands. Thatcher's response to the Argentine occupation reinforced her image as the "Iron Maiden." She led Britain in war, declaring, "Defeat—I do not know the meaning of the word!" (Tucker 2001, 364). Later she asserted that "the Falklands victory put the Great back in Britain" (Wegs 1991, 307).

Thatcher, the leader of Britain's Conservative Party, had become prime minister in 1979. The unemployment and cuts in services that initially accompanied Thatcher's efforts to dismantle the British welfare state had produced an adverse reaction among the British electorate. The war stirred British patriotic feeling and enabled Thatcher to demonstrate her forceful leadership during wartime. Spencer Tucker argues that "lost in the euphoria of victory was her failure to avoid the war" (Tucker 2001, 364). Thatcher capitalized on the euphoria by calling a parliamentary election following Britain's June victory. Although the Conservatives only received 42 percent of the vote, they won an overwhelming majority of the seats in the House of Commons and kept Thatcher at the helm of the country. She became Britain's longest serving prime minister in the twentieth century. Thatcher served as prime minister until November 1990 when opposition within the Conservative leadership to her governing style and her attitude toward the strengthening of the European Community forced her resignation.

—Bernard Cook

References and Further Reading

- Ogden, Chris. 1990. *Maggie: An Intimate Portrait of a Woman in Power*. New York: Simon and Schuster.
- Saywell, Shelly. 1985. *Women in War: First-Hand Accounts from World War II to El Salvador*. New York: Viking Penguin.
- Tucker, Spencer. 2001. "Falklands War." In *Europe since 1945: An Encyclopedia*, edited by Bernard Cook, 362–364. New York: Garland.
- Wegs, J. Robert. 1991. *Europe since 1945: A Concise History*. 3d ed. New York: St. Martin's Press.
- Young, Hugo. 1990. *The Iron Lady: A Biography of Margaret Thatcher*. New York: Noonday.

FALLACI, ORIANA (1930–)

Italian novelist and journalist, best known for her skills as an uncompromising political interviewer. Her style has been referred to as both controversial and abrasive.

Oriana Fallaci was born in Florence, Italy, on June 29, 1930. Her father, Edoardo, was a member of a liberal underground movement that opposed Benito Mussolini's rise to power. He was jailed and tortured during the Nazi occupation of Florence but was later released. Following her father's example, Oriana became a member of the Corps of Volunteers for Freedom, actively fighting the Nazis by the time she was ten. At age sixteen, Oriana made the decision to become a writer. Her writing, both as novelist and journalist, reflects the social and political atmosphere in Italy before her birth and during her childhood.

Oriana's professional career began when she was hired to write a crime column in an Italian daily paper. She quickly became one of the country's first successful female journalists, developing an interviewing style that is uniquely her own, boldly asking aggressive questions, highlighting the abuse of power by officials, and writing with subjectivity. She has interviewed such political notables as Henry Kissinger, the Ayatollah Khomeini, Indira Gandhi, Yasser Arafat, the Shah of Iran, Golda Meir, Muammar Muhammad al-Gaddafi, and Deng Xiaoping.

Fallaci, who said, “I am obsessed by the uselessness and the stupidity and the cruelty and the folly of the war” (Bibliography Resource Center n.d.), wrote *Nothing, and So Be It* on the Vietnam War and the novel *Inshallah*, which deals with Italian troops in Lebanon after U.S. and French troops had become targets of suicide truck bombs.

—Joann M. Ross

See also Friang, Brigitte; Trotta, Liz

References and Further Reading

- Arico, Santo L. 1998. *Oriana Fallaci: The Woman and the Myth*. Carbondale: Southern Illinois University Press.
- Franks, Laura. 1981. “Behind the Fallaci Image.” *Saturday Review* 8: 18–22.
- Levy, Elizabeth. 1975. *By-Lines: Profiles in Investigative Journalism*. New York: Four Winds Press.
- “Oriana Fallaci,” Bibliography Resource Center, n.d., <http://www.giselle.com/oriana.html> (cited June 2, 2004).

FARMBOROUGH, FLORENCE
(1887–1980)

Nurse with the Russian army during World War I. Florence Farmborough, who was born and raised in the country in Buckinghamshire, moved from Britain to Russia in 1908. After two years in Kiev, she moved to Moscow and tutored the daughters of a surgeon, Dr. Pavel Sergeievich Usov, until the outbreak of World War I. She volunteered to train as a nurse at a hospital for wounded soldiers founded by Princess Golitsin. Dr. Usov had joined the staff of the hospital, and he persuaded the princess to accept his two daughters and Farmborough as voluntary aids. After six months training, Farmborough was certified as a qualified Red

Cross nurse. Usov, who insisted that one of his daughters was too frail and the other too young, intervened again on behalf of Farmborough. She was accepted as a nurse by a front-line surgical unit. She witnessed the great retreat of 1915, the Brusilov offensive of 1916, and the collapse of morale in the Russian army as the country sank into revolution. During the fall of 1916, Farmborough suffered a life-threatening fever. She returned to the front after a lengthy recuperation only to learn of the death of her elderly father in England. In March 1918, following the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk, which ended the war between Russia and Germany, Farmborough, with a group of English citizens and other foreign refugees, crossed Russia via the Trans-Siberian Railway to Vladivostok. There they boarded a ship sent by U.S. President Woodrow Wilson to transport Allied refugees to San Francisco. From San Francisco, Farmborough made her way back to her home in England.

In 1926, Farmborough became a lecturer at the University of Valencia. During the Spanish Civil War, she made broadcasts in English from Salamanca in favor of General Francisco Franco and the Nationalists whom she admired as “the saviour of Spain and of European Civilisation.” She decried “the disease of Bolshevism” and expressed her revulsion at “the stamp of bestiality and uncouthness on the face of those who had no religion and no God” (Farmborough 1938, 8, 4, 33).

She returned to England after the beginning of World War II. Her memoir, *With the Armies of the Tsar: A Nurse at the Russian Front in War and Revolution*, based on her wartime diary, was published in 1974. Her diary vividly recounts the demoralizing shortages that often afflicted the Russian forces and the suffering of the wounded as well as her own experiences at the front. She died in 1980.

—Bernard Cook

See also Russia, Women in the Armed Forces (1700–1917)

FLORENCE FARMBOROUGH, MEDICAL VOLUNTEER
IN RUSSIA DURING WORLD WAR I

August 1914

“We are very raw recruits, and it’s not surprising that we sometimes wince, even shrink into the background, when an unusually ugly wound is bared for dressing, or when a man’s cry of anguish follows an awkward attempt to alleviate an excruciating pain. It is, however, astonishing how quickly even a raw recruit can grow accustomed, though never hardened, to the sight and sound of constant suffering.”

April 20, 1915

“A soldier was lying in a corner, breathing heavily, but otherwise quiet. It was his turn now; I went and knelt down on the straw at his side. His left leg and side were saturated with blood. I began to rip up the trouser-leg, clotted blood and filth flowing over my gloved hands. He turned dull, uncomprehending eyes toward me and I went on ripping the cloth up to his waist. I pushed the clothes back and saw a pulp, a mere mass of smashed body from the ribs downwards; the stomach and abdomen were completely crushed and his left leg was hanging to the pulped body by only a few shreds of flesh. I heard a stifled groan at my side and, glancing round, I saw the priest with his hands across his eyes turn and walk heavily across the room towards the door. The soldier’s dull eyes were still looking at me and his lips moved. But no words came. What it cost me to turn away without aiding him, I cannot describe, but we could not waste time and material on hopeless cases. . . .”

July 1915

“ . . . [O]ne hears, one feels, but in a numb, apathetic sort of way—as though all the edge of reality had been smoothed away”

—Florence Farmborough.

With the Armies of the Tsar: A Nurse at the Russian Front in War and Revolution, 1914–1918.

New York: Cooper Square, 2000, Pages 22, 41–42, 101–102.

With permission of the publisher.

References and Further Reading

Farmborough, Florence. 1938. *Life and People in National Spain*. London: Sheed and Ward.

———. 1979. *Russian Album, 1908–1918*. Edited by John Jolliffe. Salisbury, England: Michael Russell.

———. 2000. *With the Armies of the Tsar: A Nurse at the Russian Front in War and Revolution, 1914–1918*. New York: Cooper Square.

FARRELL, MAIREAD
(1957–1988)

Irish political radical who actively supported the republican campaign and women’s rights. Mairead Farrell is best remembered for her coordination of prison protests and hunger strikes and her revelations regarding life under British rule. She died in March 1988, reportedly murdered by the British Army’s Special Air Services (SAS) in Gibraltar.

Farrell was born in Belfast in August 1957. The youngest of six children, she gained an

intense interest in politics and the republican cause during her adolescence, witnessing the British army's occupation of Belfast in 1969. At age fourteen, frustrated by the constant curfews, crackdowns, and coercion related to martial law, she joined the Irish Republican Army (IRA), the militant republican armed group that fought a war of terror to drive the British from Northern Ireland. Her membership in the Provisionals remained casual until at sixteen she began undertaking more formal duties, such as scouting and transporting weapons. These duties quickly expanded to active militant service, and by 1976, Farrell was arrested for conspiracy and possession of explosives. She was sentenced to fourteen and half years in the Armagh Women's Prison.

At Armagh, Farrell led demonstrations against the government's decision to refuse convicted members of the IRA special status as prisoners of war. She balked at the government's perception of them as criminals and organized her fellow inmates into hunger strikes and "dirty protests," protests characterized by the refusal to bathe and the smearing of excrement and menstrual blood on cell walls. When she was set free in 1986, after almost eleven years of internment, she studied political science and economics at Queens University and remained active in political work, giving lectures and attending meetings on various republican and feminist causes.

Despite these new interests and at least the appearance of more legitimate means of protest, Farrell never abandoned the IRA. In fact, her militant activities resumed almost immediately upon her release from jail. She became one of the organization's top operatives by the late 1980s, a distinction that would put her life decidedly at risk. Yet she seemed almost resigned to that risk, stating in an interview that "You have to be realistic. You realize that ultimately, you're either going to be dead or end up in jail. It's either one or the other. You're not going to run forever" (Eckert 1999, 22).

Her eerie premonition became reality in 1988 when she and two of her IRA colleagues, Daniel

McCann and Sean Savage, were killed by an SAS unit in Gibraltar. Unarmed, the three were ambushed, and Farrell, only thirty-one, was reportedly shot eight times. Her death brought controversy and inquiry, ultimately fostering a hearing by the European Court of Human Rights in 1995. The court ruled that the Gibraltar Three, as they came to be known, were unlawfully killed in breach of Article 2 of the European Convention on Human Rights. The British government had violated their "right to live" by using "unreasonable force" (Eckert 1999, 284).

—Rachel Finley-Bowman

See also Devlin, Bernadette; Ulster, Women during the Troubles in

References and Further Reading

Eckert, Nicholas. 1999. *Fatal Encounter*. Dublin: Poolbeg.

FAWCETT, MILLICENT (1847–1929)

Feminist supporter of Great Britain during the Boer and First World Wars. Millicent Fawcett was born Millicent Garrett in Aldeburgh, Suffolk, England, in 1847 into a family that operated a pawnshop. Before Millicent entered her teens, the family had purchased a successful coal-mining firm and could afford to send her and her two sisters to private schools for their education. When her older sister, Elizabeth Garrett (Anderson), attended medical school in London, Millicent and her sister Louise went to speeches by advocates of equal rights for women. Millicent was impressed and inspired by the ideas of John Stuart Mill, and this motivated her to become a leader in the women's movement. Millicent also fell in love with and married Henry Fawcett, a member of Parliament. When he died in 1884, Millicent devoted herself



Millicent Garrett Fawcett. (Library of Congress)

full time to the cause of female suffrage. She was not a radical feminist but believed that women could fulfill their “female roles” better if they were given the right to vote. She supported the causes of safe working conditions and increased pay for women workers and worked against the female slave trade. She strenuously advocated the right of women to receive quality education and attend college. Her major contribution to the women’s movement was her ability to organize and mediate between factions of the movement at a time when it splintered into many directions. She served as president of the National Union of Women’s Suffrage Societies (NUWSS) from 1897 to 1919.

Great Britain’s involvement in the Boer War created a special role for Fawcett because of her prominence in the women’s movement. She supported the government’s involvement in the

war, and, to counter the devastating revelations made by Emily Hobhouse of inhumane conditions and death in British concentration camps, Fawcett was appointed to lead a commission to investigate conditions of women and children in British prisoner of war and internment camps in South Africa. To the consternation of the British government, the commission largely corroborated the accusations of Hobhouse. During World War I, Fawcett championed support for Great Britain’s cause as president of the NUWSS. Her repeated refrain was “Let us show ourselves worthy of citizenship, whether our claim to it be recognized or not” (Adie 2003, 36).

Fawcett wrote about her life experiences in *The Women’s Victory* (1919) and *What I Remember* (1924). She was awarded the Grand Cross, Order of the British Empire, in 1925 for her work and was later made a dame of the British Empire.

—Pamela Lee Gray

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I; Hobhouse, Emily

References and Further Reading

- Adie, Kate. 2003. *Corsets to Camouflage: Women and War*. London: Hodder and Stoughton.
- Pugh, Martin. 1992. *Women and the Women’s Movement in Britain, 1914–1959*. Basingstoke, England: Macmillan.
- Rubenstein, David. 1991. *A Different World for Women: The Life of Millicent Garrett Fawcett*. Athens: Ohio University Press, 1991.

FEDUTENKO, NADEZHDA NIKIFOROVNA (1915–1978)

Soviet dive bomber squadron commander of World War II. Guards Major Nadezhda Nikiforovna Fedutenko occasionally led her entire air division onto major targets.



Nadezhda Fedutenko. (V nebe frontovom [In the Sky Above the Front]. 1971. 2nd edition. Edited by M. A. Kazarinova et al. Moscow: Molodaia Gvardiia)

Fedutenko served in the 125th M.M. Raskova Borisov Guards Dive Bomber Regiment. In her teens, she was active in an aircraft modeling club, and in 1935, she qualified both as a pilot and parachuting instructor upon graduating from the Tambov School for Civil Aviation Pilots. Having mastered several types of aircraft, Fedutenko flew passengers and cargo by day and night. In action from the beginning of the hostilities with the Kiev (now Kyiv) Special Civil Aviation Group on the South-Western Front, she flew the R-5, usually at a low level and without an escort, delivering ammunition, equipment, food, and medical supplies. Also, she was charged with evacuating the wounded from enemy-held areas, transporting members of the general staff, and reconnoitering.

She had accumulated several thousand flying hours prior to enlisting in her wing, which flew twin-engine, medium-range Pe-2 dive bombers and was one of the three women's aviation units to emerge from Air Group No. 122 formed by Marina Raskova, a prominent navigator-pilot. Fedutenko took part in her wing's first operational mission on January 28, 1943, over Stalingrad and flew twice that day with an experienced men's squadron. On her second sortie, she led a flight into battle. With each mission, her proficiency increased. Her squadron flew more than 500 missions (1943–1945) in support of Soviet ground troops on the Southern, Don, North-Caucasus, Western, 3rd Belorussian, and 1st Baltic Fronts, defying antiaircraft fire and repelling fierce enemy fighter attacks.

One of her most memorable missions occurred on September 2, 1943, when she replaced her deputy divisional leader after he was shot down. With her navigator, Antonina Zubkova, she led fifty-four aircraft onto a target, a fortified area near El'nia, enabling friendly troops in this sector to go on the offensive. On August 18, 1945, she was awarded the highest Soviet military decoration, Hero of the Soviet Union. She was also the recipient of the orders of Lenin, Red Banner (twice), and Patriotic War I Class, as well as many medals. In 1946, Fedutenko was demobilized and transferred to the reserves.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Soviet Union, 125th M. M. Raskova Borisov Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment; Soviet Union/Russian Federation, Women Heroes of the

References and Further Reading

- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 1998. *Women in War and Resistance*. Nepean, Canada: New Military.
 ———. 2003. "Fedutenko, Nadezhda Nikiforovna." In *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*, Vol. 1, edited by Reina Pennington, 168–169. Westport, CT: Greenwood.

FERNIG, FÉLICITÉ
(1770–1841), AND FERNIG,
THÉOPHILE (1775–1819)

Patriotic women warriors during the French Revolution. The Fernig sisters were born in Mortague, a city near the Franco-Belgian border. Their family and especially their father, an old veteran, were concerned with the revolutionary war occurring during 1792. Félicité and Théophile, sharing their family concerns, were worried by the growing rumors of defections in the French army in the area. Consequently, in May 1792, the Fernig sisters decided to wear men's clothing and joined the soldiers in Maulde. Quickly recognized as women, their courage and the significant role they played in battle made the soldiers overlook their gender. General Dumouriez, in charge of the Belgian campaign, upon hearing about these sisters and wishing to profit from their notoriety, invited them to join his force. In fact, the action of the Fernig sisters soon became known in Paris in the National Convention and among the public. As warriors, Félicité and Théophile also took part in the crucial battle of Valmy on September 20, 1792, and served under the command of Louis-Philippe d'Orléans, who was later to become King Louis-Philippe. Félicité and Théophile subsequently participated in the battles of Jemmapes, Anderlecht, and Nerwinden.

On April 1793, however, the Fernig sisters followed the treasonous action of Dumouriez and joined the Austrian army with him. In her memoirs, Théophile, reports: "Accustomed to obeying him, to respecting him (he called us his children [. . .]), we believed what he was telling us" (Bonhomme 1873, 91). The sisters soon realized what was really happening and left Dumouriez's side to fight for the revolutionary Republic. It was too late. The National Convention already considered them to be his accomplices. The Fernig sisters fled to Belgium and sought for many years to obtain the right to return to France, which was only granted in 1801. Nevertheless, they returned to Brussels, where they both died.

The notoriety the Fernig sisters acquired in France is impressive. They inspired many

women to fight for the nation in different ways. The sisters were mentioned in a proposal for a women's battalion project (Dupont 179[?], 2–3). Olympe de Gouges, the well-known revolutionary and feminist author, also celebrated Félicité and Théophile's actions in her piece about Dumouriez's victories. One should note, however, that the Fernig sisters were female warriors among many others. In fact, thousands of women joined the revolutionary forces until a decree was promulgated on April 30, 1793, officially calling for women to leave the army. Disobeying the orders, many remained.

—Eve-Marie Lampron

See also French Revolution, Impact of War on Women's Protest during the

References and Further Reading

- Bonhomme, Honoré. 1873. *Correspondance inédite de Mademoiselle Théophile Fernig*. Paris: Firmin-Didot.
- Dupont, Manette. 179[?]. *Départ de 900 citoyennes de Paris qui se sont enrôlées, déguisées en hommes, pour partir aux frontières*. Paris: Impr. de Guilhemat.
- Lamartine, Alphonse. 1849–1850. *History of the Girondists; or, Personal Memoirs of the Patriots of the French Revolution*. Translated by H. T. Ryde. London: H. G. Bohn.

FERNIG SISTERS

See Fernig, Félicité, and Fernig, Théophile

58TH FIGHTER AVIATION
REGIMENT

See Soviet Union Air Defense, 58th Fighter Aviation Regiment

FINLAND, LOTTA SVÄRD

Finnish women's auxiliary corps. At the height of its activities, which date from 1922 to 1944, Lotta Svärd had some 200,000 members and a highly developed nationwide organization that combined work in vocational, religious, and ideological education; in social service; in home-front civil defense; and in various forms of battlefield support. The organization was affiliated with the reserve of the Finnish Defense Forces, the Civil Guards, and during the severe manpower shortages of the Russo-Finnish wars of 1939–1940 and 1941–1944, it came to play a crucial part in the Finnish war effort. Its name refers to a fictional character, Lotta Svärd, in J. L. Runeberg's *Tales of Ensign Stål* (1848), who went to the front during the Finnish War of 1808–1809 to feed and care for soldiers fighting the Russians.

The origins of the Lotta Svärd lay in the women's volunteer groups of the victorious White side of the Finnish civil war of 1918. Because the organization always stood for the bourgeois, Protestant, and antisocialist ideologies of the Whites, until the outbreak of the Winter War of 1939–1940, it remained deeply suspect in the eyes of the Finnish left. This suspicion was increased after 1927, when the Lotta Svärd was called on to assist the White Civil Guards to protect the Lutheran religion, home, and country and to elevate patriotism and civic-mindedness in general. Additional duties of the Lotta Svärd included the manufacture and maintenance of military uniforms, commissary duties in the Defence Forces, recruitment and fund-raising, as well as the upkeep of cemeteries for war dead and aid to war invalids, widows, and orphans. Whether undertaken in peacetime or in war, all this was voluntary, unpaid work.

During the Winter War with the Soviet Union, Lotta members were not allowed into combat, but they did take up tasks in air raid and naval defense and in military communications, as well as in the supply, maintenance, and production of military clothes and equipment, in



Two women of the Finnish Lotta Svärd read from books, 1942. The purpose of the Lotta Svärd, a volunteer organization made up of Finnish women, was to boost national morale and support the civil guard. (Hulton-Deutsch Collection/Corbis)

running a total of eight field hospitals, and in managing the relocation and care of a half a million evacuees from the lost territories of eastern Finland. Up to 3,000 Lotta members served in anti-aircraft defense during the war, many of them on the Karelian Isthmus. Forty-nine Lottas were killed in that war. During the War of 1941–1944, the organization was even more deeply involved in battlefield support, and it has been estimated that the activities of its so-called battlefield-Lottas freed up to a division of men for battlefield duties. Their constantly increasing involvement in battlefield support meant that by the end of the war the Lotta organization had suffered 113 battlefield-related deaths and 661 casualties.

Labeled a fascist organization by the Soviet Union, the Lotta Svärd was abolished by the

Soviet-dominated Control Commission that oversaw the pacification of Finland between the Finnish surrender of September 1944 and the Paris Peace Treaty of 1947. Lotta Svärd's ideological values were later nurtured by a heritage association, the Lotta Svärd Perinneliitto [Heritage Association], and some of its social functions by the new women's social service organization, Naisten Huoltosäätiö [Finnish Women's Welfare Association], but after 1944, no actual women's auxiliary corps existed in Finland.

—*Markku Ruotsila*

See also Finland, Women in the Winter War

References and Further Reading

- Ollila, Aino 1996. "Women's Voluntary Associations in Finland during the 1920s and 1930s." *Scandinavian Journal of History* 20: 97–107.
- Olsson, Pia 1995. "Learn to Love Your Country and Its People': From Lotta Ideology to Action." In *Encountering Ethnicities: Ethnological Aspects on Ethnicity, Identity and Migration*, edited by Teppo Korhonen. Helsinki: SKS.

FINLAND, WOMEN IN THE WINTER WAR

Women's organizations played a crucial role in assisting the Finnish Defense Forces during the 105 days of warfare that constituted the Russo-Finnish Winter War of 1939–1940. Finnish women were not allowed to take part in combat, but in addition to their extensive home-front tasks, they did assume many ancillary battlefield duties. Forty-nine women auxiliaries were nevertheless killed in battle during the war. This mass voluntary participation in the war effort by women from all social groups contributed to the legendary spirit of the Winter War in which a nation was exceptionally unified and determined against a much more powerful invader.

The most significant contribution of Finnish women to the war effort was by the Lotta Svärd

organization, a legally constituted women's auxiliary corps that was affiliated with the Finnish reserve, the Civil Guards. Among other tasks, the Lotta Svärd members operated field hospitals; oversaw the production, supply, and maintenance of military clothes and other equipment; allocated relief to fatherless families and evacuees; and participated in air raid and naval defense.

On the home front, the Lotta Svärd's activities were supplemented by those of various women's societies in the churches, in business, and in agriculture as well as in the cooperative movement, the labor unions, and the socialist political organizations. Until the outbreak of the war, the latter had viewed the right-wing Lotta organization with deep suspicion, but animosities were put aside for the duration of the war, and these widely different groups cooperated in running most local bomb shelters and home guard units. They also set up joint advisory centers for those dislocated, impoverished, or otherwise injured by the war. During the war, all state assistance to war widows, orphans, and evacuees was channeled through these joint women's organizations. Few foreign imports of foodstuff or other necessities reached Finland during the war, and it further devolved on the women's groups to teach methods of conserving foodstuff using substitutes, and enhancing agricultural production. A joint agency for recruiting and allocating women for industrial work was created by thirty-six of these groups, and the agency successfully filled a large part of jobs previously held by men in the armaments industry, hospitals, and the postal services.

It has been estimated that the activities of the women's volunteer groups made it possible during the Winter War for at least a division worth of men who would otherwise have been needed in the industries and in municipal services on the home front to go to the battlefield. In view of the massive superiority in manpower that the Soviet armies enjoyed, this service of Finnish women was of material importance to the persistence of the Finnish war effort. It was also a turning point in the role that women

were to play in Finnish society, for although they had enjoyed full and equal political rights since 1905, it was only through their industrial and municipal activities during the Winter War that Finnish women established themselves in all areas of the social, economic, and industrial life of the nation. Their services were applauded as crucial by the commander in chief, Field-Marshal Carl Gustav Mannerheim and were deeply appreciated by the nation at large, thus providing Finnish women with that new moral authority that sustained their presence, in unprecedented numbers, in postwar politics.

—*Markku Ruotsila*

See also Finland, Lotta Svärd

References and Further Reading

- Koskimies, Airi, and Rafael Koskimies. 1964. *Suomen lotta*. Helsinki: Weilin and Göös.
 Saraste, Erja. 1999. "Tuntemattomien naisten sota." In *Talvisodan pikkujättiläinen*, edited by Jari Leskinen and Antti Juutilainen, 756–769. Porvoo: Werner Söderström Oy.

FIRST, HELOISE RUTH
(1925–1982)

Writer, teacher, and political activist against racism, economic exploitation, and the South African apartheid regime. Born to émigré parents from the Baltics who were founders of the South African Communist Party (SACP), Ruth First joined the SACP while studying at Witwatersrand University. In her early twenties, she assisted black miners in the African Mine Strike of 1946, supported the Indian Passive Resistance campaign, and edited various radical journals and newspapers. From 1947, she published a series of exposés that uncovered the harsh conditions experienced by Africans on labor farms and other influential articles on migrant labor, bus boycotts, the women's antipass campaign, and urban slums. In 1949, she married Joe Slovo, a labor organizer, lawyer, and fellow Communist, with whom she had three children. One daughter, Shawn, wrote the movie script for *A World Apart*, a life of Ruth First and her family, and another daughter, Gillian, based her novel, *Ties of Blood*, on the Slovo family.

THE ASSASSINATION OF RUTH FIRST

"Our Comrade Ruth First was killed by a letter bomb on Tuesday, August 17th, in the office of Mozambique's Centre for African Studies. With her were the Centre's director, Aquino de Braganca, a lecturer at the Centre, Bridget O'Laughlin, and a visiting ANC activist, Pallo Jordan. All were injured. All were victims of the spawning South African state terrorism, which is spreading like a blood-poison throughout southern Africa. Ruth's murder is the latest—but surely not the last—in that long trail of murder and assassination which South Africa has made into its first line of defence of apartheid."

—Obituary in *Sechaba*, October 1982, <http://www.sacp.org.za/biographies/rfirst2.html>.

"On Tuesday, 17th August, Ruth First was killed by a letter bomb in Maputo, Mozambique, to become another martyr in this long and bitter struggle for liberation. Her death had been fashioned in the macabre hearts of the Pretoria madmen who had long realised that she was a tireless and committed fighter and revolutionary in the true sense of the word; a writer of consummate skill gifted with a rare, incisive vision who combined her craft and energy to actively combat the unspeakably evil South African system."

—Obituary in *Mayibuye*, <http://www.sacp.org.za/biographies/rfirst1.html>.

First and Slovo were among 156 people, including Nelson Mandela and Walter Sisulu, who were arrested and then acquitted in the famous 1956 Treason Trial. After authoring a book in 1963 revealing the injustices perpetrated on the people of Namibia under South African rule, First was banned from journalism and then detained for 117 days, most of it served in solitary confinement. First and her family moved to London in 1964.

While in England, First edited the works of several important antiapartheid figures, including Nelson Mandela's *No Easy Walk to Freedom*, and also wrote a number of significant studies of her own. She traveled widely, including visits to the Soviet Union, China, and several countries in Africa, experiences about which she later wrote. She also taught courses on the sociology of underdevelopment at the University of Durham, England.

In 1977, First accepted a post as professor at the Centre for African Studies at the Eduardo Mondlane University in Maputo, Mozambique. There she organized a team of researchers investigating migrant labor, particularly on the South African gold mines. On August 17, 1982, First was killed by a letter bomb sent by the South African security forces. She was buried in Maputo alongside other victims of the brutal apartheid regime.

—Roger B. Beck

See also Mandela, Winnie

References and Further Reading

- First, Ruth. 1982. *One Hundred and Seventeen Days: An Account of Confinement and Interrogation under the South African 90-Day Detention Law*. 2d ed. Harmondsworth, England: Penguin.
- Marks, Shula. 1983. "Ruth First: A Tribute." *Journal of Southern African Studies* 10, no. 1 (October): 123–128.
- Pinnock, Don. 1995. *Ruth First. They Fought for Freedom* series. Cape Town, South Africa: Maskew Miller Longman.

- "Ruth First—Memorial Issue." 1982. *Review of African Political Economy* 9 no. 25 (winter).
- Williams, Gavin P. 1982. "Ruth First: A Preliminary Bibliography." *Review of African Political Economy* 9 (winter): 54–64.
- Wolpe, AnnMarie. 1983. "Tribute to Ruth First." *Feminist Review* 13 (spring): 3–4.

FITTKO, LISA (1909–2005)

Anti-Nazi resister. Lisa Fittko, a German Jewish leftist, joined the antifascist German resistance movement to oppose the Nazis. After she escaped from Nazi Germany with her husband, Hans, she eventually settled in southern France, from where she helped other refugees make their way across the Pyrenees to the relative safety of Spain. From France, she and her husband Hans made their way to Cuba and then to the United States, where she now lives.

Lisa Ekstein was born to a middle-class Jewish family in Uzhgorod in the Ruthenian sector of the Austro-Hungarian Empire. As a child she lived in Budapest and Vienna. After World War I, her family moved to Berlin, and she grew up there during the politically and culturally tumultuous 1920s. While in secondary school she became active in a communist organization, the Socialist Students League, and once the Nazis took power, she committed herself to defeating them, protesting the Nazis through leaflets and demonstrations. As she told her parents, "Now everything depends on beating fascism—I can't waste any time with university and pleasant living" (Fittko 1991, 2–3). In 1933, when the Gestapo appeared close to arresting her for her antifascist activities, she went to Prague, where she met her future husband, Hans Fittko.

They went to Paris in 1938, where they aided refugees from Hitler's Germany. After the Nazis invaded France in 1940, she made her way to southern France, where the Vichy government

interned her at Gurs, a women's camp for enemy aliens. Realizing how dangerous it was for her to remain in the camp, she managed to escape and rejoin her husband. Hans Fittko was not Jewish, but he was a leftist and opponent of the Nazis, which made him a target of the Gestapo as well (Fittko, 1995).

They made their way to the port city of Marseilles, hoping to leave France by boat. Their efforts were unsuccessful, in part because Fittko lacked the papers she needed to make good her escape. While waiting for the papers, Lisa Fittko agreed to help smuggle other refugees over the Pyrenees into Spain. She worked with the North American Varian Fry, who set up a network to help get resistance fighters and Jews out of Europe. Fittko managed to save at least 100 people by leading them over the mountains into Spain.

In September 1940, Fittko guided the eminent German philosopher Walter Benjamin over the escape route to Spain. Benjamin carried a heavy black briefcase with him that contained his last manuscript throughout the steep ascent over the high mountains, a trip that Fittko (1991) describes in her book *Escape through the Pyrenees*. Unfortunately, the Spanish border guards captured Benjamin and, according to Fittko, he committed suicide rather than allow them to send him back to France (Fittko, 1991).

In 1950, she moved to Chicago, where she spoke about her experiences and was active in the peace movement. In 1986, the Federal Republic of Germany awarded her the Distinguished Service Medal, First Class. At the acceptance ceremony she said, "Are awards like this only for individuals? Shouldn't this be, first and foremost, an occasion for recognizing the Resistance movement as a whole? The Resistance struggle against a criminal regime must be accorded its rightful place in our history, so that a new generation can believe in itself and in its future" (Fittko, 1995, 160).

—Margaret Power

See also Buch, Eva Maria

References and Further Reading

- Fittko, Lisa. 1991. *Escape through the Pyrenees*. Evanston, IL: Northwestern University.
 ———. 1995. *Solidarity and Treason. Resistance and Exile, 1933–1930*. Evanston, IL: Northwestern University.

FOMICHEVA-LEVASHOVA,
 KLAVDIIA IAKOVLEVNA
 (1917–1958)

Soviet air squadron commander. Guards Lieutenant-Colonel Klavdiia Iakovlevna Fomicheva served in the 125th "M. M. Raskova" Borisov Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment, which flew medium-range Petliakov (Pe-2) bombers. Initially a flight and deputy squadron commander, Fomicheva assumed command of No. 2 squadron after her superior, Evgeniia Timofeeva, became deputy of Major V. V. Markov, who had replaced Marina Raskova as commanding officer after the latter's accidental death on January 4, 1943.

Employed at the Moscow Regional Office of the State Bank, Fomicheva took gliding lessons sponsored by her employer. As one of the best glider pilots in her group, she was encouraged to pursue flying training and in 1938 became full-time instructor at Reutovsky Flying Club of the Moscow Region.

In January 1943, she flew her first two missions with an experienced men's squadron in the most crucial sector of the Stalingrad Front. Skilled in evasive actions, target approach in formation, flying straight on a bomb run, and clearing targets, she thoroughly trained her subordinates. All her well-trained aircrews survived the fierce fighting over the Kuban area of North Caucasus. On June 2, 1943, Fomicheva's squadron, abandoned by its fighter escort, engaged eight enemy fighters and shot down four. Its performance was held up by the air force commander in chief as an example for the entire Soviet bomber aviation to follow.

On September 17, 1943, during the stubborn fighting near Smolensk, Fomicheva was shot down and put out of action until early 1944. Brought down again on June 23, 1944, at the beginning of the Belorussian offensive, she was back in action with her navigator, Galina Dzhunkovskaia, by August 28, 1944. She especially distinguished herself in the stubborn fighting for the Baltic and East Prussia. Altogether, Fomicheva flew fifty-five operational missions and was credited with shooting down eleven enemy aircraft in group combat (Cottam 2003, 172).

Awarded the prestigious Hero of the Soviet Union on August 18, 1945, Fomicheva was also presented with the orders of Lenin, Red Banner (twice), and Red Star, as well as many medals. She took part in the Victory Parade on Moscow's Red Square on June 24, 1945. Employed for four years as a flying instructor at the air force academy, she was grounded due to deteriorating health and taught air tactics at the Military Aviation School for Pilots in Borisoglebsk. She died prematurely from an illness related to her wartime injuries. At her grave at the Novodevich'e Cemetery, a tiny aircraft soars above the white marble obelisk. Underneath there is an epitaph: "Though you have died, you will live forever as an inspiration to those who are bold and strong in spirit!" (Maxim Gorky's *Pesnia o sokole* [The Falcon Song]).

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Soviet Union, 125th M. M. Raskova Borisov Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment; Soviet Union/Russian Federation, Women Heroes of the

References and Further Reading

- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 1998. *Women in War and Resistance*. Nepean, Canada: New Military.
 ———. 2003. "Fomicheva-Levashova, Klavdiia Iakovlevna." In *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*, Vol. 1, edited by Reina Pennington, 171–172. Westport, CT: Greenwood.

FONDA, JANE (1937–)

American actress, born in 1937, who was a leading critic of U.S. involvement in the Vietnam War. Reflecting on her life in 1997, Jane Fonda, daughter of actor Henry Fonda, compiled a film portrait of the various personae in her productive life. Looking for a defining theme, she asked, "Am I simply a chameleon that changes color according to the times and the men in my life?" (Braunstein 2001). In an attempt to find and be herself, she successfully escaped the Lady Jane image of her privileged childhood. Later in life, she embraced the Workout Queen image that projected physical and emotional health, and she then described herself as content with her life as a single woman with her newfound Christian faith. But this immensely talented and complex creative woman has been unable to distance herself from a moment of antiwar activism that led to accusations of treason in the 1970s.

Fonda's prodigious talent and willingness to defy convention placed her in the cultural vanguard of the 1960s and 1970s. She was among the first American film actresses to perform nude in Paris; her trip to Hanoi in 1972 and the speeches she gave there transcended the radicalism of most antiwar celebrities; she capitalized on the U.S. fitness craze in the 1980s; and her current dedication to education, women's issues, and personal faith place her in the mainstream of American values in the conservative twenty-first century. Nevertheless, Fonda has been unable to transcend the "Hanoi Jane" label ascribed to her by many Americans.

Fonda's work with her husband, director Roger Vadim, in the 1960s projected an image of uninhibited sexuality. In the campy comedy *Barbarella* (1968), Fonda played a "five star double-rated astronautical aviatrix" who wore outlandish costumes and Nancy Sinatra go-go boots. Director Vadim called the film "a kind of sexual Alice in Wonderland of the future" (Guthmann 1996).

By 1968, Fonda was beginning to tire of "the world of Roger Vadim, with my blond hair and

falsies” (Guthmann 1996). Realizing that her marriage to Vadim was disintegrating, Fonda returned to the United States. She had been out of touch with politics for most of her life, but the civil rights, antiwar, and countercultural movements awakened her political interests. Energized by a new relationship with activist Tom Hayden, she jumped into her new role as energetically as any Method actor. Fonda was drawn to radical politics. She accepted uncritically the verities of the antiwar movement, along with those of the American Indian Movement and the Black Panther Party.

In February 1971, Fonda supported the Winter Soldier Investigation sponsored by Vietnam Veterans Against the War in which veterans testified in Detroit regarding wartime atrocities and war crimes. As the summer approached, Fonda joined forces with *Klute* costar Donald Sutherland, singers Holly Near and Country Joe McDonald, writer Jules Feiffer, and director Mike Nichols to produce a satirical antiwar revue at the Haymarket Square GI Coffeehouse in Fayetteville, North Carolina, just outside of Fort Bragg. The show was called FTA, “Fox Trot Alpha,” “Free the Army,” “Fun, Travel, and Adventure” (the satirical name of a GI antiwar newspaper published at Fort Knox, Kentucky).

Even before Fonda’s involvement in the FTA shows, she provided financial support to the Indochina Peace Campaign (after which she would later name her film production company, IPC). The group also raised funds and support for the United Farm Workers and the presidential campaign of George McGovern. But it was Fonda’s trip to Vietnam that earned her the hatred of many Americans.

In July 1972, Fonda traveled to North Vietnam to create a documentary film about the everyday realities of the war in the city of Hanoi. She also filmed craters and bomb damage to dikes, damage that the U.S. government had denied existed. She thus crossed the line from protest and antiwar activism to activities that drew the attention of the State Department and

prowar veterans groups, just as her domestic appearances and speeches had already attracted the attention of the FBI. United States citizens were not permitted to travel to Vietnam, and Fonda’s arrival in Hanoi from Moscow saw her wearing pajama-like clothing similar to that worn by the Viet Cong. Fonda’s documentary contradicted official U.S. government pronouncements. In the eyes of her critics, her activities in Hanoi provided aid and comfort to an enemy of the United States.

The start of a new decade, 1980 was the year of Ronald Reagan and a “get government off our backs” rejection of both the liberalism of the late 1960s and the hedonistic self-absorption of the latter part of the 1970s. Reagan ran on a platform that promised a return by the United States to preeminent political and military leadership in the world, and his wife, Nancy, promised a return of elegance and alcohol to White House parties. The self-reliance, with the implication that there would be no government help to rely on, of Nancy Reagan’s “Just Say NO” solution to the problem of drugs in U.S. society also ushered in new political and personal priorities. Government and society were there to help those who helped themselves, and Jane Fonda was in the forefront of the newest self-help crusade.

Fonda’s persona mutated in the self-help 1980s into that of the workout queen. With the advent of the new millennium, Fonda embraced a new identity as a born-again Christian. Nevertheless, despite her noteworthy philanthropic activity, particularly on behalf of causes to benefit the lives of women and girls, Fonda has been unable to shake the negative Hanoi Jane image that many still hold.

—Barbara L. Tischler

See also Baez, Joan; Vietnam, U.S. Women Soldiers in

References and Further Reading

Andersen, Timothy P. 1990. *Citizen Jane: The Turbulent Life of Jane Fonda*. 1990. New York: Henry Holt.

- Braunstein, Peter. 2001. "Ms. America: Why Jane Fonda Is a Mirror of the Past Forty Years." *American Heritage Magazine* (July–August 2001), <http://www.americanheritage.com/AMHER/2001/05msamerica.shtml> (accessed November 1, 2004).
- Guthmann, Edward. 1996. "1968 Barbarella Is a Romp with a Babe." *San Francisco Chronicle*, September 13, D17.
- Holzer, Henry Mark, and Erika Holzer. 2002. *Aid and Comfort: Jane Fonda in North Vietnam*. New York: McFarland.

control. If they became pregnant, they might be forced to submit to abortion or were forced to work until delivery and to return to work immediately. Children with supposedly Aryan characteristics were placed in the *Lebensborn* program to be raised as Germans. Others were warehoused in institutions where they usually perished from neglect and malnutrition. Eastern European women often suffered sexual abuse. Some were forced into prostitution to service the bordellos established for foreign workers. Women workers assigned to agriculture, particularly in southern Germany, often fared better than those in the cities.

—Bernard Cook

FORCED LABOR, NAZI GERMANY

People in German-occupied Europe were compelled to work in Germany. Between 1941 and 1945, between 10 and 12 million people were forced to leave their homes and were transported to work in Germany (Stephenson 2001, 121–124). In August 1944, women constituted one-third—1.9 million—of the 5.7 million foreign forced laborers in Germany (Herbert 1997, 296). With its male workforce depleted by conscription and unwilling to compel its own women, who employed many strategies to avoid unpleasant labor, to do industrial or agricultural work, the Nazi regime was dependent on foreign labor. Women from Western Europe were not normally compelled to work in Germany, although many volunteered to do so. This was not the case with Eastern European women, who were forcibly removed to Germany and, after the ordeal of transportation, were subjected to harsh conditions and grinding exploitation. Women from Eastern Europe, predominantly from Soviet territory, constituted 87 percent of foreign female workers in Germany (Herbert 1997, 296). Western European female workers were paid wages, could rent rooms, and were free. Eastern European women, assigned to industry, were housed in barracks and were under police

See also Holocaust and Jewish Women

References and Further Reading

- Herbert, Ulrich. 1997. *Hitler's Foreign Workers: Enforced Foreign Labor in Germany under the Third Reich*. Cambridge, England: Cambridge University.
- Homze, Edward L. 1967. *Foreign Labor in Nazi Germany*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University.
- Stephenson, Jill. 2001. *Women in Nazi Germany*. Harlow, England: Pearson Education.

46TH TUMAN GUARDS BOMBER AVIATION REGIMENT

See Soviet Union, 46th Tuman Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment

FOURCADE, MARIE-MADELEINE (1900–1989)

Leader of a French Resistance network during World War II. In the late 1930s, Marie-Madeleine Fourcade was working as a general

secretary for a magazine publishing company run by a World War I hero, Commandant Georges Loustaunau-Lacau. With Loustaunau-Lacau, Fourcade founded one of the first Resistance networks in France, Alliance, called Noah's Ark by the Germans because each agent had an animal's name. Fourcade was "Hedgehog."

In 1941, Loustaunau-Lacau, code-named Navarre, was arrested. Fourcade, code-named PoZ/ 55, then ran the organization. From Pau, she sent agents throughout the country. She organized intelligence networks throughout France, including the ports and major cities. Fourcade's 3,000 agents sent information to the British concerning movements of coastal defense boats, supply ships, and submarines in the Atlantic. They even provided a map of the coastline indicating German deployments just before the 1944 D-Day invasion.

Impressed with the work of Fourcade and her agents, the British sent her a wireless operator in August 1941. Unfortunately, this particular operator turned out to be a double agent. Fourcade and a number of her agents were arrested. She was able to escape from the Gestapo and fled France for Switzerland with her two children. She resumed her Resistance work, however, rescuing downed British airmen and sending them back to England. Fearing Fourcade's arrest and possible execution, in July 1943, the British MI6 organization decided that Fourcade should move to England. From a house in Chelsea, she was able to assist with the reorganization of the secret services in France, and her agents were able to obtain German military papers for the Allies. She returned to France (Provence) for a mission in August 1944.

In May 1945, she went to a number of detention camps looking for survivors of her network. She lost 438 of her 3,000 agents during the course of the war.

After the war, the French government awarded her the Legion of Honor, the Medal of the Resistance with Rosette, and the Croix de Guerre. The British Secret Service considered Fourcade's Noah's Ark to be the most effective independent information service in occupied France. They

awarded her the Order of the British Empire in recognition of her contributions.

—*Leigh Whaley*

See also Aubrac, Lucie; Borrel, Andrée; France, Resistance during World War II, Women and; Hall, Virginia; Moreau-Evrard, Emilienne; Souliè, Geneviève; Tillion, Germaine; Wake, Nancy; Witherington, Pearl

References and Further Reading

Fourcade, Marie-Madeleine. 1974. *Noah's Ark*. Translated from the French by Kenneth Morgan. Preface by Commander Kenneth Cohen. New York: E. P. Dutton.

FRANCE, RESISTANCE DURING WORLD WAR II, WOMEN AND

Role of women in organized opposition to the German occupiers of France and the Vichy Regime during World War II. The French Resistance, in which women played an integral role, consisted of various forms of opposition to Nazi and pro-Nazi rule in occupied and Vichy France during World War II.

The lightning advance of German air and ground forces through the French countryside during the spring of 1940 led to a quickly demoralized French nation. An armistice with Germany on June 22, 1940, split France into occupied and unoccupied zones. The unoccupied zone was run by Marshal Henri Phillippe Pétain from the French resort town of Vichy and became a collaborationist regime that partnered closely with Nazi Germany. Resistance against collaborationist Vichy France and Nazi Germany was advocated by General Charles de Gaulle of the Free French forces in England. Resistance groups sprang up in the occupied and unoccupied zones and these organizations relied on the efforts not only of men but also of women to subvert Nazi and Vichy activities.

Resistance against the Nazis and their collaborators took many forms. Besides armed combat, resisters collected and disseminated information and resistance-oriented news; they protected and hid fugitives and downed Allied pilots; and they obtained and transported messages, weapons, and news, planted explosives, assassinated Nazi officials, and provided support and logistical services. Women from all social, religious, and political affiliations became involved in the various activities of the resistance groups. These women, like men, joined the resistance for various reasons including their patriotic or political views, religious or ethical principles, or even due to a desire for adventure.

Women were warmly welcomed into most French Resistance organizations, and in many activities women were considered preferable to men because women “had the best disguise: they were women!” (Schwartz 1989, 131). Women drew little suspicion because they were considered to be politically insignificant and, therefore, harmless. In fact, women often used their gender to their advantage by flirting and otherwise using “feminine wiles” to create a sense of innocence that fooled the enemy. France Pejot, for example, escaped two militiamen by insisting on providing the men with coffee. As the coffee “brewed,” she ran down the back stairs and made her escape (Weitz 1995, 252–253). Clara Malraux also used her femininity as a tool when she undertook missions where she socialized with German soldiers to determine if any were demoralized or discouraged enough to be recruited to help the Resistance (Weitz 1995, 128).

Women were heavily involved in courier and clandestine news activities. Most couriers in the Resistance were women because men aroused too much suspicion. Women were entrusted with transporting extremely sensitive information that if found by the Nazis or their collaborators could have meant arrest, interrogation, and even death for the captured courier. Using the ubiquitous bicycle, couriers such as Dr. Geneviève Congy transported intelligence messages, including maps indicating military de-

ployments, to heads of various resistance units (Weitz 1995, 78).

Although not traditionally considered “resistance,” social support services for resisters and refugees were imperative activities that were overwhelmingly performed by women. Women in these roles supplied fighters with ration cards and supplied food to people in refugee camps (Poznanski 1998, 238 and 242). They also risked their lives to rescue others. Marianne Cohn, for example, led a group of Jewish women to the Spanish border before the Nazis killed her (Weitz 1995, 172). Many social service activities became formalized within resistance movements. Berty Albrecht, for example, “conceived of and organized formal social services for Combat,” a major resistance organization, which other resistance organizations soon followed (Weitz 1995, 177).

It was unusual for a woman in the French Resistance to be a leader, although there are a few exceptions. Berty Albrecht is one example. She was in charge of the social services section of Combat, and she also produced the organization’s first newsletter. Lucie Aubrac helped found the Libération-Sud movement and Marie-Madeleine Fourcade, the only woman to head an entire network, commanded the three thousand strong British-backed Alliance network.

Leadership, however, was rare for women. Even more uncommon were women participants in assassinations, sabotage, and armed combat. However, female participants in armed resistance did exist. Jeanne Bohec, for example, blew up a major rail line in preparation for the Allied landings in Normandy (Weitz 1995, 154). Another female resister, code named “Claude,” was assigned to assassinate a “notorious member of the Gestapo.” Claude walked into a Parisian restaurant frequented by German officers, flirted with the Nazi officer she was assigned to kill, dined with him, persuaded him to join her in a pre-arranged taxi, and then in the back of the taxi shot him point blank and fulfilled her mission (Schwartz 1989, 130). Full-time female fighters were extremely rare, but they nevertheless existed (Schwartz 1989, 129). There were



Women members of the maquis display the rifles and pistols they used to fight the Nazi garrison in Marseille before the entry of Allied troops, 1944. (Bettmann/Corbis)

even a few all-women groups that focused on combat missions. One such group specialized in placing grenades under German trucks (Poznan-ski 1998, 242). These women fought in and sometimes commanded co-ed units. Georgette Gérard, for example, became one of only two known women who led maquis (fighting) units (Weitz 1995, 151). Another woman, Madeleine Riffaud, commanded a Parisian guerrilla team when she was only nineteen years old (Schwartz 1989, 129). Women in combat and leadership roles were thought of more as “honorary men” than they were as women performing male-specific roles (Schwartz 1989, 138). In this way it

was possible for traditionalist Frenchmen to reconcile women performing male-identified roles. Anna Pouzache, for example, was a liaison agent who frequently camped with maquis men. When one new arrival questioned a woman belonging to the maquis, a fellow partisan sprang to Pouzache’s defense saying, “It’s not a woman, it’s Anna” (Schwartz 1989, 136).

The impact of the French Resistance on female participants was varied. Although many female resisters lived with constant fear and had to postpone their lives and schooling during the occupation, resistance activities provided women with an unheard-of freedom that was

unavailable to them prior to the war. They traveled alone, spent days and nights away from home, and worked in places otherwise forbidden. Their experiences in the Resistance provided women with newfound confidence and assurance in their capabilities.

—Tracey J. Axelrod

See also Aubrac, Lucie; Borrel, Andrée; Fourcade, Marie-Madeleine; Hall, Virginia; Moreau-Evrard, Emilienne; Souliè, Geneviève; Tillion, Germaine; Wake, Nancy; Witherington, Pearl

References and Further Reading

- Lande, D. A. 2000. *Resistance! Occupied Europe and its Defiance of Hitler*. Osceola, WI: MBI Publishing Company.
- Poznanski, Renée. 1998. "Women in the French-Jewish Underground: Shield-Bearers of the Resistance?" Pp. 234–252 in *Women in the Holocaust*. Edited by Dalia Ofer and Lenore J. Weitzman. New Haven: Yale University Press.
- Schwartz, Paula. 1989. "Partisanes and Gender Politics in Vichy France." *French Historical Studies* 16, 1: 126–151.
- Weitz, Margaret Collins. 1995. *Sisters in the Resistance: How Women Fought to Free France 1940–1945*. New York: John Wiley and Sons.

FRANCE, REVOLUTION OF 1848

The participation of women in the revolutionary events in Paris between the February 1848 upheaval and the six bloody June Days. The oppressed positions of Parisian women both as women and as workers influenced their participation in these events.

Revolutionary movements in many European capitals in 1848 encouraged women's involvement in republican, democratic socialist, and feminist activities. In France, the end to restrictions on the press and the right to assembly en-

couraged women's political involvement. This was especially true in Paris, where the Second Republic had been declared in February. Women participated in the revolt that overthrew King Louis Philippe and demanded inclusion in political and economic changes. In March, Eugénie Niboyet (1799–1883) published the first feminist daily political newspaper, *Voix des femmes* (Voice of Women), and women associated with this publication created a club called Société de la *Voix des femmes* (Society of the Voice of Women).

Clubs relevant to women and the challenges they faced in society abounded, with the most radical being the Vesuvians, made up of young, unmarried, poorly paid workers. Representing themselves as volcanically powerful, they demanded not only equality but also women's participation in the military and for men and women to dress the same. Equality in marriage—including sharing of household chores—formed part of their platform. Many of those supporting changes for women disavowed that shouting, riots, or masculine attire should be employed to that end. Those associated with the *Voix des femmes* disapproved of some of the Vesuvians' ideas and tactics, including street demonstrations and wearing masculine clothing and bloomers.

Something that militant women could agree on was the franchise. Although many women felt suffrage would not guarantee equality, the republic's declaration of universal male suffrage prior to April elections forced women to respond. Pauline Roland (1805–1852) tried to vote in local elections in Boussac but officials barred her from doing so. On March 16 in Paris, women presented a petition requesting political and social rights equal to those of men. On March 22, members from the Comité des Droits de la Femme (Committee of the Rights of Woman) met with a member of the provisional government, Armand Marrast. He deferred, however, arguing that the soon-to-be elected National Assembly, not a provisional government, should respond. On April 6, Niboyet, as editor of the *Voix des femmes*, called for George

Sand to be elected to the Constituent Assembly, although Sand disavowed any interest or association with Niboyet's group. Every effort women made to gain suffrage met at best with minimal verbal acceptance from men. After the Second Republic's new assembly had been elected, a proposal on women's suffrage was defeated 899 to 1.

With conservatives feeling validated by the April elections, men bent on destroying the Société de la *Voix des femmes* attempted to inundate its meeting on May 11. The club's members responded by denying men entrance; after June 4, when a similar event occurred, the women demanded a double entry fee for men. Police then permanently shut down the club. This created a split among women regarding the means of advancing their efforts. Worker and feminist Jeanne Deroin (1805–1894) left the club, founding the *Politique des femmes* (Women's Politics), and the *Voix des femmes* published its last edition in June.

Women as workers faced particular discrimination despite their contributions to the national economy—and the profits of producers. By 1848, one-quarter of the wood gilders in Paris were women; female upholstery workers made up half of that trade. Overall, in 1848, about 40 percent of the Parisian manufacturing workforce was female. Women received less than half men's wages. Although women workers were not generally involved in the earlier feminist or socialist agitation, the outlook of some workingwomen in 1848 was affected by their discrimination as both women and women workers. Though often underrepresented in feminist efforts, some workingwomen asserted themselves. Désirée Gay (1810–c.1890) and Suzanne Voilquin (1801–1876/7) aligned with Deroin and gave voice to working women's social interests.

Désirée Gay had been part of the government's national workshop programs, created to solve the rampant unemployment in France. The Luxembourg Commission, overseeing this effort, had unceremoniously excluded women from the formulation of commission decisions

and the administration of national workshops. Despite the efforts of Gay, the government of the republic removed her as a workshop director, threatening that if workshop workers protested the point, it would close the workshop all together.

And, indeed, on June 22 the conservative republican government closed all of the workshops, sparking six days of street fighting. The “bloody June Days” resulted in the death of 1,500 to 3,000 rebelling workers; the arrest of 15,000; and the deportation of 4,000.

The June Days revealed the conflict in interests between the masses of poor workers of Paris and the conservative republic. They also bracketed the place of women in the social conflict. Women filled frontline and supply line positions during the six days of the June insurrection. Historian David Barry wrote that for some the supply line role was an extension of women's carrying a husband's tools or lunch to the workshop. Police and military archives reveal the military participation of women, as well as what the Republican government thought about their participation. Shoelace-maker, Geneviève Boulanger stood guard in a rebel area, distinguishing herself in the fighting. Some women went door-to-door, collecting food or supplies to aid the defense. In one case, Marie-Madeleine Cheron made neighbors give her cutlery to be melted for bullets. Others threatened “cowardly” men with death if they did not serve on the barricades. Shoemaker Marie Goyon put up mattresses in windows, aiding the efforts of anti-government snipers. Other women hid ammunition in mattresses and their clothing. As they had in the 1790s and would again in 1871 at the start of the Paris Commune, some women announced the arrival of government troops. Thérèse Calayon, a dressmaker and prostitute, roused her neighborhood to defense by ringing the bells of Saint Severin church.

Though the battles of the June Days were relatively brief, women found many ways to serve in military roles. Flourishing red flags and otherwise associating themselves with the revolution

led women to their deaths—or to later arrest. The bodies of women fell behind barricades and elsewhere. Furniture finisher Elisa Debeurgrave was arrested with her hands and face black with gunpowder near Place de la Bastille on June 26. Harking back to the first French Revolution, sixty-four-year-old widow Anne Goussey pressed her neighbors to burn down the house of a wallpaper manufacturer. In doing so she reminded her audience that the same fate had awaited another manufacturer of the same product in 1789, when he rejected the demands of his workers. The results of women's participation in the fighting led to swift repression against them. A writer in *Voix des femmes* echoed earlier feminist, Flora Tristan (1803–1844), “In the Republic of 1848, which has for its mission the abolition of privilege, there still exist pariahs, and these pariahs will be [women]!”

In addition to arrests and deaths, on June 28 the republic's assembly declared that the participation of women in political clubs was illegal. This silenced women's vocal political expression and later legislation forced Deroin's *Politique des femmes* to change its name to *Opinion des femmes* (Opinion of Women). The change in title indicates that women could not associate themselves with anything “political.” Previously, she had managed to scrape together the funds to keep the newspaper open and paid the government “caution money,” indicating her willingness to lose her deposit should she prove subversive. Deroin's attempt to hold political office failed, marking a dead-end to women's political activity for the time being. An attempt to resuscitate the worker cooperative movement found Deroin and Roland imprisoned in 1850. Ongoing harassment of workers' organizations followed, and with Louis Napoleon's coup d'état of December 1851 repression further limited democratic social changes, including those for women. Niboyet, Deroin, Voilquin, Gay, Tristan, and Roland were all either dead or in exile by the end of 1852.

A new Republic in February 1848 had again provided women an opportunity to express their

desires for equality, with some, like the Vesuvians, arguing that military performance and attire similar to that of men could create that equality. With the June Days, some women simply made their “argument” for worker and gender equality by asserting their presence in military events and on barricades. The repression that followed indicates the goals of women—and women-as-workers—expressed in events from February through June 1848 would not be realized anytime soon. However, some of women retained memories of their military roles in the June Days, which would again ignite in the spring of 1871 during the Paris Commune.

—*Pamela J. Stewart*

See also French Revolution, Impact of War on Women's Protest during the; Paris Commune, Women and the; Sicilian Revolutions of 1820 and 1848, Women and the

References and Further Reading

- Barry, David. 2000. “Community, Tradition, and Memory Among Rebel Working-Class Women of Paris, 1830, 1848, 1871,” in *European Review of History*, 7, 2: 261–276.
- DeGroat, Judith A. 1997. “The Public Nature of Women's Work: Definitions and Debates during the Revolution of 1848,” in *French Historical Studies*, 20, 1: 31–47.
- Moses, Claire Goldberg. 1984. *French Feminism in the Nineteenth Century*. Albany: SUNY Press.
- Struminger, Laura S. 1987. “The Vésuviennes: Images of Women Warriors in 1848 and Their Significance for French History,” in *History of European Ideas*, 8, 4–5: 451–488.

FRANCE, WARS OF RELIGION

A series of religious and political conflicts between groups of Protestants and Catholics in France between 1562 and 1629. Religious dissent and reform movements had swept through

Europe in the early sixteenth century, destroying the unity of the Latin Christian church. French kings employed repressive measures beginning in the 1530s, causing reformers such as John Calvin to flee. Divisions hardened between groups who were increasingly known as Catholics and Protestants. Urban and elite women were crucial in the spread of Protestantism, converting their husbands and sons. By the 1550s probably almost a tenth of France's population and a third of its nobles had become Protestant, most of them practicing Calvinism. This religious minority increasingly demanded legal protections for their religious practices, while many Catholics felt that Protestants polluted their communities at a time when everyone saw religion as public. The religious divisions deepened after King Henri II died in 1559, leading to the outbreak of religious warfare in 1562.

Two French queens played important roles in directing policy and organizing warfare during the French Wars of Religion. French law stipulated that only males could rule the kingdom, but allowed for women to head temporary regency governments to manage the country on behalf of kings too young to govern. Queen Catherine de Medici, wife of Henri II, acted as regent for her three sons, all of whom died as young men. Through three decades of continuing succession crises and religious conflicts, Catherine attempted to manage religious conflicts and negotiate peace in France. However, she maintained firm support for Catholicism and approved a preemptive strike against Calvinist leaders in 1572 when she feared that they were plotting to take over Paris, resulting in the infamous Saint Bartholomew's Day Massacre. Later, Marie de Medici acted as regent after her husband, king Henri IV, was assassinated in 1610. Both of these queens wielded considerable power as regents, but also faced serious challenges by nobles and royal officials who contested the authority that they exercised on behalf of their sons.

Women of all social backgrounds were directly involved in all phases of the French Wars

of Religion, participating directly in reform movements, pious activities, and religious conflict. Noblewomen often managed family estates, defended chateaux, and engaged in political activity while their husbands were fighting. Female family members of noblemen who were captured often had to raise money and negotiate for their ransom. In remote rural areas peasant women could shape the religious destinies of their villages. Urban women were often entangled in struggles for control of religious sites and civic spaces in religiously divided areas of France. When armies besieged cities, women within the walls helped to defend their communities, assisting in religious, medical, and logistical activities. Besieged women could even take up arms and participate directly in combat.

The French Wars of Religion embroiled women and other non-combatants in brutal civil warfare and horrifying atrocities. Armies routinely intimidated women as they extracted contributions and pillaged communities. Women often suffered physical and sexual violence, especially in mixed-religious areas where fighting frequently erupted. Soldiers and civic guards raped, mutilated, and killed women during orgies of religious massacres or when cities were sacked.

—Brian Sandberg

See also Peasants' War; Scotland: War Widows and Refugees in, 1640s and 1688–1690

References and Further Reading

- Holt, Mack P. 1995. *The French Wars of Religion, 1562–1629*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Neuschel, Kristen B. 1996. "Noblewomen and War in Sixteenth-Century France." Pp. 124–144 in *Changing Identities in Early Modern France*. Edited by Michael Wolfe. Durham, NC: Duke University Press.
- Sandberg, Brian. 2004. "Generous Amazons Came to the Breach': Besieged Women in the French Wars of Religion," *Gender and History* 16 (November): 654–688.

FRANCE, WORLD WAR I,
PSYCHOLOGICAL IMPACT ON
FRENCH WOMEN

Psychological burden of the war on French women. Few French women were able to escape the psychological repercussions of World War I. As their men departed for battle, women were left with the stresses of tending to the farm or joining the industrial workforce to make ends meet. Through the war, hundreds of thousands of women were forced to cope with the sadness of losing a loved one.

The departure of husbands and sons for the front has often been portrayed as a sort of celebration, in which women proudly sent off young warriors and men eagerly embarked on a great masculine adventure. In truth, however, mobilization caused more agitation and nervousness than enthusiasm. Although most soldiers and their families thought the war would be over quickly, as the Franco-Prussian War had been, that assumption did not allay concerns. Women worried not only about their husbands' safety, but also about their own well-being and their ability to provide for their families.

On the home front, women faced difficult decisions and stressful tasks. In what was a predominantly agrarian society, many French women were left to run the farm. Along with children and the elderly, women finished the harvest of 1914, but they hoped that their men would be home before the next season. At first, separation allowances paid to households whose men had gone to war helped families to survive and maintained morale. Over the course of the long war, however, economic tensions increased. The rising cost of living drove some women out of the fields and into jobs at factories. Women substituted for men in civilian industries and helped to expand the workforce in war manufacturing. Economic frustrations continued to escalate, however, and in 1917, those frustrations drove many men and women workers to strike (Becker 1985).

With the exception of Red Cross nurses, few French women had a direct role to play in the

war zone. Nevertheless, many women, especially those in northeastern France, experienced the war firsthand. Within the invaded territory, rumors abounded of German atrocities, including mutilation, rape, deportation, and forced labor (Darrow 2000). Anxious women behind the approaching front lines were forced to choose between remaining with their homes and protecting themselves and their children by journeying toward the country's interior.

Those who chose to flee packed up their family and what few belongings they could manage, and either crammed onto trains or lined congested roads. The exodus brought its own travails. For a small number of women, the physical and psychological strains of the journey were unbearable. Mademoiselle D., a seventeen-year-old from northeastern France, left her town with family and other townspeople in August 1914. During the long journey toward Paris, one family member began to suffer convulsions; other members of the group were crushed by a train. By the time Mademoiselle D. reached the capital, the stresses and strains of the war and the flight from the front had overtaken her. She was taken to a psychiatric facility, where she was excited and incoherent, with severe mood swings and flights of ideas. Committed to a mental asylum, her condition gradually improved only after months of rest (Imianitoff 1917, 57–59).

For evacuees of the invaded territory, France's capital turned out to be no safe haven. Air raid sirens frequently sent Parisians scrambling to safety in cellars and underground metro stations and brought civilians directly in contact with the war. Most French women avoided artillery barrages, but few eluded the grief produced by losing a loved one. As of 1920, the war had produced more than 600,000 French widows, plus more than 750,000 fatherless children and more than 1.3 million bereaved parents (Smith, Audoin-Rouzeau, and Becker 2003, 70). Added to these numbers should also be the millions of extended family members and friends who were touched by grief (Audoin-Rouzeau and Becker 2002). During the war, the black clothes of mourning were ubiquitous.

Widows were supposed to suffer stoically, but for some, hearing the news that their spouse had given his life for the country was an incapacitating blow. One thirty-one-year-old widow was picked up by police near a lake in 1915 as she contemplated suicide. Her husband had been killed in action a few months earlier. Taken to a medical facility, her doctors found her suffering from profound depression, despair, and anxiety. She admitted that had not eaten in a week. “Since I didn’t have the will to drown myself, I had decided to let myself die from hunger” (Imianitoff 1917, 92–93). Attempts at suicide were certainly rare reactions to the loss of loved ones, but the story reminds us that civilians were in no way immune to the psychological strains of the war.

—Gregory M. Thomas

See also France, World War I, Women and the Home Front

References and Further Reading

- Audoin-Rouzeau, Stéphane, and Annette Becker. 2002. *14–18: Understanding the Great War*. Translated by Catherine Temerson. New York: Hill and Wang.
- Becker, Jean-Jacques. 1985. *The Great War and the French People*. Translated by Arnold Pomerans. Dover, NH: Berg.
- Darrow, Margaret H. 2000. *French Women and the First World War: War Stories of the Home Front*. New York: Berg.
- Fridenson, Patrick, ed. 1992. *The French Home Front, 1914–1918*. Translated by Bruce Little and Helen McPhail. Providence, RI: Berg.
- Imianitoff (née Ourison), Mme. [S]. 1917. Contribution à l’étude du rôle des émotions dans la genèse des psychoses [Contribution to the study of emotions in the genesis of psychosis]. Thesis for the Paris Faculty of Medicine.
- Prost, Antoine. 1977. *Les anciens combattants et la société française 1914–1939* [Veterans and French society]. 3 vols. Paris: Presses de la Fondation nationale des sciences politiques.
- Smith, Leonard V., Stéphane Audoin-Rouzeau, and Annette Becker. 2003. *France and the Great War, 1914–1918*. Cambridge, England: Cambridge.

FRANCE, WORLD WAR I, WOMEN AND THE HOME FRONT

New roles imposed upon women in France by World War I. The mobilization of France’s military age males created an unprecedented demand for women to work in heavy industry, while women in the countryside took up the burden of running many of the nation’s small farms and filled local political posts. Numbers of women flocked to wartime nursing, and some took up the novel role of *marraines de guerre*, “godmothers” supporting frontline soldiers as pen pals. In a country whose population had long stagnated, French women became the target of an intense campaign to produce more children.

The scope of the conflict placed civilians of both sexes in jeopardy. French women suffered through the bombardment of Paris from the air and from long-range artillery. Some were maimed or even paid with their lives as a consequence of accidents in the country’s munitions factories. Others endured four years of German occupation in the ten districts of northeastern France that the enemy had conquered in 1914.

However, the shifts the war brought to the patterns of women’s lives had only limited long-term effects. Political efforts to reward the nation’s women with the right to vote in return for their contribution to the war effort failed. Women’s entry into governing posts in the countryside ended with the conclusion of the conflict. Almost all the new positions in the workforce that had opened to women were restored to men who had served in the military. The proportion of women in the work force declined with the close of the war.

Millions of Frenchwomen were already in the work force before World War I. Although the conflict brought them new economic opportunities in the country’s factories, such openings appeared only after a period of hardship. The outbreak of the war and the ensuing mobilization shut down many of the traditional sources of employment such as domestic service, clothing shops, and parts of the textile industry. Never-



Women workers in a French war plant, 1916. (Hulton-Deutsch Collection/Corbis)

theless, even without government action to open positions for them, women entered the metal trades in large numbers by the start of 1915. The growing realization that the war would be a prolonged one, and, in particular, the huge casualties resulting from the Battle of Verdun in 1916 pushed the government to widen employment opportunities for women. By November 1918 unemployment for most women had disappeared as they entered wartime industry. In some metalworking plants four out of every five workers were women (Downs 1995, 41).

Nevertheless, many of those women faced continuing discrimination. Women and men were given separate working areas in many factories. At first men received higher wages for doing tasks nearly identical to those of women in the

same plants. Employers often claimed that women did not need to earn as much as men since men worked to support a family whereas women lacked such responsibilities. Complex tasks were broken down into simple steps and divided among teams of women workers. Thus, women could be identified as unskilled rather than skilled members of the work force.

Pressure from the Ministry of Munitions diminished the wage differential between female and male workers, and a wave of strikes by women workers in the spring of 1917 likewise helped women to gain pay equal to men. Nonetheless, French society showed its ambivalence toward the new *munitionettes* in numerous ways. Stories circulated describing how they used their new wages to indulge in luxurious

foods like chicken and chocolate. Moreover, they supposedly employed their newfound freedom to drink and engage in sexual adventure. In the harshest canard thrown at such women, they were accused of enjoying the war so much that they hoped it would continue indefinitely.

A more pressing concern for female workers was the set of dangers that came with factory work. War production meant exposure to toxic chemicals, dangerous machinery, and explosives. Over one hundred women were killed in a single accidental explosion in a plant near Paris (Heyman 2002, 216). For much of the war's duration pre-1914 safety regulations were brushed aside in the interest of accelerating arms production.

Civilian women played a direct role in the war effort by working for the military. By 1917, 120,000 women held jobs with the military as drivers, office workers, telephone operators, laundresses, and cooks (Darrow 2000, 255). Women could often fill such positions while living in their home, and their efforts freed men to take positions at the front.

The government appealed directly to the women of rural France in August 1914 to help bring in the harvest. From this point on, farmwomen, who had normally tended the fields as helpers for their men, found they had to tend the land alone. For many the burden of farming with the assistance of only very young and very old men proved too great. Shortages of draft animals and fertilizer made food production more difficult as the war proceeded. Hardship for France's farmwomen led to declining food production and sometimes even abandoned farmsteads. But a shortage of men in the countryside provided a few women with new responsibilities in government. In some rural communities women took posts as municipal councilors and mayors.

Starting in the spring of 1915 some women in unoccupied France volunteered for the role of "war godmothers," *marraines de guerre*. The occupation of ten French departments meant that thousands of French soldiers could have no contact with home. To provide the moral support these men, so called "war orphans," could not

receive from their families, women in unoccupied areas became pen pals and a welcoming presence away from the battle front when the soldiers received leave

Many women took training as nurses from the Red Cross, the majority of them, middle class women who did not need to worry about the need to support their families. This marked a significant change in the practices of the French army. The French military had been hesitant to employ female nurses up to the years immediately preceding 1914. Only one hundred military nurses were on duty when the war broke out. But 63,000 newly qualified Red Cross nurses staffed 1480 auxiliary hospitals outside the war zone, and, in the spring of 1917, some were permitted to volunteer for service close to the front (Darrow 2000, 137–141).

Concern about the size of France's population, evident among politicians and intellectuals for decades before 1914, grew into a potent pronatalist movement during the wartime years. The absence of men for duty at the front brought the birthrate to an all time low in 1915 and 1916. Frenchwomen were urged to produce babies to fill the population gap brought on by the conflict's huge casualty lists. Proponents of wartime motherhood often described pregnancy and childbirth as the female equivalent of the soldier's service at the front.

The expanded presence of women in French factories combined with pronatalism in diverse ways. Some experts warned of the dangers such work posed for women's bodies and their unborn children and urged that pregnant women workers be sent home. Others sought improvements in factory life for women and mothers, such as private rooms where women could nurse their children. The government agreed with the latter position, and helped pregnant women and nursing mothers to continue in the workforce. In August 1917 factories were required to provide facilities like nurseries to ease the burden placed on working women. Women welfare supervisors were assigned to French factories with the primary task of protecting the health of females of childbearing age.

In the 12 percent of French territory occupied by the Germans two million French women faced multiple intrusions on their lives. The initial invasion brought a wave of rape and pillage. Thereafter, the shortage of food and fuel became a daily torment. Some food entered the zone through the efforts of Herbert Hoover's relief organization, but it provided only one meal a day. Those in the occupied zone had to demolish their wooden houses stick by stick for fuel. Restrictions on travel within the occupied zone as well as rigid curfews added to their burden. In a telling example of German power over the female population, German occupation authorities forcibly mobilized 8,000 women to help with the harvest in 1916. Middle class women were billeted with females of dubious reputation, and all were subjected to humiliating public physical examinations (Darrow 2000, 117–119; Becker 1996, 635–636).

The most direct danger for women came from enemy attacks, which modern weapons now made possible against civilians behind the fighting front. Paris was first bombed in September 1914, and German airplanes and zeppelins returned regularly. Starting in March 1918 a long-range cannon located seventy-five miles northeast of the city fired shells into Paris killing hundreds of civilians. Living in cities closer to the front like Soissons exposed French women to aerial and artillery bombardments from both sides.

Although millions of women supported the war effort with their labors, women sometimes took a prominent role opposing the continuation of the conflict. Strikes rocked French industry in the spring of 1917, with women making up the majority of those who abandoned their workplaces. Their rhetoric called not only for improvement in working conditions but also for an end to the conflict. One prominent woman, the schoolteacher and union leader H el ene Brion, was arrested in November 1917 and charged with "defeatism." Tried during late March 1918, a tense moment when the Germans were mounting their final offensive on the western front, she was found guilty and sentenced to three years imprisonment.

Despite the vast changes war had brought to France's women, the postwar period saw only limited shifts in their political and economic status. The question of voting rights for women had emerged during the war, since the contribution of women to the war effort seemed to call for an appropriate reward. Some suggested giving the vote to women who had lost husbands in the conflict so that the family could retain its voting influence. In the end no change took place. The Chamber of Deputies approved awarding the franchise to women in 1919 by an overwhelming vote, but the French Senate successfully blocked the measure. One salient argument for opponents of woman's suffrage was the view that French women were too prone to follow the dictates of the Roman Catholic Church. Another argument focused on the need for women to concentrate on child bearing rather than politics in the post-war period. French women received the right to vote only in 1944.

Moreover, women lost most of the new positions in the labor force they had occupied during the wartime years. Where women were hired back after 1918, the differential between the wages they and male workers received widened beyond the gap existing during the war years.

—Neil M. Heyman

See also Brion, H el ene; France, World War I, Psychological Impact on French Women; Mata Hari, pseud.

References and Further Reading

- Becker, Annette, 1996. "Life in an Occupied Zone: Lille, Roubaix, Tourcoing." Pp. 630–641 in *Facing Armageddon: The First World War Experience*. Edited by Hugh Cecil and Peter H. Liddle. London: Leo Cooper.
- Darrow, Margaret H. 2000. *French Women and the First World War: War Stories of the Homefront*. Oxford: Berg.
- Downs, Laura Lee. 1995. *Manufacturing Inequality: Gender Division in the French And British Metalworking Industries, 1914–1939*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell.

- Grayzel, Susan R. 1999. *Women's Identities at War: Gender, Motherhood, and Politics in Britain and France during the First World War*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina.
- Heyman, Neil M. 2002. *Daily Life during World War I*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Higonnet, Margaret Randolph, et al., eds. 1987. *Behind the Lines: Gender and the Two World Wars*. New Haven, CT: Yale University.
- McPhail, Helen. 1999. *The Long Silence: Civilian Life under the German Occupation of Northern France, 1914–1918*. London: I. B. Tauris.
- Roberts, Mary Louise. 1994. *Civilization without Sexes: Reconstructing Gender in Postwar France, 1917–1927*. Chicago: University of Chicago.
- Wall, Richard, and Jay Winter, eds. 1988. *The Upheaval of War: Family, Work and Welfare in Europe, 1914–1918*. Cambridge, England: Cambridge University Press.
- Winter, Jay, and Jean-Louis Robert, eds. 1997. *Capital Cities at War: Paris, London, Berlin, 1914–1918*. Cambridge, England: Cambridge University.

FRANCE, WORLD WAR II, WOMEN AND THE HOME FRONT

Important consequences of World War II on the lives of French women. The war impacted the lives of French women in every conceivable way, from work to the domestic front. With the fall of France in June 1940, many women had lost husbands and loved ones, and were forced to take control of their own lives. In addition, the new government of Vichy inaugurated a moral revolution, which deeply affected women.

Women in France worked in virtually every sphere of the economy. They were mobilized in 1939 after the outbreak of war to work in factories to contribute to the war effort and to replace the men who had gone off to the front. Before the fall of France the major employer of women was the state, in particular the Ministry

of Defense. Wives of soldiers were given priority for employment because their families were left without a breadwinner. A law passed on February 29, 1940, made female labor in certain professions, administrations, and companies obligatory for the duration of the hostilities (Diamond 1999, 30). Women, both skilled and unskilled, were employed in large numbers in armament factories throughout the country. While the armaments industry flourished, that of textiles deteriorated, putting female textile workers into the ranks of the unemployed. However, new jobs were created for women in other sectors of the economy. These included replacing men in the postal service.

With the fall of France in June 1940, the country entered a period of chaos. The country was divided into two zones: the Vichy administered center and southeast and the occupied zone in the north and along the Atlantic controlled by the Germans. Defense industries were closed and unemployment levels rose. Immediately following the fall of France, the new Vichy regime implemented a campaign to strengthen the family and increase the birth rate. The *femme au foyer* or mistress of the home was glorified. “Work, Family and Nation,” the Vichy slogan, which replaced the revolutionary motto of “Liberty, Equality and Fraternity,” took on special meaning for women. Domestic Revolution is a term employed by one scholar describing the National Revolution, which was implemented by the Vichy government in 1940. France’s declining birth rate was held to be both a symptom and a cause of national decadence. Because of their vanity, selfishness, loose morals, and consumerism, women were held to be partially responsible for the defeat. They had neglected their most important role of wife and mother. To be a woman meant to be a wife, a mother, and a teacher. The institutionalization of the female role as a mother took place on May 31, 1942, when an official Mothers Day became a national holiday. Posters extolled the virtues of motherhood. These included duty and sacrifice (Pollard 1998, 45–48).

Gender roles were clearly demarcated at a young age. Both male and female identities were reconstructed. From 1942, young girls were taught domestic skills at school in order to prepare them for their future role as wives and mothers while boys were given physical education. Professional training for girls at the youth centers included learning how to sew and other household tasks while boys were sent to work camps to prepare for war. In spite of the official ideology of the *femme au foyer*, the realities of war and occupation made it difficult to enforce.

With male unemployment spiraling and the new ideology ubiquitous, women were laid off from their places of employment, but were given several months pay. New legislation, which underscored official Vichy ideology of fatherland, work, and family was implemented. This was the Married Women's Work act passed on October 11, 1940. Married women were no longer permitted to work outside the home if their spouses could provide for the family. The retirement age for women was set at fifty (Diamond 1999, 32–33). However, as war demands on the economy grew throughout the autumn and winter of 1940–1941, the government decided to abandon the new legislation and replace it with yet another law on September 12, 1942. The government argued that due to new circumstances the Married Women's Work act would have to be cancelled. Married women were now permitted to work in all sections of the economy where they were needed. Labor shortages were serious enough to introduce emergency measures to employ more women. Teenagers aged fourteen to nineteen were also employed. Women were even taken on in the police force. Vichy established a special *Corps des Surveillantes Auxiliaires* (Corps of Auxiliary Inspectors) of women. In fact, by the time the Germans occupied the entire country in November of 1942, there was a severe shortage of male workers.

Although the Catholic Church in France voiced its disapproval of women working for the Germans, this did not prevent the Vichy government from passing legislation in February and March, 1944, which specified that women from

ages eighteen to forty-five, both single and married without children could work near their homes and that work previously done by men could now be carried out by women (Diamond 1999, 37). Women worked in various capacities for the Germans: as cleaners, housekeepers, cooks, and laundresses. Others worked as secretaries, translators, and telephone operators. Due to the fact that they were well paid, much better than those working for the French, most women who worked for the Germans did so without compulsion (Burrin 1995, 288). Women who worked for the Germans also received perks such as access to German cafeterias and goods unavailable to most French people (Cobb 1983, 105).

Women also were employed by the Germans in the entertainment industry during the war. They worked in the theater, ballet, opera, and nightclubs. Edith Piaf is a famous example of a singer working in this business. Some worked in France, while others went on tour to Germany. More women worked for the Germans in the northern zone.

Numbers of women practicing prostitution rose notably during the war. Both the Germans and the Vichy government attempted to regulate the profession: the tolerated brothel of the past acquired official status and was considered like any other business. No Jews or Blacks could be prostitutes and condom use was enforced to protect the Germans from disease. One expert, citing German authorities, maintains that 80,000 to 100,000 women in Paris were engaged in this trade and that 5,000 to 6,000 women carried a bilingual card. Soldiers would receive a card indicating the name of the brothel, the date of the meeting, and the name of the woman. Most women, however, worked on the streets. Figures of 100,000 on the streets to 2,000 in brothels are cited for Paris in 1940 (Burrin 1995, 210–211).

No discussion of women and work during the war would be complete without mentioning agriculture. Similar to their predecessors in World War I, wives once again took over the family farm when their husbands went off to war. However, their burden was often lessened with the

help of neighbors, male relatives and villagers too old to serve in the army, and refugees. Peasant women were the epitome of the ideal Vichy woman.

Women in all walks of life, whether they remained at home or were in the labor force, still had to worry about feeding their families and carrying out the chores in the household. Food and other necessities were rationed from September 1940. Women were issued ration cards and were forced to stand in long queues each day to obtain provisions. As necessities became scarcer and women increasingly frustrated, they began to protest in front of town halls and prefect offices for more bread and milk for their families.

Childcare was also an important concern for women, particularly those who worked outside the home. Day care facilities, which had been in existence before the war, continued during the war, but these were limited. For the most part, women had to rely on personal arrangements with relatives to take care of children.

—*Leigh Whaley*

See also France, Resistance during World War II, Women and

References and Further Reading

- Burin, Philippe. 1995. *La France l'heure Allemande 1940–1944*. [France in the German Period]. Paris: Seuil.
- Cobb, Richard. 1983. *French and Germans, Germans and French: A Personal Interpretation of France and Two Occupations, 1914–1918/1940–1944*. Hanover, NH: Brandeis University Press by University Press of New England.
- Diamond, Hanna. 1999. *Women and the Second World War in France: Choices and Constraints*. London and New York: Longman.
- Muel-Dreyfus, Francine. 2001. *Vichy and the Eternal Feminine*. Translated from the French by Kathleen A. Johnson. Durham and London: Duke University.
- Pollard, Miranda. 1998. *Reign of Virtue: Mobilizing Gender in Vichy France*. Chicago: University of Chicago.

FRANK, ANNE (1929–1945)

Jewish girl who perished in the Holocaust. Annelies Marie “Anne” Frank was a Jewish girl who wrote a diary about her experiences while hiding with her family from the Nazis during World War II. Anne was born on June 12, 1929, in Frankfurt, Germany. When she was four years old, Hitler became dictator of Germany. Her father, Otto, a banker, chose to take Anne, her sister Margot, who was three years older, and her mother, Edith, to the Netherlands.

During World War II the Germans invaded the Netherlands and instituted anti-Semitic regulations there. Jews were banned from going to the movies, libraries, museums, and many other public places. As a way of controlling their movements, Jews were not allowed to use bicycles or cars. Also, for identification purposes, Jews were required to wear a yellow six-pointed Star of David. Furthermore, non-Jewish people were discouraged from associating with Jewish people. Anne, for example, was segregated in an all-Jewish school.

On June 12, 1942, Anne’s thirteenth birthday, her father gave her a diary, which she named “Kitty.” Anne kept a personal record of events in her diary between 1942 and 1945. Otto had prepared a hiding place for his family in an annex to a warehouse on Prinsengracht. Consequently, when the Germans announced that all Jews would be sent to work camps, Otto put his plan into action. Life in hiding was difficult. The family had to keep complete silence during the day for fear of being heard by workers. Living conditions became even more strained after Hermann and Auguste van Pels and their son Peter came to live in the annex, and were joined a few months later by Fritz Pfeffer, a friend of the Frank family.

At great risk, Victor Kugler, the owner of the warehouse, built a false bookcase to cover the entrance to the annex. Also at great risk, Miep Gies, on a daily basis, used forged ration coupons to buy food for the hideaways. However, on August 4, 1944, the Gestapo, following

an anonymous tip, found the secret annex and arrested all eight occupants. Gies found Anne's diary and put it in a safe place. The Frank family was sent to Auschwitz-Birkenau (where Edith died). Anne and Margot were separated from their parents and were eventually sent to Bergen-Belsen where they both died of typhus shortly before the liberation of the camp. Only Otto survived.

After the war Otto published an abridged version of Anne's diary in 1947. Since that time, millions of copies have been sold, and it has been translated into at least fifty-five languages. It has also been adapted into award winning plays and motion pictures. In 1995 an English "definitive edition" of the diary was published. However, in 1998, five previously unknown pages of the diary were discovered, which document some of the Franks' marital problems.

—*Rolando Avila*

See also Holocaust and Jewish Women

References and Further Reading

- Frank, Otto H., and Mirjam Pressler, eds. 1995. *The Diary of a Young Girl: The Definitive Edition*. New York: Doubleday.
- Gies, Miep, and Alison Gold. 1987. *Anne Frank Remembered: The Story of the Woman Who Helped to Hide the Frank Family*. New York: Simon and Schuster.
- Lindwer, Willy. 1992. *The Last Seven Months of Anne Frank*. New York: Anchor.

FRENCH REVOLUTION (1789–1799), IMPACT OF WAR ON WOMEN'S PROTEST DURING THE

The impact of the issue of war on women during the French Revolution (1789–1799). During the French Revolution the issue of war led to the radicalization of women's claims to political

participation but also led to the repression of this participation.

The era of the revolutionary wars began in 1792. The first of a long list of declarations of war occurred on April 20, 1792. These wars were mainly caused by a desire to propagate the principles of the French Revolution and were linked to the threat of invasion by European monarchs afraid of the new regime. The decision to declare the country in danger on July 11, 1792, calling on each patriot citizen to help to protect the nation, increased the feeling of urgency.

Women's political demands in this period were linked to the evolution of the Revolution itself. In the years 1792–1793, the main claims were made during the debate surrounding the war, with the right to bear arms being the most important issue. On March 6, 1792, a delegation of women presented a petition signed by 300 Parisian women to the National Assembly. Pauline Leon, a chocolate merchant who was to become a prominent figure in women's movement, led the group. These women demanded the right to bear arms, in order to defend France, and wanted to practice arms drills among themselves. The Assembly applauded, but did not take any further action. Another well-known activist, Théroigne de Mericourt, gave an enthusiastic speech on March 25 in which she claimed women's right to participate in the war effort by forming female militias. In fact, the arms struggle is recognized by some historians as the birth of the feminine *sans-culotterie*, a popular and radical movement of women who posited that bearing arms was an act of citizenship and patriotism (Godineau 1998, 109). This question was also central in the creation of the biggest and most radical women's club, the Society of Revolutionary Republican Women, which brought together women who proclaimed themselves guardians of the nation in May 1793.

The presence of a few women fighters, such as the Fernig sisters, integrated among the men in the revolutionary armies—tolerated even after

the April 1793 law forbidding this practice—seemed to cause less of a problem than these “Amazon battalions,” as many contemporaries called them. The latter were either not taken seriously nor perceived as a real threat. Indeed, during the French Revolution, the main ideology concerning women’s role called on Rousseau’s conception of women as naturally suited to remaining within the private-domestic sphere where they could serve the Republic as good mothers and virtuous spouses (Landes 1988, 204). As a consequence, revolutionary authorities proposed that women should only head families during the absence of a husband away fighting for the nation. In contrast, some women protesters proposed that men should be responsible for external defense beyond the borders of the revolutionary while women should be charged with internal defense. The right to bear arms, in this perspective, became a necessity.

These kinds of demands were not only radical in terms of leading women into the public sphere; they also, according to revolutionary men, challenged gender boundaries. Even if men appreciated women’s patriotism, they resisted it since the gender transgression it represented was too important to be overlooked. The right to bear arms was seen as an insult to the physical superiority and fashionable difference between men and women, because armed women, for reasons of comfort and gender subversion, often dressed like men and wore male symbols, such as the red cap of liberty. Consequently, the question of women’s right to bear arms strongly influenced the National Assembly’s decision to prohibit women’s political clubs in October 1793. The deputy Fabre d’Eglantine, in a speech against women meeting in female clubs, and therefore against the political implication of women itself, told the Assembly that if women “ask for the red cap [of liberty], [t]hey will not rest there; they will soon demand a belt with pistols [. . .]. These societies [of women] are not at all composed of mothers, daughters, and sisters of families [. . .] but rather of adventuresses, female

knights-errant, emancipated girls, and amazons” (Eglantine 1996, 135–136). The next day, October 30, 1793, women’s clubs were abolished, a decision that significantly weakened women’s protest.

According to Catherine Marand-Fouquet, the war question contributed, through the revolutionary search for male heroism, to reaffirm gender boundaries, indirectly leading women to return home and to abandon concrete political participation. War also raised the specter of depopulation, causing a rise in birth rate that served to further confine women to their traditional roles (Fouquet 1989, 161). In fact, the most positive influence of the war question on women’s political awareness might have been the creation of female networks, because the struggle for the right to bear arms allowed women to “fight” together.

—Eve-Marie Lampron

See also China, Women and the Communist Revolution; Cuban Revolution, Women in the; Fernig, Félicité, and Fernig, Théophile; Germany, Revolution of 1918–1919, Women in the

References and Further Reading

- d’Eglantine, Fabre. 1996. “Discussion of Women’s Political Clubs and Their Suppression, 29–30 October 1793” pp. 135–138 in *The French Revolution and Human Rights: A Brief Documentary History*. Translated and edited by Lynn Hunt. Boston/New York: Bedford/St. Martin’s.
- Godineau, Dominique. 1998. *The Women of Paris and Their French Revolution, 1789–1795*. Translated by Katherine Streip. Berkeley: University of California Press.
- Landes, Joan. 1988. *Women and the Public Sphere in the Age of the French Revolution*. Ithaca: Cornell University.
- Marand-Fouquet, Catherine. 1989. *La femme au temps de la Révolution* [Woman at the Time of the Revolution]. Paris: Stock/Laurence Pernoud.

FRIANG, BRIGITTE (1924–)

Well-known French journalist, one of the few war correspondents in the world, male or female, to have covered both phases of the Vietnam war. Brigitte Friang, who was still a high school student when France was invaded by Hitler's army on May 10, 1940, joined the French Resistance. She participated in decoding aerial operations transmissions and later, as a trained parachutist, she was assigned to organize parachuting missions in western France. When her mentor Pierre Brossolette, one of General Charles de Gaulle's top assistants, was arrested by the Gestapo in 1944, Friang attempted to organize his escape, was wounded and then arrested, tortured, and deported to the Ravensbrück concentration camp. The experience is narrated in her book *Regarde-toi qui meures: 1943–1945* (Look at Yourself Dying) (1970), and also in the final episode of André Malraux's *Antimémoires* (1967). It led to Friang becoming the youngest receiver of the military title of Cavalier of the Legion of Honor.

After World War II Friang became a press attachée and a close collaborator of Malraux, then de Gaulle's minister of information and later minister of cultural affairs. Working as a reporter for ORTF (the French state-owned radio and television), she covered the Indochina war, where she was frequently parachuted on operations with the Expeditionary Forces of the French Union. In 1954 Friang covered the Battle of Dien-Bien-Phu, fought between Viet Minh and the French, the battle that ended the French involvement in Indochina and led to the partition of Vietnam into North and South. In 1956 she reported on the Suez Crisis. In 1967 she accompanied the Israeli troops in Sinai during the Six-Day War, fought against Egypt, Jordan, and Syria. During the American war in Vietnam, Friang was captured twice by the Viet Cong, but not harmed. Early in 1968 she was on the streets of Saigon, covering the Tet Offensive by the North Vietnamese Army and the National Liberation Front against the Nationalist Army

and the United States. In May 1968, with the students' uprising, Friang showed support for the liberalization of information in France and was consequently fired from ORTF. With Malraux in the early 1970s, she supported the cause of Bangladesh in the war with Pakistan, which was backed by the United States and China.

As a writer, Friang's work includes *Les Fleurs du Ciel* (Parachutes and Petticoats, 1955), about the Indochina war, the two volumes of *Regarde-toi qui meures* (Look You who Die): *L'Ordre de la nuit* (The Order of the Night) and *La guerre n'a pas de fin* (War Never Ends), *La Mousson de la liberté: Vietnam, du colonialisme au stalinisme* (The Monsoon of Liberty: Vietnam from Colonialism to Stalinism) (1976), *Un autre Malraux* (Another Malraux) (1977), *Petit tour autour de Malraux* (A Small Tour around Malraux) (2001), the novel *Comme un verger durant l'hiver* (Like an Orchard during Winter) (1978), and *Marche autant que tu pourras* (March on as long as You Can) (2004).

—Georgia Tres

See also Leroy, Catherine

References and Further Reading

Collins Weitz, Margaret. 1995. *Sisters in the Resistance: How Women Fought to Free France, 1940–1945*. New York: Wiley.

FRONTIER SOLDIERS, U.S.,
WIVES OF

Wives of United States soldiers stationed in the western frontier lands of the United States. During the nineteenth century, and especially after the Civil War, the United States Army patrolled the trans-Mississippi West in an effort to keep the peace between the region's Native American inhabitants and increasing numbers of white

settlers hoping for a fresh start. Regiments of horse cavalry and infantry troops, divided into companies, were dispersed to far-flung posts in Texas, the Northern or Southern Plains, or the desert southwest. Posts were isolated and poorly provisioned; soldiers and officers agreed that the women who accompanied the troops were an essential element of garrison life.

In the nineteenth century laundresses were the only women officially recognized as part of the frontier army. Each company was authorized four laundresses, who received rations and meager pay. They made extra money by washing for officers, with whom they negotiated payment privately. Many laundresses also cooked or cleaned for officers, nursed women during childbirth, or baked pies and cakes and sold them. The laundresses lived on “soapsuds row,” a squalid section of quarters on the edge of the post. Some earned extra money through occasional prostitution, but most were married to enlisted men. No woman could remain on a frontier post for long without receiving numerous marriage proposals. The exception to this rule was African American women working for white companies. However, African American women employed by companies in the “colored” regiments found many admirers. Enlisted men valued the presence of the laundresses, married or not. A short-lived mutiny of Company A of the 38th U.S. Colored Infantry occurred when a black laundress was accused of theft and expelled from Fort Cummings. In another case, a laundress known to be an excellent housekeeper and cook informally “married” several soldiers in succession, providing each with a well-run and cheerful home. Upon her death it was found that she was actually a man; her husband at the time committed suicide in humiliation, but the others admitted that she had been such a superb partner that they had overlooked the small detail.

Soldiers had good reason to value their hard-working wives; the women could earn more than a soldier’s monthly pay through washing, cooking, and nursing. Many enlisted couples saved thousands of dollars, enabling them to leave the

army and buy a business or farm. One sergeant’s wife, suspicious of banks, traveled east with \$3,000 in cash plastered onto her legs and covered with several layers of oilskin.

Officers also brought their wives to frontier posts when they could, but generally less than half the officers at any given post were accompanied by wives. Some unaccompanied officers left their wives with relatives in the east, while others were not married. The considerable cost of transporting a wife, children, and belongings to a frontier post was borne by the officer himself, and there were no special quarters for married officers. A family with a large number of children could be “ranked out” or ousted from its quarters by a superior officer, even a bachelor officer; the “ranked out” family would in turn rank another family out, and the shift could affect all the officers on post.

Officers’ wives did not work for pay, but they did function as the link to home and civilization for the officers, and probably for many enlisted men. They moved from post to post with their husbands, improvising furniture, rugs, and curtains from boxes and empty flour bags. They organized dinner parties and dances, holiday festivities and outings, church choirs, and literary societies; they saw their job as maintaining community life for their husbands and the other officers and men. There were usually less than half a dozen officers’ wives on a post, so any woman who refused to participate in social activities was considered to be letting down not only her husband but the entire group. Officers’ wives did not socialize with enlisted wives, but they did interact with them as employers and other capacities. An officer’s wife helped the frugal sergeant’s wife secure her money where it would not be stolen. Another officer’s wife described the drowning of a sergeant in a flash flood; from the riverbank, the man’s wife and children witnessed his death. The few officers’ wives took charge of the bereaved widow until she could be escorted home.

Officers’ wives in the nineteenth century produced a great deal of written material, letters, diaries, memoirs, describing their experi-

ences, much of which is held in archives today. While the officers' wives reveal typical nineteenth century prejudices of class, race, religion, and culture, they also provide a glimpse into a lost world of danger, beauty, adventure, and close community. Enlisted wives have not left so much material, but that which exists shows a similar enjoyment of life and a recognition that despite the considerable hardship involved, army life had much to offer courageous women.

—Anni P. Baker

See also Duston, Hannah; Ward, Nancy; Winema; Winnemucca, Sarah

References and Further Reading

- Eales, Anne Bruner. 1996. *Army Wives on the American Frontier: Living by the Bugles*. Boulder: Johnson.
- Nacy, Michele J. 2000. *Members of the Regiment: Army Officers' Wives on the Western Frontier, 1865–1890*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Stallard, Patricia. 1978. *Glittering Misery: Dependents of the Indian Fighting Army*. San Rafael, CA: Presidio.

FULD, BRACHA (1926–1946)

Jewish resistance fighter, who died helping Jewish refugees enter Palestine in 1946. Barbara (Bracha[h]) Fuld immigrated to Palestine from Berlin, Germany, in June 1939. Her father had committed suicide after Kristallnacht, but she was met at Haifa by her mother, who had preceded her.

She entered Balfour High School where she engaged in sports, joined one of the youth organizations, danced, and hiked. At the start of World War II Palestine was a League of Nations Mandate governed by the British. When Nazi General Erwin Rommel's Afrika Corps threatened Egypt the Palmach was established

May 16, 1941, as an elite ready reserve of the Haganah, a clandestine Jewish self-defense force formed in 1920. The members would work for 14 days each month on a kibbutz and then take military training for 10 days. Between 1941 and 1943 the British and the Palmach worked together in assaults on Vichy dominated Lebanon and Syria. After graduation Bracha Fuld joined the Palmach. She was sent to an officers' course for training. At age eighteen she was made an officer and put in charge of instructing Jewish women soldiers. Eventually she led her own platoons and commanded several military detachments.

After World War II the British, fearing Arab opposition, sought to prevent the many thousands of the survivors of the Holocaust from immigrating to Palestine. The Jews revolted. From 1945 to mid-1946 the Palmach worked with the Irgun in raids, robberies, and other assaults on British military and civilian establishments. Bracha fought with the Palmach in a raid on the German colony of Sarona outside of Joppa (now the Kirya in Tel Aviv). From 1946 the Palmach sought to aid Jewish immigration to Palestine.

On March 27, 1946, the *Wingate* with 250 illegal Jewish immigrants on board was to arrive from Italy. To keep the British from interfering with the illegal immigrants thousands of people came to provide cover. Bracha Fuld and her squad tried to protect a road the illegal immigrants would use. However, the squad encountered a British tank unit. In the exchange of fire Bracha was badly wounded and died in a hospital shortly afterward.

Her funeral was attended by many people in Tel Aviv. Six months after she died a ship for transporting illegal immigrants was named for her, the *S. S. Bracha Fuld*. Also Bracha Fuld Street in Tel Aviv was named in her honor.

—Andrew Jackson Waskey

See also Bruskina, Masha; Fittko, Lisa; Grossman, Chaika; Israeli Military, Women in the; Kempner, Vitka; Korczak, Rozka; Landau, Emilia; Reik, Haviva; Senesh, Hannah

References and Further Reading

- Gal, Sari. 1999. *Bracha Fuld*. Tel-Aviv: Sifriat Poalim Publishing House (in Hebrew).
 Segev, Tom. 2000. *One Palestine Complete: Jews and Arabs Under the British Mandate*. NY: Henry Holt.

- Gundersen, Joan R. 1996. *To Be Useful to the World: Women in Revolutionary America 1740–1790*. New York: Twayne Press.
 Young, Alfred F. 1999. *The Shoemaker and the Tea Party*. Boston: Beacon Press.

FULTON, SARAH BRADLEE
 (1740–1835)

“Mother of the Boston Tea Party.” Sarah Fulton is credited with having helped to organize the protest against the Tea Act, which took place in 1773. Born in Dorchester, Massachusetts, in 1740, the fourth daughter of twelve children of Samuel Bradlee and Mary Andrews, Sarah Bradlee married John Fulton in 1762. While the couple was visiting her brother Nathaniel in Boston in December 1773, Fulton and her husband participated in the Tea Party. Participants in the event, who included Sarah’s husband and four of her brothers, met at her brother’s home. Mrs. Fulton and her sister in law painted the men’s faces and put feathers in their hair to resemble Mohawk Indians. The women also welcomed the party back into the Bradlee home after they had dumped tea into Boston Harbor, helped them to clean paint off their faces and destroyed evidence of their activities. Fulton later served as a nurse during the siege of Boston and secretly carried a message to George Washington who was waiting outside the city. The mother of ten children, Fulton died in 1835.

—*Megan Elias*

See also American Revolution, Role of Women in the

References and Further Reading

- Claghorn, Charles E. 1991. *Women Patriots of the American Revolution: A Biographical Dictionary*. Metuchen, NJ, and London: The Scarecrow Press.

FULVIA (D. 40 B.C.)

Mark Antony’s wife, who played a direct role in military events. Fulvia was one of several women who played very active roles in the series of civil wars that ended the Roman Republic. As the wife of Mark Antony during the second triumvirate she was her husband’s most important agent in Italy, trying to halt the spreading authority of the rival triumvir Octavian (the future Augustus Caesar). Like Cleopatra VII of Egypt and unlike Octavian’s sister Octavia (both of whom later married Mark Antony), Fulvia played an active military role, even appearing on battlefields as her husband’s representative. Fulvia’s vilification by Roman historians shows both the triumph of Augustus’ propaganda and the deep repugnance felt by many Romans toward women who thus forgot their proper place.

Fulvia became politically active when married to her first husband, the radical politician Publius Clodius, and after his assassination it was her pleas to the Roman mob that won condemnation of his murderers. Her second husband, Gaius Scribonius Curio, was also a politician. After Julius Caesar was assassinated (43 B.C.), Fulvia’s third husband, Caesar’s loyal supporter Mark Antony, became effective co-ruler of Rome alongside Caesar’s heir Octavian. The relationship between the two was soon strained, and Antony could count on the loyalty of few people outside his immediate family. Thus Fulvia was raised to an unofficial lieutenantcy. Antony clearly trusted her; Cicero waspishly reports that Fulvia completely dominated her husband. Cicero was far from impartial because Fulvia had been responsible for his exile from Rome after



Fulvia, who contributed significantly to Roman politics as the wife of her third husband, Mark Antony. Painting by Nicolas Andre Monsiau (1754–1837). (Réunion des Musées Nationaux/Art Resource)

he had defended the murderer of her first husband. Fulvia responded to Cicero's barbed wit in kind. When Cicero was killed by Antony's troops at the end of 43, his head was given to Fulvia and she celebrated by driving her hairpins through his tongue. Still, Cicero's denunciations reveal how much Romans hated the notion of being commanded by a woman, or female public involvement in political affairs.

In 42 B.C. Antony went to the eastern part of the empire in a division of power with Octavian; he left Fulvia to look after his interests in Italy. As Octavian's authority in Italy became more and more threatening, the pro-Antony faction responded—Lucius Antonius, Antony's brother, stirred up a rebellion against Octavian. Although Fulvia opposed this policy as untimely, she rallied to the younger Antony. Fulvia raised troops and then tried to rally them for battle by appear-

ing before them, along with her children by Antony. The ensuing Perusine War went badly; most of the Antonine troops refused to fight.

Octavian and Antony made peace in 41 and both sides found it convenient to make Fulvia the scapegoat. Octavian's memoirs of the Perusine War gave all the blame to Fulvia, while Antony, by this time enjoying an affair with Cleopatra of Egypt, also accused her of rashness. Fulvia raised troops to reinforce Antony in the East; they met in Greece where Antony welcomed the warriors but coldly ordered Fulvia home. Fulvia died soon after, according to some sources, of a broken heart.

—Phyllis G. Jestice

See also Roman Women and War

References and Further Reading

- Barrett, Anthony. 2002. *Livia: First Lady of Imperial Rome*. New Haven, CT: Yale University.
 Bauman, Richard A. 1992. *Women and Politics in Ancient Rome*. London: Routledge.

FURSE, LADY KATHERINE SYMONDS (1875–1952)

Director of the first Voluntary Aid Detachment (VAD) sent to France during World War II, director of the whole Voluntary Aid Detachment Department in London, and director of the Women's Royal Naval Services (WRNS). Katherine Furse was born Katherine Symonds on November 25, 1875, in Clifton near Bristol. As a child she lived in Davos, Switzerland, and Italy. Her father, John Addington Symonds, a historian, who suffered from tuberculosis, moved his family to Switzerland in search of a better climate. Katherine had intended to become a nurse, but married the artist Charles Wellington Furse in 1900. His death from tuberculosis four years later left her with two small children.

In 1909, Furse joined the Red Cross VAD. When World War I broke out she headed the first VAD unit sent to France. She and her women set up a Rest Station at Boulogne. Her administrative ability led to her appointment in 1915 as director of the VAD home office in London. Under Furse's leadership the ranks of VAD expanded rapidly and by the end of the war numbered 90,000. In 1916 she was named commander-in-chief of the VAD and in 1917 she was honored with the Dame Grand Cross Order of the British Empire.

Furse instituted pay for VAD women, but dissatisfied with the limitations imposed upon her, as head of the VAD, and its women, she resigned in 1917. She was then asked by the British Admiralty to organize a female service for the navy. In November 1917 she was appointed director of the Women's Royal Naval Service (WRNS or WRENS) and remained its director until the WRNS was demobilized in 1919. The British Navy was the first of the British services to accept women. In the WRNS women served as cooks, clerks, wireless operators, encipherers, and electricians. The success of the WRNS led

to the formation of the Women's Auxiliary Army Corps (WAAC) and the Women's Royal Air Force.

After the war Furse worked for a travel agency in Switzerland. Her skill in skiing and her popularization of skiing among British tourists led to her presidency of the Ladies' Ski Club. She founded the Association of WRENS, became the leader of the Sea Rangers, and served as the head of the World Association of Girl Guides and Girl Scouts. She died in London on November 25, 1952.

—Bernard Cook

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I; Great Britain, Women in Service during World War II; Great Britain, Women's Royal Naval Service, Reorganization before World War II; Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's Hospitals; Stobart, Mabel

References and Further Reading

Furse, Katherine. 1940. *Hearts and Pomegranates: The Story of Forty-five Years, 1874–1920*. London: Peter Davies.

G

GALLA PLACIDIA (CA. 390–450)

Daughter of the Roman emperor Theodosius taken hostage by the Visigoths. Galla Placidia exemplifies the use of important women as political plunder in warfare. Like many women in that position, however, Galla Placidia succeeded in using her role as pawn to the advantage of the Roman Empire and her own family.

Galla Placidia was the daughter of Emperor Theodosius the Great (379–395) and his second wife Galla. With Theodosius's death, the western empire fell to Galla Placidia's half-brother Honorius, who disastrously misjudged the demands of his Visigothic allies and provoked a Germanic invasion of the Italian peninsula. The Visigoths tried for years to force the emperor to make a more favorable treaty and finally resorted to sacking the city of Rome in August 410. At some point in the process, the Visigoths captured the princess Galla Placidia, who certainly witnessed the sack of Rome and may have been living in the city at the time of the attack.

The Visigoths took Galla Placidia as a hostage. They treated her well, and she was able to influence her captors to make peace with the Romans and settle down as federates in Gaul. Apparently to confirm this new treaty, Galla Placidia married the Gothic king Athaulf. That

was not the end of her political utility. She was soon widowed and given back to the Romans as a condition of a peace treaty in 416. Once she was safely in Roman hands, her brother Honorius arranged Galla Placidia's marriage as a reward to the victorious general Constantius, cementing a political deal through which Constantius soon became coemperor with Honorius.

Galla Placidia was not allowed to play an independent political role until she was well into her thirties. In 425, her six-year-old son became Emperor Valentinian III, and Galla Placidia ruled the western empire as his regent until 437. During that period, an important part of her duty was an increasingly desperate effort to deal with growing pressure from the Germans. The Vandals invaded Roman North Africa in 429, and other Germanic peoples began to settle in Roman territory. Galla Placidia and her councilors took the only possible course, paying the Germans to fight against each other. It was not a great age in Roman military history.

Still, Galla Placidia's career is instructive. For the most part she was a political pawn, but her marriages demonstrate how women could serve as a vital link in creating peace both internally and externally during the later Roman Empire. When she finally reached a position of authority in the state, Galla Placidia's response did not

differ from that of male members of the imperial family—a deepening financial crisis made any significant military response to the German invaders impossible.

—Phyllis G. Jestice

See also Roman Women and War

References and Further Reading

- Holum, Kenneth G. 1982. *Theodosian Empresses*. Berkeley: University of California.
 Oost, Stewart. 1968. *Galla Placidia Augusta*. Chicago: University of Chicago.

GANDHI, INDIRA (1917–1984)

Indian politician, first female prime minister of the world's largest democracy, who, during her tenure, was one of the most powerful women in the world. Indira Priyadarshini Nehru was born on November 10, 1917, the only child of Pandit Jawaharlal Nehru (1889–1964), a Kashmiri brahman, and the lower-caste and uneducated Kamala Kaul in Allahabad, Uttar Pradesh province, in India. The precocious, insecure, shy, yet iron-willed child was tenacious in her beliefs and reputedly developed a Joan of Arc complex in her youth. She was raised by various family members because her father was often jailed for his independence activities. Her mother was ill with tuberculosis and died in 1936.

Gandhi attended schools in India and Switzerland. Always an indifferent student, her postsecondary education at Oxford University in England ended when she failed her Latin exam twice and refused to try a third time. Gandhi went against tradition and chose her own husband. She married Feroze Gandhi (no relation to Mahatma Gandhi) (1912–1960), a Parsi, in 1942. The newlyweds were arrested that year for subversive activity. Gandhi served nine months.

Her later paranoid attitude toward any opposition has been attributed to this experience. The couple had two sons, Rajiv Gandhi (1944–1991) and Sanjay Gandhi (1946–1980), but they were living separate lives long before her husband's death in 1960.

Indira Gandhi's father, Nehru, became the first Indian prime minister when the country gained its independence from Britain in 1947, and he served in that capacity until his death in 1964. Indira Gandhi had served as his hostess during his lengthy term as prime minister, so she was well acquainted with the intricacies of India's politics. She had also met global political leaders with whom she forged positive relationships. When Nehru died in 1964, Gandhi was under enormous pressure to serve as a politician because she was recognized as a lucid thinker and brilliant strategist. She succumbed to these pressures because she firmly believed it was her duty as Nehru's daughter to uphold his secular and inclusive ideal of India.

Gandhi was expected to become a passive puppet in the patriarchal political system, but her strong-willed actions surprised local, national, and international leaders. Following the death of her father, she served as minister of information and broadcasting in the government of Prime Minister Lal Bahdur Shastri. When Shastri died in 1966 of an unexpected heart attack, Indira Gandhi won the leadership role in the party and became prime minister. During her tenure as prime minister, Gandhi waged political war with her ministers. To centralize her own authority, she allowed them little power.

Gandhi's disagreements with the Indian National Congress (INC) party leaders, known as the Syndicate, led her to establish a new independent Congress party in 1969, under her leadership, known as the Congress O. Gandhi and her new party won landslide victories in the 1971 elections.

As prime minister, Gandhi immediately waged war on India's poverty. Like her father, she firmly believed that the British Empire caused and perpetuated the poverty in India to the advantage of Britain. In 1972, she claimed

that poverty was “the greatest polluter” during her address at the first UN World Environmental Conference in Stockholm. She greatly improved the lives of the poor masses, and they unquestioningly supported all her endeavors wholeheartedly.

Gandhi was one of the first political leaders to attempt to link developmental concerns with environmental issues. She instigated protection of India’s coastal environment. She also established a Protect the Tiger campaign. Hunters would no longer be allowed to shoot tigers, which were to be preserved in the wild. Gandhi’s Green Revolution focused on improving India’s food problems through increased grain production and the diversification of crops throughout India. These steps were intended to eliminate India’s traditional dependence on foreign grain imports. Their success led her Congress Party to sweep many states in the 1972 state elections.

Determined to show that India was a modern, technologically advanced nation, Gandhi shocked the world with India’s nuclear program. India’s first underground nuclear test was on May 18, 1974, at Pikharan Rajashan. She asserted that the program was strictly meant for peaceful purposes. Gandhi also nationalized the banking system, a move strongly criticized by Indian economists but lauded by the masses. Her motive was to eliminate the massive corruption and fraud. She became extremely unpopular with Indian’s 278 princes when she abruptly canceled their antiquated Privy Purse payments, which, in reality, were state-paid subsidies. By eliminating these payments, Gandhi saved the Exchequer at least \$6 million a year, which was diverted to more needy elements of the economy. Conversely, her empathy with the poor increased her popularity.

Gandhi involved India in the cold war when she initiated the nine-month interstate war with neighboring Pakistan, India’s enemy since partition in 1947–1948. Her involvement was instrumental in East Pakistan seceding from the rest of Pakistan, which lay more than 1,000 miles to the west. Pakistan, however, had the support of the United States under Richard Nixon, who de-

spised Gandhi. Despite her nonaligned foreign policy, she received support from the Soviet Union and was willing to confront Nixon. Nixon sent the aircraft carrier, USS *Enterprise*, to intimidate India, but it arrived too late; Gandhi had already won the war. This successful venture allowed for the formation of the independent Republic of Bangladesh, created from East Pakistan, and cemented closer ties with the Soviet Union.

A personality cult emerged around Gandhi. Despite her popularity with the masses and her triumphs, her socialist opponents repeatedly accused Gandhi of electoral fraud and procedural violations in the 1971 elections. In June 1975, the High Court of Allahabad found her guilty of election fraud. In response, she waged war against her opposition. Rather than accepting the requisite loss of her seat for a six-year term, at the behest of her controversial son Sanjay, she utilized Article 352 of the Constitution to declare a State of Emergency. Gandhi thereby garnered astonishing powers and ended democracy in India. She cracked down on any type of opposition and imprisoned dissidents. She muzzled the free press by cutting off its electricity. State legislatures were suspended. Civil liberties were completely abolished. Gandhi used the dominance of her party in parliament to enact harsh bills and amendments to the constitution without debate. Her imperious style of governance was encouraged by Sanjay, who urged her to play India’s societal, religious, and political groups against one another. Sanjay used the State of Emergency to enrich himself. He was also in charge of the large-scale sterilization program for women who had more than two children.

The Emergency lasted nineteen months. In 1977, Gandhi, due to increasing unrest and continued opposition from her political opponents, called an election. In March 1977, the parliamentary elections favored the opposition Janata Party (the People’s Front Party), a coalition of four parties headed by Moraji Desai (1896–1995), which gained 295 seats. The Congress Party won only 125 seats, and Gandhi lost hers. She then left the Congress Party and

broke with tradition to appeal openly to the Indian people. She received considerable support to establish her own Congress (I) ("I" for Indira) Party on January 2, 1978. The new government had her arrested, but, perhaps because of her popular support, she was only jailed for a short time.

In the 1980 election, Gandhi regained her seat and once again became prime minister, but she was assassinated as a result of her conflict with militant Sikhs, led by Jarnail Singh Bhindranwale and supported by Pakistan. Bhindranwale's aim was to create an independent state called Khalistan, which would be supported by Pakistan. He took control of the Sikhs' holiest shrine, the Harmandir Sahib (Golden Temple), at Amritsar on June 6, 1984. The government saw this as a terrorist act and ordered Operation Blue Star, commanded by Major General Kuldeep Singh Brar of the 9th Infantry Division, to drive Bhindranwale and his supporters from the shrine. The militants refused to leave. The resulting clash caused the deaths of 83 soldiers and 493 occupiers; scores more were injured. This episode was followed by Operation Woodrose, a mopping-up operation in which hundreds of Sikhs were killed. This last operation clearly violated human rights. The Sikhs' rage knew no bounds. Two of Gandhi's bodyguards, Beant Singh and the newly appointed Satwant Singh, both Sikhs, assassinated her at her compound on October 31, 1984. Her body was riddled with 25 bullets. Beant Singh was shot down at the assassination site, and Satwant Singh was executed in 1988. Gandhi's death caused anti-Sikh riots in New Delhi, in which some 3,000 Sikhs were burned or hacked to death.

Gandhi was succeeded by her son Rajiv. He was assassinated on May 21, 1991, by a female Tamil terrorist who opposed his policy toward the conflict in Sri Lanka. His widow, Sonia (1946–), then became the leader of the Congress Party.

—Annette Richardson

See also Kashmir, Conflict in, Women and

References and Further Reading

- Ali, Tariq. 1985. *An Indian Dynasty: The Story of the Nehru-Gandhi Family*. New York: G. P. Putnam.
- Bhatia, Vinod. 1987. *Indira Gandhi and Indo-Soviet Relations*. New Delhi: Panchsheel.
- Dhar, P. N. 2003. *Indira Gandhi, the "Emergency," and Indian Democracy*. New Delhi: Rupa, 2003.
- Gandhi, Indira. 1985. *Letters to an American Friend 1950–1984*. San Diego, CA: Harcourt Brace Jovanovich.
- Mistry, Rohinton. 1997. *A Fine Balance*. Toronto: M&S.
- Moraes, Dom. 1980. *Indira Gandhi*. Boston: Little, Brown.
- Vasudev, Uma. 2003. *Indira Gandhi: Courage under Fire*. New Delhi: Rupa.

GARIBALDI, ANITA (1821–1849)

Heroine of republican movements in South America and Italy who fought alongside her husband Giuseppe Garibaldi. Anita Garibaldi was born Ana Maria de Jesus Ribeiro da Silva on August 30, 1821, in Morrinhos, Santa Catarina, Brazil. Her father was a herdsman, and her mother worked as a household servant. Two of Anita's young brothers were given away due to the poverty of the family and died of fever soon afterward. In 1834, Anita's father died as a result of an accident at work. The following year Anita migrated with her mother to the seaport of Laguna. After Anita successfully resisted an attempted rape, her worried mother convinced her to marry a local shoemaker, who turned out to be an abusive drunkard. In 1835, republicans known as *farrapos* ("ragamuffins") in Brazil's southernmost province of Rio Grande do Sul broke with the Brazilian Empire and proclaimed an independent nation, which they were able to maintain for a decade. Anita's husband went off with Brazil's imperial cavalry in May 1839. Two months later, the *farrapos*

took Laguna, and Anita met Giuseppe Garibaldi, who had joined the farrapos in Brazil after a failed plot to create a unified, republican Italy caused him to flee his homeland in 1834. For the rest of her life, Anita remained with Garibaldi as he fought for political democracy and republican ideals.

Anita accompanied Garibaldi when he sailed northward to raid Brazilian shipping in October 1839. Upon returning to Laguna, the raiders met a Brazilian warship. Despite pleas to stay below, Anita took a musket and fought the Brazilian imperial forces. After the Brazilian government sent reinforcements to retake Santa Catarina, Garibaldi and Anita retreated overland southward with the farrapos to Rio Grande do Sul. In December 1839, Anita participated in the Battle of Santa Vitória, where she helped transport and nurse the wounded. In January 1840, Anita was in charge of munitions during the Battle of Curitibanos. She was captured but managed to escape. She rejoined Garibaldi after traveling through hostile territory for four days without food. During the Battle of São José do Norte in July 1840, Anita, eight months pregnant, commanded the cavalry. In 1841, Anita and Garibaldi decided to leave Rio Grande do Sul for Montevideo, Uruguay, which was in the midst of a civil war. Anita organized women in Montevideo to build fortifications, distribute food, and raise money. She married Garibaldi after learning of the death of her husband in 1842, the same year Garibaldi became a commander in the Uruguayan navy and assisted Uruguayans who opposed the Argentine dictator Juan Manuel de Rosas.

In December 1847, Anita sailed for Italy with the couple's three children to stay with her mother-in-law in the city of Nice. Garibaldi and his legionaries soon followed his wife across the Atlantic to continue the struggle for Italian unification. Anita helped her husband's cause through recruiting activities and arranging weapons procurement. Garibaldi's dream of a Roman Republic was established in February 1849, but Pope Pius IX called upon Austrian,



Death of Anita Garibaldi, by Fabio Fabbi (1861–1946). (Scala/Art Resource)

French, Spanish, Neapolitan, and Tuscan troops to restore him to power. Anita joined Garibaldi in Rome to defend the republic. In July 1849, she cut her hair, donned men's clothes, and retreated with Garibaldi and 4,000 volunteers following the republic's collapse. Delirious with fever and six months pregnant, Anita was carried by her husband to a farm near the city of Ravenna in the Mandriole Valley, where she died on August 4, 1849. Today her body rests atop the Janiculum Hill overlooking Rome at the foot of a large bronze equestrian monument to her memory designed by sculptor Mario Rutelli in 1932. The Brazilian city where Anita Garibaldi was born is now named in her honor.

—David M. Carletta

See also Sicilian Revolutions of 1820 and 1848, Women and the

References and Further Reading

- Sergio, Lisa. 1969. *I Am My Beloved: The Life of Anita Garibaldi*. New York: Weybright and Talley.
- Valerio, Anthony. 2001. *Anita Garibaldi: A Biography*. Westport, CT: Praeger.

GELLHORN, MARTHA
(1908–1998)

American war correspondent. Martha Gellhorn was married to Ernest Hemingway for just over five years, from November 1940 to December 1945. Both of them had peripatetic personalities and were drawn to dangerous adventures, whether reporting from the front lines in war zones or pursuing exotic game in the remote corners of the world. In addition, she was already a highly regarded journalist and fiction writer and understood what committed writing required. Yet perhaps because they were so similar in personality, their marriage was as volatile as it was short-lived. Although Gellhorn has not completely transcended her footnote status as the third and least compatible of Hemingway's four wives, her own career was too long and too consistently productive to be ignored. In the last quarter-century, critics have begun to recognize how substantive her literary achievement has been. In both her nonfiction and fiction, Gellhorn provided a perspective on human conflict remarkable for its consistent clarity and commitment to truth.

Born in St. Louis, Missouri, Gellhorn attended Bryn Mawr College. She began her writing career with the *New Republic*, and during the Great Depression, she traveled extensively throughout the United States, reporting on the ways in which the economic crisis had affected the lives of ordinary Americans. Her experiences inspired the four novellas included in *The Trouble I've Seen* (1936), a well-received collection that established her as a writer of fiction who understood and honored the distinctions between reportage and fiction, even fiction presented in the style of documentary realism. In 1937, *Colliers* hired Gellhorn to report on the Spanish Civil War, demonstrating considerable confidence in her abilities at a time when there were few female war correspondents and when she was still untested in that role. Although her sympathies were clearly with Spain's republican forces, she was able to report credibly on their excesses and on their tactical and moral failures.

Gellhorn subsequently reported for *Colliers* on the Russo-Finnish War, on the Nazi Blitz against London and other British cities, on the Normandy landings, and on the Communists' victory over the Nationalists in the Chinese civil war. For the *Atlantic Monthly*, she covered the trial of Adolf Eichmann in Israel. In the late 1960s, she reported for the British newspaper *The Guardian* on the escalating U.S. involvement in Vietnam and on the recurring conflict between Arabs and Israelis. She subsequently reported from Nicaragua on the conflict between the Sandinistas and the Contras. Her war reporting was collected in *The Face of War*, originally published in 1959 and updated in 1986. The collection permits a critical appraisal of the scope, the vivid immediacy, and the moral engagement of her reportage.

Gellhorn's peacetime reporting has been collected in *The View from the Ground* (1986) and her travel writing, along with reminiscences of her marriage to Hemingway, in *Travels with Myself and Another* (1978). Gellhorn's fiction includes *A Stricken Field* (1940), *The Heart of Another* (1941), *Liana* (1944), *The Wine of Astonishment* (1948), and *The Honeyed Peace* (1953). Her novellas have been collected in *The Short Novels of Martha Gellhorn* (1991) and *The Novellas of Martha Gellhorn* (1993).

—Martin Kich

See also Lederer, Edie; Schuyler, Philippa; Tomara, Sonia; Trotta, Liz; Watts, Jean

References and Further Reading

- Deibler, William E. 2001. "Dateline: D-Day: Ernest Hemingway Reported on Ernest Hemingway Martha Gellhorn Reported on the War Both Were Searching for the Truth." *North Dakota Quarterly* 68 (spring-summer): 295–302.
- Horwell, Veronica. (1998). "Martha Gellhorn: A Witness to Our World at War" *Brick* 59 (spring): 53–56.
- Lassner, Phyllis. 1998. "'Camp Follower of Catastrophe': Martha Gellhorn's World War II Challenge to the Modernist War." *Modern Fiction Studies* 44 (fall): 792–812.

McLoughlin, Kate. 2004. "Bringing War Home: Martha Gellhorn's Second World War Correspondence." *Symbiosis: A Journal of Anglo-American Literary Relations* 8 (October): 156–164.

Spanier, Sandra Whipple. 2002. "Rivalry, Romance, and War Reporters: Martha Gellhorn's *Love Goes to Press* and the *Collier's* Files." *Hemingway and Women: Female Critics and the Female Voice*, edited by Lawrence R. Broer and Gloria Holland, 256–275. Tuscaloosa: University of Alabama Press.

GERMANY, ARMED FORCES
(WEHRMACHT), WORLD WAR II
ATROCITIES OF

Atrocities committed by the German military during World War II indiscriminately against men and women, who, particularly in the east, were objectified and dehumanized. For decades historians maintained that the German armed forces during World War II, collectively called the *Wehrmacht*, were simple soldiers who had the misfortune of fighting for a criminal regime. Historians tended to separate the *Wehrmacht* from the specialized units that accompanied it into battle such as the SS, the Secret Police (Gestapo), and the infamous police battalions responsible for murdering entire Jewish communities on the eastern front.

Soon after the war, memoirs from leading German generals seeking to distance themselves from the Nazi regime flooded the publishing market. U.S. and British historians tended to rely on these accounts and portrayed the *Wehrmacht* as an honorable institution that was hijacked by a clique of criminals. One of the underlying reasons for this sympathetic portrayal was the cold war. The perceived threat from the Soviet Union necessitated that West Germany become a full partner in the defense of western Europe. Denigrating the *Wehrmacht*, many of whose generals were needed to rebuild the new German military

(now called the *Bundeswehr*), was counterproductive. There was also a sense that the Nuremberg Trials properly identified and punished those responsible for Nazi Germany's crimes during the war. Too many historians accepted the notion that the *Wehrmacht* was not involved in the widespread atrocities committed against civilians and soldiers. For the most part, these atrocities occurred on the eastern front against the Soviet people, specifically Jews.

By the mid-1980s historians started to delve further into *Wehrmacht* activities on the eastern front and quickly learned that regular army units were intimately involved in committing atrocities. The *Wehrmacht* supported the Nazi regime's goal of racially reordering Europe and conquering *Lebensraum* (living space) for Germany in the East. Every organ of the German government was given a role in accomplishing this task, including the *Wehrmacht*. In 1934 all officers and enlisted men of the *Wehrmacht* personally swore a loyalty oath to Adolf Hitler. Most did so enthusiastically because they considered Hitler an advocate of military spending and saw a chance to return the military to greatness. The oath bound the *Wehrmacht* tightly to the Nazi regime and ensured its participation in every phase of Hitler's plan to destroy European Jewry and dismantle what he called Judeo-Bolshevism in the Soviet Union. Even without the *Wehrmacht's* ideological affinity for National Socialism, the German military already had a past record of committing atrocities against civilians during World War I, specifically in Belgium and parts of eastern Europe. Most of the incidents during World War I were isolated, but this was not the case during World War II. Mass executions, population removals, poor treatment of prisoners, and the use of slave labor were *Wehrmacht* policies handed down from generals to subordinates in an organized fashion.

The *Wehrmacht* prepared for a different sort of war against the Soviet Union years before the conflict began. According to Nazi leadership, the future war against Poland and the Soviet Union was to be one of annihilation. Beginning with the invasion of Poland in September 1939, the

Wehrmacht carried with it into battle orders from Hitler to liquidate the Polish intelligentsia so that they would not threaten the German settlement of Polish territory. The Wehrmacht applied broad definitions of who could be considered a partisan and treated large numbers of civilians as legitimate military targets. This definition included Jews, who by virtue of being Jewish were considered automatic threats to the Wehrmacht. Most people identified as partisans were executed, a task shared by the Wehrmacht, the SS, the Gestapo, and police battalions created to occupy territory after the Wehrmacht moved forward. Although many Wehrmacht generals disapproved of their soldiers participating in executions and otherwise enforcing a harsh occupation (mostly for reasons of limited resources), evidence shows that Wehrmacht units were used interchangeably with the SS to execute Jews, Polish clergy, and intellectuals.

Once Germany invaded the Soviet Union in July 1941, the Wehrmacht was already experienced at fighting a war of racial annihilation. The Wehrmacht had to guard against disorder in the ranks while still fulfilling its ugly task of killing large numbers of civilians. Letters and films taken by Wehrmacht soldiers at the front reveal that daily life on the eastern front involved treating civilians and enemy soldiers alike as subhumans worthy of extreme treatment. One of the more infamous Wehrmacht policies was to execute a large number of citizens for every Wehrmacht soldier killed by partisans or resistance fighters. This policy applied to all of Germany's occupied territories, but it was enforced more regularly in the East. For example, if 5 soldiers were killed by partisans, the Wehrmacht might kill 500 civilians from the town where the partisans allegedly lived. Such policies typified the Wehrmacht's conduct on the eastern front in particular, especially because it regarded the Soviet people, not just the military, as a dangerous enemy.

Although the Wehrmacht did not specifically target women when committing atrocities, it had no qualms about executing women and children during reprisals for actions taken against its sol-

diers. Films taken by Wehrmacht soldiers show soldiers putting nooses around the necks of Russian women accused of spying and attaching signs labeling them "Jewish cows" or other insults. Men and women had different experiences in the ghettos and concentration camps erected by other organs of the National Socialist state, but the Wehrmacht's atrocities were characterized by their speed, brutality, and indifference to artificialities such as gender. The Wehrmacht viewed entire populations as enemies and treated them accordingly.

—Brian E. Crim

See also Einsatzgruppen; Holocaust and Jewish Women

References and Further Reading

- Bartov, Omer. 1992. "The Conduct of War: Soldiers and the Barbarization of Warfare." *The Journal of Modern History* 64:32–45.
- . 1992. *Hitler's Army: Soldiers, Nazis, and War in the Third Reich*. New York: Oxford University Press.
- Forster, Jürgen. 1981. "The Wehrmacht and the War of Extermination against the Soviet Union." *Yad Vashem Studies* 14:7–33.
- Rossino, Alexander B. 2003. *Hitler Strikes Poland: Blitzkrieg, Ideology, and Atrocity*. Lawrence: University Press of Kansas.

GERMANY, PEASANTS' WAR

See Peasant's War

GERMANY, REVOLUTION OF 1918–1919, WOMEN IN THE

Role of women in the German Revolution and the gains made by women as a result of the establishment of the Weimar Republic (1919–

1933). As a result of the German Revolution of 1918–1919, women enjoyed more political freedom than ever before in German history: they went from possessing no political power in the Wilhelminian monarchy to helping form a new republican government in which they could vote and hold political office. Nevertheless, their overall participation and influence was minimal in comparison to men's roles in and sway on the revolution. Women held few leadership positions during the rebellion and thus were often in no position to influence major political decisions. Those who were able to play important roles frequently found their policies opposed by male colleagues. Women's responsibilities in political parties were often limited to issues such as social welfare and education, which deeply concerned many women but left them marginalized in the political process. Many female activists blamed feminine passivity and years of patriarchy for the failure of women to engage more in the political process. On the other hand, in a reaction to the horrors of World War I, many advocates of the women's movement believed that female, motherly nature could better combat violence than the male disposition. Women needed to become more politically active to ensure that a war such as World War I did not occur again.

Women in centrist and conservative political parties and groups sought suffrage and supported the Weimar National Assembly of January 1919 and the Weimar Republic that was born from it. Women in leftist parties supported the workers' and soldiers' councils that were formed in 1917 and 1918 along the Soviet model and that, for the most part, demanded the economic, political, and social democratization of Germany. Indeed, many women espoused the construction of councils to educate women politically because they had historically been excluded from the political process. These women's councils were either unpopular or never truly materialized. Unfortunately, participation of women in the workers' and soldiers' councils was rare.

The most politically active woman in the revolution was Rosa Luxemburg. Along with Karl

Liebknecht, she led the Spartacist movement and Communist Party (KPD) during the revolution until her murder by Freikorps troops in January 1919. Although not deeply involved in revolutionary events because of health problems, Clara Zetkin of the Independent Socialist Party (USPD) and later the KPD was one of the theoretical leaders of the women's movement. She believed that only a radical Marxist upheaval of society would bring all human beings egalitarianism and, thus, all women true equality. Another important leftist women leader was Käthe Duncker, who, along with Rosa Luxemburg, was one of two female members of the thirteen-member Spartacist Central Committee. Other prominent women to support the council movement, but not considered as leftist as Luxemburg, Zetkin, and Duncker, were Toni Sender who was a member of the USPD and active in Frankfurt am Main during the revolution and Anita Augspurg and Lida Gustava Heymann who were members of the Council Congress in Bavaria.

Many female members of the centrist Social Democratic Party (SPD), of the conservative German Democratic Party (DDP), and of bourgeois women's groups hailed democratic reforms that led to the creation of the Weimar Republic as the true revolution that had occurred in Germany. Luise Zietz and Marie Juchacz were both Social Democratic delegates at the Weimar National Assembly. Juchacz was the first woman to speak at the assembly in February 1919 and thus the first woman ever to address a German parliament. Marianne Weber, the wife of Max Weber, became a member of the Baden National Assembly as a German Democrat, and Helene Lange and Minna Cauer, both long-time activists in the women's movement, became members of the DDP in 1918. Getrud Bäumer, the chairperson from 1910 until 1918 of the largest women's organization at the time, the League of German Women, supported the National Assembly as a means to combat the chaos that the revolution and World War I had introduced in Germany.

World War I was a catalyst for the revolution. During the war, women first began to experience

economic and political freedoms. In factories they replaced men who were drafted to fight and, as a result, began working in sectors of the workforce in which employers had not previously engaged them. The length and loss of the war, hunger and even starvation, long workdays, sole responsibility for raising children, and war-related deaths of family members led women to strike for better working conditions, higher wages, an end to the war, and political freedoms. They believed that through these sacrifices they had earned rights such as suffrage and political office.

Indeed, the Weimar Constitution guaranteed women suffrage under articles 17 and 22, and article 109 ensured legal and social equality with men. Other freedoms for women that resulted from the revolution were the lifting of the statutory celibacy for all female civil servants, their ability to become judges and jurors, and the payment of wages during pregnancy. Unfortunately, many of the freedoms gained by women during the revolution and the Weimar Republic were revoked during the world economic crisis in 1929 and by the National Socialist government after 1933.

—Chad Wallo

See also Luxemburg, Rosa

References and Further Reading

- Arendt, Hans-Peter, and Peter Kuhlbrodt. 1988. "Die Proletarische Frauenbewegung in der Novemberrevolution 1918/19" [Proletarian women's movement in the November Revolution]. *Beiträge zur Geschichte der Arbeiterbewegung* 30, no. 6: 761–773.
- Grebing, Helga. 1994. *Frauen in der deutschen Revolution 1918/19* [Women in the German Revolution]. Heidelberg: Stiftung Reichspräsident-Friedrich-Ebert-Gedenkstätte.
- Hervé, Florence. 1983. "Novemberrevolution und Nachkriegskrise 1918–1923." In *Geschichte der deutschen Frauenbewegung* [History of the German women's movement], edited by Florence Hervé, 119–128. Cologne: PahlßRugenstein.

GERMANY, SPECIAL ACTION GROUPS

See Einsatzgruppen

GERMANY, WOMEN AND THE HOME FRONT, WORLD WAR I

Impact of World War I on German women. The role of German women in World War I was characterized by increased participation in the economy, active involvement in the wartime political unrest, and the struggle to survive as food, clothing, and heat became scarce.

For German women, World War I was an introduction into a new kind of warfare that depended as much on the home front as it did the battlefronts. The role of women in the economic, political, and military planning of the German nation underwent tremendous changes. Women replaced conscripted men, producing the goods of war, keeping production going and releasing valuable reserves to the military. Government propaganda focused on women because they were the principle home-front population during the war. Women were the main consumers of German goods, and their support was necessary to keep the economy strong.

One way that women coped with the deprivations of the war was through participation in the activities of social organizations. Social organizations served as a source of comfort and camaraderie for women and played a vital role in mobilizing the women on the home front. Gertrud Bäumer asked the nearly 600,000 members of the Federation of German Women's Associations (BDF) to put aside their demands for suffrage and for greater access to education and state employment in the name of national solidarity. BDF members worked in soup kitchens and hospital wards, tended to the rising number of orphans, and knitted woolen

clothing for the troops at the front (Herwig 1997, 35). The largest German nursing movement, the Vaterlandische Frauenverein (Union of Women of the Fatherland), known as the Kaiserin's (Empress's) army, had 3,000 branches and 800,000 members in 1914, and in all there were more than 6,300 bodies of nurses with 1.1 million members (Strachan 2001, 109).

The expanded presence of women in the workforce during the war is often noted as one of the significant results of the war. After the first military actions of the war proved indecisive, German society was mobilized for total war. The need for more soldiers meant that many men were conscripted from important industrial and manufacturing jobs. To replace them, the German government called upon women to enter the workforce. Some women answered that call. Machine shops recruited over 400,000 women, and ammunitions plants recruited 600,000 women. At the Krupp works, where no women were employed before the war, 30,000 women were added to a workforce of 80,000 men by 1918 (Herwig 1997, 294).

Although it is true that the number of women entering the workforce for the first time did grow substantially, this was not a departure from prewar trends (Daniel 1997, 37). What did change was where women worked. A large portion of the women who entered the armaments and industrial workforces were already employed at the start of the war, many within the textile and luxury goods industries. When it became apparent that the war would not be short, the production of textiles and luxury goods were reduced or banned in favor of increased production of goods necessary for the war. As much as 40 percent of the women who had worked in the textile industry in 1914 were relocated to more important industries.

The drives for conscription often met with substandard results, largely due to the handling of wartime benefits and aid. The German state faced a conundrum: the financial support of the wives of German soldiers at the front un-

dermined efforts to mobilize German women to work. Women assisted by the government found it economically beneficial to remain unemployed or to work from the home. The government's attempts to save money by decreasing aid to women who worked only increased their incentives to stay home and watch the family.

Horrible work conditions also undermined government efforts to increase female employment. Women who entered the workforce for the first time often experienced hostility or apathy. Men resented women being in the workplace. Women were constantly reminded that they were there only temporarily and that they were too weak to do good work, and they were denied technical training. The new types of work that women undertook were often difficult and dangerous. Work environments were not safe, and hunger and extremely long shifts made the new workers more susceptible to accidents. In the final analysis, given the horrible atmosphere women faced, the hostility of employers and coworkers, and the lack of progress made in women's place in the workforce, there was no true emancipation of female German workers during World War I.

Because women made up the majority of the home-front population, they bore the brunt of the economic deprivations caused by the war and the blockade. The task of procuring food for themselves and their families was made difficult by long lines, constant shortages, war profiteering, hoarding, and government propaganda that often blamed women for the problems. The Allied blockade of the German coast and the trade embargo on the continent were quickly felt on the German home front. Germany had imported a large part of its food before the war, and many shortages appeared during the first winter. For women, this meant that it became increasingly difficult to find enough food for themselves and their families. Particularly among the lower and lower middle classes, everyday food staples such as bread and potatoes became unattainable or

unaffordable. In an effort to calm the growing protests over food shortages, the Imperial Grain Authority (established in November 1914) issued ration cards for bread in January 1915, while setting a price ceiling for potatoes (Davis 2000, 47). The attempt to use rationing to quell the crisis was ineffectual. Complaints of unfairly dispersed rations and the lack of adequate supplies to meet the minimum rations of the population doomed the system. The only thing rationing accomplished was to further place the blame for food shortages on the frivolousness of women.

The hunger women felt in 1914 only worsened in the coming years. In 1916, early frosts spoiled the potato harvest, leaving many women undernourished and scrambling to stretch their rations to feed the family. Turnips, a vegetable of poor nutritive value and even less taste, was used to replace the potato. It was that hated food that gave its name to the brutal winter of 1916. The Turnip Winter, which saw temperatures dip below -25 degrees Fahrenheit, was a low point for many on the home front. Many women survived on diets just above starvation level. Increased work and longer shifts made queuing up in food lines even more difficult and aggravating. Lack of fuel and clothing exacerbated the poor diets, making the last years of the war extremely miserable for women in Germany (Davis 2000, 180–187).

Throughout the war, government propaganda was an important part of the relationship between women and the state. Propaganda was used to mobilize German society and to extol women to support the war effort. Women often faced hostile and disparaging expositions as well. The government blamed the food shortages of 1914 on the improvidence of German women. They were seen negatively by many of the men at the front who bemoaned the luxury in which women lived (Herwig 1997, 265). In short, women were often viewed as the culprits for the many problems on the home front.

The struggle to survive made women an important source of discontent during the war. Al-

though some women did take part in the social and political revolts that occurred during the war, they played a far more important role in the numerous food riots that plagued the German government. For the most part, these riots were small incidents of outraged and desperate women storming food depots, shops, and food lines. As the war dragged on, however, rioters began to link calls for food (particularly bread) with calls for peace, putting the government in a difficult position. They had to stop the riots without resorting to violence or creating a backlash on the home front or the warfront. The last thing the government needed was word getting to the frontline soldiers that their wives, sisters, mothers, and daughters were being repressed. The resolution of those protests, many times in favor of the women, tended to exacerbate the situation, as it showed women that this was a possible way to get food (Davis 2000, 2). The government was never able to overcome food shortages during the war, and shortages and food riots continued to be paramount issues on the home front.

—Christopher Griffin

See also Germany, Revolution of 1918–1919, Women in the; Kollwitz, Kathe; Luxemburg, Rosa

References and Further Reading

- Daniel, Ute. 1997. *The War from Within: German Working-Class Women in the First World War*. Translated from the German by Margareta Reis. Oxford and New York: Berg.
- Davis, Belinda J. 2000. *Home Fires Burning: Food, Politics, and Everyday Life in World War I Berlin*. Chapel Hill and London: University of North Carolina Press.
- Herwig, Holger H. 1997. *The First World War: Germany and Austria-Hungary, 1914–1918*. New York: St. Martin's Press.
- Strachan, Hew. 2001. *To Arms*. Vol. 1 of *The First World War*. New York: Oxford University Press.

GERMANY, WOMEN AND THE HOME FRONT, WORLD WAR II

Impact of World War II on German women. During World War II, German women actively participated in the war through social organizations, employment, and survival on the home front. Many women supported the regime and its war. Some opposed and resisted it. But all women in Germany bore the brunt of the hardships that beset the home front, including food and material shortages, destruction caused by air raids, grief caused by losses of loved ones on the warfronts, and the retributive actions taken by invading armies.

German women constituted the majority of the home-front population during World War II and were the principle target of many of the Nazi regime's domestic policy initiatives. Adolf Hitler, chancellor of the Third Reich, was adamant that during the war, women would not be the source of difficulties on the home front that they had been during World War I. His policies on state support for mothers and wives of soldiers were implemented to achieve dual purposes: to keep women (and consequently their husbands) content and to transform German womanhood into the Nazi ideal.

Although Germany had been one of the most progressive feminist societies during the early twentieth century, women generally acquiesced to Hitler's desires. Many women experienced the implementation of Nazi gender policies not as aggression against women but as a welcome return to traditional values (Gellately 2001, 10–11). The elevation and reverence of motherhood showed the regime's antifeminism was not inherently antiwoman. Some Nazi party officials did not hide their hostility toward women. Their insulting rhetoric was often discounted, however, either as exceptional in an otherwise agreeable party platform or because the impassioned speeches of the true leader of the Nazi Party, Adolf Hitler, made clear his sympathy for the plight of women (Koonz 1987, 58–61). Many women found comfort in the ideals of the Nazi

Party that relegated women's lives to the private sphere of *Kinder, Kirche, Küche* (children, church, kitchen).

Although the Nazi ideal was for women to get married and create large families, many women were unable to do so. The overall surplus of women in Germany and the lack of available men on the home front meant that many German women were single during the war. Most of these women, especially those from the lower classes, were employed before and during the war. The state targeted those who had escaped employment for recruiting drives, with limited success.

Prior to the war, married women were encouraged to leave the workforce to start or expand families. The government gave financial support based on family size. To women in low-paying jobs, with working husbands, significant government assistance in exchange for unemployment was a good deal. The success of the program has often been debated. Although many married women left the labor force, the overall percentage of women employed in Germany was far higher than in Great Britain or the United States (Gellately 2001, 151).

During the war, unemployed married women who did not have children often created a great deal of resentment among those who were forcibly employed. Women of the lower class, even those with young children, could not afford to live off government benefits. Following long hours of work, working women had to stand in long lines for their rations, while unemployed women were able to get the choicest provisions. Most of those unemployed, childless women had the financial means not to work, giving the resentment clear class undertones. Attempts to recruit those women were largely unsuccessful, in part because the Nazi leadership refused to make employment compulsory (Noakes and Pridham 2000, 316–325).

Rather than force married women and mothers into employment, the Nazi regime imported millions of prisoners of war and slave laborers from conquered and satellite nations. Extensive

efforts were made to prevent foreign workers from defiling the German women who shared common workspace. The vast majority of the Gestapo's manpower was directed at controlling foreign workers and preventing relationships with German women (Gellately 2001, 152). As the war dragged on and times became more desperate, some women did form sexual relationships with non-German men. Many of the denunciations made against women to the Gestapo involved charges of sexual relations with foreigners (Gellately 2001, 197).

Many women found an outlet for their creativity and leadership through work in Nazi social organizations. The umbrella organization for women was the National Socialist Frauenschaft/Deutsches Frauenwerk (Women's Organization/Women's Work, NSF/DFW). Led by Gertrud Scholtz-Klink, the NSF/DFW acted as a policing organization for women, its main task to indoctrinate, train, control, and organize German women for the needs of the state. Although part of the Nazi Party apparatus, the NSF/DFW did not provide women with avenues to influence political decisions. The leaders within the organizations were given power to operate within the sphere of women but were always subordinate to the command of the male-dominated party. Despite the lack of real power, women participated in the programs of the antifeminist Nazi state in far greater numbers than in the Weimar Republic, which had first enfranchised them (Grunberger 1995, 258). For the most part, women found that the organizations served as support networks, gave them activities to feel useful in the war effort, and provided social benefits for the community.

The situation on the home front never approached the desperation experienced during World War I. Although shortages were felt, women did not suffer from the starvation and disease women had to cope with from 1914 to 1918. In part, this was due to prewar preparation for a wartime economy. It was also due to the importations of millions of prisoners of war, slave labor, and trade with satellite nations,

which was far greater than it had been during World War I. Yet the black market was just as strong in 1945 as it had been in 1918. An extensive bartering network existed between the rural and urban areas. Urban women were able to exchange goods that were scarce in the country for food. In this way, many women were able to make ends meet throughout the war (Stephenson 2001, 99).

German women were active among the resistance movements of the war. Sophie Scholl is perhaps the best-known female resister, famous for her actions as part of the White Rose movement in Munich. Another famous act of resistance, the Rosenstrasse Protest in Berlin in 1943, was made up of several hundred German women protesting the arrest of their Jewish husbands. Many women also participated in underground resistance movements, providing food, shelter, and aid to conspirators and even taking over the operations of resistance movements after the men had been arrested. The Gestapo watched the wives of known conspirators closely; many were harassed, interrogated, or arrested. Many wives of the conspirators in the July 1944 bomb plot were arrested.

Woman of non-Aryan descent suffered through a harsh existence during the war. Those of targeted social and ethnic groups were not spared the brutality of the Holocaust. Jewish women suffered under tremendous strain as they worked to support and feed their families while warding off the hopelessness of their existence. Eventually, those who were not protected as privileged or intermarried Jews were deported to concentration camps. They were separated from their families during the roundups and rarely saw them again. Even those who were protected from the Holocaust had to suffer meek existences, isolated from society. Women of other repressed groups, such as Jehovah's Witnesses, Roma and Sinti, and the handicapped suffered fates similar to the men.

As the tide of the war turned against Germany, the home front came under increasing strain. The Allies incessantly bombed Germany

from 1942 onward. Many women were killed in air raids, many were made homeless, and many were forced to relocate to the interior. Yet even as the air attacks of the Allies penetrated farther into Germany, a greater fear loomed on the horizon: the Red Army. Stories about the Soviet military forces' inhumanity and barbarity toward women had filtered into Germany during the war. Joseph Goebbels's propaganda machine created some of the stories to dehumanize the Soviets. Much of it came from soldiers returning from the front, refugees, and news reports. In late 1944 and early 1945, German women braced themselves for the Soviet onslaught. What occurred barely eclipsed the worst predictions as the Soviet army raped millions of German women in East Prussia and Berlin (Beevor 2002, 410). Tens of thousands of women died from the attacks or committed suicide.

—*Christopher Griffin*

See also Forced Labor, Nazi Germany; Harnack-Fish, Mildred; Holocaust and Jewish Women; Jehovah's Witnesses in Nazi Germany; Kuckhoff, Greta; Rape: Red Army in World War II; Roma/Sinti; Rosenstrasse and Intermarriage of Jews and German Gentiles; Scholl, Sophie; Scholtz-Klink, Gertrud; Schulze-Boysen, Libertas

References and Further Reading

- Beevor, Anthony. 2002. *The Fall of Berlin*. New York: Viking Penguin.
- Gellately, Robert. 2001. *Backing Hitler: Consent and Coercion in Nazi Germany*. New York: Oxford University Press.
- Grunberger, Richard. 1995. *The 12-Year Reich: A Social History of Nazi Germany 1933–1945*. New York: Da Capo Press.
- Koonz, Claudia. 1987. *Mothers in the Fatherland: Women, the Family, and Nazi Politics*. New York: St. Martin's Press.
- Noakes, Jeremy, and Geoffrey Pridham. 2000. *Nazism: 1919–1945*. 4 vols., 5th ed. Exeter, England: Exeter University Press.
- Stephenson, Jill. 2001. *Women in Nazi Germany*. London: Pearson Education.

GHESQUIÈRE, VIRGINIE (CA. 1755–1854)

Soldier in the French army between 1806 and 1812. Virginie Ghesquière served in the French army during the First French Empire (1804–1814) of Napoleon Bonaparte and is one of the first French women to become a member of the French Legion of Honor.

Ghesquière had a brother who was a soldier in Napoleon's army. When he fell in battle in 1806, Ghesquière, disguised as a man, took his place as a soldier in his old regiment, the 27th Line regiment. She participated in various campaigns and fought in the Peninsular War under the command of General Jean-Andoche Junot, taking part in the invasion of Portugal in 1807.

Ghesquière was distinguished many times for bravery and devotion in her military career. She was eventually promoted to the rank of sergeant. Six years after having joined the army, when she was wounded in battle in 1812, her gender was discovered. She was immediately dismissed. Nevertheless, for her contribution in the Napoleonic Wars, Ghesquière was awarded upon dismissal what is now recognized as the French Legion of Honor—and by Napoleon himself. This highest French national order had been created by Bonaparte while he was First Consul of France (1799–1804) and was approved by the General Assembly on May 19, 1802. It is believed that Napoleon did not intend for women to receive the award. The exclusion of women was not addressed in the statutes of the order, however, and there is no officially recorded mention anywhere that women should have been excluded. In fact, Napoleon had already decorated women for heroic behavior in the Italian Campaign of 1796–1797. Later he continued to award women with Legion of Honor insignia but without any official written record. Only recently has there been public effort to acknowledge these women as legitimate *chevaliers* of the French Legion of Honor.

At the time of Ghesquière's dismissal from the army, an article about the discovery of her

gender was published in the October 31, 1812, issue of *Journal de l'Empire*. This article is said to have led to the composition and subsequent dissemination of a popular song about her exploits. This song seems to be the source of her nickname, *jolie sergent* ("pretty sergeant"). Ghesquière's year of birth is unknown, but she is believed to have been almost 100 years old when she passed away in 1854.

—*Georgia Tres*

See also Agustina de Aragón; Fernig, Félicité, and Fernig, Théophile; Great Britain, Women in Service in the Seventeenth, Eighteenth, and Early Nineteenth Centuries; Plater, Emilia

References and Further Reading

Déon-Beeière, Danièle. 2002. *Les femmes et la Légion d'Honneur: Depuis sa création* [Women of the Legion of Honor since its creation]. Paris: Les Éditions de l'Officine.

GIERCZAK, EMILIA (1925–1945)

Polish soldier in the all-women's Emilia Plater Independent Women's Battalion in World War II. Second Lieutenant Emilia Gierczak (called Elka) distinguished herself during the fighting on the Pomeranian Rampart and was killed while leading an assault group in Kolobrzeg (formerly Kolberg) in Pomerania. She was a platoon commander of the 10th Infantry Regiment of the Polish army formed in the Soviet Union. She served in the Emilia Plater Independent Women's Battalion, initially subordinated to Tadeusz Kosciuszko 1st Division, which was created in the Soviet Union in 1943. She was among the battalion of women soldiers trained at the Infantry Officers' School in Riazan to command companies and platoons of the new Polish army. Women were selected for officer

training because of the drastic shortage of Polish male officers, in part caused by the Soviet massacres of Polish prisoners of war in the Kozel'sk, Starobel'sk, and Ostashkov camps, as well as the unsuitability for officer training of many of the male recruits of the Polish army.

Polish patriotism was an important element in Gierczak's upbringing. It was assumed that Gierczak's parents (Jozef and Leontyna) had named her Emilia because the name was made famous by the legendary Emilia Plater, a leader in the 1830–1831 Polish uprising against Russian rule whose death was romanticized by the great nineteenth-century Polish poet Adam Mickiewicz in his famous poem, "Death of a Colonel."

An eyewitness to Gierczak's death on March 17, 1945, wrote, "She was charged with a difficult task—to capture a stoutly defended building. She could have waited until it got dark to do this, but she didn't want anyone to think that she was afraid. . . . She was never to learn that the mission was accomplished, for she was hit in the forehead as she moved up to embolden her men, who had earlier gone to ground, by stirring them to action by her personal example. So the devil himself took possession of the platoon! Henceforward, no obstacle could deter the men from avenging the death of their woman-commander!" (Jagielski 1979, 14–15).

Gierczak's memorabilia, including her last letter to her mother, are on display in the Military Museum in Kolobrzeg, a seaside resort and port on the Baltic formerly known by its German name, Kolberg. A street in Kolobrzeg as well as a number of schools and Polish scouting organizations have been named after Gierczak.

—*Kazimiera J. Cottam*

See also Polish Independent Women's Battalion, Emilia Plater

References and Further Reading

Cottam, K[azimiera] Jean. 1986. "Veterans of Polish Women's Combat Battalion Hold a Reunion." *Minerva: Quarterly Report on Women and the Military* 4, no. 4 (winter): 1–7.

- . Kazimiera J[ean]. 2003. "Gierczak, Emilia." In *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*, Vol. 1, edited by Reina Pennington, 184. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press.
- Jagielski, B. 1979. "Było to w Kolobrzegu ..." [This happened in Kolobrzeg]. *Zolnierz Polski* 10 (March 11): 14–15.

GILLARS, MILDRED ELIZABETH

See "Axis Sally"

GIZYCKI, KRYSZYNA SKARBK

See Granville, Christine

GOLDSTEIN, VIDA
(1869–1949)

Teacher, journalist, and peace campaigner. Vida Goldstein is the most noted Australian suffragette. Born in Portland, Victoria, in 1869, one of five children, Vida Goldstein completed her education at Presbyterian Ladies College and decided afterward to dedicate her life to social issues and peace. Editor of the *Women's Sphere* (1900–1905), she emerged on the Australian political scene by the turn of the century and became the first woman in the British Empire to campaign for a legislative body. Goldstein was a candidate for the Victoria Senate from 1903 to 1917. Although she was never elected, her several electoral campaigns received noteworthy press attention. A pioneer feminist and delegate from Australasia

to the International Woman Suffrage Conference (Washington, D.C., 1902), Goldstein contributed to the foundation of many women's organizations including the National Council of Women. Politically independent, Goldstein was the militant figure of the Women's Political Association, which, although not Marxist, opposed imperialism, and propagated her ideas in *The Women Voter*, a magazine later frequently censured by the authorities for its antimilitaristic views. A passionate pacifist despite verbal insults and physical intimidations, Goldstein was chairperson of the Australian Peace Alliance (APA). During World War I, she founded a major peace movement, the Women's Peace Army (WPA) on July 15, 1915, with the famous mottos "I Didn't Raise My Son to Be a Soldier" and "We War against War." On October 21, 1916, a WPA anticonscription demonstration attracted 80,000 people to a rally in the heart of Melbourne. Following World War I, Goldstein participated in the Women's International Peace Conference at Zurich (1919). During the interwar years, then well recognized as a devoted Christian Socialist, she incessantly promoted the cause of complete disarmament and advocated the pursuit of better living standards. Her final campaign was an antinuclear meeting in Melbourne in the summer of 1946. She died at age 80 in 1949 in South Yarra (Melbourne). A tree was planted in the grounds of the Victorian Parliament to honor her accomplishments.

—*Jérôme Dorvidal*

See also Moore, Eleanor May; Street, Jessie

References and Further Reading

- Bomford, Janette M. 1994. *That Dangerous and Persuasive Woman*. Melbourne: Melbourne University Press.
- Daniels, Kay, and Mary Murnane. 1980. *Uphill All the Way: Documentary History of Women in Australia*. Brisbane, Australia: University of Queensland Press.

GONNE, MAUD
(1865–1953)

Irish political activist and polemicist, founder of Inghínidhe na hEireann (Daughters of Erin), campaigner for social justice, and inspirational figure for Irish nationalists. Maud Gonne was born in Surrey, England, the daughter of Colonel Thomas Gonne and Edith Cooke. Her father was part of the British forces in Ireland, yet Gonne's autobiography, *A Servant of the Queen*, described him as unconventional, favoring Irish self-government. Edith Cooke died in 1871, and in 1886, after her father's death, Gonne inherited sufficient wealth to live independently. Suffering from incipient tuberculosis, she went to France to recuperate, met the politician Lucien Millevoye, and began a "passionate alliance," working jointly for Irish freedom and the regaining of Alsace and Lorraine for France. Their son Georges died in infancy; Iseult, born in 1894, was referred to in public as Gonne's niece. Although Gonne discovered her sex debarred her from membership of Irish nationalist organizations, male leaders recognized her beauty and wealth as assets. She was sent to Donegal in 1891 to campaign against peasant evictions. She had been introduced to John O'Leary, veteran of the 1848 Young Ireland rebellion and a supporter of the use of physical force. She met the poet William Butler Yeats in 1899 and remained his muse for decades while spurning marriage. They worked together campaigning for political prisoner release, commemoration of the 1798 United Irish Rising, and developing a National Literary Society. Her paper, *L'Irlande libre* (Free Ireland, 1897–1898), carried her polemic on Queen Victoria, "The Famine Queen." The Boer War against British domination in South Africa (1899–1901) provided the opportunity to mobilize anti-British sentiment in Ireland, and Gonne helped found the Transvaal Committee. Inghínidhe na hEireann, formed in April 1900, provided women with the opportunity for political involvement. Gonne broke with Millevoye

in 1900, and on meeting John MacBride, who was applauded for his role in leading the Irish fight against the British in South Africa, decided to marry. In 1903, after converting to Catholicism, she married MacBride in Paris. Their son, Séan, was born in 1904, but she filed for divorce in 1905, returning only intermittently to Ireland. Inghínidhe published *Bean na hEireann* (Woman of Ireland, 1908–1911) and campaigned for free school meals. During World War I, Gonne and Iseult, exiled in France, nursed the wounded. On May 5, 1916, MacBride was executed as a leader of the Easter Rising, and in 1918 Gonne returned to Ireland. Arrested by the British and imprisoned for six months, she supported Sinn Féin ("We Ourselves"—the Irish Republican party devoted to the independence of all of Ireland) during the War of Independence while Séan joined the Irish Republican Army. During the Civil War, she helped form the Women's Prisoners Defence League, protesting against the government's repression of dissent. Imprisoned in Kilmainham Jail in April 1923, she won release after going on a hunger strike. She opposed the Irish Free State for the rest of her life, continuing to support political prisoners and women's rights.

—Margaret Ward

See also Ireland, Easter Rising of 1916; Ireland, War of Independence

References and Further Reading

- Steele, Karen. 2004. *Maud Gonne's Irish Nationalist Writings 1895–1946*. Dublin: Irish Academic Press.
- Ward, Margaret. 1990. *Maud Gonne: Ireland's Joan of Arc*. London: Pandora.

GRAJALES COELHO, MARIANA

See Grajales Cuello, Mariana

GRAJALES CUELLO (ALSO
COELHO), MARIANA
(1808–1893)

Revolutionary Cuban mother. Called the *General Mambisa* (Rebel General), Mariana Grajales sacrificed her husband, ten sons, and two daughters, whom she had prepared to the fight for Cuban independence from Spain. Grajales was born in Santiago de Cuba, a rural eastern province where tobacco and sugar plantations predominated. Her parents, José Grajales and Teresa Cuello, were mulattos who had free status. Despite the advantages of legal freedom Grajales grew up suffering from the indignities of racism, colonialism, and extreme poverty. Grajales was committed to throwing off the yoke of cultural oppression and racial discrimination that plagued the Spanish colony; she married the like-minded Fructuoso Regueyferos, who helped her from the beginning to raise their four sons with strong revolutionary ideals. Widowed at the age of thirty-two, three years later she married Marcos Maceo, a Venezuelan immigrant of mixed race. At that time, a new representative of the Spanish Empire, Capitán General Leopoldo O'Donnell, arrived on the island and began to employ a new degree of violence and repression. The already tenuous existence of the Grajales-Maceo family was threatened when immigrants of color were ordered to leave Cuba. When groups of rebels began to gather in the jungles and swamps to commence guerrilla warfare in 1868, Mariana Grajales and Marcos Maceo led their entire young family to join the uprising. Grajales lived with the rebels, sharing the horrors and deprivations of war with her husband and children. Throughout she maintained a steadfast and unselfish patriotism, exemplified in her exhortation to her youngest boy at the graveside of his brother: "And you, stand up tall; it is already time that you should fight for your country" (Sierra n.d.). All but one of the Grajales family died during the struggle for independence, including the famed war hero Antonio Maceo. For her heroic words and actions

Grajales is revered as the first Cuban woman revolutionary and an icon of the ideal self-sacrificing mother. When the popular uprising against Cuban dictator Fulgencio Batista commenced in the 1950s, fifteen-year-old Teté Puebla gathered with other women to form a fighting unit inspired by the historical icon, and thus, the first all-woman platoon of the Cuban Revolution was born—the Mariana Grajales platoon.

—Sara E. Cooper

See also Cuban Revolution, Women and the

References and Further Reading

- Balán, María Elena. "Mariana Grajales, Madre mayor de Cuba," Cuba Web, <http://www.nnc.cubaweb.cu/historia/historia27.htm> (accessed September 21, 2004).
- Puebla, Teté. 2003. *Marianas in Combat: Tete Puebla and the Mariana Grajales Women's Platoon in Cuba's Revolutionary War, 1956–58*. New York: Pathfinder.
- Ramos, Raul. "Mariana Grajales," Cuba Web, <http://www.ain.cubaweb.cu/mujer/mariana.htm> (accessed September 21, 2004).
- Sierra, J. A. n.d. "The Antonio Maceo Timeline," History of Cuba.com, <http://www.historyofcuba.com/history/mactime1.htm> (accessed September 21, 2004).

GRANVILLE, CHRISTINE,
PSEUD. (KRYSTYNA SKARBK
GIZYCKI) (1915–1952)

British secret agent during World War II. Born in Młodziesyn, Poland, on May 1, 1915, Krystyna Skarbek was the daughter of a count who was a wealthy banker and his Jewish wife. Skarbek and her husband, Jerzy Gizycki, a Polish diplomat, were in Africa when the Germans invaded Poland in 1939. They went to England where, under the name Christine Granville, she



Christine Granville. (Keystone/Hulton Archive/Getty Images)

joined the British Special Operations Executive (SOE). One of the earliest agents to work for the SOE, Granville brought information to the Polish resistance against the Nazi occupation during World War II, and she helped set up escape routes for British prisoners of war to get from Poland to Athens and then to Britain (Binney 2002, 5). Although her native country did not recognize her contributions, the British government awarded her the George Medal and the Order of the British Empire (OBE). From France, Granville received the Croix de Guerre (Forty and Forty 1997, 156).

Granville was noted for her resourcefulness, resilience, and bravery. To distribute needed information to Polish resisters, she skied from

Hungary over the Tatras Mountains into Poland. When she returned from these trips, Granville also brought out intelligence for the British. On one trip back to her homeland, she tried to convince her widowed mother to leave Poland, but her mother refused. Later she found out the Nazis had captured her mother, and she never saw or heard from her again (Forty and Forty 1997, 155).

On her last trip into Poland in 1941, Granville and her colleague and companion Andrew Kowerski were arrested by the Hungarian police and handed over to the Gestapo for interrogation. They were soon released after she feigned tuberculosis, which she achieved by biting her tongue so that she seemed to be coughing blood. Granville and Kowerski were freed in part because of a sympathetic and convinced doctor but also because the authorities hoped they would lead them to their underground network, which did not happen (Binney 2002, 64).

Granville, who made her way back to England after her escape, was parachuted into occupied France on July 6, 1944. She was sent to the Jockey Network, headed by Francis Cammaerts, as a replacement for Cecily Lefort, who had been arrested. Granville was discharged in 1945, and soon afterward she became a British citizen. In 1951, Granville took a job as a stewardess on the *Rauhine*, sailing on its maiden voyage to Australia (Forty and Forty 1997, 156). On this ship, she met Dennis George Muldowney, a man who became obsessed with her and murdered her on June 15, 1952.

—Heather E. Ostman

See also Lefort, Cecily; Poland, Resistance during World War II, Women and

References and Further Reading

- Binney, Marcus. 2002. *The Women Who Lived for Danger: The Women Agents of SOE in the Second World War*. London: Hodder and Stoughton.
- Forty, George, and Anne Forty. 1997. *Women War Heroines*. London: Arms and Armour Press.

GREAT BRITAIN, WOMEN,
SOCIAL IMPACT OF WORLD
WAR I ON

World War I as a watershed in the achievement of female equality in England. Women's activities in the war effort, both as civilians and military auxiliaries, brought about a significant improvement in their political status as well as their overall position in British society. Prior to 1914, the women who worked, mostly from the lower classes, were employed in the sweated trades, as shop assistants, or in domestic service. There they faced long hours and low wages. Meanwhile few middle- or upper-class women worked, and those who did found jobs as governesses, nurses, or teachers. Also, a number joined in philanthropic enterprises.

This is not say that important changes were not taking place. Educational opportunities had increased, and universities had become available. Even Oxford and Cambridge had women's colleges, although they refused to grant the students university degrees. In addition, women were voting in local elections, and some were serving in office. By far the most significant development before World War I was the emergence of the movement for women's suffrage. Two important groups had emerged: the Suffragists (National Union of Women's Suffrage Societies—NUWSS), led by Mrs. Henry Fawcett, who followed a gradualist approach, and the Suffragettes (Women's Social and Political Union—WSPU), led primarily by Emmeline Pankhurst and her daughter Christabel, who stood for a much more militant approach that often resulted in violence, injury, and vandalism. Such actions increased dramatically until the beginning of the war, as the government of Herbert Asquith took no action to deal with the suffrage question and reacted with growing severity against those advocating the vote for women.

At the outset of hostilities, the WSPU announced an important shift in its policy, declaring a moratorium on its agitation for the vote and giving complete support to the war effort.

This caused a rift among the Pankhurst family as daughter Sylvia embraced pacifism and put her energies into fighting poverty in the east end of London. Moreover the NUWSS, although also committing itself to the military, continued to advocate women's suffrage. While many women were ready to volunteer, the government at first showed little interest. Asquith tried to maintain the status quo. For example, when the Scottish doctor Elsie Inglis suggested initiating an ambulance service, she was told to "go home and be quiet."

Some women, however, did organize nursing or charitable groups. Among the factors that led to women's involvement in the national war effort was the crisis in the munitions industry, which occurred in 1915 with the revelation that the men in the front were facing a shortage of shells. This led to the establishment of the ministry of munitions and the call for women to take up work in the factories. Great numbers of women, called *munitionettes*, were employed in a variety of jobs manufacturing arms. They demonstrated their abilities and capacities for the job and earned better wages than had been available to women before the war. The work was tough and frequently unhealthy, and their male counterparts often responded with anger at the apparent threat to men's jobs. At the beginning of 1916, conscription was introduced, creating many more opportunities for women in the workforce. Consequently, they moved into areas such as transportation, taking up positions as drivers of cars, buses, and trucks. In addition, they were employed as gas fitters, postal workers, and police. Women also entered the world of commerce and became a larger presence in education. Other women joined the so-called Land Army, taking the places of men who had been called up from the agricultural sector. These diverse occupations attracted women from a wide range of social classes, giving many their first work experience.

Women also performed military or paramilitary functions. The Women's Army Auxiliary Corps (WAAC), the Women's Royal Naval

Service (WRNS), and the Women's Auxiliary Air Force (WAAF) were organized to serve in support capacities such as driving, communications, and clerical duties. In addition, there were the women who served as doctors or nurses, both at home and on the continent. The VADs (Voluntary Aid Detachments) also helped out in hospitals, catering and housekeeping. The service of these women and the women war workers as well as the continued support of British women for the war effort convinced many of those who had earlier opposed granting women the franchise to commit themselves to granting it after the war. Indeed, women were allowed to vote in the December 1918 parliamentary election.

In social terms, the war raised significant issues concerning women. In the first place there were the large number of war babies, which were the cause of comment and anxiety. Reflecting the nature of the conflict and the frequent venues where men and women were brought together, this increase of births promoted responses from welfare agencies, but, at the same time, others praised this development as providing replacements for the men dying at the front. The question of war babies is directly related to the changes that had taken place in women's living conditions and sexual attitudes. In the new situation, girls often left their parents' home and lived in close proximity to the factories where they worked. The result was a greater sense of confidence as well as permissiveness, especially because the men they met might be killed shortly afterward. The "new woman" was therefore a blend of independence and sexual freedom. Manifestations of this can be seen in the short skirts worn for factory work or the trousers and boots they wore for agricultural work.

The end of the war meant the end of employment for many women. There was a strong feeling that the returning soldiers should have priority in employment and that women did not need to work and should be mothers, supported by their husbands. Women who were dismissed were provided with a donation to cushion their loss of work, but it was only a temporary relief.

It was argued that many women were using these donations to live off the public purse and were not looking for new jobs as was expected. Part of the problem was that these jobs were often in the sweated trades and domestic service, which women had left to enter war employment. Many women refused to go back into service, even though there was an effort to make these jobs more attractive. It is instructive that following the war, there were fewer women in domestic service than before. Women continued their presence in office employment, however.

The sum of women's experience in World War I had many positive aspects. The fact that women obtained the franchise is evidence of a change in their image and status in British society. No longer could it be argued that women were incapable of holding their own and contributing in demonstrable ways to the national effort. At the same time, the mind-set of women underwent a substantial transformation. They became aware of their own skills and potential. Despite the disappointment of the postwar period, they retained confidence, pride, and a sense of accomplishment. The new woman, like the genie, could not be put back in the bottle.

—Marc L. Schwarz

See also Fawcett, Millicent; Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I; Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's Hospitals; Pankhurst Family: Emmeline, Christabel, E. Sylvia, and Adela Pankhurst

References and Further Reading

- Braybon, Gail. 1981. *Women Workers in the First World War*. London: Routledge.
- Braybon, Gail, and Penny Summerfield. 1987. *Out of the Cage: Women's Experiences in Two World Wars*. London: Routledge.
- Marwick, Arthur. 1965. *The Deluge*. Boston: Little, Brown.
- . 1977. *Women at War 1914–1918*. London: Fontana.

GREAT BRITAIN, WOMEN IN
SERVICE DURING WORLD WAR I

Pioneering role in military service played by British women in World War I. During World War I, women in Great Britain heeded the same patriotic call to arms as the British men did, assisting the armed forces in many capacities. Although few women officially engaged in combat, thousands of women served on or near the front lines as nurses, ambulance drivers, gas-mask instructors, and mechanics, and thousands more worked behind the front lines as munitions workers, fund-raisers, seamstresses, laundresses, and spies. By 1917, an immense manpower shortage forced Britain to become the first country in the war to bring women into formal military service with the creation of three female auxiliary units, the Women's Auxiliary Army Corps (WAAC), the Women's Royal Air Force (WRAF), and the Women's Royal Naval Service (WRNS, referred to as the Wrens). By 1918, the three voluntary organizations boasted 25,000 recruits, and by the end of the war, more than 100,000 women had joined.

When Great Britain declared war against Germany on August 4, 1914, thousands of women eagerly looked for ways they could help in the war effort. For many, nursing was the obvious choice and, at first, the only legitimate and acceptable occupation for women in the military. Caring for the sick and wounded was a long-honored role for women, and female nurses had served officially in the British army since the Boer War in the early twentieth century. By the end of the war, more than 23,000 nurses had served in the British military, assisted by another 15,000 women who served as nurses' aides. In the hospitals closest to the battle lines, nurses were accorded responsibilities far surpassing their normal duties, anesthetizing patients and conducting minor surgery.

Volunteer organizations such as the Women's Volunteer Force and the Women's Emergency Corps appealed to thousands more women who wished to protect their children and other non-combatants from a potential German invasion.

The Women's Legion, a unit established to cook and provide transportation assistance to the armed forces, probably provided the most practical assistance to the armed forces. Many women served as ambulance drivers and maintenance workers, conveying injured soldiers and supplies between the front and the hospitals behind the front lines. A few women who could muster great resources assisted the wounded in other ways; an example is the duchess of Sutherland, who set up a hospital for wounded soldiers at Dunkirk.

On the home front, many women heeded Chancellor of the Exchequer David Lloyd George's War Service for Women campaign, a program initiated by George and suffragist Emmeline Pankhurst in 1915 to persuade women to work in factories, particularly in the munitions industry, by appealing to their sense of patriotism. Government propaganda referred to women war workers as "100,000 Joans of Arc," applauding their patriotic selflessness. Many women wore badges that proclaimed themselves "Mothers who make munitions," suggesting that a sense of patriotic maternalism helped them reconcile doing work traditionally done by men. Female munitions workers generally worked twelve-hour shifts, making less pay than men but more than the amount women received in other industries. Women in war plants had to face many hazards, not the least of which was the possibility of being bombed by German planes. Many women worked with dangerous chemicals such as TNT, which yellowed the skin and caused the workers to be dubbed "Canary Girls." Other women working in airplane factories had to work with dangerous varnish that covered airplanes. Overall, accidental explosions and toxic chemicals in the war plants brought about the deaths of several hundred female workers.

Many women wanted to take up arms and fight for their nation despite the disapproval of the general public. Some women argued as May Bateman did in 1916 that women had the obligation to assume some of the burden and hardship of combat. Generally, however, the public

PRESS ACCOUNTS OF BRITISH WOMEN IN WAR SERVICE IN WORLD WAR I

“England is very proud of the pluck, endurance, and determination of her munition girls—The twenty-six women who were killed and thirty wounded in that explosion in a North of England factory on Tuesday night had, like thousands of other munition workers, faced the possibility of that fate hourly, and probably faced it with jest. Yet knowing that, and realizing their kinship with the men who keep their souls unshaken in the trenches, we may marvel at the courage, and above all the perfect discipline, which after the disaster kept the other girls in the factory unperturbably at their work.

“It fits in with stories one hears from all the deadliest departments of the factories, where, as is well known, the girls, breathing in danger as they work, are reluctant to abandon the task at the end of the term prescribed. Zeppelin nights in some places have put a very hard strain on the nerves of these girls, who in some factories have spent hours waiting in black darkness, knowing that at any moment a bomb may explode the munitions piled beside them. One hears thrilling stories of what happens during those hours—there was, for instance, the singer working in a canteen who for two hours sang away the horror of the night. . . . The girls have come through the ordeal without panic or collapse. They should all have medals for their war service, with special bars for Zeppelin night service.”

—*Manchester Guardian*, December 8, 1916.

“It is quite impossible to keep pace with all the new incarnations of women in war-time—bus-conductress, ticket-collector, lift-girl, club waitress, post-woman, bank clerk, motor-driver, farm-labourer, guide, munition maker. There is nothing new in the function of ministering angel: the myriad nurses in hospital here or abroad are only carrying out, though in greater numbers than ever before, what has always been woman’s mission. But whenever he sees one of these new citizens, or hears fresh stories of their address and ability, Mr. Punch is proud and delighted. Perhaps in the past, even in the present, he may have been, or even still is, a little given to chaff Englishwomen for some of their foibles, and even their aspirations. But he never doubted how splendid they were at heart; he never for a moment supposed they would be anything but ready and keen when the hour of need struck.”

—*Punch Magazine*, June 1916.

was scandalized by the notion of women in combat. Women serving as nurses, laundresses, and canteen organizers were viewed as a vital, if unfortunate, necessity of war. Women as combatants evoked multiple objections that displayed the inflamed but hardly unified opinions on the subject. Some traditionalists believed that fighting was a man’s duty and that women had no place in conflict. Many believed that a woman’s place was at home, tending to her hearth and children. Others questioned whether women could deal with the reality of the battleground. Some were concerned with the moral implications of women fighting next to men under such

stressful conditions. Some public commentators were concerned that if women served in the military, this might give them grounds for full citizenship—most significantly, the right to vote. Others were simply suspicious of women who tried to act like men, questioning their sexuality and their innate womanhood. The concern of women dressing as soldiers was first seen in the outrage over the military-style khaki uniforms favored by women in the volunteer service organizations. Such garb was seen as posturing and as such was an affront to the male soldiers’ valor and the dignity of the nation. The marchioness of Londonderry, the founder of the

Women's Legion and the colonel-in-chief of the Women's Volunteer Reserve, addressed the concern of the moralists by assuring her opponents that the women in her organization would not mimic male soldiers or behave in a masculine fashion but rather would perform their duties solely to help men return to active service in an unselfish act of patriotism.

The only officially recognized female combatant from Britain was Flora Sandes, a middle-class woman seeking the excitement of war. A week after the war began, Sandes joined St. John's Ambulance brigade and went to Serbia as a nurse but later found combat more to her liking, finishing her service as a decorated sergeant in the Serbian army.

The vicious reality of war and the rising death toll gradually softened the harsh public stance against women serving in the military. In 1917, the British government finally accepted the recommendation of the female leader of the Voluntary Aid Detachment (VAD) for women to officially staff administrative jobs held by men wherever possible, enabling more able-bodied men to fight on the front lines. This led to the creation of the three auxiliary women's units designed to support the army, air force, and the navy. Each unit was to be led by a female commander and follow a hierarchical military-style authority, but the ranks were purposefully different from those held by men. Women did not receive their commissions from the king as the men in command did. Female officers held the title of "administrators," noncommissioned officers were "forewomen" or "assistant forewomen," and enlisted women were "workers."

The first of the three auxiliary units, the WAAC, was established in early 1917 with the idea that women would work in the canteens, serve as clerks and telephone operators, and instruct civilians and soldiers in the use of the gas mask. Any British woman who was eighteen was eligible for service and could be sent abroad at age twenty. Typically, applicants had to present personal recommendations and undergo a medical examination by a board of female physicians before being allowed to serve. Recruits had to

sign a contract understanding that they had to obey military authority and were subject to fines and imprisonment if they violated the terms of their enlistment. Before being shipped to their units, most received several weeks of intensive military training even though they were not expected to engage in combat or even to bear arms. Although the WAACs wore military-style uniforms and held different ranks, the women were not saluted, they were tried in civil courts rather than military tribunals for infractions, and generally they were not treated as real soldiers in the Royal Army.

The WRNS was established in November 1917. The terms of service and other regulations were drafted by three women, Dame Katharine Furse, Tilla Wallace, and Edith Crowdy, who had been invited by the first lord of the admiralty to develop a "Naval Organization of Women." The Wrens served as paymasters, coders and decoders, telegraphists, signalers, and draughtsmen as well as other positions that released able-bodied seamen to active service. Among their myriad duties, they fitted depth charges, washed life-belts, and manned listening stations.

The WRAF was the third women's auxiliary unit to be created. Since 1917, women had served in all-female companies in the Royal Flying Corps. Women in these units lived at home to diminish the threat of improper behavior between men and women and to keep operational costs down. In 1918, the Royal Flying Corps and the Royal Naval Air Service combined to create the Royal Air Force, from which the Auxiliary Women's Royal Air Force emerged. Most of the recruits were enlisted to occupations such as mechanics, radio operators, parachute packers, armorers, cooks, and nurses, but there were no female pilots.

In one of the more unusual occupations during the war, hundreds of women were employed by the British War Office as intelligence workers, ranging from adolescent Girl Guides to octogenarian grandmothers, often entrusted with secret reports issued by Military Intelligence 5, Counterespionage (MI5) in London.



*British Voluntary Aid Detachments (VADs) stand with their ambulances along the British western front.
(Underwood and Underwood/Corbis)*

Few female spies seem to have been killed during the war, but those who died in the line of duty quickly became martyrs for the cause. One of the most famous spy-martyrs was Edith Cavell, a nurse who secretly helped Allied soldiers escape occupied Belgium until her capture and death by a German firing squad in 1915. Propagandists used the image of an innocent nurse murdered by Germans as a way to illustrate the alleged atrocities by Germans in Belgium. Other women, such as Muriel Doyrell-Browning, were employed as linguists for the War Office and wrote subversive propaganda dropped in Germany and other enemy-occupied territories.

The official involvement of women in the war effort brought about a dramatic shift in public

opinion. Following the creation of WAAC, women who wore sharply turned uniforms became more respected, as the uniform came to represent efficiency, service, and patriotic duty. By 1918, women who were not in uniform, whether in the volunteer organizations or in the auxiliary units, began to be criticized and mocked by the popular press as unpatriotic “slackers.”

No matter how accepted the sight of women in military uniforms became, the message for women was that this was a temporary arrangement borne out of the extremities of war. When the male soldiers returned home at the end of the war, most women were displaced from their jobs and forced to return to women’s work or to no paid work at all. Many disillusioned soldiers

resented the women, whom they believed had usurped men's traditional jobs, and many of the women's accomplishments and skills were ignored. Ultimately, the women who served in the war, whether in the auxiliary units, the volunteer units, or the war plants, during World War I all helped pioneer the way for future generations of women who would come to hold vital positions of genuine military authority in all of the royal armed forces.

—*Susanna Calkins*

See also Cavell, Edith Louisa; Furse, Lady Katherine Symonds; Great Britain, Women's Royal Naval Service, Reorganization before World War II; Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's Hospitals; Sandes, Flora

References and Further Reading

- Braybon, Gail. 1998. "Women, War, and Work." In *World War I: A History*, edited by Hew Strachan, 149–162. Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press.
- Fletcher, M. H. 1989. *A History of the Women's Royal Naval Service*. Annapolis, MD: Naval Institute Press.
- Gould, Jenny. 1987. "Women's Military Services in First World War Britain." In *Behind the Lines: Gender and the Two World Wars*, edited by Margaret Randolph Higonnet, 119. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.
- Grayzel, Susan R. 1999. *Women's Identities at War: Gender, Motherhood, and Politics in Britain and France during the First World War*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press.
- Heyman, Neil M. 2002. *Daily Life during World War I*. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press.
- Higonnet, Margaret R., ed. 1999. *Lines of Fire: Women Writers of World War I*. New York: Penguin Putnam.
- Proctor, Tammy M. 2003. *Female Intelligence: Women and Espionage in the First World War*. New York and London: New York University Press.
- Pycroft, Susan. 1994. "British Working Women and the First World War." *Historian* 56 (1994): 699–711.

GREAT BRITAIN, WOMEN IN SERVICE DURING WORLD WAR II

The direct mobilization of British women in the war effort during World War II. In addition to work in war-related industry, civil defense, and the Home Guard, women contributed substantially to the British war effort in World War II by enlisting in the auxiliary organizations set up by each branch of the armed services. Hundreds of thousands of British women made crucial contributions to British victory in a surprisingly wide range of capacities. Their wartime experience led many to hope for greater equality in the postwar era, even while encountering problems with contemporary assumptions about gender roles.

In 1939, the Royal Navy revived the Women's Royal Navy Service (WRNS), an auxiliary service that had first been established in late 1917 but disbanded after the end of World War I. Members of the WRNS (known informally as Wrens) occupied a wide variety of shore-based duties to free up their male colleagues for duty at sea. Wrens took on roles such as telegraph, radio, and telephone operators; couriers; meteorologists; supply clerks; cooks; radar operators; censors; signalers; and intelligence officers. The WRNS reached peak strength in 1944 with 73,500 women serving in almost all theaters of the war in which Britain was involved. The total personnel of the Royal Navy in 1944 numbered 863,500 including the WRNS, which means that women accounted for 8.5 percent of the Royal Navy complement in 1944 (Roskill 1966, 22). Although the vast majority served on shore, a small number served on Motor Torpedo Boat patrols. Auxiliary status notwithstanding, service in the WRNS could be hazardous. Twenty-two Wrens lost their lives when the SS *Aguila* was sunk by a German submarine on August 12, 1941, on a voyage from Liverpool to Gibraltar. Nurses serving the Royal Navy were organized into Queen Alexandra's Royal Navy Nursing Service.

In 1939, the Royal Air Force (RAF) established the Women's Auxiliary Air Force (WAAF). The WAAF was the successor to the Women's Royal Air Force, which had been formed in 1918 but disbanded in 1920. The WAAF reached peak strength of 181,835 in July 1943 (Beauman 1971, 284). As with the Wrens, women in the WAAF performed a remarkable range of duties, including work as aircraft mechanics, and served in all theaters of the war. Women working as nurses for the RAF were organized into the Princess Mary's RAF Nursing Service. Women also served as pilots with the Air Transport Auxiliary (ATA), flying aircraft from factories to RAF bases. The ATA remained a civilian organization throughout the war, however.

The WAAF also employed women in tasks specific to the needs of an air force. Photographic interpretation was a particularly valued service. In 1958, one such interpreter, Constance Babington Smith, published a memoir, *Evidence in Camera: The Story of Photographic Intelligence in World War Two*, that dramatically detailed British efforts to locate and identify the launch sites for German V1 and V2 rockets in 1944. In addition, photographic interpreters worked to assess the results of the Allied strategic bombing campaign over Germany during the war. Members of the WAAF performed a variety of other highly secret and demanding technical jobs during the war. For example, women played a key role in the Y-service, the name given to the interception of enemy radio and telephone messages. The Y-service members were grouped into the signal corps of each branch of the armed services. Women worked in RAF headquarters as radar plotters. One of the most distinctive and enduring images of World War II shows WAAF radar plotters with croupier rakes, plotting the location of aircraft on a vast map of the British Isles during the climactic stages of the Battle of Britain in 1940.

In 1938, the British army established the Auxiliary Territorial Service (ATS), the successor to the Women's Army Auxiliary Corps of World War I. Army nurses served with either the Queen Alexandra's Imperial Nursing Service or

with the Territorial Army Nursing Service. The ATS reached peak strength of 214,420 in 1943 (Terry 1988, 135). Women in the ATS served as drivers, communications workers, postal workers, military police, and ammunition inspectors. Women served in no fewer than eighty trades and occupations in the ATS alone. Considerable numbers served in direct combat roles as members of anti-aircraft gun crews. By 1943, almost one in four members of the ATS worked on anti-aircraft gun crews (Saywell 1985, 12). They loaded the guns, fused the shells, and tracked enemy aircraft, but on direct order from Prime Minister Winston Churchill, they were not allowed to fire the guns on the dubious grounds that they might not be able to live with the knowledge that they had caused the death of an enemy. According to thinking about gender roles at the time, women had to be limited to non-combat, supportive roles.

Enlistment in the ATS, WRNS, and WAAF during the first two years of the war was voluntary, but the need for more women recruits in the auxiliary services and war industry led the British government to pass the National Service (No. 2) Act of December 18, 1941. Under this act, unmarried women between the ages of twenty and thirty were conscripted, but they could choose between the auxiliary services and work in war industry or war-related occupations. Those who opted for the auxiliary services (about one-quarter of the total) would not be posted to combat areas unless they requested it. A further shortage of female recruits in 1942 prompted the government to send all eligible women born between 1920 and 1921 to the auxiliary services, unless engaged in crucial war work.

Service in the auxiliary forces, especially the ATS and WAAF, was not always popular with recruits. Poor housing conditions, drab uniforms, and unfounded accusations about the morality and character of women in the auxiliary forces had a negative impact on morale. Some members of the public believed that women were taking jobs that should have gone to men. In 1941, members of the ATS and the WAAF were given

full military status. This is sometimes seen as a step toward equality, and there is some validity to that view; but the major reason for this step appears to have been the desire to bring the ATS and the WAAF under codes of military discipline (especially court martial) to discourage desertion. Previously nothing could prevent members of the ATS or WAAF from simply walking away from their jobs. The consequences could be serious, especially if the recruit in question was a highly trained radar plotter. The WRNS stayed exempt from full military status and remained the most popular of the auxiliary forces, possibly because large numbers of WRNS could live at home and commute daily to work.

In 1907, the British army organized the volunteer First Aid Nursing Yeomanry (FANY), a specialized civilian nursing organization designed to provide medical aid to soldiers under fire. FANY was reorganized as the Motor Transport Service in 1938, but it continued to be known as FANY and tended to attract women from aristocratic backgrounds. When the Special Operations Executive (SOE) came looking for female agents to be parachuted into occupied Europe, FANY provided the largest numbers of recruits. At least some SOE agents also had to be trained in the use of explosives. Recruiting from FANY, an ostensibly civilian organization, evaded armed service prohibition on women as combatants. The SOE, along with the technology of the war, placed women in range of enemy bombing, blurring the distinction between combatant and noncombatant roles. The SOE parachuted fifty female agents into occupied Europe, including twenty-four from FANY and fourteen from WAAF. Fifteen of the fifty were captured by the Germans, all but three of whom were tortured and executed or died in concentration camps. Some agents disappeared after their drops and were never heard from again (Beauman 1971, 222).

Women in Britain's three auxiliary services (exclusive of the SOE) suffered 1,486 casualties from enemy action (killed, wounded, missing, and prisoners of war) during the war. The three services reported a total of 624 fatalities, about

half of whom were in the ATS and army nursing services (Mellor 1972, 838). By 1944, women comprised slightly more than 10 percent of the personnel of the British armed forces (Goldman and Stites 1982, 36). A total of 640,000 women served in Britain's auxiliary services during the war (Mellor 1972, 830). All three of the auxiliary services continued in the postwar era, a reflection of the value of the work they performed. The total peak strength of the nursing services in 1944 numbered 19,000 (Mellor 1972, 833).

Most of the women who entered the three auxiliary services during World War II came from middle- or upper-class families. Mass Observation, Britain's foremost social research and polling organization of the 1940s, reported that many of the women serving in the WRNS, ATS, and WAAF wanted to travel abroad after the war ended and showed little desire to marry and raise families. Mass Observation also reported that service women expressed the hope that they would be able to compete with men on an equal basis for jobs in the postwar world. The expectations of service women contrasted with those of women working in industry, who anticipated much less in the way of equality for women after the war.

Many of the positions given to women in the auxiliary services—in fact, the very use of the term *auxiliary*—reflected contemporary assumptions about the nurturing, supportive role of women. Strict efforts were made to ensure that women's roles were defined as noncombatant. Accordingly throughout the war women were paid less than their male counterparts on the grounds that they were serving in a noncombat role. Women crewed anti-aircraft guns, often came under enemy fire, or fell victim to enemy bombing but still were seen as noncombatants. Assumptions about gender also slotted many women in radar operations on the grounds that their heightened sensitivities made them more suitable for work with delicate electronics.

The widespread presence of women in the services led, perhaps inevitably, to accusations of impropriety from those with more traditional views of gender roles. Women in industry also

had to struggle against similar prejudice. Members of the WAAF and the ATS seem to have borne the brunt of the hostility, with members of the ATS, for example, scorned as “officer’s groundsheets.” The Wrens escaped the worst opprobrium, probably because many lived at home and were assumed to remain under parental discipline. Anger directed at ATS and WAAF members may have partially caused the problems with desertion, which in turn led to the imposition of military discipline on the ATS and WAAF in 1941. Criticism of service women was expressed by both men and women, military and civilian alike. Anxiety was also expressed about stationing women outside the British Isles, where it was alleged that morals were lower than in Britain. The critics had absolutely no solid evidence to support their views; army statistics showed that rates of sexually transmitted diseases and pregnancies were much lower among service women than among women of the same age groups who were not in the services (Goldman and Stites 1982, 32). Ill-founded criticisms of armed forces women, however, hinted at the long struggle for equality faced by women in the postwar world.

—Paul W. Doerr

See also Atkins, Vera H.; Granville, Christine, pseud.; Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I; Hall, Virginia; Khan, Noor Inayat; Stark, Dame Freya; Szabo, Violette; Wake, Nancy; Witherington, Pearl

References and Further Reading

- Beauman, Katharine Bentley. 1971. *Partners in Blue: The Story of the Women’s Service with the Royal Air Force*. London: Hutchinson.
- Fletcher, M. H. 1989. *The WRNS: A History of the Royal Naval Service*. Annapolis, MD: Naval Institute Press.
- Goldman, Nancy Loring, and Richard Stites. 1982. “Great Britain and the World Wars.” In *Female Soldiers—Combatants or Noncombatants? Historical and Contemporary Perspectives*, edited by Nancy Loring Goldman, 21–45. Westport, CT: Greenwood.

- Goodman, Philomena. 2002. *Women, Sexuality and War*. Basingstoke, England: Palgrave.
- Mellor, W. Franklin, ed. 1972. *Casualties and Medical Statistics*. London: Her Majesty’s Stationery Office.
- Roskill, S. W. 1966. *White Ensign: The British Navy at War, 1939–1945*. Annapolis, MD: United States Naval Institute.
- Saywell, Shelley. 1985. *Women in War: From World War Two to El Salvador*. Harmondsworth, England: Penguin.
- Smith, Constance Babington. 1958. *Evidence in Camera: The Story of Photographic Intelligence in World War Two*. London: Chatto and Windus.
- Terry, Roy. 1988. *Women in Khaki: The Story of the British Woman Soldier*. London: Columbus.

GREAT BRITAIN, WOMEN IN SERVICE IN THE SEVENTEENTH, EIGHTEENTH, AND EARLY NINETEENTH CENTURIES

British female combatants in the early modern period. Women occasionally accompanied their husbands in the British army and served as auxiliaries. This even occurred on ships of the Royal Navy. Wives and mistresses of officers and even prostitutes sailed with the British navy. In both the army and navy, accompanying women were frequently drawn into battle as bearers of ammunition, as providers of drink or medical assistance, or as actual combatants. A number of women also disguised themselves as men and served in the army and navy. Although some of the stories might well have been inventions, many seem to be legitimate.

Christian “Kit” Cavanagh (Davies), often referred to as Mother Ross, fought as a dragoon in the Royal Scots Greys at Ramillies in 1706 during the War of Spanish Succession. Davies, who



Hannah Snell, who disguised herself as a man and served as an English soldier.
(MPI/Getty Images)

had served with the regiment for four years disguised as a man, was wounded in the battle. She was released from service. She was awarded a pension, however, and when she died in 1739, she was buried with military honors at Chelsea Hospital.

Phoebe Hessel (1713–1821) was born in Stepney in March 1713. There are two versions of how she entered the British army. According to one account, Phoebe's father, a soldier, disguised his young daughter as a boy after the death of her mother and brought her along with him to the British army, where she became a fife player. The other version has Phoebe disguising herself to join her lover, Samuel Golding, in the military. She served with the 5th regiment of Foot (the Northum-

berland Fusiliers) in the Caribbean and Europe. She fought at the Battle of Fontenoy in 1745 and was seriously wounded in the arm by a bayonet. After recovering, she left the army and moved to Plymouth where she married Golding and bore nine children. After Golding's death, she moved to Brighton and married Thomas Hessel. Following Hessel's death, she became a street vendor. In 1808, Prince George, the prince regent, awarded her a pension of half a guinea a week. Her military service is recorded on her gravestone in St. Nicholas's Churchyard in Brighton.

Hannah Snell, dressed as a man and calling herself James Grey, joined the marines in 1747. She sailed on the *Swallow* to India and was sent ashore against the French at Ponicherry. She was severely wounded, but after a year of recuperation, she sailed again. In 1750, she revealed her true identity to her fellow marines. She was released with a pension and died in 1791.

The *Navy Chronicle* in 1807 reported that a woman had served as a boatswain's mate on a man-of-war for twenty years under the assumed name of Tom Bowling. In another case, a young black woman, born in Edinburgh, joined the British navy in 1804 under the name William Brown. She became captain of the foretop on the 110-gun *Queen Charlotte* before her sex was discovered in 1815.

—Bernard Cook

See also Snell, Hannah; Talbot, Mary Anne

References and Further Reading

- Gribble, Francis. 1917. *Women and War*. New York: E. P. Dutton.
- Jones, David E. 1997. *Women Warriors: A History*. Washington, DC: Brassey's.
- Lucas, Susan. 2004. "Jane Tars': The Women of the Royal Navy," Admiral Lord Nelson and His Navy, <http://www.aboutnelson.co.uk/30janetars.htm> (accessed March 14, 2004).
- Stark, Suzanne J. 1996. *Female Tars: Women aboard Ship in the Age of Sail*. Annapolis, MD: Naval Institute.

GREAT BRITAIN, WOMEN ON
THE HOME FRONT DURING
WORLD WAR II

Role of women in Great Britain during World War II. When World War II began in 1939, the British government called on the complete mobilization of every citizen and resource. Just as men were called to arms, women were called to support the military, to help defend the nation from invasion, and, most important, to “keep the home fires burning.” As the men of Great Britain entered into the armed services in record numbers, the defense and preservation of the home front fell largely to women.

From the outset of the war, women contributed to the war effort in a variety of ways. While some women were on or near the front lines, serving in the Women’s Royal Naval Service (WRNS) or in the Women’s Auxiliary Air Force (WAAF), the majority of Britain’s women were involved in the war on the home front. Some women knitted, sewed, or rolled bandages in the Women’s Volunteer Service (WVS). Others volunteered in the Home Guard, an organization originally known as the Local Defense Volunteers that had formed in May 1940 to help civilians prepare for foreign invasion. But women’s most visible contribution to the war effort occurred in the plants and factories. Less visible but even more pervasive was women’s assumption of the role of heads of their households when their fathers, husbands, and brothers left for war.

Women’s involvement in the war effort had profound social, economic, gender-role, and military implications. Many women who had been gainfully employed at the outset of the war suddenly found themselves out of work, as certain consumer industries that produced textiles, clothing, and shoes were deemed nonessential by Prime Minister Winston Churchill’s Coalition Government. Others found the factories and plants where they worked suddenly became producers of war goods such as airplanes, tanks, uniforms, and munitions, meaning that women

often had to learn new skills quickly or face unemployment. Women in reserved occupations, such as switchboard operation, were not allowed to leave their work even if they wanted to volunteer for a more heroic occupation, such as nursing or engineering.

With so many men at war, injured, or deceased, Great Britain faced a serious labor shortage. To counteract this problem, women were conscripted to duty through a series of legislative acts, including the National Service Act (1941), the Restoration of Employment Order (1941), and the Employment of Women Order (1942). These measures ensured that every British woman between the ages of eighteen and forty could be conscripted by the government into service. Enforcement of these acts caused great social dislocation and the disruption of social networks, especially for young unmarried women who were considered more mobile by the government. Married women, by contrast, were designated nonmobile and were less affected by the enforcement of these acts.

These laws forced women into supportive and supplementary positions, usually filling positions held by men, although with less status and pay. Under these acts, single women often became dilutees in industry, meaning that they would take over a man’s work responsibilities to free him for soldiering duty or for more skilled tasks. Other women became Land Girls— young women conscripted to work on farms and in agriculture to augment the labor of experienced farmers and agricultural laborers. Other women assisted firefighters, demolition or rescue workers, or worked switchboards in government offices. For many women, these measures meant a reconstruction of their feminine identity as they reinvented themselves as new, capable workers able to take on tasks they never would have imagined they could do before the war.

The government also authorized the deployment of women in the Auxiliary Territorial Service (ATS) and the Auxiliary Military Service

(AMS). In this capacity, women could participate in the creation and servicing of military weapons but were generally constrained from actually using them. Deferring to the recommendation of Caroline Hasket, a well-known authority on women's labor, General Sir Frederick Pile, the commander of Britain's antiaircraft defenses, convinced the government that women under his command could serve as height finders, radio locators, and radar operators but should not be exposed to open combat. Indeed, women were officially banned from bearing arms and shooting weapons—a prohibition deeply resented by many women impatient with their noncombatant support positions.

Women who worked in the factories often found the work difficult, tiresome, and dirty. Although the pay in factories was often better than what could be made as seamstresses, laundresses, or other menial jobs, many women were hard-pressed to stay motivated when they could perceive little connection between the drudgery of their factory work and the war effort. After the first flush of patriotic enthusiasm had paled, many women began to quit their factory and plant jobs and seek out either less strenuous work near their homes or more glamorous, heroic work that took them closer to the war. Some factory and plant managers sought to motivate and retain their employees by showing patriotic films or bringing in army or navy personnel to praise them for their commitment to the war effort. Other managers encouraged singing, reinforcing the bonds of community and friendship that many female workers shared in the factories. A handful even sponsored competitions in which the winners could see firsthand the ships or planes that they helped produce. Most factories simply played "Music While You Work," a BBC program that provided light background music that helped alleviate the tedium of war work.

To further encourage women to stay involved in the war effort, the government even produced a film that celebrated women's involvement. Endorsed by the Ministry of Information,

the film *Millions Like Us*, released in 1943, told the story of a young woman in a factory who was employed to make aircraft components. Through the course of the film, she experienced both the valor of war work and the terrible reality of war. All the while, she was buoyed by the female solidarity that surrounded her and the knowledge that her work was vital to winning the war.

Inspiration for women came in other forms as well. In 1943, the War Artists Advisory Committee commissioned the British artist Dame Laura Knight to create heroic images of the women who worked in factories. She focused on Ruby Loftus, a highly skilled technician charged with screwing the breech ring of the Bofors gun. The images Knight rendered were produced in postcard form and distributed to factories across Britain. Like the legendary Rosie the Riveter, the tireless heroine of U.S. factories, heroic images of staunch, hardworking women were used as propaganda to stimulate patriotic feelings and to encourage women to work valiantly for the soldiers in their own lives and for their country.

The National Togetherness campaign stressed the idea that the daughters of nobles were sweating alongside the daughters of refuse collectors and shopkeepers. In reality, while women often formed tight social networks, a worker's position in the factory, and thus the friendships she formed, often reflected her class and background. Upper-class women with family connections were often able to negotiate jobs with better salaries, titles, and responsibilities than women who lacked such connections. Londoners and other city dwellers often did not get on well with women from the farms and rural communities. In general, the nuances of class and social distinctions were keenly observed in the factories and plants, and the social networks that were forged during work hours often extended into the outside community after the workday was done.

The war also changed leisure and courtship patterns for women. In many ways, finding a

husband remained a woman's most important job, a plight made harder by the vicissitudes of war. Dancing, cinema-going, and pub crawls were popular leisure activities for single women in search of a husband because the war had disrupted long-standing courtship venues such as the evening walkabout and social clubs. Younger, unmarried women from all classes and social backgrounds began to frequent pubs—to the chagrin of the general public. These activities offered women a measure of independence that they had not had prior to the war.

After 1945, women virtually vanished from the factories and plants when the men returned home. Women relinquished their positions—some gratefully, others with resentment and anger—as men reclaimed their jobs and reasserted their dominance and authority in the plants, factories, and other civilian occupations.

—*Susanna Calkins*

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War II; Great Britain, Women's Royal Naval Service, Reorganization before World War II; Rosie the Riveter

References and Further Reading

- Braybon, Gail, and Penny Summerfield. 1987. *Out of the Cage: Women's Experiences in Two World Wars*. London and New York: Pandora.
- Connelly, Mark. 2004. *We Can Take It! Britain and the Memory of the Second World War*. London and New York: Pearson.
- De Groot, Gerard J. 1997. "I Love the Scent of Cordite in Your Hair": Gender Dynamics in Mixed Anti-Aircraft Batteries during the Second World War." *History* 82, no. 165: 73–92.
- Langhamer, Claire. 2003. "A public house is for all classes, men and women alike': Women, Leisure and Drink in Second World War England." *Women's History Review* 12, no. 3: 423–443.
- Summerfield, Penny. 1998. *Reconstructing Women's Wartime Lives: Discourse and Subjectivity in Oral Histories of the Second World War*. Manchester and New York: Manchester Press.

GREAT BRITAIN, WOMEN'S ROYAL NAVAL SERVICE (WRNS), REORGANIZATION BEFORE WORLD WAR II

Reorganization of the British Women's Royal Naval Service (WRNS) on the eve of World War II. The decision to reorganize the British WRNS, which had been disbanded after World War I, was made on November 22, 1938. Dame Katherine Furse, who had overseen the formation and direction of the WRNS in World War I, declined to accept the directorship. She deferred to youth, and Mrs. Vera Laughton Matthews was offered the post at the end of March 1939. Her deputy was E. M. (Angela) Goodenough, at that time the chief woman official at the admiralty.

Recruits were required to be British citizens with British-born parents. The age limits at first were from eighteen to forty-five but were later expanded to seventeen and a half to fifty. The first tasks allotted to the women were office work, motor transport, cooking, and general duties. Volunteers were accepted, trained, and put in uniform and service with the outbreak of the war.

The director was determined that women, given training, were capable of performing most shore duties. Objections were raised, but eventually the need for women prevailed. Numbers and job categories expanded dramatically with the demands of the war. By the end of 1940, there were 10,000 WRNS officers and ranks. Some of the new categories were radio technicians, aircraft mechanics, torpedo servicers and handlers, and harbor-boat crews. By the end of 1942, there were 1,801 WRNS officers and 36,554 ranks serving on the British islands and 952 officers and ranks serving overseas. By September 1944, there were 74,635 officers and ranks serving in 50 branches of duty with 90 job categories. In January 1941, the first WRNS were dispatched to Singapore. Eventually WRENS were stationed in South and East Africa, the Middle East, Australia, India, Ceylon, and Hong Kong.

The WRNS had suffered their first wartime casualty in World War I when Josephine Carr was lost in the torpedoing of the mail steamer *Leinster* on the Irish Sea in October 1918. The first WRNS casualties of World War II were suffered on September 14, 1940, when 10 WRNS were killed when their boarding house at Lee on Solent in Northern Ireland was hit by a German bomb. The first WRNS contingent sent to Gibraltar was lost en route on August 19, 1941, when the SS *Aguila* was torpedoed. Twelve cipher officers, ten radio operators, and a nurse lost their lives. In December, forty WRNS successfully crossed the Mediterranean in the first convoy to cross the sea from Gibraltar through the Suez. After they transferred to another ship for Colombo, however, it was torpedoed, and thirty-eight WRNS were lost.

After World War II, the WRNS was not disbanded as it had been after World War I. On February 1, 1946, the WRNS became part of the Royal Navy. In November 1946, Dame Vera Laughton Matthews, the director who had overseen the rebirth and the development of the service, was succeeded by Dame Jocelyn Wollcombe. In the 1970s, the WRNS came under the Naval Discipline Act, and the Queen's Commission was given to WRNS officers. Closer integration of the WRNS with the Royal Navy continued in the 1980s. Women received the same training as men for shore support. Female personnel competed with their male counterparts for posts aboard ships in refit and for shore support for seagoing units, and during the Falklands War, WRNSs took over operations cells. Women also served at sea with helicopter units for brief postings and as part of Royal Marine postings to Northern Ireland.

—Bernard Cook

See also Furse, Lady Katherine Symonds; Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I

References and Further Reading

Fletcher, Marjorie H. 1989. *The WRNS: A History of the Women's Royal Naval Service*. Annapolis, MD: Naval Institute.

Mason, Ursula Stuart. 1977. *The Wrens 1917–1977: A History of the Women's Royal Naval Service*. Reading, England: Educational Explorers.

GREECE, RESISTANCE DURING WORLD WAR II, WOMEN AND

Role of women during the German, Italian, and Bulgarian occupation of Greece during World War II. During World War II and Nazi occupation (1941–1944), Greek women entered the public sphere en masse for the first time. Most of them joined the resistance through the military and political organizations of the Ethniko Apeleftherotiko Metopo (EAM; National Liberation Front). This was a coalition of many parties, in which the Communist Party of Greece played a dominant role. Women formed the majority of Ethniki Allilegyi (EA; National Solidarity), and young girls formed some 45 percent of Eniaias Panelladikis Organosis Neon (EPON; United Panhellenic Organization of Youth) strength. In EAM's military branch, Ellinikos Laikos Apeleftherotikos Stratos (ELAS; Greek People's Liberation Army), women were crucial in its auxiliary services but not in its fighting units (Vervenioti 1994, 186–192, 226–232, 307–311). The gender division of labor existing in society was clearly reproduced in the resistance movement.

Nevertheless, war and the triple occupation (German, Italian, and Bulgarian) gave women the opportunity to act as historical subjects and gain self-respect and self-confidence through their resistance activities. For teenage girls in particular, who had not yet completely accepted traditional gender roles, the radical spirit of the resistance and the difficulties of the struggle provided opportunities for initiatives and activities that had been unavailable in peacetime.

Before the war, nobody disputed that a woman's place was in the home and that her destiny was to marry and to bring up children.

The prerequisite for a good marriage was a hard-working, healthy, modest, and above all moral and honorable girl. Her morality and honor depended on her virginity and the absence of any kind of relationships with men outside the family. Father, brother, and husband had to protect a woman's honor by controlling where she went and what she did because her purity affected their honor and that of the family.

The economic and social changes that had begun between the wars and accelerated after 1941 breached the ideology of the patriarchal family. During occupation, the loss of property either in the city because of famine and the black market or in the countryside because of antiguerrilla reprisals, together with a general uncertainty about the future, weakened the role of the family. Dowries were lost and with them the prospect of a traditional marriage settlement. The inability of men to protect their womenfolk also weakened their control over them. This was one of the factors that allowed women to organize in the resistance and to enter the public sphere.

Wartime resistance was explicitly linked to demands for social reform and the creation of a new society in which there would be gender equality. Inside EAM's military or political organizations, women were treated not only as women but as human beings as well. Moreover, the resistance itself, for reasons of its own organizational growth and ideology, came to encompass some of the functions formerly attributed to the family. The honor of EAM or the Communist Party depended on the moral behavior of its members. For the partisans of ELAS, who were the basic defenders of the nation's honor, any love affair was forbidden—even glancing at or walking with a woman. Inside the political organizations, relationships were also under the control of the leadership. All these restrictions functioned positively for the massive development of the resistance movement. In the resistance, there was considerably more gender equality than in the traditional family and society. Even today, resistance

women believe that in EAM or the Communist Party, there was no discrimination between men and women.

The spring of 1943 was a turning point for the Greek resistance and especially for women's participation in it. Before that, the main social problem was famine; women's action against it was more or less an extension of their gender role—for instance, they ran soup kitchens. In March 1943, ELAS liberated the first city in the countryside, and Free Greece started expanding rapidly, mainly in the mountains. In Athens, the capital, five mass demonstrations took place from March to July 1943 in which women's presence was impressive. In the last one, a tank crushed an eighteen-year-old girl.

After Italy's surrender in September 1943, ELAS was able to arm itself with Italian guns. The German occupation forces reacted with brutal operations against the partisans, however. By the end of occupation, the Germans, as a reprisal for sheltering partisans, had destroyed totally or partially one-third of Greek villages. During this bloody period, women's largest and most dynamic participation in the resistance took place. EAM utilized women's mobilizations and demonstrations. In addition, in ELAS Exemplary Women's Platoons were founded, in which women undertook risky and traditionally male tasks.

The resistance movement proclaimed its support for women's rights. It granted women the right to vote in local elections, which took place in Free Greece, as well as in the general elections for its parliament, the National Council. Five women were elected, but only three attended its sessions, which were held at a mountain village in spring 1944. Despite the massive presence of women in resistance, they made up only 3 percent of the National Council (Vervenoti 2000, 103–118).

Women's massive participation in the resistance did not gain them political rights immediately after the war, as was the case in Italy and France. The new society, People's Democracy, which was expected by EAM members and sup-

porters, did not become a reality. Liberation was followed by a bloody civil war in which the Right was victorious.

—*Anastasia (Tasoula) Vervenioti*

See also Greek Civil War, Women in the

References and Further Reading

- Flaiser, Hagen. 1987. *Stemma kai Svastika. I Ellada tis Katohis kai tis Antistasis 1941–1944* [Crown and swastika: Occupation and resistance in Greece], Vol. 2. Athens: Papazisis.
- Mazower, Mark. 1993. *Inside Hitler's Greece: The Experience of Occupation, 1941–1944*. New Haven, CT, and England: Yale University Press.
- Vervenioti, Tasoula. 1994. *I gynaika tis Antistasis. I eisodos ton gynaikon stin Politiki* [Resistance's woman: Women's entrance into politics]. Athens: Odysseas.
- . 1999. "Les résistantes grecques et le Front National de Libération (EAM). Le militantisme féminin et ses contraintes (1941–1944)" [Greek resistance and the National Liberation Front (EAM): Female militancy and its limits (1941–1944)]. In *La résistance et les Européens du Sud* [The resistance and southern Europeans], edited by Jean-Marie Guillon and Robert Mencherini, 61–72. Paris: L' Harmattan.
- . 2000. "The Adventure of Women's Suffrage in Greece." In *When the War Was Over: Women, War, and Peace in Europe, 1940–1956*, edited by Claire Duchon and Irene Bandhauer-Schoffmann, 103–118. London and New York: Leicester University.

GREECE, WOMEN AND FEMALE IMAGERY IN GREEK WARFARE

Greece itself is female. Female imagery is rooted both in ancient times and in Christianity—from the ancient Greek goddess of wisdom and peace,

Minerva, who fought against Neptune and gained Athens (the capital of Greece), to the Virgin Mary. Most of all, Greece's imagery is a female warrior fighting for justice: liberty. The national anthem of Greece, written by the poet Dionysius Solomos (1798–1857), is titled *Anthem for Liberty*; in it, Greece and liberty are almost the same entity—a woman. Greece's feminine character is divided into two: one glorious and heroic, the other suffers. In poetry, songs, and painting, Greece appears either as a pretty young woman dressed in white or as an older woman dressed in black. The images coexist in work representative of war. As for Greek women, they look like Greece: they are glorious fighters or those who support the fighters and mourn their loss.

In the imagery of the Greek Revolution of 1821–1828 that led to the founding of the Greek state, Greece is dressed in white when she is leading the fighters—her sons or her brothers—into glorious battles; when in distress, she is dressed in black and is usually desperately alone. In the *Anthem for Liberty*, Greece went alone to the Great Powers asking for help and came back alone; all doors were closed. In fact, Greece is a little country surrounding by foreign nations, most of whom have at times been hostile. Its origin, alphabet, and language differ from those of its neighbors: to the east the Turks are Muslim, and to the north its neighbors are Christian Slavs and Bulgarians and Muslim Albanians. Thus, all Greeks, men and women, have at times had to fight. Kostis Palamas (1862–1943), one of the best-known and best-loved Greek poets of the twentieth century, wrote in "Daughter of Limnos" that it is not shameful when a woman leads male fighters because in ancient times there were militant goddesses, and Nike, the goddess of victory, was a virgin.

There are many popular songs about the women of Souli, the Souliotisses, who fought for their freedom in the prerevolutionary years. Many of the heroines of the Greek Revolution are depicted in paintings. In their portraits,

Manto Mavrogenous is well dressed and pretty, as is Bouboulina, forty-five years old with six children. Manto Mavrogenous appears with a rose in her hair, and Bouboulina is armed and determined in her ship; her right hand is pointing or indicating an order (*Historia tou Ellinikiou Ethnous*, 282). This glorious and heroic imagery is accompanied—as always—by one who suffers. In Eugene Delacroix's *Massacre of Chios*, there are three women in the foreground: one dead, a young one leaning at the shoulder of a man, and an older woman who looks anxious and terrified (*Historia tou Ellinikou Ethnous*, 245). In other paintings, Turks slaughter women who hold their children in their arms, trying to protect them.

In the 1940s, Greece was afflicted with war and occupation. The participation of women during this crucial period was frequent and of vital importance to mother Greece. During the Albanian war (1940–1941) when the Greeks fought Benito Mussolini's fascist Italy, the women of Mountain Pindos carried ammunition to the soldiers because there were no roads and no mules or donkeys. They were depicted in the paintings of both well-known and unknown artists (Baharian and Antaios 1986, 29, 41). At the same time, the singer Sofia Vembo—known as the singer of Victory—sang the still-popular song “Go on Children of Greece Who Fight for Us on the Mountains.”

During Nazi occupation (1941–1944) in one of the most famous songs of the Greek resistance, a partisan says, “My mother, sweet Greece, the partisans of the National Liberation Front would light for you the candle of honor and freedom” (*To antartiko tragoudi*, 43). The honor of Greece was lost because of occupation. The only way for Greece to regain its dignity and accordingly for the Greek people to be honored was to fight for their country's liberation. At this point, it was socially acceptable for women to join both the civilian and the armed resistance. Although Greek women had no political rights, it was acceptable during the occupation for them to enter the public arena

and participate in demonstrations and battles against occupied forces. Greece was in danger, and all Greek people—men and women—had to fight for its and, consequently, their own freedom.

Following World War II, during the Greek Civil War (1946–1949), the children of mother Greece were deeply divided. The right wing accused left-wing women of being dishonorable and prostitutes because their main focus was on political issues rather than solely on their families. When left-wing women stood in front of the firing squad, they sang the same song that Souliotisses had sung a hundred years earlier: “a fish could not live on land nor a flower on sea and Souliotisses could not live without freedom” (Papadouka 1981, 79). These women believed that they were fighting for their country's liberation from English and U.S. occupation, and they were determined as they faced execution to prove that they were real Greek women, real daughters of Greece.

—Anastasia (Tasoula) Vervenioti

See also Greek Civil War, Women in the; Greek Revolution, Women and the

References and Further Reading

- Baharian, Asantour, and Petros Antaios. 1986. *Eikastikes Martyries ston polemo, stin Katohi kai stin Antistasi* [Painting in war, occupation and resistance]. Athens: Ministry of Culture.
- Historia tou Ellinikou Ethnous. I elliniki epanastasi kai i idrysi tou ellinikou kratous (1821–1832)* [History of the Greek nation: The Greek Revolution and the establishment of the Greek state (1821–1832)]. 1975. Vol. IB. Athens: Ekdotiki Athinon.
- Papadouka, Olympia. 1981. *Gynaikeis Fylakes Averof* [Women's prisons]. Athens: Autoedition.
- Polyas, Iakovos. 1955. *Dionysiou Solomoy Apanta ta evriskomena* [Complete works of Dionisiou Solomou]. Athens: Editions Mari.
- To antartiko tragoudi* [Partisan's songs]. 1986. 5th ed. Athens: Editions Mnimi.

GREEK CIVIL WAR, WOMEN
IN THE

The role of women in the Greek Civil War (1946–1949) and its subsequent impact on women. A civil war is fought not only between soldiers on the battlefield but with civilians as both combatants and targets; women are crucial to establishing its specific form and agenda. The Greek Civil War was fought between the left and the right in the aftermath of World War II and in the context of the cold war. The left was supported by the Soviet bloc and the right by the British and, from 1947, the United States. Although Greek women only had the legal status of minors, their presence at military and political levels was crucial for both sides.

As for the left, at the military level, women constituted half of the Democratic Army of Greece (DAG) dominated by the Communist Party; 30 percent of its fighters and 70 percent of its personnel in support services were women (Zahariadi 1949, 258–263). The political involvement of left-wing women is self-evident; for the first time in Greek history, women were executed by fellow Greeks—members of the right-wing government. At the end of the armed conflict, almost 5,000 women, some with their children, were in a camp for exiles, which had been established especially for women on the island of Trikeri (*Syllogos* 1996). In addition, the Central Women's Prison in Athens was overcrowded, and the government established local women's prisons in many other cities.

The leader of the right-wing women was Queen Fredericka. She established a fund and initiated an international campaign to rescue children—and hence the nation—from the Communists, who were transporting children from Greece to Soviet bloc countries. The Commissioned Ladies of the Queen's Fund affected public opinion. Their campaign for children's salvation changed the political climate of the UN meetings and altered public opinion on behalf of the official Greek government, which had been castigated for its policy of executions.

Whereas on the left, women were bona-fide fighters, the structure of the government's army as well as the right-wing ideology of national-mindedness relegated women to knitting sweaters for the soldiers.

Just as periods of social upheaval and crisis often act as vehicles for the expansion of women's roles, so does their ending force women back into their traditional roles. This process of forced domestication was especially painful in postwar Greece in view of the role of women in the resistance. During World War II, as a result of the occupation of Greece by Nazi Germany, Italy, and Bulgaria, Greek women entered into the public sphere en masse through the National Liberation Front, which was dominated by the Communist Party. The end of World War II and the defeat of fascism had given rise to hopes for a better world in which women would obtain equality, but Greek women were not granted political rights as they were in Italy and France. In the first year following the end of the war, the resistance vision of a new society was still vivid. Women's unions were mushrooming all over the country. Women Communists and the feminist League for Women's Rights, which had struggled for the vote since the 1920s, founded the largest ever women's federation in Greece. For a short period of time, all women's unions cooperated to demand the right to vote.

In 1946, Greece had signed the UN Charter. Thus, gender equality had theoretically become Greek law. That very year, however, due to the civil war, the League of Greek Women Scientists, as well as other women's unions, adopted the view of right-wing politicians that women should not yet be given suffrage. In a civil war, nobody can remain neutral; the women's unions had to choose sides. In 1947, the right-wing Greek government dissolved the left-wing women's unions because they were sympathetic to the Communist Party, which was outlawed.

In 1948, the country was deeply divided; there were two governments and two armies. In October, women DAG fighters established their

own organization, but the next year the left was defeated by the right. Near the end of 1948, the United Nations asked the official Greek government to send a delegate to the Commission on the Status of Women. The women's unions took advantage of this and established a Coordination Committee of Seven Cooperating Unions and started demanding the vote for women. The civil war placed a crucial dilemma before the feminist League for Women's Rights, which had to choose a side; ultimately it joined the right-wing women's coalition. U.S. influence was clearly crucial in making the link between the right wing and the women's movement. The newest of the seven unions, founded in 1948, was the Greek Federation of Women's Unions, the Greek branch of the U.S. General Federation of Women's Clubs. Lina Tsaldari, widow of a former prime minister and a commissioned lady of the Queen's Fund, was its president. She was appointed as the Greek government's delegate to the UN Commission on the Status of Women.

The tactic of right-wing women's unions differed from their opponents. They did not demonstrate, petition, or hold public meetings as the left-wing unions had done to demand suffrage. They exploited the power of the male members of their family, usually ministers or bankers, and visited the ministers or the leaders of the political parties to exert pressure. They also cooperated with the local and state authorities who, because of the civil war, were hostile to the left wing. Right-wing women could register to vote more easily, and thus the leadership of right-wing women provided a new electorate for right-wing politicians.

The paradox is that right-wing women demanded the right to vote and the right to occupy political office, but at the same time they insisted that a woman's place was in the home. Lina Tsaldari stated that the vote was a "national duty" and that "a woman's first duty is to her family." She made it clear that Greek women were not like those women who "rejected everything Greek and everything womanly"—that is, the left-wing women who were exiled or impris-

oned (Vervenioti 2002, 115–126). Tsaldari did not argue for equality but for difference. She argued that a woman is first a woman and then a citizen; not only did she invoke nature and the difference between the sexes but, by implication, also right-wing women's difference from the so-called other women—the women of the left wing. This difference-based feminism fit perfectly within a nationalist framework, making it an acceptable part of its ideology.

Finally, in the general election of February 19, 1956, Greek women participated on equal terms with men. Two women were elected: the left-wing Vasso Thanassekou and Lina Tsaldari. Tsaldari became the first woman minister in Greece, serving as minister of social welfare, while left wing women's leaders were imprisoned or exiled. The Greek Civil War overrode common gender identity and even gender interests.

—Anastasia (Tasoula) Vervenioti

See also Greece, Women and Female Imagery in Greek Warfare

References and Further Reading

- Duchen, Claire, and Irene Bandhauer-Schoffmann. 2000. *When the War Was Over: Women, War and Peace in Europe, 1940–1956*. London and New York: Leicester University.
- Mazower, Mark. 2000. *After the War Was Over. Reconstructing the Family, Nation and State in Greece, 1943–1960*. Princeton, NJ, and Oxford, England: Princeton University.
- "Syllogos politikou exoriston gynaikon" [Union of politically exiled women]. 1996. In *Gynaikes exoristes sta stratopeda tou emfyliou* [Women in exile during the Civil War]. Athens: Kastaniotis.
- Vervenioti, Tasoula. 2002. "Charity and Nationalism: The Greek Civil War and the Entrance of Right-Wing Women into Politics." In *Right-Wing Women: From Conservatives to Extremists around the World*, edited by Paola Bacchetta and Margaret Power, 115–126. New York and London: Routledge.
- Zahariadi, Roula. 1949. "I 1 Panelladiki Syndiaskeptis P.D.E.G." [The first pan-Hellenic meeting of democratic women]. In *Dimokratikos Stratos* [Democratic army], Vol. 4: 258–263.

GREEK REVOLUTION, WOMEN
AND THE

Role of women in the Greek Revolution against the Ottoman Empire (1821–1830). Women participated in the Greek Revolution not only as mothers, wives, or sisters of fighters, but as fighters themselves. There were women members or followers of the *Filiki Etaireia* organization (the Society of Friends) that organized the revolution, women members of solidarity committees, and an unknown number of women who participated in battles, both on land and at sea. Women from other European countries supported the revolution through the Philhellenist movement. Among them were the wife of the poet Percy Bysshe Shelley and the daughter-in-law of Johann Wolfgang von Goethe.

Although many Greek women in mountain villages knew how to use a weapon, there were two areas, Souli and Mani, where women used weapons not only to defend themselves but also to fight against their enemies. In the prerevolution period, Ali Pasha of Joannina in northwest Greece attacked the villages of Souli (1792–1804). Its inhabitants, orthodox Albanians, strongly resisted, and women played an important role. Their example was a vital inspiration for women's participation in the Greek Revolution because their heroism was widely known through popular songs. According to one song, Moscho led 300 armed women to win the battle of Kiafa in 1792, and Despo, her daughters, daughters-in-laws, and grandchildren, fortified in a castle, fought against Muslim Albanians. In December 1803, when Despo realized that they would be captured, she blew up the castle. Moreover, after Souli's defeat, 22 women and their children singing and dancing a song of liberty threw themselves in a gorge; they preferred to die rather than be arrested and raped by their enemies.

Mani is located in southern Greece, near ancient Sparta. Mani's women participated in battles in separate units. In 1826, Turk and Egyptian forces blocked and attacked the villages of Mani, where many had sought refuge. The

whole population strongly resisted, but of the 1,500 Greek combatants in the crucial battle, 1,000 were women.

Nevertheless, Laskarina Bouboulina and Manto Maurogenous, the most famous women fighters of the Greek Revolution, were not from mountain villages but islands. Bouboulina was from Spetses. She was a forty-five-year-old widow and had six children, three from her first marriage and three from her second. Both of her husbands were ship owners, and both had died during sea battles against Algerian corsairs. Bouboulina, from the beginning of the revolution, armed ships and participated in naval sieges as well as on horseback in battles on land. Three of her sons, the youngest only twelve years old, followed her. The eldest was killed during battle. Bouboulina, in addition to fighting and serving as a leader of the revolution, supported it financially. She was killed in 1825 not by Turks but by members of another Greek family. One of her sons had kidnapped the girl he loved, and the girl's family shot Bouboulina, thinking that she was responsible for the abduction.

Manto Mayrogenous was born in Trieste, but during the revolution, she lived on her home island of Myconos. She sold all her property, even her jewelry, and contributed the money to the needs of the revolutionary struggle. She wrote letters addressed to the women of Paris and Great Britain seeking their support for the Greek Revolution. She also fought on land and sea and was known by the honorary title of lieutenant general. She twice defended Myconos successfully: in 1822, when 200 Algerian corsairs attacked it and in 1824 when the Egyptian navy assaulted the island. Her personal life was not as successful. She was in love with Prince Dimitrios Ipsilandis, a leader of the revolution, but while he was absent, some masked men kidnapped her and took her to Myconos. The prince never sought her return, and Manto denounced him to the National Assembly. She insisted that because he had taken her virginity, he should marry her. He did not respond. She was disowned by her mother and sister and died in poverty during an epidemic in 1840.



The Massacre at Chios, by Eugene Delacroix (1798–1863). (ScalalArt Resource)

Apart from Bouboulina and Manto, thousands of Greek women were involved in the revolution. As part of the unarmed civilian population, they faced starvation, capture, enslavement, rape, and death. During battles or sieges, many women supported the fighters by building fortifications; transporting guns, ammunition, food, and water; looking after the wounded; and even using the guns of their dead husbands or sons and fighting the enemy to avenge their death. There are many reported cases of young girls who participated in battles dressed as men or who followed their lovers in battles. Because of her beauty, loyalty, and courage, the lover of Captain Georgios Karaiskaki obtained the privilege of participating in military counsels. Women also played leading roles in committees that sheltered refugees and orphans and collected material support for the revolution. A famous case is that of Psorokostaina, a woman beggar who donated the only penny she had to the revolution.

Psorokostaina has become a byword in Greece, symbolic of the fact that even poor Greeks support those in need.

—Anastasia (Tasoula) Vervenioti

See also Greece, Women and Female Imagery in Greek Warfare

References and Further Reading

- Historia tou Ellinikou Ethnous. I elliniki epanastasi kai i idrysi tou ellinikou kratous (1821–1832)* [History of the Greek nation: The Greek Revolution and the establishment of the Greek state (1821–1832)]. 1975. Vol. IB. Athens: Ekdotiki Athinon.
- Xiradaki, Koula. 1995. *Gynaikes tou '21. Prosfores, iroismoι kai thysies* [Women of 1821: Offerings, heroism and sacrifices]. Athens and Joannina: Dodoni.

GREEK WOMEN AND WAR IN ANTIQUITY

A few notable exceptions to the largely passive role of Greek women. Despite their own legends of ferocious women warriors, ancient Greek military practice did not lend itself to the direct involvement of women. By the seventh century B.C., a fighting system had evolved that depended almost exclusively on a citizen militia whose fighters, the hoplites, wore heavy armor and marched in tight ranks. This fighting method depended on bodily strength to wield shield and spear and left almost no scope for personal fighting skill in which a woman's quickness could compensate for her lack of muscle. The hoplite ranks were also a club exclusive to citizens—that is, men with voting rights with sufficient means to arm themselves. Greek women did not have political rights and thus would automatically have been rejected from their city's armies, along with foreigners and the poor. Legends of Amazons, hordes of wild females who fought Greece's primal heroes,

should be taken as tales of dangerous cultural inversion rather than as historical fact. The main deity of war, Athena, was female, and she played a uniquely powerful role thanks in large part to her position as both the emanation of Zeus's will and as a virgin. We can presume that at least some Greek women bore arms in a last desperate defense of their homes when their male defenders lay dead, but in general, the work of Greek women was to support male military endeavor rather than to fight.

Nowhere was this supporting role clearer than in Sparta. The Spartan upper class was militarized to an astonishing degree; the men had no occupation but war, and their training was conducted with iron rigor from age seven. Spartan women were recognized as playing a vital role in this military machine. They were trained to a high standard of physical fitness so that they could bear healthy soldiers for Sparta. Spartan women were the only females of ancient Greece to receive an education as a matter of course. This was done so the women could conduct the vital early training of Spartan warriors. Men lived in barracks until age thirty and after that still spent most of their time with their units, so Spartan women also played an extraordinary economic role, running their households and family estates so that the men could devote themselves to war. These upper-class Spartan women also embodied the patriotism of the state. Collections of Spartan women's sayings (almost the only female voices we have from ancient Greece) include praise of sons who died bravely, bitter rebukes of cowards, and even murder of sons who failed in courage.

In the rest of archaic and classical Greece, women were unlikely to assume an important economic position during wars because their men were rarely off fighting for more than a few days at a time, battling near neighbors in a single afternoon battle. Women were expected to be patriotic but passive.

Most women who appear in a Greek military context were first and foremost victims. An important reason for Greek men to fight was to protect their women, an important form of

wealth much coveted by invaders. The *Iliad* includes Andromache's moving plaint at the harsh fate of a woman whose man has been killed and her city taken. She was taken captive and forced to labor for and give pleasure to her city's enemies. Accounts recovered from thirteenth-century B.C. Pylos show that this was not simply literary hyperbole; ration lists included, among palace servants, groups of women from a series of towns and villages along the Asia Minor coast, clearly captured in raids. Enslavement of the losers in war continued throughout the ancient world, mostly women and children because they were easier to handle than men and because their skills, especially as weavers, were valuable.

A number of Greek cities had heroine cults of sacrificial virgins who died for the good of their city. For example, there is a legend of a prophecy that Athens would win a war if somebody would commit suicide for the sake of the city. The virgin Aglauros did so by jumping off a cliff, and Athens honored her with a shrine. Rarely did these victims have actual dealings with the enemy, but the city of Naxos honored a woman named Polykrite who was captured in war and forced to become the enemy commander's concubine. She passed secret information on to her family, and the city was able to win its freedom, although Polykrite was killed in the process.

It is only when the democracies of the classical period gave way to Hellenistic monarchies that a few women came to play a more active role in war. In a hereditary system, soldiers, loyal to a royal leader, would also extend their devotion to the king's female kin. This principle was already clear in the wars of succession that followed the death of Alexander the Great in 323 B.C. At one stage, to the astonishment of most Greeks, two royal women tried to rally troops to support the claims of their male puppets. Olympias, Alexander's mother, sought to protect the rights of his minor son, while Eurydice, granddaughter of Philip II of Macedon, fought to support the claim of Alexander's mentally retarded half-brother Arridaios, to whom she was married. Both Olympias and Eurydice appeared on the battlefield to inspire their troops.

Olympias was robed as a priestess, while Eurydice, who very unusually had been trained in arms, wore Macedonian armor and seems to have intended to fight. The Macedonian soldiers rallied to Olympias, however, and both Eurydice and her husband were captured and soon killed.

The Greek historian Polybius and the apocryphal 3 Maccabees in the Old Testament both tell that Queen Arsinoë of Egypt (c. 224–c. 203 B.C.) played a decisive role in the Fourth Syrian War between Egypt and Syria. Still a young girl, Arsinoë was brought to the front before the Battle of Raphia (217) where she rallied the demoralized Egyptian troops, weeping and urging them to fight for their wives and children. Doubtless charmed by such a royal appeal, the Egyptians then won the day.

The only Hellenistic woman known to have taken command in the field was Cleopatra VII (69–30 B.C.), the last Ptolemaic queen of Egypt. Cleopatra assumed this military role because she was a ruling queen instead of sharing her power with a male. Early in her career, Cleopatra's brother/husband Ptolemy XIII drove her from Alexandria. She raised troops and won Julius Caesar's assistance to gain control. On a larger scale, Cleopatra joined up with the Roman triumvir Mark Antony a decade later, first as his mistress and then as his wife. Full-scale civil war broke out between Antony and his rival Octavian in 32 B.C., and Cleopatra provided a fleet to support Antony, which she commanded herself. She was present at the Battle of Actium in September of 31. Most accounts simply report that the queen fled with her contingent, but because her ships had masts and sails on board (which they would not have had for a fight), it seems much more likely that she was making a planned effort to break out with Antony's war chest to continue the war in Egypt. In Egypt Cleopatra was unable to rally an army against Octavian and soon committed suicide.

—*Phyllis G. Jestice*

See also Amazons; Cleopatra VII, Queen of Egypt

References and Further Reading

- Brule, Pierre. 2003. *Women of Ancient Greece*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University.
- Larson, Jennifer. 1995. *Greek Heroine Cults*. Madison: University of Wisconsin.
- Pomeroy, Sarah B. 1984. *Women in Hellenistic Egypt*. New York: Schocken.
- . 2002. *Spartan Women*. Oxford, England: Oxford University Press.

GREENE, CATHARINE
LITTLEFIELD (CATY)
(1755–1814)

The wife of the American Revolutionary War general Nathanael Greene, who accompanied her husband during numerous wartime campaigns and after his death successfully petitioned the U.S. government for reimbursement of the personal debts he incurred to supply his troops.

Catharine “Caty” or “Kitty” Littlefield married Nathanael Greene in 1774, one year before General George Washington appointed him brigadier general in the Continental Army. Catharine initially remained in her home state of Rhode Island at the start of the war but soon joined her husband at camp. Confident, pretty, and witty, she became renowned for her social graces and enjoyed the acquaintance of such preeminent Revolutionary figures as Henry Knox, Alexander Hamilton, and the Marquis de Lafayette, as well as the close friendship of Martha Washington and Lucy Knox.

Catharine gave birth to four children during the war years, yet spending much of the year at camp, she chose camp life and the company of her husband over a more isolated domestic life. Her children on occasion would accompany her, but they were more often left in the care of family in Rhode Island. Catharine cheered spirits during the bleak winters at Valley Forge and Middlebrook, nursed the sick and wounded in South Carolina, and took part in dances, balls,

and quilting circles that maintained gentility amid hardship.

In 1780, Nathanael took command of the southern troops, and he supplied them by any means available, even using his personal credit. He incurred debt that weighed heavily on the Greene family in the years following the war. In 1785, two years after the war's end, Nathanael was unable to support the family in New England, and they moved south to a plantation land near Savannah that had been granted to Greene by South Carolina and Georgia in thanks for his service. He died of a stroke less than a year later.

After Nathanael's death, Catharine submitted an indemnity petition to the government for reimbursement of his wartime debts. She received private encouragement from President Washington and personally presented her case to the U.S. Treasury Department in 1791. The next year, Congress approved an award of \$47,000 to be paid to her in installments. Later in life, she married Phineas Miller and was instrumental in supporting Eli Whitney's invention of the cotton gin.

—Kristen L. Rouse

See also American Revolution, Role of Women in the

References and Further Reading

Stegeman, John F., and Janet A. Stegeman. 1985. *Caty: A Biography of Catharine Littlefield Greene*. Athens: University of Georgia Press.

GREENHOW, ROSE O'NEALE (1814–1864)

Confederate socialite and spy ringleader during the American Civil War. Rose O'Neale was born in 1814 at Tobacco Landing, Maryland. She was orphaned in 1817 when her father, a planter, was murdered by one of his slaves. Generously



Confederate spy Rose O'Neal Greenhow with her daughter in the courtyard of the Old Capitol Prison in Washington, D.C., ca. 1862. (Library of Congress)

dowered, she moved in the social circle of her sister-in-law Dolley Madison and married Dr. Robert Greenhow, a medical doctor, lawyer, and linguist in 1835. Between 1848 and 1852, the pair and their children traveled to Mexico City and San Francisco on assignment for the State Department. Greenhow died in 1854 after a fall in San Francisco, and the widowed Rose returned to Washington, D.C., with her children. There she wielded significant influence as a society hostess and maintained contact with powerful politicians including James Buchanan and Henry Clay.

Rose Greenhow continued to hold dinner parties as the political atmosphere grew more charged in the late 1850s, ending with the election of Abraham Lincoln with whom she had no influence. Greenhow was an outspoken secessionist and clashed with her niece, Stephen Douglas's wife Adele, and her son-in-law, Treadwell Moore, a Union army officer. When war was declared, Rose was the paid agent of

CONFEDERATE WOMAN SPY

Charleston, Virginia, November 14, 1862

“These females have generally descended from the high and dignified spheres of the social circle and domestic fireside, and metamorphosed themselves into the shape and status of politicians, columniators [sic] and traducers of their country and its flag. Nor does the picture end here. It is from these females, who have played the successful scouts and spies, that the rebel leaders have gathered their best information. These women, practicing a deception on our own generals, sometimes in the guise of ladies and again in the disguise of the rustic, have been permitted to pass our lines, visit our camps, and those of the first named have been feted by our officers. It is unnecessary to individualise instances of this kind in passing the subject. I will only mention the names of Belle Boyd and Mrs. Greenhow as heading the list of one hundred female rebels who have made for themselves infamous reputations. I have an instance fresh to my mind which was related to me recently by an officer of worth, who told me of a case in which one of our two star generals was deceived most egregiously by one of these female rebel adepts. He was enchanted, as it were, by her personal beauty, her volubility of language and innocent manner. She was allowed the liberty of the camp for several days; but suddenly she was non est inventus [not to be found]. She gained the information she came for, and her departure was as mysterious as her advent.”

—*Peoria Morning Mail*, November 21, 1862, p. 2, c. 2,
http://www.uttyler.edu/vbetts/Peoria_mail.htm (accessed January 23, 2006).

Colonel Thomas Jordan, adjutant-general to General P. T. Beauregard, and acted as his source of information in Washington. Through her social contacts, she reported dissension in Lincoln's cabinet, organization plans for the army, and provided copies of military maps of railroads and the defenses of Washington. Her most valuable coup, however, was providing advance warning that the federal army planned to cut the rail lines at Manassas Gap, giving enough warning for reinforcements to aid the Confederates at the First Battle of Bull Run.

Greenhow visited Confederate prisoners in Washington, providing clothing, food, and money, and she gathered information on federal troop positions and their conditions in the field. She also charmed the blueprints for a new line of naval gunboats from naval officers who had been guests at her social events. She never modulated her vociferous hostility toward Lincoln or

the North, despite running an extensive, if haphazard, network of informants and messengers. Because of her indiscretions, Detective Allan Pinkerton arrested her on August 23, 1861, and placed her under house arrest. She thwarted her captors by burning the most incriminating of the materials in her possession, but without her, the spy ring unraveled, and the Pinkertons caught many Confederate spies.

Greenhow behaved so belligerently that she was moved to the Old Capitol Prison in January 1862 and was kept there until she was tried by the U.S. Commission for the Trial of State Prisoners. The Commission found little for which she could be legitimately charged with treason. Instead, she was sent south to Richmond, where Jefferson Davis greeted her as a heroine. Her exploits convinced the federal government that southern women were not misguided patriots but potentially devastating enemy agents, and

the increased vigilance of Union agents led to the subsequent capture of spies such as Belle Boyd. Davis sent Greenhow to England in 1863 to publish her memoirs of imprisonment and raise support for the Confederacy. While there she met Queen Victoria and Napoleon III and Empress Eugenie of France, but she could gain little real support from them or their nations.

With profits in gold from the sales of her book, Rose returned to the Confederacy onboard the *Condor*, which ran aground off of Wilmington, North Carolina. She insisted on being rowed to a nearby fort rather than waiting onboard for rescue. She drowned on October 1, 1864, due to the weight of the gold sewn into her clothes. She was buried with full honors of the Confederacy, and her grave is still maintained by the Daughters of the Confederacy.

Margaret Sankey

See also Baker, E. H.; Boyd, Isabelle; Civil War, American, and Women; Moon, Lottie, and Moon, Ginnie; Tubman, Harriet

References and Further Reading

- Burger, Nash K. 1967. *Confederate Spy: Rose O'Neale Greenhow*. New York: Franklin Watts.
- Greenhow, Rose O'Neale. 1863. *My Imprisonment and the First Year of Abolition Rule in Washington*. London: R. Bentley.
- Ross, Ishbel. 1954. *Rebel Rose*. New York: Harper.

GRENADIER SQUAW

See Nonhelema

GRESE, IRMA (1923–1945)

Youngest Nazi concentration camp guard executed for war crimes. Irma Grese was the most

notorious of the 3,500 female concentration and death camp guards (Brown 1996, 6–7). Grese was born on October 7, 1923, into a farming family in Wrechem in Mecklenburg. Her father was either an agricultural worker or a small farmer. Grese left school at fifteen. After working as a farm laborer, as a clerk, and at a hospital, Grese, who had joined a Nazi youth organization, the League of German Girls (*Bund deutscher Mäde*), was assigned by the Labor Exchange to train as a female guard at Ravensbrück, the concentration camp for women. She was transferred to the Auschwitz-Birkenau death camp in March 1943. Grese went home to visit her father before heading east. Her arrival in an SS uniform provoked a violent reaction from her father, and she never visited her family again. In the fall of 1943, she was promoted to the SS rank of *Oberaufseherin*, or senior supervisor, the second-highest female SS rank, and became an overseer of the female prisoners in the camp's Lager C. At Auschwitz, Grese reputedly became the mistress of Dr. Josef Mengele (Hart 1982, 93). In January 1945, when Auschwitz was evacuated as the Russians approached, Grese was reassigned to Ravensbrück, and she was transferred to the Bergen-Belsen concentration camp in March 1945. After the British liberated Bergen-Belsen on April 15, Grese was arrested and subsequently condemned to death with two other women and eight men at the Belsen Trial conducted at Lüneberg. At the trial, she was accused of torturing prisoners by former inmates of the camps where she had served, arbitrarily shooting or setting her vicious dogs on prisoners and selecting prisoners for the gas chamber. Grese, Elisabeth Volkenrath, Juana Bormann, and the eight men condemned at Lüneberg were hung at the Hamelin jail in Westphalia on December 13, 1945.

—Bernard Cook

See also Braunsteiner, Hermine; Holocaust and Jewish Women; Koch, Ilse

References and Further Reading

- Brown, D. P. 1996. *The Beautiful Beast: The Life and Crimes of SS-Aufseherin Irma Grese*. Ventura, CA: Golden West.
- Hart, Kitty. 1982. *Return to Auschwitz*. New York: Atheneum.
- Manvell, Roger, and Heinrich Fraenkel. 1967. *The Incomparable Crime: Mass Extermination in the Twentieth Century: The Legacy of Guilt*. New York: G. P. Putnam.
- Phillips, Raymond. 1949. *The Trial of Josef Kramer and Forty-four Others*. London: William Hodge.

GRIZODUBOVA, VALENTINA
STEPANOVNA (1910–1993)

The sole woman commanding officer of a men's wing during World War II and one of the few Soviet women to attain the rank of full colonel. Born in Khar'kov (currently Kharkiv) on January 31, 1910, the daughter of an aircraft designer, Valentina Grizodubova graduated from Penza Flying Club (1929), Kharkiv Flying School, and Advanced Flying School in Tula (1933). She mastered many types of aircraft, setting seven world records. On September 24–25, 1938, Grizodubova flew nonstop from Moscow to the Pacific (6,450 km) aboard an ANT-37 named Rodina (Homeland). Grizodubova failed to reach the final destination, the airfield in Komsomol'sk on the Amur River. Running out of fuel, she was forced to belly land. (The crew suspected that their mechanics failed to refill the tanks after testing Rodina on the ground.) For this pioneer flight, she, her copilot Polina Osipenko (1907–1939), and navigator Marina Raskova (1912–1943) were awarded Hero of the Soviet Union, the highest Soviet military decoration. They were the first Soviet women to be thus honored.

In May 1942, Grizodubova was appointed commanding officer of the 101st Long-Range

Air Regiment (renamed the 31st Krasnosel'sky Guards Bomber Regiment in 1944) and successfully demonstrated the suitability of the Li-2 (modified DC-3) for use as a night bomber. In June 1942, she led her unit in delivering supplies to the blockaded Leningrad. She was noted for flying more than her male colleagues and sometimes monitored her pilots' performance as copilot. Because of her intervention, her superior, a troublesome general, was demoted.

In September 1942, her unit was placed at the disposal of Central Partisan Headquarters. Overcoming dense enemy flak and engaging enemy fighters, her aircrews flew more than 1,850 supply missions (Cottam 1998, 7) and on their way back evacuated wounded partisans and children. In 1943, Grizodubova prevailed on her superiors not to decrease the frequency of these flights.

She flew about 200 wartime missions, spent 18,000 hours in the air (Cottam 1998, 8–9), and was awarded many prestigious military decorations. A senior official of civil aviation after the war, Grizodubova also served on the executive of several veterans' organizations, assisting numerous former prisoner-of-war camp inmates who were persecuted by Soviet authorities. As a member of the Soviet parliament, she courageously criticized Stalin's reign of terror.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Soviet Union, Women in the Armed Forces

References and Further Reading

- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 1998. *Women in War and Resistance*. Nepean, Canada: New Military Publishing.
- . 2003. "Grizodubova, Valentina Stepanovna." In *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*, edited by Reina Pennington, Vol. 1, 186–188. Westport, CT: Greenwood.

GROSSMAN, CHAIKA
(1919–1996)

Organizer of the Bialystok Ghetto revolt during World War II and active Jewish resistance delegate and courier for various Eastern European ghettos under Nazi control.

At the outbreak of World War II, Chaika Grossman left her native Bialystok, Poland, for Vilna, Lithuania, to help organize Zionist youth group (*Hashomer Hatzair*) refugees who were fleeing the advancing Germans. When Vilna also fell to the Nazis, Grossman hid her Jewish identity and used falsified papers to move back and forth between the city and the Vilna ghetto where she consulted with other underground leaders and was named leader of the effort to organize the Bialystok ghetto. She was also responsible for the establishment of communications with the Warsaw ghetto. In Bialystok, she persuaded a number of the ideologically based underground groups to give up their differences and to work together to resist the Nazis. She argued for and received the same cohesion from Warsaw ghetto leaders. While in Warsaw, Grossman also took part in the decision to “carry out one concentrated action at the decisive hour and not to waste our forces in frequent skirmishes” (Grossman 1987, 81). This decision helped to determine the strategy taken by the fighters of the Bialystok underground. Back in Vilna, she was given the order to centralize the political work of the underground and to keep the lines of communication open between Vilna, Bialystok, and Warsaw. In this capacity she made numerous trips across dangerous borders and showed her intelligence, courage, and wit when confronted with the searches and interrogations of the border guards.

Eventually travel became more restricted and liaison activities between the three ghettos more difficult. Grossman then increased her involvement in the local Bialystok underground movement where she was vital to that ghetto’s overall defense strategy. One of Grossman’s major contributions was her daring rescue of an explosives expert from the Volkovisk concentration camp

(Grossman 1987, 156). Explosives, as well as the guns Grossman and her colleagues smuggled into the ghetto, were vital for the coming revolt.

The revolt began on August 16, 1942, when the Nazis began a liquidation operation inside the ghetto. During the revolt, Grossman fought alongside her comrades, attempting to create an opening for the ghetto inhabitants to escape. They failed in their attempt, and she was among the few survivors who escaped the ghetto. She continued her underground activities as the leader of a group of couriers and was instrumental in coordinating resistance activities with the forest partisans. Grossman continued her underground activities until the Soviets liberated Bialystok in August 1944.

Grossman was awarded the Polish Government’s Grunwald Cross for valor in 1948. That same year, she immigrated to Israel where she eventually became a member of the Israeli parliament and also wrote a book about her involvement in the Bialystok underground.

—Tracey J. Axelrod

See also Bruskina, Masha; Fittko, Lisa; Fuld, Bracha; Kempner, Vitka; Korczak, Rozka; Landau, Emilia; Reik, Haviva; Senesh, Hannah

References and Further Reading

Grossman, Chaika. 1987. *The Underground Army: Fighters of the Bialystok Ghetto*. Translated from the Hebrew by Shmuel Beer. New York: Holocaust Library.

GUATEMALA, CIVIL CONFLICT
AND WOMEN

The impact of Guatemala’s prolonged internal social conflict on women. In 1954, Guatemala entered a bloody era that lasted until the 1990s. Guatemala became a pawn in the cold war but was also immersed in its own extended battles



Activist author Rigoberta Menchú, winner of the 1992 Nobel Peace Prize. (Dorante/Corbis Sygma)

over culture, society, politics, and economics. From 1944 to 1954, Guatemalans enjoyed what is commonly referred to as Ten Years of Spring under Presidents Juan José Arévalo (1944–1950) and Jacobo Arbenz (1950–1954). During that period, the two reformists permitted greater civil liberties including freedom of expression, whether through the press or through political and union organization. Arévalo embarked on an agrarian reform policy, which was continued by Arbenz but was ultimately ended with U.S. intervention. Their plan redistributed fallow lands of large plantations to the poor. This policy infringed on the holdings of the United Fruit Company that had ties to powerful politicians in the Eisenhower administration. Moreover, Arbenz recognized the communist Guatemalan Labor Party (PGT) as a legitimate political entity. With the land reform and communists gain-

ing more governmental positions in Guatemala, the U.S. Central Intelligence Agency organized a group of disillusioned military men to move against Arbenz, who had also been an officer. In June 1954, the United States–backed General Carlos Castillo crossed into Guatemala from Nicaragua and overthrew Arbenz, the democratically elected president.

After the overthrow of Arbenz, Guatemala entered an era of violent repression that continued into the mid-1990s. The military and the landed elite united to roll back many reforms that Arbenz and Arévalo had initiated, particularly in the area of land reform. The Guatemalan army and government resorted to violence to protect business and landholding interests and repress civil society. Increased militarization, fraudulent elections, and the destruction of broad-based activism took a toll, leading to the outbreak of civil war led by left-of-center guerrillas.

In 1962, two ex-military officers influenced by Arbenz formed the Revolutionary Armed Forces (FAR). FAR predominantly comprised middle-class men and women who looked to Cuba as an example. Women mobilized, joining the guerrillas, student groups, unions, peasant collectives, and Catholic organizations. Women protested government-sponsored state violence as well as harsh working conditions, and many women suffered violence. In 1963, young and mature women participated in a teacher's strike that inevitably led to a confrontation with police forces. In 1968, Rogelia Cruz Martínez, a 1950 Miss Guatemala and an activist in the armed opposition, was found dead after being raped, beaten, and mutilated by a right-wing paramilitary group, La Mano Blanco (the White Hand). Other women active in the guerrilla movement were raped and tortured, and some were burned alive.

To combat FAR, the Guatemalan government developed an effective counterinsurgency tactic that ultimately destroyed FAR. In the 1970s, the revolution shifted away from the middle classes to Mayan peasants. The Guerrilla Army of the Poor (EGP), founded by some ex-FAR combat-

ants, and the Organization of People in Arms (ORPA) emerged. Again, women played significant roles in the struggle for indigenous rights and as combatants. In 1978, Mama Maquín led hundreds of peasants in an attempt to regain their lands in Panzos. The army massacred Maquín and more than 100 men, women, and children. One of the most famous Mayan women, who publicly exposed the atrocities taking place in Guatemala, was 1992 Nobel Peace Prize winner Rigoberta Menchú. She documented the systematic genocide of the Guatemalan people by the government and right-wing death squads in her book, *I Rigoberta Menchú*. Like her father, Menchú was a member of the Peasant Unity Committee (CUC). She became an activist due to the general repression within Guatemalan society and the violent repression of opposition by the military.

The violence waged against unionists, students, Mayans, and poor peasants led many, like Menchú, to join the guerrillas. In 1981, with escalating violence, EGP and ORPA united with the PGT as the Guatemalan National Revolutionary Unity, URNG. With the formation of the URNG and the success of the Sandinistas in Nicaragua and the continued civil war in El Salvador, President and General Efraín Ríos Montt received support from the United States for a scorched-earth counterinsurgency campaign that left more than 200,000 people dead and 500,000 displaced. A born-again Christian, Ríos Montt believed he had a mandate from God to bring the end of the civil war through his “beans and guns” policy. He created Self-Defense Patrols to reign in the civilian population by building a civilian network of terror.

The civil war raged through the 1990s. In Guatemala, mothers and spouses of the disappeared organized; however, popular organizations were targeted during the beans and gun campaign of the early 1980s. After a coup ousted Ríos Montt, human rights organizations, such as the Mutual Support Society (GAM), reemerged. GAM was formed by mothers and wives of the disappeared, but violence continued

to mark Guatemalan society. In 1984, the body of Rosario Godoy, leader of GAM, who had been raped, tortured, and murdered, was found with the bodies of her brother and her infant son.

Throughout the civil war women endured horrific human rights violations. In 1997, URNG issued a report documenting the war crimes against women. Women were raped, tortured, and killed. At times, their husbands, fathers, and sons were murdered by the military, and the surviving women were forced to serve the soldiers’ physical needs—sexual and nonsexual. The URNG argued that women became targets of the military and paramilitaries because they provided the social fabric of the community.

Women continue to be important in Guatemala as the source of community and the keepers of the memories of the disappeared and murdered remains. By the mid-1990s, women also organized to address the needs of returning refugees who had been displaced by the bloody civil war. In 1993, Mayan women formed Mama Maquín for this purpose; however, organizations such as Mama Maquín moved beyond addressing refugees and attempted to become a political force for change in Guatemala. The URNG, transformed into a political party, recognized the significance of women by offering them political parity within its organization.

—Elaine Carey

See also Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements in

References and Further Reading

- Gleijeses, Piero. 1991. *Shattered Hope: The Guatemalan Revolution and the United States*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton.
- Menchú, Rigoberta. 1984. *I Rigoberta Menchú: An Indian Woman in Guatemala*, edited by Elisabeth Burgos-Debray, translated by Ann White. New York: Verso.
- Stoll, David. 2000. *Rigoberta Menchú and the Story of All Poor Guatemalans*. New York: HarperCollins.

GULF WAR (1990–1991),
WOMEN AND THE

American women in the Gulf War and the impact of the war on their role in the U.S. military. From August 1990 to February 1991, the United States led a coalition of nations including Britain, Egypt, France, and Saudi Arabia in armed conflict against Iraq. Encompassing Operation Desert Shield and Operation Desert Storm, the war in the Persian Gulf occurred in response to the Iraqi invasion of Kuwait on August 1, 1990, and the country's subsequent failure to comply with demands of the United Nations for peaceful withdrawal. At peak strength in February 1991, more than 500,000 American troops served in the gulf area. Approximately 7.2 percent, or nearly 41,000, of these deployed forces were women, who then comprised 11 percent of total U.S. active duty military and more than 13 percent of the reserves. Nearly 10 percent of the women deployed to the gulf served in the army; 7 percent in the air force; 4.2 percent in the navy; and 1.5 percent in the marines.

The Gulf War marked the largest deployment of military women in U.S. history, as well as the first major test of the U.S. armed forces since the initiation of the all-volunteer military force in 1973 and the elimination of separate military units for women during the 1970s. The ability of service women to perform their jobs in a major war was still unproven, and the reliability of mixed-gender combat support units in a major war operation was unknown.

Deployment of women to the Persian Gulf raised two critical issues. Contemporary technology and strategies of warfare had eliminated traditional front lines and blurred the distinction between combat and noncombat functions. Yet women had been barred from combat positions in the U.S. Air Force, Marines, and Navy under the 1948 Combat Exclusion Act. The U.S. Army, although not covered by the act, maintained its own regulatory ban on women in combat roles.

Women were assigned to positions according to the Direct Combat Probability Coding System

(DCPC) initiated in 1983. Known as the Risk Rule, the DCPC limited women's exposure to direct combat, rating each military job assignment along a continuum. Jobs with low probability of enemy contact were on one end; those of high probability were on the other and were closed to women.

In Operations Desert Shield and Desert Storm, women served as administrators, air traffic controllers, logisticians, engineer equipment mechanics, ammunition technicians, ordnance specialists, communicators, radio operators, drivers, law enforcement specialists, and guards. Women truck drivers hauled supplies and equipment into Kuwait. Some brought enemy prisoners of war (POWs) back to holding facilities. Many flew helicopters and reconnaissance aircraft, manned machine guns, and directed and launched Patriot missiles. Still others served on hospital, supply, oiler, and ammunition ships. Others served as public affairs officers and chaplains. Several women commanded brigade, battalion, company, and platoon units in the combat support and combat service support areas. They endured the same hardships under the same conditions of desert warfare as their male counterparts without special considerations. They were also subjected to combat. Thirteen women were killed in action and thirty-five were wounded. Two women became POWs. Four women marines qualified for and received the Combat Action Ribbons after returning fire from Iraqi troops.

Women's involvement in the Persian Gulf War and extensive media coverage focused public attention on deployed mothers and dual-service couples and prompted public concern for the welfare of children left behind. In February 1991, the Subcommittee on Military Personnel and Compensation of the Committee on Armed Services of the U.S. House of Representatives conducted hearings on the impact of Operation Desert Storm on military families, particularly families headed by a single parent or dual-service families. The committee considered whether to pursue gender-neutral legislation defining some exemptions and deferments for

parents. Speakers from the Department of Defense opposed all limitations on the ability to deploy soldiers overseas, emphasizing that such legislation jeopardized military readiness and mission fulfillment. Military representatives stressed that laws denying parents the right to serve in the same capacity as nonparents were discriminatory and more likely to affect military women, limiting their jobs assignments, promotions, income, and benefits.

Emphasizing that restrictive legislation would reverse progress toward gender equality and mitigate military effectiveness, military spokespersons articulated the provisions of existing policy on the deployment of single parents and dual-member military couples with minor children. Each military service required such parents to establish family care plans that included all provisions necessary for the care of dependents, including powers of attorney for temporary and long-term guardians, signed financial support documentation, and other requisite legal measures. Regulations required annual review and validation. Personnel were separated from the service if plans failed without possible rectification. Despite the congressional hearings, political pressure to restrict parental deployment was slight, and the armed forces retained existing authority.

A Department of Defense Interim Report to Congress on the conduct of war indicated that women had played a vital part in the theater of operations and acknowledged difficulties in the application of combat restrictions. Between May and November 1991, Congress debated issues concerning women in the armed forces, and in December 1991 President George H.W. Bush signed the National Defense Authorization Act for Fiscal Year 1992 and 1993, which included provisions repealing the combat exclusion law of 1948. The act provided legislative authority to the Department of Defense to restructure policy concerning the role of women in the U.S. armed forces, and throughout the 1990s, the services addressed restrictions on the assignment of women.

—*Lee Ann Ghajar*

See also Cornum, Rhonda; Whittle, Reba Zitella

References and Further Reading

Finlan, Alastair. 2003. *The Gulf War, 1991*. Oxford: Osprey.

GULJAMAL-KHAN(UM)
(CA. 1836–1919)

An influential leader of Turkmen tribes in the Akhal and Merv area in the late nineteenth century who played an important role in the political and military development in this part of Central Asia. Guljamal-Khan(um) was the third wife of the influential Nurberdy-Khan, the leader of the Teke tribes in the Akhal and Merv areas (contemporary Turkmenistan and northern Iran). She broke with the tradition dominant in Central Asian society of that time that viewed women exclusively as silent housewives who had no political rights or public voice. Gradually she became interested in political and military development, and soon after her marriage to Nurberdy-Khan she became one of the most trusted advisers to her husband.

During the second half of the nineteenth century, Turkmen tribes were deeply divided and were engaged in devastating conflicts with each other and against powerful neighboring states, the Persian Empire and Khiva Khanate. The irregular Turkmen militia fiercely resisted invaders and won several important battles. The better-equipped armies of the Persian Shah and Khiva Khan regularly destroyed Turkmen villages and towns, however, impoverishing the local economy. In the brutal military tradition of that era, the winners often captured civilians along with combatants and sold them in the slave markets as far away as the Middle East and South Asia. In this environment of perpetual war, many Turkmen women abandoned their traditional role as housewives and often became involved in the military campaigns,

helping the Turkmen militia by all possible means. In the 1870s and 1880s, the Russian Empire entered the political scene and attempted to establish its control over this part of Central Asia.

Guljamal-Khan(um) entered the Central Asian political arena at a difficult time for the Turkmen tribes because they were exhausted by uneven wars. In 1880, Nurberdy-Khan died, and Guljamal-Khan(um) became the leader of the Teke tribes in the Merv area. In an important battle at Geok Tepe fortress in January 1881, the independent-minded Turkmen tribes were defeated with great losses in military manpower and among the civilian population. Yet the Turkmen tribes refused to surrender and vowed to continue the struggle.

In 1884, the Turkmen elders and tribal leaders organized a gengesh (council) to discuss the Russian advance into the Akhal and Merv areas. They faced the difficult choice of accepting a peace agreement brought by Alikhanov-Avarskii, an officer in czarist service, or continuing the unequal war with great losses to civilian population. The voice of Guljamal-Khan(um) was instrumental in the gengesh's decision to accept the peaceful settlement and Russian control in the region. This ended several decades of wars and instability in the Turkmen land. Guljamal-Khan(um) was among the few women in nineteenth-century Central Asia who received a special award from the Russian emperor.

—*Rafis Abazov*

See also Kurmanjan-Datkha

References and Further Reading

- Abazov, Rafis. 2004. *Historical Dictionary of Turkmenistan*. Lanham, MD, and Oxford, England: Scarecrow Press.
- Gundogdyev, Ovez, and Ruslan Muradov. 2000. *Istoriko-kulturnoye naslediye Turkmenistana* [Historical and cultural heritage of Turkmenistan]. Ashgabat, Turkmenistan: UNDP.

GWYNNE-VAUGHAN, HELEN (1879–1967)

Botanist, scholar, war activist, and suffrage supporter, who served as the chief controller of Britain's Women's Auxiliary Army Corps (WAAC) and commander of Britain's Women's Royal Air Force (WRAF) in World War I and as major-general of the Auxiliary Territorial Services (ATS) in World War II. Helen Gwynne-Vaughan was the first female professor at Birkbeck College and facilitated the development of the WAAC and the WRAF.

Helen Isabella Charlotte Fraser was born into a Scottish aristocratic family in 1879. She briefly attended Cheltenham Ladies College before entering London University in 1899 to study science. She earned her degree in botany and later joined the Women's Suffrage Society. She became a lecturer at Birkbeck College where she met a colleague, T. G. Gwynne-Vaughan, whom she later married.

Her academic career was interrupted by the outbreak of war in 1914. She undertook voluntary war work through the Red Cross and Volunteer Aid Detachment. Her husband died a year later, and, with her new role as widow, she plunged herself more deeply into public service. The government established the WAAC in 1917. Its function was to have women play an active role in Britain's defense against Germany by serving as clerks, cooks, and the like (Izzard 1969, 134). Gwynne-Vaughan was named the WAAC's chief controller, earning high praise as an efficient administrator and leader. By the fall of 1918, after a scathing government review and shake up in leadership, she had also assumed command of the WRAF. She received commendation again for her work and was named a dame of the British Empire at the end of the war.

She returned to academia by the early 1920s and published several important works, most significantly key studies of the cytology of fungi. When World War II erupted in 1939, she resumed public service, acting as major-general of

GWYNNE-VAUGHAN, HELEN

the ATS. At the conclusion of that conflict, Gwynne-Vaughan, in her early sixties, retired both from civic activism and from her duties at Birkbeck. Now a distinguished professor emeritus, she devoted the last years of her life to the cause of military welfare through her support in the Soldiers', Sailors' and Airmen's Families Association (SSAFA). She died in 1967, leaving most of her estate to Birkbeck to create a scholarship in her husband's name.

—*Rachel Finley-Bowman*

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I; Great Britain, Women in Service during World War II

References and Further Reading

Izzard, Molly. 1969. *A Heroine in Her Time: A Life of Dame Helen Gwynne-Vaughan, 1879–1967*. London: Macmillan

GYPSIES

See Roma/Sinti

H

HAAS, ELENA
(1912/13–1945)

Czech resistance fighter during World War II. In early 1945, near the end of World War II, Elena Haas was leading a group of Czech partisans against a Nazi-controlled airfield near Melnik where the Vltava (Moldau) River joins the Labe (Elbe) River, 18 miles north of Prague. There she was fatally wounded. She was still firing her Sten gun when the fatal shots brought her down.

Elena Haas was twenty-five years old and just beginning her career as a civil engineer when the Nazis invaded Czechoslovakia on March 15, 1938. She eventually joined the Czech Resistance. Her professional skills were valuable for the work of sabotage because she could plan where to place charges for the maximum destructive impact. In September 1944, she led a raid that destroyed an important bridge on the Ohne River between Terezin (Theresienstadt) and its conjunction with the Labe River. In that raid, she had also helped destroy Nazi supplies and ammunition. Aided by a French agent and operatives trained and supplied by the British Special Operations Executive, she killed thirty-five of the enemy.

—Andrew Jackson Waskey

See also Senesh, Hannah; Svobod, Maria

References and Further Reading

- Lande, D. A. 2000. *Resistance! Occupied Europe and Its Defiance of Hitler*. Osceola, WI: MBI.
- Truby, J. David. 1977. *Women at War: A Deadly Species*. Boulder, CO: Paladin.

HALL, VIRGINIA
(1906–1982)

British special agent during World War II and the only female civilian to receive the Distinguished Service Cross as well as Member of the British Empire. Virginia Hall was born in Baltimore, Maryland, on April 6, 1906. She attended Radcliffe and Barnard Colleges from 1924 to 1926. She was a talented linguist and could speak French, Italian, and German fluently. In 1931, Hall assumed a clerk's position with the U.S. Embassy in Warsaw, Poland. During the 1930s, she served at various posts in Tallin, Estonia; Vienna, Austria; and Izmir, Turkey. While in Izmir, her shotgun slipped from her grasp during a hunting trip, and she was wounded. One



Virginia Hall receives the Distinguished Service Cross from Major General William J. Donovan, founder of the OSS, 1945. (National Archives)

leg was amputated, and she was fitted with an artificial limb; later, her friends in the French underground would call her “the limping lady.” Because of a U.S. State Department regulation regarding disabilities, she was forced to resign her position in May 1939.

Hall was living in France when World War II broke out. While in Paris, she joined the French Ambulance Service Unit as a private second class. The fall of France in June 1940 caused her to flee to England. There, while working as a code clerk for the military attaché in the U.S. Embassy, she was recruited by the British Special Operations Executive (SOE). Her fluency in French enabled her to set up resistance networks in Vichy, France, beginning in August 1941. Using the code name Marie, Hall posed as a reporter for the *New York Post*. In early 1942, she moved to Lyons. She established contact with the French underground and began as-

sisting in the return to England of escaped prisoners and downed U.S. aircrews. When the United States entered the war, she was listed as an enemy alien. Hall was forced to conduct business secretly from numerous bistros and restaurants.

In the aftermath of the invasion of North Africa in November 1942, thousands of German troops poured into Vichy. Hall managed to escape to Spain. After a few months, she returned to England where the SOE trained her as a wireless operator. She was then transferred to the American Office of Strategic Services. In 1944, operating under the code name Diane, Hall returned to the Haute-Loire region of central France. She worked setting up sabotage and guerrilla groups and supplying them with money, arms, and rations. Several weeks prior to D-Day, disguised as a peasant and with heavy clothing to hide her limp, she reported on German troop movements. The Gestapo hierarchy regarded her as the most dangerous allied agent in France. Despite her precarious situation, she informed the Allies that the German General Staff had relocated its headquarters to LePuy. In the final days of the German occupation of France, Hall’s teams destroyed four bridges, derailed several freight trains headed for Germany, downed key telephone lines, killed more than 150 enemy soldiers, and captured more than 500 prisoners. At the conclusion of the war, she received the American Distinguished Service Cross as well as recognition as a Member of the British Empire.

In 1951, Hall began work for the Central Intelligence Agency in Washington, D.C. She became an intelligence analyst on French paramilitary affairs. She was one of the first women operations officers in the new Office of the Deputy Director of Plans. During her CIA career, which ended when she retired in 1966, Hall accepted several overseas assignments. Regarded as one of the true heroines of World War II, Hall died in Rockville, Maryland, on July 12, 1982.

—Charles F. Howlett

See also Atkins, Vera H.

References and Further Reading

- Binney, Marcus. 2003. *The Women Who Lived for Danger: The Agents of the Special Operations Executive*. New York: HarperCollins.
- Collins-Weitz, Margaret. 1995. *Sisters in Resistance: How Women Fought to Free France, 1940–1945*. New York: John Wiley and Sons.
- Haines, Gerald K. 1994. "Virginia Hall Goillet, Career Intelligence Officer." *Prologue Quarterly of the National Archives* 26 (winter): 249–260.
- McIntosh, Elizabeth. 1999. *Sisterhood of Spies*. New York: Dell.

HAMILTON, CICELY MARIE (1872–1952)

British novelist and playwright who unabashedly called for women to support the war effort during World War I. Cicely Hamilton, through deft and witty illustration, unearthed and displayed the gender inequities that were so embedded in Edwardian cultural norms as to be essentially invisible and thus neither understood nor challenged. Furthermore, she applied these revelatory goals in the course of her eclectic and energetic career, emerging as not only a cultural but a political leader in the women's suffrage movement and other organizations lobbying for the social and political rights of women.

Hamilton was born on June 15, 1872, in Paddington. She was one of four children born to Maud Piers and Cecil Hammill. She appears to have lived with both parents until around age ten, when her mother disappeared from her life under rather mysterious circumstances, which Cicely rarely discussed. Her father was an adamant supporter of the women's suffrage cause. This may well have shaped Hamilton's own views and activism later in life. After her mother's departure, she was raised by foster parents because her father, a member of the Gor-

don Highlanders, was serving in Egypt. She was educated at Malvern and other private schools in England and Germany and upon graduation served for a short time as a teacher before changing her last name and moving on to acting.

Hamilton's considerable writing talents came to fruition at first primarily because of her lack of success as an actor; after she failed to secure London acting spots, she turned her attentions to writing plays. These grew into a substantial oeuvre, including, in chronological order, *The Traveller Returns*, *Diana of Dobsons*, *How the Vote Was Won*, and *A Pageant of Great Women*.

In 1909, she wrote her first and probably most influential work, *Marriage as a Trade*. Hamilton contended that women were socialized to aspire to marriage to gain the success and financial stability of a man rather than to achieve these themselves. She scathingly documented the impact of this process on women's intellects and self-esteem. Other books include *Senlis* (1917), *William, an Englishman* (1919), her autobiography *Life Errant* (1935), *Modern Italy* (1932), *Modern France* (1933), *Modern Russia* (1934), *Modern Ireland as Seen by an Englishwoman* (1936), *Modern England* (1938), *Lament for Democracy* (1940), and *The Englishwoman* (1940).

Hamilton's writing takes on even greater power and legitimacy in the context of the manner in which she put her beliefs into action in her own life. She was a member of numerous feminist activist organizations, including the Women's Social and Political Union (WSPU, which she left over differences with Emma Pankhurst), the Women's Freedom League, the Actresses' Franchise League, and the Women Writers Suffrage League, the latter two of which she was a founder.

The outbreak of World War I raised new questions about the proper—or even possible—roles of women in the public sphere. Unlike many feminist activists, who renounced participation in government projects (especially those associated with the military), Hamilton was one of a group that evidently saw participation in the war effort

CICELY MARIE HAMILTON ON THE MOBILIZATION OF WOMEN IN TOTAL WAR

“Modern warfare is so monstrous, all-engrossing and complex, that there is a sense, and a very real sense, in which hardly a civilian stands outside it; where the strife is to the death with an equal opponent the non-combatant ceases to exist. No modern nation could fight for its life with its men in uniform only; it must mobilize, nominally or not, every class of its population for a struggle too great and too deadly for the combatant to carry on alone. The ‘unfit’ who step into the shoes of the fit, the old men who fill the gaps left by their sons, the women who press into fields and workshops—all these keep the fighting line going, and without them the fighting line must fail; and hence, under modern conditions of war, an increasing difficulty in drawing the line that protects the civilian from open attack by the soldier. A munition factory staffed by women, a laboratory where some weakling discovers a chemical compound, may be deadlier instruments of death and destruction than thousands of horses and men. Further, where each party to the strife enlists the services of his entire population—puts forth, in a word, his utmost—the question of national exhaustion looms far larger than it did in the day of the professional soldier and the army running to thousands. Consciously or unconsciously, while the armies are at grips, the civilians of one nation are outstripping, exhausting the other—or are being outstripped and exhausted in the struggle for resources and replenishment. The work and resources of a civilian population have always been an indirect factor in every military situation; but to-day they are a factor direct and declared, to-day the exempt and the women are openly mobilized and enlisted. One sees that this direct intervention of the civilian in warfare must entail a certain loss of his immunity from direct attack and punishment, and that a leader hard pressed or unscrupulous may deem himself entitled to interpret the fundamental maxim enjoining him to cut his enemy’s communications in a fashion undreamed by those who framed rules for a conflict confined to the soldier. . . . The German leaders decided at the outset that their war was a war on non-combatants.”

—Cicely Hamilton, *Senlis* (London: W. Collins Sons, 1917), 34–36.

as either morally just or politically expedient—and probably both. Hamilton joined the new Scottish Women’s Hospitals Committee, which established auxiliary hospitals along the front lines. She helped found the Auxiliary Hospital at Royaumont Abbey on the French front. She personally nursed casualties. In 1917, she joined the Women’s Auxiliary Army Corps and under this aegis headed a postal unit in the French theater of operations and performed in theatrical productions for troops serving on the front lines.

After the war Hamilton worked as a journalist, contributing regularly to the *Daily Express*, *Daily Mail*, *Daily Mirror*, and the feminist journal *Time and Tide*. Her activist interests ex-

panded to include reproductive rights such as free birth control advice and the right to choose, causes she advocated in her writings. Hamilton died on December 6, 1952.

—Bethany A. Barratt

See also Orczy, Baroness Emma; Pankhurst Family: Emmeline, Christabel, E. Sylvia, and Adela Pankhurst Walsh

References and Further Reading

Chothia, Jean. “Cicely Hamilton,” *The Literary Encyclopedia*, <http://www.litencyc.com/php/speople.php?rec=true&UID=1956> (accessed August 2, 2004).

HART, NANCY (1735–1830)

Whitelaw, Lis. 1990. *The Life and Rebellious Times of Cicely Hamilton: Actress, Writer, Suffragist*. Toronto: Women's Press.

"Women in History of Scots Descent: Cicely Hamilton," *Electric Scotland*, <http://www.electricscotland.com/history/women/wih30.htm> (accessed August 2, 2004).

HARNACK-FISH, MILDRED
(1902–1943)

American executed by the Nazis for espionage. Mildred Fish was born in Milwaukee, Wisconsin, the daughter of an unambitious and downwardly mobile father of old Yankee stock and a "strong and self-reliant" Christian Scientist mother (Bryson 2000, 24, 22). Mildred entered graduate school at the University of Wisconsin after completing her undergraduate education there. She participated in a progressive discussion group of graduate students and professors sponsored by John Commons. There she met Arvid Harnack, a German with two doctorates who was studying economics at Wisconsin as a Rockefeller Fellow. They married in 1926. Harnack returned to Germany in 1928, where he taught and held the U.S. desk at the Ministry of Economics. Mildred joined him the following year. She began doctoral studies at the University of Berlin, where she briefly taught American literature until she was replaced by a Nazi sympathizer. After completing her doctorate at the University of Giessen in 1941, Mildred taught in the Foreign Policy Institute of the University of Berlin.

In the mid-1930s, the Berlin home of the Harnacks became a gathering place for intellectuals opposed to the Nazi regime. The Harnacks moved from opposition to resistance. They and their associates disseminated critical information and communicated information on the plans of the Nazi regime to Americans and then, after joining the Red Orchestra group led by

Harro Schulze-Boysen, to the Russians. The Nazis uncovered the group in August 1942. The Harnacks were arrested on September 7 and were held and interrogated at the Gestapo headquarters on Prinz-Albrecht-Strasse. On December 9, Arvid was sentenced to death, and he was hung on December 22. Mildred was originally sentenced to six years of hard labor, but Hitler refused to accept the sentence. She was tried again in January and sentenced to death. She was beheaded at Plötzensee prison on February 16, 1943.

—Bernard Cook

See also Kuckhoff, Greta; Schulze-Boysen, Libertas

References and Further Reading

Bryson, Shareen Blair. 2000. *Resisting Hitler: Mildred Harnack and the Red Orchestra: The Life and Death of an American Woman in Nazi Germany*. New York: Oxford University Press.

HART, NANCY
(1735–1830)

Heroine of the American Revolution. Nancy Morgan was born in North Carolina. After marrying Benjamin Hart, she and her husband moved to the backcountry of Georgia on the Broad River. An audacious frontier woman, Nancy Hart acted as a spy for the patriots and bested Tories a number of times. Her most noted exploit was the killing of one Tory and the capture of five others who had come to her house demanding food. While they drank, she took their guns. When they realized what was happening, she wounded one and killed another. When her husband arrived, alerted by the gunfire, he suggested shooting the rest. She, however, said that they had boasted of killing a neighbor, Colonel John Dooley, and that they should be

HART, NANCY (CA. 1841–CA. 1902)



Nancy Morgan Hart capturing British soldiers. (Bettmann/Corbis)

hung. As they died, she reputedly sang “Yankee Doodle.” After the death of her husband, she moved to Kentucky where she died in 1830.

—*Bernard Cook*

See also American Revolution, Women and the

References and Further Reading

“Nancy Hart, Revolutionary Heroine,” <http://smithdray.tripod.com/history/nancyhart.htm> (accessed March 5, 2006).

HART, NANCY
(CA. 1841–CA. 1902)

Confederate guerrilla during the American Civil War. Born in the mountains of western Virginia, Nancy Hart became a Confederate guerrilla dur-

ing the American Civil War. She joined Perry Conley’s Moccasin Raiders, serving as a spy and scout for the unofficial regiment. She also led several raids on federal outposts in Virginia.

In 1861, federal troops captured Hart after a skirmish with the Moccasin Raiders. She played on her femininity, convincing the Union soldiers that she was innocent and had no knowledge of Conley’s actions. Consequently, they released Hart, who headed back to the guerrilla band with valuable information about the local Home Guards and the movement of federal troops being sent to disband the guerrillas. Throughout the next year, Hart continued to play a part in the guerrilla raids in the area. After Conley’s death in the summer of 1862, the Moccasin Raiders disbanded. Hart, who had married a fellow Raider, moved into the mountains near Confederate lines. From her new home, she carried information on Union movements to Confederate officials. Like other female spies, Hart played on her femininity to outsmart the enemy.

Union soldiers saw her as an innocent country girl, not a dangerous enemy operative.

Hart's role in the Confederate army eventually led federal officials to place a price on her head. In June 1862, she was captured in Summersville by Lieutenant Colonel William C. Starr's troops. Because she was a woman, Hart was not held to the stringent rules enforced on other prisoners of war. She was allowed the freedom to walk around the yard under the watchful eye of a guard. Hart took advantage of the freedoms she received as a female prisoner. She flirted with her guard, convincing him to let her hold his gun, and then shot him before fleeing on horseback. In the early morning hours of July 25, 1862, Hart returned to the Union camp accompanied by two hundred Confederate cavalrymen. Hart and the southern soldiers entered the town without opposition, captured Starr and other federal officers as well as a few enlisted men, set fire to three houses, and took mules and horses with them.

Nancy Hart reportedly died in 1902.

—*Lisa Tendrich Frank*

See also Baker, E. H.; Barton, Clara; Blackwell, Elizabeth; Boyd, Isabelle; Civil War, American, Women Combatants during the; Clayton, Frances; Cushman, Pauline; Dix, Dorothea; Edmonds, Sarah Emma; Etheridge, Anna; Greenhow, Rose O'Neale; Moon, Lottie, and Moon, Ginnie; Tubman, Harriet

References and Further Reading

Leonard, Elizabeth D. 1999. *All the Daring of the Soldier: Women of the Civil War Armies*. New York: W. W. Norton.

HAVERFIELD, EVELINA
(1867–1920)

Administrator of the Scottish Women's Hospital (SWH) service in Serbia during World War I.

The work of Evelina Haverfield in Serbia as well as her direction of the transport section of the SWH unit in Dobrudja during the Romanian campaign in 1916 led the Serbian government to award her posthumously its highest honor, the Order of the White Eagle.

Evelina was the daughter of William Scarlett, the third baron of Abinger, and Helen Magruder, Lady Abinger, at Inverlochy Castle in Scotland. Her unusual youth, filled with outdoor activities, was followed by a rather unconventional life. At nineteen, she married an army officer, Henry Haverfield, twenty years her senior. Their happy marriage of eight years was terminated by his death in 1895 but produced two sons. In 1899, she married another military man, Major John Balguy, but retained her first married name and her separate residence. She accompanied him to South Africa during the Boer War and rode with him on horseback as he supervised the administration of martial law in a large rural area. After ten years, the two separated but did not bother with divorce.

Haverfield played an active role in the suffragette movement before the outbreak of World War I. She was arrested with Emmeline Pankhurst during the Bill of Rights March when they attempted to enter the House of Commons. Her efforts turned to rousing support for the war, which erupted in August 1914. She proposed the formation of a women's volunteer rifle corps to defend Britain's coast against invasion. From this project, several women's organizations were developed to support the war effort, the Women's Emergency Corps, the Women's Volunteer Reserve, and the Women's Reserve Ambulance Corps.

In 1915, Haverfield volunteered to go to Serbia as an administrator of the SWH, founded by Dr. Elsie Inglis, an Edinburgh surgeon. While administering Dr. Edith Holloway's SWH unit near Serbia's northern border, Haverfield was informed that her eldest son had been killed in battle in Mesopotamia.

In the face of an Austrian offensive in October, the unit, staffed by twenty-two Scottish women, was forced to withdraw to Krushevatz in

central Serbia. With an Austrian victory imminent, most of the Scottish women decided to leave Serbia. Haverfield and thirty-four other women decided to stay with Inglis and Holloway. After a German unit occupied the town, the Scottish women continued to provide care for wounded Serbian prisoners of war and ill civilians. When rumors spread that the Scottish medical staff would be interned, Haverfield decided to go underground, but before she and two companions were able to carry out their plan, they were detained, shipped to Vienna, and handed over to the Red Cross, which arranged for their return to England.

In England, Haverfield tirelessly promoted the Serbian cause. When asked by Inglis to participate in an SWH effort in support of Serbian soldiers fighting in Romania, Haverfield agreed to head the transport section, consisting of ambulances, trucks, and mobile kitchens all driven and serviced by women. The seventy-five women of this SWH contingent went by ship to Archangel in Russia and then by rail to Dobrudja in Romania. As the Central Powers' troops inexorably advanced, Haverfield and her assistants evacuated wounded Allied troops from the battlefield. For her bravery under fire, she received a Russian military award. When the Romanian front collapsed as Russia was convulsed by revolution, Haverfield returned to England. There she continued to work on behalf of Serbia. She and Flora Sandes garnered contributions to set up canteens and provide clothing for Serbian soldiers. She also organized a Serbian Red Cross Society in Britain to mobilize material assistance for Serbia. Shortly after the armistice, she traveled to Serbia to oversee the distribution of aid. In the summer of 1919, she once again returned to Serbia with some SWH women to set up an orphanage for Serbian war orphans at Baijna Bashta. Her effort was cut short by her death from pneumonia on March 21, 1919.

—*Bernard Cook*

See also Hodges, Katherine; Hutton, Lady Isabel Galloway; Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's Hospitals; King, Olive; Sandes, Flora

References and Further Reading

- Gaddes, Boyce. 1995. *Evelina: Outward Bound from Inverlochy*. London: Merlin.
- . "The Life of Evelina Haverfield," First World War.com, http://www.firstworldwar.com/features/haverfield_02.htm (accessed October 1, 2003).

"HAW HAW, LADY"

See "Lady Haw Haw"

HELEN OF TROY

Symbol of women as victims and spoils of war. The subject of Greek legend, Helen of Troy's was "the face that launched a thousand ships"; her abduction sparked the Trojan War (a legendary conflict traditionally dated 1194–1184 B.C.; dated by Greek sources to the twelfth or thirteenth centuries B.C.). She first appears in the works of Homer, who wrote in the eighth century B.C., about four centuries after the accepted time of the war. The Trojan War was almost certainly fought for economic reasons, not to regain a stolen woman. Homer romanticized the conflict, suggesting how Greek honor—in this case the need for vengeance after the theft of a prized possession (Helen)—can provoke war. His sympathetic treatment, however, highlights the role of women as victims and spoils of war.

According to legend, Helen was the daughter of Zeus and Leda. She was given in marriage to Menelaus of Sparta, but there was such fear that her incredible beauty would lead to bloodshed that all the suitors swore to abide by the choice—and to wage war to regain her if somebody stole her from her husband. Sure enough,

a problem soon arose. During a wedding celebration among the gods, the goddess Eris (Discord) threw a golden apple into the assembly to be the reward for the most beautiful goddess present. Three goddesses claimed the prize; they turned to the youthful Prince Paris of Troy to act as judge. Each offered a bribe for choosing her. Paris's choice fell on Aphrodite in return for the most beautiful woman in the world—Helen. He soon went to Sparta and, with Aphrodite's help, succeeded in carrying Helen home to Troy.

Menelaus demanded help to regain his bride, and the long siege of Troy began. Thus Helen could easily be blamed for causing a devastating war. Instead, the poet Homer portrayed Helen as a pawn of fate, manipulated by powers beyond her control. She appears in the *Iliad* as a woman of sensibility who is suffering deeply from her position—forced to abandon her husband and live among her people's enemies. Helen remains a pawn to the end. When her lover, Paris, went out to fight, Aphrodite preserved his life, carrying him from the battlefield to his bedchamber and forcing Helen (much against her will) to join him and provide distraction so he would not return to the fight. The only power Helen ever displays is in performing a traditional function of Greek women: she weaves a tapestry that tells the story of the war. In Mycenaean and archaic Greece, such tapestries lauded and preserved the memory of men's prowess on the battlefield. The war ended with the Greeks' successful assault on Troy; Helen was captured and returned to her husband, Menelaus. The tale ends with Helen reinstated in Sparta.

Classical-era Greek writers were less kind to Helen. Euripides in his play *Trojan Women*, for example, condemns her as a slut whose loose morals provoked the war. Such literary treatments suggest how esteem of women had declined since the age of Homer.

—Phyllis G. Jestice

See also Greek Women and War in Antiquity

References and Further Reading

- Barber, E. J. W. 1995. *Women's Work: The First 20,000 Years*. New York: Norton.
- Homer. 1990. *The Iliad*. Translated by Robert Fagles. London: Penguin.
- Pomeroy, Sarah B. 1995. *Goddesses, Whores, Wives, and Slaves: Women in Classical Antiquity*. New York: Schocken.

HELLO GIRLS

American women recruited by the U.S. Army during World War I to work as operators on the army's telephone switchboards in France. Most French telephone operators at the time of World War I spoke little English; therefore General John Pershing, the commander of the American Expeditionary Force, advertised in U.S. newspapers in 1917 for women volunteers for the U.S. Signal Corps. The women had to be single, college graduates, in good health, and fluent in French; 7,000 applied, and 450 were selected to be trained by the American Telephone and Telegraph Company. This initial training was followed by training in military signaling procedures (Sharp, Small, and Somerville 2002, 427).

The first 33 of approximately 200 operators sailed for France in the spring of 1918. In France they were known as the Hello Girls because they invariably answered calls with "hello." Despite the fact that they were sworn in, wore military uniforms, and were subjects to military regulations, they were denied veteran status after the war. The army insisted that they were civilians, who had contracted to work with the army. In 1978, President Jimmy Carter signed legislation that gave them veteran status.

—Bernard Cook

See also United States, Women's Army Auxiliary Corps

References and Further Reading

Sharp, Mike, Steve Small, and Donald Somerville.
2002. *History of World War I: Victory and Defeat*.
Vol. 2. New York/London: Marshall Cavendish.

HERERO OF NAMIBIA,
REPRESSION OF THE

The first example of genocide in the twentieth century. Germany embarked on a program of imperial expansion in 1884. That year, the Germans claimed Namibia, which they called German Southwest Africa. Major Theodor Leutwein, appointed the administrator of the new colony, pitted the indigenous Herero

against the Nama (Hottentots). The Herero at first cooperated with the Germans against their traditional rivals but eventually became exasperated by the loss of land to German colonists and rebelled in January 1904. Led by Samuel Maharero, they killed more than 150 German soldiers and settlers.

The German government dispatched Lieutenant General Lothar von Trotha, who had led German troops against the Chinese during the Boxer Rebellion and had participated in the repression of resistance in German East Africa. With a force of 10,000, von Trotha mercilessly pushed the rebellious Herero—women and children as well as men—into the Kalahari Desert. Von Trotha then issued his infamous extermination order (*Vernichtungsbefehl*): “Every Herero found within German borders, with or without guns, with or without livestock, will be

FIRST GENOCIDE OF THE TWENTIETH CENTURY: THE HERERO

The 1904 Letter of the Nama Chief Hendrik Witbooi to Major Theodor Leutwein, the German Military Governor of German Southwest Africa

“The German himself . . . introduces laws into the land . . . [which] are entirely impossible, untenable, unbelievable, unbearable, unmerciful and unfeeling. . . . He personally punishes our people at Windhoek and has already beaten people to death for debt. . . . [I]t is not just and right to beat people to death for that. . . . He flogs people in a shameful and cruel manner. We stupid and unintelligent people, for so he thinks us to be, we have never yet punished a human being in such a cruel and improper way for he stretches people on their backs and flogs them on the stomach and even between the legs, be they male or female, so Your Honour can understand that no one can survive such a punishment.”

—Independent Media Center of Atlanta,

<http://lists.indymedia.org/pipermail/imc-atlanta/2005-May/0515-9u.html>

(accessed February 10, 2006).

Order of General Lothar von Trotha on October 2, 1904

“All the Herero must leave the land. If they refuse, then I will force them to do it with the big guns. Any Herero found within German borders, with or without a gun, will be shot. No prisoners will be taken. This is my decision for the Herero people.”

—Peace Pledge Union, http://www.ppu.org.uk/genocide/g_namibia1.html

(accessed February 10, 2006).

shot. I will not give shelter to any Herero women or children. They must either return to their people or be shot at" (Tucker 1998). Armed posts were established along the fringe of the desert. Men who attempted to escape or surrender were killed. Women and children were driven back into the desert where water holes had been poisoned.

Despite the extermination order, some Herero survived. The men who were taken alive were confined in labor camps, where they were decimated by overwork, starvation, and disease. Surviving women were reduced to servitude and sex slavery. Only approximately 15,000 of the 80,000 Herero survived.

—Bernard Cook

See also Armenian Holocaust

References and Further Reading

- Bebsman, Todd. 1999. "African Tribe Asks Reparations for German Atrocities: Holocaust Seeds Sown in Early 1900s." *Times-Picayune* (New Orleans) (March 21): A26.
- Gewald, Jan-Bart. 1999. *Herero Heroes: A Socio-political History of the Herero of Namibia, 1890–1923*. Athens: Ohio University.
- Tucker, Neely. 1998. "Seeds of Horror: African Genocide Laid Groundwork for the Holocaust 30 Years Later." *Toronto Star* (April 8): A18.

along with Haydée Santamaría, served between six and seven months of jail time and was a witness to torture and brutalities. After her release, Hernández traveled to Mexico, where she continued to work with Fidel Castro to plan the overthrow of Fulgencio Batista, whose coup d'état had placed him in power for a second time. Back in Cuba, Hernández served as a guerrilla fighter in the Third Front of the *Ejército Rebelde* (Rebel Army) until its triumph in 1959. A revolutionary at heart, she was a follower of Eduardo Chibás, founder and leader of the Partido del Pueblo Cubano (Party of the Cuban People) (Hernández 2004). Hernández continued to be active in Cuban domestic and foreign affairs, serving as ambassador to Vietnam and Kampuchea (Cambodia), representative in the National Assembly, member of the Central Committee of the Communist Party, and more recently as vice president of the Cuban Association of the United Nations. She was showered with honors and recognition for her role in the revolution and for her continuing solidarity with the cause. In a 2004 interview published in *Juventud Rebelde*, the key publication for Cuban youth, she applauded her audience "because they have known how to follow with dignity the path that we initiated fifty years ago" (Pérez Sáez 2003). As the sole surviving woman from the Moncada assault, Melba Hernández was for a long time a living hero and source of inspiration for the Cuban people.

—Sara E. Cooper

HERNÁNDEZ RODRÍGUEZ DEL REY, MELBA (1921–)

See also Cuban Revolution, Women in the; Santamaría Cuadrado, Haydée

Cuban revolutionary. Melba Hernández Rodríguez del Rey is one of the two women who participated in the failed 1953 attack on the Moncada Barracks with Fidel Castro. From the province of Cienfuegos in Cuba, Hernández had been prompted to join the revolutionary forces in part due to her early contact with Corina Rodríguez, who had been a rebel in the struggle for Cuban independence (Barreras Ferrán 2001). As a result of her part at Moncada, she,

References and Further Reading

- Barreras Ferrán, Ramón. 2001. "La impaciente y apasionada Melba," *Granma Diario* (July 29), <http://www.latinamericanstudies.org/cuba/melba.htm> (accessed October 28, 2004).
- Hernández Serrano, Luis. 2004. "Empezaron otra vida y otro mundo," *Juventud Rebelde Web* (February 20), <http://www.jrebelde.cubaweb.cu/2004/enero-marzo/feb-20/empezaron.html> (accessed October 28, 2004).

- Pérez Sáez, Dora. 2003. "Encuentro feliz," *Juventud Rebelde Web* (July 11), http://www.jrebelde.cubaweb.cu/Archivo/2003/Julio/20030711_01_04.html (accessed October 28, 2004).
- Vega Belmonte, Belkis, dir. 1996. *Pensar con el corazón: Melba Hernández*. Havana: ICAIC.

HIGGINS (HALL), MARGUERITE
(1920–1966)

First woman to win the Pulitzer Prize for war correspondence. Marguerite Higgins was born in Hong Kong, but her family returned to the United States when she was three. She received a bachelor's degree from the University of California, Berkeley, and graduated from Columbia University with a master's degree in journalism. Hall reported from the fronts of World War II and those of the cold war and from Korea, the Congo, and Vietnam. Although the *New York Tribune* hired her in 1942 to report the war in Europe, her editor would not send her overseas to London until 1944. In 1945, she moved to mainland Europe, reporting the war from France and later from Germany, and she accompanied the U.S. 7th Army when it entered the Nazi extermination camps of Dachau and Buchenwald. When World War II ended, Higgins covered the Nuremberg War Trials and the cold war tensions between the West and the Soviet Union. In 1947, the *New York Tribune* promoted her to bureau chief in Berlin.

In 1950, the *Tribune* assigned her to Japan and promoted her to Far East bureau chief. When the Korean War broke out, Higgins moved to South Korea, where she reported the fall of its capital, Seoul, to the North Korean army. At this point, the *Tribune* sent Homer Bigart, its top war reporter, to South Korea and ordered Higgins to return to Tokyo because all women reporters were banned from the front line. Refusing to leave, she kept competing with Bigart to get the best stories, a competition for readers that she won because the U.S. public liked her more per-

sonal style of reporting. Eventually she persuaded General Douglas MacArthur to allow her to continue her frontline reporting. Marguerite Higgins was with the marines when they landed in Inchon, 200 miles behind the North Korean lines on September 15, 1950.

Higgins wrote a book called *War in Korea*, and it became a best-seller in 1951. She also won the Pulitzer Prize for international reporting that year, and the Associated Press news organization voted her Woman of the Year. In 1952, she married air force Lieutenant General William Hall, and then in 1953, Higgins went to Vietnam to report on the French army's defeat at Dien Bien Phu. During this tour of duty, she narrowly escaped injury while walking alongside photographer Robert Capra. He stepped on a land mine and was killed. In 1955, she published her book *Red Plush and Black Bread*, based on her extensive travels in the Soviet Union. She also covered the civil war in the Congo.

In 1965, Higgins published her book *Our Vietnam Nightmare* in which she used her extensive knowledge of Vietnam to document her concerns about U.S. military involvement in Southeast Asia. While she was on this Vietnam tour, she contracted leishmaniasis, a tropical disease, and returned to the United States. She died on January 3, 1966. She is buried in Section 2 of Arlington National Cemetery in recognition of her record as an outstanding war correspondent.

—Kathleen Warnes

See also Chapelle, Dickey; Emerson, Gloria; Fallaci, Oriana; Hull, Peggy; Journalists, American Women, during World War I; Luce, Clare Boothe; Schuyler, Philippa; Trotta, Liz; Watts, Jean

References and Further Reading

- Elwood-Akers, Virginia. 1988. *Women War Correspondents in the Vietnam War, 1961–1975*. Metuchen, NJ: Scarecrow.
- May, Antoinette. 1985. *Witness to War: A Biography of Marguerite Higgins*. New York: Penguin.

HIROSHIMA, NAGASAKI, AND
WOMEN

U.S. atomic bombing of Japanese cities and its effects on the women of Japan. In August 1945, U.S. military forces deployed two atomic weapons, each with devastating blast, thermal, and radiation effects, against the Japanese cities of Hiroshima and Nagasaki. The first weapon, which used enriched uranium, had never been tested but was dropped on August 6, 1945, on Hiroshima with no advance warning. Casualty estimates vary, but some 100,000 people died immediately and perhaps another 70,000 over the next five years, most from burns, internal injuries, and excessive exposure to radiation. Survivors of the initial blast and fires, including many women, retreated to suburban areas where makeshift first aid stations were established. Over the next few days, internal injuries and radiation sickness killed hundreds, and the aid stations became burial stations.

The Nagasaki bomb, based on plutonium, was similar to the one tested at Alamogordo, New Mexico, in July 1945. It was dropped on Nagasaki on August 9, 1945. Although this weapon had a considerably greater explosive force than the Hiroshima bomb, it was dropped slightly off target. Nagasaki's lower population density and hilly terrain resulted in fewer total casualties, perhaps 75,000 immediate deaths with an equal number of major injuries.

Casualties in both cities were more prevalent among women than men, largely because of the conscription of males for the war effort, which left more female than male civilians present at the time of the attacks. Both Hiroshima and Nagasaki had strategic value to the Japanese war effort, but each also had a large noncombatant population. In selecting cities as the targets, U.S. officials ensured that there would be a substantial number of female casualties.

The weapons were deployed primarily for their devastating blast effects, but U.S. officials were aware that survivors of the initial explo-

sions would also be subject to radiological effects. After Japan's surrender and its occupation by the United States, U.S. officials decided to study the long-term effects on survivors of their exposure to radiation. Beginning in late 1945, survivors were subjected to blood and bone marrow tests and screened for leukemia and other diseases that might be attributable to radiation exposure. Although few cancers were identified, researchers did learn that a large fraction of male survivors were rendered at least temporarily sterile and that women seemed able to absorb larger radiation doses than men without immediate ill effects.

In 1947, the U.S. government decided to study the genetic effects of radiation exposures. A massive investigation was launched to identify survivors' whereabouts at the time of the explosions to estimate the radiation doses they received. Hundreds of midwives in both cities aided the research by registering and reporting pregnancies, terminations, and live births. Midwives and mothers were crucial to the data-gathering effort, which involved identifying and following the progress of some 76,626 newborns. Analysis of data gathered through 1953 indicated that parents' radiation exposures had no statistically significant influence on the health of children, but controversy surrounded the conclusion. The Japanese data continue to inform contemporary international regulations on radiation exposure limits.

Although it had earlier banned all reports on the atomic weapons, the U.S. occupation force permitted a Peace Restoration Festival to take place at Hiroshima in August 1946. Japanese women played an important role in making the festival an annual event, and in 1949 at the request of female activist Kinko Yamada, a peace rally in Hiroshima called for the elimination of nuclear weapons. The Hiroshima Peace Festival is now regarded as the world's premier demonstration of antinuclear activism.

In 1955, the U.S. government flew several female Hiroshima survivors to the United States, where they underwent reconstructive surgery to repair burn scars suffered during the bombing.

The Hiroshima Maidens, as they were known in U.S. newspapers, stayed with American families while recuperating and became an international symbol of courage and survival.

—*Laura M. Calkins*

See also Japan, Women and the Home Front, World War II

References and Further Reading

- Barker, Rodney. 1985. *The Hiroshima Maidens: A Story of Courage, Compassion, and Survival*. New York: Viking Press.
- Kelen, Stephen. 1983. *I Remember Hiroshima*. Sydney: Hale and Iremonger.
- Neel, James V. 1990. "The Very Early Years of the ABCC Genetics Program, 1946–1954." *RERF Update* 2, no. 3: 6–9. Available at the Radiation Effects Research Foundation Web site, <http://www.rerf.or.jp/eigo/historic/psnacunt/schull.htm> (accessed September 13, 2004).
- Neel, James V., and William J. Schull. 1991. *The Children of Atomic Bomb Survivors: A Genetic Survey*. Washington, DC: National Academy Press.
- Newcombe, Howard B. 1962. "Genetic Effects in Populations, with Special Reference to Studies in Man, Including ABCC Results." *Radiation Research* 16: 531–545.
- Schull, William J. 1990. "Role of Japanese Midwives Critical to Birth of Genetic Program." Available at the Radiation Effects Research Foundation Web site, <http://www.rerf.or.jp/eigo/historic/psnacunt/schull.htm> (accessed September 13, 2004).

HIRSCH, ILSE (B. 1922)

Guide for a German assassination team. Ilse Hirsch was born in Hamm, Germany, in 1922. When she was sixteen, she joined the League of Young German Women (Bund der Deutschen Mädchen), the Hitler youth group for female adolescents, and was one of its leaders in Monschau. She was trained for a mission to assassinate Franz Oppenhoff, who had been appointed mayor of

Aachen by the Americans after they seized the German city. Hirsch was parachuted with a team of five men, led by SS Lieutenant Herbert Wenzel, to the countryside outside the city. Hirsch, who knew the area, led the team to Oppenhoff's residence where Wenzel and Sepp Leitgeb killed him. During their attempted escape, Hirsch detonated a mine attached to a trip-wire. Leitgeb was killed, and she was badly injured. She was apparently not suspected of participating in the assassination and was able to return home after a lengthy recovery. After the war, Hirsch and the other living perpetrators, with the exception of Wenzel, were eventually apprehended and tried in the Werewolf Trial in Aachen in October 1949. They were found guilty and sentenced to terms ranging from one to four years.

—*Bernard Cook*

See also Terrorists, Women

References and Further Reading

- "Ilse Hirsch," George Duncan's Women of the Third Reich, <http://members.iinet.net.au/~gduncan/women.html> (accessed January 13, 2004).

HOBBY, OVETA CULP (1905–1995)

First director of the U.S. Women's Army Auxiliary Corps (WAAC) and its successor, the Women's Army Corps (WAC). Born on January 19, 1905, in Killeen, Texas, the daughter of lawyer and state legislator Ike W. Culp, she showed an interest in law, parliamentary procedure, and journalism. She served as parliamentarian for the Texas House of Representatives, assisted in codifying Texas banking laws, served as assistant city attorney of Houston, and wrote a textbook on parliamentary procedure, *Mr. Chairman* (1937). In 1931, she married William P. Hobby, publisher of the *Houston Post* and former governor (1917–1921) of Texas. At



Oveta Culp Hobby. (Dwight D. Eisenhower Library)

the *Houston Post*, she advanced from research editor in 1931 to executive vice president in 1938. Hobby was the mother of a ten-year-old son and a five-year-old daughter when she took the position as director of the WAAC in 1942.

As chief of the Women's Interests Section of the War Department's Bureau of Public Relations (1941–1942), Oveta Culp Hobby was instrumental in planning a women's corps. On May 14, 1942, Congress established the Women's Army Auxiliary Corps, and on May 16, Hobby took the oath of office as its director, holding the relative rank of colonel.

Director Hobby prepared WAAC regulations to govern enlistment, training, uniforms, pay, promotion, and a code of conduct for the non-combatant women's service. WAAC recruiting surpassed initial goals, and by March 1943, five WAAC training centers were in operation. Hobby had to confront a slanderous campaign against the reputation of the WAAC in the spring of 1943, however, which slowed women's enlistment. Most likely begun by men in the

army who were hostile toward the WAAC, the slander spread unfounded scurrilous jokes and gossip about the women's moral character and behavior. Another problem she encountered was that because Congress did not grant WAAC members military status as an integral part of the U.S. Army, the auxiliaries were not eligible to receive veterans' benefits, which especially affected auxiliaries stationed overseas. After much congressional debate, on July 1, 1943, President Franklin D. Roosevelt signed the bill to establish the Women's Army Corps in the U.S. Army. Colonel Hobby retained responsibility for preparing WAC plans and policies and overseeing training and discipline.

When Congress dropped auxiliary status and created the Women's Army Corps on July 1, 1943, Director Hobby took the oath of office on July 5 as a colonel in the U.S. Army. Having completed her mission to organize and administer a women's corps, Colonel Hobby resigned as director of the Women's Army Corps in July 1945. On July 12, 1945, Westray Battle Boyce, Hobby's deputy since May, assumed directorship of the WAC.

In January 1945, Hobby was awarded the Distinguished Service Medal. The citation praising her contributions to the war effort stated, "Without the guidance of precedents in United States military history to assist her, Colonel Hobby established sound initial policies, planned and supervised the selection of officers and the preparation of regulations. The soundness of basic plans and policies promulgated is evidenced by the outstanding success of the Women's Army Corps, composed of nearly 100,000 women and comprising an essential and integral part of the Army" (Treadwell 1954, 721).

Oveta Culp Hobby returned to Houston to resume her career at the *Post*, interrupted only when she returned to Washington to serve as the first secretary of the Department of Health, Education, and Welfare from 1953 to 1955. She died on August 16, 1995, in Houston.

—*Sharon Ritenour Stevens*

See also United States, Women's Army Auxiliary Corps

References and Further Reading

- Morden, Bettie J. 1990. *The Women's Army Corps, 1945–1978*. Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office.
- Treadwell, Mattie E. 1954. *The Women's Army Corps*, a volume in the *United States Army in World War II*. Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office.

HOBHOUSE, EMILY
(1860–1926)

English humanitarian and pacifist who opposed the South African (Anglo-Boer) War and condemned British treatment of Afrikaner women and children in concentration camps in the Orange Free State and the Transvaal.

Emily Hobhouse was born in Liskeard on April 9, 1860, and grew up in the tiny village of St. Ive in eastern Cornwall. Her father was an Anglican priest, but both her father's and her mother's families were prominent in politics. After the death of her mother, she cared for her ill father until his death in 1895. Hobhouse then became more active in social work and political reform, traveling to the United States to do welfare work among the Cornish miners in Minnesota. In 1898, Hobhouse returned to England and worked for the Women's Industrial Committee and became adept at investigating social problems. She and her brother, Leonard Hobhouse, were both members of the Adult Suffrage Society, which promoted universal suffrage. Like many radical liberals, she opposed the Boer War. In 1899, as secretary for the South African Conciliation Committee, she lobbied the British government and organized mass

EMILY HOBHOUSE'S CONDEMNATION OF BRITISH POLICY DURING THE BOER WAR

Corroboration by an American Historian

"[A]s the guerrilla campaign replaced conventional warfare, Gen. Horatio Herbert Kitchner, the British commander in chief, adopted a strategy targeting women and children. . . . Kitchner's strategy of land clearance was designed to deny the Boer enemy the refuge and resupply provided by their families. He did this by burning down their farmhouses, killing their livestock, and carrying the homeless civilians to concentration camps. . . . There is no evidence of deliberate cruelty: those in charge of the camps did the best they could under the circumstances. But the end result was the death of more than twenty-six thousand women and children. Since the entire population of the two Boer states was less than four hundred thousand, these deaths represented a catastrophic loss. *Genocide* is not too harsh a word."

—Linda Grant De Pauw, *Battle Cries and Lullabies: Women in War from Pre-History to the Present* (Norman: University of Oklahoma, 1998), 194. Reprinted by permission of the publisher.

Protest of the Boer Government, November 21, 1901

"With indignation the Government and the people were surprised with the policy followed by the British military authorities in removing the families of burghers from their dwellings. This removal took place in the most uncivilized and barbarous manner, while such action is moreover in conflict with all up to the present acknowledged rules of civilized warfare. The families were put out of their houses under compulsion, and in many instances by force, which [the houses] were destroyed and burnt with everything in them—such as bedding, clothes, furniture, and food; and these families,

meetings protesting the war. The following year, she founded the South African Women and Children Distress Fund to raise money for British and Afrikaner families that had lost homes and livelihoods in the war.

Hobhouse traveled to South Africa in December 1900 with relief supplies and to see the camps firsthand. Although Lord Kitchener placed severe restrictions on her movements, she did visit several camps around Bloemfontein. Here she witnessed appalling suffering caused by the lack of adequate water, rations, sanitary facilities, medical supplies, and shelter. Hobhouse was particularly moved by the plight of the thousands of undernourished children who were dying of treatable, but untreated, illnesses, such as typhus and dysentery. When

British officials seemed unable or unwilling to take action, Hobhouse returned to England to plead her case directly to the British people and government. Despite fierce opposition from prowar factions, she goaded Parliament into debating her report on the camps, addressed public meetings, and raised relief funds. Hobhouse's efforts forced the government to appoint a women's committee headed by Millicent Fawcett to travel to South Africa and investigate the camps, but Hobhouse was denied a place on it. The committee's February 1902 report essentially vindicated Hobhouse and led to some improvements.

In October 1901, Hobhouse returned to South Africa but was refused leave to come ashore in Cape Town; after five days, she was

among whom were many aged ones, pregnant women, and children of very tender years, were removed in open trolleys [exposed] for weeks to rain, severe cold wind, and terrible heat . . . with the result that many of them became very ill, and some of them died shortly after their arrival in the women's camps."

S. W. Burger, Acting State President

F. W. Reitz, State Secretary

—Emily Hobhouse, *The Brunt of the War and Where It Fell* (London: Methuen, 1902), 107.

Hobhouse's Report

"I had seen families swept close to the railway line near Warrenton and Fourteen Streams. I had seen saw a crowded train crawl the whole long day into Kimberley—the people, old and young, packed in open trucks under a cruel sun—kept at the station building without food until late at night, brought up at midnight to bare tents, where, groping in the dark, they sought their bundles and lay down, finding no preparation, no food or drink. I had seen them in crowds by railway sides in bitter cold, in streaming rain, hungry, sick, dying, and dead. I have seen these patient people packed in train-loads for Bethulie and elsewhere, and I never doubted but that every countrywoman of mine, had they seen and known, would have felt as I did, great sympathy with their forlorn condition and a desire to alleviate it.

"Never before have women and children been so warred against. England by the hands of Lord Roberts and Lord Kitchener, adopted the policy of Spain [in Cuba], while improving upon her methods. She has placed her seal upon an odious system. Is it to be a precedent for future wars, or is it to be denounced . . . by every humane person of every creed and every tongue, denounced as a 'method of Barbarism' which must never be resorted to again—the whole cruel sequence of the burning, the eviction, the rendering destitute, the deporting, and finally reconcentrating of the non-combatants of the country, with no previous preparation for their sustenance?"

—Emily Hobhouse, *The Brunt of the War and Where It Fell*
(London: Methuen, 1902), 122 and 317–318.

deported back to England. In poor health, she learned of the Afrikaner surrender in the Treaty of Vereeniging in May 1902 while recuperating in Savoy, France. Determined to effect rehabilitation and reconciliation, Hobhouse went to South Africa in 1905 to teach spinning, weaving, and lace making to women and girls, eventually establishing twenty-eight schools in the Free State and Transvaal. Ill health forced her to return to Europe in 1908 and also prevented her from attending the December 1913 ceremony in Bloemfontein unveiling the Women's Monument commemorating the 26,000 women and children who died in the concentration camps.

Hobhouse took up the antiwar cause again in 1914, protesting World War I. Following the war, she organized a relief effort that provided food for tens of thousands of starving European women and children. Hobhouse died on May 23, 1926. She is remembered as the Angel of Love by Afrikaner women. Her ashes are buried at the Women's Monument in Bloemfontein.

—Roger B. Beck

See also Fawcett, Millicent

References and Further Reading

- Balme, Jennifer H. 1994. *To Love One's Enemies: The Life and Work of Emily Hobhouse*. Cobble Hill, Canada: Hobhouse Trust.
- Beer, Frank H. 2003. *Emily Hobhouse: The Angel of Love*. Cornwall, England: Charaton Books.
- Reenen, Rykie van. 1984. *Emily Hobhouse: Boer War Letters*. Cape Town: Human and Rousseau.
- Roberts, Brian. 1991. *Those Bloody Women: Three Heroines of the Boer War*. London: John Murray.

HODGES, KATHERINE
(1888–1982)

Ambulance driver for the Scottish Women's Hospitals (SWH), Young Men's Christian Asso-

ciation (YMCA), and Hackett-Lowther Unit during World War I; recipient of the Medal of St. George, Order of St. Stanislav, and Croix de Guerre for her contributions.

Katherine Hodges joined the SWH Transport Unit headed to Russia in July 1916. Hodges's unit provided medical care for the First Division of the Serbian army stationed in Romania. As an ambulance driver, Hodges transported wounded soldiers from the front lines to field hospitals. The transport unit also evacuated SWH hospitals during their frequent retreats.

In January 1917, Hodges joined a medical unit sponsored by the Union of Zemstva. She served as an ambulance driver as well as a nurse on the Galician front. Hodges returned to Britain in the summer of 1917 due to the heightening revolutionary activity in Russia and personality conflicts with the administration of the unit.

During her stay in Britain, she served as a YMCA driver in London until leaving for France with the Hackett-Lowther Unit in January 1918. As part of the unit, Hodges became a paid soldier in the French army, where she served as a driver until the armistice. The Hackett-Lowther Unit was the only group of women officially working on the front lines.

During World War II, Hodges worked as a driver with the London Auxiliary Ambulance Service during the blitz. After the war, she served as a headquarters officer with the British Red Cross Society until 1968.

—Barbara Penny Kanner

See also Haverfield, Evelina; Hutton, Lady Isabel Galloway; Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's Hospitals; King, Olive; Sandes, Flora

References and Further Reading

- Cahill, Audrey Fawcett. 1999. *Between the Lines: Letters and Diaries from Elsie Inglis's Russian Unit*. Edinburgh, Cambridge, and Durham, United Kingdom: Pentland Press.

HOGUE, JANE CURRIE BLAIKIE
(1811–1890)

Civilian worker during the American Civil War in the Northwestern Sanitary Commission. Jane Currie Blaikie was born in Philadelphia on July 31, 1811. She attended Young's Ladies' College in Philadelphia and married Abraham Hoge, a merchant. In 1848, they moved to Chicago.

In 1861, fifty-year-old Jane Hoge assumed, with Mary Livermore, the management of the Northwestern Sanitary Commission branch based in Chicago. She would hold the post throughout the Civil War. She was already an experienced leader of women's charitable organizations and probably more prepared for the responsibility than any other woman living in Chicago. Her outspoken demeanor, emboldened by her conviction that the war relief effort needed an efficient mother's perspective, served the commission well.

Hoge's wartime job drew her further into public life than she had previously ventured. She traveled, made speeches, raised large amounts of money, worked with both civilians and military personnel, helped manage the commission's daily business deals, and organized the myriad donated supplies destined for the western armies. Along with Livermore and a number of clubwomen, she planned and implemented the Northwestern Soldier's Fair in 1863, which earned almost \$100,000. Although men in the commission had initially remained on the sidelines, by 1865 they made up the fair's managing board, although they retained Hoge and Livermore.

In the course of Hoge's wartime career, she met and corresponded with Abraham Lincoln. Whether she was nursing a wounded enlisted man in an army hospital, chairing a fair board in Chicago, or corresponding with the nation's president, however, she was quintessentially a mother who did her work on a national stage. She was a woman who believed her patriotic and divinely sanctioned wartime duty was to work.

In 1867, Hoge published her war memoir, *The Boys in Blue*, which heaped praise on the enlisted men and became one of the earliest accounts of the war. With the exception of this foray into the broader public world, the postwar Hoge resumed her role as a well-known and respected regional mother. The skills she had learned while immersed in the Sanitary Commission and its work enhanced the activities that she took up after the war. In the late 1860s, for example, she helped to establish Chicago's Home for the Friendless, a refuge for needy children and women. In 1871, she played a key role in launching the Evanston College for Ladies, and she served for more than a decade on the Women's Presbyterian Board of Foreign Missions for the Northwest.

Unlike her associate Mary Livermore, Hoge did not parlay her wartime experiences into a gainful career for herself. Moreover, she never joined the ranks of suffragists. More self-assured than Livermore had been but possessing less postwar energy, Hoge used her skills and reputation garnered from the war years to continue leading in women's work. For the remainder of her life, she was a regionally respected advocate of women who knew how to get big jobs done. She died in Chicago on August 26, 1890.

—Nancy Driscoll Engle

See also Baker, E. H.; Barton, Clara; Blackwell, Elizabeth; Boyd, Isabelle; Civil War, American, and Women; Clayton, Frances; Cushman, Pauline; Dix, Dorothea; Edmonds, Sarah Emma; Etheridge, Anna; Greenhow, Rose O'Neale; Hart, Nancy; Livermore, Mary Ashton Rice; Moon, Lottie, and Moon, Ginnie; Tubman, Harriet

References and Further Reading

Brockett, Linus P., and Marcy C. Vaughn. 1867. *Woman's Work in the Civil War: A Record of Heroism, Patriotism and Patience*. Introduction by Henry W. Bellows. Philadelphia: Zeigler, McCurdy.

HOLOCAUST AND JEWISH WOMEN

- Henshaw, Sarah Edwards. 1868. *Our Branch and Its Tributaries: Being a History of the Northwestern Sanitary Commission and Its Auxiliaries during the War of Rebellion*. Chicago: Alfred L. Sewell.
- Hoge, Jane (Mrs. A. H.). 1867. *The Boys in Blue, or Heroes of the "Rank and File."* Introduction by Thomas E. Eddy. New York: E. B. Treat.
- Livermore, Mary A. 1889. *My Story of the War: A Woman's Narrative of Four Years Personal Experience as Nurse in the Union Army*. Hartford, CT: A. D. Worthington.

HOLOCAUST AND JEWISH WOMEN

Fate of Jewish women during the Holocaust. The National Socialist state did everything in its power to destroy European Jewry, female and male. More women than men died during the Holocaust, however, revealing that both race and gender played important roles. From the initial period of ghettoization, when most European Jews were crammed into small and filthy quarters in several Eastern European cities, to the horrific world of the concentration and extermination camps, Jewish women suffered unique abuses at the hands of perpetrators. Jewish women also learned to survive in the ghettos and camps in ways that men could not.

The roots of women's strength and leadership during the Holocaust stem from their involvement in the youth movements popular in Europe before World War II. Many of the groups with a large Jewish membership were socialist and stressed sexual equality, preparing many young women to assume leadership roles during times of crisis. German Jewish women organized self-help groups after anti-Semitic laws passed in Germany stripped Jews of civil rights and economic security. Nevertheless, several sociocultural factors contributed to the higher death rate of women during the Holocaust. Unwilling to leave their families, especially older relatives and small children, fewer women emigrated to safer countries than men. Women were also less likely to convert or marry non-Jews than Jewish men. This meant that women were less likely to have Christian spouses to protect them during the forced movement of Jews to the ghettos and eventually the camps. Finally, men naturally assumed official leadership positions and made decisions that benefited them.

In 1939, the Nazis decreed that the Jewish communities in occupied territories be administered by a Jewish Council of Elders. The councils, although entirely male in composition, employed female secretaries, many of whom were influential behind the scenes and active in the underground. Dr. Dietl Orenstein, the only woman to be named to a council, led an 11,000-

THE NAZI VIEW OF WOMEN

"It was the Nazi view of all women as cell-bearers that condemned the Jewish ones. Even within the lowest life-form—the anti-race—women ranked lower still, for spawning it. In Hitler's cliché, 'Every child that a woman brings into the world is a battle, a battle waged for the existence of her people.' Because women in their biology held history, one gestating Jewish mother posed a greater threat than any fighting man. To be a father to a child had no impact on selection. To be a mother in fact or in future—that was the final sentence."

—Mary Lowenthal Felstiner, *To Paint Her Life: Charlotte Salomon in the Nazi Era* (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1997), 207.

Reprinted with permission of the author.

HOLOCAUST AND JEWISH WOMEN



Selection process at Auschwitz concentration camp, Poland, ca. 1944. A German soldier stands with Jewish prisoners, identified by the yellow stars sewn on their coats. (Imagno/Getty Images)

woman-strong Women's Employment Service in Theresienstadt, the one concentration camp open to international inspection. The unique female labor service managed multiple industries and ensured that the women of this unusual concentration camp were fed properly until the camp was liquidated in the final months of World War II. In most ghettos, however, the Jewish councils decided that able-bodied men should be given the best chance for survival. Consequently, young men received the lion's share of the ghetto's food and resources. After the Nazis dissolved the ghettos in the autumn of 1942, the fragile Jewish communal structures disappeared, and voluntary, informal communities took their place. It was under these desperate conditions that women demonstrated

strength and adaptability while facing what many scholars believe to have been even greater hardship than male inmates.

Women had proved themselves resourceful in the ghettos, and those lucky enough to flee the German invasion were valuable assets in the partisan movements in the occupied Soviet Union. Only a small percentage of women escaped the concentration camps. Female inmates were subjected to gender-specific burdens and cruelties but also created valuable relationships and adapted to the merciless environment. Almost every female survivor described being humiliated when first arriving at the camp. Women were stripped nude before SS personnel and male inmates alike. Pregnant women and women with small children were often killed

within minutes of arriving at the camp. The German goal was the annihilation of the Jewish people but not before extracting hard labor from them. Children were nothing but burdens in the German scheme. The Germans reserved one of their most infamous cruelties for women with small children. Those women who could work in the camps were forced to witness their children's murder. All Jews were dehumanized before being exterminated or worked to death, but women suffered exceptional brutality at the hands of perpetrators.

Significantly, women used their traditional gender roles and biology to survive. Women demonstrated a greater biological resistance to starvation, were more aware of the importance of hygiene in the camps, and tended to form social groups more easily than men. Women sent to some of the larger camps became camp sisters, small groups of unrelated inmates who formed quasi-family ties and maintained a group identity in most aspects of camp life. These women had similar schooling and tended to come from the same cities or regions. As in the ghettos, food sharing was the key to survival. The extended family of camp sisters reserved most of the collected food for the young and sick. The SS did not appoint women to the internal administration of the camps, which would have ensured them a source of food and some preferential treatment. Female inmates were forced to pool their resources and maintain a strong network. Women were also forced to use sex as a commodity. Both male inmates and SS personnel traded food for sex. Given the German need for labor, the absence of women in official leadership positions, and the burdens pregnancy and motherhood placed on female inmates, it is not surprising women's survival rate was much lower than men's.

Jewish women suffered primarily for being Jews but were treated with exceptional cruelty for being women. Women also had unique strengths that facilitated their survival in the ghettos and camps. They were socially conditioned to act as mothers and protectors for other inmates, even when the inmates were un-

related. Women were generally more religious than men and were compelled to freely assist strangers. Finally, one of the ironies of the Holocaust was that so-called women's work, such as preparing food, cleaning, and caring for the sick, was the only meaningful labor during such a trying time. By surviving and helping others to survive, Jewish women practiced a form of nonviolent resistance. The Holocaust claimed a diverse group of victims representing dozens of nationalities, but more than half of the 6 million victims that perished in the Holocaust were women.

—Brian E. Crim

See also Bruskina, Masha; Fittko, Lisa; Frank, Anne; Fuld, Bracha; Grossman, Chaika; Kempner, Vitka; Korczak, Rozka; Landau, Emilia; Ravensbrück; Reik, Haviva; Rosenstrasse and Intermarriage of Jews and German Gentiles; Senesh, Hannah

References and Further Reading

- Baumel, Judith Tydor. 1995. "Social Interaction among Jewish Women in the Crisis during the Holocaust: A Case Study." *Gender and History* 7: 64–84.
- Kremer, Lillian. 1999. *Women's Holocaust Writing: Memory and Imagination*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska.
- Ofer, Dalia, and Lenore J. Weitzman, eds. 1998. *Women in the Holocaust*. New Haven, CT: Yale University.
- Ritvo, Roger, and Diane Plotkin, eds. 1998. *Sisters in Sorrow: Voices of Care in the Holocaust*. College Station: Texas A&M University.

HUGHAN, JESSIE WALLACE
(1875–1955)

A major figure in the war resistance movement in the United States between the two world wars and the founder and driving force behind the War Resisters League during its formative years.

Jessie Wallace Hughan was born in Brooklyn in 1875. She was educated at the Unitarian Northfield Seminary in Massachusetts and graduated from Barnard College in 1898. Influenced by Henry George's single tax theory, Hughan studied economics at Columbia University, receiving her master's in 1899 and her doctorate in 1910. Her growing interest in socialism led her doctoral adviser to suggest that she attend socialist meetings to deepen her understanding of the topic. In 1907, she joined the Socialist Party, serving in several party offices. Between 1915 and 1924, she was the party's candidate for a number of city, state, and national offices. Although unsuccessful in each political campaign, Hughan consistently insisted that the roots of modern war and economic oppression were located within the capitalist system.

While completing her doctorate, Hughan began her teaching career at schools in Naugatuck, Connecticut, and White Plains, New York. In the early 1900s, she returned to New York City where she began her long career in the employ of the city's public school system. She taught in a number of high schools throughout the city, primarily in Brooklyn. In the 1920s, she was in charge of the English Department at Textile High School. She retired in 1945.

A learned and respected teacher, her politics prevented her employment as a college professor. Still, she managed to publish a number of books and articles related to socialist ideas and war. In 1911, her dissertation was published as *The Present Status of Socialism in America*. In 1916, she published *The Socialism of Today*, along with William English Walling and J. G. Phelps Stokes. These works were followed by *A Study of International Government* (1923), *What Is Socialism* (1928), *If We Should Be Invaded: Facing a Fantastic Hypothesis* (1940), and *Three Decades of War Resistance* (1942). In her writings, she offered compelling arguments in favor of socialist opposition to war as well as a strong defense of pacifism.

It was during World War I that Hughan began her lifelong dedication to pacifism. She initiated her personal struggle against war by establishing

an organization for war opponents who had no traditional religious basis for their pacifist beliefs. Hughan joined Frances Witherspoon and Tracy Mygatt in forming a number of peace groups linking pacifism, Christianity, and socialist politics. Unlike other opponents of war, Hughan intellectually developed a sophisticated socialist-pacifist position. Prior to U.S. military intervention in World War I, she challenged prowar socialists, such as Graham Stokes. In 1915, she organized the Anti-Enlistment League. Operating out of her apartment, the league managed to enroll 3,500 men who signed a declaration against military enlistment. The league had hoped to gain enough signatures to prove the war's unpopularity and convince the Wilson administration not to become involved. Government pressure, along with seizure of the organization's files, quickly led to its demise, however. Because her antiwar activity preceded the nation's 1917 declaration of war, Hughan was not fired like other antiwar New York schoolteachers. Yet she was the victim of numerous attacks for her antiwar stance. In 1919, during the Red Scare, the Lusk Committee of the New York Legislature called on her to testify regarding her loyalty. The committee denied her the Certificate of Character and Loyalty because she had deliberately added the following words to the state's teacher's loyalty oath: "This obedience being qualified always by dictates of conscience" (Kennedy 1999, 39). That same year, the Senate Judiciary Committee, headed by Lee Overman, received a list of some sixty-two eminent citizens who were labeled as dangerous radicals. Among the names submitted were Jane Addams, Lillian D. Wald, Oswald Garrison Villard, and Hughan.

After the war, Hughan led a campaign to organize an active war resistance movement in the United States. In 1923, she successfully managed to secure approval from the peace groups Fellowship of Reconciliation, Women's Peace Society, and Women's Peace Union to endorse the creation of the War Resisters League (WRL). For years, she spearheaded the organization from her apartment in Brooklyn.

During the 1920s, she signed up numerous war resisters, delivered many speeches, and wrote pamphlets and tracts on the use of active non-violence. She also organized various public protests against war and militarism, including some New York “NO More War” parades. In 1938, she helped found the United Pacifist Committee, a group created for the purpose of coordinating peace education and conscientious objectors. In 1940, after World War II began in Europe, she worked to defeat the conscription bill and established the Pacifist Teachers League when New York teachers were requested to register young men for the draft. She was one of the first war protestors to criticize the government’s establishment of the Civilian Public Service Camps in which conscientious objectors who accepted civilian conscript labor worked without wages. During World War II, she persuaded the WRL to support all objectors to war, regardless of their feelings about conscription. She continued heading the league as secretary until 1945, when she became its honorary secretary. She continued serving on the WRL’s executive committee until her death in her Manhattan apartment in 1955.

—Charles F. Howlett

See also Balch, Emily Green; McDowell, Mary Stone

References and Further Reading

Early, Frances H. 1995. “Revolutionary Pacifism and War Resistance: Jessie Wallace Hughan’s ‘War against War.’” In *Peace and Change* (July): 307–328.

———. 1997. *A World without War: How U.S. Feminists and Pacifists Resisted World War I*. Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University Press.

Hughan, Jessie Wallace. 1923. *A Study of International Government*. New York: Thomas and Crowell.

Kennedy, Kathleen. 1999. *Disloyal Mothers and Scurrilous Citizens: Women and Subversion during World War I*. Bloomington: Indiana University.

HULL, PEGGY, PSEUD.
 (DEUELL, HENRIETTA
 ELEANOR GOODNOUGH)
 (1889–1967)

The first female journalist accredited by the U.S. War Department and a founder of the Overseas Press Club. Henrietta Eleanor Good-nough was born in Kansas in 1889. An active child who always wanted to be somebody, Good-nough started her journalism career in Junction City, Kansas. She next worked in Denver, San Francisco, and Hawaii. She later moved to Minneapolis, changing her byline at this time to Peggy Hull.

In 1916, Hull moved to Cleveland to write an advertising column while running a shopping service. Wishing to report on the activities of the Ohio National Guard, she joined the Women’s Auxiliary of the Guard when General John J. Pershing and his troops were being sent to the Mexican border. Hull traveled to Texas ahead of the unit as a freelancer and simultaneously pursued a busy social life. Once in Texas, she was hired by an El Paso newspaper. She accompanied the 20,000 men of the Tenth Division on a fifteen-day march in New Mexico, and in February 1917 she rode out to meet the soldiers, managing to be filmed riding with Pershing at the head of troops.

When the United States entered World War I in April 1917, the *El Paso Morning Times* agreed to send her to France, but the War Department did not consider the paper large enough to warrant an accredited reporter. She sailed anyway in June 1917, writing stories on her experiences while her acquaintance with Pershing helped her get access to the troops. As the articles she sent back to the United States gained popularity, other reporters complained, and she was recalled. In the summer of 1918, she was accredited and authorized to travel with the American Expeditionary Forces to Siberia, sponsored by the Newspaper Enterprise Association (NEA) and the *Cleveland (Ohio) Press*.



Peggy Hull. (Library of Congress)

Next Hull worked in Shanghai and was there in January 1932 when the city was attacked by the Japanese. She wrote about the Japanese attack on China for the *New York Daily News*. She was again accredited during World War II for the Pacific theater reporting from Hawaii, Guam, and other islands. She was awarded the U.S. Navy Commendation for her service writing about the ordinary day-to-day lives of the soldiers.

Hull was married to George Hull, John Kinley, and Harvey Deuell; the first two marriages ended in divorce and the third with the death of Deuell. She spent the last several years of her life in California and died of breast cancer on June 19, 1967.

—Katherine Burger Johnson

See also Chapelle, Dickey; Emerson, Gloria; Fallaci, Oriana; Higgins, Marguerite; Journalists,

American Women, during World War I; Luce, Clare Boothe; Schuyler, Philippa; Trotta, Liz; Watts, Jean

References and Further Reading

Smith, Wilda M., and Eleanor A. Bogart. 1991. *The Wars of Peggy Hull: The Life and Times of a War Correspondent*. El Paso: Texas Western Press.

HUTTON, LADY ISABEL
GALLOWAY (NÉE ISABEL
EMSLIE) (1887–1960)

Doctor and officer with the Scottish Women's Hospitals (SWH) in France and Serbia during World War I. Hutton received the Serbian Order of the White Eagle for her services.

After being turned away by the Royal Army Medical Corps, Dr. Isabel Hutton (née Emslie), a trained psychiatrist, accepted the position of assistant medical officer and pathologist with the SWH in 1915. Her unit, the Girton and Newnham Unit, established a tent hospital in Troyes, France. The members of her unit were sent to Ghevgeli, Serbia, in November 1915, where they worked for a few weeks until retreating to Salonika, Greece, in December 1915. Hutton was in the same SWH unit as Olive King and was also a friend of Flora Sandes.

In summer 1918, she was appointed as the chief medical officer of an SWH unit at Ostrovo, Greece, which moved to Vranja, Serbia, in October 1918. Her unit, although equipped with limited resources and staff, treated both the military and Serbian civilians. Her hospital remained in Vranja until October 1919. Hutton helped to establish local hospitals to replace the SWH hospital before it closed. She then assumed command over another unit in Belgrade. After her service with the SWH in Serbia ended in June 1920, Hutton worked briefly with Lady Muriel Paget's Child Welfare Scheme in the

HUTTON, LADY ISABEL GALLOWAY

Crimea. There she assumed the role of commanding medical officer at a hospital in Sebastopol. However, the hospital's work was cut short by the Russian Civil War. The Bolshevik advance in November 1920 forced the hospital to evacuate to Constantinople where Hutton led a campaign to assist Russian refugees.

During World War II, Hutton was stationed in India with her husband, Lord Hutton. There she directed the Indian Red Cross Welfare Service and chaired the Ladies' Advisory Committee of the Auxiliary Nursing Service.

—*Barbara Penny Kanner*

See also Haverfield, Evelina; Hodges, Katherine; Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's Hospitals; King, Olive; Sandes, Flora

References and Further Reading

Hutton, Isabel. 1928. *With a Women's Unit in Serbia, Salonika and Sebastopol*. London: Williams and Norgate.

Kanner, Barbara Penny. 1997. *Women in Context*. New York: G. K. Hall.

IBÁRRURI, DOLORES (LA
PASIONARIA) (1895–1989)

Symbol of antifascist Spanish womanhood both during and after the Spanish Civil War (1936–1939). A committed member of the Spanish Communist Party, Dolores Ibárruri opposed nationalist forces led by General Francisco Franco and supported the republic, the existing government. Following the 1939 defeat of the republican forces, Ibárruri went into exile and continued to struggle for an end to the Franco dictatorship. She is known as *La Pasionaria* because of her fiery, eloquent oratory in defense of the republic and the Communist movement.

Dolores Ibárruri was born to a family of modest means in the northern Basque region of Spain. She grew up at a time when the mining, iron, steel, and textile industries were developing in the region. These industries created new sources of employment and transformed peasants into workers. Many of these workers joined working-class movements and identified with the ideals and demands of the Communist Party (CP) that were gaining popularity in Spain. Ibárruri joined the CP in the 1920s, and from that time she dedicated her life to the party and to building a world based on Communist ideals. She rose rapidly in the ranks of the CP. In 1930,

she was elected to the central committee, the main leadership body of the party. In 1932, she headed the party's Women's Commission. What catapulted her to national prominence and international renown, however, was her role in the Spanish Civil War.

During the civil war, Ibárruri distinguished herself through her stirring speeches in defense of the republic and in opposition to the forces of General Francisco Franco. Following the June 1936 revolt of the Franco forces, she took to the airwaves of Madrid and uttered her famous call to the Spanish people: "No pasarán!" (They shall not pass) and coined the heroic phrase, "It is better to die on your feet than live on your knees" (Thomas 1961, 140). For most of the war, she did not call on Spanish women to renounce their roles as mothers and take up arms. Instead, she urged the mothers of Spain to support their sons who were fighting for the republic.

When the republican forces lost the war in 1939, she went into exile but not inactivity. In 1942, she was elected secretary general of the Communist Party. After Franco's death in 1975, she returned to Spain and was elected as a deputy in the parliament. She published numerous books, including her autobiography, *Memoirs de Dolores Ibárruri*.

Her affective life was not as successful as her political life, perhaps because she usually

prioritized the latter. Her marriage to Julián Ruiz, a leader in the Communist Party, was not a happy one. Three of her daughters died in infancy, and her son died at the siege of Stalingrad. The CP disapproved of her relationship with a male Communist Party member seventeen years her junior, and when the party asked her to end the relationship, she did.

—Margaret Power

See also Spanish Civil War, Women and the

References and Further Reading

- García-Nieto Paris, Carmen, ed. 1992. *El único camino*. Madrid: Editorial Castalia, Instituto de la Mujer.
- Ibárruri, Dolores. 1985. *Memorias de Dolores Ibárruri*. Barcelona: Planeta.
- Thomas, Hugh. 1961. *The Spanish Civil War*. New York: Harper.

IL-2

See Pilots of IL-2

INDIA TO 1857, WOMEN WARRIORS IN

Dramatic role of women warriors in Indian history. When Alexander the Great moved on India in 326 B.C., he was challenged at the Battle of Hydaspes by King Porus. One of Porus's commanders was reputedly a woman, Masaga. Masaga was not the first woman warrior from the subcontinent celebrated in Indian tradition and legend. Two centuries earlier, Nayanika was the queen and military leader of the Satavahana Empire located in the south central portion of today's India. The practice of women serving as warriors was strong and persistent in

the south. The Nayars of Malabar consistently maintained a small force of women fighters. Sugala of Sri Lanka is remembered as "Sugala the rebel queen fearless" (Jones 1997, 42). In 1240, Raziyya, the female ruler of Delhi, was killed in battle. Queen Karnavatti of Chitor, at the end of a long defensive effort, is said to have had a great fire set. She "exhorted her maidens and the wives and daughters of the citizens to be of good cheer, for it was better to die by the hands of their brethren than to become the slaves and mistresses of their enemies" (Pool 1954, 73–74). Attired in her armor, she walked into the fire to avoid capitulation and capture. Her example was then voluntarily followed by her female officers and 13,000 females from the besieged city (Pool 1954, 73). Karnavatti thus imitated Princess Korumdevi of Aureent, who, upon the death of her beloved husband in single combat, severed her right arm bearing her marriage jewels and sent it to her father-in-law, before immolating herself on a funeral pyre.

Queen Durgautti (Durgawati) of Gurrāh (Gondwana) in Hindustan was a remarkable military figure. She successfully led 1,500 war elephants and 6,000 horsemen against Asaf Khan, a Mogul. In a 1564 rematch, Asaf Khan added artillery to his retinue. When Durgautti's son was killed, her forces wavered. Durgautti, enraged, charged forward on her war elephant. Her valor rallied her forces against the Muslims, but she was reputedly struck in the eye by an arrow. She broke off the staff and continued her attack until she was struck by another arrow. Unwilling to be taken alive by the enemy, Durgautti ordered her driver to kill her. He was unwilling to kill his commander, so she took a dagger and killed herself. In the early seventeenth century, Durgautti's valor was replicated in Queen Nur Jehan, who went into battle against Mohabat Khan. Recklessly charging the enemy on the back of her war elephant, she poured down arrows with deadly effect. The battle, however, was lost when her driver was killed and her wounded elephant bolted.



Rani of Jhansi, Lakshmi Bai, who opposed the British and was killed in battle in 1858. Watercolor from Kalighat, India. (Victoria and Albert Museum/Art Resource)

During the early eighteenth century, women of the Maratha caste fought enthusiastically against the Mogul Aurangzeb and then the British. Tarabai confounded the efforts of both Aurangzeb and a usurper who was sent by Aurangzeb's successor Azim Shag to undermine her rule. A contemporary who observed Tarabai in battle recounted, "Tara Bae did wonders that day, and was admired by all beholders, and men found it difficult to believe that the strong arm which sent them reeling from the saddle was that of a lady" (Pool 1954, 147).

Postindependence India celebrated a number of Indian women warriors who fought against the British in the nineteenth century. Kittur Rani Chennamma (1778–1829) fought the British, who had rejected her choice of an adopted son as successor in Belgaum in Karnataka. She fought but was defeated and died a prisoner in Bailhongal Fort. Lakshmi Bai, rani of Jhansi (1834–1858), after the death of her only son, also wished to have an adopted son succeed to the throne. The British, who wished to annex Jhansi to the British-controlled Raj, objected. Lakshmi Bai fought courageously but was killed in battle on June 18, 1858. Rani Avantibai fought the British when they refused to allow her to succeed her husband as the ruler of Ramgarh. In the midst of a battle on March 20, 1858, when the defeat of her forces seemed inevitable, she killed herself with her sword.

Hazrat Mahal, the Muslim regent of Oudh, was a formidable opponent of the British. For a year in 1857, the army she led prevented the British from taking the city of Lucknow. A contemporary British reporter, W. H. Russell, offered his assessment of her, which can be generalized into a broader view of Asian women who resisted the European imperialists. He wrote that Hazrat Mahal was "one of those tigress women, more virile than their husbands, who when finding themselves in a position to gratify their lust for power, have played a considerable part in Oriental history" (Salmonson 1991, 5).

—Bernard Cook

See also Lakshmi Bai and Sepoy Rebellion

References and Further Reading

- Great Women of India,
http://www.geocities.com/dakshina_kan_pa/art31/women1.htm (accessed March 24, 2004).
- Jones, David E. 1997. *Women Warriors: A History*. Washington, DC: Brassey's.
- Pool, John J. 1954. *Famous Women of India*. Calcutta: Susil-Gupta.
- Salmonson, Amanda. 1991. *Encyclopedia of Amazons*. New York: Paragon House.

INGLIS, ELSIE
(1864–1917), AND THE
SCOTTISH WOMEN'S
HOSPITALS

Pioneering doctor and suffragist, founder of the Scottish Women's Hospitals (SWH), an organization that evolved from within the suffrage movement and provided medical assistance in Europe, particularly in Serbia, during World War I. Elsie Inglis was born in India in 1863. Her family moved to Edinburgh after her father retired in 1878. She was one of the first women

in Scotland to study medicine. She moved to London and taught at the New Hospital for Women, a teaching hospital run by women for women, which had been established by another pioneer, Elizabeth Garrett Anderson, the first English woman doctor (unless one counts Dr. "James" Barry). When Inglis returned to Edinburgh, she followed Anderson's example and established a women's hospital with an all-female staff. By now a committed and dedicated suffragist and member of the National Union of Women's Suffrage Societies (NUWSS), Inglis was an important force behind the setting up of

DR. ELSIE INGLIS

"My good lady, go home and sit still."

Quote from British War Office Official to Dr. Elsie Inglis when she proposed to send a field hospital totally staffed by women to the battle front.

—Monica Krippner,
The Quality of Mercy: Women at War, Serbia 1915–18
(London: David and Charles, 1980), 30.

Ambulance Drivers of the Scottish Women's Hospitals on the Serbian Front

"Miss Bedford, who had joined at Ostrovo with Dr. Cooper from Australia, was in charge of the cars, and a hard worker she proved. Owing to her great efforts to keep the cars on the road by begging or borrowing spare parts from all and sundry, she became known among the M.T. [motor transport] as far down as Salonika way as 'Miss Spare Parts,' and I fancy she earned the cognomen all right.

". . . The road up to Gornicevo was an extraordinary track to take an ambulance car, even a Ford one, when we first made its acquaintance. And, mind you, all the ambulances were driven by the girl chauffeurs. After leaving Ostrovo village the tracks run . . . along the north edge of Lake Ostrovo, nearly two miles of deep sand furrowed by some dozen or more deep parallel ruts which went in and out of deeper holes and gullies in which the car more often than not stuck and had to be pushed out by main force. You could take your choice between the pairs of ruts, but whichever pair you picked out invariably appeared the worst. Then the climb up the mountain by the rocky track began, and though subsequently improved it remained a rocky track for most of the way, plentifully bestrewn with boulders and projecting rocky masses. In many places two cars could only just pass on the track with little to spare, and as the journey was usually made midst innumerable transport, horses, mules, carts, ammunition caissons, often with teams of eight horses, men mounted and afoot, and cars of all sorts and conditions in long convoys, the arduous nature of the journey can be dimly imagined. The cars boiled, literally boiled, going up, and for this reason alone had to be stopped several times to cool down; and the boiling usually upset the oiling, and the cars wouldn't restart. But if going up was a difficult and appallingly bumpy business, the coming down was worse. No Ford car brakes which are necessarily

a new organization, the Scottish Women's Suffrage Federation (SWSF), and she took on the role of honorary secretary.

In 1914 when war broke out in Europe, Inglis offered her services and that of her trained staff as medical units on the western front. She was told by the War Office "to go home and be still." Far from taking the advice, Inglis formed the SWH with financial assistance from a number of organizations, in particular, the NUWSS. The suffragists were determined to show the British government and society in general that women, too, had a valuable contribution to make to the

war effort. Having been denied a role with the British army, Inglis redirected her offer of help to the French and Serbian governments. Both governments accepted the offer, and three months later the SWH dispatched an all-female medical unit to Royaumont Abbey, 35 kilometers north of Paris, the first such unit ever to be sent to a war zone. The abbey, owned by Jules Edouard Gouin, was temporarily given over to the SWH, which established a 200-bed auxiliary hospital. It was in Serbia, however, that the SWH had its greatest impact and where it developed its strongest loyalties.

light would hold on these mountainous tracks. The cars bumped down, now heeling over on one side, now on the other, as wheels jolted over great masses of rock or boulders it was impossible to avoid, and on the steep slopes on many a journey the reverse was the only method of preventing the car taking charge when the brakes became functionless—and this with two badly wounded men on the stretchers behind. . . .

"I should never have thought it possible that cars could negotiate such tracks. . . . We got into the habit of carrying a few heavy rocks on the foot-board. As soon as the car stopped the passenger had to hop out, seize the biggest piece of rock, and get it under the wheel of the slowly slipping car. . . . This, be it remembered, with a steep slope or precipice to go over if the driver failed to keep an open eye backwards, or the passenger was not smart enough with his props. . . . That we did not have serious accidents is due as much as anything to the skillful driving and extraordinary coolness of the girl drivers.

". . . An ambulance going up to the dressing station got off its wheels on a large rock mass and fell over on its side. Riddell, of the R.A.M.C., who was with the driver, Miss Green, was shot out and rolled down the slope, being pulled up by a rock. He picked himself up, gave himself a shake, and finding he was not dead, climbed up to see what had happened to car and girl. The car lay on its side, the wheels still revolving, and the girl still clinging to her wheel, also lying on her side. The engine was stopped, the driver hauled out and stood on her feet, and the first thing those two did was to swear at each other because, though each had a camera, neither had thought of taking a photograph before she had been hauled out!

". . . On the way back the driver came across an ambulance which had broken down. After spending some time in futile efforts to start it she offered to take over the wounded—luckily there were only two—but she already had three. Night had fallen long before she restarted, and she was alone. Her drive down that mountain track was very nervy work. But she stuck to it and eventually got back to the camp at 11 P.M. She had brought down seven wounded men that day (the ambulances only hold two lying-down cases or three sitting), and brought them down the Drina. It was a marvelous plucky feat. Her name is Miss Wardel."

—E. P. Stebbing, *At the Serbian Front in Macedonia*
(London: John Lane, The Bodley Head, 1917),
Pages 151, 158–159, 160, 162–163, 165.

The role of the independent SWH in Serbia during the war was curious and unique. SWH medical units effectively attached themselves to the Serbian army; some medical personnel remained with the army for most of the war and during many of the major campaigns, including the retreat through Albania and the return to the Salonica front in 1916. The first SWH medical units arrived in Serbia at the end of December 1914 and set up a surgical hospital in the historic city of Kragujevatz. The most immediate and pressing concerns for the SWH were not injuries from the battlefields but a typhus epidemic that swept through Serbia and killed tens of thousands. The exact number of deaths is unknown, but Inglis claimed that “of the 425 doctors in Serbia, 125 died of the disease, and two-thirds of the remainder had it” (Inglis 2000, 264). The SWH organizing committee quickly dispatched urgently needed medical supplies and personnel. It took three months to bring the typhus under control, and in that time 12 members of the SWH became ill and 3 died from the highly infectious disease. In addition to Kragujevatz, 2 other medical hospitals were established by the SWH at Valjevo and Mladenovatz.

By the spring of 1915, Inglis herself was in Serbia. The three SWH establishments were functioning well, and further help had been extended by the SWH, which was now providing medical units to staff Serbian hospitals as well as staffing frontline dressing stations and field hospitals. In anticipation of an expected renewed campaign by the enemy Inglis ensured that all of the units were capable of performing surgical work. From October 1915, what followed was a complex story of advances by the Germans, Austrians, and Bulgarians, desperate retreats by the Serbians, notably through Albania, and the steadfast support of the SWH medical units throughout. Members of the SWH joined with the Serbian army and the vast numbers of ordinary Serbs fleeing in the face of enemy occupation through the frozen mountains of Albania, the SWH providing as much

medical support along the way as they could. Two medical units headed by Dr. Holloway and Inglis were in the Serbian hospital in Kragujevatz when the Germans arrived and took over the town. They established a camp for Serbian prisoners of war near the hospital, and those who were wounded were hospitalized by the SWH. As the injured Serbians recovered, the services of the SWH doctors and nurses were no longer required, so the German arrested them and took them to enemy-controlled Belgrade. Eventually through the offices of the U.S. ambassador, all the medical staff were released and sent back to Britain.

In 1917, Inglis and seventy-five other seasoned veterans once more returned to provide medical support to the Serbian army, this time on the eastern front. The Russian Revolution in 1917 caused the withdrawal of the Russian army from the war and left the remnants of the Serbian army exposed and almost friendless. Through the efforts of Inglis, the British government was persuaded to evacuate the Serbian soldiers to England. Inglis had become seriously ill but would not leave for home ahead of the Serbian troops. When they were evacuated from Archangel on board British naval ships, she joined them on the journey. Sadly, notwithstanding the attentions of doctors, she died one day after arriving back in Newcastle-upon-Tyne in November 1917.

Despite losing their inspirational leader, the women of the SWH continued their dedicated work until the end of the war. During the hostilities, fourteen SWH medical units had operated in seven countries, but it was the Serbian people with whom a special bond was formed. After the war, members of the SWH helped in the recovery of the country through personal service and fund-raising efforts. In memory of Inglis's life and work, the Elsie Inglis Memorial Maternity Hospital was opened in 1925 in Edinburgh using the surplus funds from the SWH. It remained part of the Scottish health system until it closed in 1988.

—Susan R. Allan

See also Haverfield, Evelina; Hodges, Katherine; Hutton, Lady Isabel Galloway; King, Olive; Sandes, Flora; Stobart, Mabel

References and Further Reading

- Inglis, Elsie. 2000. "The Tragedy of Serbia." In *Women's Writing of the First World War: An Anthology*, edited by Angela K. Smith, 262–270. Manchester, England: Manchester University Press.
- Leneman, Leah. 1994. *In the Service of Life: The Story of Elsie Inglis and the Scottish Women's Hospitals*. Edinburgh: Mercat.
- McLaren, Eva Shaw, ed. 1919. *History of the Scottish Women's Hospitals*. London: Hodder and Stoughton.
- Ross, Ishobel, 1988. *Little Grey Partridge: First World War Diary of Ishobel Ross Who Served with the Scottish Women's Hospital's Unit in Serbia*. Aberdeen, Scotland: University Press.

INTERNATIONAL CONGRESS OF WOMEN: ANTIWAR PROTEST OF WOMEN IN WORLD WAR I

Effort of women opponents of war to mobilize opposition to war during World War I. The year 1915 was not a terribly propitious moment to organize an international women's peace movement. For nearly nine months, Europeans had been locked in a murderous war that had already left hundreds of thousands of men dead on the battlefields. On both sides of enemy lines, governments demanded that their citizens rally behind the fatherland. Women, who in most of Europe and North America had little say in political matters, were expected to contribute morally and economically to the war effort. In belligerent countries, freedom of speech was or soon would be seriously curtailed. The fight for women's rights was put on the back burner.

None of these hurdles prevented Dr. Aletta Jacobs, a prominent Dutch suffragist, from appealing to feminists from across Europe and North America to gather together at The Hague to protest the war raging around them. Her invitation was not always well received. Neither the Russian nor the French suffrage societies elected to send any delegates. The French were particularly strident in their refusal, asking, "How would it be possible for us, given the current conditions, to meet with the women of enemy countries? . . . Have they disavowed the political crimes of their governments?" (Report of the International Congress of Women, 28 April–1 May, 1915, The Hague, WILPF, WHC). Women from other countries struggled to obtain the visas necessary to travel. For three days, the British government prevented the U.S. delegation from crossing the English Channel, nearly causing them to miss the meeting altogether. Despite these hurdles, on April 28, 1915, an International Congress of Women convened; 1,136 delegates from 12 nations, neutral and belligerent, were in attendance (Bussey and Tims 1980, 19).

The participants ensured that both women's rights and international peace would remain the core objectives of the congress. Indeed, the delegates saw the two as inextricably intertwined, as they explained, "The International Congress of Women is convinced that one of the strongest forces for the prevention of war will be the combined influence of women of all countries. But as women can only make their influence effective if they have equal political rights with men, this Congress declares that it is the duty of women of all countries to work with all their force for their political enfranchisement" (cited in Alonso 1993, 68). To promote these ends, the congress founded a new organization, the International Committee of Women for Permanent Peace (ICWPP), and it elected the prominent U.S. social activist Jane Addams as its first international president. The congress also agreed to send envoys to meet with the leaders of the major European governments to pressure them

into publicizing their terms for peace. Finally, the delegates insisted that women should have a voice when it came to drawing up an eventual peace treaty, and they agreed to reconvene wherever and whenever such a settlement was to be drafted.

For the remaining years of World War I, members of the ICWPP struggled to carry out their pacifist and feminist agenda in a persistently hostile environment. The organization's envoys did gain an audience with many of the major belligerent and neutral powers. President Woodrow Wilson of the United States was reported to have been particularly impressed by the resolutions brought to him by Jane Addams (Bussey and Tims 1980, 21). In the meantime, members returned to their respective nations and attempted to build support for a negotiated settlement to the war. In the United States, the Women's Peace Party, founded in 1915, took up the charge, although the U.S. entry into the war led to divisions in the organization, particularly over the appropriateness of women's war relief work. English members concentrated their efforts on pacifist education in cooperation with other liberal pacifist organizations in their country. In Germany ICWPP members marked the second anniversary of the 1915 congress by sending the Kaiser a declaration of war aims and a call for peace without annexation.

French suffrage societies had declined to send any delegates to The Hague in 1915, but almost as soon as the congress ended, several prominent feminists, including the labor activist Gabrielle Duchêne, broke with the mainstream and founded a French section of the ICWPP. Before the end of the year, the group published a pamphlet titled *An Urgent Duty for Women* asking their female compatriots, "Does our responsibility end with charitable activity and hero worship? . . . Can we truly answer that we are not interested in the future and that the war will end of its own accord?" (*Un Devoir urgent pour les femmes*). The brochure went on to demand that members of the French legislature make known their terms for

peace. The police responded by confiscating the French section's papers and threatening those members who did not keep silent with imprisonment.

When World War I ended in November 1918, the leadership of the ICWPP began to prepare for a second international meeting. The decision of the Allied powers to base the peace conference in Paris posed a dilemma. For the ICWPP to follow through with its original plan to meet concurrently with the peace talks would mean that Central European members would not be able to attend. The organization therefore located the conference in neutral Switzerland. Delegates from sixteen nations gathered in Zurich from May 12 to 19, 1919. Great Britain, Germany, and the United States were represented in the largest numbers. Although the French government refused to issue visas to ICWPP members, two French women managed to cross the border. A third French delegate, Jeanne Mélin from the war-torn region of the Ardennes, secured a visa just in time to arrive for the last day of the congress. By coincidence, she walked into the hall just as one of the German delegates, Lida Gustav Heymann, was addressing the gathering. The delegates greeted the unexpected arrival of the French woman with a resounding ovation, and Heymann spontaneously grabbed a bouquet of flowers from the stage to offer to her French counterpart. Mélin took the podium and responded, "I, a French woman of an invaded country affirm that we women never wanted a war that was possible only because we were denied our political rights and continued only because we did not have the power to stop it. I offer my hand to my German sisters; together we will work, henceforth, not against man, but for him" (*Compte rendue de la Conférence Internationale des Femmes, WILPF, WHC*). Deeply moved, the entire delegation of women rose in response, pledging to work tirelessly against war.

Before adjourning the delegates at the Zurich congress passed a series of resolutions opposing

the ongoing blockade of Germany, protesting against the injustices of the Versailles Treaty, offering their qualified support to a new League of Nations, and laying the foundations for a permanent women's international peace organization, henceforth to be known by the name Women's International League for Peace and Freedom (WILPF). The WILPF, which continues to exist today, became the most enduring legacy of women's peace activism during World War I.

—Mona L. Siegel

See also Addams, Jane; Balch, Emily Green; International Manifesto of Women

References and Further Reading

- Alonso, Harriet Hyman. 1993. *Peace as a Women's Issue: A History of the U.S. Movement for World Peace and Women's Rights*. Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University.
- Bussey, Gertrude, and Margaret Tims. 1980. *Pioneers for Peace: Women's International League for Peace and Freedom, 1915–1965*. Geneva: WILPF, 1980.
- Section française du Comité International des Femmes pour la Paix Permanente. 1985. *Un Devoir urgent pour les femmes*. Reprinted in *Le Mouvement ouvrier français contre la guerre*. Vol. 2, *L'Opposition des femmes, 1914–1918*. Paris: Edition Edhis, 1985.
- Women's International League for Peace and Freedom Papers, Western Historical Collections, Norlin Library, University of Colorado, Boulder (cited as WILPF, WHC).

INTERNATIONAL MANIFESTO OF WOMEN (1915)

Proposal for peace issued by the International Congress of Women (ICW) at The Hague, Netherlands, in April 1915. Representing the views of 1,200 women from 12 countries, the

International Manifesto of Women called on the governments of Europe and the president of the United States, Woodrow Wilson, to negotiate a democratic and nonviolent end to World War I. The manifesto, created by Aletta Jacobs (Netherlands), Chrystal Macmillan (Great Britain), Rosika Schwimmer (Austria-Hungary), Emily G. Balch (United States), and Jane Addams (United States), proposed a permanent peace settlement based on principles of justice, democracy, and international cooperation; offered guidelines for diplomatic negotiations among hostile nations; and endorsed political equality for women in all nations.

The ICW convened to protest the horror and destruction caused by warfare, especially for women. The manifesto first commiserated with those who suffered under the burden of war and then identified common ideals of justice and autonomy on which a peace settlement could rest. According to the manifesto, a conference of neutral nations was needed to mediate between belligerent nations to facilitate a peaceful end to international hostilities.

The manifesto further delineated five principles of permanent peace, resolving that (1) nationality and the people's right to self-government must be respected; (2) governments must agree to bring disputes among nations to international arbitration and conciliation; (3) governments of all nations must agree to bring great social, economic, and moral pressure against any country that ignores international arbitration and conciliation and resorts to war; (4) foreign politics must be placed under democratic control, on the premise that war does not come from the masses but rather from small groups pursuing specific interests; and (5) women in all countries must have political equality (through both suffrage and active participation in government), on the premise that women do not seek war.

For countries to achieve the goal of international cooperation, the manifesto recommended that a Society of Nations create a permanent International Court of Justice to interpret treaty

rights and the law of nations. A permanent International Conference would be convened regularly to enforce principles of equity, justice, and good will and to offer practical suggestions to maintain cooperation among nations. A permanent Council of Conciliation and Investigation would settle international issues resulting from expanding commercial and economic interests. The ICW further advocated the general disarmament of nations, open trade among nations, the abolition of all secret treaties, and the education of all children worldwide. Finally, the manifesto demanded that women be included at the peace conference and in all subsequent diplomatic conferences to avert the threat of war.

The ICW sent two delegations to visit leaders of neutral and belligerent nations, including England, Germany, Austria-Hungary, Italy, France, Sweden, Denmark, Russia, the Netherlands, and Switzerland. Jane Addams, the first president of the International Committee of Women for Permanent Peace and future Noble Peace Prize laureate, visited President Wilson six times in 1915 to persuade him to mediate peace, a futile effort given that the United States entered the war in 1917. Nevertheless, the manifesto's guidelines for peace and diplomacy may have helped shape Wilson's Fourteen Points (including the construction of the League of Nations) and the terms of the postwar peace settlement.

—*Susanna Calkins*

See also Addams Jane; Balch, Emily Green; International Congress of Women: Antiwar Protest of Women in World War I

References and Further Reading

- Addams, Jane, Emily G. Balch, and Alice Hamilton. 2003. *Women at the Hague: The International Peace Congress of 1915*. Amherst, MA: Humanity Books.
- Alonso, Harriet Hyman. 1995. "Nobel Peace Laureates, Jane Addams and Emily Greene Balch: Two Women of the Women's International League for Peace and Freedom." In *Journal of Women's History* 7: 6–26.

IRAN-IRAQ WAR AND GULF WAR, IMPACT ON WOMEN OF IRAQ

Impact of two twentieth-century conflicts on Iraqi women. From 1979 to 2003 Saddam Hussein influenced the lives of Iraqi women through his actions, dictates, and policies. The Iran-Iraq War (1980–1988) compelled women to leave their kitchens to take jobs in the public arena left vacant by the hundreds of thousands of Iraqi men who went off to war. During the Gulf War (1990–1991), Iraqi women supported their country by taking part in political, social, and military actions. Iraq's women were particularly affected by the sanctions imposed on their country by the United Nations following the Gulf War. Throughout all of this, Hussein tried to establish his own popular cult by targeting Iraq's women for support.

The Hussein regime afforded rights and opportunities to Iraqi women seldom seen in the Middle East, such as the right to vote and gender equality in the workplace. The Iraqi government launched an aggressive literacy campaign targeting rural women. Furthermore, all education (through college) was paid for by the state, and thus university degrees became the rule not the exception for Iraq's women. The government encouraged women who needed or sought specialized training or degrees not offered in Iraq to seek and obtain scholarships and grants to attend school abroad. Unlike women in Saudi Arabia and other Gulf states who were segregated from men throughout their academic careers, Iraqi men and women learned side by side from elementary school through their university training. With education came employment. With more and more Iraqi women during the Hussein regime gaining college degrees and obtaining employment, Iraqi women started to postpone marriages until their middle to late twenties. Furthermore, family sizes tended to be much smaller among educated Iraqi women. Finally, the *abaiya*, or veil, became almost extinct among Iraq's women (Ward 1990, A13).

Hussein successfully created a personality cult in the hearts and minds of many Iraqi women, such as Sagidah al-Mousawi, who referred to the Iraqi leader not as a mere leader but rather as a member of the family: “He is a friend and a model, a dear house, a son. Saddam is a heart, a lighted candle, a memory, a tear, a land and people, pure water and roses. Saddam is all of Iraq” (Sachs 1990b, A1).

At a solidarity meeting in Baghdad sponsored by the Iraqi Women’s Federation in October 1990, the Iraqi poet Sagidah al-Mousawi proclaimed, “Saddam is an era that overshadows all other eras. Saddam is like a river that flows with goodness between fire and light. Saddam is our key to paradise” (Sachs 1990a). Her poetry emphasizes the decades-long secularization and modernization campaigns of the Baath government in general and Saddam Hussein in particular in which gender barriers to education, employment, and salary discrimination came to an end and Iraqi women enjoyed benefits such as state-supported maternity and child health care.

Hussein routinely praised women in his speeches, rarely even using the word *women* without some qualifier such as beloved, honored, noble, or martyr. A physical example of Hussein’s enshrinement of women was the Martyrs Museum. One of the exhibits was called “The Martyr Bride of Mendela,” a woman who allegedly died (along with her husband) on her wedding night when her house was blown up by an Iranian missile attack in the 1980s. Her wedding dress and shoes were part of the display along with other personal possessions. A statue of the woman had her rising presumably to heaven with arms outstretched (Sachs 1990b, A1).

Before Hussein took power in 1979, the Iraqi government had a history of spending its petrodollars on social programs and on the infrastructure of Iraq’s major cities, such as Baghdad. Even though there were intermittent material shortages during the eight years of warfare between Iran and Iraq, most Iraqis seemed to be happy. According to Manal Yunis, head of the General Union of Iraqi Women (GUIW), “The

kind of experience we have had here, with services and a higher standard of living, isn’t like the shah’s modernization. We haven’t built up our industrial base while neglecting our human resources” (Ibrahim 1984).

The wars propelled many Iraqi women into the public sector workforce. According to Yunis, approximately 70 percent of women living in Baghdad were working in industries such as banking, airlines, and even the government (Ibrahim 1984). The GUIW, which was also known as the General Federation of Iraqi Women, was established by the Baath Party shortly after it took over Iraq in the late 1960s and had been controlled by the government ever since. Publicly the GUIW supported the war because it saw it as an opportunity for Iraq’s women to gain economic equality. By 1985, women made up approximately 30 percent of Iraq’s workforce in the public sector. Before the Hussein government outlawed sex discrimination in education and employment, women comprised only 7 percent of the public workforce (*Seattle Times* 1985). According to Suhaila Khazal, a 28-year-old bottling factory worker in Basra, she not only enjoyed the opportunity to work outside of the home during the 8-year war, but she had no plans to give up her job once the war was over. For her and many other Iraqi women, the Iran-Iraq War provided them with the opportunity to become equal members of Iraqi society not only by working in the public sector but also by showing Iraq’s men that women were as patriotic and capable as men: “There are no differences between men and women in this factory,” Khazal said, adding that her coworkers did not “treat me any differently just because I’m a woman” (*Seattle Times* 1985).

War was not always portrayed as a blessing for women, however. In 1985 at the United Nations Decade for Women conference in Nairobi, Kenya, Iraqi women called on their Iranian counterparts to help bring an end to the war, arguing that war was a gender-specific agent. The GUIW leader, Manal Yunis, said that “the woman is the first loser in war. . . . The woman is the first beneficiary of security and stability”

(“Different Roles Seen” 1985, 10). According to her neighbors in the urban, upscale Baghdad neighborhood of Yarmouk, Yunis possibly fled the country seventy-two hours before the U.S. forces entered Baghdad in 2003, possibly because of her ties to the Baath Party (Shahin 2003, 18).

Some Iraqi women, such as Suhayla Salman, Aliya Talib, and Lutifiya al-Dulaymi, did manage to protest the war through state-sponsored publications. For example, Salman rejected the genderization of the war in which Hussein asked Iraqi women to produce at least five children each, calling those who did Patriotic Mothers. Talib’s articles satirized Iraqi notions of the aggressive male and passive female by alluding that these outdated belief systems both allowed the war to begin and prevented a peaceful end. In her 1988 novel *Seeds of Fire*, the pro-Baathist al-Dulaymi suggested that at the heart of Iraqi experience beats a totalitarian society in which women are second-class citizens (Cooke 1995, 159–160). Nevertheless, women who lost a son in the war were honored with the title Martyr Mothers and were routinely given gifts and praise from government officials. The Iraqi government institutionalized the ultimate sacrifices of women by giving the wife or mother of every soldier killed in the Iran-Iraq war a house, a car, and a pension for the rest of her life (Sachs 1990b, A1).

Iraqi women performed many roles during the Gulf War. They were also severely affected by the popular uprising that came on the heels of the United States–led victory in 1991. Women, just like men, were mobilized before the Iraqi invasion of Kuwait in the summer of 1990. Technically, all positions in the Iraqi military were open to women, including combat roles; however, there is no evidence to suggest that Iraqi women took part in the actual invasion force. Hussein called them the *mujahedat*, or female holy warriors. In a national radio address shortly after Iraq invaded Kuwait, Hussein, who referred to Iraqi women as “glorious,” called on women to do their part to support the war effort by conserving food and energy. Shortly there-

after, some Iraqi women began protesting in front of the U.S. embassy in Baghdad, carrying signs that read “We are with you, Saddam, until the very last drop of blood!” (Chong 1990, 28A).

Iraqi men were drafted into the army while women were volunteers. None of the volunteers were trained in combat arms; however, some of the volunteers created their own home guard units. Nevertheless, many Iraqi women saw it as their patriotic duty to send their sons into the conflict—even women who had lost sons in the Iran-Iraq War, such as Najiba Elias Toma. Toma’s youngest son died during the early stages of the Iran-Iraq War, and even though her eldest son completed his military service one year before the Iraqi invasion of Kuwait, she supported his return to active duty. “He’s defending his country,” she said (Sachs 1990b, A1).

Four months after the Iraqi invasion, some Iraqi women began seeking a peaceful end to the conflict. On December 27, they carried signs denouncing the United Nations sanctions in general and U.S. President George H.W. Bush’s decision in particular to prohibit a small flotilla of humanitarian aid from reaching Iraq. The ship, the *Ibn Khaldun*, departed Algiers carrying sugar, rice, milk, and medical supplies as well as 250 female peace activists from all over the world. The delivery was organized by the Arab Women’s Union. The protests in front of the U.S. embassy were an almost daily occurrence for weeks. Thousands upon thousands of Iraqi women marched, carrying signs that read “Yes for Peace, No for War” and “Saddam’s Iraq Will Burn Bush and His Filthy Gang” (Reuters 1990).

Iraqi women in exile were divided with regard to the Gulf War. “I will never defend Hussein as long as I live,” reported one Iraqi exile living in London during the war. Many Iraqi women living in Great Britain told stories of the regime’s brutality against Christians, Shiites, Kurds, and anyone who spoke out against the regime. Many others questioned the reaction of the United States to the Iraqi invasion of Kuwait. A woman named Parwin, a Kurdish Iraqi from Suleymania, asked why the world did nothing to stop the

Israeli treatment of Palestinians while it is willing to come to Kuwait's rescue? She also believed that both the Israeli and Iraqi governments should be tried for crimes against humanity for their equally brutal and inhumane treatment of people. Other Iraqi women living in exile were concerned that the United States-led attacks were destroying Iraq's history through the bombing of sites such as the Defense Ministry and the National Museum (Hazelton 1991, 32).

Shortly after the end of hostilities, President Bush openly called for the people of Iraq to rise up and rid their country of Saddam Hussein and his regime. Many did. In southern Iraq, anti-Baathists launched a rebellion, but there was no support from the United States or any member of the coalition that pushed the Iraqi army out of Kuwait. In late March 1991, the Iraqi government initiated a counteroffensive. The Iraqi army massacred a large number of women and children in and around the southern Iraqi city of Suk as-Shuyukh. An unknown number of women became the heads of their households when the army began rounding up and killing all males over the age of fifteen.

The United Nations-imposed sanctions against Iraq (such as prohibitions on the importation of food, medicine, and technology) between 1990 and 2003 had particularly negative effects upon Iraq's women. More Iraqi women than ever before had become de facto heads of households when their husbands or fathers left in search of work overseas. Consequently, the divorce rate increased. Prior to 1990, rural women were making great strides in education and were entering the workforce. The Iran-Iraq War in particular was the springboard for rural women to leave behind the economic realities of the countryside. Because inflation outstripped the government's capacity to pay its civil servants, however, women began leaving their state jobs and returning to the family farms. In 1999, the female civil servants' monthly salary was approximately one-tenth of the price of a new pair of dress shoes (Halliday 1999, 34). For many Iraqi women who had already sold their possessions—

homes, land, furniture, clothes, and books—the only source of income, the only way to put food on the table, was through prostitution.

Professional women were also pushed out of their positions to make room for men. Many were able to obtain work in sweatshops. Younger women all but gave up the dream of getting married. Instead, they had to work to help support their nuclear families. As a result of the sanctions, the Iraqi government ended its decades-long subsidies for education, health care, and the support of children, thus placing additional responsibility on Iraq's women. Mothers became their children's teachers as schoolteachers quit their jobs, and illiteracy increased.

Even though the sanctions devastated the country and Hussein's regime became more brutal and repressive as the 1990s wore on, many women nonetheless feared that the end of the Hussein era would mark the end of their equality in Iraqi society. Many secular Iraqi women who enjoyed decades of gender equality in education and employment feared losing those rights if the Shiite majority were to establish a government in Iraq modeled after the theocracy of Iran.

—Jim Ross-Nazzal

See also Islamic Resistance Movements, Women and

References and Further Reading

- Chong, Linda. 1990. "Women Bear Burden of Iraqi Mobilization." *Dallas Morning News* (August 18): 28A.
- Cooke, Miriam. 1995. "Arab Women Arab Wars." In *Reconstructing Gender in the Middle East: Tradition, Identity, and Power*, edited by Fatma Gocek and Shiva Balaghi, 144–166. New York: Columbia University Press.
- "Different Roles Seen for Women in War at UN Conference." 1985. *Globe and Mail* (July 24): 10.
- Halliday, Denis. 1999. "The Impact of the UN Sanctions on the People of Iraq." *Journal of Palestine Studies* 28, no. 2 (winter): 29–37.

- Hazelton, Fran. 1991. "Gulf War Brings Glimmer of Hope for Exiled Iraqi Women Living in Britain." *The Guardian* (February 12): 32.
- Ibrahim, Youssef M. 1984. "The Mideast War: Iraqis Scoff at Notion They Are on the Ropes in Conflict with Iran." *Wall Street Journal* (May 2): 1.
- Reuters. 1990. "Iraqi Women, Children Protest at Boarding of 'Peace Boat.'" (December 27).
- Sachs, Susan. 1990a. "In Iraq, Women in Step with Men." *Newsday* (October 30): 13.
- . 1990b. "Iraqi Women Sing Praises of Saddam, the Man Who Gave Them Freedom." *Newsday* (October 30): A1.
- Seattle Times*. 1985. "War Takes Iraq Women from Home to Factory." (April 14): A8.
- Shahin, Mariam. 2003. "Snapshots from Iraq." *Middle East Journal* (June): 18.
- Ward, Olivia. 1990. "Saddam's Iraq Gave Women Better Lot." *Toronto Star* (August 20), A13.

IRELAND, EASTER RISING OF
1916

An armed uprising against British rule over Ireland, organized by the nationalist Irish Volunteers and the trade-union-based Irish Citizen Army (ICA). These amalgamated to fight jointly as the Irish Republican Army. Occurring at the height of World War I, the Easter Rising was intended to take advantage of British preoccupation with trench warfare in Europe and was aimed at ensuring the right of Ireland to be included as one of the so-called small nations whose independence would be decided in the peace negotiations at the end of war.

The insurgents held out for 6 days, surrendering to prevent further loss of life. An estimated 426 people were killed, of whom 230 were civilians, and 3,000 were injured. Although women participated, they did so in smaller numbers than the men. Almost 200 are reckoned to have contributed in some way to the rising, but numbers are difficult to calculate because many left their outposts before the final surrender.

Seventy-seven women are listed as subsequently imprisoned by the British.

Prior to the rising, as a result of a countermanding order that attempted to cancel plans for rebellion, women played a vital role in traveling around the countryside, carrying new orders that resulted in a smaller group of insurgents marching out one day later than originally planned in some country areas as well as Dublin. Testimony from such couriers as Nora and Ina Connolly, daughters of James Connolly, commander of the ICA, provides evidence of women's commitment to armed rebellion and to the difficult circumstances in which they were forced to operate.

Women from Cumann na mBan (Council of Women), the women's section of the Irish Volunteers, and women members of the Irish Citizen Army were part of the personnel in the outposts of commandeered buildings that ringed the city of Dublin, acting as cooks, nurses, and messengers between outposts. Cumann na mBan women were not given the mobilization orders issued to the volunteers, and women had to negotiate individual entry to the outposts. They were refused entry to Boland's Mill, commanded by Eamon de Valera, future president of Ireland. In contrast, the Citizen Army women had equality of treatment within their organization and marched to their allotted positions with their male comrades. The ICA contingent that unsuccessfully attempted to take over Dublin Castle included ten men and nine women. Countess Constance Markievicz was a lieutenant with the ICA, and Dr. Kathleen Lynn was its medical officer.

The Proclamation of the Republic, read out by Patrick Pearse at the start of the rising, guaranteed equal citizenship for women and men, thereby enabling female insurgents to argue for equal rights in combat. Citizen Army member Margaret Skinnider, a schoolteacher from Glasgow, sustained serious injuries as a consequence of her participation in an attack on a sniper position. One woman, Margaretta Keogh of Cumann na mBan, was shot dead while helping

the wounded at the South Dublin Union outpost. Cumann na mBan member Elizabeth O'Farrell delivered the final message of surrender, risking death by gunfire when first leaving the General Post Office (GPO) headquarters to carry a white handkerchief to the nearby British barricades. Winifred Carney, Connolly's secretary in the GPO, refused to leave the building when the other women left before the final surrender. In Jacob's Biscuit Factory on Bishop Street, one of the six positions seized by the rebels, Maire nic Shiubhlaigh provided evidence that the women left because their commander, Thomas McDonagh, felt it would upset the men to see women arrested.

Women unconnected to nationalist organizations also contributed to the rising. The suffragist leader Hanna Sheehy Skeffington (whose uncle, Father Sheehy, acted as confessor to the GPO insurgents) carried messages for the leadership on the second day. She had been informed that she would be a member of a civil government, which the leadership intended would come into existence if the rising managed to sustain itself. Members of the Irish Women's Franchise League carried in food supplies to the outpost occupied by Markievicz. After Frank Sheehy Skeffington was arrested and executed by British troops while attempting to organize a citizen's militia to stop the wide-scale looting he feared would discredit the ideals of the rising, his widow spent months in a crusade to force the British prime minister to hold an inquiry into the circumstances of her husband's death. She then joined other bereaved women in touring the United States in an effort to gain support for the Irish cause.

After surrender, only five women were detained for lengthy periods. All were Citizen Army members. Markievicz had her death sentence commuted to life imprisonment because of her sex. She was released in June 1917, one of the last prisoners to win release. Dr. Lynn was deported to England, where she worked as a doctor until granted permission to return to Ireland in August.

Initially, the rising was deeply unpopular among the Irish people, few of whom understood the motivations of the insurgents. Some 85,000 Irish men had enlisted in the British army, and the "separation women," who with the post office closed found themselves deprived of the allowances paid to them as wives of men fighting in World War I, hurled abuse at the defeated rebels being marched to prison. The execution of 16 leaders and the work of the bereaved female relatives in holding memorial masses and supporting the released prisoners did much to change public opinion. Grace Gifford married her fiancé, Joseph Plunkett, minutes before his execution in Kilmainham Jail. Kathleen Clarke, whose husband Tom was first signatory to the proclamation, had charge of the remaining funds of the conspirators. She immediately disbursed relief to those who had lost their family breadwinner and helped to reestablish a political network. A newly resurgent nationalist Ireland ensured that British attempts to impose conscription were resisted. Women were at the forefront of opposition. They formed a new group, the League of Women Delegates, to ensure that they would be effectively represented in the future reorganization of nationalist forces. When the Sinn Féin (the Irish Republican independence party; the term means "we ourselves") Convention was staged in October 1917, the league succeeded in having four women elected to its executive, all of whom had some connection with the rising.

—Margaret Ward

See also Markievicz, Countess Constance

References and Further Reading

- McCooile, Sinead. 2003. *No Ordinary Women, Irish Female Activists in the Revolutionary Years 1900–1923*. Dublin: O'Brien.
- Taillon, Ruth. 1996. *When History Was Made, the Women of 1916*. Belfast: Beyond the Pale.
- Ward, Margaret. [1983] 1995. *Unmanageable Revolutionaries: Women and Irish Nationalism*. London: Pluto.

IRELAND, WAR OF
INDEPENDENCE

A guerrilla war between the Irish Republican Army and the British forces in Ireland that resulted in the independence of the south of Ireland. The War of Independence began on January 21, 1919, and continued until a truce was declared on July 11, 1921. Two events on January 21 encapsulated the dual nature of the war: the secessionist Irish parliament, Dáil Eireann, had its inaugural meeting in Dublin, and two members of the Royal Irish Constabulary were shot by Irish Volunteers in an ambush at Soloheadbeg, County Tipperary. As physical resistance to British rule increased, politicians were forced into hiding and large parts of the country were declared by the British government to be under martial law, allowing for arbitrary arrest and imprisonment.

The strategy of the Irish party Sinn Fein (the party for an independent Irish republic; the term means “we ourselves”) was to supplant British authority in Ireland through the creation of its own Irish institutions. In December 1918, following the ending of World War I, the British government had called elections in Britain and Ireland. It was the first occasion when women could vote and stand for office, and the imprisoned Constance Markievicz became the first woman to be elected to Westminster. Nationalists had been arrested for alleged involvement in a German plot, and Markievicz was imprisoned in England, together with Maud Gonne MacBride and Kathleen Clarke, both of whom had husbands executed by the British because of their involvement in the Easter Rising. The elected Sinn Fein members boycotted the British Parliament in favor of a new Irish assembly. Markievicz became minister for labor. Dáil Eireann courts were created, and many women served as judges in this underground network. Cumann na mBan, the women’s auxiliary organization of the Irish Republican Army, developed in strength, with 600 branches located throughout Ireland. They provided essential support for both Dáil Eireann and the guerrilla fighters of

the Irish Republican Army, who operated in locally based flying columns. Cumann na mBan squads provided safe houses, carried food and clothing to men hiding in hillsides, transported weaponry, scouted for targets, undertook intelligence work, and formed guards of honor at funeral processions.

In late 1919, all nationalist organizations were declared illegal, meetings were forbidden, and the dangers of opposing British rule intensified. In March 1920, the British brought in reinforcements, known as Black and Tans because of the motley nature of their uniforms. They began a reign of terror, burning down houses and workplaces and assassinating leading political figures, sometimes in front of their wives. That year, British forces killed 203 people, including 6 women and 12 children, outside of the casualties of combat, and almost 50,000 homes were raided. The U.S. Commission into Conditions in Ireland heard evidence from witnesses in 1920 and 1921. Their conclusion was that the “sanctity of the family home was violated” by the activities of the British forces (Ward 1983, 143). In December 1920, the U.S. Committee for Relief in Ireland organized fund-raising, and the White Cross organization was formed in Ireland to help the 100,000 people who had been left destitute. Nationalist women formed the backbone of the organization, which was headed by Aine Ceannt, another widow of one of the leaders of the 1916 rising.

Women were elected to local government positions in 1920, and in elections to the Second Dáil in 1921, six women were returned: Markievicz; Kate O’Callaghan, whose murdered husband had been a mayor of Limerick; Mary MacSwiney, sister of Terence, the Lord Mayor of Cork who died after a lengthy hunger strike; Kathleen Clarke; Margaret Pearse, mother of Patrick Pearse; and Dr. Ada English.

Intelligence was a vital part of the war effort. Michael Collins, who combined roles of adjutant general of the volunteers, director of intelligence, and minister of finance, used women as couriers and as spies within the British administration in Dublin Castle. Women were also in-



Sinn Féin Standing Committee, March 1922. Left to right, front row: Mrs. Ceanant, Mr. E. Duggan, Dr. Kathleen Lynn, Arthur Griffiths, Eamon De Valera, Michael Collins, Harry Boland, Mrs. Sheehy Skeffington. Middle row: Mrs. Wyse Power, George Lyons, Farrell Figgis, Mr. Murnaghan, Mr. A. Stack, and Dr. Dillon. Top row: Sean Milroy, Walter Cole, Sean MacCaoilte, P. O'Hanrahan, P. O'Keefe. (Bettmann/Corbis)

valuable in the production of the underground Sinn Féin paper, the *Irish Bulletin*, which defied censorship laws in providing information to the foreign press relating to the war. Around 50 women were imprisoned during this period, comparatively few when measured against the male figure of 4,000. This reflected the nature of their work and the difficulties in getting evidence for conviction. Many were untried prisoners. After the truce, 40 women still remained in detention in Mountjoy Jail, although some prominent political figures, including Countess Markievicz (rearrested in April 1921 and sentenced to 2 years of hard labor on the charge of having organized the nationalist boy-scout movement, *Fianna Eireann*, in 1909), had been released so that they could participate in peace talks. Four women, including Linda Kearns, serving a 10-year sentence for driving a car full of IRA men and weaponry, escaped on October 31 by climbing over the prison wall with a

rope ladder. They remained in hiding until the signing of the treaty in December 1921.

No women were included among the Dáil delegates chosen to negotiate terms with the British government, although Lily O'Brennan, sister of Aine Ceannt, former secretary of *Cumann na mBan*, was a secretary for the Irish delegation. The final terms did not give Ireland the status of a republic, requiring members of the Dáil to take an oath of allegiance to the British monarchy and confirming the exclusion of six counties of Ulster from the settlement. *Cumann na mBan* was the first organization to declare its opposition. All six female deputies also opposed the treaty, which was accepted by the Dáil in January 1922. A subsequent motion introduced by Kate O'Callaghan to enfranchise women between the ages of 21 and 30 was defeated before the country voted on the issue. This symbolized the nature of the new Free State in some antitreaty quarters. A provisional

government, opposed by many IRA and Cumann na mBan members, was formed, but irreconcilable differences led to the subsequent civil war between 1922 and 1923. In that period, more than 400 women were imprisoned, an indication both of their activities and of the greater understanding of the former comrades of their capabilities.

—Margaret Ward

See also Devlin, Bernadette; Gonne, Maud; Ireland, Easter Rising of 1916; Markievicz, Countess Constance

References and Further Reading

- Litton, Helen, ed. 1991. *Kathleen Clarke, Revolutionary Woman*. Dublin: O'Brien.
- McCoole, Sinead. 2003. *No Ordinary Women, Irish Female Activists in the Revolutionary Years 1900–1923*. Dublin: O'Brien.
- Ward, Margaret. [1983] 1995. *Unmanageable Revolutionaries: Women and Irish Nationalism*. London: Pluto.

ISLAMIC RESISTANCE MOVEMENTS, WOMEN AND

Role of Muslim women in violent resistance. Middle Eastern women have only recently entered what has traditionally been seen as the male arena of suicide bombing. This is a result, in part, of Islamic resistance movements' successful recruitment efforts that have developed in the wake of the end of Europe's colonial dominance during the second half of the twentieth century. In addition, it is necessary to consider Israel's position in the Middle East to understand the expanded role of women in combat, especially as suicide bombers.

Unlike the Free Officers, the Palestine Liberation Organization, or the Kurdish People's Union, which are secular-nationalist movements, many groups associated with post-World

War II Islamic resurgence are religiously based in both ideology and in mass support. They have been spurred on by the success of the Iranian revolution of 1979 and are usually attempting to remove non-Islamic governments or occupying powers to establish Islamic governments of their own design.

Even non-Islamic-based groups, such as al-Fatah and the al-Aqsa Martyr's Brigade, have publicly embraced Islamic phraseology. In fact, many Islamic groups work within the social, political, and economic structures established by non-Islamic groups (Victor 2003, 64). Women have recently become active in many of the Islamic resistance movements such as Hezbollah, Hamas, and Islamic Jihad as well as Islamic-inspired groups such as the al-Aqsa Martyr's Brigade.

On January 27, 2002, Wafa Idris did not show up for work at the local Red Crescent office. Instead she met with members of the al-Aqsa Martyr's Brigade who had built a bomb for her to carry into an Israeli shoe store later that day. The twenty-six-year-old college graduate and refugee camp resident blew herself up in a Jerusalem shopping center, killing one Israeli citizen and wounding over 130 others. Idris was the forty-seventh suicide bomber and the first woman to blow herself up in the name of defending her country (Victor 2003, 20).

During the second Intifada (al-Aqsa Intifada), which began in September 2002 (the first Intifada lasted from 1987 to August 1993), Hamas leadership issued statements calling on all women to be properly covered when they went out in public and to refrain from taking part in violent demonstrations. The majority of Palestinian women rejected the call for more modest dress, but some did adhere to the call. These women also began to participate in individual, sporadic, and uncoordinated attacks against Israeli soldiers, known as *jihad fardi* (personal initiative attacks). A Palestinian woman wearing the *jihab*, for example, would be able to hide a knife or a gun and either use it herself or pass it along to a man. According to Mohammad Dahalan, the onetime head of Yasser Arafat's West

Bank security force, “the leaders of the various factions also realized that as long as women were dressed in the proper attire, they could be used more effectively to penetrate security and transport weapons” (Victor 2003, 14).

Although it is difficult to measure, women in general sympathized with Hamas (Abdo 1999, 49). One woman in particular, Darine Abu Aisha, was such a staunch supporter that she blew herself up at the Maccabim checkpoint near Jerusalem on February 27, 2002, under the auspices of that Islamic movement (Victor 2003, 97). According to the videotape she left behind, she became a suicide bomber in part because of the abuse she had witnessed and experienced under Israeli occupation. For example, when she acted as an interpreter at a checkpoint for another woman who was trying to take her dying baby to the hospital, the Israeli soldiers would not allow the mother to pass until Abu Aisha kissed a man in the crowd (Victor 2003, 107). The same day that Abu Aisha took her own life, the religious leader of Hamas, Sheik Yassin, issued a decree permitting women to participate in suicide attacks and stated that those who did would receive special blessings in heaven (Victor 2003, 110).

Women have always been targeted for recruitment into the various Palestinian resistance movements (Sayigh 1996, 148). The roles that women performed in organizations such as the PLO had traditionally been limited to support, however, such as marching in protest parades or running orphanages or aid stations. According to the Palestinian leader Hanan Ashwari, women’s inequality in Arab society is directly linked to the failure of liberation movements. A Palestinian female social worker said she could “feel guilty if [she] asked for more rights as a woman at a time like this [under Israeli occupation]” (Sayigh 1985, 191). This could help to explain the interest, active roles, and the development of women suicide bombers in some Islamic movements.

Whatever the reasons or justifications, many Palestinian schoolgirls seem more than merely willing to commit suicide and murder to further

the Palestinian cause. For example, when a group of six-year-old girls at a Jabaliya refugee camp school were asked who wanted to be martyrs, every girl raised her hand. One schoolgirl said if she became a martyr, she would be given everything she wanted in heaven. Another said she was willing to become a suicide bomber “to kill the Jewish . . . and to live near our God,” while a third child believed she would win immortality: “We never die. The Jewish die but we live forever” (Victor 2003, 185). She was alluding to the fact that posters of suicide bombers hang near mosques, at marketplaces, and throughout the streets of refugee camps. Both Hamas and the Islamic Jihad host summer camps in Gaza where children are taught verses from the Koran that glorify martyrdom. Armed with plastic guns and explosives, the children and adults practice suicide bomb attacks (Victor 2003, 186).

In 2003, Tuha Aziz, a twelve-year-old girl, said that she was willing and even training to become a female suicide bomber. According to Aziz, her parents knew of their daughter’s goal and even supported it. “They are proud of us all because they know it is the only way to conquer the Jews and have a homeland” (Victor 2003, 189). If Tuha makes it to fifteen, she can join the Women for Wafa Idris Martyr’s Brigade, whose volunteers hope that their names will live on forever in songs and poems if they are able to become suicide bombers like their idol, Wafa Idris (Victor 2003, 191).

The women who join Islamic-based resistance movements have much in common. First, they all have at least some college education. Second, they grew up in one of the refugee camps. Third, they have at least one family member abused (usually to death) by the established power authority. Fourth, they usually believe that the established, nonreligious nationalist organizations (such as the PLO) have failed to secure a better life for the people.

—*Jim Ross-Nazzal*

See also Arab-Israeli Wars; Ashwari, Hanan; Terrorists, Women

References and Further Reading

- Abdo, Nahla. 1999. "Gender and Politics under the Palestinian Authority." *Journal of Palestine Studies* 28, no. 2 (winter): 38–51.
- Ahmed, Leila. 1992. *Women and Gender in Islam*. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.
- Badran, Margot. 1995. *Feminists, Islam, and Nation*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.
- Saad-Ghorayed, Amal. 2002. *Hizbu'llah: Politics and Religion*. London: Pluto.
- Sayigh, Rosemary. 1985. "Encounters with Palestinian Women under Occupation." In *Women and the Family in the Middle East: New Voices of Change*, edited by Elizabeth Warmock Fernea, 191–208. Austin: University of Texas Press.
- . 1996. "Researching Gender in a Palestinian Camp: Political, Theoretical, and Methodological Problems." In *Gendering the Middle East*, edited by Deniz Kandiyoti, 145–167. Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University Press.
- Victor, Barbara. 2003. *Army of Roses: Inside the World of Palestinian Women Suicide Bombers*. Emmaus, PA: Rodale.

ISRAELI MILITARY,
WOMEN IN THE

The changing role of women in the Israeli military. The place of women in Israel's armed forces has changed substantially since 1948. Although women always performed a critical role in the Israeli military, few of these soldiers resembled the Hollywood stereotype of machine gun-armed beauty queens.

In the decades before Israel's declaration of independence on May 14, 1948, women served in many of the semiofficial and underground organizations that protected the growing Jewish community in Palestine including Hashomer, Hagana, Irgun, and Palmach. Other women stood guard duty at kibbutzim and isolated communities. Women remained a minority in these military units and generally served in noncombat positions. Only the Palmach, which had a

socialist and egalitarian ethos, included a significant number of female fighters and even a few female officers. Several Jewish women died in combat in the increasingly violent years before Israeli statehood. It is likely that the first two Jewish women to die in combat in Palestine did so in 1920 while defending the settlement of Tel Hai. Eight male members of Hashomer died fighting alongside them.

More than 12,000 women served in military units in Israel's War of Independence (1947–1949), and 114 of them died in combat, representing 2.8 percent of Jewish combat fatalities (Gal 1986, 46). Many distinguished themselves, among them Netiva Ben Yehuda, a Palmach fighter who earned a reputation among Arabs as the Blonde Devil for her deadly accuracy as a sniper. Despite the soldiers' generally good combat performance, Jewish leaders began pulling women out of combat positions in mid-1948 after Arab soldiers raped, mutilated, and murdered a captured Hagana woman. By the end of the war, only a handful of women remained in combat positions. Most served in rear areas performing administrative or technical duties.

After the war, Israel reorganized its various military organizations into the Israeli Defense Force (IDF). The government established universal conscription for Israel's Jewish citizens, and Israel remains the only nation to conscript women. The length of mandatory service has varied over time depending on the nation's security situation. Generally, men served for about 3 years and women for 21 months, although married women, women with children, and those from observant Orthodox families received draft exemptions, as have women from the Druze community and other minority communities that agreed to conscription. Women who qualified and volunteered to become officers served an additional 9 months. After their mandatory term of service, both men and women serve in the reserves, but women's reserve commitment ends with their first pregnancy or at age 34 (changed to 38 in 2001). Because of these exemptions and because for most of its history the IDF did not conscript all

women (because of the limited number of positions in which they were allowed to serve), only about 60 percent of Israeli women served in the military compared with 90 percent of men. Following legal changes in the 1990s, the percentage of women serving rose to 70 percent (Gal 1986, 32; van Creveld 1998, 263). Surveys continue to show that even without conscription, the majority of these women would volunteer for military service.

The fear of losing women in combat combined with pressure from Israel's religious political parties and immigrants from Arab nations, who generally retained a traditional view of women's place in society, led the government to systematically restrict women from combat and near-combat positions. In the 1950s, the IDF assigned many women as teachers to help new immigrants learn Hebrew and adjust to life in Israel. An effort to train women as pilots ended before the 1956 war. Nonetheless, a female pilot flew one of the planes that dropped paratroopers over the Mitla Pass in the 1956 war, and other women served close to the front lines. By the early 1960s, however, women only served in rear areas. Occasional efforts to restore them to flight or near-combat duties failed.

Until 2001, women served in the IDF as part of the Women's Corps (Chel Nashim), the Hebrew abbreviation for which (Chen) translates roughly as *charm* or *grace*. Chen trained women and men in separate camps. After training, the IDF assigned them to various military units. These women functioned normally within the military chain of command, but each battalion or similarly sized military unit had a Chen officer who oversaw the accommodation and treatment of the women in that unit. This dual chain of command further isolated women from the predominantly male army. With only limited opportunities for advancement, few women attained the rank of colonel.

Historically, women accounted for about 10 percent of Israel's active duty forces, and virtually all units, including elite airborne and other specialized combat units, contained some women, usually in clerical or medical positions

(Gal 1986, 48–49). A unique Israeli position for female soldiers is the company clerk, a special aide who assists the commander with administrative tasks but who also helps raise troop morale by arranging social activities and even baking cookies for the soldiers. In many ways, the company clerks function as surrogate mothers for the young soldiers. Commanders expect them to add homey touches to military life. While restricting women from combat, the IDF steadily opened new military specializations to women, particularly after the 1973 war when it began assigning women as arms, artillery, and tank instructors. In addition to medical specialties, many women worked in communications, intelligence, radar, air traffic control, computers, and electronics, but almost half of them still served as clerks and secretaries.

The IDF's policy in the 1960s and 1970s was to evacuate women from the front lines before combat began, but this sometimes proved impossible. Three women died in the surprise Arab attacks that began the 1973 war. The IDF prohibited women from entering Lebanon during the first two months of Israel's 1982 invasion and occupation. Afterward, the women joined their units in the field, but for several years, the high command expected them to return to Israel each night. Despite their exclusion from combat service in the IDF, the government allowed women to perform their mandatory military service in paramilitary forces such as the Chiba auxiliary police unit that assists police in security and counterterrorism patrols. Other women chose to serve in the Border Police (MaGav), another well-armed paramilitary force that offered more opportunities for women. The MaGav remains more integrated and egalitarian than the IDF, with numerous coed platoons, and a few platoons composed almost entirely of women. Armed with M-16s, machine guns, and light mortars, MaGav units have proved of critical importance in protecting Jewish neighborhoods and responding to suicide attacks. MaGav instruction is completely coed, and women serve as snipers and in elite units without any gender restriction.

Many Israeli women resented their second-class status in the military, especially because military service in Israel is highly regarded and often a path for upward mobility. Their efforts steadily forced open more occupational specialties to women, and in the 1990s, several lawsuits opened the door even further to full female participation in the military. In 1995, Israel's Supreme Court ruled that the IDF had to allow Alice Miller, an immigrant from South Africa with a pilot's license, to apply for pilot training in the Israeli Air Force. Although Miller failed the entrance exam, other women have graduated from flight school. Further legal challenges opened up other positions for women. On January 10, 2000, Israel's parliament amended the military service law to give women equal access to all military positions unless the nature of the job specifically prevents their service. If they wish to serve in combat units, women must serve the same three-year initial term of service as men do and accept an obligation in the reserves through the age of forty-three. Many women have chosen to do so. By the end of 2001, women held combat positions in artillery, air defense, combat engineers, several border patrol units, and in the air force as both fixed-wing and helicopter pilots.

Following the onset of the suicide bombings of the Second Intifada, the IDF began assigning female soldiers to guard Jewish communities. One of them, Corporal Keren Ya'akobi, died in combat guarding a Jewish settlement near Hebron on December 12, 2002. Recently, Israel created coed combat units, most notably the Karakal (Hebrew for "wildcat") Brigade. Women outnumber men in several of the Karakal's companies. This unit patrols the Jordanian border to prevent drug smuggling and terrorist infiltration and has distinguished itself in several small skirmishes. The IDF continues to open new positions to women and current plans include expanding options for women in the reserves.

—Stephen K. Stein

See also Fuld, Bracha

References and Further Reading

- Gal, Reuven. 1986. *A Portrait of the Israeli Soldier*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Kiesling, Eugenia C. 2001. "Armed but Not Dangerous: Women in the Israeli Military." *War in History* 8, no. 1 (January): 99–100.
- Official Web site of Israeli Defense Force: <http://www.idf.il/> (accessed September 28, 2004).
- Schiff, Zeev. 1986. *A History of the Israeli Army, 1874 to the Present*. New York: Macmillan.
- Van Creveld, Martin. 1998. *The Sword and the Olive: A Critical History of the Israeli Defense Force*. New York: Public Affairs.

ITALY, WOMEN IN THE
RESISTANCE DURING
WORLD WAR II

Role of women in the antifascist and anti-Nazi resistance in Italy during World War II. In 1943, the Italian Resistance came to life when the Fascist Grand Council removed Benito Mussolini from power in July. Women, who constituted 105,000 out of a total 250,000 Italian partisans, struggled against fascism by caring for Resistance fighters, assisting Jews, acting as messengers, and fighting. Approximately 4,600 women were arrested; 2,750 were deported to German concentration camps; and 623 died at the hands of Italian fascists or the Germans. After the war, 17 were awarded the gold medal of valor (De Grazia 1992; Slaughter 1997).

To understand the role of women in the Resistance, one must first understand the Resistance itself. In 1943, there were two competing governments in Italy, the monarchical government under the new premier, Marshal Pietro Badoglio, that had fled to southern Italy, and the German occupiers, who reimposed Mussolini in northern Italy in the puppet Italian Social Republic. As the Allies advanced north, political parties banned by Mussolini in the 1920s—the Communist Party, the Socialists, and the Christian Democrats—and the new Action Party

began to form independent Resistance units, which were tied together by the National Committee for the Liberation of Northern Italy.

Italian leftists had fought against fascism during the Spanish Civil War (1936–1939). Within Italy, World War II, Mussolini's alliance with Adolf Hitler, and the behavior of the Germans in Italy, especially after the deposition of Mussolini, created a "crisis of conscience" (Slaughter 1997) that affected women as well as men. In November 1943, the Women's Defense Groups formed in Milan as a component of the National Committee for the Liberation of Northern Italy. Although much of women's participation tended to be grassroots mobilization, women's groups such as the Union of Italian Catholic Women, Union of Italian Women, Women's Movement of Christian Democracy, and Center of Italian Women helped to institutionalize and to legitimize women's political activity. The size of Italy's Resistance movement and the massive involvement of women in it were unique in the Western European theater. Traditional roles of women in predominantly Catholic Italy as nurturers and the anchors of their families and communities ironically served as a catalyst for women's involvement. Nevertheless, women, "unlike the men, for whom this was prescribed behavior" (Slaughter 1997, 70), had to make a very personal decision to take up the cause and to fight. They resisted not only fascism but social and religious stereotypes that had confined them to the private sphere. The complex role of women in the Resistance was at once a means of enacting their own citizenship while also remaining true to traditional family and religious values. Their roles as mothers, wives, and sisters undeniably affected their decisions to join their male counterparts in the fight for their country. By participating in the Resistance, they felt they were fulfilling their rightful place in society. Their participation was not so much for the state but for the family unit. Preserving community was something they had always done. Even the closeness of the big city blocks huddled around piazzas lent itself to the virtues of intuition, shrewdness, protectiveness,

and other qualities of community ascribed to women in society (De Grazia, 1992).

By virtue of being female, Italian women performed crucial jobs in the Resistance. Former partisan Giovanna Zangrandi noted that while male partisans met secretly in participants' homes, women were there in the kitchen. The women provided clothing, food, and medical supplies during the clandestine meetings. The most important role of women in the Resistance was communication and information. The ironic underestimation of women served as a natural disguise for collecting and moving munitions, supplies, and information essential to the cause. Given that they were underestimated by the establishment, women were natural choices to become *staffette*, or messengers. A seemingly pregnant woman would not be suspected of stuffing her clothes with pamphlets, Resistance newspapers, or even weapons. Male fascists did not hesitate to discuss politics and their plans in front of "uninterested" or "frivolous" women (Slaughter 1997). "The *staffetta* on her bicycle became the symbolic heroine [of the Resistance], fearlessly passing Nazi and Fascist checkpoints or eluding pursuit and capture" (Slaughter 1997, 53). Some 35,000 women participated as *staffette*.

Women who participated in the Resistance also served with the fighters, the partisans. The women partisans were guides, cooks, and clothes menders for mountain brigades. They also served as combatants and held formal rank. Most, however, were consigned to segregated quarters and were assigned functions ranging from "sabotage and single-strike activity to serving as auxiliaries for the Brigades, to recruiting, education and defending [their homes and neighborhoods]" (Slaughter 1997, 57).

Although some women participated in combat, they were primarily valued for and even relegated to gender-specific roles. Scholars analyzing the Resistance in Italy and other countries, such as Yugoslavia, note that there is a difference between "togetherness in combat" and "equality of roles." Gender differences held during the Resistance because "customary activities like food



*Italian resistance fighters who helped South African troops in Pistoia locate German snipers.
(Hulton-Deutsch Collection/Corbis)*

shopping and child care and feminine stereotypes of weakness and flirtation either hid or supported partisan activity” (Slaughter 1997, 53).

Women joined the original Women’s Defense Groups to help in the Resistance and organize for women’s emancipation, but emancipation took a backseat to the more urgent issue of war. The participation of women in the Italian Resistance during World War II affected female emancipation in Italy. Women were granted the right to vote after the war. In addition, the 1948 Italian constitution not only declared Italy to be a democratic republic “founded on work,” it also guaranteed equal rights to all regardless of “sex, race, religion, political opinion, or personal and social conditions.”

—Marcie L. Hinton

See also France, Resistance during World War II, Women and; Greece, Resistance during World War II, Women and; Norway, Resistance Movement during World War II, Women and

References and Further Reading

- De Grazia, Victoria. 1992. *How Fascism Ruled Women: Italy, 1922–1945*. Berkeley: University of California Press.
- Slaughter, Jane. 1997. *Women and the Italian Resistance, 1943–1945*. Denver, CO: Arden Press.
- Vigano, Renata. 1999. *Partisan Wedding: Stories by Renata Vigano*. Translated by Suzanne Branciforte. Columbia: University of Missouri Press.
- Wilhelm, Maria de Blasio. 1988. *The Other Italy: Italian Resistance in World War II*. London: W. W. Norton.

ITALY, WOMEN ON THE HOME FRONT AND IN THE SERVICES DURING WORLD WAR I

The role of women in Italy during World War I. When Italy entered World War I on May 24, 1915, it fought the Austrians and Germans in the mountainous region of the southern Tyrol and along the Isonzo River. Despite the emigration of more than 2.5 million in the late nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, Italy mobilized more than 5 million of its nearly 9 million men between the ages of 18 and 65.

Intellectual middle-class women were among those who vociferously advocated Italian intervention in the war as early as the autumn of 1914. The *Fede nuova* (New Faith) was a review devoted to promulgating the principles of Giuseppe Mazzini, the apostle of Italian nationalism, and had as its president Signora Alvina Albinetti. Along with Virginia Pincellotti Pace, a journalist and poet, and Professor Theresa Labriola of the University of Rome, Albinetti formed the National Committee for Italian Intervention. In December 1917, it called on Italian women to support the war effort in any way they could. Its appeal was echoed by the National Woman Suffrage Federation.

The women of Italy were called on to support the war effort in many ways. Yet female workers in the armaments factories and other war industries were, in comparison to their allies, appallingly paid and labored under horrible conditions. As industrial cities grew to accommodate the influx of workers, overcrowding became a problem. Food shortages eventually led to strikes, often fronted by women, for whom the threat to send strikers to the front held no real terror. Peasant women, on the other hand, whose lives were traditionally harsh, were actually less affected by the food shortages that plagued their urban sisters. While they had to take up the work their men left behind including public transactions, many peasant families benefited from the increased inflation that allowed them to pay off their debts to absentee landowners. Women in Perugia were praised for yielding

a better harvest in 1916–1917 than had been reaped in the preceding year.

Women also went to work in offices, asylums, and hospitals. They were employed as railroad ticket agents, street sweepers, conductors on street cars, and telegraph operators. The Italian gas mask was said to have been devised by a woman from Bologna. In Verona, 80 refugee women in workrooms and 1,000 women in their homes produced more than 19,000 field tents and 125,000 articles of clothing for soldiers (Wannamaker 1923, 35). One workroom in Milan sent 43,000 garments to the front in the first 2 years (Wannamaker 1923, 31). In Palermo, Messina, and Como, female telephone operators alternated their regular work with making garments.

Women of the middle and upper classes organized voluntary work. The Citizen Relief Committees dealt with various needs from soldiers' clothes to the distribution of milk to needy children. The first state provisions for the war needy were instituted in May 1915 for the families of recalled servicemen and were later extended to all draftees.

The Central Bureau of News was established by Countess Lina Cavazza in Bologna in May 1915 and ultimately employed 25,000 women who sent messages from the wounded soldiers to their families (Wannamaker 1923, 36). These aristocratic women visitors also delivered sweets and collected information for the News Bureau. The *Ufficio Notizie Militari* (Office of Military News) was another female-managed conduit for the interchange and distribution of news between soldiers and their families. Other women managed rest houses and canteens for soldiers. One, the *Casa del Soldato* (Soldiers' Home) in Genoa, was founded and maintained exclusively by the women's association *Pro Patria*.

The professional nurse was a new phenomenon in Italy, the first school for training opening only in 1908. Like women elsewhere, however, Italian women were eager to enroll once war was declared. In one Milan school, the enrollment was 54 in 1913–1914 but 704 in 1914–1915. By 1917, the Red Cross in Italy had 10,000

nurses, 600 of whom served in the war zone. Nine died of disease contracted during their service, and it was reported in one contemporary memoir that 15 Italian nurses had volunteered to permit grafts from their skin for the treatment of wounded men (Wannamaker 1923, 39).

In the mountainous terrain of the Italian front, women were essential in the work of clearing the roads of snow and in carrying materials and food to the soldiers. They also transported concrete and wire for the trenches. Some were decorated for their bravery. Maria Brighenti was posthumously awarded the Gold Medal of Military Valor for having nursed the wounded during a siege at Tarhuna in July 1915. Her remains were not found until 1924. Maria Boso was awarded the Silver Medal of Civic Virtue for having helped her soldier brother in the Austrian army escape to Italy. She was captured by the Austrians and died in prison.

The thousands of ordinary widows and grieving mothers were venerated in national mourning organized by the patriotic Associazione Madri e Vedove dei Caduti in Guerra (Association of Mothers and Widows of the Fallen), founded in Milan in 1917. The new woman, who may have felt energized by the possibilities of wartime employment, was, by contrast, subject to a conservative backlash. New opportunities, experienced mainly by urban middle-class women, were short-lived.

—Jane Potter

See also France, World War II, Women and the Home Front; Germany, Women and the Home Front, World War II; Great Britain, Women on the Home Front during World War II; Soviet Union, Women and the Home Front during World War II; United States, Home Front during World War II

References and Further Reading

- Adamson, Walter L. 1999. "The Impact of World War I on Italian Political Culture." In *European Culture in the Great War: The Arts, Entertainment, and Propaganda, 1914–1918*, edited by Aviel Roshwald and Richard Stites, 308–329. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Cotillo, Salvatore A. 1922. *Italy during the World War*. Boston: Christopher Publishing House.
- Fédération Interalliée des Anciens Combattants. 1934. *Femina Patriae Defensor: Woman in the Service of Her Country*. Paris, Limoges, and Nancy: Charles-Lavauzelle.
- Strachan, Hew, ed. 1998. *The Oxford Illustrated History of the First World War*. Oxford, England: Oxford University Press.
- Wannamaker, Odin D. 1923. *With Italy in Her Final War of Liberation*. New York: F. H. Revell.

J

JAPAN, WOMEN AND THE HOME FRONT, WORLD WAR II

Effort of the Japanese government to win the active support of Japanese women during World War II. During World War II, the Japanese government attempted to reinforce national patriotism and popular support for its ambitious expansionist efforts not only among the military but also among civilians by building the home front. National patriotism and support were especially important for the government as Japan's military campaign in China and Southeast Asia during World War II stretched the human and economic resources of the country to its limits. Japanese women became the primary target for the political propaganda and social and economic engineering by the country's leaders. This campaign brought about significant changes in the social status of Japanese women.

In the Meiji era (1868–1912) women were traditionally viewed as a part of the “family system.” They were discouraged from active participation in public and political life and were expected to conform to the image of “Good wife and wise mother,” silently obeying fathers and, after marriage, husbands. This situation changed slightly in the 1920s and 1930s as

rapid urbanization, modernization, and the development of mass education had an effect on Japanese women. For the first time in Japanese history women became workers in secondary and tertiary industries. They gained some degree of economic and social independence, and they were able to actively participate in the public life. For example, in 1930 the number of working women increased to approximately 28 percent of the total labor force in the industrial sector of the country (Ohasato 1996, 53).

During this period the concept of a “modern girl” or a “career girl” emerged in the country. For many young women in Japan, this concept often implied a professional woman who had independent income, who could voice her opinion in public, who wore western clothes, and who spent time at coffee shops, restaurants, movie theaters, or dance halls. At that time Japanese women started their own organizations, such as the Greater Japan Young Women's Association (1927), the Foundation of Mother's Day (1928), the All-Japan Women's Economic Convention (1929), the Greater Japan Allied Women's Society (1931), and the Greater Japan National Defense Women's Association (1932). These organizations, however, were relatively small and often remained under the strict control of various government agencies.

In 1937 the Japanese government began its occupation of China and in 1940 sent its military forces to different parts of Southeast Asia. In December 1941 it attacked the United States at Pearl Harbor. These military campaigns consumed enormous human and economic resources and immediately led to a sharp increase in hardship and poverty in Japanese society. Labor productivity in the war industries was low compared with the United States. The workforce of Japan therefore had to be shifted to war industry more dramatically than in the United States. In addition, mass conscription of peasants and farm workers led to a significant drop in agricultural production. This caused a shortage of food as well as consumer goods.

Most Japanese experienced shortages of food, clothing, and housing. In 1940 the government introduced the rationing of rice, sugar, matches, and many other products. For example, an adult received 345 grams (12.17 ounces) of rice per day. Annual consumption of rice decreased from 160.8 kilograms (354.5 pounds) per person in 1940 to 122.1 kilograms (269.2 pounds) in 1945; consumption of sugar decreased from 13.54 kilograms (29.85 pounds) per person in 1940 to 0.64 kilograms (1.41 pounds) per person in 1945 (Ohasato 1996, 354–355).

In order to justify spending and to build up domestic support for the war, the government launched a massive propaganda campaign between 1941 and 1943. In December 1941 the war in China and the Pacific was proclaimed to be the “Greater East Asia War.” This was portrayed as a battle against the immoral and imperialistic West and in defense of the colonized people of Asia.

It was, however, the strategic bombing of Japanese cities and major industrial centers from the autumn of 1944 through August 1945 that brought the war directly to the door of ordinary Japanese people. According to the U.S. Strategic Bombing Survey, *The Effects of Strategic Bombing on Japan's War Economy*, the strategic bombing impacted 66 cities, where between

25 and 90 percent of the houses, public buildings, and other facilities were destroyed. Urban residents experienced the destruction of housing and the collapse of food distribution. Many civilians were evacuated from large industrial cities to towns and villages. This negatively affected the morale of ordinary citizens throughout the country.

The home front actions included large media campaigns and strict control over the patriotism of the mass media publications. It also promoted hard work by all civilians in order to help the military. Journalists were encouraged to write only positive articles about military actions and about popular support of the government among the Japanese people, including the contribution of women to the eventual victory. This propaganda campaign changed the image of Japanese women in mass media because they were portrayed not only as important contributors to the family system but also as responsible members of the society who contributed significantly to the home front. Any publications that were suspected of pessimism or criticism of the Japanese government were censored, and there were dire consequences for the authors.

In order to broaden popular support, government agencies created several large organizations that eventually enrolled all Japanese citizens from schoolchildren to pensioners. This campaign included creating mass women's organizations for the first time in Japanese history. It was during World War II when a large class of working women emerged in Japan, significantly changing the social fabric of Japanese society. Japanese authorities understood these changes, and in 1942 they created the Dainihon Fujin Kai (Greater Japan Women's Association) by merging the Aikoku Fujin Kai (Patriotic Women's Association) with other groups (Kurihara 2001, 305). Upon reaching the age of 21, every Japanese woman was encouraged to join the newly unified organization, and by 1943 its membership had grown to 19 million. The Greater Japan Women's Associ-

ation members organized various public actions, such as fund-raisers, collected such personal items as gold jewelry and clothes, and performed various duties at military hospitals and elsewhere.

With more than 7 million Japanese men in active military duty at the end of World War II, Japanese women replaced them in factories, farms, and offices. In 1941 the Japanese government introduced the *Kokumin Kinrou Houkoku Kyouryoku Rei* (Ordinance for Cooperation with the National Patriotic Labor Corps) that obliged every single woman between the ages of 14 and 25 to start labor service within 30 days. In addition, in August 1944 the *Joshi Teishintai Kinrou Rei* (Women's Volunteer Labor Corps Work Ordinances) was introduced, mobilizing all women between the ages of 12 and 39 to engage in various public works (Momose 1990, 305). Yet the Japanese government refused to conscript women to fight even during the most difficult period of the war. Nevertheless, in June 1945 the government enacted the *Kokumi Giyu Heieiki Hou* (Volunteer Army Military Service Code). According to the code, Japanese women were organized into a *Kokumin Giyu Sentou Tai* (National Volunteer Army Combat Corps). The war ended, however, before Japanese women engaged in fighting (Momose 1990, 270–271).

All the actions on the home front were vigorously enforced and helped to mobilize economic and social resources for the war. The organizations often propagated extreme nationalist sentiments and anticolonial feelings. After the Japanese capitulation in 1945, however, the propaganda machine of the home front and all militant public organizations were dismantled. But the changes of the era continued to shape social and economic development in Japan for decades.

—Kazuo Ota and Rafis Abazov

See also France, World War II, Women and the Home Front; Germany, Women and the Home Front, World War II; Great Britain,

Women on the Home Front during World War II; Korea, Women and the Home Front, World War II; Soviet Union, Women and the Home Front during World War II; United States, Home Front during World War II

References and Further Reading

- Bernstein, Gail Lee. 1991. *Recreating Japanese Women, 1600–1945*. Berkeley: University of California.
- Dower, John W. 1999. *Embracing Defeat: Japan in the Wake of World War II*. New York and London: W. W. Norton.
- Goldstein, Joshua S. 2001. *War and Gender: How Gender Shapes the War System and Vice Versa*. Cambridge, England: Cambridge University.
- Hane, Mikiso. 1988. *Reflections on the Way to the Gallows: Rebel Women in Pre-War Japan*. Berkeley: University of California.
- Haruko, Taya Cook, and Theodore F. Cook. 1993. *Japan at War: An Oral History*. New York: New Press.
- Kurihara, Rumi. 2001. *Nihon-gata Minsyusyugi [Japanese-Style Democracy]*. Tokyo: Nihon Klezai Hyouronsha.
- McClain, L. James. 2002. *Japan: A Modern History*. New York and London: W. W. Norton.
- Momose, Takashi. 1990. Jiten Showa Senzen-ki no Hinon Seido to Jittai [Systems and the Realities]. In *Encyclopedia Japan*. Edited by Takashi Ito. Tokyo: Yoshikawa Kobunkan.
- Ohasato, Katsuma. 1996. *Hundred-Year Statistics of the Japanese Economy*. Tokyo: Bank of Japan, Statistics Department.
- Pauer, Erich. 1999. *Japan's War Economy*. Routledge Studies in the Growth Economies of Asia, 21. London: Routledge.
- Toland, John. 2003. *The Rising Sun: The Decline and Fall of the Japanese Empire, 1936–1945*. Modern Library War Series. New York: Random House.
- Wakakuwa, Midori. 2001. *Sensou ga tsukuru josei-zou [Women's Image Made by War]*. Tokyo: Chikuma Shobo Publishing Co., Ltd.

JAPAN, WOMEN WARRIORS IN
ANCIENT AND MEDIEVAL JAPAN

Role of women as rulers and fighters in ancient Japan. The great Japanese epic, *Heike Monogatari* (Tale of the Heike), celebrates many women warriors. The *naginata*, a heavy blade on the end of a staff, was their favored weapon. If the *naginata* were to fail, female samurai carried a *kai-ken* (a long dagger) for last-ditch defense or, if capture seemed inevitable, for ritual suicide.

According to Japanese tradition, in the fourth century A.D., Empress Jingo-Kogo, although pregnant, led her forces in a victorious campaign against Korea. The medieval warrior Lady Yatsushiro also reputedly went into battle while pregnant, mounted on horseback and accompanied by her attack-wolf, Nokaze. The most renowned female warrior of medieval Japan, however, was Tomoe Gozen. Among her legendary exploits was the presentation of the head of the shogun Uchida Iyeyoshi to her husband, Miyamoto Musashi. Gozen decapitated Iyeyoshi in hand-to-hand combat. She also single-handedly defended a bridge against a multitude of attackers using only her *naginata*. Other legends assert that after the defeat of her husband, Gozen fled with his severed head and cast herself into the sea in order to prevent her husband from being dishonored, to avoid the dishonor of possible capture, and to die with him.

Among the many women warriors recorded in Japanese history are: Masaki Hojo (1157–1225), the widow of the first Minamoto shogun; Koman, a late sixteenth- and early seventeenth-century warrior; Fujinoye, who defended Takadachi Castle in 1189 by blocking the stairs with her *naginata*; and Hangaku, the daughter of a samurai, who rained down deadly arrows on the attackers of Echigo Castle in 1201. Dressed in men's clothing, Hangaku mounted the tower of the castle and "all those who came to attack her were shot down by her arrows which pierced them either in their chests or their heads. Their horses were killed and their shields were broken into pieces from their arms." An archer finally

avoided her by circling to the rear of the castle and, undetected by Hangaku, was able to wound her with an arrow. The shogun Yoriye described her while in captivity as "fearless as a man and beautiful as a flower" (Beard 1953, 72–73).

Inazo Nitobe, a nineteenth-century commentator on the samurai Bushido, wrote,

Young girls . . . were trained to repress their feelings, to indurate their nerves, to manipulate weapons—especially the long-handled sword called *nagi-nata*, so as to be able to hold their own against unexpected odds. . . . [A] woman owning no suzerain of her own, formed her own body-guard. With her weapon she guarded her personal sanctity. . . . Girls, when they reached womanhood, were presented with dirks (*kai-ken*, pocket poniards), which might be directed to the bosom of their assailants, or, if advisable, to their own. . . . Her own weapon lay always in her bosom. It was a disgrace to her not to know the proper way in which she had to perpetrate self-destruction. (Nitobe 1979, 89–90)

Nitobe, however, cautioned that "masculinity" was not the Bushido ideal for women. He saw no contradiction between being a warrior and being feminine. He asserted that central to the code was self-sacrificing service and that for women this was primarily to home and family. For a woman, he wrote, "the domestic utility of her warlike training was in the education of her sons" (Nitobe 1979, 89–90).

—Bernard Cook

See also China to 1911, Women Warriors in; India to 1857, Women Warriors in; Vietnam, Women in War and Resistance before 1954

References and Further Reading

BBC (British Broadcasting Corporation). "Miyamoto Musashi and Tomoe Gozen—Samurai Warriors." <http://www.bbc.co.uk/dna/h2g2/alabaster/A681004> (accessed March 30, 2004).

JAPANESE INTERNED IN U.S. CAMPS

- Beard, Mary Ritter. 1953. *The Force of Women in Japanese History*. Washington, DC: Public Affairs Press.
- Jones, David E. 1997. *Women Warriors: A History*. Washington, DC: Brassey's.
- Nitobe, Inazo. 1979 (1899). *Bushido: The Warrior's Code*. Compiled and edited by Charles Lucas. Burbank, CA: Ohara Publications.

JAPANESE INTERNED IN U.S. CAMPS

Removal of over 112,000 Japanese, including both resident aliens and U.S. citizens, from the West Coast of the United States during the early stages of the U.S. involvement in World War II. Japanese on the U.S. West Coast were interned in concentration camps following the Japanese attack on the U.S. territory of Hawaii at Pearl Harbor on December 7, 1941. The United States declared war on Japan following the attack, and the U.S. government saw a possible threat from the Japanese population in the United States. To meet this threat, all Japanese were interned in U.S. camps for the duration of the war. More than 70,000 of these Japanese were American-born and were citizens of the United States. Their U.S. citizenship and the rights entitled to them did not exclude them from internment during wartime. Many families were left with only a female head of the household instead of the usual male because the Federal Bureau of Investigation (FBI) arrested many male Japanese American leaders after the Pearl Harbor attack. There were fifteen assembly centers located in California, Washington State, Oregon, and Arizona. The Japanese internees remained at the assembly centers for up to 100 days before being sent to relocation centers managed by the Department of the Interior's War Relocation Authority (WRA). Over 112,000 Japanese were distributed among 10 locations: 2 centers each in California, Arizona, and Arkansas and 1 each in Idaho, Wyoming, Col-

orado, and Utah. In addition to the relocation centers, some suspect aliens of Japanese ancestry were sent to internment camps managed by the Department of Justice. There were four Department of Justice internment camps, located in New Mexico, North Dakota, Texas, and Montana. These centers were prison camps for Japanese community leaders, Shinto priests, and teachers from Japanese-language schools. The Department of Justice internment camps housed both men and women. The Texas camp housed female Japanese noncitizens. There were also two citizen isolation camps in Utah and Arizona housing Japanese Americans who were regarded as troublemakers in the relocation centers. Starting in 1943, some of the Japanese internees were granted leave. Those who were not eligible for leave remained in the camps until the end of World War II.

On February 19, 1942, President Franklin Roosevelt signed Executive Order 9066 that allowed the U.S. War Department to supervise the evacuation of the Japanese population from the West Coast. General John DeWitt of the War Department issued Public Proclamation I, which created military areas in California, Oregon, Arizona, and Washington. In these areas, enemy aliens, who included Japanese aliens and citizens of Japanese ancestry, were required to register with the U.S. government. At first, there was a voluntary program allowing Japanese to resettle outside of the military zones. This voluntary program was terminated after the War Department received complaints from the states where the Japanese resettled. On March 11, 1942, General DeWitt created the Wartime Civil Control Authority (WCCA), which took full control of the mass evacuation of Japanese from the West Coast. On March 18, 1942, President Roosevelt signed Executive Order 9102 creating the WRA. The WRA assisted people who were evacuated by the military. Beginning in March 1942, fifteen assembly centers were established to process the Japanese evacuees. The U.S. government posted evacuation notices in Japanese American communities ordering Japanese families to

report to the control centers. Each family received a number after registration. These families had only a few weeks to take care of their personal matters before evacuation. Many lost a great deal of their possessions. At the end of March 1942, the evacuation to assembly centers started. By August 7, 1942, the evacuation was completed.

Beginning August 10, 1942, Japanese evacuees were interned in relocation centers. The residents of the relocation centers were divided into three groups. The first group included the elderly and those born in Japan. Most of them came to the United States in the 1910s. The second group was composed of those who were born in the United States and had U.S. citizenship. This group was more pro-American. The third group included Japanese born in the United States but who had received some education in Japan. This group was more pro-Japan. Living quarters in the relocation centers resembled military housing. The camps were patrolled by armed guards and were surrounded by barbed wire and watchtowers. Each barrack was 20 feet by 100 to 120 feet with no interior walls. Wood and tarpaper were used to construct the barracks. Each barrack was partitioned into 4 to 6 rooms of approximately 500 square feet. One family was assigned to each room. A block contained 12 to 14 barracks. Each block had a mess hall, recreation hall, bathroom, shower, and laundry. The barracks themselves did not have cooking and plumbing facilities. The residents of the centers could participate in activities such as movies and baseball. The menus of all relocation centers were based on a ration cost that allowed no more than forty-five cents per person per day. The centers provided only basic elementary through high school education. Some died while they were interned: Some were shot trying to escape; some died of poor medical care and the trauma of incarceration.

On February 8, 1943, internees of all relocation centers could register to receive leave clearance. Only a small number of the internees, however, were actually eligible for release from the camps. Those released could not resettle on

the West Coast. Those in the group labeled as disloyal to the United States were not eligible to leave the camps until after the war ended.

On December 17, 1944, the War Department revoked the West Coast mass exclusion orders against Americans with Japanese ancestry. On December 18, 1944, the WRA announced that it would close all relocation centers before the end of 1945, and its program would be terminated on June 30, 1946. In January 1945, the army lifted the West Coast ban prohibiting those Japanese released from the camps from resettling on the West Coast. On August 15, 1945, Japan surrendered and the war between the United States and Japan ended. On September 4, 1945, the Western Defense Command issued the Public Proclamation 24, which revoked all individual exclusion orders and military restrictions against persons of Japanese ancestry. On December 1, 1945, with the exception of the relocation center at Tule Lake, California, all Japanese relocation centers were closed. On February 23, 1946, the last group of Japanese repatriates left Tule Lake and sailed to Japan. On June 30, 1946, the United States government officially terminated the WRA. In 1988, President George H.W. Bush issued an apology to the Japanese Americans for the internment and offered \$20,000 to each of the families of the interned.

—Edy M. Parsons

See also Holocaust and Jewish Women; Jehovah's Witnesses in Nazi Germany; Roma/Sinti; Trauma and Brutalization Unleashed by World War I

References and Further Reading

- Daniels, Roger, Sandra C. Taylor, and Harry H. L. Kitano. 1986. *Japanese Americans: From Relocation to Redress*. Salt Lake City: University of Utah.
- Myer, Dillon S. 1971. *Uprooted Americans*. Tucson: The University of Arizona.
- Ng, Wendy. 2002. *Japanese American Internment during World War II*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Smith, Page. 1995. *Democracy on Trial: The Japanese American Evacuation and Relocation in World War II*. New York: Simon and Schuster.

JEANNE D'ARC

See Joan of Arc

JEHOVAH'S WITNESSES IN
NAZI GERMANY

Banning and persecution of Jehovah's Witnesses as a rival ideology after Hitler came to power. Jehovah's Witnesses refused to swear allegiance to secular governments or to fight in their armies. The refusal to subject themselves unquestioningly to the state led to arrests. Nevertheless, they continued to meet and to distribute literature smuggled into Germany from Switzerland. In 1936 at a convention held in Lucerne, Switzerland, the Jehovah's Witnesses condemned the Nazi regime and denounced its persecution of the Jews. By 1939 approximately 6,000 Jehovah's Witnesses were imprisoned. The Nazis broke up the group's families, sending their children to orphanages. After 1939 most active Witnesses, female as well as male, were sent to concentration camps where they were marked with purple triangles inscribed with a "B" for *Bibelforscher* (Bible researcher). There are various estimates for the number of Witnesses who died in concentration camps. The *1974 Yearbook of Jehovah's Witnesses* states that of the 6,019 who were arrested, 2,000 were sent to concentration camps. In addition to these German Witnesses, approximately 700 to 800 non-German Witnesses, predominantly from the Netherlands and Austria, were sent to concentration camps. There 838 Witnesses died; of these, 203 were executed (Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society of New York 1973, 212). Other sources set the number of Jehovah's Witnesses who died in the camps at between 2,500 and 5,000.

Among those who died was Helene Gotthold (1896–1944), who was condemned to death with five other Witnesses for holding illegal meetings and undermining the morale of the na-

tion. She was guillotined at the Plötzensee Prison on December 8, 1944.

—Bernard Cook

See also Holocaust and Jewish Women;
Roma/Sinti

References and Further Reading

- Friedman, Ina R. 1990. *Other Victims: First Person Stories of Non-Jews Persecuted by the Nazis*. Boston: Houghton Mifflin.
- King, Christine. 1990. Jehovah's Witnesses under Nazism. In *Mosaic of Victims: Non-Jews Murdered and Persecuted by the Nazis*. Edited by Michael Berenbaum. New York: New York University.
- United States Holocaust Memorial Museum. n.d. *Jehovah's Witnesses*. Washington, DC: United States Holocaust Museum.
- Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society of New York. 1973. *1974 Yearbook of Jehovah's Witnesses*. Brooklyn: Watch Tower Bible and Tract Society.

JEWISH WOMEN OF ANTIQUITY
AND WAR

Jewish women victims, survivors, patriots, and leaders in antiquity. In the ancient Near East the battlefield was almost exclusively the province of men, whose upper-body strength made them more efficient than women with the weapons of the age—chariots, spears, slings, axes, and swords. Women were not trained to fight and, except for camp followers, were expected to stay at home during times of war. War was the men's realm, to the point that the ultimate humiliation for a man was to die at the hands of a woman. This was the fate of the Canaanite Sisera, the Assyrian Holofernes, and the Shechemite Abimelech. Abimelech, after realizing that he had received a mortal blow from a millstone hurled by a woman, asked his armor-bearer to "draw your sword and dispatch me, lest they say of me that a woman killed me," thereby unsuccessfully

trying to avoid the stigma of death at a woman's hands (Judges 9:50–55).

Nevertheless, women played important roles especially in the earliest military history of Israel as the state was being established. They almost completely vanish from a military context after the state was created. Women not only had the burden of waiting for their sons or husbands to return from battle (poignantly described in Judges 5) but also had to ensure the survival of households, farms, and businesses in the absence of their menfolk. Women could also be the reason for war, either because a family was insulted by an attack on their female members or, more simply, because women comprised an important part of the plunder from any war. Finally, a few exceptional women played central roles in early Jewish victories.

One of the Hebrews' earliest recorded victories was against the people of Shechem around 1500 B.C. The *casus belli* was a woman named Dinah who was raped by the prince of Shechem. Her outraged brothers were determined to get revenge, and although the prince and all of his men made the exceptional restitution of being circumcised so the prince could marry Dinah, the brothers slaughtered the Shechemites (taking advantage of their weakness after surgery). Thus, the family honor was restored. Dinah's feelings were not recorded; she was family property to be guarded. The need to defend women was especially important because, in an age with little portable wealth, women were the most valuable "livestock" an army could win. Israelite women were enslaved after victories, and the Israelites themselves assumed that a victorious warrior would bring home a few new handmaidens as his share of the spoils.

Although women did not bear weapons, they were regarded as patriotic and resourceful, sometimes using physical seduction to save their people. The Philistine Delilah was regarded as evil for discovering the secret of Samson's strength and betraying him (Judges 16), but when the Israelite women Jael and Judith seduced enemy generals to save their people, they won praise. Jael gained access to the Canaanite

Sisera's tent and drove a tent peg through his head as he slept, after which she cut off his head in triumph. The Canaanites, shocked to see Sisera's head hanging from the wall of the town they were attacking, were easily defeated (Judges 4). Probably inspired by this early account is the story of Judith, a folktale written toward the end of the second century B.C. The book of Judith tells that the Assyrian general Holofernes besieged the town of Bethulia. The Jews began to despair, but the wise widow Judith (whose name is simply a feminine form of the word "Jew") presented a plan. Over the next several days she seduced Holofernes and when the time was ripe got him drunk and chopped off his head with his own sword. Again, the disheartened enemy was easily defeated.

The only true military heroine of ancient Israel, however, was Deborah, a twelfth-century B.C. prophet and the only female judge of the Israelites in the period before the monarchy. Her story is told in Judges 4–5. When Israel was savaged by Canaanite attacks, Deborah sent for the tribal leader Barak and instructed him to muster troops. Barak, however, refused to lead the army unless Deborah accompanied them to battle. She did so, although Deborah did not wield weapons or give commands. Nevertheless, according to the book of Judges 5, she was responsible for victory because to reward her faithfulness God sent a heavy rain that bogged down the massive Canaanite chariot force, making it possible for the Israelite infantry to triumph.

Deborah's victory song is one of the oldest texts in the Hebrew scriptures, perhaps nearly as old as the events it describes. It seems likely that such songs of triumph (another is attributed to Miriam after pharaoh's forces were destroyed in the Red Sea) were more typical of women's roles during ancient Israelite wars than Deborah's leadership. Israelite women celebrated in song the victories won by the Israelite men with the aid of God. The account of Deborah in the book of Judges was important to the Hebrews as evidence that God could use anyone, even a woman, to give victory to his people.

—Phyllis G. Jestice

See also Greek Women and War in Antiquity; Israeli Military, Women in the; Spartan Women

References and Further Reading:

- Barquist, Jon L. 1992. *Reclaiming Her Story: The Witness of Women in the Old Testament*. St. Louis: Chalice.
- Herzog, Chaim, and Mordechai Gichon. 1978. *Battles of the Bible*. New York: Random House.
- Nowell, Irene. 1997. *Women in the Old Testament*. Collegeville, MN: Liturgical Press.

JOAN OF ARC (JEANNE
D'ARC) (CA. 1412–1431)

French patriot-warrior. Born in Domrémy, France, probably in 1412, Joan was one of five children of Jacques and Isabelle d'Arc, relatively prosperous peasant farmers. Joan evidenced a deep piety as a child but was surrounded by the political and military crisis of the Hundred Years' War. In the late 1420s Joan began to reveal to family members that Saints Michael, Catherine, and Margaret had appeared to her with two extraordinary charges: first, free the city of Orleans from English siege, and second, see the dauphin Charles crowned king of France at Rheims. At the time, the fulfillment of either charge seemed extremely unlikely as the French army was reeling from defeats by Henry V, France was enduring a humiliating peace, and more than half of the country was occupied by the English. The French court itself was paralyzed by factional fighting and rebellious powerful nobles.

Through a family connection, Joan arranged to meet a regional French commander, Robert de Baudricourt, in nearby Valcouleurs. De Baudricourt, not totally convinced of Joan's mission, passed her on to the Duke of Lorraine, Charles II, whom Joan met at Nancy. Taking careful notice of Joan's growing reputation and popular rumors supporting her cause, the duke

arranged for Joan to meet the dauphin Charles. Traveling to this meeting, Joan adopted men's clothing to better cross the countryside in safety, a mode of dress she would continue the rest of her life. At Chinon Joan famously identified the dauphin after he had disguised himself and mingled with a crowd of nobles, and she impressed Charles with her calling. After close examination by the dauphin's mother-in-law, Yolande of Aragon, and leading theologians, Joan was found to be a devout virgin. After Charles outfitted her with armor, Joan's voices directed her to a sword concealed at the monastery of St. Catherine de Fierbois. She was then allowed to raise an army for the relief of the besieged Orleans.

Joan, adept at riding and sword handling, attracted an army of 10,000 to 12,000 men and led them to Orleans. They arrived in late April 1429. The army entered Orleans during a diversionary ruse on St. Loup Boulevard in which Joan used her position on the walls to provoke an English attack. At Orleans she began to show great military talent, including a profound understanding of the use of cannon, something that many noble commanders resisted. The army had high morale and, when led by Joan, was willing to undertake high-casualty frontal attacks on English bastions. By May 8 Joan had forced the English to abandon the siege of Orleans and letters circulated in Europe comparing Joan to Alexander the Great and Charles Martel. With morale still high during the early summer of 1429, Joan pursued the English through their garrisons in the Loire Valley, eventually drawing the remaining English field army into battle at Patay on June 18. Throughout the campaign Joan won the obedience and adoration of the army and the surrounding population, who believed that by driving out the English, she was doing the work of God. Amazingly, Joan was able to discipline the army, preventing them from the usual looting and molesting of civilians. Joan also insisted on sending each enemy garrison written declarations of war and offering good terms of surrender.

Joan's accomplishments during the summer of 1429 paved the way for the dauphin Charles to march on Rheims, the traditional coronation site of French kings, and have himself crowned with Joan at his side. Once this was accomplished, however, Charles began to find Joan inconvenient and politically embarrassing. She insisted on moral reform of the French court, famous for adultery and underhanded dealing, and resisted Charles's inclination to deal with Burgundy through diplomacy rather than further fighting. Also, Joan had accomplished her two-part mission and received no further spiritual directives. The English, resentful of having been defeated by a female commoner, painted Joan in their dispatches as a whore and a witch, further embarrassing the French court. Charles allowed Joan to besiege Paris, still occupied by the English, but gave her little support, and in August 1429 Charles ordered her away from the city empty-handed.

Following the advice of men resentful of Joan's influence, including Georges de Tremoille, Charles stripped away her important supporters, most crucially sending Jean, the Duke of Alencon back to his home. Joan was then sent to the upper Loire valley with a much smaller, badly supplied army to fight the mercenary Captain Perrinet Gressart. Not surprisingly, the high number of casualties suffered during Joan's attacks on Burgundian fortifications soon wore out her army, which was not resupplied. Although Charles ennobled Joan in December 1429 and granted her a coat of arms, she was being set up for failure. Extremely frustrated, Joan wrote a threatening letter to the Hussite rebels of Bohemia, perhaps a hint that she considered campaigning outside of France.

In late winter of 1430 Joan disobeyed the king and traveled to Compiègne, which had been given to the Burgundians by treaty. Although she reached the city and began to prepare tactics for its defense, voices revealed to her that she would be captured. Joan was taken prisoner during a sortie from Compiègne on March 23, 1430. She was cut off by a large number of Burgundians and prevented from returning to the city, the

gates of which had been locked. The Burgundians, after displaying Joan as a prisoner, sold her to the English, who promptly tried her for heresy, a rationalization of their defeat at her hands. Treated badly and probably raped and beaten in prison, Joan confessed but then recanted the charges. The French did nothing to intervene, and she was burned as a heretic in the Rouen marketplace on May 30, 1431.

French court writer Christine de Pizan wrote in 1429 of Joan's victory at Orleans and her presence at the coronation of Charles, and she became a popular folk hero in France, as well as the archetype of female military leaders. Joan has been studied as a military leader, a breaker of medieval gender roles, a peasant revolutionary, and a religious fanatic. In 1920, to popular acclaim, the Roman Catholic Church made her a saint.

—Margaret Sankey

See also De Pizan, Christine

References and Further Reading

- Blaetz, Robin. 2001. *Visions of the Maid*. Charlottesville: University of Virginia.
- Devries, Kelly. 1999. *Joan of Arc: A Military Leader*. Thrupp, Stroud, UK: Sutton.
- Pernoud, Regine. 1982. *Joan of Arc by Herself and Her Witnesses*. Trans. Edward Hyams. New York: Stein and Day.

JOHNSON, AMY
(1903–1941)

British military shuttle pilot during World War II. Amy Johnson was born to working-class parents in England in 1903. After attending school in Sheffield, she developed a passion for flying. Johnson was working as a typist when she joined the London Aeroplane Club, but she quickly turned flying into more than a hobby. Johnson became the first British Air Ministry-certified female engineer and earned a

strong reputation as a long-distance endurance flyer. From the time she received her pilot's license in 1928 until her untimely death as a pilot for the British Air Transportation Authority in 1941, Johnson's life revolved around flying.

Johnson's war experience began in 1940 when she volunteered as a pilot delivering military aircraft from factories to various air bases. Her last delivery on January 5, 1941, is shrouded in mystery. She left Blackpool in a twin-engine Airspeed Oxford, planning to fly a route to Kidlington Airbase in Oxfordshire in the Thames Estuary. The flight should have taken only 90 minutes, but she was not spotted for 4 hours and strayed more than 70 miles (112.7 km) off course. There were clouds and icy weather, but no one can definitively confirm these as the reason for her delay and aborted flight. Johnson was spotted parachuting from her plane near the aircraft carrier HMS *Haslemere*. The ship attempted to rescue her, but she disappeared into the icy waters of the North Sea. Lieutenant Commander Walter Fletcher entered the water to save her, but he also was quickly immobilized by the cold and later died. Some historians suggest that the aviatrix was pulled under the water and killed by the ship's propellers, but this is impossible to verify because her body was never recovered.

Johnson is remembered for her bravery during World War II but also for her aviation records. Her round-trip flight from Japan to Moscow and her 1932 round-trip flight to Cape Town were popularly documented long-distance endurance flights. Johnson held the women's record for her solo flight from London to Cape Town in 1936. In 1930 she became the first woman to fly solo from England to Australia. Her attempts to set solo flight records were highly popular in England where the press called her "Queen of the Air." She was made a Commander of the British Empire (CBE) by King George VI. *Jason*, the De Havilland Gipsy Moth airplane used in her attempt to break the solo female endurance record from England to Australia, is now on display in the flight gallery at London's Science Museum. There is a museum devoted to Amy Johnson's

life in her birthplace of Hull, England. A significant number of her papers were purchased in 1987 for the aviation collection at Wright State University in Ohio.

—Pamela Lee Gray

See also United States, Women Airforce Service Pilots; United States, Women's Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron; United States, Women's Flying Training Detachment

References and Further Reading

- Adams, Jean, and Margaret Kimball, in collaboration with Jeanette Eaton. 1942. *Heroines of the Sky*. New York: Doubleday.
- Gillies, Midge. 2004. *Amy Johnson: Queen of the Air*. London: Orion.
- Gower, Pauline. 1938. *Women with Wings*. London: John Long.
- Luff, David. 2002. *Amy Johnson: Enigma in the Sky*. Wilshire, UK: Crowood Press.

JONGH, ANDRÉE (DÉDÉE) DE

See De Jongh, Andrée (DéDée)

JOURNALISTS, AMERICAN
WOMEN, DURING
WORLD WAR I

American women who wrote about World War I from the areas of combat in Europe. It is difficult to establish the exact number of American women who covered the war in Europe. Frequently, the only woman mentioned is Henrietta Eleanor Goodnough, writing as Peggy Hull, who was accredited by the U.S. War Department to cover the expeditionary forces. Hull, an experienced reporter, received sponsorship from the Newspaper Enterprise Association (NEA) for travel to France and was able to use previous

friendships with Generals John J. Pershing and Peyton C. March to obtain formal credentials. Hull was the first and only “official” female war correspondent, but there were many other American women who wrote about the war for newspaper and magazine readers in the United States.

There were over twenty different American female journalists and writers who reported on World War I. Some of these names are well-known writers, but others are less famous, and little is known about them. Several wrote mainly about the revolution in Russia rather than the fighting on the western front. Some were purportedly affiliated with individual newspapers or large news organizations. These include Bessie Beatty (*San Francisco Bulletin*); Andrea Beaumont (*New York American*); Louise Bryant (the Bell Syndicate); Rheta Childe Dorr (*New York Evening Mail*); Cecil Dorrian (*Newark Evening News*); Mildred Farwell (*Chicago Tribune*); Peggy Hull (*El Paso Times*, *Chicago Tribune*, and the NEA); Winifred Black, writing as Annie Laurie (*San Francisco Examiner*); Mary Boyle O’Reilly (the NEA); Sigrid Schultz (*Chicago Tribune*); Eunice Tietjens (*Daily News*); and Sophie Treadwell (*San Francisco Bulletin*).

Many other female fiction and nonfiction authors were writing stories and articles about the war for popular periodicals or women’s magazines. Among them were Mabel Potter Daggett (*Pictorial Review*); Corra Harris (*Saturday Evening Post*); Mary Roberts Rinehart (*Saturday Evening Post*); Clara Savage (*Good Housekeeping*); and Edith Wharton (*Scribner’s*). Women were also credited as photographic correspondents for *Leslie’s Magazine*. Among them were Florence Harper, Helen Johns Kirtland, and Alice Rohe. Other well-known women writers, such as Mildred Aldrich, Madeleine Zabriski Doty, Inez Haynes Irwin, Elizabeth Shepley Sergeant, and Mary Heaton Vorse, were either living in or visiting Europe and wrote about the war for readers in the United States.

These women came from all over the United States, traveled to the war zone for a variety of reasons, and wrote for many different types of

readers. Most were not considered war correspondents at the time because they lacked official credentials from the U.S. government. But if the criterion for determining one’s status as a war correspondent is writing about being in or near a war zone, then all these women qualify.

—Katherine Burger Johnson

See also Beatty, Bessie; Hull, Peggy

References and Further Reading

- Crozier, Emmet. 1959. *American Reporters on the Western Front, 1914–1918*. New York: Oxford University Press.
- Desmond, Robert W. 1988. *Windows on the World: The Information Process in a Changing Society, 1900–1920*. Iowa City: University of Iowa Press.
- Edwards, Julia. 1988. *Women of the World: The Great Foreign Correspondents*. New York: Ivy Books.
- Emery, Michael. 1995. *On the Front Lines: Following America’s Foreign Correspondents across the Twentieth Century*. Washington, DC: American University Press.
- Schilpp, Madelon Golden, and Sharon M. Murphy. 1983. *Great Women of the Press*. Carbondale: Southern Illinois University Press.

JOYCE, MARGARET CAIRNS

See “Lady Haw Haw”

JUNGE, GERTRAUD (TRAUDL) (1920–2002)

A personal secretary of Hitler from 1943 until his death in April 1945. Gertraud (Traudl) Humps was born in Munich to the daughter of an army officer and her husband, a master brewer. Humps aspired to become a dancer but needing work and seeking influential support for



Adolf Hitler's secretary, Traudl Junge, walks to a waiting car with her new husband, SS officer and Hitler aide Hans Junge, Berlin, 1943. (Pictorial Parade/Getty Images)

her aspirations, she applied for a secretarial job at the Reichs Chancellery. She was personally hired by Hitler. In December 1943, at the age of 22, she became the youngest of Hitler's secretaries. In 1943 she married an aide to Hitler, Hans Junge, who was killed at Normandy. On July 20, 1944, Traudl Junge was at Hitler's headquarters at Rastenburg when Lieutenant-Colonel Count Klaus von Stauffenberg's bomb exploded in the July 20, 1944, attempt to assassinate Hitler.

In January 1945 Junge moved with Hitler's staff into an underground bunker in Berlin. Junge took down Hitler's final testament before he committed suicide. After being captured, Junge was held first by the Russians and then by the Americans. She was interrogated and spent six months in prison. After her release Junge worked as a secretary.

Filmmakers Andre Heller and Othmar Schmiderer interviewed Junge before her death and produced an intriguing documentary that delved into what has been called "the banality of evil." Junge demonstrated a great sense of guilt for what she should have known. Despite this, Efraim Zuroff, the director of the Simon Wiesenthal Center's Israel office, has said, "Her story reflects the blind loyalty of far too many Germans whose allegiance to Hitler and the Nazi party enabled the implementation of the final solution" (Hooper 2002).

—Bernard Cook

See also Germany, Women and the Home Front, World War II

References and Further Reading

- Hooper, John. "Traudl Junge: She Shared Hitler's Bunker, but Claimed Ignorance of the Holocaust," *The Guardian*, February 14, 2002.
- Junge, Gertraud. 1989. *Derniers témoins du bunker* [Last Witnesses in the Bunker]. Trans. Jan Dalley, ed. Pierre Galante and Eugène Silianoff. London: Sidgwick and Jackson.
- . 2004. *Until the Final Hour: Hitler's Last Secretary* [*Bis zur letzten Stunde*]. Ed. Melissa Müller, trans. Anthea Bell. New York: Arcade.

K

KASHMIR, CONFLICT IN, WOMEN AND

Site of tension and conflict between India and Pakistan since their independence in 1947. More than 4 million Muslims live in Kashmir, a region that has been governed by India but claimed by Pakistan since the partition of British India in 1947. The roots of the conflict are somewhat arcane. Muslims have long been in the majority in Kashmir, but the population also includes large minorities of Hindus, Sikhs, and Buddhists. At the time of partition, the state was ruled by a Hindu maharaja who initially thought he might be able to assert Kashmir's independence. When Muslim forces marched on the capital to protect the Muslim majority's right to become part of Pakistan, the maharaja called on the Indian army to protect his own ancestral right to determine Kashmir's future. The relatively dormant conflict intensified again in the late 1980s, and between 25,000 and 80,000 combatants and civilians have been killed since that time (Crittenden 1998). In 2005 approximately 100,000 Indian troops were stationed in the region to combat the Muslim insurgency that has extended over almost a half-century. The violence has severely impacted the tourist industry that has been the focal point of the region's economic development. Beyond the cal-

culable physical and material costs, the conflict has taken a tremendous toll on the mental health of the population, psychologically traumatizing many of those who are most vulnerable—women, children, and the aged.

A five-year study by Human Rights Watch has documented the use of rape and other attacks on women as a means of terrorizing both the Muslim and Indian populations of Kashmir (Fife 1995). Muslim insurgents have used the threat of violence, in particular rape, both to coerce Muslim villagers into providing material support and to erode Hindu villagers' confidence that their military could protect them (Moore and Anderson 1995). In the ostensibly less reactionary cities of the region Muslim extremists have also been responsible for the shootings of young Muslim women who have worn pants in public (Farrell 2000). Because the insurgents have made it impossible for government agencies to deliver family-planning services, there has been an increase in "back street" and self-induced abortions among women of all ethnicities. The region's hospitals have been incapable of keeping up with the manifold demands on facilities, staff, and medical resources. Women suffering from botched abortions have often chosen to die rather than face the stigma of seeking whatever treatment might be available (Goldenberg 1995).

On the other side of the conflict, the Indian army has been accused of everything from ignoring random atrocities committed against the Muslim population to secretly endorsing such terror tactics—an integral part of their overall strategy against the insurgents. Moreover, the Indian press has been reluctant to report atrocities, including rapes, committed by Indian troops, fearing that any acknowledgment of these incidents will undermine the Indian claim to Kashmir and provide the Muslim insurgents with ready propaganda (Moore and Anderson 1995). The Indian government and press have, however, publicized fact-finding visits to the region by Indian groups such as the Women's Guild of Service, which has sought to provide medical services and vocational training to Kashmiri widows.

The conflict has lasted for so long that even the most remote parts of the region have been affected by the violence. According to a report in *The Independent* written by Tim McGirk and Mukhtiar Kupwara, 800 Indian soldiers allegedly surrounded the isolated Muslim village of Kunan Poshpura on the night of February 23, 1991. After compelling all of the men in the village to leave their homes and putting them under armed guard in a nearby field, the remaining Indian soldiers systematically went from house to house, gang-raping the women of the village. More than 60 women claimed to have been raped, some by 6 or more soldiers. One woman who was 9 months pregnant claimed that she had been gang-raped and then kicked in the abdomen by one of her attackers. Four days later, her full-term baby boy was born with a broken arm. In response to escalating rumors about the incident, the Indian government formally denied the allegations, dismissing them as flagrant propaganda. The report in *The Independent*, however, emphasizes that the Indian government responded slowly to the allegations, as if hoping the reports of the atrocities would attract minimal attention and eventually disappear under the almost constant accounts of violence in the region.

—Martin Kich

See also East Timor, Abuse of Women during War; Tamils, Women and the Conflict in Sri Lanka

References and Further Reading

- Baldauf, Scott. "Peace, on Women's Terms." *Christian Science Monitor*, June 13, 2001.
- Crittenden, Jules. "Despair in Kashmir: A Vale of Tears—In Kashmir Rivers of Blood Flow through a Lost Paradise." *Boston Herald*, August 31, 1998.
- Dhar, Aarti. "India: 'Healing Touch' for Jammu and Kashmir Widows." *Hindu*, June 21, 2000.
- Farrell, Stephen. "Taliban-Style Terror Comes to Kashmir." *Times* (London), June 3, 2000.
- Fife, Robert. "Rape Used as a Tactic in War; Human Rights Watch." *Toronto Sun*, September 4, 1995.
- Goldenberg, Suzanne. "Kashmiri Hospital Patients Pay the Price of Uprising against Indian Rule." *Guardian* ([London]), September 9, 1995.
- McGirk, Tim, and Mukhtiar Kupwara. "Indian Villagers Tell of Mass Rape by Soldiers." *Independent* (London), March 19, 1991.
- Mishra, Pankaj. "Pride and Blood in Kashmir." *New York Times*, March 22, 2000.
- Moore, Molly, and John Ward Anderson. "Kashmir in Flames: Why India Hides from the Truth." *Washington Post*, May 21, 1995.

KEA, SALARIA (1917–1990)

The only African American nurse among the medical volunteers with the Abraham Lincoln Battalion during the Spanish Civil War. Salaria Kea was born in Georgia in 1917. Her father was killed when she was three months old, and after the remarriage of her mother, Salaria and her three brothers were raised by family friends in Akron, Ohio. Despite the fact that her brothers had to leave school at an early age, Salaria's foster family was inspired by her academic ability and athletic talent and was able to keep her in school. In secondary school she was determined to play basketball despite racial prejudice

and gained a transfer to another school, which accepted her right to play on an integrated team.

Salaria trained as a nurse at the Harlem Hospital in New York. It was there she became involved in civil rights protests and developed an interest in international politics as a result of the Italian invasion of Ethiopia. She organized the shipment of medical supplies to the beleaguered Ethiopians. When the Spanish Civil War erupted in July 1936, she decided to serve in Spain with the Second American Medical Unit. Salaria Kea was the only African American among the forty-eight nurses in the group. The unit set up a base hospital at Villa Paz near Madrid. Kea also served near the front at Teruel. She was captured by the Nationalists but escaped after seven weeks and rejoined her unit. Kea was later seriously wounded in a bombardment, which necessitated her return to the United States.

After she recovered, Kea volunteered to serve in France as a nurse with the United States Army Nurse Corps during World War II. After the war she married John O'Reilly, an Irishman.

—Bernard Cook

See also Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War II; Spanish Civil War, Women and the; Thurstan, Violetta

References and Further Reading

- Adie, Kate. 2003. *Corsets to Camouflage: Women and War*. Published in association with The Imperial War Museum, London. London: Hodder and Stoughton.
- Endres, Kathleen. 2004. "Salaria Kea O'Reilly." Akron Women's History. http://www3.uakron.edu/scholcomm/womenshistory/oreilly_k.htm (accessed November 29, 2004).

KEMPNER, VITKA (1920–)

Jewish partisan who fought the Nazis during World War II. Born in the Polish town of

Kalisch in 1920, Vitka Kempner fled Poland following the German conquest in 1939. Arriving in Vilna, Lithuania, after an arduous journey on foot, Kempner linked up with fellow members of *HaShomer HaTzair* (the Young Guard), a Zionist youth organization. They helped her find work and a roommate, Ruzka Korczak, another refugee from Poland. Following the German invasion of the Soviet Union and conquest of Lithuania, both Kempner and Korczak joined an underground resistance movement organized by Abba Kovner, a Young Guard leader. Kovner built his organization, the *Fareynigte Partizaner Organizatsie* (FPO; United Partisan Organization) into one of the largest and most effective Jewish partisan units of the war.

Kempner, who bleached her hair blond and could pass as non-Jewish, became one of the FPO's most important scouts and spies. She frequently traveled from the Vilna ghetto, where the Germans had ordered all Jews confined, past German patrols to nearby forests to meet with various partisan units. She helped smuggle weapons into the ghetto and led an FPO team on one of its first missions, the successful demolition of a German train as it crossed a bridge. As the Germans slowly deported Jews from the ghetto to labor and death camps, Kempner helped Kovner smuggle more and more partisans out of Vilna and into the nearby forests. She led the last group out of Vilna on the night of September 23–24, 1943, shortly before the Germans massacred the ghetto's remaining inhabitants. Operating from bases in the forests, Kempner and the FPO continued to conduct sabotage operations against the Germans for the next year, blowing up trains and bridges, cutting telephone lines, and supplying the Soviet army with important intelligence. The FPO also rescued several hundred Jews from labor camps.

After the war, Kovner and 50 other partisans, including 8 women, formed a new organization, *Nakam* (Hebrew for revenge), to avenge the Holocaust. The Jewish leadership in Palestine opposed extrajudicial revenge and blocked

Nakam's attempts to smuggle large quantities of poison into Europe to use against Allied-held Nazi prisoners. Kovner persevered, and Nakam operatives sought out targets in Europe and manufactured poison on their own. Kempner coordinated part of this operation from Paris and decided to focus on the Nuremberg camp, where the Allies held 30,000 Nazi and SS prisoners. Nakam operatives poisoned the camp's bread shipment with arsenic in April 1946. Several thousand prisoners became seriously ill and more than 100 died over the next few months as a direct result of arsenic poisoning (Cohen 2000, 212). Afterward, Kempner smuggled the plot's participants into Palestine, where she married Abba Kovner. Along with several other former partisans, they settled in Kibbutz Ein Hahoresh.

—Stephen K. Stein

See also Korczak, Rozka; Landau, Emilia

References and Further Reading

- Arad, Yitzhak. 1982. *Ghetto in Flames: The Struggle and Destruction of the Jews in Vilna in the Holocaust*. New York: Holocaust Library.
- Bar-Zohar, Michael. 1967. *The Avengers*. New York: Hawthorne Books.
- Cohen, Rich. 2000. *The Avengers: A Jewish War Story*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf.
- Levin, Dov. 1985. *Fighting Back: Lithuanian Jewry's Armed Resistance to the Nazis, 1941–1945*. Translated by Moshe Kohn and Dina Cohen. New York and London: Holmes and Meier.

KHAN, NOOR INAYAT
(1914–1944)

British secret agent during World War II. Noor Inayat Khan (Madeleine), was one of the first group of 40 female radio operators assigned by British Special Operations Executive (SOE) to

work with the resistance movement in France. She enlisted in the Women's Auxiliary Air Force (WAAF) in November 1940. She was the first woman sent to France, not as a courier but as a wireless operator. Noor was captured, held for nearly a year, and was executed by the Germans at Dachau concentration camp.

Khan, also known as Princess Noor-un-nisa, was a descendent of the Indian spiritual and political leader Tipu Sultan and Christian Science founder Mary Baker Eddy. Her father was a Sufi leader from a mystic Islamic sect who moved his family to Russia at the invitation of Czar Nicholas. Noor was born in the Kremlin in 1914 and later moved with her family to Suresnes, near Paris. After graduation from the Sorbonne, Khan was employed as a writer for Radio Parks but left France with her mother and siblings following the German invasion.

Radio communications were essential to the French Underground movement. The British used radio to organize the delivery of supplies, weapons, and funds by parachute drop and boat. Radio operation required months of training. The Germans had sophisticated radio detection equipment, and operators were frequently able to work only a few months before capture.

With her fluency in French, Khan was an invaluable operative. She had trained as a nurse but later joined the SOE when her oldest brother enlisted in the Royal Air Force. Within a week of her June 1943 arrival in France, three important agents were betrayed, leaving Khan as the only Paris radio contact. Because of the extreme danger, she was ordered to return, but Khan continued to send messages. She was captured and tortured after only three and a half months in the field. She managed to escape twice but was recaptured each time. Khan was transferred to Pforzheim and held in solitary confinement until she was moved, with fellow SOE radio operator Yolande Beekman and two SOE couriers, Eliane Plewman and Madeleine Damerment, to the Dachau concentration camp. All four were shot on September 11, 1944. Khan was posthumously awarded the

George Cross and the Croix de Guerre (Gold Cross) and was designated as the first woman saint of the Sufi religious order.

—*Pamela Lee Gray*

See also Atkins, Vera H.; Beekman, Yolande; Damerment, Madeleine; Plewman, Eliane

References and Further Reading

- Binney, Marcus. 2003. *The Women Who Lived for Danger: The Agents of the Special Operations Executive*. New York: HarperCollins.
- Fuller, Jean Overton. 1952. *Madeleine*. London: Gollancz.

KING, OLIVE (1885–1958)

Driver with the Scottish Women's Hospitals (SWH) in France and Serbia; sergeant with the Serbian army; administrator of the Australian–Serbian Canteens. Olive King, who was born in Sydney, Australia, in 1885, was the daughter of a wealthy philanthropist, Sir George Kelso King. She attended finishing schools in Germany and Switzerland, where she became fluent in French and German. Olive was an avid athlete, and after she returned to Australia, her father purchased a large touring car for her, and she developed a passion for rally driving. Following an adventurous trip to Mexico financed by her father (who was anxious to get her away from a supposedly “fortune-hunting” boyfriend), Olive moved to England to manage the household of her sister Sunny, who was pregnant for the third time.

When World War I broke out, Olive decided to put her driving skills to work as an ambulance driver. In May 1915 King bought an ambulance and joined the Girton and Newnham Unit of the SWH, stationed first in Troyes, France, then in the Balkans. The SWH unit established a tent hospital in Ghevgeli, Serbia, but after a few weeks was forced to retreat to Salonika, Greece.

In 1916 King left the SWH for the Serbian army and served as a driver attached to the Medical Service Headquarters in Salonika. Her duties included transporting officers and supplies to the front. While in Salonika she had short-lived romances with Captain Milan Yovitchitch, the Serbian liaison officer to the British army, and a fellow army driver.

She worked closely with the men in her garage, who were usually hungry. This inspired King to establish a canteen for those who were not allowed to use the Allied canteen. With the help of her father, who established a fund in Sydney, Australia, between 1918 and 1920 King and her staff organized and ran more than ten canteens in locations throughout Serbia including Belgrade, Nish, Baja, Kragujevats, Kraljevo, Vinkovici, Bord, and Skoplje. Although King came down with malaria and had difficulty in securing transportation and supplies, her canteens provided comfort and affordable food to soldiers and civilians. When the canteens closed, King donated the remainder of the fund to Belgrade University for the establishment of an institute of anthropology, sociology, and economics.

During World War II, King again volunteered to be an ambulance driver, but, to her disappointment, she was rejected because of her age. She did, however, serve as an examiner at the De Havilland aircraft factory in Mascot, Australia, before returning to England to care for her ill sister. Olive King received the Serbian Gold Medal for Zealous Service and the Silver Bravery Medal. King died in Australia in 1958.

—*Barbara Penny Kanner*

See also Hutton, Lady Isabel Galloway; Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's Hospitals; Sandes, Flora

References and Further Reading

- De Vries, Susanna. 2004. *Heroic Australian Women in War*. Sydney: HarperCollins.
- King, Hazel, ed. 1986. *One Woman at War: Letters of Olive King, 1915–1920*. Melbourne: Melbourne University Press.

KIRCHNER, JOHANNA
(1899–1944)

German anti-Nazi resister. Johanna Kirchner was born in Frankfurt on April 24, 1889. Her family was aligned with the Social Democratic party. Kirchner joined the Socialist youth organization when she was fourteen and the Social Democratic party when she was eighteen. In 1913 she married Karl Kirschner, a metal worker turned journalist and Social Democratic party secretary. She worked for the party's Workers' Welfare Organization in Frankfurt and served as a party press officer. Her opposition to the Nazis forced her to seek safety in France, first in the French-occupied Saar region and then in France proper, where she worked as a cook and servant. Kirchner continued her political and welfare work, however, organizing refuge for people fleeing the Nazi regime and maintaining contact with the internal resistance in Germany.

With the outbreak of the war, Kirchner was temporarily interned as a German national by the French. Friends in France secured her release, but with the German victory, the Vichy government handed her over to the Nazis. Following interrogation by the Gestapo, she was sentenced to ten years of imprisonment. New proceedings in April 1944 produced a death sentence after a mere half hour, and Kirchner was executed at Plötzensee Prison on June 9, 1944.

—Bernard Cook

See also Buch, Eva Maria; Fittko, Lisa; Harnack-Fish, Mildred; Kuckhoff, Greta; Monte, Hilda; Niederkirchner, Käthe; Schulze-Boysen, Libertas

References and Further Reading

Leber, Annedore. 1994. *Conscience in Revolt: Sixty-Four Stories of Resistance in Germany, 1933–1945*. Boulder, CO: Westview.

KLEECK, MARY VAN

See Van Kleeck, Mary

KNOCKER, ELSIE

See T'Serclaes, Baroness Elizabeth de

KOCH, ILSE (1906–1967)

The wife of Karl Otto Koch, the commandant of the Sachsenhausen and Buchenwald concentration camps. The inmates of Buchenwald called Koch the "Witch of Buchenwald" (Manvell and Fraenkel 1967, 84). Ilse Köhler was born in Dresden on September 22, 1906. She worked as a secretary and typist in Berlin and joined the Nazi party in 1932. She had been Karl Koch's mistress and in 1936 married him in a Nazi ceremony. She went with him when he was transferred from Sachsenhausen to Buchenwald in 1937. Both were promiscuous sexual sadists. Ilse Koch collected lampshades made from the tanned skin of prisoners and even had a handbag covered with tanned tattooed skin. She had a riding hall constructed at the camp by slave laborers for her personal pleasure. She and her husband were charged by the SS with embezzlement and were arrested. Though she was released, he was executed by the Nazi regime in April 1945.

After the war Ilse Koch was tried by an American military court. She avoided a death sentence because she was pregnant. She was, however, sentenced to life imprisonment, but the sentence was subsequently reduced and she was released. In 1949 Koch was charged with multiple murders. She was rearrested by the West German government, was tried, and was sen-

tenced to life imprisonment. On September 1, 1967, she hung herself in her cell in the Aichach Prison in Bavaria.

—Bernard Cook

See also Bilien, Valentina; Grese, Irma; Plavsic, Biljana

References and Further Reading

- Manvell, Roger, and Heinrich Fraenkel. 1967. *Incomparable Crime: Mass Extermination in the Twentieth Century: The Legacy of Guilt*. New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons.
- Shirer, William L. 1990. *Rise and Fall of the Third Reich: A History of Nazi Germany*. New York: Simon and Schuster.

KOLLONTAI, ALEXANDRA (1872–1952)

Russian revolutionary. The 1917 Revolution in Russia not only ushered millions of workers and peasants onto the historical stage, it also advanced a whole layer of representatives of the socialist intelligentsia—bearers of the revolution's political consciousness—who had imbibed the international traditions of European social democracy. Women played an important role in this milieu. The Bolshevik seizure of power in 1917 and the ensuing communist regime, however, have often been portrayed as a man's revolution, with women as bystanders or even victims.

Though women, protesting shortages of food and fuel on International Women's Day on March 8, 1917, in Petrograd, played a central role in the disturbances that triggered the fall of the monarchy, few women stand out as leading figures in the revolution. An exception is Alexandra Kollontai. The daughter of a Russian general, she was born Alexandra Domontovich in

Ukraine in 1872. The family moved to St. Petersburg, but Alexandra was not allowed to go to school as her parents were worried that she would meet "undesirable elements." In 1893 Alexandra, to escape the domination of her parents, married an engineer, Vladimir Kollontai. She gave birth to a son but left her husband after three years of marriage. Alexandra Kollontai worked for a number of educational charities. This involved visiting people living in extreme poverty. It was at this time that she became interested in Marxism. During the 1896 strike of textile workers in St. Petersburg, Kollontai organized collections for the strikers. She also began writing articles for political journals about the plight of industrial workers in Russia. In August 1896 Kollontai left Russia and became a student of labor history at the University of Zurich. There she became a committed Marxist and joined the Russian Social Democratic Labor Party.

On her return to Russia, Kollontai, whose mother was from Finland, began to take a keen interest in the Finnish struggle for independence. She helped workers in Finland organize themselves into trade unions and wrote articles about the struggle between the Finnish people and the Russian autocracy. Her book, *The State of the Working Class in Finland*, was published in 1903.

When Lenin and his followers, the Bolsheviks, broke with the Mensheviks in 1903, Kollontai found it difficult to choose between the two. Kollontai eventually decided to not join either group and instead offered her services to both factions. After witnessing Bloody Sunday, Kollontai concentrated on establishing a trade union movement in Russia. She was particularly active in helping to organize female workers and arranged special meetings and clubs for them.

Kollontai became increasingly concerned about the dictatorial attitudes of Vladimir Lenin and the Bolsheviks, and in 1906 she joined the Mensheviks. Two years later she was



Alexandra (Aleksandra Mikhailovna) Kollontai.
(Hulton Archive/Getty Images)

forced to flee Russia after her pamphlet, *Finland and Socialism*, was published. Her call for an armed insurrection upset Russian authorities, and to avoid arrest, she went to live in Germany. In 1915 Kollontai joined the Bolsheviks. She returned to Russia following the February 1917 Revolution and participated in the Bolshevik October Revolution. Although her relations with Lenin were not cordial, she was appointed commissar for social welfare in the male-dominated Bolshevik administration. She clashed with Lenin and was marginalized after identifying with dissident Bolsheviks. She was posted abroad from 1923 until 1945. Kollontai survived the Stalinist purges and died on March 9, 1952.

—Olivier Buirette

See also Russian Revolution and Women

References and Further Reading

- Figes, Orlando, and Boris Kolonitskii. 1999. *Interpreting the Russian Revolution: The Language and Symbols of 1917*. New Haven, CT: Yale University.
- Fitzpatrick, Sheila, and Yuri Slezkine. 2000. *In the Shadow of Revolution: Life Stories of Russian Women from 1917 to the Second World War*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.
- McDermid, Jane, and Anna Hillyar. 2004. *Midwives of the Revolution: Female Bolsheviks and Women Workers in 1917*. Athens: Ohio University.
- Spartacus Web. "Russian Revolution."
<http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/LRUSsimulation.htm> (accessed March 26, 2004).
- World Socialist Website. <http://www.wsws.org/articles/2003/jul2003/sedv-j01.shtml> (accessed March 26, 2004).

KOLLWITZ, KATHE
(1867–1944)

German artist whose works illustrated the suffering caused by poverty and war. Kathe Kollwitz (née Schmidt) was born in Königsberg, Prussia, in 1867. As a young graphic artist, Kollwitz, who attended the School for Women Artists in Berlin and the Academy of Arts in Munich, unequivocally depicted her concerns for oppressed victims in anguished portrayals of poverty, unemployment, and hunger. In 1891 she married Karl Kollwitz, a physician who ran a clinic for the needy in one of Berlin's most impoverished neighborhoods. As Kollwitz worked alongside her husband, she became even more moved by the exploitation of the poor. Initially committed to revolution as a means of attacking societal ills, Kollwitz earned her artistic reputation for depictions of historical events such as the revolt of Silesian weavers in 1844, first exhibited as *The Weavers' Rebellion* in 1898, and for her series, *The Peasant War*, based on an unsuccessful uprising of sixteenth-century peasants. Com-

pleted in 1908, *The Peasant War* earned her a year's study in Italy.

Between 1908 and 1943, Kollwitz recorded her thoughts in journals, which were published in 1955. Although her entries for August 1914 revealed a mother's fear that her two sons might enlist in the military, they also indicated that she was so swayed by the rhetoric of sacrifice that she persuaded her husband that their second-born son, Peter, was doing his duty to Germany by volunteering. Although her diaries record overwhelming expressions of grief after Peter was killed on the western front in October 1914, they also include her avowal to keep the faith. Inspired by Goethe's philosophical statement that "seed for the planting must not be ground," Kollwitz was determined to cultivate her own artistic talent to achieve what Peter, an aspiring artist, might have accomplished himself. In 1916 she also completed the first of eighty-four self-portraits (Kearns 1976, 135).

By 1918, distressed by the huge numbers of young German men who had been killed and appalled by the devastating effect of war on human lives, Kollwitz concluded that her son and others had sacrificed their lives for hollow and meaningless ideals. Hence, she refuted poet Richard Dehmel's appeal for all fit men to volunteer in order to save Germany's honor. She published an open letter in a socialist daily, pleading that "no more should die" (Friedrichsmeyer 1989, 213). Kollwitz's etchings and lithographs had routinely demonstrated a deep and abiding compassion for the suffering of mothers and children. After the war, however, she realized these figures were the primary victims of social injustice and warfare, and they became the major focus of her work. When asked to create a memorial to the memory of Karl Liebknecht, the leader of the German Communist Party who was murdered in 1919, Kollwitz reluctantly agreed. Although she had abandoned her belief in revolution and violence as a means of achieving social justice, she had applauded his antiwar stance. The memorial, *Gedankbläh für Karl Liebknecht* (Memorial for Karl Liebknecht), the

first of many woodcuts, emphasized the workers filing past Liebknecht's bier rather than the revolutionary figure himself.

Although Kollwitz never joined any movements, she produced several posters for the International Workers Aid organization and offered the Women's International League for Peace and Freedom some of her lithographs. In 1924 she created her most famous poster, *Never Again War*, which depicted a young German raising his arm to protest the call-to-arms. Kollwitz also completed a series of woodcuts entitled *War*, which portrayed women speaking forcefully of the need for peace. In 1931 she unveiled a pair of sculptures titled *Mourning Parents*, modeled on herself and her husband, Karl. Begun in 1916 as a memorial to Peter, who was killed and buried in Flanders, the work now paid tribute to all victims of war. The memorial was placed in the military cemetery at Vladslo, a few miles north of Ypres, in Belgium.

Kollwitz signed a manifesto that called for the parties of the left to unite against the Nazis. She paid a price, however, for this political gesture. When Hitler rose to power in 1933, the Nazis forced her to resign her position as the first woman elected to the Prussian Academy of Arts. They also took away her teaching position and her studio space and, after 1936, forbade her to exhibit her works, which they classified as "degenerate" (Klein 1975, 119). When the Gestapo, after hearing an interview they deemed incriminating, threatened to imprison the Kollwitzes in a concentration camp, the couple vowed to commit suicide rather than capitulate. The artist was once again overwhelmed with grief when her grandson, Peter, was killed while fighting for the German army in 1942. She was further devastated when her house was bombed in 1943. By 1944 Kollwitz had begun to call herself a pacifist, admonishing that pacifism did not consist of passive waiting but "hard, hard work" (Kollwitz 1955, 183–184). Moreover, in her last lithograph, *Seeds for the Sowing*, Kollwitz stressed that the image of a physically powerful mother enclosing and protecting her children in

her arms was not just encouraging an end to war but also demanding it. Kollwitz died at Moritzburg four months before the end of World War II.

—*Donna Coates*

See also *Trauma and Brutalization Unleashed by World War I*

References and Further Reading

- Friedrichsmeyer, Sara. 1989. "Seeds for the Sowing": The Diary of Kathe Kollwitz. Pages 205–282 in *Arms and the Woman: War, Gender, and Literary Representation*. Edited by Helen M. Cooper, Adrienne Auslander Munich, and Susan Merrill Squier. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press.
- Hinz, Renate, ed. 1981 *Kathe Kollwitz: Graphics, Posters, Drawings*. New York: Pantheon.
- Kearns, Martha. 1976. *Kathe Kollwitz: Woman and Artist*. New York: Feminist Press.
- Klein, Mina C., and H. Arthur Klein. 1975. *Kathe Kollwitz: Life in Art*. New York: Schocken.
- Kollwitz, Kathe. 1955. *The Diary and Letters of Kathe Kollwitz*. Edited by Hans Kollwitz. Chicago: Henry Regnery.

KORCZAK, ROZKA (1921–1988)

Jewish partisan who fought the Nazis during World War II. Born in Bielsko, Poland, in 1921, Rozka Korczak moved with her family to the small village of Plosk, where she attended the public school and experienced fierce anti-Jewish bigotry. As a teenager, she joined HaShomer HaTzair (the Young Guard), a Zionist youth organization. She fled Poland following the German conquest in 1939 and made her way on foot to Vilna, Lithuania. There she joined other members of the Young Guard, who helped her find work and a roommate, Vitka Kempner, another refugee from Poland. Following the German invasion of the Soviet Union and the con-

quest of Lithuania, both Korczak and Kempner joined an underground resistance movement organized by Abba Kovner, a Young Guard leader. Kovner built his organization, the Fareynigte Partizaner Organizatsie (FPO; United Partisan Organization), into one of the largest and most effective Jewish partisan units of the war.

Operating from the Vilna ghetto, where the Germans had ordered Jews confined, Korczak and fellow members of the FPO smuggled food and other supplies into the area. As the Germans slowly deported Jews from the ghetto to work and death camps, Korczak and other FPO members tried to convince residents to fight back against the Nazis. Some ghetto residents took up arms and joined the FPO, but most refused and insisted that resistance would simply provoke even harsher Nazi reprisals. In small groups, Kovner smuggled his partisans out of the ghetto and into the nearby Rudninkai Forest, where they set up camp and operated as saboteurs against the German army. Korczak was among the first to leave the ghetto. She distinguished herself in sabotage operations and emerged as one of the FPO's most important leaders. She led several raids against the Germans, and Kovner, with whom she had formed a close relationship, placed her in charge of the partisans' camp.

The FPO fought alongside the Soviet army to liberate Vilna in July 1944, but afterward the Soviets ordered the Jewish partisan units to disperse. Korczak and other FPO members turned their efforts toward helping Jewish refugees left starving and homeless by the war. Korczak helped smuggle some of the refugees past the British blockade and into Palestine, arriving there herself on December 12, 1944. She was among the first eyewitnesses to report to Jewish leaders on the severity of the Holocaust, and from Palestine she continued to help smuggle Jewish refugees into the country. Along with Kovner, Kempner, and other former partisans, she settled in Kibbutz Ein Hahoresht in 1946. She remained active in the kibbutz movement and Holocaust education until her death in 1988.

—*Stephen K. Stein*

See also Kempner, Vitka; Landau, Emilia

References and Further Reading

- Arad, Yitzhak. 1982. *Ghetto in Flames: The Struggle and Destruction of the Jews in Vilna in the Holocaust*. New York: Holocaust Library.
- Cohen, Rich. 2000. *The Avengers: A Jewish War Story*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf.
- Levin, Dov. 1985. *Fighting Back: Lithuanian Jewry's Armed Resistance to the Nazis, 1941–1945*. Translated by Moshe Kohn and Dina Cohen. New York and London: Holmes and Meier.

KOREA: COMFORT WOMEN

Korean sex slaves of the Japanese military. During World War II the Japanese military enslaved some 200,000 women from occupied territories, forcing them to serve as comfort women in brothels operated and used by military personnel. The term *comfort women* derives from the common Japanese euphemism for brothels—comfort stations. Although substantial numbers of these women were Chinese, Taiwanese, and Filipino, the largest number came from Korea, which had been under Japanese control since the conclusion of the first Sino-Japanese War in the late nineteenth century. Three-quarters of these comfort women died during the course of the war, and a substantial percentage of the survivors succumbed soon after due to the consequences of their enslavement—chronic malnourishment, communicable diseases, and severe psychological disorders that led to institutionalization or suicide (Pollitt 2001). Thus, despite the large numbers of women subjected to this type of enslavement, relatively few survived long enough to bring the crimes against them to the attention of the world. Indeed, because of the stigma attached to prostitution, whether forced or not, those women who did survive relatively

intact often wished to conceal their victimization in order to salvage what they could of their lives. Given that their patriarchal societies typically stigmatized the victims of rape, the comfort women could not have expected to be regarded with sympathy.

In the early 1990s, however, as the fiftieth anniversaries of the beginning and end of World War II occasioned a renewed interest in the events of that era, some of the surviving comfort women began to come forward, tell their personal stories, and demand a formal apology and compensation from the Japanese government. Having reconstructed their lives in the aftermath of the war, these women were now becoming elderly and recognized that the record of the atrocities committed against them might disappear entirely with their deaths if they did not speak out. Paradoxically, the Japanese government's long-standing reluctance to acknowledge any specific atrocities committed by the Japanese military during the war actually served to bring more attention to the almost forgotten enslavement of the comfort women. Moreover, some reactionary political elements in Japan provoked outrage by asserting that the comfort women had been volunteers, and the sense of outrage was compounded when this lie made its way into a very popular Japanese history published in comic-book form. Developments in the intervening decades—the women's rights movement, the postwar independence movements in the non-Western world, the development of a postcolonial consciousness, and the continual reminders of the war criminals who had escaped judgment before the tribunals of the immediate postwar years—all served to create sympathy for the comfort women, not only because of the crimes committed against them but also because of the long delay in bringing their oppressors to justice. The comfort women, called *halmoni* in Korean, eventually formed an organization, the Korean Council for the Women Drafted for Sexual Slavery in Japan, in order to share and create a documentary record of their experiences; to create a clearinghouse for information, contacts, and

services of use to the membership; and to assist with legal and journalistic inquiries. By the late 1990s there were about 150 surviving comfort women in Korea.

The Japanese government has long claimed that its \$500 million reparation payment to South Korea in 1965, when the two nations normalized relations, included any compensation due to the comfort women (*The Economist*, October 10, 1998). In 1995 Japanese Prime Minister Tomiichi Muayama expressed his great personal regret at the enslavement of the comfort women, but he stopped short of offering a formal government apology. Likewise, although he established a fund to compensate these women, the compensation was loosely defined and the fund was to be sustained by voluntary contributions from Japanese corporations, not by monies allocated from the Japanese government. The sense that these were at best half-measures was reinforced by a Japanese appeals court decision to overturn an almost token award made to three of the comfort women; the three had brought a civil case against former Japanese officers who had run the brothels in which the women had been forced to work. When the women attempted to use the U.S. Alien Tort Claims Act—which allows foreigners to use U.S. courts to sue for compensation for human rights violations—the cases were derailed by the intervention of the U.S. State Department, which pointed out that treaties between the United States and Japan precluded claims for damages resulting from the war. Again, there was a great show of sympathy for the comfort women but very little actual action on their behalf. Internationally, the most positive, concrete result of the comfort women's testimony and the increased activism on their behalf has been the pointed judicial attention paid by international courts to crimes against women in subsequent conflicts such as those in Bosnia and Rwanda.

In Korea itself, however, the government has established a fund to support the former comfort women, now largely elderly and retired. A

residence called the House of Sharing, intended for those women who can no longer rely on family support, has been built adjacent to the Memorial Hall for Comfort Women, a multipurpose facility that is part memorial, part museum, part art gallery, and part educational center. In the past decade, several noteworthy novels have explored the lives of the comfort women: Nora Okja Keller's *Comfort Woman* (1997); Chang-Rae Lee's *A Gesture Life* (1999); and Therese Park's *A Gift of the Emperor* (1997).

—Martin Kich

See also Korea, Women and the Home Front, World War II

References and Further Reading

- The Economist*. 1996. "Cold Comfort." May 18: 36–37.
- . 1998. "Squid, Remorse, and Unpop Music." October 10: 38–39.
- Hirofumi, Hayashi. 1998. Japanese Comfort Women in Southeast Asia. *Japan Forum* 10 (September):211–219.
- Piper, Nicola. 2001. Transnational Women's Activism in Japan and Korea: The Unresolved Issue of Military Sexual Slavery. *Global Networks* 1 (April):155–170.
- Pollitt, Katha. 2001. Subject to Debate. *Nation*, June 11:10.
- Shanahan, Noreen. 1999. The Fifty-Year Search for Justice. *Herizons* 12 (Winter):15–17.
- . 1999. Kim Soon-duk. *New Internationalist* 312 (May):34–35.
- Stetz, Margaret D., and Bonnie B. C. Oh, eds. 2001. *Legacies of the Comfort Women of World War II*. Armonk, NY: M. E. Sharpe.
- Tanaka, Toshiyuki. 2002. *Japan's Comfort Women: Sexual Slavery and Prostitution during World War II and the U.S. Occupation*. London: Routledge.
- Yoshiaki, Yoshimi. 2000. *Comfort Women: Sexual Slavery in the Japanese Military during World War II*. New York: Columbia.

KOREA, WOMEN AND THE HOME FRONT, WORLD WAR II

Numerous changes for women on the Korean Peninsula were brought about by World War II. Prior to the onset of the war, Confucianism's rigid hierarchical order of human relationships largely restricted women's roles in Korea to that of wife and mother. Japanese colonial policy (1910–1945), in conjunction with manpower shortages caused by military conscription, created a breakdown in the Confucian value system as women were increasingly recruited to work in factories and fields. Grinding rural poverty and a desire to help support their families forced growing numbers of impoverished young women with little or no formal education to migrate to Seoul in search of employment. This migration laid the foundation for changes that would reverberate throughout Korea in the coming decades.

Patriarchal Korean society was put under extreme pressure by the Japanese colonial administration during World War II as imperial policies sought to exploit every available resource on the Korean Peninsula. As acute manpower shortages brought about by military conscription devastated the economy, women were viewed as an exploitable and inexpensive labor supply. Workers were needed to replace men forcibly transferred to Japan's mines and factories to support the Japanese war effort. In an effort to fully mobilize Korean society, the Japanese colonial administration established the Women's Volunteer Labor Corp in 1944 as a means of providing cheap labor for Japanese factories in Korea and Japan.

Not all women chose to conform to the rigid patriarchal social system that defined a woman's place in society. Some decided to go underground to fight the Japanese occupation while other activists fled Korea in order to join overseas independence movements. Some women had also gained access to education.

Under Japanese educational policy, Korean children were indoctrinated to become subjects

of the emperor. Nevertheless, increasing numbers of parents, inspired by the ideas of modernization and Korean national liberation, began sending their daughters to school. By the start of World War II some women had entered the education mainstream. During the war, however, Japan's mass military mobilization forced many Korean women to quit their studies to work in service industries and factories to support the war effort.

It was also during World War II that thousands of Korean women were forcibly conscripted and shipped throughout Asia as "comfort women" to service the sexual needs of Japanese troops. As far back as the 1920s, Japanese agents recruited Korean women with promises of jobs abroad. Once separated from their families, the women were forced into prostitution. It became commonplace for Korean women to be abducted and sold to pay debts or forced to become sex slaves for the Japanese military. Following Japan's defeat, Korean comfort women were either deserted or detained in allied POW camps; some never returned home.

—Keith A. Leitich

See also Korea: Comfort Women

References and Further Reading

- Cho, Kyung Won. 1994. *Overcoming Confucian Barriers: Changing Educational Opportunities for Women in Korea*. In *Women of Japan and Korea: Continuity and Change*. Edited by Joyce Gelb and Marian Lief Palley. Philadelphia: Temple.
- Hicks, George. 1995. *The Comfort Women: Japan's Brutal Regime of Enforced Prostitution in the Second War*. New York: W. W. Norton.
- Lee, Hyo-Chae, and Joo-Sook Kim. 1979. *The Status of Korean Women*. Seoul: Ehwa Women's University.
- Park, Yong-Ock. 1977. *The Women's Modernization Movement in Korea*. In *Virtues in Conflict: Tradition and the Korean Woman Today*. Edited by Sandra Mattielli. Seoul: Royal Asiatic Society, Korea Branch/Samhwa.

KOREAN WAR, AMERICAN
WOMEN AND THE

The mobilization of American women necessitated by the Korean War (1950–1953). In June 1950, when the Korean War began, 22,000 women were serving in the U.S. armed forces as a result of the Women’s Armed Services Integration Act of 1948. Of this number, nurses comprised 7,000. The remainder served in the ranks of the Women’s Army Corps (WAC), Women Accepted for Voluntary Emergency Service (WAVES; or Navy Women’s Reserve), Women

Marines, and Women in the Air Force (WAF). As the U.S. government moved more men to the front, women again assumed vacated clerical and administrative, engineering, and technical positions.

Before recruiting began in earnest, 1,600 servicewomen of the Organized Reserve Corps (which in 1952 became known as the U.S. Army Reserve) returned to the Army Nurse Corps, Women’s Medical Specialist Corps, and the WAC. A total of 640 military nurses served in Korea (540 from the army, 50 from the navy, and 50 from the air force). Seventy percent of the

KOREAN WAR (1950–1953)

American Army Nurses

“Army nurses were the first American women to be dispatched with the Armed Forces to the combat zone. A unit assigned to a mobile surgical hospital arrived here July 5 (1950), less than 10 days after hostilities began. Now with more than 300 nurses in the combat zone, they are providing expert surgical and bedside care in every hospital to which wounded are evacuated.”

—John P Wooden, “Background on Army Nurses in Korea,”
Department of the Army, Office of the Surgeon General,
Technical Information Office, February 12, 1951, Record Group 112,
Office of the Surgeon General, U.S. Medical Department (AMEDD) Records 1947–1961,
HD 211 (Nurses) Korea, National Archives and Records Administration, College Park, MD.

“As in the case of other early acute military shortages, we didn’t have nearly enough nurses to go around. Anesthetists, like 1st Lieutenant Katherine Wilson, Wanesboro, Va., were obliged to serve as many as six operating tables simultaneously and at times worked until they themselves were nearly anesthetized by the fumes.”

—SFC Doug Du Bois, “Angels of Mercy,” *Stars and Stripes*, October 14, 1950.

Margaret Zane’s Notebook

Zane, assistant chief nurse of the first MASH unit, had served in Europe during World War II and was then assistant operating room supervisor at the Walter Reed Hospital, Washington, D.C. In 1950, she was transferred overseas, assigned to a hospital in Korea.

“ . . . based on World War II experience, [n]inety percent of fatal casualties occurred on the front line because the critically wounded could not receive immediate surgical treatment. Therefore it seemed logical to set up a hospital unit mobile enough to render this service on division level reasonably safe from the fighting. Some authorities debated sending female nurses with this type of unit on the grounds that it was a rough and rugged existence and the girls couldn’t take it.”

army nurses were attached to Mobile Army Surgical Hospital (MASH) Units. In the United States, 120,000 military servicewomen served during the war, primarily as clerks and administrators.

In 1950, 629 WAC personnel served in the Far East Command (FEC) Headquarters. By 1951 their numbers had increased to 2,600. Women were able to rise in the ranks and to move into arenas formerly occupied only by men. Women were ward masters in military hospitals in Japan and senior noncommissioned officers (NCOs) in motor pools, mess halls, and

post offices. Women could be found in administration, in communications, and in intelligence. They worked as censors, interpreters, draftsmen, weather personnel, and even aides-de-camp.

The Army Nurse Corps (ANC) numbered 3,450 in 1950. By 1951 it had grown to 5,397 women, the majority of these being World War II veterans. Five hundred and forty nurses volunteered to serve in Korea. One, Captain Viola McConnell of the U.S. Military Advisory Group/Republic of Korea (USMAG/ROK), assisted in the evacuation of 700 Americans from

October 1950

“They ran into their first brush with death at the hands of the enemy when their unit, attached to the 7th Division, was ordered to move to Pusan on October 7 by convoy. Twice during the 326-mile trip over rugged mountain roadways, the motorcade was attacked by North Koreans, who had been bypassed by American troops. At 3 A.M. in the pitch dark of a single-file mountain pass, a battalion of Reds opened up on the 1,000-yard-long line of vehicles composed of medics, signalmen and other service troops. The nurses scrambled into a roadside ditch, while the battle flared all about them. . . . All through the night they huddled together for warmth in the cold roadside pit as machine guns and rifles hammered. Tracers penciled lines in the night overhead and ricochets screamed from hillside rock. The siege lasted nearly 12 hours and then a mile further [the siege] reoccurred.”

—Tom A. Hamrick,

“The Lucky 13: Army Nurses in Korea Bring Medical Aid and Morale to Frontlines,”
Pacific Stars and Stripes, clipping in Zane’s notebook.

November 1951

“Our hospital was the last to evacuate Hungnan. It was not a happy farewell when the soldiers escorted us to the beach. Just before our LCM pulled away, one dewy-eyed youth cried out, ‘Everything seemed all right as long as the nurses were here.’”

—Captain Margaret Zane (later Fleming), Report on Nursing Aspects in Korea,
Army Nurse Corps, November 1951, Collection no. 1925, Margaret (Zane) Fleming Collection,
Gift of Frances Zane, Women in Military Service for America Memorial Foundation, Inc.

American Teacher Working for the U.S. Air Force

“ . . . working in Korea with the fellows fighting there proved to be the ultimate experience of my lifetime. When I first arrived at Air Base K-13, four or five USO girls were also assigned there but, within 6 weeks, they were removed. . . . Then I was the only woman on a base of 5,000 men.”

—Ann B. Zoss (later Roberts), teacher in the GED-Educational Center,
as told to Kathleen Vander-Boom, March 26, 2000,
Women in Military Service for America Memorial Foundation Archives.

Seoul. For her actions, McConnell received a Bronze Star and the Oak Leaf Cluster.

Four days after U.S. troops joined United Nations forces, 57 female nurses arrived in Korea. Twelve army nurses in the first MASH unit moved out on July 8, 1950, to the front line at Taejon. One month later, over 100 army nurses were stationed near the front lines within Korea, positions they would occupy throughout the war. Three African American nurses served in Korea: Lt. Martha E. Cleveland and Lt. Nancy Greene Peace were posted at the 11th Evacuation Hospital, and Lt. Evelyn Decker served with the 8055th MASH. Still others served in hospitals in Japan and Hawaii.

MASH nurses also adopted the protective clothing of the male soldiers for whom they were caring. Combat boots, fatigues, and steel helmets replaced more traditional nursing uniforms, and the women lived in tents like other military personnel. Amazingly, despite their proximity to battles, not a single army nurse died in Korea.

At the beginning of the war, the navy's WAVES hoped to enlist 1,000 officers and 10,000 servicewomen in their ranks. That initial goal was not met. To increase their numbers, Captain Joy Bright Hancock implemented a voluntary recall. When that failed to provide the desired numbers, an involuntary recall followed. It was the first time in American history that women, as well as their male counterparts, were called up, voluntarily or not. To further add to the ranks, unreasonable deterrents were eliminated. The ban against married women serving was dropped; additionally, the age of enlistment was lowered to eighteen, following the successful 1948 model of the army and air force. As a result, WAVES numbers went from 3,239 in 1950 to a high of 9,466 in November 1952.

Recruited WAVES were sent to a six-week training program, initially held at the Great Lakes Training Center; in October 1951, the program moved to the Naval Training Center in Bainbridge, Maryland. Petty officer leadership schools were established at San Diego and Bainbridge, Georgia, in 1953, while officer candi-

dates trained at Officer Indoctrination Unit (W) at Newport, Rhode Island. Finally, a Reserve Officer Candidate (ROC) Program began at the Great Lakes Training Center.

The Navy Nurse Corps consisted of 1,921 women when the Korean War broke out in June 1950. It peaked at 3,405 in November 1951, but only 2,600 remained at the end of the war. The growth included an involuntary recall of 926 navy nurses. The Navy Nurse Corps also recruited and commissioned civilian nurses. Captain Winnie Gibson oversaw the Nurse Corps, which served in 126 stations in the United States; at 25 foreign stations; on 8 Military Sea Transport Service (MSTS) ships; in 3 MSTS ports; in 15 civilian schools; and on 3 hospital ships. In fact, thirty-five percent of the U.S. battle casualties from the Korean War were evacuated directly to the USS *Consolation*, USS *Haven*, and USS *Repose*. In August 1950, a fourth ship, the USS *Benevolence*, was accidentally rammed and sank before leaving port. One nurse died as a result.

The women's auxiliary unit of the U.S. Coast Guard, the SPARs (*Semper Paratus*—Always Ready), had been demobilized in 1946. The unit began recruiting again in late 1949, and by 1950 200 former SPARs had voluntarily reenlisted. They served mostly in U.S. territory. The Air Force Nurse Corps was involved in the evacuation of approximately 350,000 patients during the course of the war. Within the marines, many of the 2,787 women in the corps earned entry to a broader range of occupational specialties than did those in other branches of military service.

In all, the navy lost twelve nurses as well as eighteen enlisted WAVES. Eleven navy nurses were killed when their plane crashed on takeoff from Kwaejon Island, and another one died as a result of the sinking of the USS *Benevolence*. The deaths of the WAVES were also not combat related. Three nurses received the Bronze Star, six the Commendation Ribbon, and ninety the Navy Unit Commendation. In addition, U.S. Army Major Genevieve Smith died in a plane crash in transit to her post as chief nurse in Korea. Three air force nurses also died.

Prior to 1950 American women had a limited presence in Korea, primarily as missionaries. During the war, women were captured, marched, and treated as brutally as their male soldier counterparts. Nellie Dyer from North Little Rock, Arkansas, and Helen Rosser, from Atlanta, Georgia, were held as POWs along with members of the 24th Infantry Division.

While most servicewomen were confined to traditional or “female” jobs, the Korean War afforded a unique opportunity for a few civilian women to break the mold. Anna Rosenberg had been a political consultant and labor relations expert, working for President Roosevelt as his personal observer during World War II. Building on her career as one of the first women to hold various directorial posts in the U.S. government, Rosenberg was appointed assistant secretary of defense for manpower and personnel in 1950. During her tenure she oversaw all defense department policies and created the Defense Advisory Committee on Women in the Services (DACOWITS), a committee of fifty professional women (chaired by Mary Lord) that aggressively recruited women for military service. Rosenberg, a lifelong civil rights and women’s suffrage advocate, also effectively integrated formerly segregated African American and white troops into cohesive combat units. For her service, Anna Rosenberg received the Department of Defense’s Exceptional Civilian Award in 1953.

The war provided unique opportunities for both U.S. civilian women and women in the military, who were now an integral part of the armed forces. Marguerite “Maggie” Higgins, a reporter for the *New York Herald Tribune*, had the distinction of being the only female war correspondent during the Korean War. Margaret Bourke-White, a photographer with World War II experience, was sent by *Life* magazine in the spring of 1951 to photograph bomber planes belonging to the Strategic Air Command in Korea. Bourke-White was the first woman to fly in a B-47 jet, and she subsequently accompanied South Korean police as they moved against guerrilla fighters.

—Sarah Hilgendorff List

See also Bourke-White, Margaret; Higgins, Marguerite

References and Further Reading

- Godson, Susan H. 2001. *Serving Proudly: A History of Women in the U.S. Navy*. Annapolis, MD: Naval Institute Press.
- Goldberg, Vicki. 1987. *Margaret Bourke-White: A Biography*. Reading, MA: Addison-Wesley.
- Higgins, Marguerite. 1951. *War in Korea: The Report of a Woman Combat Correspondent*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday.
- “1950s.” Women in Military Service for America Memorial. <http://www.womensmemorial.org> (accessed January 21, 2005).

KOREAN WAR, WOMEN AND THE

The roles of women during the Korean War (1950–1953). Not only were women indiscriminate victims of offensives and counteroffensives, they were also active participants in the war effort. Women from all sides of the conflict filled essential noncombat support roles, from nurses and caregivers to supply clerks and corpsmen as well as communication technicians and intelligence analysts, to help alleviate labor shortages.

South Korean women were not only refugees during the Korean War, they were also active participants in the South Korean war effort. Korean women served in a variety of capacities and filled medical support occupations, such as surgeons, nurses, and dentists, that were in short supply due to the need for active duty troops. In the U.N. forces under U.S. military command, women from the United States, Australia, Canada, and Britain played a variety of subordinate roles: from logistical and administrative posts to nurses and healthcare providers in hospitals and Mobile Army Surgical Hospital (MASH) units. In contrast with their southern counterparts, women in North



*An American military nurse stands over wounded soldiers before directing the medical service technicians to load the soldiers on the military medical aircraft, 1953.
(Genevieve Naylor/Corbis)*

Korea were fully integrated in the military, serving in guerrilla units alongside their male counterparts as well as serving in military support roles.

Freed from the constraints of the Yi Dynasty and Japanese occupation, women in South Korea had made gains in education and were increasingly entering the workforce. The 1948 constitution had given women equality with men. The onset of the Korean War changed the status of women in South Korea. Not only did women who were trained at the Republic of Korea's army medical field school serve in the Republic of Korea Women's Army Corp (ROKWAC) as surgeons, nurses, and dentists, they were employed by war industries. As the need for servicewomen increased, more and more Korean women enlisted, and some trained to serve as officers in the ROKWAC. Recruits were given basic military training and then assigned to units as needed. As the war continued,

women were given specialized training and were attached to specialized units.

The greatest need for non-Korean servicewomen in Korea during the war was for nurses. Between 500 and 600 female U.S. Army Nurse Corp personnel served in the war zone supporting troops during combat operations. In addition, several thousand women worked in hospitals in the Far East Command during the Korean War. By the end of the war, over 120,000 women were on active duty serving as administrative aids, stenographers, and translators to release male soldiers for combat duty. There were also women from other countries—Australia, Belgium, Canada, Denmark, France, Great Britain, Greece, Italy, the Netherlands, Norway, Sweden, Thailand, and Turkey—who served during the Korean War. Like their American counterparts, a majority of these women served as nurses in hospitals.

Women in North Korea were on a different footing than their southern counterparts. Following the consolidation of his control, Premier Kim Il Sung (president after 1972) promoted gender equality through the incorporation of equal rights in the North Korean constitution. North Korean women became members of the Worker-and-Peasant Red Guard or joined political organizations for women.

By the beginning of the Korean War women were integrated into the ranks of the North Korean military. Women aided in transporting supplies to the front as well as other logistical tasks. Female soldiers served not only in traditional support roles but as frontline troops alongside their male counterparts. North Korean women frequently posed as refugees to infiltrate enemy lines to gather intelligence or to inflict casualties on unsuspecting U.N. forces. In addition, women fought with guerrilla units in the South, engaging in hit-and-run operations as well as sabotage.

—Keith A. Leitch

See also Korean War, American Women and the

References and Further Reading

- Jancar, Barbara Wolfe. 1978. *Women under Communism*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins University Press.
- Lee, Hyo-Chae, and Joo-Sook Kim. 1979. *The Status of Korean Women*. Seoul: Ehwa Women's University Press.
- Lee, Young Moo. 1980. Birth of the Korean Army, 1945–1950: Evaluation of the Role of the United States Occupation Forces. Pages 639–656 in *Korea and World Affairs*. Vol. 4. Seoul: Research Center for Peace and Reunification.

KUCKHOFF, GRETA
(1902–1981)

Member of the anti-Nazi *Rote Kapelle* (Red Chorus) resistance group in Germany. Greta Lorke was born in Frankfurt on December 14, 1902. She studied in Germany at the University of Berlin under Werner Sombart and Max Weber before attending the University of Wisconsin. There she was part of John Commons's social-discussion group, the "Friday-niters," and met Avrid Harnack and Mildred Fish, Harnack's future wife. After returning to Germany, she taught English and worked as a translator. She married Adam Kuckhoff in January 1937 and had a son.

She introduced the Harnacks to Harro and Libertas Schulze-Boysen in 1940. After the Nazis discovered Schulze-Boysen's espionage network, Greta Kuckhoff was arrested on September 9, 1942. She was sentenced to die, but the sentence was commuted to ten years of imprisonment. She was freed by the Soviets when they took control of Berlin. She remained in East Germany and became director of the Notenbank.

—Bernard Cook

See also Harnack-Fish, Mildred; Schulze-Boysen, Libertas

References and Further Reading

- Bryson, Shareen Blair. 2000. *Resisting Hitler: Mildred Harnack and the Red Orchestra: The Life and Death of an American Woman in Nazi Germany*. New York: Oxford University.
- Kuckhoff, Greta. 1974. *Vom Rosenkranz zur Roten Kapelle: Ein Lebensbericht* [From Roseranz to the Rote Kapelle: An Account of My Life]. Frankfurt: Röderberg-Verlag.

KUCZYNSKI, URSULA (AKA
WERNER, RUTH [SONJA])
(1907–2000)

Secret agent of the Soviet intelligence service. Ursula Kuczynski was born on May 15, 1907, in Germany. In the mid-1920s Kuczynski joined the German communist party and was recruited by the Soviet intelligence service. Her code name was Ruth (or Sonja) Werner. After initial espionage training Kuczynski was sent to China where she became acquainted with Dr. Richard Sorge, who later became one of Stalin's top spies during World War II. From the mid-1930s she served as an intelligence officer in several European countries including Britain and Switzerland. She was supported by her father, brother, and husband, who were all engaged in Soviet intelligence work. During World War II Kuczynski helped the Soviet war effort by providing military intelligence. She was part of the worldwide Soviet spy network that helped Stalin obtain the scientific information needed for development of the Soviet atomic bomb. It seems that Kuczynski lost contact with her Soviet handlers after the end of the war, but she turned up in the newly established communist (East) German Democratic Republic in 1950, where she took a position within the state-run propaganda apparatus. By the mid-1950s she was engaged in a new career as a freelance author. Kuczynski not only wrote about her professional experience as a spy and intelligence

handler but also published several children's books. She may not have been active within the East German intelligence service, but she was looked upon as a role model for young communist intelligence officers. When East Germany collapsed in 1989–1990, she was already well into her eighties but was still engaged in party work within the reformed communist party. She died on July 7, 2000.

Ursula Kuczynski was remarkable for her own career in intelligence and politics, but that was true for other members of her family as well, especially for her brother Jürgen Kuczynski (1904–1997). Jürgen worked for the Soviet intelligence service within Western intelligence agencies during World War II. He later became one of the most important German historians of economic history. The secret careers of the Kuczynski family still need to be addressed in more detail by historical research because current information relies heavily on communist propaganda publications.

—*Oliver Benjamin Hemmerle*

See also Harnack-Fish, Mildred; Niederkirchner, Käthe; Rosenberg, Ethel

References and Further Reading

Kuczynski, Jürgen. 1975. *Memoiren* [Memoirs]. Berlin (Ost): Aufbau.
 Sagasser, Joachim, ed. 1982. *Auskünfte über Ruth Werner zum 75. Geburtstag*. [About Ruth Werner on Her 75th Birthday]. Berlin (Ost): Neues Leben.
 Werner, Ruth. 1978. *Sonjas Rapport* [Sonja's Report]. Berlin: Neues Leben.

ture at the University of Zagreb, Milka joined the Communist Youth Organization. Because she was the daughter of peasants, in 1940 Kufrin was sent to the suburbs of Zagreb to work with young peasants.

When Kufrin volunteered for military service following the German invasion of Yugoslavia and the organization of the Partisan resistance, her request was refused. When she persisted, she was sent in October 1941 to join a unit of partisans at Kordun about seventy miles from Zagreb.

In 1942 Kufrin was assigned the task of sabotaging the Zagreb–Riejka railroad line. For nearly eight months she went out every night and set explosives along the heavily guarded line. Following the war she was proclaimed a national hero by the Yugoslav communist government.

—*Bernard Cook*

See also Durova, Nadezhda Andreyevna; Makarova, Tat'iana Petrovna, and Belik, Vera Luk'ianovna; Milosavljevic, Danica

References and Further Reading

Jancar-Webster, Barbara. 1990. *Women and Revolution in Yugoslavia, 1941–1945*. Denver, CO: Arden.

**KURMANJAN-DATKHA
(CA. 1811–1907)**

An influential leader of Kyrgyz tribes in the Pamiro-Alay area in the second half of the nineteenth century. Kurmanjan played an important role in the political and military development in this part of Central Asia. She grew up in the highlands of Kyrgyzstan and received no formal education. In 1832 she married Alymbek-Datkha, the leader of the Kyrgyz tribes in the highlands of Pamiro-Alay (now southern Kyrgyzstan).

KUFRIN, MILKA (1921–)

Yugoslav partisan. The daughter of Catholic peasants in Croatia, Milka Kufrin was encouraged by her parents to attend school. Although her father had been active in the Croatian Peasant Party, as a student at the Faculty of Agricul-

At that time, the Kyrgyz tribes were involved in a devastating war against the powerful Kokand Khanate, a regional power in the Fergana valley of Central Asia that attempted to establish its control over all of the land populated by Kyrgyz tribes. The irregular Kyrgyz militia from Pamiro-Alay was involved in domestic conflicts within the Kokand Khanate and its numerous military campaigns against its neighbors. In the brutal military tradition of that era, the winners often took no prisoners, killing entire military regiments. In this environment of perpetual war, many Kyrgyz women had no choice but to become the breadwinners in their families, assuming the difficult duties of highland animal husbandry and often helping men in military campaigns against enemies.

Kurmanjan entered the Central Asian political arena in an unusual way. She broke the traditional perception dominant in Central Asian society at the time that viewed women exclusively as silent housewives who had no political rights or public voice. She became interested in political and military developments and, soon after her marriage, became one of her husband's most trusted advisers. In 1862 Kokand troops killed Alymbek-Datkha and threatened the Kyrgyz tribes who had been under his leadership. Under these circumstances Kyrgyz tribal leaders accepted Kurmanjan as the Datkha, the leader of their tribes (called Kurmanjan Mamatbai-Kyzy, or Alay Queen, by Russian officers in the region). She consolidated the Kyrgyz tribes and revived military morale among the militiamen. She also began an active search for allies in the fight against the Kokand Khanate.

In 1864 Kurmanjan-Datkha contacted the commander of the Russian Imperial troops. She

led intense negotiations with the Russian military officials and diplomats as well as consultations among other Kyrgyz tribes. Meanwhile, the Kokand Khanate was defeated by the Russian troops, and in 1876 it was abolished by the Russian colonial authorities, ending several decades of wars and instability in the region. After several years of talks Kurmanjan-Datkha peacefully accepted the Russian Empire's protectorate over the tribes under her leadership. Her son Abdylidabek, however, actively resisted the Russian advance in this area and fought against the Imperial troops. The Russian officers in the region often called her "Alay Queen." She became the only woman in nineteenth-century Central Asia who was awarded the military rank of colonel in the Russian Imperial Army.

In post-Soviet Kyrgyzstan she was promoted as the symbol of the liberal attitudes of traditional Kyrgyz society toward women. Many streets, schools, and charity organizations were named after her.

—Rafis Abazov

See also Guljamal-Khan(um)

References and Further Reading

- Abazov, Rafis. 2004. *Historical Dictionary of Kyrgyzstan*. Lanham, MD: Scarecrow Press.
- Akayev, Askar. 2003. *Kyrgyz Statehood and the National Epos "Manas"*. New York: Global Scholarly Publications.
- Makeev, Askar, and Vladimir Ploskikh, eds. 2002. *Tsarina of the Mountains: Kurmanjan and Her Times*. Bishkek, Kyrgyzstan: Ilim.

W O M E N
A N D W A R

W O M E N
A N D W A R

*A Historical Encyclopedia
from Antiquity to the Present*

V O L U M E T W O

B E R N A R D A . C O O K , E D I T O R

A B C  C L I O
Santa Barbara, California Denver, Colorado Oxford, England

Copyright © 2006 by ABC-CLIO

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording, or otherwise, except for the inclusion of brief quotations in a review, without prior permission in writing from the publishers.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data is available from the Library of Congress.
ISBN 1-85109-770-8 1-85109-775-9 (e-book)

10 09 08 07 06 10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

This book is also available on the World Wide Web as an eBook.
Visit abc-clio.com for details.

ABC-CLIO, Inc.
130 Cremona Drive, P.O. Box 1911
Santa Barbara, California 93116-1911

The acquisitions editor for this title was Alicia Merritt, the project editor was Carla Roberts, the media editor was Ellen Rasmussen, the media manager was Caroline Price, the editorial assistant was Alicia Martinez, the production manager was Don Schmidt, and the manufacturing coordinator was George Smyser.

This book is printed on acid-free paper ♻️.
Manufactured in the United States of America

*To my children, Bernie and Jennifer;
their spouses, Jen and Bora;
and my grandchildren, Lucy and Emmett*

CONTENTS

Foreword, Judith Lawrence Bellafaire, xxvii

Acknowledgments, xxix

Introduction, Bernard A. Cook, xxxi

Topic Finder, xxxix

V O L U M E O N E

A

Addams, Jane (1860–1935), 1

Afghanistan, 2

Agustina de Aragón (née Agustina Zaragoza y Domenech) (1786–1857), 4

AIDS, War and the Spread of, 6

Aishah (Aisha) (ca. 614–648), 7

Alexandra, Czarina of Russia (1872–1918), 8

Algeria, Women in the War of National Liberation, 9

Allen, Eliza (b. 1826), 11

Amazons, 12

American Revolution, Role of Women in the, 13

Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth Century, 15

Anderson, Louisa Garrett (1873–1943), 18

Arab-Israeli Wars, 19

CONTENTS

- Argentina, Dirty War against Civilians, 22
Argentina, Mothers of the Plaza de Mayo, 24
Armenian Holocaust, 26
Armenian Women Victims of Genocide, 29
Artemisia of Caria, 31
Ashwari, Hanan (1946–), 32
Ashwell, Lena Margaret Pocock (1872–1957), 33
Atkins, Vera H. (1908–2000), 34
Aubrac, Lucie (b. 1912), 35
Australia, Women in Service during World War II, 36
Australian Army Nursing Service (AANS)/Royal Australian Army Nursing
Corps (RAANC), 37
Avenger Field, 38
“Axis Sally” (Mildred Elizabeth Gillars) (1901–1988), 39
Azurduy de Padilla, Juana (1781–1862), 40

B

- Baader-Meinhof Gang, 43
Baez, Joan Chandos (1941–), 44
Bagot, Lady Theodosia (1865–1940), 46
Bailey, Anne Trotter (ca. 1742–1825), 46
Baissac, Lise de (1905–2004), 48
Baker, E. H. (Mrs.) (n.d.), 48
Balch, Emily Green (1867–1961), 49
Balkan Wars, 50
Ballestrem-Solf, Countess Lagi (ca. 1919–1955), 52
Barry, James Miranda (1795–1865), 53
Barton, Clara (1821–1912), 54
Baseden, Yvonne (1922–), 56
Baumgartner, Ann (b. 1918), 57

CONTENTS

- Beatty, Bessie (1886–1947), 58
- Beekman, Yolande (1911–1944), 59
- Belgium, Women during World War I, 60
- Bell, Gertrude Margaret Lowthian (1868–1926), 63
- Bennett, Agnes Elizabeth Lloyd (1872–1960), 63
- Bilien, Valentina (n.d.), 64
- Biological Warfare Experimentation, Japanese, 65
- Black, Catherine (b. 1883), 65
- Black Sash, 66
- Blackwell, Elizabeth (1821–1910), 67
- Blanche of Castile (1188–1252), 67
- Bochkareva, Maria (Mariya or Yasha) (b. 1889), 68
- Bonney, Therese (1894–1978), 70
- Borden, Mary (1886–1968), 71
- Borginis, Sarah (1812–1886), 72
- Borrel, Andrée (1919–1944), 73
- Boudicca, Queen of the Iceni (d. ca. 60–61), 74
- Bourke-White, Margaret (1904–1971), 76
- Bower, Ursula Graham (1914–1988), 76
- Boyd, Isabelle (Belle) (1843–1900), 77
- Brant, Mary (Molly) (ca. 1735–1796), 79
- Braun, Eva (1912–1945), 80
- Braunsteiner, Hermine (1920–1999), 81
- Bray, Linda (1960–), 82
- Brewer, Lucy (b. ca. 1793), 83
- Brion, H el ene (1882–1962), 84
- Brittain, Vera Mary (1893–1970), 85
- Brown, Mary-Agnes (1902–1998), 86
- Brown, Ruth Humphries (1920–), 87
- Bruskina, Masha (1924–1941), 88
- Bubley, Esther (1921–1998), 89

CONTENTS

- Buch, Eva Maria (1921–1943), 90
Bulgaria, Women and World War II, 90
 Bulgarian Horrors, 91
Bullwinkel, Vivian (1915–2000), 93
Bunke, Tamara (1937–1967), 95
Byck, Muriel (1918–1944), 95

C

- Campaign for Nuclear Disarmament (CND) and the Greenham
 Common Women, 97
Cannan, May Wedderburn (1893–1973), 98
Catt, Carrie Chapman (née Clinton Lane) (1859–1947), 99
 Cavell, Edith Louisa (1865–1915), 100
Chamberlain (Tamblin), Margaret Lenora (1918–), 102
Chapelle, Dickey (Georgia Lou Meyer, G. L. Meyer) (1919–1965), 102
 Chechnya, Impact on Women of Wars in, 103
 Cherokee War Woman, 107
China, Women and the Communist Revolution, 107
China, Women on the Home Front in World War II, 110
 China to 1911, Women Warriors in, 112
Chisholm, Mairi Lambert (1896–1981), 113
 Churchill, Jennie (1854–1921), 114
 Civil War, American, and Women, 115
 Civil War, American, Women Combatants during the, 118
Civil War, American, Women in the Medical Services in the, 120
 Clayton, Frances (n.d.), 122
Cleopatra VII, Queen of Egypt (69–30 B.C.), 123
Cochran, Jacqueline (ca. 1906–1980), 124
Colenso, Harriette (1847–1932), 125
Colombia, Women and Political Violence in, 126

CONTENTS

- Conquest, Joan, pseud. (Mary Eliza Louise Gripper Martin-Nicholson)
(1876–1941), 128
- Conscientious Objectors in the United States during World War II,
Women and, 128
- Corbin, Margaret Cochrane (1751–1800), 130
- Cormeau, Yvonne (1909–1988), 131
- Cornum, Rhonda (1955–), 131
- Craig, May (1889–1975), 132
- Crusades, Women and the, 133
- Cuban Revolution, Women in the, 134
- Curie, Maria Skłodowska (Madame Curie) (1867–1934) and the
Little Curies, 136
- Curtis, Cathrine (1918–1955), 137
- Cushman, Pauline (1833–1893), 138

D

- Dahomey, Women Warriors, 141
- Dalrymple, Mildred Inks Davidson (1920–), 143
- Damerment, Madeleine (1917–1944), 144
- Darragh, Lydia (1729–1789), 145
- Dawidson (Draenger), Justina (1917–1943), 146
- De Jongh, Andrée (Dédée) (1916–), 147
- De Pizan, Christine (1364–ca. 1430), 147
- Deavers, Bridget (b. 1839), 148
- Delano, Jane Arminda (1862–1919), 149
- Detzer, Dorothy (1893–1981), 150
- Devlin, Bernadette (1947–), 151
- Dietrich, Marlene (1901–1992), 152
- Dilling, Elizabeth (1894–1966), 153
- Dix, Dorothea (1802–1887), 154

CONTENTS

- Douglas-Pennant, Violet (1869–1945), 155
Dromgoole, Will Allen (1860–1934), 155
Durova, Nadezhda Andreyevna (1783–1866), 156
Duston, Hannah (1657–1736), 157

E

- Earley, Charity Adams (1918–2002), 159
East Timor, Abuse of Women during War, 160
Edmonds, Sarah Emma (1841–1898), 161
Einsatzgruppen (Special Action Groups), 162
El Salvador, Women and the Civil Strife in, 163
Eleanor of Aquitaine (ca. 1122–1204), 165
Emerson, Gloria (1929–), 166
Engel, Regula (1761–1853), 167
Eriksen, Vera (aka Vera de Cottani de Chalbur) (b. 1912), 168
Eritrea, Women and the Struggle for Independence of, 169
Eskimo Scouts, 170
Espín Guillois, Vilma (1930–), 171
Etheridge, Anna (1839 or 1844–1913), 172

F

- Fairchild, Helen (1884–1918), 175
Falklands War and Thatcher, Margaret (1925–), 176
Fallaci, Oriana (1930–), 177
Farmborough, Florence (1887–1980), 178
Farrell, Mairead (1957–1988), 179
Fawcett, Millicent (1847–1929), 180
Fedutenko, Nadezhda Nikiforovna (1915–1978), 181
Fernig, Félicité (1770–1841), and Fernig, Théophile (1775–1819), 183

CONTENTS

- Finland, Lotta Svärd, 184
- Finland, Women in the Winter War, 185
- First, Heloise Ruth (1925–1982), 186
- Fittko, Lisa (1909–2005), 187
- Fomicheva-Levashova, Klavdiia Iakovlevna (1917–1958), 188
- Fonda, Jane (1937–), 189
- Forced Labor, Nazi Germany, 191
- Fourcade, Marie-Madeleine (1900–1989), 191
- France, Resistance during World War II, Women and, 192
- France, Revolution of 1848, 195
- France, Wars of Religion, 197
- France, World War I, Psychological Impact on French Women, 199
- France, World War I, Women and the Home Front, 200
- France, World War II, Women and the Home Front , 204
- Frank, Anne (1929–1945), 206
- French Revolution (1789–1799), Impact of War on Women’s Protest
during the, 207
- Friang, Brigitte (1924–), 209
- Frontier Soldiers, U.S., Wives of, 209
- Fuld, Bracha (1926–1946), 211
- Fulton, Sarah Bradlee (1740–1835), 212
- Fulvia (d. 40 B.C.), 212
- Furse, Lady Katherine Symonds (1875–1952), 213

G

- Galla Placidia (ca. 390–450), 215
- Gandhi, Indira (1917–1984), 216
- Garibaldi, Anita (1821–1849), 218
- Gellhorn, Martha (1908–1998), 220
- Germany, Armed Forces (Wehrmacht), World War II Atrocities of, 221

CONTENTS

- Germany, Revolution of 1918–1919, Women in the, 222
- Germany, Women and the Home Front, World War I, 224
- Germany, Women and the Home Front, World War II, 227
- Ghesquière, Virginie (ca. 1755–1854), 229
- Gierczak, Emilia (1925–1945), 230
- Goldstein, Vida (1869–1949), 231
- Gonne, Maud (1865–1953), 232
- Grajales Cuello (also Coelho), Mariana (1808–1893), 233
- Granville, Christine, pseud. (Krystyna Skarbek Gizycki) (1915–1952), 233
- Great Britain, Women, Social Impact of World War I on, 235
- Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I, 237
- Great Britain, Women in Service during World War II, 241
- Great Britain, Women in Service in the Seventeenth, Eighteenth, and Early
 Nineteenth Centuries, 244
- Great Britain, Women on the Home Front during World War II, 246
- Great Britain, Women’s Royal Naval Service (WRNS), Reorganization
 before World War II, 248
- Greece, Resistance during World War II, Women and, 249
- Greece, Women and Female Imagery in Greek Warfare, 251
- Greek Civil War, Women in the, 253
- Greek Revolution, Women and the, 255
- Greek Women and War in Antiquity, 256
- Greene, Catharine Littlefield (Caty) (1755–1814), 258
- Greenhow, Rose O’Neale (1814–1864), 259
- Grese, Irma (1923–1945), 261
- Grizodubova, Valentina Stepanovna (1910–1993), 262
- Grossman, Chaika (1919–1996), 263
- Guatemala, Civil Conflict and Women, 263
- Gulf War (1990–1991), Women and the, 266
- Guljamal-Khan(um) (ca. 1836–1919), 267
- Gwynne-Vaughan, Helen (1879–1967), 268

CONTENTS

H

- Haas, Elena (1912/13–1945), 271
- Hall, Virginia (1906–1982), 271
- Hamilton, Cicely Marie (1872–1952), 273
- Harnack-Fish, Mildred (1902–1943), 275
- Hart, Nancy (1735–1830), 275
- Hart, Nancy (ca. 1841–ca. 1902), 276
- Haverfield, Evelina (1867–1920), 277
- Helen of Troy, 278
- Hello Girls, 279
- Herero of Namibia, Repression of the, 280
- Hernández Rodríguez del Rey, Melba (1921–), 281
- Higgins (Hall), Marguerite (1920–1966), 282
- Hiroshima, Nagasaki, and Women, 283
- Hirsch, Ilse (b. 1922), 284
- Hobby, Oveta Culp (1905–1995), 284
- Hobhouse, Emily (1860–1926), 286
- Hodges, Katherine (1888–1982), 288
- Hoge, Jane Currie Blaikie (1811–1890), 289
- Holocaust and Jewish Women, 290
- Hughan, Jessie Wallace (1875–1955), 292
- Hull, Peggy, pseud. (Deuell, Henrietta Eleanor Goodnough)
(1889–1967), 294
- Hutton, Lady Isabel Galloway (née Isabel Emslie) (1887–1960), 295

I

- Ibárruri, Dolores (La Pasionaria) (1895–1989), 297
- India to 1857, Women Warriors in, 298
- Inglis, Elsie (1864–1917), and the Scottish Women's Hospitals, 300

CONTENTS

- International Congress of Women: Antiwar Protest of Women in
World War I, 303
 - International Manifesto of Women (1915), 305
- Iran-Iraq War and Gulf War, Impact on Women of Iraq, 306
 - Ireland, Easter Rising of 1916, 310
 - Ireland, War of Independence, 312
- Islamic Resistance Movements, Women and, 314
 - Israeli Military, Women in the, 316
- Italy, Women in the Resistance during World War II, 318
- Italy, Women on the Home Front and in the Services during World War I, 321

J

- Japan, Women and the Home Front, World War II, 323
- Japan, Women Warriors in Ancient and Medieval Japan, 326
 - Japanese Interned in U.S. Camps, 327
 - Jehovah's Witnesses in Nazi Germany, 329
 - Jewish Women of Antiquity and War, 329
- Joan of Arc (Jeanne d'Arc) (ca. 1412–1431), 331
 - Johnson, Amy (1903–1941), 332
- Journalists, American Women, during World War I, 333
- Junge, Gertraud (Traudl) (1920–2002), 334

K

- Kashmir, Conflict in, Women and, 337
 - Kea, Salaria (1917–1990), 338
 - Kempner, Vitka (1920–), 339
- Khan, Noor Inayat (1914–1944), 340
 - King, Olive (1885–1958), 341
- Kirchner, Johanna (1899–1944), 342

CONTENTS

- Koch, Ilse (1906–1967), 342
Kollontai, Alexandra (1872–1952), 343
Kollwitz, Kathe (1867–1944), 344
Korczak, Rozka (1921–1988), 346
Korea: Comfort Women, 347
Korea, Women and the Home Front, World War II, 349
Korean War, American Women and the, 350
Korean War, Women and the, 353
Kuckhoff, Greta (1902–1981), 355
Kuczynski, Ursula (aka Werner, Ruth [Sonja]) (1907–2000), 355
Kufrin, Milka (1921–), 356
Kurmanjan-Datkha (ca. 1811–1907), 356

V O L U M E T W O

L

- “Lady Haw Haw” (Margaret Cairns Joyce) (1911–1972), 359
Lakshmi Bai (ca. 1830 –1858) and Sepoy Rebellion, 360
Landau, Emilia (1924–1943), 361
Lange, Dorothea (1895–1965), 362
Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements in, 364
Lawrence, Dorothy (b. 1896), 367
Lebanon, Women and the Fighting in, 367
Lebrón, Lolita (1919–), 369
Lederer, Edith (Edie), 370
Lee, Mary Anna Randolph Custis (1808–1873), 371
Lefort, Cecily (1903–1945), 372
Leigh, Vera (1903–1944), 373
Leroy, Catherine (1944–), 373

CONTENTS

- Leska-Daab, Anna (1921–), 374
- Lewandowska (née Dowbor-Musnicki), Jania (1908–1940), 375
- Lidice Massacre, 376
- Literature of World War II, U.S., Depiction of Women in, 377
- Litviak, Lidiia (Liliia) Vladimirovna (1921–), 379
- Livermore, Mary Ashton Rice (1820–1905), 380
- Locke, Elsie (1912–2001), 381
- Lowther, Barbara (Toupie) (b. 1890), 382
- Luce, Clare Boothe (1903–1987), 383
- Ludington, Sybil (1761–1839), 384
- Luxemburg, Rosa (1871–1919), 385

M

- Makarova, Tat'iana Petrovna (1920–1944), and Belik, Vera Luk'ianovna
(1921–1944), 387
- Malta, Women and Wars in, 388
- Mandela, Winnie (1936–), 390
- Marianne, 392
- Marie, Queen of Romania (1875–1938), 393
- Markievicz (née Gore-Booth), Countess Constance (1868–1927), 394
- Markovic, Mirjana (1941–), 395
- Martin, Grace (n.d.), and Martin, Rachel (n.d.), 396
- Mata Hari, pseud. (Margaretha Gertruida MacLeod, née Zelle)
(1876–1917), 397
- Matilda of Tuscany (1046–1114), 397
- Mau Mau Rebellion, Women in the, 398
- McCarthy, Emma Maud (1858–1949), 401
- McDougall, Grace Ashley-Smith (1889–1963), 402
- McDowell, Mary Stone (1876–1955), 402
- McGee, Anita Newcomb (1864–1940), 403

CONTENTS

- Mead, Lucia Ames (1856–1936), 404
- Medical Specialist Corps: U.S. Women in Military Service, World War II, 405
- Meir, Golda (née Golda Mabovitz) (1898–1978), 406
- Meiselas, Susan (1948–), 407
- Mercy Ship, 408
- Mexican American Women and World War II, 409
- Michel, Louise (1830–1905), 411
- Milosavljevic, Danica (1925–), 412
- Mitford, Unity (1914–1948), 413
- Molly Pitcher, 414
- Monte, Hilda, pseud. (aka Hilda Meisel) (1914–1945), 415
- Moon, Lottie (1829–1895), and Moon, Ginnie (1844–1925), 415
- Moore, Eleanor May (1875–1949), 416
- Moreau-Evrard, Emilienne (1898–1971), 417
- Morgan, Anne Tracy (1873–1952), 418
- Mowlam, Marjorie (Mo) (1949–2005), 419

N

- Nanking, Rape of, 421
- Napoleon's Marshals, Wives of, 422
- National Legion of Mothers of America (NLMA), 424
- Nearne, Jacqueline (1916–1982), 425
- Nicaragua, Women and War in, 426
- Niederkirchner, Käthe (Katja) (1909–1944), 428
- Nightingale, Florence (1820–1910), 428
- Nikulina, Anna Vladimirovna (b. 1904), 431
- Nirouet, Collette (1926–1944), 432
- Nongqawuse (1841–1898), 433
- Nonhelema (or Grenadier Squaw) (ca. 1720–1786), 434
- Norway, Resistance Movement during World War II, Women and, 435

CONTENTS

- Norway, Women and the Home Front during World War II, 436
Norway, Women's Collaboration during World War II German
Occupation of, 438
Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War I, 439
Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War II, 441

O

- Olmsted, Mildred Scott (1890–1990), 445
Olschanezky, Sonya (1923–1944), 446
Onions, Maude (b. 1885), 447
Oradour-sur-Glane Massacre, 447
Orczy, Baroness Emma (1865–1947), 448

P

- Pankhurst Family: Emmeline, Christabel, E. Sylvia, and Adela
Pankhurst Walsh, 451
Paris Commune, Women and the (1871), 454
Parrish, Marie O'Dean Bishop (Deanie) (1922–), 456
Pavliuchenko, Liudmila Mikhailovna (1916–1974), 457
Peace People Movement (Northern Ireland), 458
Peake, Felicity (1913–2002), 458
Peasants' War, 459
Peru: Shining Path, 460
Peruvian Truth and Reconciliation Commission: Women and
Political Violence, 462
Petacci, Clara (1912–1945), 463
Petit, Gabrielle (1893–1916), 464
Philippines, Women during the American Suppression of the Insurrection in, 464
Pilots of the IL-2 (1941–1945), 467

CONTENTS

- Plater, Emilia (1806–1831), 468
Plavsic, Biljana (1930–), 469
Plewman, Eliane (1917–1944), 470
Poland, Resistance during World War II, Women and, 471
Polish Auxiliary Air Force (PLSK), 473
Polish Independent Women’s Battalion, Emilia Plater (1943–1945), 474
Posters, U.S., Images of Women in World War II, 476

R

- Rape: Red Army in World War II, 479
Rape in War, 481
Raskova (née Malinina), Marina Mikhailovna (1912–1943), 483
Ravensbrück, 484
Red Army Faction, West Germany, Women of the, 485
Red Brigades, Italy, Women of the, 486
Red Cross of the United States: World War I and World War II, 487
Reed, Esther De Berdt (1746–1780), 489
Reik, Haviva (1914–1944), 490
Reitsch, Hanna (1912–1976), 491
Riedesel, Friederike Charlotte Luise von Massow von (1746 –1808), 492
Rolfe, Lilian (1914–1945), 493
Roman Women and War, 493
Roma/Sinti, 495
Roosevelt, Eleanor (1884–1962), 496
Rosenberg, Ethel (1915–1953), 497
Rosenstrasse and Intermarriage of Jews and German Gentiles, 498
Rosie the Riveter, 500
Ross, Ishobel (1890–1965), 501
Rowden, Diana (1915–1944), 502
Rudellat, Yvonne (1897–1945), 502

CONTENTS

- Russia, Women in the Armed Forces (1700–1917), 503
- Russia, Women Recipients of the Order of St. George (1808–1917), 504
- Russian Republic, Women in the Armed Forces (1991–), 505
 - Russian Revolution and Women, 506
- Rwanda: Women and the Genocide, 508

S

- Salomon, Charlotte (1917–1943), 513
 - Salvation Army in World War I, 514
- Samson (Sampson), Deborah (1760–1827), 514
- Sánchez Manduley, Celia (1922–1980), 515
 - Sandes, Flora (1876–1956), 516
- Sansom, Odette (1912–1995), 518
- Santamaría Cuadrado, Haydée (1922–1980), 519
 - Saumoneau, Louise (1875–1949), 520
- Schaft, Jeannetje Joanna (Hannie) (1920–1945), 520
 - Schindler, Emilie (1907–2002), 521
 - Schmidt, Kitty (1882–1954), 522
 - Scholl, Sophie (1921–1943), 523
- Scholtz-Klink (née Treusch), Gertrud (b. 1902), 524
 - Schulze-Boysen, Libertas (1913–1942), 525
 - Schuyler, Philippa (1931–1967), 526
- Scotland: War Widows and Refugees in, 1640s and 1688–1690, 527
 - Secord (née Ingersoll), Laura (1775–1868), 529
 - Seele, Gertrud (1917–1945), 530
 - Semmer, Marcelle (1895–ca. 1944), 531
 - Senesh, Hannah (1921–1944), 531
- Sicilian Revolutions of 1820 and 1848, Women and the, 532
 - Smith, Winnie (1944–), 534
- Smyrna Tragedy, Continuing Ordeal for Women Survivors of the, 534

CONTENTS

- Snell, Hannah (1723–1792), 536
- Sophie, Duchess von Hohenberg (1868–1914), 536
- Sosnowska-Karpik, Irena (1922–1990), 537
- Souliè, Geneviève (b. 1919), 538
- Soviet Union, 46th Taman Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment
(May 1942–May 1945), 538
- Soviet Union, 125th M. M. Raskova Borisov Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment
(January 1943–May 1945), 539
- Soviet Union, Order of Glory, I Class, Soviet Women Recipients
(1943–1948), 541
- Soviet Union, Order of the Red Banner, Women Recipients (1918–1928), 542
- Soviet Union, Women and the Home Front during World War II, 543
- Soviet Union, Women in the Armed Forces (1917–1991), 544
- Soviet Union Air Defense, 586th Fighter Aviation Regiment, 549
- Soviet Union/Russian Federation, Women Heroes of the (1938–1995), 551
- Spanish Civil War, Women and the, 556
- Spanish-American War, Women and the, 558
- Spartan Women, 561
- Stark, Dame Freya (1893–1993), 562
- Stein, Edith (1891–1942), 563
- Stimson, Julia Catherine (1881–1948), 564
- Stobart, Mabel (1862–1954), 565
- Stowe, Harriet Beecher (1811–1896), 566
- Street, Jessie (1889–1970), 567
- Streeter, Ruth Cheney (1895–1990), 568
- Sudan, Women and the Civil War in, 569
- Summerskill, Edith Clara (1901–1980), and Women's Home
Defence Corps, 571
- Suttner, Baroness Bertha Sophie Felicita von (1843–1914), 572
- Svobod, Maria (d. 1944), 573
- Szabo, Violette (1921–1945), 573

CONTENTS

T

- Tackaberry (Blake), Betty Guild (1920–), 577
- Talbot, Mary Anne (1778–1808), 578
- Tamar (1160–1213), 579
- Tamils, Women and the Conflict in Sri Lanka, 580
- Teodoroiu, Ecaterina (1894–1917), 581
- Terrorists, Women, 582
- Terwiel, Maria (1910–1943), 585
- Thadden, Elizabeth von (1890–1944), 585
- Thirty Years' War (1618–1648), 586
- Thurstan, Violetta (1879–1978), 587
- Tillion, Germaine (b. 1907), 587
- “Tokyo Rose” (Iva Ikuko Toguri d’Aquino) (1916–), 588
- Tomara, Sonia (1897–1982), 590
- Tower, Ellen May (1868–1899), 591
- Trauma and Brutalization Unleashed by World War I, 592
- Travers, Susan (1909–2003), 594
- Trotta, Liz, 595
- Trümmerfrauen (Rubble Women), 596
- T’Serclaes, Baroness Elizabeth de (née Shapter) (1884–1978), 597
- Tubman, Harriet (ca. 1820–1913), 599

U

- Ulster, Women during the Troubles in, 601
- United States, Home Front during World War I, 602
- United States, Home Front during World War II, 605
- United States, Marine Corps Women’s Reserve (MCWR), 609
- United States, Military Service of Women in World War II, 610
- United States, Navy Women’s Reserve (WAVES), 614

CONTENTS

- United States, Opposition to U.S. Entry into World War II by Right-Wing
American Women, 615
- United States, Women Airforce Service Pilots (WASP), 616
- United States, Women Reserves in the Coast Guard (known as SPARs), 618
- United States, Women's Army Auxiliary Corps (WAAC), 619
- United States, Women's Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron (WAFS), 620
- United States, Women's Flying Training Detachment (WFTD), 621

V

- Van Devanter (Buckley), Lynda (1947–2002), 623
- Van Kleeck, Mary (1883–1972), 624
- Van Lew, Elizabeth Louise (1818–1900), 625
- Viannay, Hélène (1917–), 626
- Vietnam, U.S. Women Soldiers in, 626
- Vietnam, Women in the Buddhist Peace Movement, 630
- Vietnam, Women in War and Resistance before 1954, 631
- Vivandières (also known as Cantinières) in the French Army, 632

W

- Wake, Nancy (1912–), 637
- Walker, Mary Edwards (1832–1919), 638
- Ward, Nancy (ca. 1738–ca. 1824), 639
- Washington, Marguerite Pat Beauchamp Waddell (b. 1900), 640
- Washington, Martha Dandridge Custis (1731–1802), 641
- Watts, Jean (1909–1968), 642
- Wertheimer, Martha (1890–1942), 643
- Wexford Rising, Women of, 644
- Whittle, Reba Zitella (1919–1981), 645
- Wilhelmina, Queen of the Netherlands (1880–1962), 646

CONTENTS

- Williams, Jody (1950–), 647
Winema (Tobey Riddle) (ca. 1848–1920), 648
Winnemucca, Sarah (ca. 1844–1891), 649
Witherington, Pearl (b. 1914), 650
Wohlauf, Vera, 651

Y

- Yorck von Wartenburg, Countess Marion (1904–), 653
Young Men's Christian Association (YMCA), World War I, 654
Yugoslavia, Mother and Bride Images of Militant Serbian Nationalism, 655
Yugoslavia, Women in the Military during World War II, 655
Yugoslavia, Women and the Wars That Accompanied the Disintegration
of Yugoslavia, 656

Z

- Zane, Elizabeth (Betty) (1766–1831), 663
Zenobia, Queen of Palmyra (d. after 274), 664

Acronyms, 665

Bibliography, 671

List of Contributors, 675

Index, 683

About the Editor, 741

FOREWORD

Much of history is shaped by warfare, and women's history is no exception. Across the centuries, noncombatant women have been victims of war, and their multitude of stories have left a sad and enduring legacy. Women's active participation in battle and direct contributions to defense, however, have traditionally been overlooked. Accomplished unofficially, undercover, in disguise, and, until recently, by legislatively limited numbers of participants, women's often obscure activities have been difficult to trace and research and thus have been ignored and forgotten. Within the past twenty years, as military and feminist historians have begun to look more carefully at women in uniform, it has become apparent that historically women have been propelled into ever-increasing military roles by national need.

Limited in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries to medical and supply-related functions that reflected their societal roles, women served in secret, nursed the wounded, or became involved in the production, collection, and dissemination of food, medicines, clothing, and equipment. Women moved into communications and clerical work at the turn of the century. By 1917, few men possessed these skills, so when the American Expeditionary Force in Europe discovered it needed telephone operators to route commands from headquarters to the front lines and efficient clerks to manage masses of records, the Army recruited women to work under contract. Meanwhile, Army and Navy nurses cared for soldiers and sailors at home and abroad, the influenza epidemic lending increased urgency and importance to their role.

During World War II, a general manpower shortage meant that the nation had to turn to women to serve in widely diverse jobs in both the civilian and military sectors. Servicewomen were assigned not only as nurses and administrators but also to jobs traditionally held by men and became mechanics, truck drivers, and air tower control operators. The function of need even superseded traditional concerns for military women's safety and placed Army nurses on the front lines in North Africa and Anzio and members of the Women's Army Corps in London during the German bombing.

Since then, paralleling women's wider roles in the economic and social sectors of society, servicewomen have entered into a continuously growing array of military occupations, from technical jobs to intelligence, law enforcement, logistics, command, and combat roles. The number of women serving in the Armed Forces has expanded rapidly; women now represent approximately 15 percent of the force. A consequence of this expansion is that women are now an essential part of the force, vital to the mission integrity of a majority of fighting units.

In the recently published memoir of her service in Iraq in 2003, Navy nurse Commander Cheryl Lynn Ruff explained why she wanted to serve with U.S. forces in Iraq: "These guys need us now." In this she speaks for women who served with and in the U.S. Armed Forces across time. Need was the reason that compelled Mary Ann Bickerdyke and Clara Barton to bring food and medicines to soldiers languishing in Army hospitals. Army nurses and female contract surgeons served at casualty clearing stations near

the front lines in France and Belgium during World War I because their skills were needed, and Army nurses arrived in North Africa with the invading troops and served under fire at Anzio so that wounded soldiers would receive the best possible medical care. The Navy assigned Lieutenant Commander Bernice Walters, MD, to the hospital ship *Consolation* off the coast of Korea because she was a highly skilled physician anesthetist. The Marine Corps sent Sergeant Barbara Dulinsky to Vietnam because they needed a trained documents manager in Saigon.

During every American war, women sacrificed their lives because they perceived a need and a duty. The roster of their names includes Revolutionary War heroine Jemima Warner, killed by enemy fire during the siege of Quebec, and Civil War Union soldier Rosetta Wakeman who died in disguise during the Louisiana Red River Campaign of 1864. Two Army nurses were among the first U.S. military personnel to die in World War I, and sixteen servicewomen were killed in action during World War II. Army nurse Lieutenant Sharon Lane was killed by an enemy mortar at Chu Lai, Vietnam. Air Force flight nurse Captain Mary Klinker died in the ill-fated Operation Babylift in 1975. As the proportion of women serving in the armed forces grew, so did the numbers of female casualties. Since the beginning of the war in Iraq in 2003, more servicewomen have died from enemy fire than in any past conflict.

Military women's service on the front lines under fire and amid primitive field conditions as well as their deaths in past wars have frequently been overlooked or discounted by military historians, and even some feminist historians, simply

because such service did not interest them. Military historians, immersed in battlefield tactics, paid scant attention to women and their activities, and feminist historians were disinclined to write about war. At the Women in Military Service for America Memorial Foundation, our mission is to collect, preserve, and disseminate women's contributions to the defense of the United States. The importance of our efforts was reinforced recently when some politicians questioned how close to the front lines we want our servicewomen assigned and how gender-integrated we want our armed forces to be. During a time when the full extent of women's military roles are being debated, it is essential that we as a nation possess a full and complete understanding of the roles that women have played during times of war throughout the history of the nation.

Historian Bernard Cook of Loyola University has undertaken and brought to fruition the mammoth task of coalescing women's travails during war and their contributions to defense throughout world history. He has included the well known as well as the obscure and missed very few. Readers will quickly realize that the overarching themes of serving because of need and forgotten service remain true no matter which country's history is being studied. This encyclopedia belongs on the reference shelf of every scholar of military history, women's studies, and modern civilizations. May it serve as a starting point for further research in a new and emerging historical field and an inspiration to scholars everywhere.

*Judith Lawrence Bellafaire,
Women in Military Service for America
Memorial Foundation*

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

To my wife, Rosemary, I must express my gratitude for her patience and advice. Her invaluable and tireless assistance proofreading has rendered the book more readable. My secretary, Vicki Horrobin, always demonstrated with this project as with others, cheerful support and extraordinary effort. Victoria McCardel, my student assistant, provided most helpful assistance keeping records, handling correspondence, and doing research. Patricia Doran, the Interlibrary Loan Coordinator at the Loyola University Library, offered her talent and assistance on this project, locating needed books and articles.

I am particularly grateful for the suggestions from many of the contributors to this encyclopedia, who have made it a more comprehensive work. Lee Ann Ghajar and Judith Bellafaire at the Women in Military Service for America

Memorial in Arlington, Virginia, were encouraging and most helpful. Britta Granrud, the curator of collections at the Memorial's archives patiently provided me with a wealth of unpublished letters, diaries, memoirs, and photographs.

I am grateful for the talent and effort provided by the professionals at ABC-CLIO. My special thanks to Alicia Merritt, the acquisitions editor, for her encouragement and assistance with all sorts of details; to Carla Roberts, the production editor; to Peter Westwick and Alexander Mikaberidze for their assistance and helpful suggestions; to Ellen Rasmussen for her work in locating illustrations; and to all of the other professionals who helped with this project, including Deborah Lynes and the staff of D&D Editorial Services.

INTRODUCTION

This encyclopedia deals with the experiences of women in traditional wars between territorially based armies, but it also approaches war in a much broader sense. It includes the involvement of women in a wide range of organized violence, guerrilla warfare, low-intensity warfare, struggles for national liberation, insurgencies, revolutions, and terrorism. It considers the impact of all sorts of war on women and their role on the home front as well as on the front line. One historian has asserted “women *are* invisible (in history) unless we are looking straight at them” (Rosenhaft 1992, 140). It is hoped that this encyclopedia will contribute to the visibility of women in this unfortunate aspect of the human experience.

War has been a constant plague afflicting humanity. Throughout history, women have been involved in war. Sometimes they were compelled to fight and resist in desperation as their tribes, villages, or towns were under assault. The widow Kenau Hasselaer led the resistance of the women of Haarlem against the besieging Spaniards in 1572–1573 until the city was starved into submission and its defenders massacred. Sometimes a woman would move to the fore to replace male leaders, husbands, fathers, or brothers who had been killed or had failed to provide adequate leadership. Boudicca, who led the Iceni of Britain against the Romans, and Queen Durgautti (Durgawati) of Gurrah (Gondwana) in Hindustan are among the number who fit this category. Trieu Thi Trinh, who led the Vietnamese against the Chinese in 248 and declared, “I wish to ride the tempest, tame the waves, kill the sharks. I want to drive the enemy

away to save our people,” “merely” rose to the occasion (Bergman 1974, 54).

More frequently and throughout history, women have been the victims of war. They have been forced to grieve slain husbands and children. They have been brutalized and killed. Women have been viewed as property to be seized in war and enslaved. In April 1822, the Turks massacred or enslaved thousands of Greek women on the island of Chios in retaliation for the atrocities perpetrated by Greek insurgents at Tripolitsa. By the time of the rampage of the Turks, which was depicted by Eugene Delacroix in his painting *Massacre of Chios*, was over, the population of the island had been reduced from 120,000 to 30,000. Atrocities against women constantly reoccur in ethnic conflict. Women have been singled out as bearers of the nation. Women were targets of violence in the Bulgarian horrors of 1877 and during the Balkan Wars (1912–1913). Rape has been recurrent in warfare whether or not the warfare was primarily ethnically based. Victorious soldiers felt a right to misuse the women of their conquered foe. Frequently the phenomenon was an act of power, subjecting the enemy, disrupting familial traditions, and inflicting shame on the vanquished—females but also males, who were powerless to protect their women. In World War I, rape and brutality were committed by soldiers of all invading armies—the Germans in the west, the Russians in East Prussia, and even the French when they moved into Alsace (Audoin-Rouzeau and Becker 2002, 34). Stéphane Audoin-Rouzeau and Annette Becker commenting on atrocities committed by

Austro-Hungarian soldiers in Serbia wrote, “facial mutilations, particularly of the eyes, were most frequent, and done to men and women, though women were also the victims of sexual violence and mutilations of the genital organs. Anthropologists of violence have long recorded that such attacks aim at people’s most human features, the face and reproductive organs. Women are victimized twice over, as human beings and as future child-bearers, and they are the first whom the invaders want to humiliate” (Audoin-Rouzeau and Becker 2002, 47). The Nazis were single-minded in their desire to wipe out Jewish women to exterminate the Jewish people. Heinrich Himmler, the head of the SS, declared, “How is it with the women and children? I decided to find a clear solution here as well. I did not consider myself justified to exterminate the men—that is, to kill them or have them killed—and allow the avengers of our sons and grandsons in the form of their children to grow up. The difficult decision had to be taken to make this people disappear from the earth” (“Famous Speeches by Heinrich Himmler”). Visibly pregnant women and women with small children were among those selected for immediate gassing on arrival at the death camps.

The dreadful phenomenon of rape in war continued in the twentieth century and into the twenty-first. Wholesale rape was committed by members of the Red Army as it advanced into Germany in 1945, but other Allied forces also raped Germans. Jill Stephenson writes, “foreign troops sometimes regarded Germany’s women as part of spoils of war” (Stephenson 2001, 107). Alison Owings writes that U.S., British, and Canadian soldiers “stole, robbed, raped women. It was indescribable” (Owings 1994, 97). French soldiers did the same (Stephenson 2001, 175–176). The rapes committed by the Red Army as it advanced into Germany eclipsed that of the other Allied powers. According to Rita Botwinick, “women were raped without concern or consideration of age or appearance. Many victims felt that the Soviet troops treated such sexual abuse as a victor’s justly earned prerogative” (Botwinick 1992, 106). Rape was utilized

as a weapon of demoralization in the wars that accompanied the disintegration of the former Yugoslavia during the 1990s. This occurred as well during the twenty-year civil war between the Sudanese government and rebels in the south of the country and was repeated in Sudan during the bloody rampage of the Janjaweed, government-backed militias, against the people of the Darfur region. Amnesty International accused the Janjaweed of using “rape and other forms of sexual violence ‘as a weapon of war’ to humiliate black African women and girls” (Lacey 2004). Nicholas Kristof, in one of his many moving and graphic reports on the plight of the people of Darfur, wrote of a refugee in Chad who was “pregnant with the baby of one of the twenty Janjaweed raiders who murdered her husband and then gang-raped her.” The Janjaweed told her and the women with her, “You are black women, and you are our slaves.” One of the women cried and was killed. Another, who survived gang rape, “had her ears partly cut off as an added humiliation” (Kristof 2004).

If women survived war, many found themselves psychologically and economically ravaged by it. Spartan women reputedly told their men to come back with their shields or on them, but most women have been less sanguine about the loss of fathers, husbands, or sons. Although bereaved women have been universal in time and place, the sheer level of bereavement that accompanied the wars of the twentieth century was unprecedented. World War I left behind numbers of widows and orphans, which eclipsed previous conflicts. “In 1920 600,000 widows in France were eligible for state pensions” (Phillips 1996, 136). In addition, women like Vera Brittain survived burdened with the loss of brothers, fiancées, and friends. Of World War I’s impact on France, Audoin-Rouzeau and Becker wrote, “two-thirds or even three-quarters of the population were affected directly or indirectly by bereavement or, more accurately, *bereavements*, the intensity of which was much greater than that experienced in peace time. Young people had died violent deaths, having suffered unprecedented mutilations of the body. Their fam-

ilies often did not even have the corpses of their loved ones to honor. So the mourning process was complicated, sometimes impossible, always protracted” (Audoin-Rouzeau and Becker 2002, 8–9). In addition to the pain of loss, many women were fated to live their lives in involuntary solitude. The imbalance between men and women in the age group between 20 and 35 in 1919 was such that many women who desired to marry were unable to find suitable husbands. Roderick Phillips writes, “In Britain more than a quarter of women in the 30 to 34 age group in 1921 had not married, and almost one-fifth of them never did” (Phillips 1996, 139). For many women, the return of a husband was a mixed blessing. Thousands of surviving soldiers were so physically or psychologically impaired that they were economic, physical, and emotional burdens to their wives. According to Phillips, “A million French soldiers were permanently disabled: Of them 125,000 had lost at least one limb and more than 40,000 had been completely or partially blinded” (Phillips 1996, 137).

Apart from the women whom chance, opportunity, or inclination thrust forward into positions of military leadership, those who were compelled to fight by necessity, and the ubiquitous women survivors and victims of war, other women followed and serviced armies.

One writer has referred to camp followers in the vans of the armies of World War II (Stephenson 2001, 107). However, the phenomenon was more common and even a necessity in earlier wars. Women were historically part of the world of camp and train of European armies. The women entrepreneurs who served as *vivandières* or *cantinières*, in addition to providing food and passing out drink on credit during the heat of battle, cooked and did sewing and laundry between engagements. Some were married to soldiers, but many also provided intimate female companionship to soldiers for a price. In the heat of combat, *vivandières* often replaced fallen soldiers from their unit in battle. The legend of Molly Pitcher is a composite of a number of *vivandières* during the American Revolution. A particularly heroic *vivandière* and medic in the

Union Army during the American Civil War, Annie Etheridge, was decorated for saving wounded under fire.

Through the Thirty Years’ War (1618–1648), the women who followed and serviced armies were largely outside the control of military authorities. Until the time of Louis XIV, private contractors were even used to transport artillery. Like transport, which was integrated into the army, the women, who served as *vivandières* or *cantinières* in armies before supply and medical services were organized in a regular fashion, were increasingly supervised by military authorities in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries.

In addition to the *vivandières*, women fought, disguised as men, as regular soldiers and sailors. Almost 700 did so in the American Civil War. Women disguised themselves for a number of reasons. Some were desperate to escape oppressive relationships. Some were attracted by pay and rations. Some sought adventure. Some followed lovers, and some were patriots. Fighting disguised as men became more difficult in the late nineteenth century as European armies were regularized and put in standard uniforms and recruits were subjected to more than pro forma physicals. Nonetheless, a number of women disguised as men served in the Russian army in World War I. One, Yasha Bochkareva, distraught over the collapse of discipline in the Russian army, organized the first of several women’s battalions. Bochkareva felt that men could be shamed into action by the example of women soldiers. Her hopes were shattered. A British woman, Flora Sandes, openly served as a soldier in the Serbian army during World War I and was promoted to the rank of major.

As armies were put in standard uniform and professionalized, the traditional military roles of women as *vivandières* was largely eliminated. Apart from the few women military leaders, camp followers, *vivandières*, and women disguised as men generally came from lower classes. This changed as armies were professionalized. Women, frequently from the middle class, in accord with Victorian view in Great Britain and the United States of women as succorers,

increasingly offered their services as nurses. They served as independent contract labor in the Spanish-American War and as volunteer nurses in the Boer War. In the early twentieth century, women, inspired by the ideology of equality, formed voluntary aid societies. Under the aegis of these, women served as nurses in the Balkan Wars and during World War I. The unprecedented dimensions of World War I led to the mobilization of whole nations in support of the war. Women were recruited for war industries in most belligerent states. Thousands of British women served near the front lines as nurses, ambulance drivers, and mechanics. Thousands of others worked in armament factories and replaced men throughout the workforce. Many of the munitionettes worked with dangerous chemicals. TNT yellowed their skin and won them the sobriquet “canary girls.” Although the lives of many were, in all probability, shortened by their exposure to hazardous chemicals, several hundred died during the war due to explosions and other accidents. In one explosion at a factory in the Silvertown area of London, the government admitted that 69 workers were killed and 400 injured, but it was suspected that real total was much greater (Adie 2003, 101).

The war forced Great Britain and the United States not only to organize uniformed nursing components but also to put women in uniform as auxiliaries to the regular male military. Great Britain was the first country to place women in formal military service through the formation of the Women’s Auxiliary Army Corps (WAAC), the Women’s Royal Air Force (WRAF), and the Women’s Royal Naval Service (WRNS, referred to as the Wrens). By the end of the war, 100,000 women had volunteered to serve in these auxiliaries.

Although the British and American auxiliary units were frequently disbanded after the end of the war, they were reactivated or vastly expanded during World War II. Women were again encouraged to replace men in the economy in Great Britain and the United States, where Rosie the Riveter became a symbol for war service on the home front. The front lines of total war during

World War II were incredibly far flung. World War II brought the violence of war directly to women, who died in the bombardment of cities from London to Tokyo. In addition to the bombing of Hiroshima and Nagasaki, in July 1945, U.S. planes fire bombed 66 Japanese cities killing as many as 500,000 civilians. On August 6 and 9, Tokyo was fire bombed, and another 100,000 Japanese civilians were incinerated (Boggs 2005, 174). Women were caught up as casualties and combatants in street fighting from Warsaw to Stalingrad. In addition, they were directly involved as voluntary or conscripted combatants to an unprecedented extent. In the Soviet Union, women were utilized to supplement numbers in the Soviet military out of necessity and because of the insistent desire of many. Women saw combat duty in both mixed and all-female units. By the end of 1943, the number of women serving in Soviet armed forces numbered between 800,000 and 1 million, 8 percent of the total strength of the Soviet military. Approximately half of these women served at the front (Cottam 1980, 345). Soviet women served as combat pilots, snipers, tank drivers, and regular soldiers. In addition to women volunteers, 400,000 Soviet women were drafted, of these 100,000 served in air defense units (Cottam 1998, xx). Soviet women also played an important role in the Soviet Resistance movement. By February 1944, 26,707 women were serving with partisan units and constituted 16 percent of partisan strength in Belarus (Cottam 1982, 367; Herspring 1997, 47).

Women served in partisan movements in France, Italy, and Poland as well. It was in Yugoslavia, however, that their role was of particular numerical and symbolic significance: 100,000 women served as soldiers in the National Liberation Army (NLA). Initially 1 out of 10 NLA soldiers were women, but the proportion rose to 1 in 8. In addition, 2 million women were mobilized in the Anti-Fascist Front of Women (AFZ). These women ran local government, provided support to the front fighters, and engaged in sabotage. According to Barbara Jan-car, “from 1941 to 1945 8.5 percent of the total female population of Yugoslavia was killed or

died" (Jancar 1982, 91). Although 25 percent of the women who joined the NLA died, versus 11 percent for the men, there was an even higher casualty rate among the AFZ (Jancar 1982, 93). The AFZ members were not formally soldiers, but this was a guerrilla war, and the front was elusive. When the Nazis and their allies overran villages, AFZ women fought and were killed or captured. Often capture led to rape, torture, and murder. The casualty rate for female Partisans exceeded that for males. Some have asserted that the higher casualty rate for women fighters resulted from their inexperience. Milovan Djilas, a Communist leader within the Yugoslav resistance asserted, however, that the women, in general, fought more bravely than the men (Djilas 1977, 210). Despite their wartime contribution, after the war women were largely excluded from the Yugoslav military. Nevertheless, according to Barbara Jancar "their political and social emancipation was the product of the military campaign" (Jancar 1982, 92).

The British and the French also officially utilized women in combat during World War II. Of the 400 agents recruited and dispatched to Nazi-occupied Europe by the British Special Operations Executive 39 were women. Women were often used as couriers, who, it was hoped, would be less conspicuous on a bicycle in the French countryside or on a train than a young man. In all, 104 agents, 13 of them women, were killed. Some were killed outright; others were captured, tortured, and then killed (see "Atkins, Vera H.").

Because of the increasing insistence for equal rights and opportunities for women, auxiliaries were not disbanded after the war but were, in fact, integrated into the regular military forces of most developed industrial nations. Women gained the right to serve at sea as ensigns and officers, to fly combat aircraft, and to serve with ground forces short of the front line, not that this makes a great difference in wars of insurgency. The role of women in the Israeli military is perhaps a harbinger of future developments in the military of the industrial democratic states. Women played armed roles in the birth of the Is-

raeli state. During the Arab-Israeli War of 1948, more than 12,000 women served in the Israeli military and 114 died in combat (Gal 1986, 46). After independence, this military tradition continued, although in altered form. Israel is the only state in which women are conscripted. The fear of losing women in combat and opposition from Israel's religious parties led the government to exclude women from combat. There was resentment among women against their second-class status in the military. Lawsuits in the 1990s paved the way toward full participation by women in the Israeli military. By the end of 2001, Israeli women held combat positions in air defense, the air force, and artillery; as combat engineers; and in border patrol units.

If states felt compelled to integrate women into their armed forces to one degree or another, insurgent and guerrilla forces, depending on various cultural restraints, tended to utilize women as logistical support or even as fighters. In Latin America, women were involved in the Cuban Revolution. Celia Sánchez and Melba Hernández participated in Fidel Castro's failed attack on the Moncada Barracks in 1953. They subsequently changed his opinion about allowing women to fight with the guerrillas and, later, to participate in the national military. With a number of other women, they joined him in the mountains after his return from exile. Hernández formed the Mariana Grajales Brigade, a platoon consisting exclusively of women. The fact that women worked and fought alongside their male comrades had a significant impact on their place in the revolutionary movement after its victory. After the revolution, women were not drafted by the Cuban military but could volunteer for any branch and many rose to various levels of command. Elsewhere in Latin America, women since the 1950s have constituted approximately 30 percent of the 50,000 or so participants in armed revolutionary struggle (see "Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements").

A Vietnamese saying states, "When the enemy comes, even the women should fight" (Bergman 1974, 32). Vietnamese women have fought successive foreign interlopers—the Chinese, the

French, and the Americans. In 1907, Nguyen Thi Ba, a female innkeeper poisoned 200 French soldiers. In 1931, in Nghe Ahn and Ha Tinh provinces, a guerrilla band of 120 fighters, 40 of whom were women, temporarily drove out local functionaries and established a short-lived soviet. When Nguyen Thi Ngia, a twenty-three-year-old Nghe Tinh guerrilla fighter, was captured, she cut off her tongue to avoid breaking under torture. After the French left Vietnam in 1954, Vietnamese women fought for the South Vietnamese regime but, more significantly, for the North Vietnamese and Viet Cong.

Women played a significant role in the thirty-year-long armed struggle of Eritrea for independence from Ethiopia. By the end of the conflict in 1993, women had constituted 30 percent of Eritrea's approximately 100,000 soldiers (Wax 2004, A4). The Eritrean government attempted to rally its people with images of female soldiers, such as a poster with the legend "Mother Eritrea," which depicted a female fighter with a baby on her back brandishing an AK-47.

If women have so often been victims of violence, they have also proved to be capable of being agents of violence. Women historically have been assassins. Judith killed Assyrian general Holofernes, and Charlotte Corday killed the French revolutionary Jean Paul Marat. With the liberatory ideology unleashed by the French Revolution, however, women have increasingly been involved in revolutionary movements, and when the opposed power seemed impregnable, they have resorted to the weapon of the weak and desperate: terrorism. Women were among the populist terrorists who plotted the assassination of Alexander II in Russia in 1881, and one, Sophia Perovskaya, died on the scaffold for the deed. The execution of Gesia Gelfman was delayed because she was pregnant. She died in prison of peritonitis after giving birth. Women terrorists are an increasing phenomenon even in societies with strictly ascribed sexual differentiation. A woman killed the Indian president Rajiv Gandhi and eighteen others when she blew herself up near him in 1991. Women played a significant role in the Italian Red Brigades and

were significant not only as participants in Germany's Red Army Faction but also as its leaders. Christian Lochner, a German antiterrorist, has asserted that women terrorists are more ruthless and dangerous. He said, "For anyone who loves his life, it is a very clever idea to shoot the woman first. From my experience women terrorists have much stronger characters, more power, more energy. There are some examples where a man waited a moment before they [sic] fired, and women shot at once. This is a general phenomenon with terrorists" (MacDonald 1991, xiv). In Muslim Chechnya, Palestine, and Iraq, women have been suicide bombers. They were among the Chechen terrorists at a Moscow theater in October 2002 and at the school at Beslan in 2004.

Reflecting on the pictures of Private First Class Lynndie England of the U.S. National Guard, inside the Abu Ghraib prison in Baghdad, Melissa Sheridan Embser-Herbert wrote, "Just as women have proven themselves capable of leading troops in difficult situations, so they have now shown that they can become vulnerable to the power of a role, the power of wielding power. Images of a woman giving a 'thumbs up' beside a hooded, naked man have highlighted the horrors of war in a way I don't believe would have happened had we seen only more traditional images of men at war. Putting a woman's face on war's brutality has I believe, prompted a depth of discussion that might not otherwise have occurred" (Embser-Herbert 2004, B1 and 4).

—Bernard A. Cook

References and Further Reading

- Adie, Kate. 2003. *Corsets to Camouflage: Women and War*. Published in association with the Imperial War Museum. London: Hodder and Stoughton.
- Audoin-Rouzeau, Stéphane, and Annette Becker. 2002. *14–18 Understanding the Great War*. Translated by Catherine Temerson. New York: Hill and Wang.

INTRODUCTION

- Bergman, Arlene. 1974. *Women of Vietnam*. San Francisco: Peoples Press.
- Boggs, Carl. 2005. *Imperial Delusions: American Militarism and Endless War*. Lanham, MD: Rowman and Littlefield.
- Botwinick, Rita S. 1992. *Winzig, Germany, 1933–1946: The History of a Town under the Third Reich*. Westport, CT: Praeger.
- Cottam, Jean. 1980. "Soviet Women in Combat in World War II: The Ground Forces and the Navy." *International Journal of Women's Studies* 3 (July/August 1980) 4: 345–357.
- . 1982. "Soviet Women in Combat in World War II: The Rear Services, Resistance behind Enemy Lines and Military Political Workers." *International Journal of Women's Studies* 5, no. 4 (September/October 1982) 367.
- . 1998. *Women in War and Resistance*. Nepean, Canada: New Military.
- Djilas, Milovan. 1977. *Wartime*. New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovitch.
- Embser-Herbert, Melissa Sheridan. 2004 "When Women Abuse Power Too." *Washington Post* (May 16): B1, B4.
- "Famous Speeches by Heinrich Himmler." On October 6, 1943, Himmler's speech to Gau and Reich chiefs of the party in Posen (Poznan), <http://www.scrapbookpages.com/DachauScrapbook/HimmlerSpeeches.html> (accessed March 8, 2005).
- Gal, Reuven. 1986. *A Portrait of the Israeli Soldier*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Herspring, Dale R. 1997. "Women in the Russian Military: A Reluctant Marriage." *Minerva: Quarterly Report on Women in the Military* 15 (summer) 2: 47
- Jancar, Barbara. 1982. "Yugoslavia: War of Resistance." In *Female Soldiers—Combatants or Noncombatants? Historical and Contemporary Perspectives*, edited by Nancy Loring Goldman. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Kristof, Nicholas D. 2004. "Magboula's Brush with Genocide." *New York Times*, June 23.
- Lacey, Marc. 2004. "Rape Used as Weapon in Sudan, Group Says." *Times-Picayune* (New Orleans) (July 19).
- MacDonald, Eleineen. 1991. *Shoot the Woman First*. New York, Random House.
- Owings, Alison. 1994. *Frauen, German Women Recall the Third Reich*. New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers.
- Phillips, Roderick. 1996. *Society, State, and Nation in Twentieth-Century Europe*. Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice Hall.
- Reiss, Rodolphe Archibald. 1916. *Report upon the Atrocities Committed by the Austro-Hungarian Army during the First Invasion of Serbia*. Translated by F. S. Copeland. London: Simpkin, Marshall, Hamilton, Kent.
- Rosenhaft, Eve. 1992. "Women in Modern Germany." In *Modern Germany Reconsidered, 1870–1945*, edited by Gordon Martel. Pages 140–158. London and New York: Routledge.
- Stephenson, Jill. 2001. *Women in Nazi Germany*. Harlow, England: Longman/Pearson Educational.
- "Vera Atkins, CBE, Légion d'honneur," 64 Baker Street. http://www.64-baker-street.org/also/also_vera_atkins_her_story.html (cited January 10, 2006).
- Wax, Emily. 2004. "Respected in Battle, Overlooked at Home: Eritrea's Female Veterans Seek Peacetime Role." *Washington Post* (April 2): A4.

TOPIC FINDER

Administrators

Atkins, Vera H.
Bagot, Lady Theodosia
Barton, Clara
Blackwell, Elizabeth
Cleopatra VII, Queen of Egypt
Cochran, Jacqueline
Dix, Dorothea
Eleanor of Aquitaine
Furse, Lady Katherine Symonds
Haverfield, Evelina
Hobby, Oveta Culp
Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's
Hospitals
Livermore, Mary Ashton Rice
Lowther, Barbara
McCarthy, Emma Maud
McGee, Anita Newcomb
Nightingale, Florence
Peake, Felicity
Scholtz-Klink, Gertrud
Streeter, Ruth Cheney
Van Kleeck, Mary

American Revolution

American Revolution, Role of Women in the
Bailey, Anne Trotter
Brant, Mary
Corbin, Margaret Cochrane
Fulton, Sarah Bradlee
Greene, Catharine Littlefield
Ludington, Sybil
Martin, Grace, and Martin, Rachel
Molly Pitcher
Reed, Esther De Berdt
Samson, Deborah

Washington, Martha Dandridge Custis
Zane, Elizabeth

Antiquity

Artemisia of Caria
Cleopatra VII, Queen of Egypt
Fulvia
Greek Women and War in Antiquity
Helen of Troy
Japan, Women Warriors in Ancient and
Medieval Japan
Jewish Women of Antiquity and War
Roman Women and War
Spartan Women
Zenobia, Queen of Palmyra

Atrocities

Armenian Holocaust
Armenian Women Victims of Genocide
Bulgarian Horrors
East Timor, Abuse of Women during War
Germany, Armed Forces, World War II
Atrocities of
Herero of Namibia, Repression of the
Lidice Massacre
Oradour-sur-Glane Massacre
Rwanda, Women and the Genocide
Smyrna Tragedy, Continuing Ordeal for
Women Survivors of the
Sudan, Women and the Civil War in

Auxiliary Corps

Ashwell, Lena Margaret Pocock
Australia, Women in Service during World
War II
Bulgaria, Women and World War II

TOPIC FINDER

Finland, Lotta Svärd
 Finland, Women in the Winter War
 Frontier Soldiers, U.S., Wives of
 Great Britain, Women in Service during
 World War I
 Great Britain, Women in Service during
 World War II
 Great Britain, Women's Royal Naval Service,
 Reorganization before World War II
 Gwynne-Vaughan, Helen
 Hello Girls
 Onions, Maude
 Polish Auxiliary Air Force
 Red Cross of the United States: World War I
 and World War II
 Salvation Army in World War I
 Summerskill, Edith Clara, and Women's
 Home Defence Corps
 United States, Marine Corps Women's
 Reserves
 United States, Navy Women's Reserve
 United States, Women Reserves in the
 Coast Guard
 United States, Women's Airforce Service
 Pilots
 United States, Women's Auxiliary Ferrying
 Squadron
 United States, Women's Flying Training
 Detachment

Bystanders/Facilitators

Junge, Gertraud

Civil War, American

Baker, E. H.
 Barton, Clara
 Blackwell, Elizabeth
 Boyd, Isabelle
 Civil War, American, Women and
 Civil War, American, Women Combatants
 during the
 Civil War, American, Women in the Medical
 Services in the
 Clayton, Frances
 Cushman, Pauline
 Dix, Dorothea
 Edmonds, Sarah Emma

Etheridge, Anna
 Greenhow, Rose O'Neale
 Hart, Nancy
 Hoge, Jane Currie Blaikie
 Moon, Lottie, and Moon, Ginnie
 Stowe, Harriet Beecher
 Tubman, Harriet
 Walker, Mary Edwards

Collaborationists

Norway, Women's Collaboration during
 World War II German Occupation

Combatants/Military Personnel

Agustina de Aragón
 Allen, Eliza
 Amazons
 Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth
 Century
 Azurduy de Padilla, Juana
 Bailey, Anne Trotter
 Belik, Vera Luk'ianovna (*see* Makarova,
 Tat'iana Petrovna)
 Bochkareva, Maria
 Borginis, Sarah
 Bower, Ursula Graham
 Bray, Linda
 China to 1911, Women Warriors in
 Civil War, American, Women Combatants
 during the
 Clayton, Frances
 Corbin, Margaret Cochrane
 Dahomey, Women Warriors
 Deavers, Briget
 Durova, Nadezhda Andreyevna
 Duston, Hannah
 Earley, Charity Adams
 Edmonds, Sarah Emma
 Engel, Regula
 Eritrea, Women and the Struggle for
 Independence
 Espín Guillois, Vilma
 Farrell, Mairead
 Fedutenko, Nadezhda Nikiforovna
 Fernig, Félicité, and Fernig, Théophile
 Fomicheva-Levashova, Klavdiia Iakovlevna
 Fulvia

TOPIC FINDER

- Garibaldi, Anita
 Gierczak, Emilia
 Great Britain, Women in Service in the
 Seventeenth, Eighteenth, and Early
 Nineteenth Centuries
 Greek Civil War, Women in the
 Greek Revolution, Women and the
 Greek Women and War in Antiquity
 Hall, Virginia
 Hart, Nancy
 Hello Girls
 Hernández Rodríguez del Rey, Melba
 Hirsch, Ilse
 India to 1857: Women Warriors in
 Israeli Military, Women in the
 Japan: Women Warriors in Ancient and
 Medieval Japan
 Jewish Women of Antiquity and War
 Joan of Arc
 Kufrin, Milka
 Kurmanjan-Datkha
 Lakshmi Bai and Sepoy Rebellion
 Landau, Emilia
 Lawrence, Dorothy
 Lewandowska, Jania
 Litviak, Lidiia Vladimirovna
 Makarova, Tat'iana Petrovna, and Belik,
 Vera Luk'ianovna
 Markievicz, Countess Constance
 Martin, Grace, and Martin, Rachel
 Mau Mau Rebellion, Women in the
 Michel, Louise
 Milosavljevic, Danica
 Molly Pitcher
 Nicaragua, Women and War in
 Nikulina, Anna Vladimirovna
 Nirouet, Collette
 Nonhelma
 Pavliuchenko, Liudmila Mikhailovna
 Pilots of the IL-2
 Plater, Emilia
 Poland, Resistance during World War II,
 Women and
 Polish Independent Women's Battalion,
 "Emilia Plater"
 Russia, Women in the Armed Forces
 (1700–1917)
 Russia, Women Recipients of the Order of
 St. George (1808–1917)
 Samson, Deborah
 Sánchez Manduley, Celia
 Sandes, Flora
 Santamaría Cuadrado, Haydée
 Snell, Hannah
 Sosnowska-Karpik, Irena
 Soviet Union, 46th Taman Guards Bomber
 Aviation Regiment
 Soviet Union, Order of the Red Banner,
 Women Recipients (1918–1928)
 Soviet Union Air Defense, 586th Fighter
 Aviation Regiment
 Talbot, Mary Anne
 Teodoroiu, Ecaterina
 Travers, Susan
 United States, Military Service of Women in
 World War II
 Vietnam, Women in War and Resistance
 before 1954
 Ward, Nancy
 Winema
 Winnemucca, Sarah
 Yugoslavia, Women in the Military during
 World War II
 Zane, Elizabeth
 Zenobia, Queen of Palmyra
- Combat Units (Female)***
 Dahomey, Women Warriors
 Polish Independent Women's Battalion,
 Emilia Plater
 Soviet Union, 46th Taman Guards Bomber
 Aviation Regiment
 Soviet Union, 125th M. M. Raskova Borisov
 Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment
 Soviet Union Air Defense, 586th Fighter
 Aviation Regiment
- Companions***
 Alexandra, Czarina of Russia
 Braun, Eva
 Frontier Soldiers, U.S., Wives of
 Greene, Catharine Littlefield
 Lee, Mary Anna Randolph Custis
 Markovic, Mirjana

TOPIC FINDER

Mitford, Unity
Napoleon's Marshals, Wives of
Petacci, Clara
Riedesel, Friederike Charlotte Luise von
Massow von
Washington, Martha Dandridge Custis

***Concentration/Detention Camps and
Internees***

Hobhouse, Emily
Holocaust and Jewish Women
Japanese Interned in U.S. Camps
Jehovah Witnesses in Nazi Germany
Ravensbrück

***Concentration/Death Camp
Guards/Personnel***

Braunsteiner, Hermine
Grese, Irma
Koch, Ilse

Conscientious Objector

Conscientious Objectors in the United
States Women during World War II,
Women and
McDowell, Mary Stone

Correspondents, War

See Journalists; Photographers

Courier

Ludington, Sybil
Secord, Laura

Entertainers

Ashwell, Lena Margaret Pocock
Dietrich, Marlene

Ethnic Attacks

Armenian Holocaust
Armenian Women Victims of Genocide
Bulgarian Horrors
Guatemala, Civil Conflict and Women
Herero of Namibia, Repression of the
Smyrna Tragedy, Continuing Ordeal for
Women Survivors of the

Frontier Fighters

Bailey, Anne Trotter
Duston, Hannah

Governmental Figures

Alexandra, Czarina of Russia
Ashwari, Hanan
Blanche of Castile
Falklands War and Thatcher, Margaret
Gandhi, Indira
Kurmanjan-Datkha
Marie, Queen of Romania
Markovic, Mirjana
Meir, Golda
Mowlam, Marjorie
Plavsic, Biljana
Sophie, Duchess von Hoenberg
Wilhelmina, Queen of the Netherlands

Guerrillas

Bunke, Tamara
Hart, Nancy

Holocaust Victims

Frank, Anne
Holocaust and Jewish Women
Jehovah's Witnesses in Nazi Germany
Roma/Sinti
Rosenstrasse and Intermarriage of Jews and
German Gentiles
Salomon, Charlotte
Stein, Edith

Home Front

China, Women on the Home Front in World
War II
France, World War I, Women and the Home
Front
France, World War II, Women and the
Home Front
Germany, Women and the Home Front,
World War I
Germany, Women and the Home Front,
World War II
Great Britain, Women, Social Impact of
World War I on

TOPIC FINDER

- Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I
- Great Britain, Women on the Home Front during World War II
- Greek Women and War in Antiquity
- Iran-Iraq War and Gulf War, Impact on Women of Iraq
- Italy, Women in the Resistance during World War II
- Italy, Women on the Home Front and in the Services during World War I
- Japan, Women and the Home Front, World War II
- Korea: Women and the Home Front during World War II
- Malta, Women and Wars in
- Norway, Resistance Movement during World War II German Occupation, Women and
- Roman Women and War
- Rosie the Riveter
- United States, Home Front during World War I
- United States, Home Front during World War II
- Impact of War***
- Civil War, American, and Women
- France, World War I, Psychological Impact on French Women
- Trauma and Brutalization Unleashed by World War I
- Journalists***
- Chapelle, Dickey
- Emerson, Gloria
- Fallaci, Oriana
- Friang, Brigitte
- Gellhorn, Martha
- Higgins, Marguerite
- Hull, Peggy, pseud.
- Journalists, American Women, during World War I
- Lederer, Edith
- Luce, Clare Boothe
- Schuyler, Philippa
- Tomara, Sonia
- Trotta, Liz
- Watts, Jean
- Medical Service***
- Anderson, Louisa Garrett
- Australian Army Nursing Service/Royal Australian Army Nursing Corps
- Bagot, Lady Theodesia
- Barry, James
- Barton, Clara
- Bennett, Agnes Elizabeth Lloyd
- Black, Catherine
- Blackwell, Elizabeth
- Chisholm, Mairi Lambert
- Civil War, American, Women in the Medical Services in the
- Conquest, Joan, pseud.
- Cornum, Rhonda
- Curie, Maria Sklodowska, and the Little Curies
- Dix, Dorothea
- Etheridge, Anna
- Fairchild, Helen
- Farmborough, Florence
- Furse, Lady Katherine Symonds
- Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I
- Hamilton, Cicely Marie
- Haverfield, Evelina
- Hodges, Katherine
- Hoge, Jane Currie Blaikie
- Hutton, Lady Isabel Galloway
- Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's Hospitals
- Kea, Salaria
- King, Olive
- Livermore, Mary Ashton Rice
- Lowther, Barbara
- McCarthy, Emma Maud
- McDougall, Grace Ashley-Smith
- McGee, Anita Newcomb
- Medical Specialist Corps, United States Women in Military Service, World War II
- Mercy Ship
- Nightingale, Florence

TOPIC FINDER

Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War I

Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War II

Red Cross of the United States: World War I and World War II

Ross, Ishobel

Sandes, Flora

Smith, Winnie

Stark, Dame Freya

Stobart, Mabel

Tower, Ellen May

Thurstan, Violetta

T'Serclaes, Baroness Elizabeth de

Van Devanter, Lynda

Walker, Mary Edwards

Washington, Marguerite Pat Beauchamp Waddell

Whittle, Reba Zitella

Military Awards

Russia, Women Recipients of the Order of St. George

Soviet Union, Order of Glory, I Class, Soviet Women Recipients

Soviet Union, Order of the Red Banner, Women Recipients

Soviet Union/Russian Federation, Women Heroes of the

Military Leaders

Aishah

Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth Century

Artemisia of Caria

Azurduy de Padilla, Juana

Boudicca, Queen of the Iceni

Cherokee War Woman

Cleopatra VII, Queen of Egypt

Eleanor of Aquitaine

Fulvia

Gandhi, Indira

Guljamal-Khan(um)

Kurmanjan-Datkha

Matilda of Tuscany

Ward, Nancy

Zenobia, Queen of Palmyra

National Liberation

Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth Century

Azurduy de Padilla, Juana

Black Sash

Colenso, Harriette

Devlin, Bernadette

First, Heloise Ruth

Fuld, Bracha

Garibaldi, Anita

Gonne, Maud

Islamic Resistance Movements, Women and Lakshmi Bai and Sepoy Rebellion

Lebrón, Lolita

Mandela, Winnie

Markievicz, Countess Constance

Mau Mau Rebellion, Women in the

Nongqawuse

Philippines, Women during the American Suppression of the Insurrection in

Polish Independent Women's Battalion, Emilia Plater

Ulster, Women during the Troubles in Wexford Rising, Women of

Nations, War Experience of Women in Various Nations

See Home Front

Native American

Warriors/Scouts/Intermediaries

Nonhelema

Ward, Nancy

Winema

Winnemucca, Sarah

Nobel Peace Prize Winners

Balch, Emily Green

Peace People Movement

Suttner, Baroness Bertha Sophie Felicita von

Williams, Jody

TOPIC FINDER

Pacifists

McDowell, Mary Stone

Peace Activists

Addams, Jane
Balch, Emily Green
Catt, Carrie Chapman
Curtis, Cathrine
Dilling, Elizabeth
Fonda, Jane
Goldstein, Vida
Hobhouse, Emily
Locke, Elsie
Luxemburg, Rosa
McDowell, Mary Stone
Mead, Lucia Ames
Moore, Eleanor May
Mowlam, Marjorie
Olmsted, Mildred Scott
Onions, Maude
Pankhurst Family: Emmeline, Christabel,
E. Sylvia, and Adela Pankhurst Walsh
Peace People Movement
Saumoneau, Louise
Street, Jessie
Suttner, Baroness Bertha Sophie Felicita
von
Williams, Jody

Peace Movements

International Congress of Women: Antiwar
Protest of Women in World War I
International Manifesto of Women
National Legion of Mothers of America
Peace People Movement
Ulster, Women during the Troubles in
United States, Opposition to U.S. Entry
into World War II by Right-Wing
American Women
Vietnam, Women in the Buddhist Peace
Movement

Photographers

Bonney, Therese
Bourke-White, Margaret

Bubley, Esther
Chapelle, Dickey
Lange, Dorothea
Meiselas, Susan

Pilots

Avenger Field
Baumgartner, Ann
Belik, Vera Luk'ianovna (see Makarova,
Tat'iana Petrovna)
Brown, Ruth Humphries
Chamberlain, Margaret Lenora
Cochran, Jacqueline
Dalrymple, Mildred Inks
Fedutenko, Nadezhda Nikiforovna
Fomicheva-Levashova, Klavdiia
Iakovlevna
Grizodubova, Valentina Stepanovna
Hobby, Oveta Culp
Johnson, Amy
Leska-Daab, Anna
Lewandowska, Jania
Litviak, Lidiia Vladimirovna
Makarova, Tat'iana Petrovna, and Belik
Vera Luk'ianovna
Parrish, Marie O'Dean Bishop
Peake, Felicity
Pilots of the IL-2
Raskova, Marina Mikhailovna
Reitsch, Hanna
Sosnowska-Karpik, Irena
Soviet Union, 46th Taman Guards
Bomber Aviation Regiment
Soviet Union, 125th M. M. Raskova
Borisov Guards Bomber Aviation
Soviet Union Air Defense, 586th Fighter
Aviation Regiment
Tackaberry, Betty Guild
United States, Women's Airforce Service
Pilots
United States, Women's Auxiliary
Ferrying Squadron
United States, Women's Flying Training
Detachment

Political Violence

Guatemala, Civil Conflict and Women
 Peru: Shining Path
 Peruvian Truth and Reconciliation
 Commission: Women and Political
 Violence

Prisoners of War

Cornum, Rhonda
 Whittle, Reba Zitella

Propagandists

“Axis Sally”
 Farmborough, Florence
 Ibárruri, Dolores
 “Lady Haw Haw”
 Orczy, Baroness Emma
 Stark, Dame Freya
 “Tokyo Rose”

Protest Movements, Antiwar

Baez, Joan Chandos
 United States, Opposition to U.S. Entry into
 World War II by Right-Wing
 American Women

Publicists

Cannan, May Wedderburn

Rape in War

AIDS, War and the Spread of
 East Timor, Abuse of Women during War
 Guatemala, Civil Conflict and Women
 Kashmir, Conflict in, Women and
 Korea: Comfort Women
 Nanking, Rape of
 Rape: Red Army in World War II
 Thirty Years’ War
 Yugoslavia, Women and the Wars That
 Accompanied the Disintegration of

Rescuers

Schindler, Emilie
 Tubman, Harriet
 Wertheimer, Martha

Reserves

See War Service

Resistance, Belgian

Cavell, Edith Louisa
 De Jongh, Andrée
 Petit, Gabrielle

Resistance, Czech

Haas, Elena

Resistance, Dutch

Schaft, Jeannetje Joanna

Resistance, French

Aubrac, Lucie
 Borrel, Andrée
 Fourcade, Marie-Madeleine
 Hall, Virginia
 Moreau-Evrard, Emilienne
 Souliè, Geneviève
 Tillion, Germaine
 Viannay, Hélène
 Wake, Nancy
 Witherington, Pearl

Resistance, German

Ballestrem-Solf, Countess Lagi
 Buch, Eva Maria
 Fittko, Lisa
 Harnack-Fish, Mildred
 Kichner, Johanna
 Kuckhoff, Greta
 Monte, Hilda, pseud.
 Niederkirchner, Käthe
 Scholl, Sophie
 Schulze-Boysen, Libertas
 Seele, Gertrud
 Terwiel, Maria
 Thadden, Elizabeth von
 Yorck von Wartenburg, Countess Marion

Resistance, Greek

Greece, Resistance during World War II,
 Women and

Resistance, Hungarian

Senesh, Hanna
Svobod, Maria

Resistance, Italian

Italy, Women in the Resistance during
World War II

Resistance, Jewish

Bruskina, Masha
Dawidson, Justina
Fittko, Lisa
Fuld, Bracha
Grossman, Chaika
Kempner, Vitka
Korczak, Rozka
Landau, Emilia
Reik, Haviva
Senesh, Hannah

Resistance, Norway

Norway, Resistance Movement during
World War II, Women and

Resistance, Polish

Dawidson, Justina
Granville, Christine, pseud.
Poland, Resistance during World War II,
Women and

Resistance, Soviet

Bruskina, Masha

Resistance, Yugoslav

Yugoslavia, Women in the Military during
World War II

Revolutions

Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth
Century
China, Women and the Communist
Revolution
Cuban Revolution, Women in the
El Salvador, Women and Civil Strife in
France, Revolution of 1848

French Revolution, Impact of War on
Women's Protest during the
Germany, Revolution of 1918–1919,
Women in the
Greek Civil War, Women in the
Greek Revolution, Women and the
Guatemala, Civil Conflict and Women
Paris Commune, Women and the
Peru: Shining Path
Russian Revolution and Women
Sicilian Revolutions of 1820 and 1848,
Women and the
Wexford Rising, Women of

Revolutionaries

Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth
Century
Bunke, Tamara
Espín Guillois, Vilma
Farrell, Mairead
First, Heloise Ruth
French Revolution, Impact of War on
Women's Protest during the
Garibaldi, Anita
Germany, Revolution of 1918–1919,
Women in the
Hernández Rodríguez del Rey, Melba
Kollontai, Alexandra
Latin America, Women in Guerrilla
Movements in
Luxemburg, Rosa
Markievicz, Countess Constance
Mau Mau Rebellion, Women in the
Michel, Louise
Peru: Shining Path
Plater, Emilia
Sánchez Manduley, Celia
Santamaría Cuadrado, Haydée

Service Organizations

Red Cross of the United States, World War I
and World War II
Salvation Army in World War I
Young Men's Christian Association, World
War I

Sieges

Malta, Women and Wars in
Paris Commune, Women and the

**Spies/Secret Agents/Diplomatic
Services/Women Accused of Spying**

Atkins, Vera
Baissac, Lise de
Baker, E. H.
Bell, Gertrude Margaret Lowthian
Borrel, Andrée
Boyd, Isabelle
Brant, Mary
Cormeau, Yvonne
Cushman, Pauline
Darragh, Lydia
Eriksen, Vera
Granville, Christine, pseud.
Greenhow, Rose O'Neale
Hall, Virginia
Harnack-Fish, Mildred
Khan, Noor Inayat
Kuczynski, Ursula
Martin, Grace, and Moon, Rachel
Mata Hari, pseud.
Moon, Lottie, and Moon, Ginnie
Petit, Gabrielle
Rolfe, Lilian
Rosenberg, Ethel
Rudellat, Yvonne
Sansom, Odette
Schmidt, Kitty
Schulze-Boysen, Libertas
Secord, Laura
Senesh, Hannah
Stark, Dame Freya
Szabo, Violette
Tubman, Harriet
Van Lew, Elizabeth Louise
Wake, Nancy
Witherington, Pearl

Survivors

Brittain, Vera Mary
Scotland: War Widows and Refugees in,
1640s and 1688–1690
Trümmerfrauen

Symbols

Greece, Women and Female Imagery in
Greek Warfare
Marianne
Posters, U.S., Images of Women in World
War II
Rosie the Riveter
Yugoslavia, Mother and Bride Images of
Militant Serbian Nationalism

Terrorists

Baader-Meinhof Gang
Hirsch, Ilse
Islamic Resistance Movements, Women and
the
Red Army Faction, West Germany, Women
of the
Red Brigades, Italy, Women of the

Vietnam

Baez, Joan Chandos
Fonda, Jane
Gellhorn, Martha
Van Devanter, Lynda
Vietnam, U.S. Women Soldiers in
Vietnam, Women in the Buddhist Peace
Movement
Vietnam, Women in War and Resistance
before 1954

War Crimes

Armenian Holocaust
Armenian Women Victims of Genocide
Belgium, Women during World War I
Biological Warfare Experimentation,
Japanese
Einsatzgruppen
Forced Labor, Nazi Germany
Holocaust and Jewish Women
Lidice Massacre
Nanking, Rape of
Oradour-sur-Glane Massacre
Rape in War
Ravensbrück

War Criminals

Bilien, Valentina

TOPIC FINDER

Grese, Irma
Koch, Ilse
Plavsic, Biljana

Wars

Afghanistan
Algeria, Women in the War of National Liberation
American Revolution, Role of Women in the
Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth Century
Arab-Israeli Wars
Argentina, The Dirty War against Civilians
Civil War, American, and Women
Crusades, Women and the
Cuban Revolution, Role of Women in the
Eritrea, Women and the Struggle for Independence
Falklands War and Thatcher, Margaret
France, Wars of Religion
Greek Civil War, Women in the
Iran-Iraq War and Gulf War, Impact on Women of Iraq
Ireland, Easter Rising of 1916
Ireland, War of Independence
Kashmir, Conflict in, Women and
Korean War, American Women and the
Nicaragua, Women and War in
Peasants' War
Spanish Civil War
Spanish-American War, Women and the
Sudan, Women and the Civil War in
Thirty Years' War
Vietnam, Women in the Buddhist Peace Movement
Yugoslavia, Women and the Wars That Accompanied the Disintegration of Yugoslavia

War Service/Women's Reserves

Australia, Women in Service during World War II
Brown, Mary-Agnes
Dalrymple, Mildred Inks
Douglas-Pennant, Violet
Furse, Lady Katherine Symonds

Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I
Great Britain, Women in Service during World War II
Great Britain, Women's Royal Naval Service, Reorganization before World War II
Gwynne-Vaughan, Helen
Hamilton, Cicely Marie
Hello Girls
Hobby, Oveta Culp
Reed, Ester De Berdt
United States, Marine Corps Women's Reserves
United States, Women Airforce Service Pilots
United States, Women Reserves in the Coast Guard
United States, Women's Auxiliary Army Corps
United States, Women's Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron
United States, Women's Flying Training Detachment
Vietnam, U.S. Women Soldiers in

War Supporters

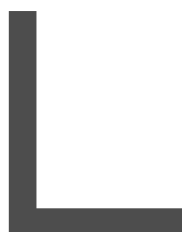
Fawcett, Millicent
Hamilton, Cicely Marie
Orczy, Baroness Emma
Pankhurst Family: Emmeline, Christabel, E. Sylvia, and Adela Pankhurst Walsh

War Work

Trümmerfrauen

Writers

Brittain, Vera
Cannan, May Wedderburn
De Pizan, Christine
Gellhorn, Martha
Hamilton, Cicely Marie
Literature of World War II, U.S., Depiction of Women in
Smith, Winnie
Suttner, Bertha Sophie Felicita von
Van Devanter, Lynda



LA PASIONARIA

See Ibárruri, Dolores

“LADY HAW HAW” (MARGARET CAIRNS JOYCE) (1911–1972)

British Nazi and expatriate who, together with her husband, produced much of Nazi Germany's English-language radio propaganda during World War II. Margaret Cairns Joyce had been active in the British Union of Fascists in the 1930s. She married the future leader of the break-away National Socialist League, William Joyce, and became the league's treasurer. Once hostilities had broken out between Britain and Germany in 1939, the couple fled to Germany, took German citizenship, and enlisted in Nazi propaganda work. They became known as Lord and Lady Haw Haw, largely because of William Joyce's nasal, vaguely aristocratic-sounding speaking voice, but neither were in fact of elite background. Margaret Joyce was born into a Manchester working-class family and had trained as a typist and dancer.

From early 1940, Margaret Joyce broadcast on the Reichs Rundfunk radio station and on the specially created English-language stations of the Ministry of Propaganda's Bureau Concordia system. These stations' transmissions had been so arranged that they appeared to emanate from within the British isles, and intelligence reports showed that great numbers of British subjects, especially among the youngest and most politically active, listened to the often lurid and always violently anti-Semitic invective of the Haw Haws' broadcasts. Margaret Joyce's specialty was the discussion of women's topics from a Nazi perspective, always replete with the assertion that German women fared better under Nazism than British women under their system of government. She wrote many of her husband's radio addresses as well, for the Bureau Concordia system and the smaller Radio Caledonia, which incited the Scots to rise in revolt against the English; on Christian Peace Movement Radio, which was directed at pacifists; and on Workers' Challenge Radio, which tried to encourage an internal social revolution in wartime Britain.

While in Germany, Margaret Joyce took a German intelligence officer as a lover; she was divorced and severely beaten by her husband but elected to remarry him in 1943. They stayed

together thereafter, working at various radio stations until May 1945, when both were arrested by the British military. William Joyce was executed for treason in 1946, but after she had spent some time in Royal Holloway prison, charges against Margaret Joyce were dropped on grounds of compassion. She died in 1972, having spent her last years quietly at home in Britain and in Ireland. Only one of a number of British expatriate women who had collaborated in Nazi propaganda, her role was so prominent a case that, together with her husband, Lady Haw Haw came to be remembered as the English voice of Nazi Germany.

—*Markku Ruotsila*

See also “Axis Sally”; “Tokyo Rose”

References and Further Reading

- Dogherty, Martin. 2000. *Nazi Wireless Propaganda: Lord Haw-Haw and British Public Opinion*. New York: Columbia University.
- Gottlieb, Julie V. 2000. *Feminine Fascism: Women in Britain's Fascist Movement, 1923–1945*. London: I. B. Tauris.
- Martland, Peter. 2003. *Lord Haw-Haw: The English Voice of Nazi Germany*. Kew, England: National Archives.
- Selwyn, Francis. 1987. *Hitler's Englishman: The Crime of “Lord Haw-Haw.”* London: Penguin.

LAKSHMI BAI (CA. 1830–1858) AND SEPOY REBELLION

Indian freedom fighter. Lakshmi Bai, the Rani of Jhansi, led her compatriots in resistance to British rule during the Indian (Sepoy) Rebellion of 1857–1858 with such courage and skill that she became a figure of mythological proportions in later Indian history. Although Indian and British accounts of her actions differ widely, all agree that she was, in the words of the British commander who fought against her, “the Indian

Joan of Arc . . . the best and the bravest of the rebel leaders” (Lebra-Chapman 1986, 114–115).

Lakshmi Bai was born into a Brahman family in the Hindu holy city of Benares about 1830. Some Indian sources give her birth year as late as 1835, adding youth to the mystique of her military exploits, as well as the religious associations of her birth place. Her birth name was Manikarnika, one of the names of the Ganges. Lakshmi Bai's mother died when she was four years old and, as a result of her father's approval (or neglect), she had an upbringing different from that of most proper Indian girls. She learned to read and write, and importantly for her later military exploits, she was trained to ride horses, fight with swords, and fire guns.

In 1842, at twelve years of age, a common age for a Hindu girl at that time to marry, she married the much older Gangadhar Rao, who ruled as Maharaja of the northern Indian principality of Jhansi. On the occasion of her marriage, she took the name Lakshmi (the Hindu goddess of wealth), with the honorific “Bai” added; additionally, she had the title of Rani (queen) of Jhansi. Following the death of their only child, Gangadhar Rao (just before his own death in 1853) adopted a young male relative to be his heir, with Lakshmi Bai designated to serve as regent. With much of India under British control at that time, the governor-general of India did not recognize the boy's succession, because such an adoption—customary in Hindu tradition—was not legal under English common law. According to the hated “doctrine of lapse,” the British government, technically still the East India Company, annexed the state of Jhansi on February 16, 1854, and tried to buy off the Rani with a pension and the right to live in the palace.

Lakshmi Bai, resistant to the annexation, nevertheless remained loyal to British rule even after revolt broke out in 1857 among the Indian soldiers (sepoys) in the British army—a revolt that spread throughout much of north-central India. When Indians in Jhansi joined the revolt and massacred the resident British soldiers and civilians, Lakshmi Bai condemned their ac-

tions. After the rebels fled from Jhansi, the British asked her to temporarily administer the state, which she did effectively. The British, however, did not trust her, wrongly viewing her as complicit in the revolt, and in March 1858 they led an army against her and laid siege to the fort of Jhansi. The Rani organized the defense of Jhansi, mobilizing all inhabitants, female and male. When the British troops breached the walls of the fort, she managed to escape and joined other rebel leaders in a nearby stronghold.

In this last stage of the Indian Rebellion, Lakshmi Bai, now in open revolt, emerged as one of India's most skilled military leaders. As a female warrior in a male-dominated society, she could draw popular support and protection from identification with powerful Hindu goddesses. Portrayed as wearing either trousers or a sari pulled up between her legs to allow her to ride effectively, she also (according to legend rather than fact) was reputed to ride into battle with the reins in her teeth so both hands were free to wield her sword. Skilled in military strategy as well as combat techniques, she devised plans that, if followed by her male colleagues, might have led to victory rather than defeat of the rebellion—at least in that area of India. Making a last stand at the imposing Gwalior fort in June 1858, the rebels, with Lakshmi Bai in the forefront, engaged in a bloody battle with the British that resulted in her death and the defeat of the rebels. Although her death seemed to end the spirit of resistance, Lakshmi Bai was almost immediately made into an iconic Indian martyr, whose military skill, courage, and defiance became legendary and the subject of multitudinous poems, dramas, paintings, and sculpture. In later years her influence became an important inspiration to both Indian nationalists and feminists. Appropriately, during World War II when a brigade of Indian women was formed to fight against British rule as part of the Indian National Army formed with the encouragement of the Japanese, it was named the Rani of Jhansi Regiment. It was commanded by a doctor, Lakshmi Sahgal (1914–), and engaged in combat

against the British. Sahgal was captured during the war but released in 1946 because she was regarded as a heroine by the proponents of Indian independence and her imprisonment was regarded by the British as counterproductive.

—Nancy Fix Anderson

See also India to 1857, Women Warriors in

References and Further Reading

- Devi, Mahasweta. 2000. *The Queen of Jhansi*. (Originally published in 1956 as *Jhansir Rani*, in Bengali.) Trans. Mandira Sengupta and Sagaree Sengupta. Calcutta: Seagull Books.
- Fraser, Antonia. 1989. *Warrior Queens*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf.
- Lebra-Chapman, Joyce. 1986. *The Rani of Jhansi: A Study of Female Heroism in India*. Honolulu: University of Hawaii Press.

LANDAU, EMILIA
(1924–1943)

Jewish resistance fighter. Emilia (Margalit) Landau was a Jewish resistance fighter who was killed in the first Warsaw ghetto uprising. She was fatally wounded on January 18, 1943, when she threw grenades at Nazis seeking to enforce the removal of the Jews from the ghetto to death camps at Treblinka, Poland.

The Nazis had scheduled an *Aktion* to begin on January 18. The *Aktion* was to be the final mass deportation of the Jews from the Warsaw ghetto to the extermination camps. Several hundred thousand had previously been transferred to the death camps in the summer of 1942. After the Great Deportation those left in the ghetto were mostly the young and fit, numbering about 65,000.

After the Great Deportation in 1942, Jewish resistance leaders decided that the leaders of the Jewish police force (*Judenrat*), who were willing agents of the Nazis, should be killed. Emilia participated in the murder of Jacob Lejkin, deputy

to Jozef Szerynski, the head of the Jewish Police, who cooperated with the Germans in organizing the mass deportations from the ghetto. The assassination was carefully planned by Emilia Landau, along with Mordecai Grobas and Eliyahu Rozanski, two other members of the *Ha-Shomer ha-Za'ir* (Jewish Self-Defense/Jewish Armed Group, an underground militant Zionist Youth group).

Landau and Grobas trailed Lejkin for weeks to choose the best place and time for the assassination. They studied his habits, his regular movements, the likely opposition, and any escape routes. At dusk on October 29, 1942, Rozanski, who was designated to be the assassin, shot Lejkin to death while he was walking from the Nazi-controlled police station to his home on Gesia Street. Ghetto residents rejoiced while the Nazis ignored the matter.

Most of the people who participated in the Warsaw ghetto uprising were killed, so records are sparse or secondhand. There are two versions of Emilia's death. The first relates that she died when an armed band of the *Ha-Shomer ha-Za'ir*, commanded by Mordecai Anielewicz, surprised and killed several Nazis. Armed with pistols and hand grenades, members of the group mingled on Niska Street with a long procession of Jews being led away for processing. When a prearranged signal was given, Emilia and the others attacked the Nazis. In the short battle, several Nazis were killed or wounded while the rest fled. Most of the band, led by Anielewicz, were also killed. Emilia was seen throwing a grenade but was shot as she attempted further action.

A second account places Landau's death in the *Ostdeutsche Baustelle* workshop. The *Ha-Shomer ha-Za'ir* was based in that workshop, which was managed for a German businessman by Emilia's father, Alexander Landau. The Germans had forced their way into the workshop to seize the Jews there. Emilia threw a hand grenade among the Germans, killing several and wounding more, but she was also killed.

—Andrew Jackson Waskey

See also Holocaust and Jewish Women; Kempner, Vitka; Korczak, Rozka

References and Further Reading

- Gutman, Israel. 1989. *The Jews of Warsaw, 1939–1943: Ghetto, Underground, Revolt*. Bloomington: Indiana University.
- Zucherman, Yitzhak. 1993. *A Surplus of Memory: Chronicle of the Warsaw Ghetto Uprising*. Berkeley: University of California.

LANGE, DOROTHEA
(1895–1965)

Photographer of the Japanese detention during World War II. Dorothea Lange is probably most famous for her photographs documenting the Great Depression, but her photographs of change on the home front, especially among ethnic groups and workers uprooted by the war, are equally important. In her early career, Dorothea Lange worked with Arnold Genthe, had her own photography studio in San Francisco, and functioned as part of the West Coast Bohemian photography movement. In the 1930s she participated in the migrant farm workers program of the California Emergency Relief Administration and eventually carried out photographic assignments for the Farm Security Administration (FSA). One of her most famous Depression-era photographs is the "Migrant Mother," taken in Nipomo, California, and now part of the Farm Security Administration and Office of War Information Collection at the Library of Congress.

Later, Lange took photographs for the Office of War Information and the War Relocation Authority (WRA). Three months after Pearl Harbor, President Franklin Roosevelt signed Executive Order 9066 ordering the relocation of Japanese Americans into guarded camps in the western United States. Soon after, the WRA hired Lange to photograph Japanese



Dorothea Lange's photo of school children of mixed ethnicities, including those of Japanese descent, reciting the Pledge of Allegiance while holding an American Flag in San Francisco, just days before the relocation and internment of all Japanese Americans in San Francisco, 1942. (Corbis)

neighborhoods, processing centers, and camp facilities.

Her earlier photographic work did not prepare Dorothea Lange for the disturbing racial and civil rights issues that the Japanese internment raised. In her efforts to capture the spirit of the camps with her photography, Lange created images that combined examples of human dignity and courage with signs of the indignities of imprisonment. Lange found herself immediately at odds with the WRA and the U.S. government, which censored many of her photographs. Her attitude toward internment is reflected in her

statement about a photograph she took of a billboard in Richmond, California. The billboard read, "It takes 8 tons of freight to K.O. 1 Jap, Southern Pacific." Lange said, "The billboards that were up at the time I photographed. Savage, savage billboards. This is what we did. How did it happen?" How could we?" (Her photograph of the billboard is labeled "Richmond, California, 1942," FSA Collection, Library of Congress.)

Two of her most poignant Japanese internment photographs are that of a Japanese American teenager sitting on duffel bags waiting for the bus to an unknown future ("Interrupted

Lives, April 1942,” FSA Collection, Library of Congress), and one depicting a class of school children with their hands over their hearts saying the Pledge of Allegiance to the Flag. In the photograph, the children in the front row are Japanese American and the expression of intense loyalty on their faces provides stark contrast to the perceptions of some fellow Americans at the time. (“Prelude to the Japanese Exodus, April 1942,” FSA Collection, Library of Congress).

In 1972 the Whitney Museum featured twenty-seven of Lange’s photographs in an exhibit about the Japanese internment called “Executive Order 9066.” The Library of Congress also featured her photographs of the forced relocation of Japanese American citizens as part of an online exhibit called “Women Come to the Front.”

—Kathleen Warnes

See also Japanese Interned in U.S. Camps

References and Further Reading

- Cole, Robert. 1996. *Dorothea Lange: Photographs of a Lifetime*. New York: Aperture.
- Davis, Keith. 1995. *Photographs of Dorothea Lange*. Kansas City: Hallmark Cards.
- Meltzer, Milton. 1978. *Dorothea Lange: A Photographer’s Life*. New York: Farrar, Straus and Giroux.
- Taylor, Paul. 1939. *American Exodus: A Record of Human Erosion*. New York: Reynal and Hitchcock.

LATIN AMERICA, WOMEN IN GUERRILLA MOVEMENTS IN

The important role played by women in guerrilla movements in Latin America since the late 1950s. Though their participation was conditioned by gender, the specific female experience in armed struggle has been ignored by most studies about the guerrillas.

Guerrillas are members of political organizations operating in both rural and urban areas that use armed warfare to achieve their goals. In Latin America, guerrilla war has been linked to revolutionary activism that aims to confront economic inequalities, overturn dictatorships, and foster the structural transformation of society. In virtually all Latin American countries, there has been some degree of leftist guerrilla activity since the late 1950s. The triumph of the Cuban guerrilla fighters in 1959 gave impetus to many other movements, which flourished across the region during the 1960s and 1970s. During its 40-year history, however, the combined strength of leftist guerrilla forces in the hemisphere never exceeded 50,000 members (Gross 1995, 2). Except for successes in Cuba (1959), Nicaragua (1979), and Grenada (1979), armed revolutionary movements failed to overthrow governments. Most leftist guerrilla movements were either annihilated by government security forces, were voluntarily disbanded, or transformed themselves into mainstream political groups. A few cases persist at the beginning of the twenty-first century, such as the Zapatistas (EZLN) in the Mexican province of Chiapas and some revolutionary organizations in Colombia.

Though guerrilla movements played a prominent role in the contemporary history of Latin America, they remain a challenging topic for scholarly study. Sources of information are scarce and not easy to verify largely due to the clandestine nature of their activity. Studies about the guerrillas rarely mention the experience of women, while scholarly work on political attitudes of women in Latin America usually focuses on the conventional political process. This explains the paucity of specifically gender-oriented literature about women in the armed struggle, even if they have comprised up to 30 percent of guerrilla members. Women who decided to take up arms were, akin to their male colleagues, motivated by revolutionary aspirations to change the structures of their societies or to resist dictatorship. While active in these movements, however, they faced gender-specific conflicts and had to face patriarchal prejudices

deeply rooted in most Latin American societies. Intended to shape a “new man,” revolutionary struggle often ignored personal aspects of political activity that concerned women and usually dismissed gender oppression. Like Ernesto (Che) Guevara’s plea for a political formation of the revolutionary character that combines toughness with tenderness, gender discrimination remained another unaccomplished issue in the agenda of most Latin American guerrilla movements.

In all guerrilla movements, women participated less extensively than men. Structural constraints of women’s roles in reproductive activities and the patriarchal nature of Latin American society, which reflects and reinforces this role, are the major reasons suggested for this limited participation. A quantum leap, however, seems to have taken place in women’s participation in Latin American revolutionary movements roughly between 1965 and 1975 (Kampwirth 2002). Factors influencing the increased female involvement include social structural conditions in their specific country, cultural and political changes, and evolution in the internal organizational characteristics of the guerrilla movements.

Increasing industrialization moved more women into the paid labor force, thus increasing their contact with public issues and facilitating their mobilization. Female migration to cities broke traditional ties and hence made social networking and organizing possible. In some cases, the previous existence of women’s associations helped women to gain organizational and tactical experience that later facilitated their involvement in broader political issues. Cultural developments, such as the broader diffusion of feminist ideas and the emergence of the Theology of Liberation, offered women a framework for understanding historic injustice and further motivated their will to organize themselves and become involved in politics. Once immersed in political life, women often developed an increasing awareness of their gender-specific oppression and developed a feminist consciousness.

Kampwirth (2002) identifies at least four personal factors that favored the participation of women in guerrilla activity. These are family traditions of resistance, previous membership in social networks, a high educational level, and youth. Women who were active in guerrilla movements were more likely to have been of urban middle-class origin and to have attended high school or college than were their male counterparts. The early participation of middle-class women may be linked to their higher level of education and perhaps greater awareness of political issues. Middle-class women also faced fewer barriers to participation than peasant and working-class women, who were doubly burdened by class and gender constraints. Where working-class or peasant women as well as middle-class women participated, the latter began earlier and were more likely to be at the forefront of guerrilla activity.

The increased participation by women in guerrilla movements is also related to the shift from a *foco* guerrilla structure, which stressed a small band of fighters, to a mass mobilization strategy, which relied on much larger numbers of supporters. Such changes in the political nature of guerrilla struggle would explain why movements such as the Tupamaros (Uruguay), the Sandinistas (Nicaragua), and the Salvadoran guerrilla faction had substantial female participation in contrast to the previous armed groups in Cuba and Colombia (Lobao 1990). The Colombian and Cuban struggles, occurring prior to the 1970s, tended to follow the *foquista* pattern of struggle where revolutionaries act in isolation from the population. In contrast, the prolonged “people’s wars” of Nicaragua, Guatemala, and El Salvador strove for mass mobilization and therefore increased the possibility that women (as well as men) from all segments of society would participate.

Once inside the guerrilla organizations, women often had to face gender discrimination and were relegated to support roles. In the midst of highly patriarchal structures, otherwise radically oriented movements tended to reproduce the *machismo* of the larger society. In contrast to

the traditional militaries of Latin American states, guerrilla movements did include small numbers of women as combatants. Female members, however, were more likely to occupy support rather than combat positions in the guerrilla struggle. Women were often utilized to manipulate patriarchal images to the guerrilla movements' advantage, distracting security forces or carrying weapons while attracting less suspicion than men. In order to reach leadership positions or accomplish military tasks, women had to show more endurance and capacity than their male comrades. Women's participation and promotion to higher positions in the guerrilla organizations was further undermined by their having to tend homes and children. Motherhood was in itself a complex issue in most guerrilla organizations. Some guerrillas considered having children part of the militant task, viewing reproduction as a means to sustain the revolution. Others dissuaded their members from becoming parents because family life would distract from revolutionary duty and create selfish interests. In the case of women combatants, pregnancy was equated to a "loss" of military capacity. In his writings, Che Guevara revealed ambivalence toward the participation of women. On one hand, he declared himself against the discriminatory attitude toward women in Latin America's colonial mentality and stressed the role of female fellows in revolutionary development. When he described the tasks assigned to female militants in the "tough life of the combatant," however, Guevara followed the patriarchal ascription of domestic, care-giving activities, such as cooking, nursing, and making uniforms, to women (Lobao 1990, 189). Nevertheless, women belonging to guerrilla groups consider themselves to be combatants even if they are not arms-bearing fighters and enjoy a "lower" status in the organizations (Kampwirth 2002). Female participants do not consider the armed struggle as an end in itself, but as one part of the broader frame of their revolutionary activities, not limited to the phenomenon of armed conflict (Diana 1996).

Comparing women's participation in various Latin American guerrilla movements is difficult because of the scarcity of statistical information. Although in Nicaragua 30 percent of the combatants, and many of the top guerrilla leaders, were women, there was a similar percentage of participants in the Mexican state of Chiapas and El Salvador (Kampwirth 2002, 2), where women occupied up to 40 percent of the high-rank positions and enjoyed egalitarian relations with men (Lobao 1990, 198). In Uruguay women, mostly middle class, constituted 25 percent of membership and played a significant role in the Tupamaros during the 1960s, serving in both support and combat roles (Araújo 1980, 33). There are no equivalent studies about female participation in armed struggle in Argentina, Brazil, and Chile, though similarities in structure of the revolutionary movements in these countries during the early 1970s points to similar numbers.

A feminist approach can contribute to theories of revolution. Together with factors such as class, the gender dimension could inform in more complex and more illuminating ways the reasons why some movements succeed in overthrowing dictatorships or reaching their political goals while others fail. The literature already available suggests that the place, role, and treatment that a revolutionary movement assigns to women in its structure can be seen as an indicator of its social competence and ability to take root in the population. The more active and visible role women have in a movement, the better the movement's chances of achieving broad popular support.

—*Estela Schindel*

See also Colombia, Women and Political Violence in; Cuban Revolution, Women in the; El Salvador, Women and the Civil Strife in; Guatemala, Civil Conflict and Women; Nicaragua, Women and War in; Peru: Shining Path

References and Further Reading

- Araújo, Ana María. 1980. *Tupamaras: Des femmes de l'Uruguay* [Tupamaras: Women from Uruguay]. Paris: Editions des Femmes.
- Carvalho, Luiz Maklouf. 1998. *Mulheres que foram à luta armada* [Women Who Went to Armed Struggle]. São Paulo: Globo.
- Diana, Marta. 1996. *Mujeres guerrilleras. La militancia de los setenta en el testimonio de sus protagonistas femeninas* [Guerrilla Women: The Activism of the 1970s in the Testimony of Its Female Protagonists]. Buenos Aires: Planeta.
- Gross, Liza. 1995. *Handbook of Leftist Guerrilla Groups in Latin America and the Caribbean*. Boulder, CO: Westview.
- Kampwirth, Karen. 2002. *Women and Guerrilla Movements: Nicaragua, El Salvador, Chiapas, and Cuba*. University Park: Pennsylvania State University Press.
- Lobao, Linda. 1990. Women in Revolutionary Movements: Changing Patterns of Latin American Guerrilla Struggle. Pages 180–204 in *Women and Social Protest*. Edited by Guida West and Rhoda Lois Blumberg. New York: Oxford University Press.

LAWRENCE, DOROTHY
(B. 1896)

Disguised as a man, served briefly in the British Army during World War I. During World War I, Dorothy Lawrence, an aspiring freelance journalist, hoped to gain accreditation from a British newspaper as a war correspondent. Meeting refusals everywhere she turned, she took a channel steamer to France in June 1915. From Paris, Lawrence rode a bicycle to French villages behind front lines but was unable to reach the combat zone. Determined to get to the front to demonstrate her ability as a war correspondent, Lawrence, with the assistance of a number of sympathetic soldiers, acquired a man's uniform. Pretending to bicycle to the French coast in order to return to England, she headed instead

for the area of fighting. At Albert she found soldiers who were willing to help her. Donning her uniform and using the name "Denis Smith," she successfully attached herself to a mine-laying company with whom she spent ten days at the front. Afraid of compromising her collaborators, Lawrence confided to a supposedly sympathetic sergeant that she was a woman. The sergeant, however, turned her in to his superiors and she was arrested. Though some officers suspected that she was a spy, her story was eventually believed. Lawrence was sequestered in a convent for ten days to lessen the immediate impact of any potential revelations she might make on the situation at the front. She was then escorted back to England and had to promise not "to divulge any information till [she] got permission" (Lawrence 1919, p. 189). Her book, *Sapper Dorothy Lawrence: The Only English Woman Soldier*, was published only after the war was over.

—Bernard Cook

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I

References and Further Reading

- Lawrence, Dorothy. 1919. *Sapper Dorothy Lawrence: The Only English Woman Soldier, Late Royal Engineers, 51st Division, 179th Tunneling Company, B.E.F.* London: John Lane.

LEBANON, WOMEN AND THE FIGHTING IN

Impact of the civil war in Lebanon on women. The civil wars in Lebanon, which raged from 1975 to 1991, reshaped the lives of all Lebanese and left deep wounds in the body politic that are still festering. For Lebanese women of all social, ethnic, or religious backgrounds, the war altered living patterns that had endured for centuries

and placed the women at risk to a degree that they had never known. The wars of 1975 to 1991 trapped women in Lebanon between the roles traditionally set for them in patriarchal Christian and Muslim cultures and the unsettled conditions created by conflict. War also gave them increased opportunities to counter traditional stereotypes and transform their standing in Lebanese society.

Women had not attained even minimal sexual, social, and political equality in Lebanon prior to 1975. Although individual women enjoyed success in some fields, particularly education, they could not make any progress in the public sector. They were excluded from decision making at the national level. No woman had ever served as a head of state or as a cabinet minister and only two women had ever served in the national parliament. Prevailing cultural norms kept women in traditional homemaking and childbearing roles. As a group they were in no position to influence the escalating conflicts among Lebanese Christians, Sunni and Shiite Muslims, Palestinians, Druze, Syrians, and Israelis as the country cascaded toward civil war in the early 1970s.

When fighting erupted in Beirut in early 1975, women found themselves facing the travails common to civilians caught in a war zone. Many of their male providers were in militias, leaving women alone with the tasks of childcare and basic survival while experiencing considerable personal risk. Many became activists and a number of organizations appeared that gave women a chance to channel their drive to gain a voice in a war over which they had no control. Most prominent among these groups was the Lebanese Council of Women that worked to raise peace awareness through educational efforts in all parts of the country. Peace agitation among women reached its height on August 1, 1982, when 100 women from all walks of life staged a sit-in at the American University of Beirut campus to protest the Israeli siege and shortages of water, electricity, food, and medicine. This demonstration ended only with the lifting of the siege.

Unfortunately, these peace activities had virtually no impact on the course of the violence in Lebanon. Women continued to be shut out from all political decisions concerning either the unleashing of war or its ending. They found themselves being drawn into the tragedy whether they wanted to be involved or not. Lebanese women could not ignore the highly charged political environment in which they lived. In most areas the fighting raged in their own neighborhoods. Militia fighters moved through homes and farms, destroying or confiscating property. Men and women could not be defined by traditional roles. Not all women were pacifists. Many with husbands, brothers, or sons in the militias rallied to support them. Most acted in supporting functions, providing nursing and medical care, food, and clothing for the male fighters as well as attending to the storage and distribution of ammunition. Many Lebanese women helped with recruitment and communications. Very few, however, did any actual fighting. Although a limited number received training in the use of small arms, the militias did not allow women to fight for fear of their capture. Having women captured would demoralize the fighters because protecting their women was a point of male pride and honor.

Sixteen years of war politicized women's daily lives and forced them into new situations equipped only with the traditional skills that they used to keep their families together. The civil wars in Lebanon raised women's collective social awareness and made them conscious of their importance in developing a dynamic civic society. Participation by women in the country's politics consequently increased. War gave Lebanese women a chance to show what they could do, thus heightening their ability to push into occupations and activities that had previously been closed to them. Many barriers, however, remain. Lebanese women still have not broken into the highest levels of power where men still make critical decisions.

—Walter Bell

See also Islamic Resistance Movements, Women and

References and Further Reading

- Abu-Saba, Mary Bentley. 1999. Human Needs and Women Peacebuilding in Lebanon. *Peace and Conflict: Journal of Peace Psychology* 5(1):37–51.
- Accad, Evelyne. 1989. Feminist Perspective on the War in Lebanon. *Women's Studies International Forum* 12(1):91–95.
- Shehadeh, Lamia Rustrum, ed. 1999. *Women and War in Lebanon*. Gainesville: University Press of Florida.

LEBRÓN, LOLITA (1919–)

Puerto Rican nationalist who led an armed attack on the U.S. Congress. On March 1, 1954, Lolita Lebrón led three male members of the Puerto Rican Nationalist Party into the U.S. House of Representatives. From the gallery above the members of Congress the attackers fired shots at the ceiling, unfurled the Puerto Rican flag, and shouted, “*Viva Puerto Rico Libre!*” (Long Live Free Puerto Rico!). No one was killed in the action. Lebrón was convicted and sentenced to fifty-six years in prison.



Puerto Rican nationalists, including Lolita Lebrón, seized by Capitol police after firing into the House chambers from the gallery and injuring eight congressmen, Washington, D.C., March 1, 1954. (Corbis)

Lolita Lebrón was born in Lares, in the mountainous interior of Puerto Rico. In 1868 Puerto Ricans who sought independence from Spain launched their rebellion in Lares. The revolt failed, but the small town carried on the legacy of anticolonial feeling. In the 1940s Lebrón, similarly to many other young Puerto Ricans, left the island looking for work. The United States had made Puerto Ricans citizens in 1917; thus, as a U.S. citizen, she had no difficulty traveling to New York City. There she found low-paying work as a seamstress. While in New York her patriotic feelings and desire to establish an independent Puerto Rico blossomed. She grew to admire Pedro Albizu Campos, the leader of the pro-Independence Nationalist Party, and dedicated her life to ending U.S. colonial control of her land, which had been established in 1898 following the Spanish-American War.

Several events convinced her that a dramatic action in support of Puerto Rican independence was necessary. In 1950 the Nationalist Party had staged an unsuccessful uprising in Puerto Rico, and, as a result, the United States government imprisoned Albizu Campos. In 1952 Puerto Rican Governor Luis Muñoz Marín, working closely with the U.S. government, converted Puerto Rico into a U.S. commonwealth. Also in 1952, in response to the formation of the Commonwealth and U.S. pressure, the UN Committee on Decolonization removed Puerto Rico from its list of colonies, declaring Puerto Rico's status to be an internal matter for the United States to decide. To call world attention to what she and the Nationalist Party considered Puerto Rico's ongoing colonial status, Lebrón organized the attack on Congress.

Lebrón spent twenty-five years in the federal women's prison at Alderson, West Virginia. During her time in jail she did not renounce her act or give up her demand that Puerto Rico be made independent. She did become very religious and wrote a book of poetry, *Sandalo en la celda* (*Sandalwood in the Cell*). Considered a political prisoner by many in the United States

and around the world, she was released from jail in 1979 when President Jimmy Carter granted Lebrón and her fellow Nationalist prisoners clemency.

She returned to Puerto Rico and continued her activism. In 2000 she joined hundreds of Puerto Ricans and North Americans to protest the U.S. Navy's use of the Puerto Rican island of Vieques as a testing ground for conventional weapons. At age eighty she entered restricted land and was sentenced to two months in jail for her act of civil disobedience. Lebrón refers to herself as a patriot, not a terrorist. She condemns the September 11, 2001, attacks against the United States and distinguishes what she did by saying that when she fired on the U.S. Congress, she had no intention of killing anyone.

—Margaret Power

See also Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements in

References and Further Reading

- Lebrón, Lolita. n.d. *Sandalo en la celda*. Cataño, Puerto Rico: Editorial Betances.
- Roig-Franzia, Manuel. "A Terrorist in the House." *The Washington Post Magazine*, February 22, 2004.

LEDERER, EDITH (EDIE)

American war correspondent. As the first female correspondent assigned by the Associated Press (AP) to cover the Vietnam War, Edith Lederer did superb work amidst adverse circumstances. She was determined to learn about war and make its horrors known. Covering wars in Vietnam, Afghanistan, and the Persian Gulf during her assignments with AP, her reports were portrayals of the terrible consequences that war brought to people, particularly to women and children. She emphasized that the vast majority

of victims of war are innocent men, women, and children.

Edith Lederer was born in New York to Frieda R. Lederer, a kindergarten teacher, and Dr. Samuel B. Weiner, a pediatrician. She graduated with honors from Cornell University in 1963. The next year she received an MA in communications from Stanford University. She worked for *Science Service*, a Scripps-Howard syndicate reporting on science and medicine from Washington, D.C. Her long association with the AP began in 1966 covering student riots at Columbia University and Robert F. Kennedy's Senate campaign. She was transferred to San Francisco two years later to report on Berkeley's student protest movement at the time of Vietnam War, the Angela Davis trial, and the kidnapping of Patty Hearst. Lederer was in her thirties when she received a call from the president of AP, Wes Gallagher, asking her to become the first AP woman assigned full-time to the Vietnam War. Her mother rebuked her for going to cover a war, which had become a hated event in the United States. Although women reporters such as Jurate Kazickas were in Southeast Asia, reporting on the Vietnam War was dominated by men. Lederer was based in Saigon and sent dispatches about conflict in Vietnam, Laos, and Cambodia. For her, Saigon was a city of contradictions; reporting on the war by day and at night getting ready for cocktail parties in diplomatic circles. She was, however, enthralled by her stay in Vietnam. She liked the people, the places, her fellow reporters, and the excitement of covering the war as a reporter and emerged from Vietnam as a well-known correspondent.

After leaving Vietnam in the summer of 1973, Lederer covered the Yom Kippur War from Israel. In 1975 she became the bureau chief in Peru, the first woman to head a foreign bureau for AP. However, after five months Peru's military government expelled her for reporting about military exercises. Her next posting was to Puerto Rico where she served as chief of Caribbean services. From Hong Kong in 1978

she covered China's move toward a liberalized economy. She was sent to Afghanistan after the Soviet invasion in December 1979. Sometimes disguised as a rug buyer, she covered the events in Afghanistan along with her photographer, who was also a woman. Unlike male journalists who were the objects of suspicion, Lederer moved freely about Kabul but sometimes had to sleep in jails with guards protecting her. She witnessed the mass killing of women and gave that wide coverage.

Starting in 1982 she was based in London, where she lived for sixteen and half years. She reported about the downfall of communism in Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union. She was in Saudi Arabia after Iraq's 1990 invasion of Kuwait and told the world about the start of the Gulf War. She was one of the few reporters permitted to move with the U.S. Army.

In 1998 Lederer became the AP's chief correspondent covering the United Nations in New York. From that perspective she has written on crises in the Congo, East Timor, Iraq, Kosovo, and Sierra Leone.

—*Patit Paban Mishra*

See also Gellhorn, Martha; Schuyler, Philippa; Tomara, Sonia; Trotta, Liz; Watts, Jean

References and Further Reading

Bartimus, Tad, et al. 2002. *War Torn: Stories of War from the Women Reporters Who Covered Vietnam*. New York: Random House.

LEE, MARY ANNA RANDOLPH CUSTIS (1808–1873)

Wife of Confederate General Robert E. Lee. Born on October 1, 1808, Mary Lee was the only child of George Washington Parke Custis and Mary Lee Fitzhugh, and the great-granddaughter of George and Martha Washington. She was

raised and educated at Arlington, Virginia, the family estate located across the Potomac River from Washington, D.C. In 1831, Mary married Robert Edward Lee, a West Point graduate and lieutenant in the U.S. Army. The couple spent much of their married life at military stations across the United States but frequently returned to Arlington, where six of their seven children were born. In 1846, Mary was afflicted with rheumatoid arthritis, which progressively crippled her until she was confined to a wheelchair in 1863.

Mary and Robert E. Lee came to prominence during the American Civil War, when Robert resigned from the U.S. Army and took a position as the commander-in-chief of the military forces of Virginia, and later, the Confederate States of America. In the opening months of the conflict, Mary remained at Arlington with some of her children but was ultimately forced to relinquish the estate to Federal troops, who used the home as headquarters for the Union Army. The property was later confiscated by the government because of nonpayment of taxes. Mary spent more than a year as a refugee behind enemy lines before relocating to Richmond, Virginia, where she stayed for the remainder of the war. She and her daughters became the toast of elite Richmond society and established a sock-knitting program to encourage support for Confederate soldiers. After the war the family occupied a small farmhouse outside Richmond, where Mary waged a passionate yet unsuccessful campaign to recover the Arlington estate, the grounds of which had been commissioned a national cemetery in 1864. The Lee family later moved to Washington College in Lexington, Virginia, where Robert served as president until his death in 1870. Mary died three years later on November 5, 1873.

—*Giselle Roberts*

See also Civil War, American, and Women

References and Further Reading

Perry, John. 2001. *Mrs. Robert E. Lee: The Lady of Arlington*. Sisters, OR: Multnomah.

LEFORT, CECILY (1903–1945)

British secret agent in World War II. Cecily Marie Mackenzie was born in Ireland in 1903. She married a French doctor, Alex Lefort, and they lived on the coast of Brittany. They fled German occupied France in 1940. In Britain Cecily Lefort joined the British Women's Auxiliary Air Force. Her fluency in French and adaptation to French life were assets when she volunteered to join the French section of the British Special Operations Executive (SOE). After training she was flown, along with Diana Rowden and Noor Inayat Khan, to a site near Le Mans on June 16, 1943. She operated as a courier, code-named Alice, for the "Jockey" network headed by Francis Cammaerts in southeastern France. On September 15, 1943, three months after arriving in France, she was arrested in Montélimar in the Rhône Alps. At a house she was warned not to visit, she fumbled an answer in response to a question by a suspicious German. M. R. D. Foots sarcastically suggested that her "principal contribution" to SOE was her suggestion that the beach below her house at St. Cast, west of Dinard in Brittany, be used by the SOE (Foot 1984, 70). Lefort was subjected to brutal interrogation and eventually sent from the Fresne prison in Paris to the Ravensbrück concentration camp. On May 1, 1945, Lefort died at Ravensbrück, the victim either of starvation or gassing. She was posthumously awarded the Croix de Guerre. Her name is inscribed on the SOE memorial at Runnymede and the Valençay SOE Memorial in France.

—*Bernard Cook*

See also Atkins, Vera H.; Ravensbrück

References and Further Reading

Foot, M. R. D. (Michael Richard Daniell). 1984 (1966). *SOE in France: An Account of the Work of the British Special Operations Executive 1940–1944*. Frederick, MD: University Publications of America.

LEROY, CATHERINE

Nicholas, Elizabeth. 1958. *Death Be Not Proud*. London: Cresset.
Spartacus Web. "Cecily Marie Lefort." <http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/SOElefort.htm> (accessed September 28, 2004).

LEIGH, VERA (1903–1944)

British secret agent in World War II. Vera Glass was born in Leeds on March 17, 1903. She was abandoned soon after her birth, but was adopted by Eugene Leigh, an American, who owned a stable at Maison Laffitte near Paris. She became a designer of dresses and eventually was the part owner of a dress shop on the Place Vendôme in Paris. After the German occupation of Paris, she went to Lyon where she joined the Resistance and helped Allied soldiers to escape. Attempting to escape to England herself, she was interned by the Spanish until her release was obtained by the intervention of a British embassy officer. In England she joined the First Aid Nursing Yeomanry (FANY) and was recruited by the Special Operations Executive. During training she stood out as "about the best shot in the party" and "dead keen" (Foot 1984, 292). After training, Leigh, code-named Simone, was flown to a field in the Cher Valley near Tours, France. There she helped form a new underground network, code-named "Inventor." From a safe house in Paris, Leigh carried messages to groups as far away as the Ardennes. She put herself at risk by going openly around Paris, where she chanced being recognized by former acquaintances. After accidentally meeting her sister's husband at the Gare Saint-Lazare, she helped him guide Allied airmen downed in France to safe houses in the Paris area. She also associated with other agents in public. By the time she was arrested at a café near the Place des Ternes on October 30, her activities had become well known to the Germans.

On May 13, 1944, she was sent from the Fresnes prison with seven other captured British women agents to the Karlsruhe civil prison. On July 6, 1944, on the direct order of Ernest Kaltenbrunner, the head of the SS Security Office, Vera Leigh, Andrée Borrel, Sonya Olschanezky, and Diana Rowden were moved to the Natzweiler-Struthof concentration camp where they were executed the day of their arrival.

—Bernard Cook

See also Atkins, Vera H.; Borrel, Andrée; Olschanezky, Sonya; Rowden, Diana.

References and Further Reading

- Foot, M. R. D. (Michael Richard Daniell). 1984 (1966). *SOE in France: An Account of the Work of the British Special Operations Executive 1940–1944*. Frederick, MD: University Publications of America.
Nicholas, Elizabeth. 1958. *Death Be Not Proud*. London: Cresset.
Spartacus Web. "Vera Leigh." <http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/SOEleigh.htm> (accessed September 28, 2004).

LEROY, CATHERINE
(1944–)

French journalist, one of the most daring combat photographers of the Vietnam War. Born in Paris, Catherine Leroy left for Vietnam in 1966, at the age of twenty-one, carrying a Leica camera. In 1967, with the 173rd Airborne Brigade, she became the first accredited journalist to participate in a combat parachute jump. She was later wounded in action while with a U.S. Marine unit in the Demilitarized Zone, but her photographs of the assault on Hill 881 were published around the world. Early in 1968, during the Tet Offensive, she was captured in Hue by the North Vietnamese Army but was eventually released. She

returned to Saigon with photographic documentation of the experience.

She left Vietnam in 1968 and went on to cover some of the major conflicts in places such as Northern Ireland, Cyprus, Lebanon, Afghanistan, Iran, Iraq, Vietnam again, Angola, China, Pakistan, and Libya that marked the second half of the twentieth century. Her photographs were published in magazines such as *Paris Match*, *Stern*, *Época*, *The Sunday Times*, *Look*, *Life*, and *Time*, where she worked as a contract photographer from 1977 to 1986.

In 1983, in collaboration with *Newsweek* correspondent Tony Clifton, Leroy published *God Cried*, a book about the Israeli invasion of Lebanon. The volume described events starting with the siege of Beirut in the summer of 1982 to the departure of the Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO) and the massacres by paramilitaries allied to the Israelis at the Sabra and Shatila refugee camps.

Some of Leroy's Vietnam and Lebanon war photographs, along with her commentaries, were published in a chapter dedicated to her in a book entitled *Shooting Under Fire: The World of the War Photographer* (Howe 2002). In 2005, on the thirtieth anniversary of the fall of Saigon, Random House published a book entitled *Under Fire: Great Photographers and Writers in Vietnam*, edited and compiled by Leroy, with a foreword by Senator John McCain (Leroy 2005).

Leroy has received numerous awards, including the Robert Capa Award for her coverage of the fighting in Saigon (she is the first female recipient of this award); the George Polk Award; Picture of the Year Award; the Sigma Delta Chi Award; the Art Director's Club of New York Award; and the Honor Award for Distinguished Service in Journalism from the University of Missouri. In 1996 a retrospective of her work was organized in Perpignan, France, at *Visa pour l'Image*, the prestigious photojournalism festival.

—Georgia Tres

See also Friang, Brigitte

References and Further Reading

- Howe, Peter, ed. 2002. *Shooting Under Fire: The World of the War Photographer*. New York: Artisan.
- Leroy, Catherine. 2005. *Under Fire: Great Photographers and Writers in Vietnam*. New York: Random House.
- Lewinski, Jorge. 1978. *The Camera at War: A History of War Photography from 1848 to the Present Day*. New York: Simon and Schuster.
- Moeller, Susan D. 1989. *Shooting War: Photography and the American Experience of Combat*. New York: Basic Books.

LESKA-DAAB, ANNA (1921–)

Flight lieutenant of the British Royal Air Force (RAF); ferry pilot of the British Air Transport Auxiliary (ATA); commander of a women's squadron; and the sole ATA pilot to receive the Royal Medal.

At eighteen years old, Anna Leska-Daab qualified as a Category A and B glider pilot and as a balloon pilot at the Warsaw (Poland) Flying Club, which eventually granted her a sports pilot's license. When the Warsaw Flying Club maintained that she had too few points to be admitted to flight training, she implied that the club discriminated against women. Early in 1939 she began to fly at Poland's Pomeranian Flying Club. In June 1939 she qualified as a pilot of the RWD-8. Following Germany's invasion of Poland in September 1939, she was assigned to the Polish Air Force headquarters squadron to fly liaison missions. She also delivered an RWD-13 to an indicated airfield, even though she then had only a few hours of solo flying to her credit. She subsequently flew sixteen wartime missions aboard this type of aircraft.

After her arrival in Great Britain via Romania and France, she initially worked at the headquarters of the RAF and subsequently at the British Air Ministry. Having passed a flying

test intended for those with 250 hours of flying, she was immediately recruited by the ATA, even though she had but one-tenth of the flight-time requirement. Along with Jadwiga Pilsudska and Barbara Wojtulanis, Leska-Daab was one of three Polish women to fly with the ATA, which was subordinated to the Ministry of Aircraft Production. Leska-Daab started ferrying ATA aircraft on February 10, 1941, and served until October 31, 1945, longer than the other Poles, delivering the largest number of aircraft.

Stationed at Hatfield and Hamble, Leska-Daab ferried a total of 1,295 aircraft including 557 Supermarine Spitfires. She flew 93 types of aircraft, including flying boats, and was airborne 1,241 hours (Malinowski 1981, 12). When picking up an aircraft at a plant, she had to check its operation both on the ground and in the air and comment in writing on its performance during the flight for the benefit of the destination wing. After landing a multi-engine combat aircraft, such as the Wellington, it took some effort on her part to persuade the male pilots receiving the aircraft that she was, in fact, the pilot. Among her subordinates, whom she instructed and assisted, were five British women and one each from the United States, Chile, and Argentina.

Leska-Daab received many Polish and British decorations, including the Polish Military Pilot Badge and the Royal Medal.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War II; Polish Auxiliary Air Force

References and Further Reading

- Leska-Daab, Anna. 1980. "Z lat wojny—wspomina Anna Leska-Daab" [War Reminiscences of Anna Leska-Daab]. *Skrzydłata Polska*, 20 (May 18): 14.
- Malinowski, Tadeusz. 1981. "Z samolotu na samolot" [From Aircraft to Aircraft]. *Skrzydłata Polska* 10 (March 8): 3, 5.
- "Polki na wojnie" [Polish Women in the War]. *Skrzydłata Polska*, 10 (October 3, 1985): 12.

LEW, ELIZABETH LOUISE VAN

See Van Lew, Elizabeth Louise

LEWANDOWSKA
(NÉE DOWBOR-MUSNICKI),
JANIA (1908–1940)

Polish officer murdered by the Soviets. Flight Second Lieutenant Lewandowska was the only woman officer to be incarcerated in the Soviet POW Camp for Polish Officers in Kozel'sk. About 27,600 Polish officers were captured following the Soviet invasion of eastern Poland on September 17, 1939. Of these, 26,000 were executed. The POWs were placed in three camps: Kozel'sk, to the southeast of Smolensk; Starobel'sk, now within the city limits of the Ukrainian city of Kharkiv (formerly known as Kharkov); and Ostashkov, located to the northwest of Moscow. Prisoners sent to Kozel'sk were executed at Katyn Forest in the massacre of Polish prisoners of war by the Russians.

Lewandowska was born on April 22, 1908, in Kharkiv, Ukraine, the elder daughter of Colonel-General Jozef Dowbor-Musnicki, commander of the 1st Polish Corps in 1917–1918 and the Great Poland Army in the province of Poznan in 1919. Lewandowska mastered gliders while still in high school. She made parachute jumps and trained at Poznan Flying Club.

In 1937 Lewandowska was sent to Lwow (now the Ukrainian city of Lviv) to study military radiotelegraphy. In August 1939 she was drafted for service in the 3rd Military Aviation Regiment stationed at No. 3 Air Base near Poznan. On September 1, 1939, after Germany attacked Poland, the base personnel were dispatched eastward by train. The military transport was commanded by Captain Jozef Sidor. After disembarking near Tarnopol on September 22, the Poles were surrounded by Soviet tanks and taken prisoner.

LIDICE MASSACRE

An eyewitness said Captain Sidor and Lewandowska were ordered to leave the group and were placed in a confiscated Polish ambulance, which brought them to Kozel'sk. Although some evidence of Lewandowska's incarceration in the camp came from survivors, rumors persisted that she used an assumed name because her father was hated by the Soviets. Her name appeared on the so-called Katyn List compiled in 1949 by Adam Muszynski. Lewandowska's name, however, was missing from the German Katyn List of exhumed bodies that had been identified.

According to the testimony of survivor Wacław Mucho, Lewandowska did not board a vehicle transporting her friends to an unknown destination. Several days later she was taken away in another vehicle. It is now known that the destination of both vehicles was the railway siding at Gnezdovo near Smolensk and Katyn Forest, where Lewandowska was executed.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Polish Auxiliary Air Force

References and Further Reading

- Bauer, Piotr. 1989. "Wojenne losy Janiny Lewandowskiej" [The World War II Fate of Janina Lewandowska]. *Skrzydłata Polska*, 31 (July 30): 7.
- Muszynski, Adam, ed. 1982. *Lista Katynska* [The Katyn List]. 4th ed. London: Gryf.

LIDICE MASSACRE

A mining village near Kladno to the west of Prague that was the site of a mass reprisal killing by the Nazis on June 9–10, 1942. On May 27, 1942, Reinhard Heydrich, second in command of the elite Nazi SS corps, head of the Nazi Security Service, and Nazi administrator of Bohemia and Moravia, was mortally wounded by two agents sent by the Czech government-in-exile in London. The two perpetrators and other

members of the Czech resistance were surrounded and killed in the St. Charles Borromeo Catholic Church in Prague.

An intercepted letter made the Nazi Security Service suspicious that there was a connection between a Lidice family, whose son was serving with the Czech Legion in Britain, and the attack on Heydrich. The Germans launched a punitive raid on the village; the women and children were taken away and 183 men were shot. The majority of the women were sent to the Ravensbrück female concentration camp, where 143 of 195 survived. Only 16 of the 98 children from the village were reunited with their mothers after the end of the war (Zentner and Bedürftig 1991, 543–544). The rest disappeared. Most had been sent to the Chelmno death camp in German-occupied Poland. Others were placed with SS families to be "Germanized."

A radio transmitter belonging to the Czech agents was later found in Lezaky, a village east of Prague. As a result, all of that village's inhabitants were rounded up and brought to Gestapo headquarters in Pardubice. The adults, sixteen men and seventeen women, were all shot. Two little girls were placed with a German family; twelve other children were sent to a death camp where they were gassed. After the removal of its inhabitants, the village was razed.

—Bernard Cook

See also Oradour-sur-Glane Massacre

References and Further Reading

- Berenbaum, Michael. 1993. *The World Must Know: The History of the Holocaust as Told in the United States Holocaust Museum*. New York: Little, Brown.
- Bock, Katrin. "Die Zerstörung von Lezaky [The Destruction of Lezaky]." Czech Radio. <http://design.radio.cz/de/artikel/29343> (accessed November 19, 2003).
- Zentner, Christian, and Friedemann Bedürftig. 1991. Lidice. Pages 543–544 in *The Encyclopedia of the Third Reich*. Trans. and edited by Amy Hackett. New York: Macmillan.

LITERATURE OF WORLD
WAR II, U.S., DEPICTION OF
WOMEN IN

Women's presence or absence in most important fiction, and of memoirs written by women, during World War II and shortly afterward. Many American novels of World War II, in particular novels of combat with male protagonists, relegate women to secondary roles as love interests, as nearly invisible entities in a male-valORIZED sphere, or even as antagonistic specters of the world left behind. There are also important texts written during World War II, or shortly afterward—largely written by women—in which females play prominent, and what might now be called “liberated” roles, even if they were victims of war's cruelty and violence.

In the war novels, especially those about soldiers, Irwin Shaw's *The Young Lions* (1948), James Michener's *Tales of the South Pacific* (1947), John Hersey's *A Bell for Adono* (1944), Robert Lowry's *Casualty* (1946), Frederic Wakeman's *Shore Leave* (1944), James Jones' *From Here to Eternity* (1951), John Horne Burn's *The Gallery* (1947), Leon Uris' *Battle Cry* (1957), Jones' *The Thin Red Line* (1962), Norman Mailer's *The Naked and the Dead* (1948), and Sloan Wilson's novel of a post-war veteran, *Man in the Gray Flannel Suit* (1947), women most often play incidental roles, if they appear at all. For soldiers on leave in war zones (Hersey and Burns), women are often the complicated focus of a love life that is almost always a temporary respite from the demands of war. On the home front (Wakeman and Wilson), women are more present, self-conscious, and complicated. In combat novels, women are far more removed—nagging reminders of the toils and tedium of civilian life. The female characters are incapable of comprehending this masculine experience, and, from time to time, are the vicious perpetrators of “Dear John” letters or are otherwise cruel vixens who have given up on waiting, instead taking up with a slacker on the home front. Mailer's novel presents the sharpest hostility. An interesting anomaly is Joseph Heller's *Catch 22*

(1961), far more critical of the authoritarianism of war including misogyny, presenting a rape and murder as one of the inhuman deeds so often dismissed as just one of those things soldiers do. This is, of course, a much later novel, more attuned to the Vietnam period.

Personal narratives by women recount work in factories, their exploits as soldier's wives, their service in the military, in the Office of Special Services, and as internees both on the home front and overseas. Josephine von Miklos, in *I Took a War Job* (1943), and Elizabeth Hawes, in *Why Women Cry, or Wenches with Wrenches* (1944), write with vitality of their factory jobs, their unexpected acumen with tools, and their relations with fellow workers. Hawes, a fashion designer, argues for the full citizenship of women and blacks. Sociologist Katherine Archibald's powerful *Wartime Shipyard: A Study in Social Disunity* (1947) offers a bleak study of workers' prejudice in terms of race and gender, views previewed by a worker in Augusta Clawson's *Shipyard Diary of a Woman Welder* (1944).

Ruth Haskell's *Helmets and Lipstick* (1944) relates her duty as an Army nurse in North Africa before a back injury sent her home. Juanita Redmond's *I Served in Bataan* (1943), and Theresa Archer's *G.I. Nightingale* (1945) also tell of women's wartime nursing. *Citizen 13660* (1946) by artist Mine Okubo is a superb mix of text and drawings that tells of her grim internment with others of Japanese ancestry. A brilliant story of the camps, Hisaye Yamamoto's “The Legend of Miss Sasagawara” was first published in the *Kenyon Review* (1950). Monica Sone's *Nisei Daughter* appeared in 1953.

Margaret Buell Wilder's *Since You Went Away . . . Letters to a Soldier from His Wife* reveals a stoic wife and mother who ultimately takes a war job, pulling through while the husband is at war. Another account was written by Barbara Klaw, *Camp Follower, The Story of a Soldier's Wife* (1943). *Undercover Girl* is the memoir of Elizabeth MacDonald's work in the “morale” division of the OSS, including a stint in China in 1947. Etta Shiber's *Paris Underground* (1944) tells of working with the French resistance and

her imprisonment by the Germans. Also significant is Doris Tatier's *The House near Paris: An American Woman's Story of Traffic in Patriots* (1946). American women imprisoned in the Philippines produced many accounts: Shelley Mydans's *Open City* (1945), Doris Rubens Johnston's *Bread and Rice* (1947), and Alice Frank Bryant's *The Sun Was Darkened* (1947). Agnes Keith Newton's *Three Who Came Home* (1947), her horrific account of life in a Japanese prison camp near Burma, includes a near rape. This noteworthy disclosure is unusual in these accounts; in general, discussions of sex, including instances of abuse, are not disclosed by the narrators. What one does encounter are astute and independent minds retelling the interesting experiences of many women on totally new ground, ground that was brutal and terrifying for some. Kathryn Hulme in *The Wild Place* (1953) writes of her work in a displaced persons' camp in Germany; Gerda Klein's memoir of the Holocaust, *All But My Life*, was published in English in the United States after her emigration in 1957. Eve Curie's *Journey among Warriors* (1943), and Margaret Bourke-White's *Shooting the Russian War* (1942) report their travels to war zones, and Bourke-White gives a grim account of the U.S. invasion and occupation of Germany in *Dear Fatherland, Rest Quietly* (1946).

A contemporary view of black women is provided by the African American press. The *People's Voice*, printed in Harlem until 1948, and the *Pittsburgh Courier* provide insight into the lives of African American women, their social circles, their interests, their activities in the war effort, and the struggle against discrimination—what the *Courier* dubbed the Double V campaign. Ann Petry's *The Street* (1947), "In Darkness and Confusion" (1945, a novella contained in *Miss Muriel and Other Stories*, 1971), and "Like a Winding Sheet" (1947; reprinted in *Miss Muriel and Other Stories*) tell how African American women were alienated during the war and felt the weight of male domination as well as the burdens of racism. Lillian Smith's explosive *Strange Fruit* (1944) is also a crucial novel about race and gender.

Mary McCarthy's short story collection, *The Company She Keeps* (1942), which includes "The Man in the Brooks Brother Shirt," although not addressing World War II (the Spanish Civil War is in the background) introduces a sexually independent woman, noteworthy in part because of such women's effacement during the war. In much wartime fiction, women involved in war work find love, but it is romantic, chaste stuff, quite different from the sexual hunger and activity male protagonists exhibit (although little in men's novels is graphic, either). A decade after McCarthy's book, Margaret Long's *Louisville Saturday* (1950) presents a Dos Passos-like narrative in which numerous Louisville women face choices about sexuality; a mentally ill Victory girl is taken advantage of by a group of soldiers; a middle-aged volunteer turns to lesbianism; and a young wife starts an adulterous affair with an officer.

For their engaged and independent women protagonists who are in war zones or close to them, Martha Gellhorn's first two novels stand out: *The Stricken Field* (1939), in which a woman reporter encounters fascism in Czechoslovakia, and *Wine of Astonishment* (1948), later published as *The Point of No Return*, in which a reporter has an affair with a U.S. officer as the army advances to Germany. In *Liana* (1944), Gellhorn presents a different voice, depicting an Afro-Caribbean woman dominated by a French man in a French colony with the war a distant but significant presence. Kay Boyle, whose writing career began in the modernist society of France in the 1920s, wrote "Defeat," first published in *The New Yorker* in 1944, a cynical story of French women who quickly accept defeat in the earliest days of the German onslaught. This story reappears in her novel *Primer for Combat* (1942). Her *Avalanche* (1944) and *His Human Majesty* (1949), take place primarily in Europe. Boyle's amazing collection of stories about occupied Germany, *The Smoking Mountain*, appeared in 1951. Gertrude Stein, in addition to her memoir, *Wars I Have Seen* (1945), follows two GIs in Germany who cavort with American nurses and others in her final novel, *Brewsie and Willie* (1946).

In “The Lovely Leave,” reprinted in *Wave Me Goodbye, Stories of the Second World War* (1989), Dorothy Parker also offers a compelling take on the wife who is confused about the “half life” she has while her flier husband has a whole new life. Other important novels where the war on the home front plays a role are Carson McCuller’s *Member of the Wedding* (Boston 1946) and Harriet Arnow’s *The Dollmaker* (1954). In addition to these works, another woman, Kathleen Winsor, wrote *Forever Amber* (1944), a historical potboiler entertaining readers at home and in the service with a woman’s love conquests. This book was probably the most popular novel of the wartime period though it was set in Restoration England.

—Page Dougherty Delano

See also Gellhorn, Martha; Posters, U.S., Images of Women in

References and Further Reading

- Rupp, Leila. 1978. *Mobilizing Women for War: German and American Propaganda 1939–1945*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University.
- Sheldon, Sayre P. 1998. *Her War Story: Twentieth Century Women Write about War*. Carbondale: University of Southern Illinois.
- Tylee, Claire. 1990. *The Great War and Women’s Consciousness: Images of Militarism and Womanhood in Women’s Writing*. Iowa City: University of Iowa.

LITVIK, LIDIYA (LIDIYA)
VLADIMIROVNA
(1921–)

The first woman fighter pilot to shoot down an enemy aircraft in daytime. Lidiya Litviak became a Soviet flying instructor after graduating from the Kherson Flying School and finished training forty-five pilots by mid-1941 (Cottam 1983, 49). In the fall she joined Marina Raskova’s Group No. 122, which evolved into three combat wings:

Litviak’s 586th Fighter Aviation Regiment; the 587th Bomber Aviation Regiment (initially commanded by Raskova herself); and the 588th Bomber Aviation Regiment. Litviak’s regiment, which then flew Yakovlev’s Yak-1 fighters, became operational in April 1942, at which time it was charged with air defense of the city of Saratov.

In September 1942 Litviak was sent with her squadron to Stalingrad. With fighter pilots Raisa Beliaeva, Ekaterina (Katia) Budanova, and Mariia Kuznetsova, she initially joined the 437th Fighter Regiment, scoring her first two kills on September 13, 1942. As her new wing did not fly Yaks, she soon transferred with Budanova to the 9th Guards Fighter Aviation Regiment commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Lev Shestakov.

In January 1943, when this unit began acquiring P-39 Cobras, Litviak and Budanova again transferred to the 296th Fighter Aviation Regiment (renamed the 73rd Stalingrad-Vienna Guards Fighter Aviation Regiment) of the 6th Fighter Division, 8th Air Army, to continue flying Yaks. Senior Lieutenants Litviak and Budanova both became “free hunters” searching for targets of opportunity and participated in group combat.

Litviak’s final score of twelve autonomous and three group victories (Pennington 2001, 141–142) is now being questioned. The corrected score stands at five autonomous victories and two group victories, including an observation balloon (Polunina 2004, 143), whereas Budanova is credited with six independent and four group victories (Polunina 2004, 139).

Ekaterina (Katia) Vasilievna Budanova (b. 1916) perished on July 19, 1943, in an engagement with three Messerschmitts and was posthumously awarded the prestigious Hero of the Russian Federation (equivalent to the Hero of the Soviet Union) on October 1, 1993.

Outnumbered in a dog fight, Litviak was shot down on August 1, 1943. There is strong evidence to suggest that she was captured by the enemy and incarcerated in a POW camp. She did not return to the Soviet Union and may have sought refuge in Switzerland.

Her loyalty to the Soviet regime was suspect because her father, former deputy minister of transportation, was executed in 1937, a victim of Stalin's terror. After her alleged remains, buried in a common grave near Krasnyy Luch, were located in 1979, she was rehabilitated in March 1986. Litviak was posthumously awarded the Hero of the Soviet Union on May 5, 1990.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Makarova, Tat'iana Petrovna and Belik, Vera Luk'ianovna; Pilots of the IL-2; Raskova, Marina Mikhailovna; Soviet Air Defense, 586th Fighter Aviation Regiment; Soviet Union/Russian Federation, Women Heros of the

References and Further Reading

- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 1983. *Soviet Airwomen in Combat in World War II*. Manhattan, KS: MA/AH Publishing.
- . 2003. Litviak, Lidiia Vladimirovna. Pages 261–265 in *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*. Edited by Reina Pennington. Vol. 1. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Pennington, Reina. 2001. *Wings, Women and War*. Lawrence: University Press of Kansas.
- Polunina, Ekaterina. 2004. *Devchonki, podruzhki, letchitsy* [Girls, Girlfriends, Pilots]. Moscow: OAO Izdatel'skii Dom i Vestnik Vozdushnogo Flota.

LIVERMORE, MARY ASHTON RICE (1820–1905)

Author, woman's rights advocate, and suffragist who worked with U.S. Sanitary Commission, an organization set up to coordinate efforts to provide food, clothing, and medical assistance to Union troops and wounded veterans during the American Civil War. Mary Rice was born in Boston on December 19, 1820. She studied at the Female Seminary in Charleston, Massachusetts, and taught there following her graduation.

She was a tutor on a Virginia plantation, where she developed a deep opposition to slavery.

In 1861 the forty-one-year old Livermore, who had married a Unitarian minister, began working with the Chicago branch of the U.S. Sanitary Commission. She had long been a temperance advocate and had also been active in various ladies' aid societies. Wartime involvement brought her new responsibilities, introduced her to skills hitherto unexplored, and increased her confidence in her own abilities as well as those of other women.

Working with the Northwestern Sanitary Commission, Livermore and her co-manager, Jane Hoge, came to symbolize civilian involvement in the war effort for many women and men. During her everyday wartime activities, she helped raise large amounts of money, oversaw business deals, purchased property, traveled extensively, worked with civilians and military personnel, and managed the ever-changing inventory of supplies destined for army encampments in the western United States.

Among the many ways that war involvement took Livermore beyond traditional women's work, public speaking and writing would remain the most prominent in her later life. In the first stages of the Civil War she began speaking before women's groups throughout the Northwest, describing what she had experienced as an army nurse and Sanitary Commission representative. By 1864 she had begun speaking before large mixed audiences. Initially reluctant to address groups that included men, she was nevertheless bolstered by a popular cause filled with the drama of wartime.

She eventually put her experiences on paper, publishing *My Story of the War* in 1889. More than a century later the volume she wrote remains a valuable description of women's involvement in the American Civil War. It describes their interaction with soldiers, their roles behind the battle lines, in hospitals, and as representatives of the U.S. Sanitary Commission. The book gives valuable biographical information about women who were prominent in wartime relief.



Mary Livermore. (Library of Congress)

The new skills that Livermore gained doing wartime activities changed her. In 1869 she stood before attendees at a suffrage convention in Massachusetts and asserted that she and her associates in the war had grown to the “stature of men.” She went on to explain, “we cannot go back and be the women we were before.” (*National Anti-Slavery Standard*, December 25, 1869). The “new persona” that Livermore took on during the postwar years capitalized on the skills she had gained with the Sanitary Commission. Most notably, she became a well-known lecturer on the Redpath Lyceum lecture circuit, delivering a popular speech entitled “What Shall We Do with Our Daughters?” In the years following the Civil War, Livermore became one of the nation’s leading suffragists.

—Nancy Driscoll Engle

See also Civil War, American, and Women; Dix, Dorothea

References and Further Reading:

- Brockett, Linus P., and Marcy C. Vaughn. 1867. *Woman's Work in the Civil War: A Record of Heroism, Patriotism, and Patience*. Philadelphia: Zeigler, McCurdy.
- Livermore, Mary A. 1889. *My Story of the War: A Woman's Narrative of Four Years Personal Experience as Nurse in the Union Army*. Hartford, CT: A. D. Worthington.
- . 1899. *The Story of My Life*. Repr. New York: Arno, 1974.
- Willard, Frances, and Mary Livermore. 1975. *A Woman of the Century*. Repr. of 1893 edition. New York: Gordon.
- Wood, Ann Douglas. 1972. “The War Within a War: Women Nurses in the Union Army.” *Civil War History*, 18 (September): 197–212.

LOCKE, ELSIE
(1912–2001)

Historian, children’s novelist, community worker, campaigner for peace, women’s rights, and environmental alertness. Within New Zealand society, Elsie Locke was a leading advocate for nonviolence. Born in Hamilton in 1912, Locke grew up near Auckland. After receiving a bachelor of arts degree at Auckland University in 1933, she became increasingly involved in socialist organizations and antifascist rallies. Very close to the Communist Party of New Zealand in the mid-1930s, Locke had organized the New Zealand Woman’s Convention in 1934 before encouraging the creation of the Sex Hygiene and Birth Regulation Society in 1936. She participated in several international pacifist conferences before the outbreak of World War II. In Christchurch, where she lived with her husband, J. Gibson Locke, she edited the popular magazine, *Woman To-Day*. In 1949

she published an anthology of the antimilitarist writings of Clement G. Watson, a friend killed in battle in April 1945. Somewhat exasperated by Communist Party propaganda, following Hiroshima and Nagasaki she decided to dedicate her life to the struggle against the “evil atom.” In the late 1950s she joined with the Quaker Mary Woodward in the formation of a New Zealand branch of the Campaign for Nuclear Disarmament. Assuredly, her favorite weapons remained ink and pen. Laureate of the K. Mansfield Award in 1959 and author of a classic novel, *The Runaway Settlers*, published in 1965, the academic value of her writings was officially recognized in 1987 by the University of Canterbury, which conferred upon Locke an honorary doctorate in literature. Among her twenty books, *Peace People* (1992) was a major contribution to New Zealand’s national cultural heritage: It revealed the history of pacifism from the Maori wars to the protest against French nuclear tests. In 2000, Elsie Locke received the UNESCO Peacebuilder Award for her engagement in favor of social peace and her personal efforts in promoting nonviolence between the Maori and Pakeha communities. The mother of four children, Elsie Locke died in 2001 in Christchurch.

—*Jérôme Dorvidal*

See also Street, Jessie

References and Further Reading

- Laracy, Hughes. 2004. “Elsie Locke, Historian—An Appreciation.” *History Now*. <http://www.nzine.co.nz/views/locke.html> (accessed May 4, 2004).
- Locke, Elsie. 1992. *Peace People: A History of Peace Activities in New Zealand*. Christchurch: Hazard Press.

LOTTA SVÄRD

See Finland, Lotta Svärd

LOWTHER, BARBARA (TOUPIE)
(B. 1890)

Founder and administrator of the Lowther-Hackett ambulance unit, officially attached to the French army in World War I. Lowther ranked as a sub-lieutenant in the French army and received the Croix de Guerre.

Frustrated with receiving the brush-off from the British military, Barbara Lowther and Norah Hackett, who had been managing front-line canteens in the French war zone, sought permission from the French army to form an ambulance unit in 1916. The daughter of the 7th Earl of Lonsdale and close relative of Member of Parliament Claude Lowther, her aristocratic connections aided Lowther in establishing her unit.

In 1917 she secured cars by donation, and drivers—from Britain, Ireland, France, and America—via newspaper advertisements. The unit worked in Cugny and Creil, France, for six months. Determined to take her unit to the frontline to work under the same conditions as male soldiers, Lowther convinced French authorities that she and her coworker were not afraid of being killed. Despite their reluctance to place British women in such a dangerous situation, the unit was posted at Compiègne, France. The only all-women corps on French battlefields holding the official status of soldiers, Lowther’s unit worked under camouflage thirty-five yards from German lines. The unit served successfully at medical aid stations through the end of the war.

Lowther was well educated, holding a bachelor of science degree from the Sorbonne. Her masculine appearance led many to believe her to be a lesbian. She was friends and associated with many prominent lesbians of the time, including two members of the Lowther-Hackett unit, Eileen Plunket and Enid Elliot. Other members of the unit include Mary Dexter and Katherine Hodges.

—*Barbara Penny Kanner*

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I; Hodges, Katherine

References and Further Reading

Hamer, Emily. 1996. *Britannia's Glory: A History of Twentieth-Century Lesbians*. London: Cassell.

LUCE, CLARE BOOTHE
(1903–1987)

Editor, playwright, war correspondent, congresswoman, ambassador, and presidential adviser. Clare Boothe Luce stands as the epitome of a woman who succeeded in a man's world by using her female charms when talent was not enough. At every juncture of her life, the noted beauty relied on men's patronage and sponsorship to help overcome fierce resistance to a woman's advancement. Her romantic affairs were legendary, as was her ambition.

Born in New York in 1903, Clare Boothe had little formal education or financial security. Convinced of the necessity of marrying for money, at age twenty she wed millionaire George T. Brokaw, an alcoholic twenty-six years her senior. After six unhappy years, she obtained a divorce in Reno, Nevada, and a lucrative settlement. She began her ascent in journalism by working at *Vogue* and *Vanity Fair*; an affair with the managing editor of the latter advanced her career. Her most notable lover, however, was financier and presidential adviser Bernard Baruch, who gave her entrée to a political world beyond the glitter of Park Avenue.

Resigning from *Vanity Fair*, she devoted herself for a time to writing plays. *The Women* (1936) ran for 657 performances, toured the country, and became a popular movie. A caustic comedy ridiculing the shallow world of society matrons, Clare's play featured a toxic wit that shocked and offended Eleanor Roosevelt and many drama critics.

In 1935, Clare met publishing magnate Henry R. Luce. Although married, the thoroughly smitten Luce proposed on their second

meeting. Their marriage lasted thirty-two years. Marriage did not, however, give Clare the spot of managing editor of *Life* that she had coveted. Frustrated at being kept at arms' length from both *Time* and *Life*, she persuaded Luce to make her a foreign correspondent for *Life* as World War II began.

Her tour through Europe in early 1940 allowed her to visit the Maginot Line and to meet Churchill, Beaverbrook, and Joseph Kennedy. She was in Brussels when the Germans began their juggernaut west. Escaping via car to France just ahead of the invaders, she returned to the United States to write *Europe in the Spring*, which won praise for its clear-eyed evaluation of the European situation.

Clare's interview with General Douglas MacArthur was *Life's* cover story on December 8, 1941, complete with a photo that she had taken. Of the story, which ran seventy-three pages as submitted, *Life's* managing editor complained that it "stunk" because it "gushed about MacArthur" and told nothing about the Philippines (Martin 1991, 209–210). Nevertheless, Henry Luce pushed to have it printed, albeit in severely edited form. During the early years of U.S. participation in the war, Clare filed stories from the Far East as well as North Africa. Her prose was frequently overblown and self-indulgent, but she did include useful information about the Flying Tigers in Burma and the difficulties of desert warfare.

In 1942, Clare began another chapter of her career when she won a seat in Congress, representing a Connecticut district. Though a Roosevelt supporter in 1932, she had quickly become disenchanted with the president. She earned a reputation as one of FDR's most outspoken and abrasive critics, accusing him of having "lied" the United States into World War II (Martin 1991, 239) and calling U.S. plans for postwar cooperation "globaloney" (*Congressional Record* 1943, 761). She won reelection by a narrow margin in 1944, but the sudden death of her only child, Ann, a student at Stanford University, left her badly shaken. She did not seek reelection in 1946.

The postwar years brought Clare's much-publicized conversion to Catholicism and her appointment as ambassador to Italy. She became a respected elder in Republican circles. Her politics drifted ever rightward, as she spoke stridently about Communism, praised General and Madame Chiang Kai-shek, and defended Richard Nixon throughout Watergate. She spent the last years of her life in Hawaii, where she enjoyed scuba diving and painting. She died in 1987 at the age of eighty-four.

—Pamela Tyler

See also Chapelle, Dickey; Emerson, Gloria; Friang, Brigitte; Gellhorn, Martha; Higgins, Marguerite; Hull, Peggy, pseud.; Lederer, Edith; Schuyler, Philippa; Tomara, Sonia; Trotta, Liz; Watts, Jean

References and Further Reading

- Boothe, Clare. 1937. *The Women*. New York: Random House.
- Congressional Record*. 1943. February 9, 1943, vol. 89, p. 761. Washington, DC.
- Hatch, Alden. 1956. *Ambassador Extraordinary: Clare Boothe Luce*. New York: Henry Holt.
- Luce, Clare Boothe. 1940. *Europe in the Spring*. New York: A. A. Knopf.
- Martin, Ralph G. 1991. *Henry and Clare: An Intimate Portrait of the Luces*. New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons.
- Morris, Sylvia Jukes. 1977. *Rage for Fame: The Ascent of Clare Boothe Luce*. New York: Random House.
- Sheed, Wilfrid. 1982. *Clare Boothe Luce*. New York: Dutton.

LUDINGTON, SYBIL (1761–1839)

American Revolution patriot. Sybil Ludington obtained prominence during the American Revolution when she rode horseback through the

countryside of eastern New York to alert the local militia that British forces had attacked nearby Danbury, Connecticut.

Born in 1761, Ludington was only 16 years old when she learned that 2,000 British troops had looted and set fire to Danbury on April 26, 1777. Ludington's home in Fredericksburg, New York, was only about 22 miles away, and the Continental army stored much of the region's supplies in Danbury. This alarmed Henry Ludington, Sybil's father, who was a colonel in the 7th Regiment of the Dutchess County Militia, a regiment comprised of volunteer farmers. Colonel Ludington wanted to help protect Danbury against the British, but the more than 400 members of his regiment were scattered throughout the sparsely settled region.

Sybil volunteered to spread the alarm because she, unlike the exhausted messenger who had warned her father, was familiar with the local terrain and the exact locations where the militia members lived. She also knew where many of the region's Tories lived and could thus avoid them on her ride. She left her home around 9:00 P.M. and under the cover of darkness she rode through Putnam and Dutchess counties in Connecticut. She rode for most of the rainy night through Carmel village, Mahopac, Mahopac Falls, Kent Cliffs, Farmers Mills, and back home through Stormville. Along the approximately 40-mile path, she quickly but discreetly knocked on doors, alerted the militiamen and their families of the proximity of British troops, and otherwise mustered the militia. When she returned home the following morning, more than 400 men set off to protect Danbury.

Colonel Ludington's men did not reach Danbury in time to save it from destruction. The town had already been overrun by British troops who had burned most of the homes and destroyed the stockpiles of food and munitions that were there. When the 7th Regiment finally arrived, British General William Tyron and his troops were already leaving Danbury. During the ensuing battle of Ridgefield, however, Ludington's militiamen joined with other patriot sol-

LUXEMBURG, ROSA

diers under the leadership of General David Wooster to force the British troops back to their ships in Long Island Sound.

—Andrew K. Frank

See also American Revolution, Role of Women in the

References and Further Reading

- Berson, Robin Kadison. 1999. *Young Heroes in World History*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Bohrer, Melissa Lukeman. 2003. *Glory, Passion, and Principle: The Story of Eight Remarkable Women at the Core of the American Revolution*. New York: Atria.

LUXEMBURG, ROSA (1871–1919)

German radical socialist executed by right-wing paramilitaries for participating in the Spartacus revolt following the end of World War I. Born in Poland to a Jewish family, Rosa Luxemburg experienced a pogrom in Poland at the age of ten, setting the foundation for much of her future ideology. Her politics from that time reflected her humanitarian views as she worked for the social rights of every person. During the 1880s she embraced the ideology of Marxian internationalism as her own. Despite her Polish birth, Luxemburg did not support the Polish nationalist movement, arguing that nationalism detracted from the main goal of internationalism, and that socialist organizations should strive for the rights of all proletarians. Never a feminist or nationalist, Luxemburg believed that the rights of women and oppressed nationalities would be solved by socialism.

In 1889 Luxemburg and her family moved to Zurich, where she attended the University of Zurich and became one of few women at the time to receive an education at the university level. After completing her thesis, *The Industrial Devel-*



Rosa Luxemburg. (Library of Congress)

opment of Poland, she was granted a doctorate of economics in 1898 and left Zurich. Her intelligence, her speaking and writing skills, and her active political life in Zurich had garnered her much attention, though it was not necessarily positive. Her Polish nationality, her knowledge of several foreign languages, and her gender attracted the attention of the German Social Democratic Party (SPD). The SPD utilized her to spread the socialist message to Polish-speaking workers in Prussian-dominated regions and to gain the support of female workers. In comparison to the stagnant politics in Switzerland, activity with the SPD invigorated Luxemburg and she became bored with Zurich. Through her nominal marriage to Gustav Lubeck, a German citizen and the son of two of Luxemburg's comrades, Luxemburg became a German citizen. Luxemburg also had a lover, Leo Jogiches, who was her companion despite periods of discord for most of her life.

She moved to Berlin in 1898 and quickly established herself within the SPD's ranks as a comrade unafraid to assert her opinions. An ideological difference arose within the party between socialists arguing for reform (the revisionists) and those arguing for revolution. The revisionists wanted to work within the established monarchical system to achieve socialism, whereas the revolutionaries believed that extreme action was the only way to bring about socialism. Luxemburg, writing in *Reform or Revolution* (reprinted 1973), openly attacked revisionism and its leading supporters, criticizing the revisionists' willingness to work within a system that reinforced a class-based society. To Luxemburg's disappointment, the revisionist camp eventually dominated the party. Her outspokenness and inability to compromise her political beliefs won her notoriety but also gained for her disapproval among the moderate socialists.

Luxemburg's stubborn refusal to moderate her opinions led to repeated arrests and continual observation by Prussian officials. In 1903 Prussian authorities imprisoned her for insulting Kaiser Wilhelm's treatment of workers. Luxemburg participated in the failed Russian Revolution in Russian-controlled Poland in 1905, and in 1906 authorities arrested her before she left Russian territory. Following a second arrest and imprisonment in Russia, she returned to Berlin to teach at SPD's Central Party School, where she served until 1914. Over time she gained respect within the party as a result of her reputation as an authoritative teacher. In 1910, unhappy with the slow pace of socialist activity in Germany, she continued to disseminate her ideas and called for the creation of a German republic in her work, *Was Weiter* (*What's Next*) (reprinted 1970).

With the onset of World War I, Luxemburg and other socialist opponents of the war split from the SPD to form the Internationale, which she and Karl Liebknecht transformed into the Spartacus League in 1916. Initially an underground organization, the emergence of Spartacus led to another arrest for Luxemburg. She re-

mained in prison for the duration of the war. There she wrote *The Russian Revolution* (translated 1940), expressing her disapproval of Vladimir Lenin's methods in Russia, and *The Junius Pamphlet* (reprinted 1967), arguing that socialism should be achieved by the people rather than by an elite party.

Released from prison following the defeat and the collapse of the German Empire, she joined with Liebknecht and other Spartacists to found the German Communist Party (KPD) in December 1918. Against her wishes, in January 1919 Liebknecht prematurely attempted to overthrow the provisional German government led by the moderate socialist Friedrich Ebert. The German Freikorps, under orders of the SPD-led government, quickly crushed the attempted revolution, known as the Spartacus revolt. Luxemburg, along with Liebknecht, was arrested and killed. Freikorps soldiers disposed of Luxemburg's body in a canal in the middle of the night; her body did not surface until May. Luxemburg was then buried with other comrades who had participated in the failed revolution.

—Rachael I. Cherry

See also Germany, Revolution of 1918–1919, Women in the

References and Further Reading

- Bronner, Stephen E. 2001. *Socialism Unbound*. 2nd ed. Oxford: Westview.
- Frölich, Paul. 1972. *Rosa Luxemburg: Ideas in Action*. London: Pluto Press.
- Luxemburg, Rosa. 1940. *The Russian Revolution* [*Russische Revolution*]. Translation and Introduction by Bertram D. Wolfe. New York: Workers Age.
- . 1967. *Junius Pamphlet*. London: Merlin.
- . 1970. "Was Weiter," pages 289–299 in volume 2, *Gesammelte Werke* [Collected Works]. Edited by Günter Radczun. Berlin: Dietz.
- . 1973/1974. *Reform or Revolution?* [*Sozialreform oder revolution?*]. Translated by Integer. New York: Gordon Press.
- Shepardson, Donald E. 1996. *Rosa Luxemburg and the Noble Dream*. New York: Peter Lang.

M

M. M. RASKOVA
BORISOV GUARDS
BOMBER REGIMENT

See Soviet Union, 125th M. M. Raskova
Borisov Guards Bomber Regiment

MACLEOD, MARGARETHA
GERTRUIDA

See Mata Hari, pseud.

MADRES DE LA PLAZA
DE MAYO

See Argentina, Mothers of the Plaza de
Mayo

MAKAROVA, TAT'IANA
PETROVNA (1920-1944)
AND BELIK, VERA
LUK'IANOVNA (1921-1944)

Soviet night bombing team. Guards Lieutenants Tat'iana Petrovna Makarova and Vera Luk'ianovna Belik usually flew together as pilot and navigator-bombardier aboard the Polikarpov's Po-2, a highly maneuverable former trainer capable of operating from unprepared airstrips.

They served in the 588th Bomber Aviation Regiment, one of the three Soviet women's wings formed by Marina Raskova and redesignated 46th Taman' Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment in 1943; they were among the first in their unit to be decorated. In September 1942 Makarova received the Order of the Red Banner and Belik was awarded the Order of the Red Star.

Makarova was inspired by the famous 1938 nonstop flight to the Far East carried out by Marina Raskova, Polina Osipenko, and Valentina Grizodubova and by a pamphlet urging Young Communist League members to take up flying. Determined to become a professional pilot, she was admitted to a part-time flying course and was encouraged to train as an instructor. In 1940 she was appointed instructor

at the Military School of Basic Training in Moscow (her former flying club) and was awarded the rank of sergeant.

In 1939 Belik enrolled at the Karl Liebknecht Pedagogical Institute in Moscow, where she studied mathematics. Her sound judgment, good memory, and the ability to calculate quickly were noted after she had volunteered for military service.

When, in December 1942, a third squadron was formed in their wing, Makarova became the commander and Belik the navigator of No. 2 squadron. After eight members of their squadron were shot down over the Kuban' area on July 31, 1943, at their own request Makarova and Belik reverted to duties of flight commander and navigator.

During difficult mission sorties over the Ukraine, North Caucasus, the Crimea, Belorussia, and Poland, they often descended to very low altitudes to increase their bombing accuracy. On August 1, 1944, they became the first aircrew of their wing to fight above German soil. Attacked by a German fighter near their home airfield in Poland on August 25, 1944, they perished as their aircraft went down in flames. They carried no parachutes. Makarova had flown a total 628 sorties and Belik, 813.

On February 23, 1945, both were posthumously awarded the Hero of the Soviet Union, the highest Soviet military decoration. As a result of lobbying by Makarova's comrades-in-arms, Bolotnaia, the street where her home was located, was renamed for her. In 1965 Lieutenant-Colonel Evdokiia Bershanskaia, Makarova's and Belik's commanding officer, and their biographer, Chief Navigator Larissa Litvinova, witnessed the unveiling of a memorial stone on the heroines' common grave in the Polish town of Ostroleka.

Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Soviet Union/Russian Federation,
Women Heroes of the

References and Further Reading

- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 2003. Makarova, Tat'iana Petrovna, and Belik, Vera Luk'ianovna. Pages 271–272 in *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*. Edited by Reina Pennington. Vol. 1. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Pennington, Reina. 2001. *Wings, Women and War*. Lawrence: University Press of Kansas.

MALTA, WOMEN AND WARS IN

Role of the women of Malta in war. Malta is a small archipelago 60 miles south of Sicily. In 1565 the Turks invaded Malta with 40,000 troops. The defense was led by the Knights of Malta with 600 knights, 2,600 infantry, and 3,000 Maltese militia (Balbi 1965, 41). Elderly men, as well as women and children, were also recruited. Women worked side by side with men repairing breaches in city walls, manufacturing incendiaries, and carrying supplies. Women and children collected wood to keep pots of pitch boiling, ready to tip onto the invaders.

The siege began in late May and extended throughout the summer. By July the Turks were assaulting the cities of Birgu and Senglea, where the majority of the people had taken shelter. The Turks shifted their attacks from one city to another, coming close to success on numerous occasions. The most serious crisis occurred on August 7 when both towns were assaulted simultaneously with 8,000 attacking Senglea and 4,000 coming against Birgu. The attacks, starting at dawn, lasted 9 hours. In time the Turks gained a foothold in Senglea (Balbi 1965, 145).

According to the knight Louis DeBoisgelin's account of the siege, the women of Malta responded vigorously to this threat and "performed actions which in some degree equaled the resolute valor of the knights . . . the women likewise nobly exposed themselves to the great-

est dangers, in order, if possible, to save by their exertions husbands, fathers, brothers, and children" (DeBoisgelin 1988, 105–106). Women flung themselves into the battle, attacking invaders with incendiaries, boiling water, and melted pitch.

The dread of being deprived, not only of their liberty but of their honor, should they be taken by the infidels, made these valiant women rise superior to the fear of death. The Turks . . . were so incensed at being opposed by such weak though courageous enemies, that they showed them no quarter, but slew a great number with the sword, and destroyed others by throwing, in their turn, fire-works amongst them. (DeBoisgelin 1988, II:105–06)

This fierce resistance, coupled with a timely cavalry raid on the enemy camp, forced the Turks to withdraw after having lost 2,200 men (Balbi 1965, 147).

The smaller town of Mdina was also threatened with attack. The governor dressed all the women as soldiers and marched them back and forth along the walls. The Turkish general, thinking Mdina too heavily defended, called off the attack. The invaders left Malta on September 8, which became celebrated as the Feast of Our Lady of Victory. The civilian casualties were high, with 7,000 Maltese men, women, and children killed (Balbi 1965, 189).

Malta suffered another siege during World War II. Malta was the only Allied base in the central Mediterranean and from there British planes attacked Axis convoys in North Africa. In turn, the Axis blocked convoys to Malta and dropped over 15,000 tons of bombs on the 90-square-mile island.

Despite the harsh conditions, life went on. Censa Bonnici recalled her marriage in November 1941. The wedding took place in the remnants of her bombed parish church. An air raid took place during the service, sending the congregation to a shelter, leaving just the priest, the

couple, and two loyal witnesses to complete the ceremony (Mizzi 1998, 96).

Although the Bonnicis survived their wedding day, others were less fortunate. Guza Bondin was caring for her nine-month-old daughter while her husband served in the army. One day she and the baby ventured out to get a milk ration. Guza was careful, waiting for the all-clear to sound before venturing into the streets. But an earlier raid had dropped delayed-action bombs that were designed to cause civilian casualties. One of these exploded as she passed nearby. Guza pressed herself against a door and shielded her daughter's body with her own, but it was too late. The infant was hit in the head by a rock shard and killed (Mizzi 1998, 91–93).

By the summer of 1942 the Maltese were starving. The daily ration for adult males was 14.6 ounces (413.9 grams) of food and even less for women and children (Jellison 1984, 221). Mothers often gave their scanty ration to their children, but it could not satisfy their hunger. Nevertheless, Malta did not surrender, and the courage of the Maltese women, along with the rest of the civilian population, was recognized when King George VI collectively awarded them the George Cross.

—Dennis A. Castillo

See also Italy, Women in the Resistance during World War II

References and Further Reading

- Balbi, Francisco di Corregio. 1965. *The Siege of Malta*. Trans. by Ernle Bradford. London: Hodder and Stoughton.
- Boisgelin, Louis de. 1804. *Ancient and Modern Malta*. Vol. I–III. Repr. Valletta, Malta: Midsea Books Ltd. 1988.
- Bradford, Ernle. 1961. *The Great Siege: Malta, 1565*. London: Hodder and Stoughton.
- Jellison, Charles A. 1984. *Besieged: The World War II Ordeal of Malta, 1940–1942*. Hanover, NH: University Press of New England.
- Mizzi, Laurence. 1998. *The People's War: Malta, 1940–1943*. Trans. by Joseph M. Falzon. Valletta, Malta: Progress Press.

MANDELA, WINNIE (1936–)

A leader of the African National Congress (ANC) in the struggle against apartheid. Winnie Mandela's ultimate significance in South African history may be as diverse as her many names. Known variously as Winnie Madikizela-Mandela, Nozamo Winnie Madikizela Mandela, Comrade Nomzamo, Nkosikazi Nobandle, and Nkosikazi Nobandle Nomzamo Madikizela, to name a few, Winnie Mandela will probably best be remembered as one of the leaders in the ANC who fought against the racist apartheid governments in South Africa during the cold war.

Born in 1936 to two English-speaking, missionary-educated inhabitants of the Pondo area of the Transkei in South Africa, young Winnie always seemed to want to help people. In 1953 she moved to Johannesburg to pursue a degree in social work, which she obtained in 1955. Her first employer was the Baragwaneth Hospital and one of her roommates was a woman named Adelaide Tsukudu. Tsukudu introduced her to a young attorney and member of the ANC, Nelson Mandela. After a whirlwind courtship, Nelson and Winnie were married in a Methodist ceremony in 1958. The Mandelas settled into their home in the Soweto area of Johannesburg.

Winnie Mandela spent the first three years of her marriage supporting her husband during his trial on charges of treason. One way she showed her support was by wearing traditional tribal dress to the court proceedings, until the authorities prohibited such attire. In 1964, when her husband was arrested, found guilty, and sentenced to life in prison for his continued work with the ANC, Winnie Mandela was forced to live in the Orlando area of Soweto. She had to resign her social work position with the Johannesburg-based Child Welfare Society because she was not allowed by the government to travel outside of Orlando.

Nevertheless, Winnie Mandela did indeed leave Orlando and was subsequently sentenced to jail. She also spent time in jail in 1969 for

failing to give her name and address to the city police and for working for the then-outlawed ANC. In 1970 she was arrested on charges of terrorism and spent time in solitary confinement in the Pretoria Central Prison. Between the time her husband was sentenced to life imprisonment in 1964 and 1977, Winnie Mandela spent approximately 17 months in various prisons throughout South Africa. She described what it was like to spend time in solitary confinement:

Those first few days are the worst in anyone's life that uncertainty, that insecurity . . . The whole thing is calculated to destroy you. You are not in touch with anybody . . . The days and nights became so long I found I was talking to myself. (Mandela 1985, 99)

By the time she was released from prison, Mandela had spent 491 days in solitary confinement (Lipman 1984, 233). According to Mandela, what brought her the greatest pain and suffering was not the torture or imprisonment she endured, but the pain suffered by her daughter, Zindzi: "[that] was the hardest thing for me to take as a mother . . . Of course I was bitter, more than I've ever been" (Mandela 1984, 25).

Mandela supported the ANC and Black majority of South Africa through the creation of several social organizations such as the Black Women's Federation and the Black Parents' Association. The latter organization provided medical and legal assistance in the wake of the 1976 riots in Soweto. Winnie Mandela never did take on any of the executive roles held by her incarcerated husband and that may have to do more with gender relations than her skills or abilities as a leader (O'Brien 1994, 154).

Probably the two most significant events in Mandela's life were the 1976 Soweto uprising and her involvement with the Mandela United Football Club (MUFC). In the mid-June heat of 1976, South African police fought with the town of Soweto over the government's attempt to

compel the Black majority to educate their children in the language of the White minority Afrikaans. Officially, a few dozen died. Unofficially, a few hundred were killed. Nevertheless, the violence signaled the beginning of the end of apartheid in South Africa. Thousands of Black leaders were arrested, among them Winnie Mandela, whom the government tried to implicate as orchestrating the riots. As part of her punishment the government removed Mandela from Orlando and forced her to live in the Brandfort area of the Black township of Phatakahle, in the Orange Free State.

As a result of her Brandfort home being firebombed, the government allowed Mandela to move anywhere in South Africa, provided that she did not live in Johannesburg or Roodeport. She decided to move back to Soweto in the mid-1980s. While Mandela continued her work in support of civil and human rights, other Black groups began to distance themselves from her. One reason for this split was her involvement with the MUFC. The sporting group lived with Mandela and tended to play the role of her bodyguard more so than playing football (soccer) matches. The government arrested and found guilty many members of the football club on charges ranging from robbery to murder, including the kidnapping, torture, and murder of fourteen-year-old Stompie Moeketsi Sepei. In 1991 the South African Truth and Reconciliation Commission found Mandela “politically and morally accountable for the gross violations of human rights committed by the MUFC” (Pohlandt-McCormick 2000, 585).

As a result of MUFC’s “reign of terror,” the Congress of South African Trade Unions and the United Democratic Front both cut all ties with Winnie Mandela and her organizations. Even the Mandelas could not ride out the waves of political and legal intrigue. After more than thirty years of marriage, Nelson Mandela announced in 1992 that he and Winnie had separated a year earlier. In 1996 they divorced, and Winnie Mandela added her maiden name

to her last name, becoming Winnie Madikizela-Mandela.

Despite her legal, professional, and personal problems, Winnie Mandela was honored with the Robert F. Kennedy Humanitarian Award, the Freedom Prize, the first International Simone de Beauvoir Award, and the Third World Prize for her work in advancing civil, human, and gender-specific rights in South Africa. She also was awarded an honorary doctor of law degree from Haverford Quaker College.

In the early twenty-first century, Winnie Madikizela-Mandela served as the president of the ANC Women’s League as well as a member of the South African Parliament. She continued to work for the advancement of women’s rights throughout the world.

—Jim Ross-Nazzari

See also First, Heloise Ruth

References and Further Reading

- Gilbey, Emma. 1993. *The Lady: The Life and Times of Winnie Mandela*. London: Cape.
- Harrison, Nancy. 1985. *Winnie Mandela, Mother of a Nation*. London: Gollancz.
- Lipman, Beata. 1984. *We Make Freedom: Women in South Africa*. London: Pandora.
- Mandela, Winnie. 1984. *Part of My Soul*. London: Penguin.
- . 1985. *Part of My Soul Went with Him*. Edited by Anne Benjamin. New York: Norton.
- Meltzer, Milton. 1986. *Winnie Mandela: The Soul of South Africa*. New York: Viking Penguin.
- O’Brien, Colleen. 1994. “In Search for Mother Africa: Poetry Revises Women’s Struggles for Freedom.” *African Studies Review*, 37 (September) 2: 147–155.
- Pohlandt-McCormick, Helena. 2000. “Controlling Woman: Winnie Mandela and the 1976 Soweto Uprising.” *The International Journal of African Historical Studies*, 33(3):585–614.
- Truth and Reconciliation Commission. 1991. *Report II*. Chp. 6: Special Investigation: Mandela United Football Club. http://www.info.gov.za/otherdocs/2003/trc/4_1.pdf (accessed June 25, 2005).

MARIANNE

MARIANNE

The female symbol of the French republic and French revolutionary and martial ardor. The figure of Marianne is always depicted as wearing a Phrygian bonnet, such as that worn by freed slaves in Greece, as a symbol of republicanism. The figure is often depicted carrying a revolutionary pike, such as the one that held aloft the head of the commander of the Bastille on July 14, 1789; or a gun. At the end of 1792, France's parliament, the Convention, decreed that the seal of France should include this female liberty figure. Marianne was depicted leading representatives of various classes of the

people as they fought on the barricades in Eugene Delacroix's famous painting, *Liberty Leading the People*, which he painted to celebrate the French July Revolution of 1830. In 1889 at the centennial of the Revolution, when the *Marseillaise* became the French national anthem, and July 14, the day on which the Bastille fell, became France's national holiday, representations of Marianne were put in place on Paris' Place de la Republic and Place de la Nation. During World War I, Marianne was depicted in a number of patriotic poses: resolute, warlike, or motherly. As a young woman she greeted her suitor and hero, Uncle Sam, when the United States entered the war in



Liberty Leading the People, by Eugène Delacroix (1798–1863). (Bettmann/Corbis)

MARIE, QUEEN OF ROMANIA

1917. After the end of the war she soberly commemorated the dead. Her image was banned by the antirepublican and collaborationist Vichy regime (1940–1944) but reappeared alongside General Charles De Gaulle on Free French posters.

—Bernard Cook

See also French Revolution, Impact of War on Women's Protest during the; Paris Commune, Women and the

References and Further Reading

Blume, Mary. "The French Icon Marianne à la mode." *International Herald Tribune*, July 16, 2004.

"Living in the Languedoc: Central Government: French National Symbols: Marianne." http://www.languedoc-france.info/06141211_marianne.htm (accessed March 2, 2005).

MARIE, QUEEN OF ROMANIA (1875–1938)

Queen of Romania during World War I. Granddaughter of Queen Victoria and cousin to Czar Nicolas, the last emperor of Russia, Queen Marie was a proud, very tenacious, perfect English lady, with an unbeatable will. She inspired courage and confidence in her husband, King Ferdinand, during the darkest and most hopeless moments for the country. According to Count Charles de Saint-Aulaire, a French official in Bucharest during that period, "there is only one man in Romania and that is the Queen" (Pakula 1989, 226).

According to her memoirs, she trusted England and had the vision of a united Romanian state. These were the main reasons that she did not lose faith during the terrible years of World War I, when three-quarters of the coun-

try was under Austrian, German, and Bulgarian occupation.

During the difficult period of her withdrawal to Moldavia during the winter of 1916–1917, with the support of the Allies' Red Cross service and with the help of Colonel O. Ballif, the Royal House administrator, the Queen energetically worked to establish a network of military hospitals on the front line. She personally attended wounded soldiers, established public canteens for children and refugees in need, and organized warehouses for food, clothing, and medicine.

She modernized the Iasi Railway Marshalling Station, an aid unit that had consisted of dark, cold, bad-smelling barracks. The wounded lay on the floors, infested with lice, until places for them were found in the overcrowded hospitals. Very often the Queen dressed in the white uniform of a nun–nurse and visited the hospitals. She passed among the rows of hospital beds offering cigarettes, a book of prayers, or a slice of bread.

At that time, she was moving constantly along the front or visiting cities such as Bacau, Onesti, and Roman; spending days in campaign hospitals close to areas where artillery fire could be heard. Her car was always loaded with supplies for immediate help. As large quantities of food, clothing, and medicine began to arrive from the Red Cross, the Queen offered them personally to prisoners-of-war met on the road and to hungry Jews in Iasi, as well as to her soldiers. In the autumn of 1917, she established the Queen Mary's Cross Medal for special merit in military sanitation activities.

Although she could not prevent the armistice between Romania and the central powers, Queen Marie pressed the British government to continue supporting the interests of Romania. In Iasi, at the insistence of the Queen and Prime Minister Bratianu, the Allied ministers signed a document asserting that Romania had heroically fought to the extreme limit, and was forced into a retreat and temporary cease-fire by Russia's treasonous lack of promised support.

As the “Queen Mother” of her soldiers and all those who did not stop believing in the causes of Romania and of the *Entente Cordiale*, Marie was the most vivid symbol of the country’s resistance during the war.

—Miodrag Milin

See also Teodoroiu, Ecaterina

References and Further Reading

Pakula, Hannah. 1989. *Queen of Romania: The Life of Princess Marie, the Granddaughter of Queen Victoria*. London: Eland.

MARKIEVICZ (NÉE GORE-
BOOTH), COUNTESS
CONSTANCE (1868–1927)

Irish nationalist imprisoned for her role in the Easter Rebellion. Constance Gore-Booth was born in London. Her family belonged to the Protestant ascendancy of prosperous landowners and owned a large estate in County Sligo. She was presented at court in London and studied art in London and Paris before marrying a destitute Polish count, Casimir Dunin Markievicz. A daughter, Maeve, was born in the Ukraine in 1901, but the marriage failed after the family returned to Ireland. In 1907 the Countess joined the nationalist women’s organization *Inghinidhe na hÉireann* (Daughters of Ireland), founded by Maud Gonne, and wrote for its newspaper, *Bean na hÉireann*. In 1908 Markievicz and Bulmer Hobson founded a scouting organization, *Fianna* (Warriors) to train young people to fight for the nationalist cause. She joined the Irish Citizen Army, which was founded in 1913 to protect workers’ against police attacks during the Dublin Lockout.

During the Easter Rebellion of 1916, Countess Makievicz, a lieutenant in the Citizen Army, was second-in-command for the rebel forces at



Countess Constance Markievicz, an Irish Republican leader, makes a farewell address in Boston before returning to Ireland, 1922. (Bettmann/Corbis)

St. Stephen’s Green. Of the fourteen women fighters among the rebels at St. Stephen’s, Markievicz and Margaret Skinnider were reputedly the best snipers, male or female. At the beginning of the rebellion the Countess shot a policeman who refused to leave his post at the main entrance to the Green. When the rebels at St. Stephen’s were forced to surrender, Markievicz kissed her Mauser pistol before handing it to a British officer. After executing fifteen male nationalists, the British sentenced Markievicz to death but recommended mercy because of her sex. The sentence was commuted to life imprisonment. She was freed, however, by the July 1917 general amnesty. While in prison, she was elected the president of *Cumann na mBan* (The League of Women), the main organization of Irish nationalist women.

In December 1918, in the first election in the United Kingdom in which women were allowed to vote, Markievicz was the first woman elected to the British parliament. She, however, with the other Irish nationalists of the Sinn Féin (We Ourselves—the Irish Republican party dedicated to the independence of all of Ireland), refused to take her seat at Westminster. She joined the Dáil, the Irish parliament in Dublin, as the first labor minister of the new Irish government. She opposed the treaty with England agreed to by Michael Collins and opposed the Irish Free State government in the Irish Civil War. She edited a republican newspaper and traveled to America to gain support for the antitreaty Republicans. She was arrested by the Irish Free State in 1923.

With the end of the civil war, Markievicz was elected to the Dáil, but refused to take her seat because of her unwillingness to take an oath of loyalty to the British king. She joined Eamon de Valera's party, Fianna Fáil (Warriors of Destiny), when it was organized in 1926. In 1927 she was elected as a Fianna Fáil candidate to the Dáil but died on July 15 before taking her seat. Some critics regarded her as superficial and self-absorbed, but the common people of Ireland did not share this negative assessment. Three hundred thousand lined the streets for her funeral procession and de Valera delivered the eulogy at her grave.

—Bernard Cook

See also Gonne, Maud; Ireland, The Easter Rising of 1916; Ireland, War of Independence

References and Further Reading

- Haverty, Anne. 1993. *Constance Markievicz: Irish Revolutionary*. New York: New York University.
- McCool, Síneád. 2000. *Guns and Chiffon: Women Revolutionaries and Kilmainham Goal 1916–1923*. Dublin: The Stationery Office.
- O'Faoláin, Sean. 1968. *Constance Markievicz, or The Average Revolutionary*. London: Sphere.
- Van Voris, Jacqueline. 1967. *Countess Markievicz: In the Cause of Ireland*. Amherst: University of Massachusetts.

MARKOVIC, MIRJANA (1941–)

Wife of Slobodan Milosevic, nationalist president of Serbia. Mirjana Markovic was the primary influence on Milosevic, who, as a result of the atrocities committed by Serbian forces during the Kosovo conflict, was indicted by the International War Crimes Tribunal for the Former Yugoslavia. On May 27, 1999, Milosevic was accused of being responsible for ordering the ethnic cleansing of the province and for the rape and murder committed by his troops. Milosevic's biographer, Slavoljub Djukic, said that Markovic, whom he regards as the most powerful woman in Serbian history, "invented" Milosevic (Glenny and Hanzic 1999, 13).

Markovic was the daughter of the unmarried secretary of the Belgrade District Communist Party, who was captured by the Germans and executed in 1942. Markovic was raised by an aunt who was a secretary to Tito, the founder of Communist Yugoslavia. When Mirjana was fifteen, Draza Markovic, a leading Yugoslav Communist, acknowledged that she was his daughter. Mirjana met Milosevic in secondary school and they married while they were students at the University of Belgrade. As a sociologist, she subsequently taught Marxist theory at the university. She is regarded as the force behind Milosevic's rise to power during the period from 1987 to 1990, when he became president of Serbia.

In 2003 the Serbian government issued an arrest warrant for Markovic, who had fled to Russia. The warrant was based on allegations of abuse of power during Milosevic's rule and suspicion of involvement in the murder of the former Serbian President Ivan Stambolic in 2000, shortly before Milosevic was ousted from power.

—Bernard Cook

See also Yugoslavia, Women and the Wars That Accompanied the Disintegration of Yugoslavia

References and Further Reading

- Glenny, Misha, and Edin Hanzic. "Serbia's Lady Macdeath." *Australian*, March 30, 1999.
 "Second Warrant Issued for Milosevic's Wife." *Edmonton (Alberta) Journal*, April 19, 2003.
 "Serbia-Montenegro Expects Russia to Extradite Milosevic Wife, Son." *Financial Times News Service*. June 20, 2003.

MARTIN, GRACE (N.D.), AND
 MARTIN, RACHEL (N.D.)

American patriots. The wives of American Revolutionary War soldiers who disguised themselves in their husbands' clothes, took up arms, and successfully intercepted a dispatch from British soldiers and handed it over to the American side.

Grace Waring Martin and Rachel Clay Martin endured the war at the home of their mother-in-law, Elizabeth Marshall Martin. The Martin house was located west of Charleston, South Carolina, along the border with the Cherokee nation. Their husbands were the eldest of the seven Martin sons who had all volunteered for service in the Continental Army.

In the absence of men, the women were subject to the abuses of Loyalists, who on one occasion cut open and scattered the feather beds of the house. The women had also provided a safe haven for an injured Continental soldier, hiding him from Loyalists who were searching for him. The fighting soon came close to home for the Martin women, first with the siege of the port of Augusta and afterward the fort at nearby Cambridge, also known as Fort Ninety-Six. Grace's husband, William, was killed during the siege of Augusta, and a British officer passing to Fort Ninety-Six, still under British possession, rode out to the Martin house to deliver the news in hopes that it would devastate the women.

The Martins received word one evening that a courier, guarded by two British officers, would

be passing through the area with an important dispatch. Rachel and Grace determined that they would intercept the message and hand it over to General Nathanael Greene. The women disguised themselves in their husbands' clothing, took weapons, and positioned themselves in the bushes at a point along the road where they knew the British party would pass. The women surprised the British and held them at gunpoint, gained their immediate surrender and the hand-over of the dispatch, then released them. The dispatch was sent by another messenger directly to General Greene.

Later that night the same three British men sought lodging for the night at the Martin home. The women, their disguises never revealed, offered their hospitality, listened to the men's story of being taken prisoner by two rebel boys, and showed the women their paroles. The men departed the next day, not knowing that these were the very women who had held them at gunpoint the night before.

—Kristen L. Rouse

See also American Revolution, Role of Women in the; Corbin, Margaret Cochrane; Fulton, Sarah Bradlee; Greene, Catharine Littlefield; Ludington, Sybil; Molly Pitcher; Samson, Deborah; Washington, Martha Dandridge Custis; Zane, Elizabeth

References and Further Reading

- Ellet, Elizabeth F. 1849. *The Women of the American Revolution*. 3rd ed. New York: Baker and Scribner.

MARTIN-NICHOLSON, MARY
 ELIZA LOUISE GRIPPER

See Conquest, Joan, pseud.

MATILDA OF TUSCANY

MATA HARI, PSEUD.
(MARGARETHA GERTRUIDA
MACLEOD, NÉE ZELLE)
(1876–1917)

Dutch exotic dancer and courtesan accused of spying for the Germans and executed by the French in 1917. Mata Hari, was born Margaretha Gertrud Zelle on August 7, 1876, at Leeuwarden in the Netherlands. She was the daughter of a Dutch shopkeeper, Adam Zelle, and his wife Antje van der Meulen. Margaretha Zelle was forced to leave a training school for kindergarten teachers after becoming romantically involved with the principal. When she was eighteen, she married a Dutch naval officer of Scottish ancestry stationed in the East Indies, Rudolph MacLeod, who was thirty-eight years old. Following the termination of this unsuccessful marriage, she moved to Paris, adopted the name Mata Hari, and began to perform as an exotic dancer. Her shows gained her widespread notoriety.

When World War I broke out, she was in Germany. Some have asserted that she was recruited there as a German spy by a lover, Traugott von Jagow. After returning to Paris, Mata Hari was placed under surveillance by the French. She fell deeply in love with a young Russian officer, Vladimir Masloff. After he was wounded she wished to visit him in the combat zone. She sought the intervention of Captain Georges Ladoux, who worked in French counterespionage, to obtain permission to travel to the war zone. Mata Hari, who was anxious to provide for herself and her young (and now disabled) Russian lover, was recruited by Ladoux to spy for France. She was to go to Belgium where it was hoped that her contacts would enable her to gain access to General Moritz Ferdinand von Bissing, the German in charge of the occupation of Belgium.

As she traveled to Belgium via Spain to neutral Holland, Mata Hari was detained during a stop at Falmouth, England. The British were looking for Clara Bendix, a German spy whom Mata Hari resembled. The British interrogated

her and, on instructions from the French, sent her to Spain. There Mata Hari, in need of money, reputedly had an affair with a German military attaché, Major Arnold Kalle. Some assert that Mata Hari was playing the role of a double agent at this point. In any case, Kalle sent a message, which he knew the British would intercept, stating that he had gained valuable information from Mata Hari, whom he identified as spy H-21.

When she returned to Paris, Mata Hari was arrested. She admitted taking money from Germans, but said that it was in return for her physical attention, not spying. Nevertheless, a closed court martial convicted her of spying, and she was executed by a firing squad on October 15, 1917. To the end, Mata Hari protested that she was innocent of spying for the Germans. She refused a blindfold and blew a kiss to her executioners before they fired.

—Bernard Cook

See also Cavell, Edith; Petit, Gabrielle

References and Further Reading

- Howe, Russell Warren. 1986. *Mata Hari: The True Story*. New York: Dodd, Mead.
Martini, Teri. 1990. *The Secret Is Out: True Spy Stories*. Boston: Little, Brown.
Ostrovsky, Erika. 1978. *Eye of Dawn: The Rise and Fall of Mata Hari*. New York: Macmillan.

MATILDA OF TUSCANY
(1046–1114)

Military leader in support of the papacy. Matilda, countess of Tuscany, is an almost unheard-of figure from the European Middle Ages—a woman whose fame is based primarily on her military role. She was the sole heiress of Count Boniface of Tuscany and his wife Beatrice of Lorraine. When her father was assassinated in 1053, Matilda became one of Europe's

greatest landholders. In 1076 she gained extensive territory on the northern side of the Alps when both her mother and her husband, Godfrey (the Hunchback of Lorraine) died. Matilda's northern Italian lands were especially important to the power of the German Salian emperors in Italy. Matilda was not only the most important imperial vassal in Italy, but her lands also guarded the route to Rome—control of the papacy was central to the policy of the Salian dynasty. When open war broke out between Emperor Henry IV and Pope Gregory VII in 1077, Matilda was in a position of great strategic importance. The conflict between papacy and empire, known as the Investiture Contest, raged through Germany and Italy for the rest of Matilda's lifetime and was only partially resolved in 1122. It would not have lasted so long nor ended in the centralization of church power under the papacy had it not been for Matilda.

Matilda was a staunch supporter of Gregory VII and his successors. When relations between pope and emperor first deteriorated early in 1077, she mediated between the two at her castle in Canossa. The resulting peace broke down, after which Matilda provided Gregory with military support. Her most important role was in the defense of Tuscany, preventing Henry IV from reaching Rome and denying him supplies and soldiers from her dominions. Matilda appears to have kept active control of her military instead of delegating the fighting to a male commander; contemporary chroniclers marveled at her "man-like" devotion to the papal cause. She was one of the few medieval women to personally lead an army. Henry IV succeeded in driving Gregory VII from Rome and establishing an "antipope" in his place. In 1087 Matilda marched against the antipope and drove him from Rome. Although she did not personally go on the campaign, in the same year the countess also played a major role in planning the Italian assault on Mahdia, a notable center for piracy in northern Africa.

Matilda remained loyal to the papacy until her death, even after her second husband, Welf

of Bavaria, joined the Imperial party in 1096. Finally, the childless Matilda willed her personal lands to the Roman church, a bequest that helped the papacy continue its struggle to centralize religious authority in Christendom.

—Phyllis G. Jestice

See also Eleanor of Aquitaine

References and Further Reading:

- Eads, Valerie. 2002. The Geography of Power: Matilda of Tuscany and the Strategy of Active Defense. In *Crusaders, Condottieri, and Cannon: Medieval Warfare in the Mediterranean Region*. Edited by J. L. Andrew Villalon and Donald Kagay. Leiden, Netherlands: Brill.
- Robinson, Ian S. 1999. *Henry IV of Germany, 1056–1106*. Cambridge, UK : Cambridge University.

MAU MAU REBELLION,
WOMEN IN THE

Role of women in the struggle for Kenyan independence. During the 1950s an anticolonial struggle took place in Kenya between Africans who had been colonized by the British. The causes of the revolt dated back to the very early days of colonial occupation. From 1895, when Kenya was declared to be a crown colony of Great Britain, Africans were dispossessed of their land, forced to pay taxes to the new colonial state, and compelled to become low-paid laborers for European settlers and various government enterprises. In addition to economic and political changes, the colonial government, often encouraged by European missionaries, introduced social changes that supplanted customary laws affecting marriage, education, inheritance, land ownership, and religious practices. By the end of World War II a vigorous nationalist movement had emerged in Kenya.

This movement was connected to the continent-wide anticolonial movement because Africans in the colonized areas were eager to eliminate European hegemonic control of their politics, economies, and cultures. Kenya was also one of the African colonies that, like Algeria, South Africa, Mozambique, Angola, Namibia, and Guinea-Bissau, had been established as a white settler colony. The presence of white settlers added a special dynamic to colonialism in Kenya. Because the government was controlled by its European settler population, with the exception of South Africa, there was more race-based discrimination in Kenya than in other British colonies. In fact, the conditions in Kenya were very similar to the apartheid conditions in South Africa, where black Africans were forced to carry passes in order to be outside of their assigned areas, were socially segregated, barred from jobs that were reserved for Europeans and Asian immigrants, and unlike Europeans in Kenya, were unable to participate in politics through voting.

The nationalist movement, led by Harry Thuku, Peter Koinange, and Jomo Kenyatta, began shortly after World War I. Leading both rural and urban dissidents, these nationalists established political associations—the East African Association (1920s), the Kikuyu Central Association (1925–1940), the Kenya African Union (KAU; 1944–1951), and the Land and Freedom Army (1950s)—which eventually became broad-based grassroots coalitions. The Land and Freedom Army was commonly known as the Mau Mau movement. During the first thirty years of the nationalist movement, the political associations utilized several strategies to affect social and political change. These included petitioning the government for lower taxes, improved education, and an end to race-based discrimination in voting, land ownership, and employment. The groups also used mass protests and labor strikes. Two decades of associational politics yielded little change. During World War II, even these moderate African political associations were banned

by the British government, which argued that their existence would aid the German war effort. After World War II Africans turned to more militant tactics and the the Land and Freedom Army rebellion began. The goals of the Mau Mau movement were to regain land and achieve freedom from Great Britain. The tactics of the Mau Mau fighters included armed insurgency, which had not been seen in Kenya since the first resistance to colonial occupation had ended.

In the late 1940s African militants began to take oaths that required initiates to swear to be loyal to their fellow black Africans, to maintain the secrets of the organization, and to fight Europeans. Because of widespread inductions, mass meetings, and attacks on African loyalists and Europeans, the government declared a state of emergency in October 1952. Thousands of African men and women fled to the forests and established Mau Mau guerilla bases. Over 10,000 Africans lost their lives during the rebellion. Many more were imprisoned during the war that lasted from 1952 until 1956. Although military operations ended in 1956, men and women rebels remained in detention up until 1959 when the imprisonment system ended.

From the beginning of the nationalist movement until the final release of detainees in 1959, women were very much involved in the nationalist movement and its more militant arm, the Mau Mau movement. Their involvement had begun in the 1930s when they established the Mumbi Central Association, a women's nationalist organization. Mumbi Central was created because male nationalists excluded women from participating in the most prominent nationalist organization, the Kikuyu Central Association. After 1933 the Mumbi Central Association merged with the Kikuyu Central Association; this set a precedent that is still visible in Kenya's political parties of having a women's wing and prominent women members of political organizations. In the 1950s women who fought in the independence movement laid the groundwork for the

subsequent involvement of women, such as Wangari Maathai, a noted environmentalist and activist in Kenya and winner of the 2004 Nobel Peace Prize for her work in national and local politics.

From the 1950s women participated in all phases of the anticolonial war. They joined the secret Mau Mau organization that emerged after 1948. The new recruits were required to take an oath of loyalty. Though swearing to abide by a solemn promise was traditionally reserved for males, when the Mau Mau movement began women also took oaths and were often able to administer oaths to male and female recruits. Female Mau Mau adherents, by giving and taking oaths, were therefore breaking an important gender barrier from their introduction to the movement.

Gender barriers were also broken in the area of leadership roles and combat roles. The women's wing of Mau Mau had a prominent female leader, Rebecca Njeri Kari. Another leader, Wambui Waiyaki (later Otieno), developed a network of women spies who gathered data on British installations and operations. At the district and village level women also emerged as leaders. During the rebellion, British political and military forces arrested, imprisoned, and detained Mau Mau leadership and rank-and-file members. Women were among those who were arrested and detained. Prominent women leaders, including Kari, Waiyaki, and Wambui Wangarama, spent years in prison for their political beliefs.

The British likewise imprisoned thousands of women because they were armed combatants, as well as noncombatants who performed support functions for the rebels who lived in guerilla camps in the inaccessible forest zones in Kenya's Central Province. Many other women experienced short-term detention and interrogation because they were Mau Mau rebels or accused of being Mau Mau rebels. A special prison wing was built to hold them. Hardcore prisoners were deported to prisons in coastal areas. During their imprisonment, detainees experienced

abuses that included physical assault, sexual assault, food deprivation, and other acts of torture. These became so infamous that the British Parliament investigated and reformed the system toward the end of 1959.

Outside of the prisons, the Mau Mau rebellion was ultimately crushed in 1954 through massive roundups, interrogations, and a program of "villagization." Villagization involved the destruction of traditional villages and the forced relocation of the Kikuyu population to new villages that were surrounded by barbed wire fences and armed guards. Although the villagization policy had the ostensible goal of land consolidation, its real aim was to cut off the support Mau Mau rebels obtained from village populations. A crucial part of that support comprised the network of women who smuggled food and arms to the rebel camps in the forested areas of the three Kikuyu districts.

After the war, like other African colonies Kenya was able to gain its independence. The British government spent millions of pounds repressing the rebellion and was rocked by a scandal involving the murder of political detainees. In addition, other British colonies experienced vigorous populist-based nationalist movements. For Kenya, the failed Mau Mau rebellion was a key factor. Although the rebels lost and thousands were killed, the surviving rebels and others credited the movement with being the impetus for negotiations for independence that began in 1960. Jomo Kenyatta, who was the leader of the KAU organization and alleged to be the leader of Mau Mau by the British, was released from detention in August 1961; when independence was achieved in 1963, Kenyatta became the head of the new African government of Kenya. The new government acknowledged women's roles in the nationalist struggle. Although the new regime did not reform laws that disadvantaged women, some were able to assume political roles such as running for office on the district and national level. They also gained the right to own property and to serve in the military. Thus, the legacy of women's partic-

ipation in the struggle resulted in a shift in traditional gender roles and laid the basis for social and political change in contemporary Kenya.

—Cora Ann Presley

See also Algeria, Women in the War of National Liberation; Eritrea, Women and the Struggle for Independence; Mandela, Winnie

References and Further Reading

- Kabira, Wanjiku M., and Nzioki, Elizabeth A. 1993. *Celebrating Women's Resistance: A Case Study of Women's Groups Movement in Kenya*. Nairobi, Kenya: African Women's Perspective.
- Kanogo, Tabitha M. 1987. Kikuyu Women and the Politics of Protest: Mau. Pages 78–99 in *Images of Women in Peace and War, Cross-Cultural Historical Perspectives*. Edited by Sharon Macdonald, Pat Holder, and Shirley Ardener. Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.
- Nzomo, Maria. 1997. Kenya: The Women's Movements and Democratic Change. Pages 167–184 in *The African State at a Critical Juncture: Between Disintegration and Reconfiguration*. Edited by Leonardo Villalon and Phillip Huxtable. Boulder, CO: Lynne Rienner Publishers.
- Otieno, Wambui W. 1998. *Mau Mau's Daughter: The Life History of Wambui Waiyaki Otieno*. Edited by Cora A. Presley. Boulder, CO: Lynne Rienner Publishers.
- Presley, Cora A. 1992. *Kikuyu Women the Mau Mau Rebellion and Social Change in Kenya*. Boulder, CO: Westview.
- . 2002. Gender and Political Struggle in Kenya, 1948–1998. Pages 173–188 in *Stepping Forward: Black Women in Africa and the Americas*. Edited by Catherine Higgs, Barbara A. Moss, and Erline R. Ferguson. Athens: Ohio University Press.
- White, Luise. 1990. "Separating the Men from the Boys: Constructions of Gender Sexuality and Terrorism in Central Kenya, 1939–1959." *International Journal of African Historical Studies*. 23(1):1–25.
- Wipper, Audrey. 1989. "Kikuyu Women and the Harry Thuku Disturbances: Some Uniformities of Female Militancy." *Africa*, 59(3):330–337.

MCCARTHY, EMMA MAUD
(1858–1949)

Matron-in-Chief of the British Armies, 1915–1918. Emma Maud McCarthy, the daughter of a solicitor, was born in Sydney, New South Wales, in 1859. She was educated at Springfield College and the University of Sydney. In 1891 she went to England and trained as a nurse at Whitechapel London Hospital. During the Boer War, Princess Alexandria chose McCarthy and five other nurses from the London Hospital to go to South Africa as her military nurses. At the end of the war, McCarthy returned to London, having served with distinction. In London she was involved in the establishment of Queen Alexandria's Imperial Military Nursing Service and served as matron at the Netley, Aldershot, and Millbank military hospitals.

In 1910 McCarthy was appointed principal matron at the British War Office. In that capacity she sailed to France in August 1914 with the first ship transporting the British Expeditionary Force. In 1915 she was appointed Matron-in-Chief in charge of all British military nurses. She retained that position throughout the war and returned to England only once while recuperating from an appendectomy. Her organizational skill and energy were remarkable. By 1918 she was in charge of administering a nursing force of some 6,500.

After the war, Maud McCarthy served for five years as Matron-in-Chief of the Territorial Army Nursing Service before retiring.

—Bernard Cook

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I

References and Further Reading

- "Maud McCarthy." www.barbazon.org.uk/barb47.htm (accessed November 30, 2004).

McDOUGALL, GRACE
ASHLEY-SMITH
(1889–1963)

Commandant of the British First Aid Nursing Yeomanry (FANY). Grace McDougall was instrumental in reorganizing the FANY corps for overseas service in World War I. She was decorated by the British with the 1914 Star, by the French with the Croix de Guerre, and by the Belgians as a member of the Order of the Crown, the Order of Queen Elizabeth, and as a Knight of Leopold II.

McDougall, the first member of FANY at the front lines, began as a nurse in Antwerp, Belgium. She worked under constant bombardment and frequently went into the trenches to rescue wounded soldiers. In the Allied retreat from Antwerp, McDougall fell behind German lines while helping a sick English officer. She succeeded in escaping German capture and slipped across the Dutch border to safety.

Back in England, McDougall unsuccessfully petitioned the War Office to get a FANY unit accepted for service. She finally offered the unit to the Belgians. In October 1914 she established the first FANY hospital at Calais in addition to dressing station at Oostkirke, one mile behind the trenches. She later established a typhoid hospital, a convalescent camp for British soldiers, and a convoy of ambulance drivers for the British Red Cross.

—Barbara Penny Kanner

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I; Stobart, Mabel

References and Further Reading

- McDougall, Grace. 1917. *Nursing Adventures: A F.A.N.Y. in France*. London: W. Heinemann.
- Popham, Hugh. 2003. *The F.A.N.Y. in Peace and War: The Story of the First Aid Women's Yeomanry, 1907–2003*. Barnsley, UK: Leo Cooper, Pen and Sword.

McDOWELL, MARY STONE
(1876–1955)

New York City public school teacher dismissed during World War I due to her pacifist beliefs. Born on March 22, 1876, in Jersey City, New Jersey, Mary McDowell was the daughter of birthright members of the Society of Friends (Quakers). At sixteen she entered the Quaker Swarthmore College. She excelled academically, was Phi Beta Kappa, and won a Lucretia Mott Fellowship for postgraduate studies at Oxford University. After spending a year as a home student in the Association for the Education of Women at Oxford, McDowell returned to the United States where she taught at the Friends' Academy on Long Island. During this period she also received a master's degree in classical languages and education from Columbia University Teachers College.

In February 1905 McDowell received a permanent appointment as a teacher of Latin and Greek in the New York public school system. In April 1917, when the United States entered World War I, the New York board of education demanded that all teachers promote patriotism and demonstrate loyalty to the war effort. McDowell immediately joined the newly established Women's Peace Party, led by prominent women Jane Addams, Emily Greene Balch, and Alice Hamilton. Though opposed to the war on religious grounds, McDowell was careful not to interrupt classroom learning. She did not call on her students to write letters, nor did she publicly criticize government leaders or school officials. When given directives to sign a loyalty pledge, raise money in class to support the war effort, and teach patriotic citizenship, McDowell quietly refused to participate. She felt strongly that her Quaker beliefs would be protected under the principle of academic freedom.

On January 10, 1918, McDowell was summoned before the New York City board of superintendents. Despite years of favorable classroom evaluations, McDowell's supervising principal reported to district officials that she refused to

support all school programs favoring the war effort. In late January the board recommended that McDowell be suspended from her teaching duties. The board decided that McDowell's ability to carry out her duties had been seriously affected by her conscientious objection to war. On April 18, 1918, McDowell was formally notified that charges of conduct unbecoming a teacher had been filed against her. On June 19, 1918, by a vote of 4 to 0, the New York City board of education formally dismissed her.

McDowell believed that her firing had raised important civil liberties issues, especially with respect to her religious beliefs. She appealed her case to the New York state court of appeals. New York's highest court sided with school officials, ruling that an essential part of a teacher's job is to promote patriotic citizenship, especially in time of war. McDowell did not return to the classroom until June 1923, when, long after the war's hyperpatriotism had dissipated, the city's board of education reinstated her. The board maintained that the initial punishment was too severe and the product of public hysteria. She continued to teach until her retirement in 1943.

McDowell never abandoned the Quaker "inner spirit" of peace. When World War II broke out, McDowell helped establish the Pacifist Teachers' League in 1940. Until her death on December 6, 1955, McDowell's nonviolent resistance was expressed in a unique way. She mailed to the Internal Revenue Service only that amount of her required taxes not spent for war preparation. Her action antedated the War Tax Resistance Movement of the Vietnam antiwar protests.

Her contribution to women and war lies primarily in her willingness to risk her job and career in the name of freedom of conscience. Her legal battle represented the first in American history involving public pressures of patriotic loyalty versus female pacifism inside the schoolhouse gates. She was the first female pacifist teacher to legally challenge a state's educational authority during wartime.

—Charles F. Howlett

See also Addams, Jane; Balch, Emily Green; Catt, Carrie Chapman; Curtis, Cathrine; Dilling, Elizabeth; Mead, Lucia Ames

References and Further Reading

- Beale, Howard K. 1936. *Are American Teachers Free?* New York: Scribner's and Sons.
- Curtis, Anna L. 1960. *Mary Stone McDowell: A Biographical Sketch*. New York: Society of Friends.
- Howlett, Charles F. 1994. "Quaker Conscience in the Classroom: The Mary S. McDowell Case." *Quaker History*, 83 (Fall): 99–115.
- Kennedy, Kathleen. 1999. *Disloyal Mothers and Scurrilous Citizens: Women and Subversion during World War I*. Bloomington: Indiana University.

McGEE, ANITA NEWCOMB
(1864–1940)

Acting assistant surgeon general of the United States during the Spanish-American War; helped establish a permanent Army Corps of Nurses; and volunteered as a nurse in the Russo-Japanese War. Anita Newcomb was born on November 4, 1864, in Washington, D.C. In 1888 she married a scientist, William John McGee, with whom she had three children. In 1892 she received her M.D. from Columbian University (now George Washington University) and then undertook postgraduate studies in gynecology at Johns Hopkins University. She stopped practicing medicine in 1896 and took on a series of leadership positions in organizations including the Daughters of the American Revolution (DAR).

When the United States declared war on Spain in 1898, McGee, as chairman of the DAR Hospital Corps, devised a method for her committee to screen all applicants seeking work as nurses for the U.S. Army. Overwhelmed by applications, Surgeon General

George M. Sternberg accepted McGee's plan. He established a Nurse Corps Division and appointed McGee acting assistant surgeon general that August. Instead of endorsing a volunteer ethic, McGee emphasized the importance of formal training. At the same time she pragmatically recruited "immunes" (individuals who had survived yellow fever and thus had developed an immunity), even those without medical training, along with graduate nurses. Her stance brought her into conflict both with the American Red Cross and with the recently organized Nurses' Associated Alumnae, a national group of professional nurses.

McGee subsequently worked to recognize and formalize contract nurses' contributions to the war effort. She helped to form the Society of Spanish-American War Nurses and for six years she served as its president. She also lobbied extensively to establish a permanent U.S. Army Nurse Corps, which was finally accomplished through passage of the Army Reorganization Act of 1901. McGee joined a group of Spanish-American War veterans and nursed Japanese troops during the Russo-Japanese War (1904–1905). Japan gave her an officer's rank and awarded her the Imperial Order of the Sacred Crown in recognition for her service.

Afterward McGee withdrew to private life. She died in Washington, D.C., on October 5, 1940, and was buried in Arlington National Cemetery with full military honors.

—Laura R. Prieto

See also Barton, Clara; Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War I; Spanish-American War, Women and the

References and Further Reading

- Dearing, Mary R. 1971. McGee, Anita Newcomb. Pages 464–466 in *Notable American Women*. Vol. 2. Edited by Edward T. James. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University.
- Sarnecky, Mary. 1999. *A History of the United States Army Nurse Corps*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania.

MCWR

See United States, Marine Corps Women's Reserve

MEAD, LUCIA AMES (1856–1936)

Teacher, advocate, organizer, and historian in the U.S. peace movement's effort to replace war with international arbitration. Lucia Ames was born in Boscawen, New Hampshire, on May 5, 1856, attended high school at Salem, Massachusetts, and received private instruction at the college level. She then studied literature, philosophy, and history on her own. While working in her twenties as a piano teacher, she wrote and published essays on progressive subjects and was a popular lecturer in the Boston area. She wrote a novel, *Memoirs of a Millionaire*, that included advocacy for causes such as housing, educational reform, and interracial justice. She joined the movement for women's suffrage, became a notable activist, and contributed articles to Lucy Stone's *Woman's Journal*. At the age of forty she was introduced to the arbitration effort of the peace movement and soon became a leading figure. That became her principal interest during the next forty years.

Ames and her colleagues believed they had found an alternative to war through third-party settlement of disputes by arbitration. The idea had become a popular objective after the success of the administration of U.S. president Ulysses Grant in settling the post-Civil War's *Alabama* claims with Great Britain by arbitration. A tribunal of arbitration in Geneva after the American Civil War had judged that Great Britain had violated its neutrality by allowing the confederate raider, *Alabama*, to be constructed and sail from Birkenhead. The tribunal had awarded the United States \$15.5 million for damages inflicted by the *Alabama* and other

confederate raiders, and Great Britain paid. Twenty annual meetings devoted to international arbitration began in 1895 at Mohonk Mountain House in New York state. Notable guests participated, including U.S. Supreme Court justices. Ames was invited to the 1897 meeting. She was accompanied by an acquaintance interested in the movement, Edwin A. Mead, a writer and editor. Ames prepared and delivered a lecture on methods for making the cause known and attracting adherents.

At Mohonk, the friendship with Mead ripened into affection, nourished by their mutual interest in activism for arbitration. Within a year they were married. Their lives together were committed to peace and arbitration.

The war with Spain began soon after her marriage and was followed by the sending of U.S. troops to suppress the Philippine liberation movement.

Mead was vice-president of the U.S. "Anti-Imperialist League" that sought to end the military action and support independence for the islands. Her writings for the arbitration movement include an article, "International Police," that gave early recognition of the importance of sanctions (and armed intervention, if needed) to compel arbitration or compliance with its outcome. In her 1906 book, *Patriotism and the New Internationalism*, Lucia Mead linked peace and arbitration and offered ideas for teaching and promoting peace through arbitration.

Mead did not surrender when World War I made their cause seem hopeless. She was an organizer of the Woman's Peace Party, later called the Women's International League for Peace and Freedom. Continuing her work in the 1920s Lucia Mead published her last book, *Law or War*, in 1928, updating her 1912 work, *Swords and Ploughshares; or, The Supplanting of the System of War by the System of Law*. Adjudication among nations by the present World Court was recognized in *The World Court in Action* (Meyer 2002) as fruit of the U.S. arbitration movement.

—Howard N. Meyer

See also Addams, Jane; Balch, Emily Green; Catt, Carrie Chapman; Curtis, Cathrine; Dilling, Elizabeth; International Congress of Women: Antiwar Protest of Women in World War I; McDowell, Mary Stone

References and Further Reading

- Craig, John M. 1990. *Lucia Ames Mead (1856–1936) and the American Peace Movement*. New York: E. Mellen Press.
- Kuehl, Warren F. 1960. *Seeking World Order*. Nashville, TN: Vanderbilt University.
- Meyer, Howard N. 2002. *The World Court in Action: Judging among the Nations*. Lanham, MD: Rowman and Littlefield.

MEDICAL SPECIALIST CORPS: U.S. WOMEN IN MILITARY SERVICE, WORLD WAR II

Dieticians, and physical and occupational therapists serving during World War II under the U.S. Army Medical Department. Approximately 1,643 dieticians and more than 1,600 physical therapists served worldwide, while more than 900 occupational therapists served in stateside Army hospitals. Physical therapists were assigned to stateside Army hospitals and overseas to general, station, convalescent, and field hospitals, all of which followed troop movements, as well as to the Army hospital ships USS *Acadia* and *Seminole*. Dieticians served in stateside and overseas hospitals in all theaters of the war, and 42 dieticians were assigned to 25 hospital ships.

Until December 1942, all specialists served as civilian employees of the Army Medical Department with no rank or benefits. This status changed, however, when Public Law 77–828 authorized relative rank for the length of the war plus six months for dieticians and physical therapists assigned overseas. All initial appointments were made in the grade of second lieutenant. Beginning in May 1943, specialists could be

promoted after eighteen months of satisfactory service and a recommendation. There were a few male physical therapists working in stateside Army hospitals, but because Public Law 77–828 applied only to women, these men were assigned as enlisted. The status of dieticians and physical therapists changed again in June 1944 with Public Law 78–350, which granted them full commissioned status with the same rights, allowances, benefits, and privileges given to other commissioned officers.

Occupational therapists served in seventy-six general and convalescent hospitals in the United States, where they treated patients who were transferred to recover from amputations; loss of hearing or sight; neuropsychiatric conditions; or orthopedic, nerve, or spinal cord injuries. Because occupational therapists did not need to be assigned overseas, the surgeon general stated that they would not need the protection under international law provided by military status, and they continued to serve with civilian status.

Dieticians and physical therapists who served overseas frequently faced a shortage of supplies, food, and water, and were often forced to improvise their equipment. Where they worked depended on the area and could range from former civilian hospitals to cantonment-type buildings, hotels, museums, or tents. Physical therapists assisted patients recovering from a variety of war wounds including nerve, brain, spinal cord, orthopedic, and thoracic injuries. Physical therapist Lieutenant Metta Baxter, who served at the 21st General Hospital in Italy, was the first physical therapist to receive the Legion of Merit for her exceptional service in the North African campaigns of July to September 1943. In addition to feeding the soldiers in their hospitals, dieticians also provided a variety of therapeutic and special needs diets. Three dieticians and one physical therapist were held as prisoners of war by the Japanese in the Santo Tomas Internment Camp in the Philippines for almost three years. Public Law 80–36 established the three specialties, largely because of

their service in World War II, as the Women's Medical Specialist Corps within the regular army on March 24, 1947.

—Kara D. Vuic

See also Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War II

References and Further Reading

- Anderson, Robert S., Harriet S. Lee, and Myra L. McDaniel, eds. 1968. *Army Medical Specialist Corps*. Washington, DC: Office of the Surgeon General, Department of the Army.
- Hartwick, Ann M. Ritchie. 1995. *The Army Medical Specialist Corps: The 45th Anniversary*. Washington, DC: Center of Military History, United States Army.

MEIR, GOLDA (NÉE GOLDA MABOVITZ) (1898–1978)

Israeli diplomat, politician, and prime minister. Born in Kiev, Russia, on May 3, 1898, Golda Mabovitz was one of eight children, five of whom died in childhood. Her father immigrated to the United States in 1903, and the rest of the family joined him in Milwaukee in 1906. Golda did well in school and studied to be a teacher. Inspired by her sister Sheyna, she joined the Zionist movement and became a delegate to the American Jewish Congress. She married Morris Myerson in 1917 and during World War I volunteered to join the Jewish Legion, an armed unit recruited among Jews to fight for Britain in the Middle East. The Legion had no use for women, but in 1921 the Myersons, nevertheless, moved to Palestine.

The Myersons worked on a kibbutz and Golda became active in the *Histadrut*, Israel's labor movement. She joined its executive in 1934 and helped raise funds internationally for Jewish settlement. Before Israel's War of Independence (1948), she twice met secretly with Jordan's

King Abdullah in an unsuccessful effort to prevent war. During the war, she traveled to the United States and raised \$50 million for the new state. Because of this experience, Prime Minister David Ben-Gurion sent her to Moscow as Israel's ambassador.

Elected to parliament in 1949 as a member of the labor party (*Mapai*), Ben-Gurion appointed Meir minister of labor. A strong and decisive leader, her greatest task was finding housing and jobs for the thousands of Jewish refugees arriving from Europe and the Arab nations each week. Ben-Gurion, who once called her "The only man in my cabinet," appointed her Israel's foreign minister in 1956. At Ben-Gurion's urging, she adopted the Hebrew last name Meir (to burn brightly). She held the post of foreign minister until 1965, gaining international fame as one of the few women to hold a prominent position in international affairs. She worked both to strengthen Israel's ties to the United States and with the new nations of Africa to which she dispatched a series of aid missions.

The ruling labor party appointed Meir prime minister following the death of Levi Eshkol on February 26, 1969. Meir's efforts to trade land gained in the 1967 war for peace proved futile. Instead, she presided over one of the most war-filled periods in Israeli history. Terrorist attacks and cross-border raids on Israel increased, and skirmishing with Egypt across the Suez Canal escalated into the War of Attrition, which lasted through August 1970. The following month Syria invaded Jordan to support a Palestinian rebellion but withdrew its forces after Meir threatened to attack Syria. Tensions with Egypt and Syria increased steadily and produced several invasion scares. The morning of October 6, 1973, Israel's director of intelligence warned that an attack was imminent. Meir rejected an air force proposal to attack first as Israel had in 1967. That afternoon Egyptian forces crossed the Suez Canal in overwhelming force and drove back the surprised Israeli army. On the Golan Heights, desperate fighting narrowly averted a Syrian invasion of the Israeli heartland. Israeli counterof-

fensives defeated both Arab armies, and a U.S.-imposed cease-fire ended the war on October 24.

Despite winning the war, the early setbacks, heavy casualties, and rumors that she had considered using nuclear weapons tarnished Meir's administration. She resigned on June 3, 1974, and returned to private life. She died December 8, 1978 in Jerusalem after a fifteen-year battle with leukemia.

—Stephen K. Stein

See also Arab-Israeli Wars; Israeli Military, Women in the

References and Further Reading

- Mann, Peggy. 1971. *Golda: The Life of Israel's Prime Minister*. New York: Coward, McCann and Geoghegan.
- Martin, Ralph G. 1988. *Golda Meir, the Romantic Years*. New York: Scribner.
- Meir, Golda. 1975. *My Life*. New York: Putnam.

MEISEL, HILDA

See Monte, Hilda

MEISELAS, SUSAN (1948–)

American photojournalist noted for her documentary photographs of conflicts in Nicaragua, El Salvador, Chile, and Kurdistan. Susan Meiselas received international acclaim as a result of photographs she took in Nicaragua during the 1978–1979 Sandinista revolution. During this time Nicaragua was a country embroiled in revolution as the Sandinista National Liberation Front (FSLN) fought to overthrow the government of Anastasio Somoza Dabayle. These images essentially launched her

MERCY SHIP

career as a photojournalist and captured the attention of audiences worldwide. As one reviewer put it, during this year, “Nicaragua held the news and Susan Meiselas held the negatives” (Shames 1981, 42).

Meiselas did not go to Central America on assignment that year, but rather went to Nicaragua to “look around” after hearing about the potentially volatile political situation. When the popular uprising began in the city of Matagalpa during the summer of 1978, she was there to photograph it, and the resulting images were published in newspapers and magazines around the globe. Such international publications as *Geo*, *The New York Times Magazine*, and *Paris Match* ran her photographs alongside reportage of the revolution. Her use of color film to record scenes of violence and conflict at a time when most photojournalists still preferred to work with black-and-white images added a sense of urgency to these images that heightened their graphic quality.

The Sandinista revolution was extremely bloody and violent—at least 40,000 people lost their lives during the year of fighting and many more were left injured and homeless. In a country of just over 4 million people, the revolution affected every citizen in one way or another. On July 19, 1979, the FSLN emerged victorious; as they claimed the capital city of Managua, President Somoza fled the country, taking refuge in the United States. This victory was celebrated by thousands in Managua’s central plaza and by tens of thousands around the world as Meiselas’s images defined the conflict for an international audience.

In 1981 Meiselas published a book of photographs made during the revolution entitled *Nicaragua: June 1978–July 1979* (New York, Pantheon). In 1991 she produced *Pictures from a Revolution*, a documentary film in which she returned to spots she photographed during the 1978–1979 uprising. Other publications and projects by Meiselas include: *Carnival Strippers* (1976), *El Salvador: The Work of Thirty Photographers* (1983), *Chile from Within* (1991), *Kur-*

distan: In the Shadow of History (1997), and *Pandora’s Box* (1999).

Susan Meiselas became a full member of the internationally-renowned photographic cooperative Magnum in 1980. Her photojournalism has won her numerous awards including the Robert Capa Gold Medal for her photographs of the Nicaraguan revolution; the Leica Award for Excellence (1982); American Society of Magazine Photographers Photojournalist of the Year (1982); the McArthur Fellowship (1992); and the Hasselblad Prize (1994).

—J. Keri Cronin

See also Bonney, Therese; Bublely, Esther; Chapelle, Dickey; Lange, Dorothea

References and Further Reading

- Franck, Martine, Eve Arnold, Susan Meiselas, Inge Morath, Marilyn Silverstone, and Lise Sarfati. 1999. *Magna Brava: Magnum’s Women Photographers*. Munich: Prestel.
- Shames, Laurence. 1981. “Susan Meiselas.” *American Photographer* 6:42–49.

MERCY SHIP

The nickname given the USS *Red Cross*, a ship that carried American medical units to Europe in September 1914 to care for the sick and wounded in the first year of World War I. The United States remained politically neutral from the beginning of the war in 1914 until April 1917 and through this neutrality offered medical assistance to all belligerent nations. Long before the U.S. government declared war and mobilized its medical service along with the U.S. Expeditionary Forces, there were small groups of American volunteers, mainly female nurses, providing medical care across Europe.

The War Relief Board of the American Red Cross (ARC) met in early August 1914 and de-

cided to offer units made up of three doctors and twelve nurses each, along with equipment and supplies, to any country involved in the fighting. A call went out to ARC chapters for volunteers from the pool of nurses who had already registered with the organization.

Nurses were required to be natural-born U.S. citizens, pass a physical examination, have smallpox and typhoid vaccinations, and commit for a six-month period. Immediately after the initial meeting, ARC-enrolled nurses began receiving their notices to start processing, obtain inoculations, and travel to New York City, where they were mobilized, receiving their equipment and uniforms. The entire group sailed on September 13, 1914, with units designated for Austria, England, France, Germany, Hungary, and Russia. Another unit, headed for Serbia, departed a few days earlier but was considered part of the same mission of mercy.

Some units were assigned to existing military hospitals, while others had to completely set up hospitals in schools, theaters, casinos, and country estates. Most treated large numbers of patients, many with serious injuries, with very low mortality rates. Although some of the doctors and nurses returned home after their six-month commitment, the units were in place for almost one full year before being recalled on October 1, 1915. Many of the doctors and nurses stayed in Europe when the year was up and continued to work on a volunteer basis with the ARC or other relief or medical organizations.

Medical units sponsored by the American Red Cross continued to travel to the war zone over the next few years, offering much needed medical care to soldiers and the affected civilian population, but those on the Mercy Ship were the first to be of service in the “war to end all wars.”

—*Katherine Burger Johnson*

See also Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War I; Red Cross of the United States: World War I and World War II

References and Further Reading

- American National Red Cross. 1915. *Tenth Annual Report of the American National Red Cross for the Year 1914*. Washington, DC: American Red Cross.
- Dock, Lavinia L., et al. 1922. *A History of American Red Cross Nursing*. New York: Macmillan.
- Kernodle, Portia. n.d. *The Red Cross Nurse in Action, 1882–1948*. New York: Harper and Brothers.
- Volk, Katherine. 1936. *Buddies in Budapest*, Los Angeles: Kellaway-Ide.

MEXICAN AMERICAN WOMEN
AND WORLD WAR II

Contribution of women of Mexican ancestry to the war effort of the United States during World War II and the impact of war work on their self-perception. The drafting of males resulted in a shortage of male workers and led to the mobilization of women in order to meet the high demand of wartime production. The Mexican American counterpart to the wartime image of Rosie the Riveter can be imagined as Rosita the Riveter. In the Southwest and Midwest regions of the United States, Mexican American women labored as riveters, welders, airplane mechanics, farm workers, vegetable packers, seamstresses, nurses, secretaries, shipbuilders, and crane operators, and built tanks, trucks, bombs, and ammunition.

The overwhelming response to the initial call for women workers signified women’s desire to do their part for the war effort, but many women were equally anxious to take advantage of the wages that war work offered them. Women also often needed to supplement family income due to the absence of husbands serving in the military. Mrs. Henrietta Rivas of San Antonio, who had made \$1.50 per week cleaning houses,

MEXICAN AMERICAN WOMEN IN WORLD WAR II

“In the Valley there were these packing sheds where they packed tomatoes and lettuce . . . there were not enough men to work so they started hiring women. So that is when it started to change a little more in women’s lives. They were calling from the government for women to go and work in the factories . . . then they started calling women into the army. And first it was like, oh my goodness, *dios mio*, how can these women go over there by themselves? Everybody was shocked because we were not used to seeing women leave the house. You didn’t leave the house until you were married. With *senoritas*, everything was so strict and then came this change . . . and I think that was wonderful because it opened a new world for women. It showed that women can be independent. This was a real break for women.”

—Interview with Aurora Orozco, Cuero, Texas,
U.S. Latino and Latina World War II Oral History Project, July 31, 2004.
Contributed by Brenda Sendejo.

earned \$90 a month as a civil service interpreter (Interview with Henrietta Rivas, San Antonio, Texas, U.S. Latino and Latina World War II Oral History Project, June 12, 1999).

Women’s entrance into defense work shattered previously established gender roles. The onset of the war provided expanded choices for Mexican American women who did not typically work outside of the home and lived amidst a structured set of traditional Mexican values and beliefs. At age nineteen Aurora Orozco went to work at a vegetable packing shed in Mercedes, Texas. She was only allowed by her parents to do this because of the wartime need for workers (Interview with Aurora Orozco, Cuero, Texas, U.S. Latino and Latina World War II Oral History Project, July 31, 2004). Once women acquired new skills, they began realizing their potential and gained independence. As Vicky Ruiz explains, “Women were claiming places for themselves and their families in the U.S. while ‘confronting America’” (Ruiz 1998, xv).

After the war ended, women were told that their patriotic duty was to return to their homes. Although many Mexican American women found satisfaction from their war jobs and car-

ried them out with great efficiency, many willingly returned to being homemakers. Henrietta Rivas, who loved her job repairing airplane instruments at Kelly Field in San Antonio, Texas, believed “Raising my children was more important than my job” (Interview with Henrietta Rivas, San Antonio, Texas, U.S. Latino and Latina World War II Oral History Project, June 12, 1999).

Often, men returned from war demanding that their service to their country should afford them equality. Women defense workers also began to see things differently with regard to their place in their homes and communities. Many women, who had endured discrimination before the war, now fought for equitable educational opportunities for their children and against discrimination in their communities. Victoria Morales, who had worked in the defense industry, said, “Just as the war had changed boys into men, the same thing happened to us girls” (Santillán 1989, 138).

—Brenda L. Sendejo

See also Rosie the Riveter; United States, Home Front during World War II

References and Further Reading

- Campbell, Julie A. 1990. "Madres y Esposas: Tucson's Spanish-American Mothers and Wives Association." *The Journal of Arizona History*, 31:161–182.
- Gluck, Sherna Berger. 1987. *Rosie the Riveter Revisited: Women, the War, and Social Change*. Boston: Twayne.
- Honey, Maureen. 1984. *Creating Rosie the Riveter: Class, Gender, and Propaganda during World War II*. Amherst: University of Massachusetts Press.
- Ruiz, Vicki. 1998. *From Out of the Shadows, Mexican Women in Twentieth-Century America*. New York: Oxford University Press.
- Santillán, Richard. 1989. Rosita the Riveter: Midwest Mexican American Women during World War II, 1941–1945. *Perspectives in Mexican American Studies*. 1989: 115–147.
- U.S. Latino and Latina World War II Oral History Project archives, University of Texas at Austin School of Journalism. Maggie Rivas-Rodriguez, Project Director.

MEYER, GEORGIA LOU, OR
MEYER, G. L.

See Chapelle, Dickey

MICHEL, LOUISE
(1830–1905)

French revolutionary, teacher, and member of National Guard unit during the 1870–1871 Franco-Prussian War and 1871 Paris Commune. Years associated with revolution, 1830 and 1905, appropriately mark the birth and death dates of the "Red Virgin," Louise Michel. Michel became a teacher, moved to Paris, and fought for justice as an orator, writer, and uniformed member of the National Guard during the Franco-Prussian War and the Paris Com-

mune that followed. Imprisoned several times during her life, Michel's armed Commune activities resulted in deportation to New Caledonia.

Between March 18 and May 28, 1871, lower-class Parisians established a representative government, the Commune, in direct opposition to the newly established Republic, which they found conservative, unresponsive, even threatening. The national government at Versailles, besieging Paris, began bombarding the city on April 3. Troops entered Paris on May 21, and within a week, street-to-street fighting—even massacres—killed 30,000 residents. Many women, including Michel, fought from the early hours of March 18 through the Commune's demise on May 28.

Michel's participation in this civil war included arming herself with weapons and attire of the National Guard, orating in Red Clubs, writing to newspapers, searching for men hiding from National Guard duty, tending the wounded, and fighting. Her involvement began with the insurrection—Parisians' vocal and violent response to French troops attempting to take cannon, for which Parisians had paid and with which Paris had defended itself during the eighteen-week Prussian Siege. From her post with a National Guard battalion, Michel saw early events, tended the first casualty, and ran to warn others. More Parisians arrived, fraternizing with the Versailles troops, and forced their retreat. Over time, Adolphe Thiers, the president of the provisional government seated at Versailles, organized troops from the provinces, who were hostile to Paris, began bombing the city, and engineered the Commune's ultimate destruction.

Witnesses saw Michel in numerous locations among the fighting men during the battles of the Commune. She fired various weapons, her favorite being a Remington carbine; she kept watch, lived in the trenches, and killed enemies. Georges Clemenceau, who later became president of the Republic, observed her in the streets of Paris and in the fighting. When her unit rested, she fought alongside another company. She commented on the bias women experienced,



Louise Michel. (Leonard de Selva/Corbis)

including illegal exclusion from rations. She wrote to the newspaper, *La Sociale*, on May 6, 1871, “if you knew the obstacles they put in our way, the backbiting, the hostility!” Despite these challenges, Michel recruited women for ambulance service and continued her armed support of the Commune.

After her capture Louise Michel refused to offer any defense at her trial, calling on the judges to put her to death, if they had the courage. Instead, they deported her. When all convicted communards received amnesty a decade later, she returned to France, fighting for anarchist causes. She died at age seventy-four on a speaking trip, still evoking revolutionary violence.

—Pamela J. Stewart

See also Paris Commune, Women and the

References and Further Reading

- Gullickson, Gay L. 1996. *The Unruly Women of Paris: Images of the Commune*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University.
- Lowry, Bullitt, and Elizabeth Ellington Gunter, eds. 1981. *The Red Virgin: Memoirs of Louise Michel*. Tuscaloosa: University of Alabama.

MILOSAVLJEVIC, DANICA (1925–)

Yugoslav partisan. Danica Milosavljevic was born in 1925 near Uzice, Yugoslavia. Her father wanted all of his children, even his two daughters, to receive an education. Influenced by the oppression of women in Yugoslav peasant society, Milosavljevic joined the Communist Youth Movement in secondary school. By the time the Germans invaded Yugoslavia in April 1941, she was a member of the Communist party. Milosavljevic, who had taken a basic medical course offered by the party youth group before the war, was sent to a partisan detachment near Uzice and given ten days of additional training as a nurse. She served as a nurse for six months before directly appealing to Tito to be allowed to fight. The party leadership did not want her to become a soldier, but she prevailed. By the end of the war she was promoted to second lieutenant and was commander of the First Battalion of the Second Proletarian Brigade. Following the war she was proclaimed a National Hero by the Yugoslav Communist government.

—Bernard Cook

See also Yugoslavia, Women in the Military during World War II

References and Further Reading

- Jancar-Webster, Barbara. 1990. *Women and Revolution in Yugoslavia, 1941–1945*. Denver, CO: Arden.

MITFORD, UNITY
(1914–1948)

British admirer of Germany and Hitler. Unity Mitford—the fifth child of David Mitford, Second Baron Redesdale, and his wife, Sydney Bowles—was born in London on August 8, 1914. She was named Unity after popular actress Unity Moore but given the unusual middle name Valkyrie. Conceived at her father's Canadian gold mine in Swastika, Ontario, Mitford later incorporated her names and birthplace into her Aryan beliefs. Like her sisters Nancy, Diana, Pamela, Jessica, and Deborah, Unity was educated at home by governesses and took part in the eccentric life of her family. In 1930 Unity was the first of the sisters allowed to go to school, St. Margaret's in Bushy, from which she was promptly expelled.

Unity was presented as a debutante in 1932, but instead of dancing, preferred shocking party guests with her pet snakes. She was drawn to the politics of Sir Oswald Mosley, with whom she had contact through her sister Diana, who had recently left her first husband to live with Mosley. In 1933 Unity joined Mosley's British Union of Fascists. That year Unity accompanied Diana to Germany, where she attended the Nazi party rally in Nuremberg. Unity returned to Germany the following year after convincing her parents to allow her a year abroad to polish her German language skills. While in Munich, Unity began to follow Adolf Hitler's movements, hoping to arrange a meeting, which finally took place in February 1935.

Hitler, to the amazement of his inner circle, met Unity more than 140 times over the next 4 years. Hitler allowed her to tease him, and they shared a number of pet names and inside jokes that, when mentioned, reduced both of them to hysterical giggles. Unity was often escorted, for the sake of propriety, by SS Officer Erich Widemann when she attended subsequent party rallies, the 1936 Olympics, and Nazi social events. In order to prove her loyalty, Unity wrote viru-

lent anti-Semitic letters to the Nazi magazine *Stürmer* and took great pride in having been attacked by Spanish Republicans in 1936 for wearing her special gold party badge in Grenada and in being arrested as a "known Nazi" in Prague in 1938. She usually traveled in an MG sports car flying a Nazi pennant. The Mitfords in England were deeply embarrassed by the wide press coverage given to Unity's activities, especially as she was a cousin of Winston Churchill. Her sister Nancy parodied Unity's attachment to Hitler in her novel, *Wigs on the Green*.

In June 1938 Unity, who had already witnessed and approved of several instances of Nazi humiliation and oppression of Jews, accepted from Hitler an apartment vacated by a forcibly evicted Jewish family. Convinced that war between Britain and Germany could not happen, she wrote a full-page editorial in the London *Daily Mirror* and threatened to friends and family to kill herself if war were to break out between Britain and Germany. On September 3, 1939, Unity carried out her threat and shot herself in the head in a Munich park. She survived and was visited by Hitler, Goebbels, and Goering before being transferred to Switzerland where her mother was able to join her and arrange her return to England. Doctors were unable to remove the bullet from Unity's head and she suffered brain damage that left her incontinent, prone to rages, and with the intellectual ability of an eleven- to twelve-year-old. The family, however, so discreetly managed her rare public appearances that a parliamentary committee demanded to know why she was not interned like Diana and Mosley as enemies during the war. On discovering the extent of her disability, the matter was dropped.

Unity Mitford remained in her mother's care until May 27, 1948, when she died after developing meningitis at the family's remote Scottish property, Inch Kenneth.

—Margaret Sankey

See also Braun, Eva; Petacci, Clara

References and Further Reading

- Guinness, Jonathan, and Catherine Guinness. 1984. *The House of Mitford*. London: Hutchinson.
- Lovell, Mary S. 2002. *The Sisters*. New York: W. W. Norton.
- Pryce-Jones, David. 1976. *Unity Mitford*. London: Weidenfeld and Nicholson.

MOLLY PITCHER

Mythic heroine of the American Revolution. Molly Pitcher, according to the legend, was a *cantinière* who put down her pitcher and took the place of her wounded husband, William Hays, at an artillery position during the battle of Monmouth on June 28, 1778. Molly reputedly took the rammer staff from Hays and rallied the flagging American artillerymen. According to some embellishments, Molly returned to find her husband wounded after carrying an injured soldier to safety. General George Washington rewarded her with a gold coin, or perhaps a sack of them, and promoted her to the rank of sergeant.

According to Linda Grant De Pauw, this is all a fabrication. The first written mention of this heroine of Monmouth appeared in 1851 and she was not identified as Molly Pitcher until 1859. The character was not specifically identified until 1876. That year, Wesley Miles of Carlisle, Pennsylvania, claimed that his grandfather's maid, a Mrs. Mary Hays McCauley, had been the heroine of Monmouth. McCauley had probably served in some military capacity during the Revolutionary War. She received a pension from the state of Pennsylvania in 1822 "for services rendered." She had, however, requested the pension only because she was the widow of a soldier. De Pauw believes that citizens of Carlisle invented McCauley's past to embellish the renown of their town (De Pauw 1998, 126–130).

According to De Pauw, despite the legendary nature of the Molly Pitcher story, two men pres-



Mary Ludwig Hays—one of the women on whom the legend of Molly Pitcher might have been based—at the Battle of Monmouth during the American Revolution. (National Archives)

ent at the Battle of Monmouth recounted that women served in the battle. One woman was seen passing ammunition at an artillery emplacement, and another replaced her wounded husband in the infantry. These two women provide some basis for the story of Molly Pitcher. According to De Pauw, however, Mary Hays McCauley was in all probability not Molly Pitcher.

—Bernard Cook

See also American Revolution, Role of Women in the; Corbin, Margaret Cochrane; Samson, Deborah

References and Further Reading

- De Pauw, Linda Grant. 1998. *Battle Cries and Lullabies: Women in War from Pre-History to the Present*. Norman: University of Oklahoma.
- "The Story of Molly Pitcher." Fort Still History. <http://www.army.mil/pao/pamolly.htm> (accessed December 1, 2004).

MONTE, HILDA, PSEUD.
(AKA HILDA MEISEL)
(1914–1945)

German anti-Nazi resistance. Hilda Meisel was born in Berlin on July 31, 1914. As a young girl she joined the youth section of the left-wing opponents of the German Communist party. Though she did not finish school, at the age of fifteen she was writing for *Der Funke* (The Spark), the journal of the International Socialist Combat League. In addition to her radical opposition to the Nazi regime, she was a Jew. She apparently was able to emigrate to England through a nominal marriage to a British passport holder. In Britain she continued her radical-left opposition efforts under the nom de guerre Monte. In Britain she wrote a short piece, “*Where Freedom Perished*,” in which she stressed that Germans were also suffering from Nazi oppression. The theme was continued in a book, *The Unity of Europe*.

She was determined to return to Germany to work against the regime. As she attempted to cross the German–Swiss border on April 18, 1945, she was shot by a German patrol. Her passion for justice lives on in her poems.

—Bernard Cook

See also Niederkirchner, Käthe

References and Further Reading

- Leber, Annedore. 1994. *Conscience in Revolt: Sixty-Four Stories of Resistance in Germany, 1933–1945*. Boulder, CO: Westview.
- Monte, Hilda. 1943. *The Unity of Europe*. London: V. Gollancz.
- von Rauschenplat, Helmutt, and Hilda Monte. 1940. *How to Conquer Hitler, a Plan for Economic and Moral Warfare on the Nazi Home Front*. London: Jarrolds.

MOON, LOTTIE
(1829–1895), AND
MOON, GINNIE
(1844–1925)

Confederate spies during the American Civil War. Lottie and Ginnie Moon were the only sisters who worked as spies, couriers, and smugglers during the American Civil War, and they also played key roles in the Great Northwest Conspiracy. Drawing on their charisma and connections, they gathered information on Union movements and activities from their many suitors.

Cynthia Charlotte (Lottie) was born in Danville, Virginia, on August 10, 1829. The third child and first daughter of Dr. Robert S. Moon, and Cynthia Ann Sullivan, Lottie was independent and strong-willed. As a child, she excelled at riding, shooting, and acting, which were later manifested in her skill as a spy. She married Judge James Clark in 1849 after spurning Ambrose Burnside at the altar. Both Clarks were Copperheads (Northerners who sympathized with the Confederacy), and their home at Jones Station, Ohio, was both a supply base and respite for Confederate soldiers and spies.

In 1862 Lottie delivered a message from General Sterling Price to Colonel Edmund Kirby-Smith in Kentucky at the bequest of Walter Taylor of the Zachariah Taylor family. After her success on this first mission, she was sent to Canada where she delivered dispatches and letters to Toronto. Passing herself off as a British woman en route to mineral springs in Virginia, her uncanny ability to fake joint injury saved her from discovery on several occasions. She was finally captured by General Ambrose Burnside, who recognized her.

Lottie was a prisoner of war for three months. After the war, she wrote for the *New York World* and in 1870 the paper sent her to Paris as a war correspondent during the Franco-Prussian War. After returning to the United States and trying her hand at acting, she became a novelist and wrote under the pen name Charles M. Clay. She died in Philadelphia on November 20, 1895.

Virginia (Ginnie) Bethel Moon, born in Oxford, Ohio on June 22, 1844, was known for carrying a pearl-handled pistol. Expelled from Oxford Female College for shooting out the stars on the U.S. flag, she was sent home to her parents, who had moved to Memphis. While in Memphis, Ginnie attended to sick and wounded soldiers and made bandages. When Memphis fell into Union hands in 1862, Ginnie charmed the Union soldiers and passed along important details to Confederate officials.

Like her sister, Ginnie worked as a courier and delivered updates to General Nathan Forrest on his famous ride into West Tennessee. In the winter of 1863, while visiting Jackson, Mississippi, she agreed to carry a message from General Sterling Price to her brother-in-law, who lived in Jones Station, Ohio.

While heading downriver aboard the steamboat *Alicia Dean*, she was detained and searched in Cincinnati. Drawing her Colt revolver on Captain Rose, she threatened to report him to General Burnside. When Rose departed, Ginnie snatched the wet dispatches from her bosom and swallowed them. On her way to the Custom's Office for questioning, a jingle in her hoopskirt gave her away. Lined with vials of morphine, opium, and camphor, all bound for Confederate hospitals, she was charged with smuggling goods into the Confederacy.

General Burnside followed her case and remanded her into her mother's custody. A prisoner at Burnet House for three weeks, she spent several months confined at Fortress Monroe, Virginia, but she was eventually paroled to Jones Station.

After the war Ginnie was a familiar figure in Memphis. Devoting her life to work with the poor and sick, she was a heroine during the yellow fever epidemic in the early 1870s. She later moved to California to pursue interests in aviation and acting. Ginnie had a brief career as a screen actor and appeared in several movies. She settled in Greenwich Village, New York, where she died September 11, 1925.

—Rebecca Tolley-Stokes

See also Boyd, Isabelle; Civil War, American, Women Combatants during; Greenhow, Rose O'Neale

References and Further Reading

- Kane, Harnett T. 1954. *Spies for the Blue and Gray*. Garden City, NY: Doubleday.
 Kinchen, Oscar A. 1972. *Women Who Spied for the Blue and the Gray*. Philadelphia: Dorrance.

MOORE, ELEANOR MAY (1875–1949)

Pioneer of the Australian peace movement. Intellectual and writer, Eleanor M. Moore was an underestimated pioneer of the Australian peace movement. Born on March 10, 1875, in Lancefield, Victoria, the young Eleanor completed her education at the Presbyterian Ladies' College in the center of Melbourne. Inspired by the work of the influential Reverend Charles Strong, Moore dedicated her life to the Church of Australia and to the fight against militarism from the Boer War to World War II. An absolute pacifist, more liberal and humanitarian than her Melbourne companions, Moore became an attentive observer of the political events of the new century. During World War I her involvement in the women's antiwar movement was finally recognized. Moore was elected international secretary of the Sisterhood of International Peace (SIP), which had been founded in 1915. A leading advocate of the anticonscription movement, Moore's fight as a peace worker did not win her popularity. Most Australians were not only voluble patriots and imperialists, they were hostile toward the aims of the pacifists. An internationalist and fervent supporter of women's suffrage, Moore attended the International Congress of Women held by the Women's International League for Peace and Freedom (WILPF) in Zurich (May 12–17,

1919). When SIP reconstituted itself as the Australian section of the WILPF, Moore accentuated her personal campaign for peace and emerged as an untiring orator during the numerous meetings of the late 1930s. With courage she refused to join the United Front Against Fascism. She was personally irritated by the peace propaganda of the Communist party of Australia and disappointed by the failure of the World Disarmament Movement after 1932. A supporter of the concept of collective security, she was skeptical about the efficiency of the League of Nations. During the last ten years of her life, until her death on October 1, 1949, Moore's loyalty to the pacifist cause remained intact. In her autobiographical volume, *The Quest For Peace* (1949), she described the long fight for international friendship seen from an Australian point of view. Unfortunately, this book was published when the clouds of the cold war undermined the public sympathy for the national peace movement.

—*Jérôme Dorvidal*

See also Locke, Elsie; McDowell, Mary Stone; Olmsted, Mildred Scott; Onions, Maud; Street, Jessie

References and Further Reading

Moore, Eleanor May. 1950. *The Quest for Peace: As I Have Known It in Australia*. Melbourne: NP.
Saunders, Malcolm. 1993. *Quiet Dissenter: The Life and Thought of an Australian Pacifist*. Canberra: Peace Research Centre.

MOREAU-EVRARD, EMILIENNE
(1898-1971)

French resister during World Wars I and II. Emilienne Moreau, affectionately known as the Lady of Loos, was born on June 4, 1899, in the town of Wingles in the northern region of Pas-de-Calais. She was the daughter of a miner

turned grocery store owner. In October 1914, the town of Loos, where Moreau was living, was occupied by the Germans, who pillaged the village including her family's home. Moreau, who had intended to be a schoolteacher, in February 1915 organized a makeshift school in a cellar for children between the ages of three and sixteen.

In September 1915 the British attempted to retake Loos in four days of fierce fighting. Moreau began her war contribution by distributing chocolates and biscuits to the British soldiers. She transformed her parents' home into a temporary shelter and hospital, caring for wounded soldiers. She observed the German lines and informed the British of their movements. In one instance, in order to save the life of a British soldier, she went into the street armed with grenades and a revolver, killing five German soldiers.

Moreau was recognized by both the French and the British for her war contributions. The French awarded her the Croix de Guerre and issued a famous postcard in her honor depicting her in mourning dress with the caption, "The Lady or Heroine of Loos." The British awarded her the Military Medal, and the Royal Red Cross recognized her treatment of wounded soldiers by giving her a First Class Award. A British commander, Sir Douglas Haig, affectionately called her the Jeanne d'Arc of Loos for her effort to win back Loos for France.

In 1932, she married Just Evrard, the vice secretary general of the Socialist Federation of Pas-de-Calais, and they had two children. With the fall of France in June 1940, Moreau once again became involved in the war effort. Although German authorities had put her under surveillance because of her participation in World War I, this did not prevent Moreau from becoming involved in the Resistance. She began her work by distributing pamphlets and becoming a contact for British Information Services. She founded several Resistance groups with Louis Albert, director of the Liberation of the North network.

When her husband, Just Evrard, was arrested in 1941, Moreau changed her name to Jeanne Poirier and served first as an agent within the Brutus network directed by Pierre Fourcaud and then with the propaganda group France Fights. When forced to hide in the Lyon area in 1942, she organized missions between Lyon and Switzerland. Moreau demonstrated great courage and exceptional energy by playing a pivotal role in the Resistance in the Alps region. Forced to leave occupied France for Algeria in 1944, she sat on the French Provisional Assembly in Algiers. Later that year following D-Day, she returned to France with a Canadian armored unit.

After the war Moreau was awarded the Cross of the Companion of Liberation in her maiden name, as well as being made an officer of the Legion of Honor. She was decorated with the War Cross, 1939–1945, and the Cross of Volunteer Fighter and Resistor.

—*Leigh Whaley*

See also France, Resistance during World War II, Women and

References and Further Reading

- Moreau, Emilienne. 1970. *La Guerre buissonnière. Une famille française dans la Résistance* [The Truant War: A French Family in the Resistance]. Paris: Solar.
- Walters, Walter W. 1916. *Heroines of the World War*. London: C. H. Kelly.

MORGAN, ANNE TRACY (1873–1952)

Noted social activist and philanthropist. Anne Tracy Morgan provided immense assistance to France during and after World War I and World War II. Morgan was born in 1873 into wealth and privilege, the youngest child of John Pierpont and Frances Louisa Tracy Morgan. Her

brother was to become the famous financier J. P. Morgan, and when their father died in 1913, she became one of the richest women in the world. Educated privately, Morgan excelled at athletics but remained shy into adulthood.

Noted for her work among society women (Morgan was a founder of the Colony Club in New York City), she was also active in the National Civic Federation, helped to found the Working Girls' Vacation Association, and supported the unpopular concept of trade unionism. Morgan shared ownership of the Villa Trianon in Versailles, France, and with the outbreak of World War I in 1914, she offered the house to the French government, as well as establishing a convalescent hospital nearby. Morgan then helped establish the American Fund for French Wounded. Following the United State's entry into the war in April 1917, she organized the American Committee for Devastated France to help restore the Aisne region. From 1918 to 1924 the group raised over \$5 million for food, medical aid, and reconstruction. The work was directed from a chateau at Blerancourt that was later converted into a museum honoring French-American cooperation.

In the 1930s Morgan started yet another organization, the American Friends of France (AFF), known in France as the Comité Américain de Secours Civil. By 1938 the AFF had three relief centers operating to assist evacuees from near the Maginot Line. When the war began, the organization evacuated entire regions, often under bombardment. Forced out of France in 1940 following the German victory, Morgan returned to unoccupied Vichy France in 1941 and following the war in 1945 and 1946 to assess needs. The AFF eventually joined with several other groups to form the Organizing Council of French Relief Societies, which later merged with the Fighting French Relief to become the American Relief for France.

Besides the many awards she received for her philanthropic work in the United States, Morgan was awarded a silver medal by the French Academy of Agriculture and the Croix de Guerre

with Palm. She was named a Commander of the Legion of Honor, the only American woman to be thus honored. She retired to her New York home due to poor health in 1948 and died there in 1952.

—*Katherine Burger Johnson*

See also Mercy Ship

References and Further Reading

Lewis, Alfred Allen. 2001. *Ladies and Not-so-Gentle Women*. New York: Penguin.

MOTHERS OF THE PLAZA DE
MAYO

See Argentina, Mothers of the Plaza de Mayo

MOWLAM, MARJORIE (MO)
(1949–2005)

British secretary of state for Northern Ireland, May 1997 to October 1999, who played a leading role in the formulation of the 1998 Good Friday Accord to end the Troubles (period of violence) in Northern Ireland by the establishment of a government representative of the two communities (Catholic/Republican and Protestant/Unionists) of Ulster.

Marjorie Mowlam, who was born in Coventry, was educated in Britain and the United States. After earning a Ph.D. in political science at the

University of Iowa, she worked as a research analyst for Tony Benn, the left-wing leader of the British Labour Party. She also taught and served as an administrator for adult education at Northern College, Barnsley, England. She was elected to parliament from Labour in 1987. Prime Minister Tony Blair appointed her secretary of state for Northern Ireland in May 1997. She worked to restore the lapsed cease-fire of the Irish Republican Army (IRA), a terrorist group fighting for the unification of Ireland, and the inclusion in the multiparty talks of Sinn Féin, the republican political party, which served as the political wing of the IRA. She believed that “You have to take risks in a peace process to get it to work” (Fray 2004). Despite subsequent setbacks in Northern Ireland, she remained optimistic because, in her opinion, the people had enthusiastically embraced the peace process.

After stepping down from her post in Northern Ireland in October 1999, Mowlam entered Blair’s cabinet. Mowlam subsequently suffered from a brain tumor. In 2001 she resigned from the cabinet and ran again for parliament. She opposed the war against Iraq in 2003 and advocated negotiation with Osama bin Laden.

—*Bernard Cook*

See also Devlin, Bernadette; Peace People Movement; Ulster, Women during the Troubles in

References and Further Reading

Fray, Peter. “Ministry of Sound.” *The Sydney Morning Herald*. November 27–28, 2004.
Schoen, Ricki. 2001. Mowlam. Page 881 in *Europe since 1945: An Encyclopedia*. Edited by Bernard Cook. New York: Garland.

N

NANKING, RAPE OF

Orgy of violence that accompanied the Japanese seizure of the Nationalist Chinese (Kuomintang) capital of Nanking in 1937. In a deliberate effort to cow the Chinese, the Japanese pursued a policy of terror during their invasion of China. Between 1937 and 1945, more than 21 million Chinese, most of them civilians, were killed by the Japanese (Greaves et al. 1993, 1035).

In 1937 the Japanese, who had seized Manchuria in 1931, launched an invasion against the remainder of China. They easily occupied Peking (Beijing) but met stiff resistance at Shanghai. When the Chinese withdrew to Nanking, the Japanese executed many Chinese prisoners-of-war and males of military age. After surrounding Nanking and trapping thousands of soldiers and over 200,000 civilians, the Japanese entered the city on December 13. Japanese officers ordered the execution of Chinese POWs. It was, however, undisciplined soldiers who engaged in a rampage of horror against civilians. For a month Japanese soldiers engaged in an orgy of rape. Females, from young girls to elderly women, were raped on the streets and in homes in front of family

members. There were gang rapes, mutilations, and murder. According to Robert Greaves, “Survivors described horrifying sights of women impaled on stakes and children sliced in two” (Greaves et al. 1993, 1034). Some estimates for the number of people killed by the Japanese in Nanking—prisoners-of-war and civilians, men, women, and children—range as high as 300,000. More conservative estimates place the figure between 50,000 and 100,000. Many more survived rape, torture, or being wounded.

After the war a tribunal at Nanking convicted and executed three Japanese lieutenants for beheading POWs and a general, who had commanded troops in the city. General Matsui Iwane, the Japanese commander during the campaign, was tried in Tokyo by a war crimes tribunal. General Matsui, despite his orders against atrocities, was condemned to death for failing to end the horrors effectively.

—*Bernard Cook*

See also China, Women and the Communist Revolution; China, Women on the Home Front in World War II



Chinese wife with body of slain husband in Nanking, China, December 30, 1937. (Bettmann/Corbis)

References and Further Reading

- Chang, Iris. 1997. *The Rape of Nanking: The Forgotten Holocaust of World War II*. New York: Basic.
- Fogel, Joshua A., ed. 2000. *The Nanking Massacre in History and Historiography*. Berkeley: University of California.
- Greaves, Robert, et al. 1993. *Civilizations of the World: The Human Adventure*. 2nd ed. New York: HarperCollins.
- Hewitt, William L. 2004. "The Rape of Nanking." Pages 119–127 in *Defining the Horrific: Readings on Genocide and Holocaust in the Twentieth Century*. Upper Saddle River, NJ: Pearson/Prentice Hall.

NANYE-HI

See Ward, Nancy

**NAPOLEON'S MARSHALS,
WIVES OF**

Wives of the twenty-six marshals created during the reign of Napoleon I. The women who married Napoleon's marshals crossed the spectrum of social classes, nationalities, religious orienta-

tions, and educational levels. Despite these differences, an underlying common bond remained. These women were the constant supporters of husbands who spent the vast majority of their married lives campaigning in the Napoleonic Wars. They were compelled in certain circumstances to accompany their husbands to various posts and even on military campaigns. The marshals' wives would become an integral component of Napoleon's court during the First Empire.

Duty was the creed of the marshals' wives. The role of military wife was unending for the wives of Napoleon's marshals. As a result of the constant campaigning, the women were required to supervise the home life; they maintained their households, raised children, attended to duties at court, and represented their husbands at appropriate activities. In many cases, however, the wives were active in campaigning, tending to wounded husbands, and two would experience the pain of losing their husbands on the field of honor.

The marshals' wives joined their husbands whenever circumstances allowed. Aglaé Ney joined her husband, Michel, who was given command of the 6th Corps at the Boulogne camp, settling first in Montreuil, then in the Château de Recque, which the marshal had procured specifically for her. Consequently, a court-like atmosphere was facilitated by the presence of Madame Ney. Frequent visitors from Paris enjoyed the abundant diversions that were constantly offered (Atteridge 1912, 126–127). When the marshals were on campaign or serving the French government in some other capacity, their wives might be present with them. In many cases, the marshals were appointed as ambassadors and governors throughout France and French-conquered territories. Marshal Jean Baptiste Bernadotte received an appointment as governor and commander-in-chief of Hanover shortly before the coronation of Napoleon as emperor of France in 1804 (Palmer 1990, 119). Bernadotte was to command and administer the army occupying land that had once been under English control. Desirée Bernadotte joined her

husband in the summer of 1805 and settled into the sumptuous Schloss Herrenhausen, the official residence of the governor. The tides of war were such that Desirée was not able to enjoy her new abode for very long. The threat of a Third Coalition, formed by Russia, Austria, and Prussia, forced Napoleon to order Bernadotte to Würzburg (Palmer 1990, 121–124). The lives of the marshals and their wives were spent constantly adjusting to such sudden changes caused by shifting political alliances and military pursuits.

The Peninsular War bore witness to the truly grim nature of guerrilla warfare. Marshal Louis Gabriel Suchet commanded an army in Catalonia and was awarded his marshal's baton during the desolate war fighting against Spanish guerrillas. Although he celebrated his marriage on November 16, 1808, by December 1, he was departing for Madrid and the commencement of his role in that fateful campaign. By all accounts, the Peninsular War and its ramifications made the lives of the marshals' wives dangerous and unpredictable. As a result, the emperor expressly forbade wives to accompany their husbands to Spain. Ignoring this directive, Honorine Suchet joined her husband in Aragon in 1810, after he had been appointed military governor for that province. The courage of the young wife is further underscored by the fact that she lived in such inhospitable conditions while pregnant with the couple's first child. As her due date approached, it became necessary for Honorine to leave Spain and she returned to Paris in April of 1811 (Horward and Ojala 1987, 490–497).

Not all of the marshals returned home safely at the end of a campaign. The loss of Marshals Jean Lannes and Jean Baptiste Bessières, who played important roles in the success of the empire, was particularly difficult for Napoleon. Adele Bessières received consolation directly from Napoleon and Josephine after her husband fell at the Battle of Lutzen in 1813 (Junot 1893, 212). The widow of Lannes, Louise, received Napoleon's earnest condolences (Horward and Ojala 1987, 212). She retired from court life for

a time but returned to serve as lady of honor to Napoleon's second wife, Marie-Louise.

—*Jolynda Brock Chenicek*

See also Frontier Soldiers, U.S., Wives of; Lee, Mary Anna Randolph Custis; Riedesel, Friederike von; Washington, Martha Dandridge Custis

References and Further Reading

- Atteridge, A. Hilliard. 1912. *The Bravest of the Brave: Michel Ney, Marshal of France, Duke of Elchingen, Prince of the Moscowa, 1769–1815*. London: Methuen.
- Horward, Donald D., and Jeanne A. Ojala. 1987. *Napoleon's Marshals*. Edited by David G. Chandler. London: Weidenfeld and Nicolson.
- Junot, Madame (Duchesse d'Abrantès). 1893. *The Home and Court Life of the Emperor Napoleon and His Family*. 4 Vols. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons.
- Palmer, Alan. 1990. *Bernadotte: Napoleon's Marshal, Sweden's King*. London: John Murray.

NATIONAL LEGION OF MOTHERS OF AMERICA (NLMA)

American women's antiwar movement. In September 1939, less than a month after Hitler's invasion of Poland triggered the onset of World War II, the National Legion of Mothers of America (NLMA) was established to oppose U.S. entry into the war. Founded by three California mothers of draft-age sons, Frances Sherrill, Mary M. Sheldon, and Mary Ireland, the legion marked the beginning of the "mothers' movement," a generally right-wing coalition of female isolationists. The NLMA, publicized and probably financed by media magnet William Randolph Hearst, quickly established chapters in cities where Hearst newspapers were published. In Hearst editorials the NLMA was praised for its patriotism and determination to fight all at-

tempts to send young Americans to fight in foreign wars.

Colonel Robert McCormick's *Chicago Tribune*, also sympathetic to the mothers' movement, attributed 10 million members to the NLMA. The actual number was probably smaller. In June 1940 some 2 million members voted by mail on resolutions to be put forward by the national organization. Its newspaper, the *American Mothers National Weekly*, had several million readers. Chapters were organized in at least 39 states.

The NLMA's founders were not necessarily pacifists but opposed the deployment of U.S. forces for any purpose except defending the nation from attack. One of the legion's New York chapters recruited a paramilitary group, the Molly Pitcher Rifle Legion, to repel foreign invaders. The NLMA welcomed all women with U.S. citizenship regardless of race, religion, or political party. African American women were enrolled. Nonetheless the NLMA's membership could broadly be categorized as white, Protestant, and Republican.

The credibility of the NLMA was enhanced in January 1940 when writer Kathleen Norris became the league's president. A prolific best-selling novelist and short story writer, Norris had been active in the progressive movement of the early twentieth century, supporting pacifism, prohibition, and the abolition of capital punishment. She was also an opponent of Franklin Roosevelt's New Deal and accused the president of trying to dupe the United States into war. Professing the traditional belief that the Atlantic and Pacific oceans were moats deep enough to safeguard the American shores, she supported the 1940 election campaign of Republican presidential candidate Wendell Wilkie, and worked unsuccessfully against the passage of the selective service bill authorizing a peacetime draft. In September 1940, NLMA members protested the draft bill outside the U.S. Senate, wearing black dresses and veils and maintaining a "death vigil." The NLMA generated a letter-writing campaign but failed to prevent passage of the Lend-Lease Act.

Norris tried to keep the NLMA from falling into the hands of the far right, repudiating the endorsement of her organization by the notorious Father Charles Coughlin. Despite her efforts, Coughlinites and the pro-Nazi German-American Bund gained control over some chapters and strident anti-Semitism was often voiced at legion meetings. More radical elements of the NLMA began to denounce Roman Catholics as well as Jews, and to demand the impeachment of Roosevelt. Norris expelled some of the legion's most militant chapters but resigned as president in April 1941 and continued her antiwar work in concert with more moderate isolationists.

With her departure the NLMA splintered into three groups, the National Legion, the Mothers of the U.S.A., and the Women's National Committee to Keep the U.S. Out of War. The new organizations coordinated their efforts to abolish the draft, repeal the Lend-Lease Act, and impeach Roosevelt. Without Norris' leadership the mothers movement became increasingly militant and marginal.

The NLMA was significant because it demonstrated the potential of mobilizing conservative women who opposed U.S. entry into World War II. It was the first major organization to use maternal arguments against Roosevelt's war policy. The group also encouraged a sense of gender solidarity based on the belief that women would suffer from a war whose course was directed by men.

—*Glen Jeansonne and David Luhrssen*

See also Dilling, Elizabeth; United States, Opposition to U.S. Entry into World War II by Right-Wing American Women

References and Further Reading

- Jeansonne, Glen. 1996. *Women of the Far Right*. Chicago: University of Chicago.
- McEnaney, Laura M. 1994. "He-Men and Christian Mothers." *Diplomatic History* 18, 1 (Winter): 47–57.
- Ribuffo, Leo P. 1983. *The Old Christian Right: The Protestant Far Right From the Great Depression to the Cold War*. Philadelphia: Temple University.

NEARNE, JACQUELINE (1916–1982)

British agent, member of the Special Operations Executive (SOE) who participated in numerous missions to assist French Resistance groups in World War II and who was awarded the title of MBE (Member of the Order of the British Empire) for her work.

Jacqueline Françoise Mary Josephine Nearne was born on May 27, 1916, in Brighton, England, but was raised and educated in France and consequently became bilingual. When Germany invaded France in 1940, she escaped to Britain with her younger sister Eileen (code-name Didi), who was also to become a SOE agent.

In 1942 Nearne was recruited into the First Aid Nursing Yeomanry (FANY) and soon afterward joined the F Section (France) of SOE. SOE's mission was to provide support for espionage and sabotage operations that took place behind enemy lines. Nearne was among the second group of women recruited by SOE. She was trained as a courier in Scotland, at Garramore House, along with other French-speaking agents. She was taught how to make Morse code transmissions with a suitcase radio. On January 25, 1943, she secretly parachuted in France, as "Josette Norville," to join SOE's "Stationer" network operating in central and southern France, all the way to the Pyrenees. Her work there involved long and dangerous trips, often by train, keeping in contact with the agents and the wireless operators of the Headmaster circuit, carrying spare parts for radios, and organizing reception committees for newly arrived agents. She also maintained contact between several other SOE networks operating in a large area around Paris.

After fifteen months in the field, Nearne was flown back to Britain in April 1944 to rest. In 1945 she starred (as agent "Cat"), along with fellow agent Harry Rée (as agent "Felix"), in a public information and propaganda film produced by the Royal Air Force (RAF) Film Unit, first entitled *Now It Can Be Told*, about the work

of the F Section. The film was shot for the most part in newly liberated France while the war was still going on. The film was shown in 1946 as *School for Danger*. In 2001 it was released on video.

Nearne died in London on November 15, 1982.

—*Georgia Tres*

See also Atkins, Vera H.

References and Further Reading

- Mackenzie, William. 2003. *The Secret History of SOE: Special Operations Executive 1940–1945*. London: St Ermins Press.
- Stafford, William. 2002. *Secret Agent: The True Story of the Special Operations Executive*. New York: Overlook Press.

NICARAGUA, WOMEN AND WAR IN

The role of women in revolutionary struggle in Nicaragua. The modern history of Nicaragua cannot be fully told without recounting the important roles that women played in the various wars. Throughout much of the twentieth century, Nicaragua was afflicted by a series of armed conflicts, including civil wars, revolutions, and foreign interventions. Nicaraguan women were drawn into all of these conflicts as collaborators, combatants, and victims.

The United States became concerned about Nicaragua because it was under prime consideration for an interoceanic canal. U.S. Marines intervened and occupied Nicaragua several times, including in 1926 during a Nicaraguan civil war. It was at this point that Nicaraguan history turned, when a handful of Nicaraguan patriots decided to resist U.S. occupation. Their leader was Augusto C. Sandino, who in 1927 organized the Ejército Defensor de la Soberanía Nacional de Nicaragua (EDSNN, Army in Defense of the National Sovereignty of

Nicaragua) and fought a guerrilla war that lasted until 1933.

Many Nicaraguan women actively participated in the Sandinista struggle. While these women played an essential role, their tasks can be defined as collaborators. Women were not combatants within the EDSNN but were active in a variety of other ways. They served as spies, messengers, proselytizers, nurses, and in domestic services. Sandino called their actions heroic and admitted that many had died. He gave an example of one who was arrested and tortured and whose children were murdered. After leaving jail she joined the EDSNN as a “cook, nurse and washerwoman” (Grossman 1996, 730). According to Sandino, the exemplary Sandinista woman was one who sacrificed all for the cause and whose personal contributions were the traditional gendered labor of women as care providers. Still, this gendered labor was crucial to the conduct of the war.

While some women joined the guerrilla bands, most remained at home. The women who stayed at home played an essential support role. To keep their families alive, they had to do their own daily work as well as that of their missing men. When the guerrillas passed through an area, local supporters were supposed to provide them with food, which meant even more work. These women assumed tremendous extra responsibilities in support of Sandino.

The war ended when the last of the U.S. Marines were withdrawn from Nicaragua in 1933 and the Nicaraguan government signed a ceasefire with Sandino. Before leaving, however, the Marines created a new Nicaraguan army, the Guardia Nacional, and command was turned over to Anastasio Somoza García. Somoza García ordered Sandino assassinated, and using the Guardia, seized control of the government and created a regime that would dominate Nicaragua for the next forty-five years.

While many Nicaraguans opposed the dictatorship, the Somoza family ruled Nicaragua with an iron hand. In 1961 a small group of Nicaraguans formed a new organization which they named after Sandino, the *Frente Sandinista*

de Liberación Nacional (FSLN, the Sandinista Front of National Liberation), and began a new guerrilla war. Slowly the FSLN won popular support culminating in a widespread urban insurrection that finally overthrew the Somoza regime in 1979.

By the 1970s many women became active members of the FSLN and were integrated into the guerrilla columns. While there is some question about the actual numbers, more than 30 percent of the armed combatants were women, some of whom died fighting the regime. The first women joined in the mid-1960s and by 1979 there were thousands of women guerrillas. A few of these women became officers of FSLN units.

Many more women were collaborators. As in the earlier conflicts, they actively supported the guerrillas by providing food, medicines, and safe houses, hiding weapons, and carrying messages. These activities were also very dangerous and many of these female supporters of the FSLN were tortured and murdered by the regime.

Women were involved in many other opposition activities. In 1977 women organized AMPRONAC, the Association of Nicaraguan Women Confronting the National Problem—the “national problem” being the Somoza regime. By 1979 the organization had grown to over 8,000 members (Isbester 2001, 42). While they organized demonstrations against the government’s repression, AMPRONAC also protested discrimination against women as well as rising food prices. Many AMPRONAC members joined the armed insurrection.

In July 1979 the Somoza regime was overthrown and a new government led by the FSLN was created. Most women combatants were demobilized and many took civilian positions within the new government. Nevertheless, as the Sandinista Popular Army was created, many women stayed in the military. In 1980 about 6 percent of the officers and 40 percent of the soldiers were women but generally they were placed in noncombat duties (Isbester 2001, 55). AMPRONAC transformed itself into the Association of Nicaraguan Women “Luisa Amanda Espinoza” (AMNLAE), named after the first fe-

male FSLN member to die in combat. The group was affiliated with the FSLN and actively supported the new government.

Over the decades the United States had been generally supportive of the Somoza regime. Although President Jimmy Carter had finally cut U.S. aid to Somoza in 1979, President Ronald Reagan was very critical of the new FSLN government. In 1981 Reagan ordered the CIA to reorganize the remnants of Somoza’s old army that had fled Nicaragua into a new counterrevolutionary force. Backed by the United States, the *contras*, as they were known, began to attack the Sandinista regime and its supporters in an effort to overthrow it.

Nicaraguan women were again drawn into war. While some joined or were forced into the *contras*, most supported the new revolutionary government. This time, however, the FSLN tried to keep women in noncombat and support roles. While men were sent to the front lines in the mountains, women’s battalions were formed within the militia to help protect the cities. AMNLAE also helped create the Mothers of the Revolution—Heroes and Martyrs as a support organization for those who had lost children in combat. Thus the male FSLN leaders returned to Sandino’s vision of women as collaborators and as mothers who could give their sons to the struggle. Nevertheless, thousands of women actively contributed to the war effort.

Nicaraguan women had been transformed and empowered by the decades of war. Their contributions to the fight against invaders and dictators cannot be denied. With the Nicaraguan people exhausted by years of war, the FSLN lost the 1990 presidential election. The fighting finally ended when the *contras* signed a ceasefire with the new U.S.-backed president, Violetta Chamorro, the first woman president in Nicaragua’s history.

—Richard Grossman

See also Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements in

References and Further Reading

- Grossman, Richard. 1996. "Hermanos en la Patria." Nationalism, Honor and Rebellion: Augusto Sandino and the Army in Defense of the National Sovereignty of Nicaragua, 1927–1934. Unpublished Ph.D. dissertation. University of Chicago.
- Isbester, Katherine. 2001. *Still Fighting: The Nicaraguan Women's Movement, 1977–2000*. Pittsburgh, PA: University of Pittsburgh.
- Randall, Margaret. 1995. *Sandino's Daughters: Testimonies of Nicaraguan Women in Struggle*. New Brunswick, NJ: Rutgers University.

NIEDERKIRCHNER, KÄTHE
(KATJA) (1909–1944)

German Communist resistance fighter. Käthe Niederkirchner, a seamstress, was born into a working class family in Berlin on October 7, 1909. During World War I Niederkirchner's father, a plumber, became a Communist while he was a prisoner of war in Russia. In 1925 Käthe Niederkirchner joined the German Communist Youth League and in 1929 she became a member of the German Communist Party. She was arrested on March 27, 1933, after Hitler outlawed the Communist Party. Following her release Niederkirchner emigrated to the Soviet Union, where her family had sought refuge from the Nazi regime. In 1941, when Germany invaded the Soviet Union, she joined the Red Army. Her appeals to German soldiers were broadcast by Radio Moscow and she was sent to prisoner of war camps to persuade soldiers to join the antifascist cause. In October 1943 she parachuted from a Soviet plane into German-occupied Poland near Warsaw. Her mission was to work in Berlin with the Communist underground. She made her way to the railway station at Kostiza. Her forged papers, however, lacked a stamp that the Nazis had just issued and she was arrested by the Gestapo. At the Gestapo headquarters in Berlin, Niederkirchner was kept in

solitary confinement and subjected to interrogation and torture for several months. She was then transferred to the Ravensbrück concentration camp, where she was chained by a leg-iron to a wall. On September 27, 1944, the camp commandant pronounced her death sentence, and she was executed that night.

In May 1951 the East German Communist regime renamed Prinz-Abrecht-Strasse—the former location of the Gestapo headquarters—Niederkirchner Strasse.

—Bernard Cook

See also Buch, Eva Maria; Harnack-Fish, Mildred; Kirchner, Johanna; Kuckhoff, Greta

References and Further Reading

- Kreuzberger Chronik. 2003. Von Westhafen, Werner. "Käte Niederkirschner—Heldin des antifaschistischen Kampfes [Käte Niederkirschner—Heroine of the Antifascist Struggle]." <http://www.kreuzberger-chronik.de/chroniken/2003juni/strasse.html> (accessed October 3, 2003).
- Rürup, Reinhard, ed. 2002. *Topography of Terror: Gestapo, SS, and Reichssicherheitshauptamt on the "Prinz-Albrecht-Terrain": A Documentation*. Trans. by Werner T. Angress. Berlin: Verlag Willmuth Arenhövel.

NIGHTINGALE, FLORENCE
(1820–1910)

Reformer of the British army medical service. Popularly known as "the Lady with the Lamp," Florence Nightingale was throughout her long life an active campaigner for high standards of military and civilian nursing and improved conditions in the hospitals of the British Army. She is best known for her tireless work during the Crimean War (1854–1856), during which she made the British public aware of the ghastly conditions facing the sick and wounded troops, and exposed numerous weaknesses within the

RUN THE "APPOINTED COURSE"

"I have no peculiar gifts. And I can honestly assure any young lady, if she will but try to walk, she will soon be able to run the 'appointed course.' But then she must first learn to walk, and so when she runs she must run with patience. (Most people don't even try to walk.) But I would also say to all young ladies who are called to any particular vocation, qualify yourself for it as a man does for his work. Don't think you can undertake it otherwise."

—Florence Nightingale,
letter published in the *Englishwoman's Review*, January, 1869.
<http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/REnightingale.htm>
(accessed January 21, 2006).

army medical services. In the face of entrenched attitudes and deep-seated inertia, Nightingale imposed order out of chaos, filth, and needless deprivation through a new regime of cleanliness, strict standards of hygiene, and regular hot meals for patients.

Through personal example and in the face of determined opposition from conservative officialdom, Nightingale displayed a remarkable flair for organization, eventually establishing nursing as a respectable vocation based on sound principles of hygiene, domestic science, and methodical care. Her work became the stuff of legend even before the war had ended. Although she antagonized many doctors, nurses, and government officials, she was venerated by the troops, and the public and press at home.

Nightingale was born into a wealthy Derbyshire family, which she shocked by her desire to enter nursing, work widely viewed as the preserve of disreputable, ignorant, and frequently drunk women from the lowest classes. Intelligent and well-connected both professionally and socially, Nightingale defied prevailing attitudes and educated herself about public administration and statistics. She inspected hospitals in Britain, studied government reports on health, and worked in several hospitals in France and Germany. As a result of her experience, and her personal friendship with Secretary of War Sidney Herbert, Nightingale was, in October 1854, dispatched with a party of thirty-eight nurses to Turkey to take charge of the Barrack Hospital at

Scutari, on the opposite side of the Bosphorus from Constantinople.

She arrived just after the Battle of Inkerman and found appalling conditions of filth, starvation, infection, and an acute shortage of even the most basic amenities. There were few orderlies; clothes, utensils, beds and bedding, soap, medical equipment, and drugs were almost entirely absent. Even food and water were in short supply. Undaunted, Nightingale immediately set about using the large sums of money raised by public subscription through the *Times* (London) relief fund for the sick and wounded, gifts from friends, and even her own resources, to buy all manner of supplies.

The urgent need for cleanliness and proper hygiene was equally apparent. Overflowing sewers, blocked privies, and the human excrement that covered the floors were not merely responsible for an unearthly stench but also for the production of noxious fumes that caused widespread illness among men already weakened by other ailments such as cholera and dysentery, or by wounds.

Nightingale discovered hundreds of men infested with vermin, laid out in rows on filthy floors and denied even basic attention, sometimes for days at a time. Those orderlies who were in evidence showed little compassion and practiced a good deal of roughness. Worse still, many of the doctors, overworked and understaffed, looked on Nightingale's arrival with suspicion and sometimes scarcely veiled hostility.



Florence Nightingale. (Library of Congress)

Yet with patient numbers constantly on the rise, doctors became utterly overwhelmed and were obliged to tolerate the services of her staff.

Under her management—at times overbearing and acerbic—Nightingale had the wards repaired, cleaned, and properly equipped. She instituted a regime for the regular washing of patients' clothes and bedding with soap and warm water—a service previously unavailable. She had boilers installed and established a scheme to pay soldiers' wives to launder clothes and dressings, and she had the kitchen service placed on a proper footing, with a system for feeding invalids who had previously gone without food for days at a time.

Within eight weeks of her arrival the immediate crisis had passed, thanks to the Herculean efforts of Nightingale and her staff. Her transformation of a virtual charnel house brought a radical reduction in the hitherto staggering mortality rate. The eventual arrival of four different commissions sent out by the government to investigate the scandalous conditions under which soldiers lived and died further reduced the death toll. Nightingale was not alone in reporting the shocking conditions of the military hospitals. Soldiers' letters and the dispatches of journalist William Howard Russell supported her findings. Many people admired the Christian zeal that underpinned Nightingale's work, though Elizabeth Gaskell referred unflatteringly to her "visible march to heaven" (Uglow 1993, 365), emphasizing Nightingale's championing of great causes over the cultivation of good relations with individuals.

Nightingale was forced to fight not only disease and squalor, but also the complacent, inefficient, and at times, corrupt officials in the medical services, the commissariat, and other departments. She walked miles a day up and down the wards, functioning with a minimum of sleep; yet, in addition to her ordinary administrative duties at Scutari, she was still able to write lengthy letters to the War Office and other government departments in London in her campaign to improve the soldiers' lot. So relentless were her efforts that she nearly died of fever in June 1855.

For the remainder of her long life, Nightingale devoted herself to the reformation and reorganization of the army medical service, thus securing for herself a place in the pantheon of great Victorians. In 1860 she founded a nursing school at St. Thomas's Hospital in London. In 1881 an Army Nursing Service was formed. Three years later the Army Nursing Reserve was created, and by the time of the Boer War (1899–1902) female nurses were a well-established component of the British Army, both on campaign and at home. Nightingale's legacy continues today, and she is justly credited as the founder of modern nursing.

—Gregory Fremont-Barnes

See also Barton, Clara; Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I; Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War I

References and Further Reading

- Cook, Sir Edward Tyas. 1913. *The Life of Florence Nightingale*. 2 vols. London: Macmillan.
- Goldie, Sue M., ed. 1997. *Florence Nightingale: Letters from the Crimea, 1854–1856*. New York: Mandolin.
- Small, Hugh. 1998. *Florence Nightingale: Avenging Angel*. London: Constable.
- Uglow, Jennifer. 1993. *Elizabeth Gaskell*. New York: Farrar Straus Giroux.
- Woodham-Smith, Cecil. 1953. *Lady in Chief: The Story of Florence Nightingale*. London: Methuen.

NIKULINA, ANNA
VLADIMIROVNA (B. 1904)

Soviet military heroine. Anna Vladimirovna Nikulina hoisted a red flag on the roof of the Third Reich's Chancellery in Berlin as the Russians fought to seize the city. At the time she was senior instructor and secretary of the party commission in the 9th Brandenburg Infantry Corps, which had covered 5,000 kilometers (3,107 miles) from Mozdok in the Caucasus to Berlin.

She was born in the Cossack village of Batalpashinskaia (renamed Cherkessk). When she was fourteen, her father, the first chairman of his village's Poor Peasants' Committee, was hanged by men of the counterrevolutionary Denikin army, who ransacked the family's living quarters, mistreating Anna's mother and grandfather. Nikulina, in reaction, became the first member of the Komsomol (Young Communist League) in her village. Elected her district's Komsomol committee secretary, she studied at the Communist University of Saratov and a political-technical college in Rostov. A Party member since 1925, she married Nikolai Vinogradov,

a fellow university student who became a Party official and was subsequently killed by opponents of collectivization.

The widowed Nikulina worked in a factory and held various local Party posts. She eventually attended the Academy of Water Transport. Her dream was to circumnavigate the globe, but instead she covered some 5,000 kilometers (3,107 miles), at least partly on foot, from Mozdok to Berlin. To go to war she left her two children, a son and daughter, with her sister. Initially a political commissar of a hospital, after graduating from the Military Political School in Rostov, Nikulina underwent a baptism of fire at Mozdok along with a tankborne assault force. On another occasion, when an infantry company commander was killed, she led his men under fire, capturing the village of Angelinovskaia in the Caucasus. Her role as political officer was not only to lead and encourage men under fire, but also to interact with them daily as a morale officer.

By the end of April 1945 the fighting in Berlin was carried out by small Soviet assault groups. Summoned by her Corps' commanding officer, Nikulina was ordered to lead an assault team tasked with the mission of hoisting a red flag on the roof of the Chancellery. She was assigned four men from the 1050th Infantry Regiment's No. 2 Battalion commanded by F. K. Shapovalov (whose nephew in 1984 wrote an account of the mission based on an interview with Nikulina, who was then eighty years old).

Nikulina wrapped the flag around her waist under a leather jacket. Early on May 2 Nikulina's party of five forced their way into the building under heavy fire. The fighting was especially intense on the third floor. After Soviet soldiers inside the building cleared the stairs, Nikulina and her men ran up to the attic, where two of them were killed and one was seriously wounded. With the fourth soldier, Nikulina managed to climb through a hole in the attic onto the roof and to secure the flag to a spire with a telephone cable. Later, in the Führer's bunker, Shapovalov offered her his congratulations.

She participated in the Victory Parade in Moscow on June 24, 1945, where she was reunited with her son, a naval cadet. After the war Nikulina played an active role in reconstruction, distinguished herself as Party organizer, and wrote a book. A recipient of at least ten decorations, she did not receive the Hero of the Soviet Union. Instead, for her feat in Berlin, she was presented with the Order of the Red Banner.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Soviet Union, Order of the Red Banner, Women Recipients

Reference and Further Reading

- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 1982. "Soviet Women in Combat in World War II: The Rear Services, Resistance behind Enemy Lines, and Military Political Workers." *International Journal of Women's Studies*, 5, 4 (September/October): 374.
- Stepichev, Mikhail. 1969. *Skvoz' gody i buri*. Pages 3, 7–20 in *Skvoz' gody i buri. O zhenshchinakh kommunistkakh* [The Stormy Years: The Story of Women Party Members]. Edited by G.V. Kulikovskaia. Moscow: Politizdat.
- Szapolow, Anatol. 1984. "Sztandar zwyciŹstwa nad Kancelarja Rzeszy" [The Victory Flag above the Reich's Chancellery]. Trans. by Rajmund Kulinski. *Zolnierz Polski*, 19 (May 6): 9.

NIROUET, COLLETTE (1926–1944)

French volunteer soldier during World War II who died fighting in Alsace. Collette Nirouet, a young Parisian woman, joined the 6th company of the Auvergne Regiment of the French First Army on October 15, 1944. Nirouet was an eighteen-year-old student who initially served as a nurse, although there is no evidence that she had any formal medical training. Following her insistence, the captain of her regiment permitted her to fight as a soldier. For the next few

months, she participated fully in the activities of the company, both offensive and defensive, in the line of fire in the forests of Oberwald. She wore a woman's uniform of the U.S. army, not civilian clothing.

Nirouet's family background and initial life experiences perhaps explain why she desired to fight for her country. Her father, a genealogist, had fought for France during World War I, earning the Croix de Guerre. Her brother, permanently injured from a bicycle accident, was unable to be a soldier. Collette felt it was her duty to replace her brother at the front. She also may have joined the army because of experiences at her grandmother's home in Pont-de-Pany that served as a refuge for Allied soldiers. Nirouet not only witnessed the crash of an RAF plane, but also helped provide medical aid for the injured pilot.

Nirouet earned an affectionate nickname, Joan of Arc, from her brothers in arms during the course of her service. They so-named her because of her courage and patriotism. She was also known as Evelyne, a name that stuck with her even after her death. It is under the name of Evelyne Meunier that she appears on the list of those killed on November 26, 1944, in the *Journal des Marches* of the 152nd Régiment infanterie, Campaign 1944–1945.

Nirouet was fatally wounded on November 12, 1944, in the battle of Oberwald. She was not, however, decorated by France until August 30, 1985. Her posthumously awarded decorations include the French commemorative war medal for World War II (with a barrette "libération"). The delayed recognition of Nirouet stemmed from the fact that her body was never found. Apparently the Germans took her corpse along with their wounded as they retreated from the battlefield. Also because of her nom de guerre, she did not appear among the list of dead from that battle. On February 23, 1984, a fellow World War II veteran, Antonin Cabizolles, began a quest to recognize Collette Nirouet. Through a lengthy and difficult process, Cabizolles was able to piece together

the story of her life and military service. He contacted his comrades, who knew Nirouet personally and fought alongside her. These men provided Cabizolles with the testimony required to write her biography.

—Leigh Whaley

See also France, Resistance during World War II, Women and

References and Further Reading

Cabizolles, Antonin. 1987. *Eveylne ou l'Etrange disparue des combats de l'Oberwald: récit historique* [Eveylne or the Strange Disappearance from the Battle of Oberwald: Historical Account]. Paris: Entente.

NLMA

See National Legion of Mothers of America

NONGQAWUSE (1841–1898)

Xhosa (South Africa) prophetess who precipitated a millenarian movement among her people known as the Great Cattle Killing. The years preceding Nongqawuse's prophecies had been difficult ones for the Xhosa. They had fought and lost two wars against the Cape Colony, the so-called Seventh (1846–1847) and Eighth (1850–1852) Frontier Wars, and colonial troops had destroyed Xhosa crops, seized their cattle, and annexed large tracts of Xhosa land. Then a lung sickness, contagious bovine pleuropneumonia (CBPP), brought in from Europe in 1853, began to decimate Xhosa livestock herds. Blight was also destroying maize fields, damaging the stalks before the corn had ripened. The Xhosa were experiencing a period of psychological trauma, continual loss of their land to the

British, and food shortages due to the combination of military defeat and natural disaster. The circumstances turned the Xhosa to indigenous belief systems for relief. Several prophets arose, including an adolescent orphan girl, Nongqawuse. She lived with her uncle, Mhlakaza, a disillusioned Christian convert who preached a new gospel containing both Xhosa animist and Christian religious elements.

In April 1856, while playing with a friend at a pool on a river near her home, the fifteen-year-old Nongqawuse reported that two strangers identifying themselves as long-departed ancestors told her that Xhosa cattle were rotten, cursed, and must be slaughtered. Xhosa crops, which were infected with a blight, were also to be destroyed. Xhosa ancestors would then arise from the dead and help the living in a holy war against the British, driving both colonial invaders and Xhosa unbelievers into the sea. The Xhosa could then reclaim their land, restore tradition, and the lung sickness devastating their herds and the blight afflicting their maize would cease. New cattle herds would magically appear, grain bins would overflow, and sickness and death, poverty and witchcraft would cease. In response, the paramount Xhosa chief, Sarhili, slaughtered his herds and ordered subordinate chiefs to do likewise.

Mhlakaza, supposedly interpreting his niece's visions, then determined a day of resurrection, by which time all cattle must be killed, crops destroyed, new grain bins built, cattle-folds laid out, and witchcraft ended. When nothing occurred on three separate days of resurrection, the entire situation collapsed. The results, however, were catastrophic. Close to 80 percent of the nation's cattle—more than 400,000 animals—were slaughtered, 40,000 Xhosa died of hunger, and 150,000 were displaced. The Xhosa lost two-thirds of their land, their economic and political independence, and many survivors were forced to seek refuge and ill-paid employment in the colony (Beck 2000, 46).

Debate about the “great cattle killing” continues more than 140 years after the event. One

widely accepted interpretation argues that this millenarian movement arose from colonial pressure, Christian and Xhosa resurrection and regeneration beliefs, and the epidemic of CBPP. Some scholars place much of the blame on Nongqawuse's uncle and the tribal chiefs, while many Xhosa continue to fault the Cape colonial governor, Sir George Grey, for the event and its catastrophic consequences. These latter "androcentric" interpretations have been challenged by some who argue that issues of gender, women's rights, and Xhosa male sexual misconduct led to Nongqawuse's prophecies.

—Roger B. Beck

See also Colenso, Harriette

References and Further Reading

- Beck, Roger. 2000. *The History of South Africa*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Bradford, Helen. 1996. "Women, Gender and Colonialism: Rethinking the History of the British Cape Colony and its Frontier Zones, ca. 1806–1870." *Journal of African History*, 3(37):351–370.
- Mostert, Noel. 1992. *Frontiers: The Epic of South Africa's Creation and the Tragedy of the Xhosa People*. New York: Knopf.
- Peires, Jeff. 1989. *The Dead Will Arise: Nongqawuse and the Great Xhosa Cattle-Killing Movement of 1856–1857*. Bloomington: Indiana University.
- Switzer, Les. 1993. *Power and Resistance in an African Society. The Ciskei Xhosa and the Making of South Africa*. Madison: University of Wisconsin.

NONHELEMA (OR GRENADIER SQUAW) (CA. 1720–1786)

An important cultural mediator and Shawnee leader. White people called her the Grenadier or Grenadier Squaw because of her bearing and height (nearly six foot six).

Nonhelema married first a Shawnee, then a white captive named Richard Butler, and finally the Shawnee Moluntha. Probably born in Maryland, Nonhelema, also known as Katherine, lived in Pennsylvania before she and her brother, Cornstalk, moved to Ohio, where they each led neighboring villages on the Scioto Creek.

Nonhelema was a warrior woman, whose participation in the colonial frontier wars (including the Battle of Bushy Run in 1774), convinced her that Shawnee survival depended on peace. During the American Revolution, many Shawnee aided the British, but Nonhelema and her brother Cornstalk led a peace faction. After her brother's murder by militia at Fort Randolph in 1777, Nonhelema separated from her tribe to support the Americans. She warned Fort Randolph of a Shawnee attack in 1778, negotiated with the attackers for the Fort, and disguised messengers, who were sent to warn Fort Donnally that a Shawnee attack was imminent. Her large herd of cattle and horses were destroyed during the Fort Randolph siege. In 1780, she served as guide and translator for Lieutenant-Colonel Augustin Mottin de la Balme, the U.S. inspector general of cavalry, when he traveled to Illinois to treat with Indians.

The frontier war continued after the Anglo-American Treaty of 1783. Nonhelema petitioned Congress in 1785 for a 1,000-acre grant of the land in Ohio as compensation for her service during the war and the loss of livestock. Instead, Congress voted her a pension of daily rations for life and an annual allotment of a set of clothes and a blanket. In 1786, when General Benjamin Logan led Kentucky militia against the Ohio Shawnee, Nonhelema and her husband and family surrendered to the troops. After they were in army custody, a soldier killed Moluntha, and the Americans detained Nonhelema at Pittsburgh. While at Fort Pitt, she helped the commander compile a dictionary of Shawnee words. She died sometime after her release in December 1786.

—Joan R. Gundersen

See also American Revolution, Role of Women in the; Wake, Nancy; Winema; Winnemucca, Sarah

References and Further Reading

- Calloway, Colin. 1995. *The American Revolution in Indian Country: Crisis and Diversity in Native American Communities*. Cambridge, England: Cambridge University.
- Thom, Dark Rain. 1994. *Kohkumthena's Grandchildren: The Shawnee*. Indianapolis, IN: Guild Press.

NORWAY, RESISTANCE
MOVEMENT DURING WORLD
WAR II, WOMEN AND

Resistance of Norwegian women during the Nazi occupation of Norway from 1940 to 1945. Occupation by a foreign enemy means a state of emergency for the occupied society that in many ways calls into question what was previously taken for granted. Among the social relations that become insecure in this exceptional situation are gender relations. As Norwegian pre-war society was organized very traditionally with regard to gender roles, the participation of women in the resistance movement mirrored, to a certain extent, their traditional roles in the social realms. There were “male” and “female” responsibilities—even in the resistance movement. But the state of war moved the borders of those gendered responsibilities and women participated in the movement in ways that by no means conformed with traditional gender roles.

At the beginning of the German occupation of Norway, which lasted from April 9, 1940, until May 8, 1945, King Haakon VII and the government escaped into exile in Britain. In September 1940 a collaborationist regime under fascist leader Vidkun Quisling was installed, which was a starting point of the attempt to reorganize all of Norwegian society according to fascist principles. This was the main reason for the formation of a resistance movement, which grew dramatically during the entire period of occupation. Tactics included civil disobedience and creation of a civil and military resistance organization.

Different parts of the resistance went through various developmental phases. The campaigns of protest and boycott in which tens of thousands of Norwegians protested against measures of the Quisling regime began in the autumn of 1940, and they made up one of the most outstanding features of the Norwegian resistance. People repudiated their membership in institutions or organizations, which were to be Nazi-fied, or they protested by writing letters of dissent to the authorities. Even if the initiative for those campaigns often came from mostly male political leaders (such as in the labor unions), many women participated.

Two sisters initiated one very famous campaign, the so-called school battle in 1942. The school battle involved protest actions against the Nazification (“new ordering,” to use a term of the collaborationist Quisling regime) of teaching and the teacher’s professional organization. In February 1942, when laws were promulgated that teachers and pupils would automatically become members of Nazi organizations and that education would be in accord with fascist ideology, teachers organized a protest campaign and more than 14,000 resigned from their professional organization. Schools were closed for a month by a de facto strike. Afterward, 1,000 male teachers were arrested and sent to northern Norway for forced labor. Meanwhile, there was a protest campaign in which approximately 10,000 parents protested against the Nazification of education. As a result of these acts of resistance, the regime could not Nazify school education to the extent that it had desired.

Along with these acts of defiance there was symbolic resistance. Many Norwegians wore red “jelly bag” caps representing the *holdningskampen* (the fight for the “real” national attitude). Women, traditionally responsible for managing everyday life under the difficult conditions of material shortages in wartime, were also the producers and bearers of those signs of “patriotic attitudes.”

The more organized forms of resistance started at the end of 1940, when the leaders and representatives of some organizations, which

were taken over by Nazi-rule, continued their work illegally. There were two central organizations, the Koordinasjonskomiteen (coordination committee) and the Kretsen (circle), which varied in their orientation toward the government-in-exile, but nonetheless worked very closely together. Most of their members were representatives of the Norwegian prewar civil society and because at that time women were still represented by men in politics, only a few women were to be found in the so-called Sivorg (civil organization). They held primarily secretarial positions.

There were many forms of resistance where women did very important work. Their tasks often would be smuggling of information, weapons, or food, and often would occur in public and under the eyes of German patrols. As women they could exploit the image of a naïve girl whom no one would suspect of carrying weapons. Women were active distributors (and, to a minor degree, producers) of illegal newspapers; they were top-agents of the resistance movement's espionage organization XU; and they were couriers for the Milord (the military resistance organization). Moreover, women played a very important role in hiding and accommodating persecuted people traveling to the Swedish border or to England.

Although a large number of women assisted Norwegian troops after the German invasion in April 1940, they were not regarded as part of the military forces. When the Milord was systematically built up toward the end of the war, this realm was a nearly exclusive men's sphere. The few women who played an active role in the Milord (and, as a result, crossed traditional gender borders) were forgotten in the Norwegian culture of commemoration after 1945, as were all the women who simply had done the work of a "patriotic housewife."

—Claudia Lenz

See also Norway, Women and the Home Front during World War II; Norway, Women's Collaboration during World War II German Occupation of

References and Further Reading

- Dahl, Hans Fredrik, Bernt Hagtvet, and Guri Hjeltnes. 1990. *Den norske nasjonalsosjalismen. Nasjonal Samling 1933–1945 i tekst og bilder* [The Norwegian National Socialism. Nasjonal Samling 1933–1945 in text and images]. Oslo: Pax forlag.
- Lenz, Claudia. 2003. *Haushaltspflicht und Widerstand. Erzählungen norwegischer Frauen über die deutsche Besatzung 1940–1945 im Lichte nationaler Vergangenheitskonstruktionen* [Housewife's Duties and Resistance. Norwegian Women's Narratives about the German Occupation 1940–1945 in the Light of Nationalized Constructions of the Past]. Tübingen, Germany: Edition Diskord.
- Norges krigsleksikon, nettutgave, slagord NSK [The Norwegian War lexicon, netversion, keyword NSK]. <http://lotus.uib.no/norgeslexi/krigslex/n/n1.html#ns-kvinner> (accessed October 28, 2004).
- Sveri, Elisabeth. 1991. *Kvinner i norsk motstandsbevegelse 1940–1945* [Women in the Norwegian Resistance Movement 1940–1945]. Oslo: Norges hjemmefrontmuseum.
- Værnø, Grete, and Elisabeth Sveri. 1995. *Kvinnenes innsats under annen verdenskrig* [Women's Commitments in World War II]. Oslo: Kvinners frivillige beredskap.

NORWAY, WOMEN AND THE HOME FRONT DURING WORLD WAR II

Deep effects of World War II on Norwegian women. If a country is occupied by a foreign power such as Norway was between 1940 and 1945, people's lives are changed dramatically, not only because of the military presence of the occupier, but also because of the regime of occupation. The restrictions concerning politics and culture touched everyday life when newspapers, cinema, and even sports activities were taken over by Nazi rule. As a consequence, many Norwegians boycotted all types of official cul-

tural events, and social life more and more took place in privacy. Other restrictions, such as a curfew after darkness, also changed everyday life. As far as the gender-related consequences of the German occupation of Norway, it is necessary to be informed about the living conditions of the average population at the time of the German invasion. Norway had about 3 million inhabitants, which meant about 10 people per square kilometer (or per 3.86 square miles). The economy was mostly agrarian; most of the approximately 330,000 farms existing in 1939 were very small and often the farmers were hardly able to survive on what they produced.

Families were poor and frequently had numerous children, many of whom died before they were grown. In farming households, everyone—men, women, and children—had to do hard work, but gender roles and responsibilities were still very traditional. Only the bigger Norwegian cities like Oslo were beginning to develop an industrial culture and at the same time a modernization of social life was taking place. Women were able to find work outside of the home, but this also meant that women staying at home with children now were regarded as housewives and no longer as part of a household's economy. Statistically the number of housewives rose from 445,466 in 1930 to 651,230 in 1946. The fact that women were having fewer children but were becoming mothers at a younger age was another effect of modernization.

The German occupation, especially the policy of Nazification starting at the end of 1940, had far-reaching effects on the gender-related organization of the public and private spheres. The totalitarian grip of the occupier and the collaborationist regime under Vidkun Quisling was directed toward political organizations, societies, and culture and media—the traditionally masculine spheres of power within the society. Consequently private lives became the realm of clandestine organization or the circulation of subversive and resistant codes. Men and women—in their everyday behavior and in the choice of cultural and sporting events they

would visit or boycott—made decisions that were no longer private.

A very important facet of how the German occupation of Norway particularly influenced women was shortages of food and other goods needed in everyday life as well as confiscation of materials the occupation power needed for warfare (e.g., warm cloth or rubber boots). It was part of a woman's traditional duties to organize or produce substitutes for missing items. Women had the difficult task of supplying food, clothes, and other things needed daily and this led to many strategies and tricks that were not quite legal in the eyes of the occupation power. Black markets flourished. Such nonconformist behavior, however, could not quite be called "resistance."

On the other hand, the line between the private and the political was definitely transcended when refugees were hidden in private households; in this case, women had to supply everything the refugees needed. Gender arrangements changed under the condition of the German occupation. Women's traditional responsibilities demanded more initiative, creativity, and courage than in peacetime and sometimes were even part of a resistance struggle. Paradoxically, after the war the culture of tribute remembered only male resistance heroes and housewives supporting the effort were doing nothing but a woman's duty.

—Claudia Lenz

See also Norway, Resistance Movement in World War II, Women and; Norway, Women's Collaboration during World War II German Occupation of

References and Further Reading

- Esborg, Line. 1995. *Krigshverdag. Oslo-kvinner forteller* [Everyday Life in Wartime: Oslo Women Recount]. Oslo: Norsk folkemuseum.
- Hjeltnes, Guri. 1986. "Hverdag" [Everyday-life]. In *Norge i krig: fremmedåk og frihetskamp 1940–1945* [Norway at War. Foreign Rule and Struggle for Freedom 1940–1945]. Edited by Magne Skodvin. Oslo: Aschehoug.

NORWAY, WOMEN'S
COLLABORATION DURING
WORLD WAR II GERMAN
OCCUPATION OF

The active support of some Norwegian women for the German occupiers of their country during World War II. When one speaks about *collaboration* in an occupied country, one at first has to specify what this term really means. Is political and ideological conviction a necessary criterion for regarding certain ways of acting as collaboration? Or is this necessarily to be assumed when people do paid work for the occupation authorities and thereby contribute to the functioning of its rule? Even sexual relations between occupying soldiers and indigenous women are often stigmatized as collaboration. This section will not solve these definitional problems. Instead, it only deals with the most obvious case of collaboration, that is, the participation in the political movement or party supporting the regime of occupation. In the case of Norway the fascist party Nasjonal Samling (National Gathering) was allowed to build a government and thereby was given a certain degree of power by the Germans.

Nasjonal Samling was, like all fascist movements in Europe, built on the Führer principle, an authoritarian hierarchy with its founder and leader Vidkun Quisling at the top. Influential positions in the Nasjonal Samling could only be attained by those who were completely obedient to Quisling's political visions and plans. The higher positions of the party and the government it formed in 1942 were held exclusively by men.

Quisling's ideas about the power relations in his party mirrored his vision for the organization of the whole society. His ideal was a strictly hierarchical and elitist society based on professions and social strata. His authoritarian principles were also patriarchal, as the leaders always should be outstanding men, followed and obeyed by the folk, which, of course, included women. But even if women were by definition excluded from the centers of power, the fascist's social vision also had a certain attraction for

women, as they were offered a positive identification as bearers of the nation's biological and cultural or symbolic reproduction.

In 1933 when the Nasjonal Samling party was founded, a women's organization, Nasjonal Samlings Kvinneorganisasjon (NSK) was also organized. It was led by Vidkun Quisling's wife, Maria. In the beginning, members of NSK were mainly recruited among Maria Quisling's friends but soon the organization grew and a third of NSK's members were women. Especially toward the end of the war, when more and more members resigned from the party, the proportion of women was still rising. This can be explained by the fact that many men who were members of Nasjonal Samling sooner or later involved their female relatives in the NSK.

The NSK had its own propaganda section, which published the women's magazine *Heim og Ætt* (*Home and Kin*). In particular it published articles dealing with keeping a household and home economics. The propaganda of the NKS was directed toward the average Norwegian housewife. It transmitted the Nasjonal Samling's ideological program and its ideas about women's duties in the ideal Germanized Norway. In addition to these traditional female concerns there also existed a paramilitary organization, the Kvinnekorps (Women's Corps).

The paradox of the fascist women's organizations in Norway is the fact that they involved female activists in professional work and personal contributions to the political struggle, which fascism ideologically denied to women.

—Claudia Lenz

See also Norway, Resistance Movement during World War II, Women and; Norway, Women and the Home Front during World War II

References and Further Reading

Dahl, Hans Fredrik, Bernt Hagtvat, and Guri Hjeltnes. 1990. *Den norske nasjonalsosjalismen. Nasjonal Samling 1933–1945 i tekst og bilder* [The Norwegian National Socialism. Nasjonal Samling 1933–1945 in Text and Images]. Oslo: Pax forlag.

Norges krigsleksikon, nettutgave, slagord NSK.
[The Norwegian War Lexicon, netversion,
keyword NSK]. [http://lotus.uib.no/norgeslexi/
krigslex/n/n1.html#ns-kvinner](http://lotus.uib.no/norgeslexi/krigslex/n/n1.html#ns-kvinner) (accessed
October 28, 2004).

NURSES, U.S. ARMY NURSE CORPS IN WORLD WAR I

The U.S. Army Nurse Corps sent 10,245 female nurses to the European theater in World War I; on Armistice Day in 1918, 21,480 army nurses were in service around the world. The majority of the Army nurses signed up through the American Red Cross, which ensured that they were registered, examined, and prepared for service. They served in France, Belgium, England, Italy, Serbia, Russia, Hawaii, Puerto Rico, and the Philippines with the U.S. Expeditionary Forces, the British Expeditionary Forces, and the French Forces. One hundred and two nurses died overseas, most from influenza. Three nurses received the Distinguished Service Cross; many others were decorated by the U.S., French, and British militaries.

The Army Nurse Corps organized for World War I with the help of the Red Cross, which provided funding to aid civilian hospitals to organize and prepare nurses for deployment. The first nurses went to France in April 1917 as part of six base hospitals that aided the British Expeditionary Forces. The nurses arrived before U.S. troops. By August 1918, there were fifty base hospitals in Europe and around thirty more were organized. In addition, special hospitals were organized and deployed to treat orthopedic, head, fracture, and psychiatric cases. Because of their service in the war, female nurse anesthetists gained respect for women in their profession. Despite their service in the Army, however, nurses did not hold rank during the war and were only given relative rank after the armistice.

When the United States entered the war, only 403 Army nurses were on active duty. A shortage of nurses existed throughout the war and increased with the influenza epidemic of 1918. To alleviate the shortage, the Army expanded the age requirement from 25 to 35 years old to 21 to 45 years old and allowed married women and citizens of allied nations to serve in the Corps. However, the Army prohibited 1,000 trained, qualified, and willing African American nurses from serving overseas because of regulations requiring segregated living quarters.

Nurses served in hospitals located both close to and far from the battle. Many nurses, believing that it was the height of nursing care to work where they were most needed, aspired to work as close to the battle as possible. The nearest hospitals to the battle were dressing stations, which were located as close as 1.7 miles (2.74 kilometers) from the battle. The dressing stations provided immediate first aid to soldiers who were then classified and put on ambulances to be sent to field hospitals. The field hospitals had 216 beds, were 2 to 4 miles (3.22 to 6.44 kilometers) removed from the line of battle, and were where the wounded were stabilized before transportation to an evacuation hospital. Evacuation hospitals were larger than field hospitals, with 432 beds, and nurses at these hospitals performed a variety of functions involved with emergencies and the first surgeries for the most seriously wounded.

The Army wanted to minimize the chance that nurses would be killed or captured. Therefore, the Army's Table of Organization did not permit nurses to serve at dressing stations, field hospitals, or evacuation hospitals because they were so close to the battle line and moved with the tide of battle. The demands of war, however, resulted in nurses serving in these hospitals despite formal regulations. Mobile hospitals also moved with the troops and treated the most seriously wounded as close as possible to the front lines, including those with head, chest, and abdominal wounds, and those needing treatment for shock. Nurses also worked in teams of three

U.S. ARMY NURSE CORPS IN WORLD WAR I

“Our first assignment was to duty at the base hospital at Mar-Surler, few miles from Never . . . This base hospital was built in a farmer’s field, I think. At any rate, there were no solid roads or paths. We waded in the mud to our ankles between the buildings, & shoveled out what we brought in on our rubber boots. The buildings were knock-down shacks & the one I worked in had no windows, also the one we slept in. We were just taking in the overflow from the better equipped wards & helping until the arrival of a base hospital unit that was expected to arrive at any time. At the time we arrived there was a big drive going on at the front & patients were being sent in by the train load.”

—May Lanham (later Austin),
Army nurse stationed in France during World War I.
Collection #969 (WWI, ANC #169 IV 969.D1d),
May (Lanham) Austin Collection, Gift of Gloria A. Karow,
Women in Military Service for America Memorial Foundation, Inc.,
Archives, Arlington, VA.

“This morning four teams were chosen for casualty clearing stations and are to be ready at any moments notice. In each team there are one surgeon, one anesthetist, one nurse and one orderly. The C.C.S’s are a little behind the lines . . . They stay about two months, come back and are relieved by other teams. It is very exciting and however anxious everyone is to go, they are just as anxious to get back again to civilization. One really finds out a little of what actually is up there and although I’m perfectly willing to go wherever sent I am just as well satisfied here. I see enough of the awful realities. The trip up gives a very realistic picture as they pass through the war zone, thoroughly destroyed villages and of course are in constant danger of bombs etc. C’est la guerre. So far we have been quite lucky. Last summer one clearing station was bombed. Dr. Brewer’s tent was blown up while he was doing an operation fortunately for him. Miss MacDonald one of our nurses was wounded losing an eye but has another and works as fine as ever. I think that is a good record considering the numbers we have sent up.”

—Letter from Ethel Roxana Arthur (Presbyterian U.S.A) Hospital, B.E.F.,
to friends, February 20, 1918,
Collection #147, Ethel Roxana Arthur Collection, Gift of Diana Andersen,
Women in Military Service for America Memorial Foundation, Inc.,
Archives, Arlington, VA.

“Was up to Verdun and St. Michiel since Nov. 11—stood in No Man’s Land within a week after the signing of the Armistice. This place is the limits now—mud everywhere, and it is some *mud*, believe me—Nothing appeals to me like a cozy corner in the U.S.A.—tho I am surely glad I could come over.”

—Letter from Anna Grace McCrady, Chief Nurse, AEF,
to her sister, Winifred, December 9, 1918,
from Base Hospital #117, WWI, ANC, #1600,
Women in Military Service for America Memorial Foundation, Inc.,
Archives, Arlington, VA.

on hospital trains that transported up to 1,500 patients from evacuation hospitals to base hospitals. With 500 beds, base hospitals were the largest of all the hospitals and were located in the rear areas. These hospitals provided treatment for patients arriving from other hospitals and were where casualties recovered before being sent back into the field or to the United States. In the United States, nurses in the corps served in post, cantonment, and general military hospitals.

Nurses at each of these hospitals treated a variety of war wounds, as well as wounds caused by the “new” weapon, poison gas. Beginning in the spring of 1918, nurses also treated thousands of victims of the influenza epidemic. They worked fourteen- to eighteen-hour shifts week after week, and often worked for days on end when necessary. They endured the cold in inadequate clothing, with meager living and sanitary conditions, and often became sick themselves. In addition, the nurses lived in dangerous conditions, as hospitals in all areas were shelled and bombed; nurses had to protect both themselves and their patients.

—Kara D. Vuic

See also Fairchild, Helen; Mercy Ship; Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War II; Red Cross of the United States: World War I and World War II

References and Further Reading

- Bongard, Ella. 1997. *Nobody Ever Wins a War: The World War I Diaries of Ella Mae Bongard*, R.N. Ottawa: Janeric.
- Gavin, Lettie. 1997. *American Women in World War I: They Also Served*. Niwot: University Press of Colorado.
- Sarnecky, Mary T. 1999. *A History of the U.S. Army Nurse Corps*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania.
- Stimson, Julia C. 1918. *Finding Themselves: The Letters of an American Army Chief Nurse in a British Hospital in France*. New York: Macmillan.

NURSES, U.S. ARMY NURSE CORPS IN WORLD WAR II

During World War II approximately 59,000 women served in the U.S. Army Nurse Corps; among them, 32,500 served overseas. U.S. army nurses served in all theaters of the war, including the major campaigns of North Africa, Italy, France, and the Pacific, as well as the minor theaters of China, Burma, India, the U.S.S.R., Iran, Alaska, Iceland, Panama, and the South Atlantic. Army nurses served closer to the front lines than ever before, landing with the troops or only days after the first assaults. Initially nurses were deployed without military training, but beginning in July 1943 nurses completed a four-week training program in military life. Nurse anesthetists and psychiatric nurses were in great demand throughout the war and underwent additional specialized training.

When Pearl Harbor was bombed, the Army Nurse Corps included fewer than 1,000 nurses, but within six months 12,000 women joined the corps. Many of the nurses who served in the war signed up through the Cadet Nurse Corps. Established in 1943, the Corps offered free nursing education in exchange for military or civilian nursing service for the duration of the war. By the end of the war almost 170,000 nurses had joined the Corps. In January 1945, however, because the Army was experiencing a shortage of medical personnel, President Franklin Roosevelt proposed drafting nurses. The Nurses Selective Service Act passed the House of Representatives and was within a single vote of passing in the Senate when Germany surrendered. With the need for nurses alleviated, the measure was never employed.

Despite the need for nurses, the Army limited the number of African American nurses. Those who were accepted endured segregated hospitals and living quarters, and were often assigned to less desirable duties. In all, approximately 500 African American nurses served in Liberia, Burma, the Southwest Pacific, England, and the United States. In addition, the Army Nurse

NURSES, U.S. ARMY NURSE CORPS IN WORLD WAR II



U.S. Army nurses march to a waiting troop ship carrying medical equipment and their few personal belongings, 1942. (Library of Congress)

Corps did not accept professional male nurses. Male nurses drafted into the military were utilized as corpsmen with less responsibility and rank or in nonmedical units.

The chain of medical evacuation proved successful in the campaigns of North Africa, and thereafter was used in all theaters. After receiving initial first aid provided by medics in the field, casualties came by litter bearers and ambulances to field hospitals. Approximately 18 nurses worked in each field hospital, which held between 75 and 150 patients. Nurses triaged patients and those deemed strong enough were sent to evacuation hospitals; those needing immediate care were sent to surgery. Casualties who were unable to be moved were either stabi-

lized for treatment or sent to shock wards. The next step in the chain was the evacuation hospital, where 53 nurses treated up to 750 patients who were operated on and were recovering from surgery. Both field and evacuation hospitals closely followed the combat troops; thus, the nurses set up the hospitals in tents, moved on short notice, and worked under hostile conditions.

Casualties were moved from evacuation hospitals to station and general hospitals via trains, ships, or aircraft. On hospital trains, a single nurse worked on each car with up to 32 patients. Nurses also worked on hospital ships that were supposed to be safe from attack but nonetheless were bombed in three separate inci-

dents. Approximately 500 Army flight nurses served in war for the first time and underwent special training that emphasized crash procedures, field survival, and the effects of high altitude on patients. Transport planes were subject to enemy attack because they also carried cargo; 17 flight nurses died, most in crashes due to poor weather or landing fields.

The next step in the chain of evacuation was the station hospital, where the critically wounded received specialized treatment. The last step was the general hospital, where those needing more specific diagnosis, laboratory tests, or long periods of recuperation or therapy were treated. Once recovered, patients were then reclassified and sent either back to the field or to the United States. Both station and general hospitals were semipermanent locations, usually with running water and electricity.

During the war, 201 Army nurses died, 16 because of direct enemy action; 83 Army nurses were held as prisoners of war in various locations, of those, 66 were held by the Japanese for almost 3 years in the Santo Tomas Internment Camp in the Philippines. More than 1,600 Army

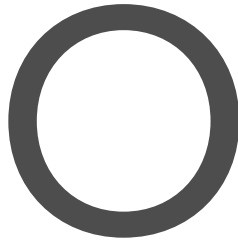
nurses received medals, citations, and commendations for their service. Until 1944 the nurses served with relative rank, but in June 1944 the Army granted nurses officers' commissions, full retirement benefits, dependants' allowances, and equal pay.

—Kara D. Vuic

See also Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War I

References and Further Reading

- Fessler, Diane Burke. 1996. *No Time for Fear: Voices of American Military Nurses in World War II*. East Lansing: Michigan State University.
- Norman, Elizabeth M. 1999. *We Band of Angels: The Untold Story of American Nurses Trapped on Bataan by the Japanese*. New York: Random House.
- Sarnecky, Mary T. 1999. *A History of the U.S. Army Nurse Corps*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania.
- Tomblin, Barbara Brooks. 1996. *G.I. Nightingales: The Army Nurse Corps in World War II*. Lexington: University of Kentucky.



OLMSTED, MILDRED SCOTT
(1890–1990)

American peace activist. Mildred Scott Olmsted was a committed pacifist and Quaker who devoted her life to peace activism. She joined the Women's International League for Peace and Freedom (WILPF) working as the executive secretary of the Pennsylvania branch. She later joined the executive staff of WILPF's national organization, where she served until her retirement in 1966. Olmsted is best known for her service to WILPF, but she devoted her life to peace causes. She served as a board member on a number of peace organizations, and during the Vietnam War she fought for the rights of conscientious objectors and was very active in the antiwar movement.

Olmsted was born and raised in Pennsylvania. She spent her high-school years at the Friends' Central School in Philadelphia, and in 1912 she graduated from Smith College with a degree in history. While working as a settlement-house worker, she attended the Pennsylvania School of Social Work and Health Work, where she earned a certificate in 1913. During World War I Olmsted joined the American Friends Service Committee to provide relief to war-torn France and Germany. The devastation of war on the population, particularly in

famine-wracked Bavaria, led her to pursue a life of peace activism.

In 1922 Olmsted assumed the executive secretaryship of the Pennsylvania branch of WILPF, where she led the branch membership drive. She used her position to launch her participation in the national organization and in 1934 she became the national organization secretary of WILPF. Olmsted believed that local branches served a primary function in the national organization and provided the membership needed to promote peace legislation. A great believer in civil liberties, she actively campaigned with founding WILPF member, Mary Church Terrell, to establish an interracial organization and to work with the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) anti-lynching campaign. In 1946 she replaced Dorothy Detzer as the national administrative secretary of the WILPF and held this position until she retired in 1966.

In the post-World War II era, despite the Holocaust and the atomic bomb, Olmsted continued to work for WILPF and maintained optimism about humanity. In 1946 she supported the United Nations believing that, despite the dominance of the five big powers, a world body was the right step toward the rule of world law. The 1950s brought new challenges, with the cold war and rise of McCarthyism. During this

time Olmsted lobbied Congress to adopt an armistice agreement to end the war in Korea. As other peace organizations withered under the anticommunist storm, WILPF survived in part from the capable leadership of Olmsted. After her retirement she continued to promote world peace and was active in the civil rights and anti-war movements. Prior to her death in 1990, she was honored with numerous peace awards.

—*Danelle Moon*

See also Detzer, Dorothy

References and Further Reading

Bacon, Margaret Hope. 1993. *One Woman's Passion for Peace and Freedom: The Life of Mildred Scott Olmsted*. New York: Syracuse University Press.

OLSCHANEZKY, SONYA
(1923–1944)

Participant in the French Resistance who worked with the British secret service during World War II. Sonya (or Sonia) Olschanezky was born in Chemnitz, Germany, on December 25, 1923. Her father was a Russian Jew who was a sales representative for a company that manufactured women's stockings. He moved his family to Romania in 1926 and then to France. Sonia joined the Resistance after the Germans conquered France in 1940. As a foreign-born Jew, she was arrested in May 1942 and sent to a detention center at Darcy. Her mother was able to purchase false papers through friends in Germany and bribe a German official to release her daughter. Olschanezky promptly resumed her resistance work. She was part of the Jewish wing, led by her fiancé, Jacques Weil, connected to the British Special Operations Executive "Prosper" network. Under the code name Tania she worked both as a courier and a participant in

sabotage. The network was exposed and she was apprehended in January 1944. After interrogation she was held at the Fresnes prison in Paris. On May 13, 1944, she was sent from Fresnes with seven other captured British women agents to the Karlsruhe civil prison in Germany.

On July 6, 1944, on the direct order of Ernest Kaltenbrunner, the head of the SS security office, Olschanezky, Andrée Borrel, Vera Leigh, and Diana Rowden were moved to the Natzweiler-Struthof concentration camp. The women were executed on the day of their arrival. A watercolor of Olschanezky and her three companions, painted by Brian Stonehouse, an SOE agent and prisoner who witnessed their arrival at Natzweiler-Struthof, has a place of honor in the Special Forces Club in London.

—*Bernard Cook*

See also Atkins, Vera H.; Borrel, Andrée; Leigh, Vera; Rowden, Diana

References and Further Reading

Foot, M. R. D. (Michael Richard Daniell). 1984 (1966). *SOE in France: An Account of the Work of the British Special Operations Executive 1940–1944*. Frederick, MD: University Publications of America.

Kramer, Rita. 1995. *Flames in the Field: The Stories of Four SOE Agents in Occupied France*. New York: Viking Penguin.

Nicholas, Elizabeth. 1958. *Death Be Not Proud*. London: Cresset.

Spartacus Web. "Sonia Olschanezky." <http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/SOEolschanezky.htm> (accessed September 29, 2004).

125TH M. M. RASKOVA
BORISOV GUARDS BOMBER
AVIATION REGIMENT

See Soviet Union, 125th M. M. Raskova
Borisov Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment

ONIONS, MAUDE (B. 1885)

Army signaller with the British Women's Army Auxiliary Corps (WAAC) in France during World War I. After the war Onions became a pacifist.

In 1917 Maude Onions and a small group of women arrived in Boulogne, France, to replace men as signalers at the front. Formed in 1917, the purpose of WAAC was to send women abroad so that men could work closer to the battlefield.

In 1918, the Boulogne building she worked in was destroyed by a German raid. For six months during the last German offensive she was stationed in a small French village near Calais. On November 11, 1918, she signaled to the Allied armies in the field to cease hostilities.

While in France she played the piano at the Red Cross canteen and provided music for the military services at the English church in Boulogne.

Following the war, Onions recollected many of her conversations and encounters with soldiers in a recording, which she considered a pacifist effort to prevent another world war. Onions described the experiences of men at the front as they related them to her, as well as her own emotional transformation, which led to her pacifism. Her contact with soldiers and work in the war enabled her, though her book, *A Women at War: Being Experiences of an Army Signaller in France 1917–1919*, to provide a link between the public and the battlefield.

—Barbara Penny Kanner

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I

References and Further Reading

- Kanner, Barbara Penny. 1997. *Woman in Context*. New York: G. K. Hall.
- Onions, Maude. 1929. *A Woman at War: Being Experiences of an Army Signaller in France 1917–1919*. London: The C. W. Daniel Company.

ORADOUR-SUR-GLANE
MASSACRE

French village, approximately 16 miles (25.75 kilometers) northwest of Limoges, destroyed in a retaliatory measure on June 10, 1944. As it moved from Toulouse toward the Allied invasion site in Normandy in June 1944, the 2nd *Das Reich* SS Armored Division had come under attack by partisan units. Resistance fighters had blown up a railway bridge at St. Junien, 6.2 miles (10 kilometers) from Oradour. Two soldiers had been shot at the bridge. Near St. Junien a truck carrying eight SS men had been ambushed. Three of its occupants had been killed and the rest captured. In another attack near St. Junien, an SS officer, Major Helmut Kämpffe, had been taken captive. In retaliation, the division's 3rd Company of the 1st Battalion executed an action against the inhabitants of Oradour on June 10. Not a single person in Oradour belonged to the resistance and German soldiers had not previously set foot in the village (Kruuse 1968, 6–7). SS Major Otto Dickmann, the commander of 1st Battalion, had already ordered counterterrorist reprisals against French civilians in the area. Three women had been hanged in Frayssinet-le-Gelat on June 8 and on June 9. Dickmann's unit, the 1st battalion of the Waffen-SS (Der Führer) regiment, engaged in random acts of terror against the inhabitants of Rochechouart about 6.4 miles (11 kilometers) from St. Junien. The mayor of St. Junien, when questioned by the SS, reputedly claimed that 1,800 of his town's 10,000 inhabitants were armed members of the resistance (Kruuse 1968, 32).

Why Oradour was chosen as an example is unknown, but its size and lack of a contingent of armed Maquis, the French Resistance, made it a more tempting target. Another possibility is the fact that there were three nearby towns with similar names, and that Oradour-sur-Vayre, 16.16 miles (26 kilometers) from St. Junien, might have been the intended target.



Oradour-sur-Glane, September 26, 1944.
(National Archives)

The SS unit entered Oradour after driving people from surrounding farms and hamlets into the village. The troops ordered all the people in the village to assemble in the village center for an identity check. The men were separated from the 400 to 500 women and children, who were then forced into the village church (Kruuse 1968, 52). The SS then began the slaughter, shooting the men or forcing them into buildings that were set afire. Killings also began at the church and the building was set afire, incinerating those who had not been shot. More than six hundred men, women, and children were murdered (Kruuse 1968, 81). Few escaped the slaughter.

Charles de Gaulle issued a decree for the ruins of the village to be left as they stood as a memorial to the victims of Nazism.

Major Dickmann and many of the SS perpetrators were later killed in military action; others disappeared in the fog of war and the demise of the Third Reich. Twenty-one SS men were tried in France in 1953. Six were former German SS troopers and a lieutenant; however, thirteen of the SS men and a sergeant were Alsatians. The trial resulted in two death sentences and eighteen prison terms for members of the company (Kruuse 1968, 93–94 and 138). One week after the trial, however, all of the sentences were annulled by the French parliament who voted for amnesty to spare the Alsatians from prosecution as war criminals.

—Bernard Cook

See also Germany, Armed Forces, World War II Atrocities of; Lidice Massacre

References and Further Reading

- Kruuse, Jens. 1968. *War for an Afternoon*. Trans. Carl Malmberg. New York: Pantheon.
- Zentner, Christian, and Friedemann Bedürftig, eds. 1991. "Oradour-sur-Glane." Page 677 in *The Encyclopedia of the Third Reich*. Trans. and ed. by Amy Hackett. New York: Macmillan.

ORCZY, BARONESS EMMA (1865–1947)

Promoter of enlistment in Great Britain during World War I. Emma Orczy, the daughter of composer Felix Orczy and his wife Emma Wass, was born on the family's Hungarian estate at Tarnaors on September 23, 1865. The childhood death of a sister and a peasant uprising on the family's estate left profound memories Orczy later used in her writing. Felix Orczy was close to the Austro-Hungarian royal family and traveled frequently to perform, often taking Emma, who formed a lifelong attachment to the monarchies and palaces of Europe. Educated at a Roman Catholic convent in Brussels, she began

studying painting in London at the Heatherly School of Art and the London School of Art.

In 1894, Emma Orczy married English painter and illustrator Montague Barstow, by whom she had one child, John Orczy-Barstow, born in 1899. Orczy enthusiastically embraced Britain as her home country and turned from painting to writing. Her career began with a series of magazine serials, and she completed her first successful novel, *The Scarlet Pimpernel*, in five weeks in 1905. This work spawned a series of sequels, which Orczy wrote until 1940. Orczy also authored a mystery series with an aristocratic female protagonist, beginning with *Lady Molly of Scotland Yard* (1910) and historical fiction.

When World War I broke out in August 1914, Orczy was determined to prove her loyalty to Britain, despite her family's Hungarian titles and land. Inspired by the 1904 novel, *The Four Feathers*, by A. E. W. Mason, Orczy wrote editorials to the London *Daily Mail* in September 1914, suggesting that British women refuse to be seen with men not in uniform, and advocating giving white feathers of cowardice to encourage men to enlist. This grew into the "Order of the White Feather" movement, formally organized by Admiral Charles Fitzgerald and headed by Orczy and fellow novelist Mary Ward. The distribution of feathers was heavily publicized, sexually charged, and broadly promoted in the media, and was credited with enlisting 600,000 men for the war. In reality, the giving of feathers was an often disruptive and humiliating experience for men in crucial civilian employment, or wounded men in civilian clothing. Orczy re-

ceived a letter of thanks from King George V, but the government officially discouraged the practice after 1915. After the war, many women who had participated in the Order of the White Feather downplayed their participation, upset at their part in sending men to the trenches. Orczy herself does not mention the Order in her memoirs, and downplayed her support for the war afterward.

Orczy and her family lived at their country house in Kent and spent time in Monte Carlo between the wars; Orczy and Barstow were trapped in Monte Carlo by the 1940 invasion of France. Although technically neutral, Monte Carlo was occupied by the Germans, and Orczy suffered as a British citizen from Gestapo harassment and the British bombing of her house. Widowed in 1943, she returned to Britain after the war and died in London on November 12, 1946, shortly after publishing her memoir, *Links in the Chain of Life*.

—Margaret Sankey

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I

References and Further Reading

- Gullace, Nicoletta. 1997. "White Feathers and Wounded Men: Female Patriotism and the Memory of the Great War." *Journal of British Studies*, 36 (April): 178–206.
- . 2002. *Blood of Our Sons: Men, Women and the Renegotiation of British Citizenship during the Great War*. New York: Palgrave.
- Orczy, Emma. 1947. *Links in the Chain of Life*. London: Hutchinson.

P

PADILLA, JUANA AZURDUY DE

See Azurduy, Juana de Padilla

PANKHURST FAMILY:
EMMELINE, CHRISTABEL,
E. SYLVIA, AND ADELA
PANKHURST WALSH

Leaders in the English suffrage movement who were divided in their attitude toward World War I. Although united in their commitment to English women's suffrage when they formed the militant Women's Social and Political Union (WSPU) in 1903, Emmeline Pankhurst (1858–1928) and her three daughters, Dame Christabel Pankhurst (1880–1958), E. Sylvia Pankhurst (1882–1960), and Adela Pankhurst Walsh (1885–1961), were divided in their beliefs when Britain entered World War I. The Pankhursts were experienced with militancy in that the WSPU, with its motto "Deeds, not Words," pioneered dramatic tactics of illegal protest that resulted in their repeated arrest and imprisonment. The violence of the Great War, however, irreconcilably divided them, with Emmeline and Christabel enthusiastically support-

ing and working for the British war effort, while Sylvia and Adela became leading activists for peace.

When Britain declared war on Germany and its allies in August 1914, the British government released all political prisoners, including the suffragettes. In response, Emmeline announced that the WSPU would suspend all suffrage agitation for the duration of the war. She said that there was no point to women's suffrage if there was no country in which to vote. Demonizing Germany, as did many of her compatriots, she argued that Germany was an "over-masculine country" that denied the basic rights of women: "The Kaiser has already assigned woman's place to the three K's, '*Kinder, Kirche, Küche*,' (children, church, kitchen)" (Purvis 2002, 275). In the struggle for women's liberty, she maintained, it was far better to support the fight against Germany than to fight one's own government. Many, although not all, of the members of the WSPU and other suffrage organizations agreed with Emmeline's position, most enthusiastically her daughter Christabel. For at least one suffragette, "It was almost with a sense of relief that we heard of the declaration of war, and we knew that our militancy, which had reached such an acute stage, could cease" (Pugh 2001, 299). The most prominent dissenter was Emmeline's daughter Sylvia, who, through her own working

PANKHURST FAMILY

“It was a custom of my father and mother to make the round of our bedrooms every night before going themselves to bed. When they entered my room that night I was still awake, but for some reason I chose to feign slumber. My father bent over me, shielding the candle flame with his big hand. I cannot know exactly what thought was in his mind as he gazed down at me, but I heard him say, somewhat sadly, ‘What a pity she wasn’t born a lad.’ . . . I thought about my father’s remark for many days afterward, but I think I never decided that I regretted my sex. However, it was made quite clear that men considered themselves superior to women, and that women apparently acquiesced in that belief.”

—Emmeline Pankhurst, 1914.

My Own Story. New York: Hearst International Library, 5.

women’s organization, the East London Federation of Suffragettes (ELF), continued working for women’s suffrage even as she also campaigned against the war. Emmeline’s youngest daughter Adela, who in January 1914 had emigrated to Australia, was also active in antiwar protest.

Emmeline’s war work involved energetic recruitment and support for compulsory conscription of soldiers to fight and women to do war work. In July 1915 she accepted the government’s request that she organize, at public expense, a large “Right to Serve” procession of women. Modeled on her earlier suffrage demonstrations, women would march to demand the right to work in munitions factories, to counter the strong opposition of the male trade unions. Disheartened by her mother’s pro-war actions, Sylvia felt Emmeline had betrayed the memory of Emmeline’s peace-loving husband, and her own earlier commitment to peace, as in her stand against the Boer War. What brought Sylvia the most anguish, however, was her mother’s statement that if her son were still living, she would want him to fight in the war. Remembering her deceased brother as gentle and pacifistic, Sylvia was shocked that her mother could “Know so little of him that she had failed to sense how alien, how hideous this bestial hate and gross materialism, this butchery must have been to him” (Pankhurst 1932, 67).

In 1916 Emmeline made a trip to the United States to urge support for Serbia, and in the summer of 1917 she went to Russia as a British government delegate to meet with the new head of the revolutionary provisional government, Alexander Kerensky, to urge him to keep Russia in the war. Her most personal effort was the plan she announced in 1915 for members of the WSPU to adopt war babies, children born to unmarried women and servicemen. Emmeline personally adopted four babies.

Christabel also actively promoted the war effort through speeches and writings. In October 1914 she toured the United States in an effort to persuade that country to enter the war. She transformed *The Suffragette*, the journal of the WSPU, into the *Britannia*, with “For King, For Country, For Freedom” as its motto. In its pages Christabel condemned both English pacifism and what she considered German barbarism, and urged the complete destruction of the German nation. She also attacked the weak war leadership of Prime Minister Herbert Henry Asquith. When the more dynamic and militant Lloyd George replaced Asquith in 1916, *Britannia* became one of the government’s strongest supporters.

In contrast, Sylvia focused her energies on organizing antiwar activities, arguing that the war was simply waged for the interests of capitalists. Until blocked by the British government’s re-

fusal to grant her a passport, she planned to attend with other feminist pacifists the International Congress of Women, held in The Hague in April 1915.

Her horrified mother's response to the congress was to label the participants as treasonous.

It is unthinkable that English-women should meet German women to discuss terms of peace while the husbands, sons, and brothers of those women are the men who are murdering our men on the seas and who have committed the awful horrors of the war in Belgium and elsewhere. (Purvis 2002, 274)

Even though Sylvia was not able to attend, she did join the newly formed Women's International League for Peace and Freedom (WILPF).

Concerned about helping working women whose lives were damaged by the war, Sylvia campaigned for equal pay and safer working conditions for women in the factories. She established clinics, nurseries, and milk distribution centers in the East End of London. She protested vehemently when the government reintroduced a policy to forcibly inspect women suspected of being prostitutes for venereal disease. She set up a League for Soldiers and Soldiers' Wives to ameliorate such problems as housing shortages and food scarcity. Still working for women's suffrage but within the broader context of universal rights for adults, in 1916 she changed the name of her organization from the East London Federation of Suffragettes to the Workers' Suffrage Federation (and in 1919 to the Workers' Socialist Federation). In 1917 her suffrage journal *The Woman's Dreadnought* was renamed *The Worker's Dreadnought*.

In Australia Adela agitated against the war by giving speeches throughout the country for various peace and women's organizations, denouncing conscription and promoting socialist ideas. Also a prolific writer, she promoted the cause of peace through journalism and with

such notable antiwar works as a novel (*Put up the Sword*, 1915); a play (*Betrayed*, 1917); and a pamphlet (*After the War, What?* 1917).

After the war ended in November 1918, Christabel unsuccessfully sought to capitalize on the new partial enfranchisement of British women by running for election to parliament on an anti-German platform. Several years later Emmeline also ran unsuccessfully for election. After their defeats, both withdrew from politics. Emmeline, in failing health her last years, died in 1928. Christabel experienced a religious conversion, became an ardent Seventh Day Adventist, moved to California, and was preoccupied for the rest of her life with religious matters. In the years after World War I Adela continued her activism, increasingly as part of a nationalistic xenophobic movement in Australia. Renouncing her earlier communism for right-wing policies, she remained a pacifist and anti-imperialist, and opposed Australia's entrance into World War II. In 1941 she helped found the Australia First movement. Interned briefly in 1942, after her release she withdrew from public activism.

Sylvia remained active in the peace movement throughout the interwar period. As with many of her fellow pacifists, however, her commitment to peace in the 1920s and even more so in the 1930s was complicated by her strong opposition to fascism and to the military aggressions of Mussolini and Hitler. A leader in the Women's World Committee against War and Fascism, she supported the republican cause in the Spanish Civil War. Decrying the destruction caused by fascist bombing, she had an antiwar memorial erected in 1936 on land next to her home, with a plaque condemning those who supported the right of aerial bombardment. When Mussolini invaded Ethiopia in 1935, she tried to rally support for Emperor Haile Selassie's plea for help from the League of Nations. After the invasion she furthered the Ethiopian cause by founding a journal, *New Times and Ethiopian News*, which she edited for twenty years. In 1956 she moved to



Emmeline Goulden Pankhurst on Wall Street. (Library of Congress)

Ethiopia, where she remained active in work for peace and social welfare. When she died in 1960, the grateful Selassie ordered a state funeral. In Britain, however, it was the pro-war Emmeline and not the pacifist Sylvia whose statue was raised in 1930 outside of the Houses of Parliament.

—Nancy Fix Anderson

See also International Congress of Women:
Antiwar Protest of Women in World War I

References and Further Reading

- Pankhurst, E. Sylvia. 1932. *Home Front: A Mirror to Life in England during the First World War*. London: Cresset Library.
- Pugh, Martin. 2001. *The Pankhursts*. London: Penguin.
- Purvis, June. 2002. *Emmeline Pankhurst: A Biography*. New York: Routledge.

- Smith, Angela. 2003. "The Pankhursts and the War: Suffrage Magazines and First World War Propaganda." *Women's History Review* 22:103–118.
- Winslow, Barbara. 1996. *Sylvia Pankhurst: Sexual Politics and Political Activism*. New York: St. Martin's.

PARIS COMMUNE, WOMEN AND THE (1871)

Participation of women in the armed defense of the revolutionary Paris Commune (1871) against troops of the national French government, and the resulting arrest, imprisonment, deportation, exile, and death of thousands of women.

The Paris Commune, an insurrection waged by the lower classes of Paris, lasted from March 18 to May 28, 1871, following the conclusion of the Franco-Prussian War (1870–1871). The national government, which had declared a Republic in September 1870, had fled to Bordeaux. The four-and-a-half-month Prussian siege of Paris had further radicalized and organized the lower classes of Paris as they stood alone against the enemy. Early in the morning on March 18 after the fighting with Prussia had ended, women discovered that French troops were attempting to remove cannon purchased and used by Parisians to defend the city against the Prussians. Rousing citizens to the scene, the women and Paris National Guard personnel fraternized with government forces, resulting in their retreat. Later the same day, Parisians executed two of the rival military leaders, resulting in heightened tensions between Paris and the national government, now seated at Versailles and led by Adolph Thiers. Civil war formally erupted on April 3 when government troops began bombing the city and its environs; during the last week of May, known as the “Bloody Week,” Versailles troops entered the city. Street fighting and outright massacres ensued, resulting in the deaths of 30,000 Parisians. Women supported, fought, and died in this revolution from the early morning hours of March 18 through its end on May 28.

During the Commune, women fought alongside men, served in front line ambulance corps, and endured all the hardships of battle. Some received public commendations in newspapers, often signed by the men from their battalions; the photographs of quite a few survive, often taken after their sentencing at military trials following the defeat of the Commune. One communard, using the male pseudonym André Leo, published her views in the Commune newspaper, *La Sociable*. Writing to the military leader of Commune forces on May 8, she declared,

Do you know, General Dombrowski, how the [Paris Commune] was made? By the women . . . the necessity of taking one’s part in the Revolution, is the liberty and re-

sponsibility of every human being, with no limit except common law, without any privilege of race, or of sex.

Women such as Louise Michel, Hortense David, Christine D’argent, Victorine Rouchy, and Alix Payen fought, cared for the wounded, and left evidence of their participation in the historical record.

Observers also drew illustrations of dozens of women dressed in military attire at rifle practice, marching drills, and aboard cannon boats in the Seine. Although the minister of war for the Commune declared he did not want women in the ranks, they came anyway, serving in wide-ranging capacities and generally demanding to be paid. Many served as canteen and ambulance workers in the city and on the battlefield, discovering that distinctions between those jobs and armed combat existed only theoretically. In at least some cases, canteen workers entering combat with their National Guard units officially began receiving guns as of April 7, only days after bombardment began; many others argued that, as members of a National Guard unit, they had the right, even the obligation, to bear arms for personal and Commune defense.

In the closing days of the Commune, when government troops fought in the Paris streets against barricaded communards, women regularly challenged the courage of their male compatriots, threatening them with death, replacement by women, or both—if they did not fight well. In one case, Nathalie Lemel threatened Commune troops at a barricade, calling them cowards, telling them that if they did not defend the barricade well, the women would—and they eventually did. At her arrest, Lemel and other witnesses reported that she, with hands and lips now blackened with gun powder, had fought for forty-eight hours straight with no food, adding with much contempt, “We are beaten, but not vanquished!”

Women became the targets of attacks by Versailles troops, especially given their association with setting fires to significant buildings in Paris during the last week. Eventually represented as *pétroleuses*, or female arsonists, the truth or falsity

of women's activities became less important than the troops' impression that hysterical, "unnatural" women and their grimy children lurked around every corner ready to destroy property. This, combined with recurring discoveries that Commune troops behind barricades included women, led Versailles troops vehemently to search out women for arrest, and often, massacre.

Women generally saw their own participation linked to their tenuous economic circumstances, made worse by months of war and siege. They viewed the Commune as an opportunity to receive jobs and equal pay and status with men, which women often demanded as part of this social revolution. The male leadership needed the support and active assistance of women. Therefore they often listened to their demands.

Although women carried weapons and participated in armed combat for many reasons, their actions became linked to a world turned upside down, and violent repression was the response of the enemy. According to Alexandre Dumas, the women communards or *filles*—to him not truly female—became women "only when dead," when their anatomy alone and not their words or actions determined their categorization. Just as women had "made the revolution" early on and sustained it by their labors, they fought and died for it at its demise.

—Pamela J. Stewart

See also Michel, Louise

References and Further Reading

- Eichner, Carolyn. 2004. *Surmounting the Barricades: Women in the Paris Commune*. Bloomington: Indiana University.
- Gullickson, Gay L. 1996. *The Unruly Women of Paris: Images of the Commune*. Ithaca: Cornell University.
- Jones, Kathleen, and Françoise Vergès. 1991. "Women of the Paris Commune." *Women's Studies International Forum* 14(6):491–503. Northwestern University; Charles Deering McCormick Special Collections Library. "Siege and Commune of Paris, 1870–1871." <http://www.library.northwestern.edu/spec/siege/> (accessed October 31, 2004).

PARRISH, MARIE O'DEAN BISHOP (DEANIE) (1922–)

Engineering test pilot and tow-target pilot in the U.S. Women Airforce Service program (WASP). Born and raised in Florida, Marie Deanie Bishop grew up with a determination to prove herself. On her twenty-first birthday Deanie, who had learned to fly, reached the age requirement for admission to the WASP program and applied that day.

After acceptance, Deanie reported to Avenger Field in Sweetwater, Texas, on November 1, 1943, where she began training. As a member of class 44-w-4, she was one of the first women pilots to go from primary training directly to advanced training, bypassing the basic training level. After the women successfully made that training change, skipping the intermediate "basic" level, all pilot training in the Army Airforce implemented this system.

Following graduation from flight school, Deanie was sent to Greenville Army Air Base in Greenville, Mississippi, where she was one of three WASPs on base. As an engineering test pilot, she tested and repaired new aircraft to be re-released for instructors and cadets in training. At Greenville she test-flew a twin-engine aircraft for the first time.

Because of her success in flying twin-engine aircraft, Deanie was soon selected for the B-26 Flexible Gunnery School at Tyndall Army Airforce Base in Florida. She was one of eight women pilots to pass all training tests flying the difficult B-26 Martin Marauder. One of her duties was to hold the B-26 in a flight pattern while B-24s would fly by with gunners shooting live ammunition at the sleeve target towed by the B-26. The training was crucial to prepare gunners for combat. Deanie was stationed at Tyndall for the remainder of her time as a WASP.

After the WASP disbanded on December 20, 1944, Deanie continued to work in base operations as an aircraft dispatcher. She later went to Langley Air Force Base where a civil service position as chief aircraft dispatcher in base operations was created for her. In 1946 Deanie mar-

ried Bill Parrish, a B-24 pilot from Tyndall Air Force Base, and she accompanied him when his orders sent him to Panama. There she became private secretary for the director of operations for the 6th Air Force.

After the war, she returned to school and graduated *summa cum laude* with a bachelor of science degree from the University of Houston. She served as national secretary of the National WASP Organization and chair of the WASP Steering Committee for the National WASP World War II Museum. As associate director and primary interviewer for Wings Across America, a project to document and educate others on the history of the WASP, she recorded over 103 interviews with WASPs, preserving the history of the first American women to fly military aircraft.

—*Christiana Biggs*

See also United States, Women's Airforce Service Pilots

References and Further Reading

Parrish, Deanie. 1999. Interview by Barby Williams. Wings Across America Project and the WASP World War II Museum, Sweetwater, Texas. <http://www.wasp-wwii.org/wings/information.htm> (accessed November 18, 2004).

PAVLIUCHENKO, LIUDMILA MIKHAILOVNA (1916–1974)

Leading Soviet female sniper of World War II with 309 kills, including 36 enemy snipers. Liudmila Pavliuchenko (Pavlichenko is the Russian version of the name) served with the Second Company, Second Battalion, 54th Razin Regiment, 25th “V. I. Chapaev” Division of the Independent Maritime Army.

Born in Belaia Tserkov, now in the Kyiv (formerly Kiev) region, Pavliuchenko trained in small arms fire with a military club of the Arsenal Factory, her employer in Kyiv, earning a civilian sharpshooter's badge. She was also trained

in machine-gun firing by *Osoaviakhim* (Society for Assistance to Defense, Aviation, and Chemical Industry). In 1937, as a student at the State University of Kyiv, she successfully defended her master's thesis on *hetman* (chieftain) Bohdan Khmel'nitsky, a Ukrainian nationalist, soldier, politician, and diplomat.

Pavliuchenko volunteered for combat duty in June 1941. When her 54th Razin Regiment went into action on the near approaches to Odessa on August 8, 1941, Pavliuchenko scored her first two kills. On October 9, 1941, after her platoon commander was killed in the crucial Dal'nitsky sector, and his deputy was wounded, Pavliuchenko assumed command. Wounded and her face covered with blood, she struggled to remain conscious. Considered one of the best snipers of the Independent Maritime Army, Pavliuchenko scored 187 kills in about two months, before Soviet troops were evacuated from Odessa.

In mid-October 1941 the Independent Maritime Army was transferred to the Crimea to fight for Sevastopol alongside the Black Sea Fleet. Operating in mountainous terrain in the Sevastopol area, Pavliuchenko usually began her vigil at 3:00 A.M., waiting a day or two for her prey. Lying motionless under a bush or in a foxhole for up to eighteen hours, she was accompanied by an observer with binoculars who gave her the reference points and monitored the state of her victims. Inspired by her sense of mission, Pavliuchenko stoically withstood hardships greater than those experienced by ordinary soldiers.

She was an exceptional sniper. Her exploits were publicized by the army, and were imitated. In Sevastopol, where the Germans not only had all enemy sniper positions marked and under fire, but also knew Soviet snipers by name, she managed to impart her skill even during the most difficult situations. She was wounded four times, twice seriously. Finally, in June 1942, she was evacuated from Sevastopol on board a submarine. Invited by Eleanor Roosevelt, Pavliuchenko toured the United States in August 1942 after her final wound had healed.

PEACE PEOPLE MOVEMENT

In 1943, following graduation from the Vystrel Courses for Officers, she earned the rank of major. A master sniper instructor, she trained 80 snipers who scored over 2,000 kills. From 1942 to 1953 she served as research officer for the Main Naval Staff. Meanwhile, having graduated from the University of Kyiv in 1945, she became a military historian and journalist. She was awarded the highest Soviet military decoration, Hero of the Soviet Union, on October 25, 1943, and two Orders of Lenin. She died at the age of 58 and was buried at the prestigious Novodevich'e Cemetery in Moscow.

Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Soviet Union/Russian Federation,
Women Heroes of the

References and Further Reading

- Allen, Mary. 2003. "Pavlichenko, Luidmila Mikhailova." Pages 338–340 in *Amazons to Fighter Pilots: A Biographical Dictionary of Military Women*. Vol. 1. Edited by Reina Pennington. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 1998. *Women in War and Resistance*. Nepean, Ontario, Canada: New Military Publishing.
- Pavliuchenko, Liudmila M. 1977. "I Was a Sniper." Pages 51–70 in *Road of Battle and Glory*. Edited by I. M. Danishevsky. Trans. by David Skvirsky. Moscow: Politizdat.

PEACE PEOPLE MOVEMENT (NORTHERN IRELAND)

Organization founded by Betty Williams (1943–) and Mairead Corrigan (Maguire) (1944–), winners of the 1976 Nobel Peace Prize, to promote peace in Northern Ireland. In August 1974 a car went out of control after its driver, a member of the Irish Republican Army (IRA), had been shot by British soldiers. The car plowed into a family and killed three children. Williams, who heard the shots and went

to see what had happened, saw the dead and dying children. Corrigan was the aunt of the children. In an effort to put an end to the violence plaguing Northern Ireland, the two women and Ciaran McKeown founded a non-sectarian movement to promote peace. Their movement united Northern Irish Catholics and Protestants in marches for peace and understanding.

—Bernard Cook

See also Ulster, Women during the Troubles in

References and Further Reading

- Maguire, Mairead. 1999. *The Vision of Peace*. Edited by John Dear. Maryknoll, NY: Orbis.

PEAKE, FELICITY (1913–2002)

First director of the British Women's Royal Air Force (WRAF). Air Commodore Dame Felicity (Watts Hanbury) Peake, the daughter of Colonel Humphrey Watts, was born on May 1, 1913, at Cheadle Hulme, Manchester. She studied in both England and France. She met Jock Hanbury while on a cruise to the West Indies and they married in 1935 at St. Margaret's, Westminster. Her husband's hobby was flying and Felicity also became interested in it. After flying for only six-and-a-half hours, she made her first solo flight and received a pilot's license.

A career in flying led her to join the 9th Air Transport Service (ATS) of the Royal Air Force (RAF) just before World War II. Her husband became a pilot in the Auxiliary Air Force and lost his life in a flying exercise in October 1939. Felicity became an ATS company assistant and afterward became a code and cipher officer. While the Battle of Britain was raging, she was posted at Biggin Hill in May 1940, commanding a 250-strong Women's Auxiliary Air Force (WAAF) unit.

She rose steadily in the ranks of the WAAF. She was posted to the recruiting staff of the Air Ministry in January 1941, and later became a public relations officer. She was conscious of her gender and tried to give more women in the RAF an equal footing with the men. The Chief of the Air Staff, Lord Arthur William Tedder, supported her fully, as did the director of public relations of the RAF, Air Commodore Harald Peake, who eventually became Felicity's second husband. At Bomber Command she became deputy WAAF administration staff officer in 1943 and subsequently was promoted to the rank of wing commander supervising the WAAF officers' school at Windermere. The following year she served as a senior staff officer looking after the service conditions of women radar officers, and in 1945 was posted to Cairo at the office of commander-in-chief Mediterranean and Middle East Command, with the rank of group captain.

In 1946 she became director of the WAAF at the age of thirty two. She received the Member of the British Empire (MBE) for her services during the war and became a Dame Commander of the British Empire (DBE) in 1949. She had done commendable work in the transitional phase of the post-war period, and when the British government decided to set up a permanent body in the RAF exclusively for women, the natural choice for leader was Felicity Hanbury. She became the first director of the WRAF in 1949, at the age of 35. She contributed immensely to the shaping of the WRAF. She retired from the service in 1950, married Harald Peake the following year, and lived in a farmhouse at Oxfordshire. Peake was connected with the Imperial War Museum from 1963, holding the post of chairperson from 1986 to 1988. She died on November 2, 2002.

—*Patit Paban Mishra*

See also Great Britain, Women in Service in World War II

References and Further Reading

Peake, Felicity. 1993. *Pure Chance*. Shrewsbury, UK: Airlife Publishing.

PEASANTS' WAR

From 1524 to 1526, a series of peasants' rebellions took place in the Holy Roman Empire. In the early sixteenth century, population growth caused wages to fall and unemployment to increase in the countryside. At the same time, the consolidation of territorial states led to legal and administrative reforms that marginalized local autonomy. The aristocratic and ecclesiastical lords imposed higher taxes, tried to gain control over village commons, and reinforced serfdom. Popular interpretations of Luther's early writings strengthened militant anticlericalism and demands for a reform of the church that seemed to be preoccupied with its own political and economical power.

Numerous groups of rebellious peasants and townspeople, some of them led by lay preachers, sought to redress their grievances through direct talks with their lords, through law suits, and through violent protests. Their demands were revolutionary: The communities should exercise full control over the parish church as well as over the commons; serfdom was to be abolished; taxation was to be reformed; and the Bible as interpreted by reformation theologians should become the basis of state and society. In Thuringia, Thomas Müntzer, a radical rival of Luther, became the spiritual leader of the rebels. The peasants formed "Christian Assemblies," army-like regional groups, but never a unified front. In spite of initial successes, the insurgents were no match for the better-equipped mercenaries of the aristocracy. Even though the Peasants' War ended with the total military defeat of the rebels in several territories, subsequent legislation was influenced by their demands.

Contemporaries blamed the start of the Peasants' War on a woman. The Countess of Lupfen allegedly ordered peasants who were busy with the harvest to search for snail shells upon which she wished to wrap newly spun yarn. The countess not only took the service required of peasants for their right to use land to irrational extremes, but she also attempted to make peasants

do the work of handmaids, integrating “male” work into the “female” sphere of the household. This anecdote conformed to popular misogynist ideas: Female disrespect and foolishness were the final straws that provoked a violent reaction by the peasants.

The peasant rebels were often absent from their respective villages for weeks or even months, leaving their farms in the care of their wives. In addition to this passive support, on some occasions women actively took part in the insurgence. Women spread news about the revolt and asked men to join the rebellion. The peasants employed female messengers. The rebels attacked and destroyed castles and monasteries. They were accompanied by peasant women who took the opportunity to pilfer. After robbing convents, rebels threatened the nuns with rape. At Heggbach, peasant women threatened to turn the men loose on the nuns and, following the typical early modern motif of a “world turned upside down,” demanded that the nuns should bear children and do farm work while the peasant women would live in the comparative luxury of the monastery. There were numerous women among the militant adherents of revolutionary preachers. During tumultuous actions in Thuringia and the Black Forest, women took up arms to defend these preachers. Thomas Müntzer ordered women to arm themselves and do battle for his cause. Instigated by townsmen, a group of women from Windsheim met to attack and pilfer a monastery in 1525. The women named one of their number as their officer. In the same year, a group of women at Heilbronn formed a protest march, carrying with them the *Bundschuh* (a heavy peasant boot connoting solidarity of laboring peasants), the symbol of the peasant rebels.

Two women believed to have magical skills became leaders or at least advisers of the peasant rebels. The first was a soothsayer who lived near Bludenz. She prophesized that even though the lords had gained the upper hand, the rebels would win the war within months. The other, the widow Margarethe Renner (Black Hofmännin), accompanied a criminal who had managed to become the leader of a peasant group. Hofmännin had refused to pay taxes and was rumored to be an accessory to murder. She tried to persuade the insurgents to attack the city of Heilbronn, which ruled over her village, and threatened to mistreat the women of Heilbronn’s upper class. Hofmännin allegedly claimed that she had used magic to make the rebels invulnerable. After the conquest of the town of Weinsberg, Hofmännin took part in atrocities committed there. The insurgents executed several noblemen, defiled their corpses, and humiliated the countess of Helfenstein by driving her out of town on a dung cart. The Weinsberg outrages were widely reported and used to justify the rigorous action the aristocratic forces took against the rebels.

—Johannes Dillinger

See also Thirty Years’ War

References and Further Reading

- Franz, Günther. 1984. *Der deutsche Bauernkrieg* [The German Peasant War]. Darmstadt, Germany: Wissenschaftliche Buchgesellschaft.
- Kobelt-Groch, Marion. 1993. *Aufsässige Tochter Gottes* [Rebellious Daughter of God]. Frankfurt/Main: Campus.
- Ulbrich, Claudia. 1998. “Die Heggbacher Chronik” [The Heggbach Chronicle]. Pages 391–399 in *Gemeinde, Reformation und Widerstand* [Community, Reformation and Resistance]. Edited by Heinrich R. Schmidt. Tübingen, Germany: Bibliotheca-Academica.

PERU: SHINING PATH

Peruvian Maoist terrorist movement. Unlike any Peruvian political party before the 1980s, the Sendero Luminoso (the Shining Path; SL), gave women a role in political affairs. Women acted

as agents of violence in the civil war waged throughout Peru from 1980 until 1992.

The SL was founded in 1974 by Peruvian philosophy professor Abimael Guzmán Reynoso in Ayacucho, an Andean city in Peru. The movement's armed struggle began in 1980. Guzmán and most of his cadres were captured in 1992. The ideology of SL was defined as Marxist–Leninist–Maoist–Gonzalo-Thought (“President Gonzalo” was Guzmán’s nom de guerre). The SL’s military hierarchy consisted of four levels. At its base, or fourth level, were the “masses,” formed by peasants from the Andes and the Amazon rainforest. The masses initially collaborated with the SL but stopped supporting the movement due to army intervention and the SL’s own repressiveness. Above them, the third level consisted of the combatants and subordinate groups formed by the party. Members of this level were high school and university students recruited by SL professors and students. At the second level were the militant cadres (the party). The cadres were initially formed by the “Holy families” from Ayacucho (the Morotes and the Durands), whose members intermarried and founded the organization. Above them all was President Guzmán.

SL activities included the selective assassinations of those who opposed the movement’s actions, including leftist leaders, governmental representatives, and community and church leaders. The assassinations were carried out by an “annihilation squad.” The squad’s modus operandi consisted of members creating a distraction while a second group killed the targeted person. Afterward, a last segment of the squad fired a final shot into the victim and left a note explaining the reasons for the execution. The combatant in charge of the last shot was, in most cases, a woman.

The presence of women in the SL goes back to its creation; women accounted for 50 percent of the militant cadres and comprised 40 percent of its total membership (Peruvian Truth and Reconciliation Commission, 2003). In 1973, seven years before the SL became a clandestine organization, Guzmán founded the Popular

Feminine Movement of Ayacucho (PFM), whose members accompanied him until his detention in 1992. The SL targeted smart and active women, who were recruited in two ways: first, through intellectual indoctrination in the *escuelas populares* (popular schools) run by SL members or through classmates and professors at the young women’s universities, and second, through romance. The SL organized youth parties where targeted young women were seduced by members and brought into the movement. These women had access to the upper levels of the organization and were usually from middle- or upper-class families. On the other hand, women from the masses, who belonged to peasant communities, were forced to join the organization through threats to their families or kidnapping. These women were used to bear and raise children, and as domestic workers.

The SL could have been seen as an opportunity for urban, educated women to achieve important political participation. This can be assumed by the fact that 57 percent of the imprisoned female SL members had a higher education and 10 percent of them held graduate degrees (Peruvian Truth and Reconciliation Commission, 2003). Laura Zambrano, an SL leader, stated that the SL was more liberating for women than feminism because it offered women the possibility of being equal to men in armed struggle (Herzog 1993, 70). Within the three higher levels of the SL’s structure, gender differences were transformed and gender relationships were either controlled by the organization or eliminated. Women could achieve high positions within the organization. The children of combatants were raised in the *escuelas populares*. The idea of having a family was replaced by the sense of belonging to the party, with Guzmán at its pinnacle. Women from the masses, however, did not have the opportunity of achieving a place in the higher levels of the movement and were kept within their “feminine” roles of caretakers and domestic workers.

Despite the fact that the SL presented itself as a liberating alternative for women, it was not

an organization where women or men could act freely. The SL was hierarchical and repressive. The militant cadres had control over the lives of the members of the organization. Decisions concerning marriages and divorces were decided based on the interests of the revolution, and family and cultural ties were broken.

—*Laura Balbuena González*

See also Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements in

References and Further Reading

- Del Pino H., Ponciano. 1998. "Family, Culture, and 'Revolution:' Everyday Life with *Sendero Luminoso*." In *Shining and Other Paths: War and Society in Peru, 1980–1995*. Edited by Steve J. Stern. Durham, NC, and London: Duke University.
- Herzog, Kristin. 1993. *Finding their Voice: Peruvian Women's Testimonies of War*. Valley Forge, PA: Trinity Press International.
- Kirk, Robin. 1993. *Grabado en piedra. Las Mujeres de Sendero Luminoso* [Etched on Stone. Women from the Shining Path]. Lima: IEP.
- Peruvian Truth and Reconciliation Commission. 2003. *CVR Final Report*. Lima, Peru: <http://www.cverdad.org.pe/ingles/ifinal/index.php> (Spanish) and http://www.usip.org/library/tc/doc/reports/chile/chile_1993_toc.html (English) (accessed 20 January 2006).

PERUVIAN TRUTH AND
RECONCILIATION COMMISSION:
WOMEN AND POLITICAL
VIOLENCE

Investigation of the violence in Peru from 1980, when the Maoist terrorist movement known as *Sendero Luminoso* (the Shining Path; SL) initiated its war against the state, until 2000 when Peruvian President Alberto

Fujimori left the country for Japan. In 2000, the transitional government of President Valentín Paniagua created the Truth and Reconciliation Commission (TRC). The goals of the TRC were to analyze the nature of the armed conflict that had afflicted Peru, and to attempt to determine who was responsible for the multiple violations of human rights. One of the most important findings of the TRC was that, unlike other Latin American situations, the main perpetrator of political violence was the SL, which was responsible for more than 50 percent of the 69,280 deaths. Because of public hearings, many female victims of the political violence could speak their truth and tell the horror they and their children experienced during the armed conflict. These testimonies allowed the TRC to show the gender aspect of the civil war in its final report, presented in August of 2003.

The TRC report has a chapter solely devoted to the gender-related side of the conflict. The chapter analyses the relationship between violence and gender, showing how vulnerable women were because of their gender. Although women comprise only 20 percent of the conflict's victims, the consequences of the political violence in the lives of women and their children were devastating. Their families were destroyed, leaving them as widows to raise their children alone, or as single mothers to raise children who were the products of rape. Their fields and towns were destroyed, leaving them with no means to support their families. Their bodies were affected due to forced abortions or constant rapes. They were exploited either as sexual objects or for domestic purposes. Moreover, 73 percent of the female victims did not speak Spanish as their native language; 80 percent lived in rural areas; and 34 percent were illiterate. The compounded characteristics of being female and indigenous played a crucial role in the discrimination and violence the women suffered from the SL and the state.

As reported by the TRC, Peruvian women actively participated throughout the political con-

flict as either agents of resistance or perpetrators of violence. The TRC recognized female victims' efforts to overcome difficulties by working together to create *comedores populares* (soup kitchens) and *clubes de madres* (mothers' clubs), grassroots organizations created by women to alleviate the economic situation. Women also joined the *comités de autodefensa* (self-defense committees) created in the Andes to defend themselves against the SL, and they created the ANFASEP (Asociación Nacional de Familiares de Secuestrados, National Association of Relatives of the Disappeared) organization. Furthermore, due to the important role women played in the resistance movement, female leaders were recurrent targets of the SL's annihilation squad. The TRC also showed the relevant role Peruvian women played as agents of violence within the SL. Female participation in the SL accounted for 40 percent of its membership, and women comprised 50 percent of its central committee.

—Laura Balbuena González

See also Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements in; Peru: Shining Light

References and Further Reading

- Macher, Sofía. 2002. "La Comisión de la Verdad y las Mujeres en el Perú" [The Truth and Reconciliation Commission and Women in Peru]. Pages 181–185 in *La mitad del cielo, la mitad de la tierra, la mitad del poder: Instancias y mecanismos para el adelanto de la mujer* [Half the Sky, Half the Land, Half the Power: Applications and Mechanisms for the Development of Women]. Edited by Diana Miloslavich Túpac. Lima: Centro de la Mujer Peruana Flora Tristán.
- Peruvian Truth and Reconciliation Commission. 2003. *CVR Final Report*. Lima, Peru: <http://www.cverdad.org.pe/ingles/ifinal/index.php> (Spanish) and http://www.usip.org/library/tc/doc/reports/chile/chile_1993_toc.html (English) (accessed 20 January 2006).

PETACCI, CLARA (1912–1945)

Mussolini's mistress, who was shot by partisans at the end of World War II. Clara Petacci was born into a prominent Italian family in Rome on February 28, 1912. She first met Mussolini in 1932. Despite visits with Mussolini at his residence, the Palazzo Venezia, she married an officer, Ricardo Federici. Mussolini dispatched Federici to Japan in 1936, and Clara became Mussolini's mistress, taking up residence in a small apartment in the Palazzo Venezia. Though his fidelity was inferior to hers, she remained faithfully devoted to him to the end. Despite widespread gossip, Mussolini did ignore accusations that a member of her family had engaged in financial irregularities (Smith 1982, 285). When Mussolini was overthrown in July 1943, Petacci, who had fled to Lago Maggiore, was arrested and jailed. Crowds destroyed her father's house in Rome and the Villa Camilluccia, which Mussolini had given her. After Mussolini and Petacci were rescued from imprisonment by the Germans, she joined him at Salò in northern Italy, where he headed the puppet Italian Social Republic.

She was with Mussolini at the end of April 1945, as he attempted to flee toward Austria in a German convoy. Partisans stopped the convoy and captured Mussolini and Petacci. Petacci insisted on remaining with her lover, which resulted in her death (Smith 1982, 319). They were shot at Dongo on April 28, 1945, by Captain Valerio (Walter Audisio), a communist member of the Committee for National Liberation (Cassels 1985, 117). Their bodies and those of five other leading fascists, who had also been captured and executed, were taken by truck to Milan where they were hung by their feet from a gasoline station in the Piazzale Loreto, the site of an earlier murder of fifteen Italian partisans by the Nazis. The corpses were then subjected to physical and verbal vilification.

—Bernard Cook

See also Braun, Eva; Mitford, Unity

References and Further Reading

- Cassels, Alan. 1982. *Fascist Italy*. 2nd ed. Arlington Heights, IL: Harley Davidson.
 Petacci, Clara. 1946. *Il mio diario* [My Diary]. Milan: Associati.
 Smith, Dennis Mack. 1982. *Mussolini*. New York: Alfred A. Knopf.

PETIT, GABRIELLE
 (1893–1916)

Belgian spy executed by the Germans during World War I. Gabrielle Petit was born in Tournai, Belgium, in 1893. When the war broke out Petit was working as a sales clerk in Brussels. Her fiancé, Maurice Gobert, a soldier, was captured by the Germans after he was wounded. He, however, escaped and was eventually able to join the Belgian forces fighting in the southwestern corner of the country. Petit, for her part, volunteered to serve as a spy. After a short training period in England, she gathered information about German troop movements in Belgium for the Allies. She also distributed the clandestine Belgian newspaper, *La libre Belgique* (Free Belgium), and helped Belgians cross the frontier into the Netherlands so that they could join the Belgian army in the south.

Petit's activity was reported to the German authorities, who arrested her in February 1916. She refused to gain a more lenient sentence by betraying the identity of others in the resistance and was condemned to death. Petit was executed by a firing squad on April 1, 1916. After the war she was hailed as a national hero, and her remains were transferred from the execution grounds to a cemetery in Schaarbeek, Belgium.

—Bernard Cook

See also Belgium, Women during World War I; Cavell, Edith Louisa

References and Further Reading

- "Gabrielle Petit," Propaganda Postcards of the Great War, <http://www.ww1-propaganda-cards.com/gabrielle.petit.html> (accessed February 22, 2006).

PHILIPPINES, WOMEN DURING
 THE AMERICAN SUPPRESSION
 OF THE INSURRECTION IN

The Philippine Insurrection was a transforming event for women in the Philippines. The Katipunan (the Association—in Tagalog the full name was *Kataastaasan Kagalang-galang na Katipunan nang manga Anak ng Bayan* or the Highest and Most Venerated Association of the Sons and Daughters of the Land), a secret society in the Philippines, led the island's struggle for independence from Spain beginning in August 1896. The Filipinos succeeded in establishing a republic for a short period (December 1897 to February 1898), but by the time the United States declared its own war on Spain, fighting had resumed between Filipino and Spanish forces. The United States engaged Spain both in the Caribbean and the Pacific, and took the lead from Filipino insurgents to complete Spain's defeat. The United States then declared sovereignty over the Philippines, a claim that the new Philippine republic, established on January 23, 1899, rejected. The Philippine Insurrection against the United States ensued from February 4, 1899, until July 4, 1902, when President Theodore Roosevelt declared official victory for the United States. Armed resistance to U.S. conquest, however, continued on some islands into the 1930s, and the Philippines did not gain independence until 1946. The brutal war cost over 200,000 lives, the vast majority of which were Filipino civilians.

Late nineteenth-century society and culture in the Philippines mirrored Spanish ideology

THE SUPPRESSION OF THE PHILIPPINE INSURRECTION

“The present war is no bloodless, opera bouffe engagement; our men have been relentless, have killed to exterminate men, women, children, prisoners and captives, active insurgents and suspected people from lads of ten up, the idea prevailing that the Filipino as such was little better than a dog . . .”

—*Philadelphia Ledger*, November 1901,
 quoted in Howard Zinn, 1990. *A People's History of the United States*.
 New York: Harper Perennial, 308.

when it came to a woman's place in life. Even elite women had few opportunities for education and were expected to confine their interests to the home. Before the independence movement, Filipinas had rarely been part of social or political movements. The anticolonial movement marked a sharp departure from this pattern. In July 1893, very soon after its formation, the Katipunan established a women's chapter. By hosting Katipunan meetings, women helped disguise the gatherings as social events, thereby not capturing the attention of Spanish authorities. Many of the women in the Katipunan had earlier been initiated as Masons. As defenders of liberal thought and individualism, the Masons in the Philippines led the intellectual challenge to Catholicism and Spanish rule. Though most of the women known today as contributors to the insurrection were wives, mothers, and sisters of the movement's male leaders, they served in many different capacities and earned respect as patriots and insurgents in their own right.

Some Filipina contributions, such as sewing and nursing, were extensions of their domestic roles. Women produced potent national symbols, including the first Filipino flag, flown when Emiliano Aguinaldo declared independence on June 12, 1898. Women organized more than a dozen chapters of the Red Cross, beginning with the society founded by Hilaria del Rosario, wife of Emiliano Aguinaldo, in early 1899. Women were particularly important in supporting the army, collecting food and supplies, and raising funds for the revolution. When internal disputes threatened the unity of the insurrection, women

acted as peacemakers. For example, on April 24, 1899, a group of women brought flowers and knelt before General Antonio Luna, pleading his forgiveness for another general who had delayed in sending reinforcements during a U.S. bombardment.

The participation of Filipinas ranged far beyond women's traditional roles. Agueda Estaban y de la Cruz was a courier and spy who conducted surveillance, first of Spanish and later of U.S. officials. Several women fought as soldiers, coming to special prominence in the region of Cavite. Most notable were Bernarda Tagalog y Monson, who battled the enemy alongside her son; Agueda Kahabagan y Iniquinto, the only woman listed as a general by the Army of the Filipino Republic; and Teresa Magbanua y Ferraris. Magbanua joined the army in defiance of her husband and her uncle, a military commander. After the defeat of Spain, she continued to fight against the United States, at Iloilo City and at Jaro. Though apparently never given an official rank, she commanded guerrillas and was popularly accorded the honorific of "general." Magbanua surrendered to the U.S. forces in 1900.

American women did not participate directly in the military action in the Philippines. During the insurrection they did, however, serve as Army nurses supporting the troops. The impetus to form a permanent Army Corps of Nurses in 1901 largely came from the continued need for military nurses in the Philippines. The United States also hired women as government-sponsored teachers not only to educate but to Americanize its new Filipino subjects.



A trench, with Moro victims, after the fight at Mount Dajo, Island of Jolo, Philippines. (National Archives)

Fewer Filipinas were active in the insurrection against the United States than had been in the revolt against Spain. By 1898, many women insurgents had already been captured and exiled (like Melchora Aquino and Segunda Puentes Santiago), or were exhausted and had returned to domestic life. The average Filipina, however, could hardly ignore the war even if she did not assume a visible role in it. The nature of guerrilla warfare and the specific military strategy of the United States led to widespread suffering. U.S. troops regarded all adult men as potential enemies to be shot at the soldier's discretion; Filipinas were also slaughtered, raped, and physically abused. Some U.S. anti-imperialists, including women like Jane Addams, spoke out against the atrocities but incidents of brutality continued through and after the war, such as the 1906 Moro massacre of 900 men, women, and children.

The experience of the war left a decidedly mixed legacy for these women. Filipinas entered the public sphere for the first time in the wake of the failed insurrection. They engaged in civic reform, promoted women's education, and pressed for suffrage. They avoided direct challenges to patriarchal institutions, but all the while struggled as colonial subjects of a foreign power. The pervasive violence of the war and its aftermath affected countless individual women as well, in ways that historians have yet to document.

—*Laura R. Prieto*

See also East Timor, Abuse of Women during War; Herero of Namibia, Repression of the; Spanish-American War, Women and the

References and Further Reading

- De Dios, Aurora J. 1996. "Participation of Women's Groups in the Anti-Dictatorship Struggle: Genesis of a Movement." Pages 141–168 in *Women's Role in Philippine History: Selected Essays*. 2nd ed. Quezon City: University Center for Women's Studies, University of the Philippines.
- Policarpio, Paz. 1996. "The Filipino Women during the Revolution." *Review of Women's Studies*, 5:2 and 6:1.
- Roces, Mina. 2002. "Women in Philippine Politics and Society." Pages 159–189 in *Mixed Blessing: The Impact of the American Colonial Experience on Politics and Society in the Philippines*. Edited by Hazel M. McFerson. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Soriano, Rafaelita Hilario, ed. 1995. *Women in the Philippine Revolution*. Manila: Printon.

PILOTS OF THE IL-2
(1941–1945)

Heroic Russian attack bomber pilots. Tamara Fedorovna Konstantinova and Anna Aleksandrovna Timofeeva (née Egorova) flew the formidable IL-2 and were the only women IL-2 pilots to be awarded the exclusive Hero of the Soviet Union Medal.

Senior Lieutenant Konstantinova was deputy squadron commander of the 999th Ground Attack Aviation Regiment, 277th Ground Attack Division, 1st Air Army, 3rd Baltic Front. Born in the Tver' region in 1919, she became an instructor at the Kalinin (Tver') Flying Club in 1939. She was initially rejected for active service due to an alleged shortage of aircraft and risked her life as a truck driver delivering ammunition to the front. Konstantinova eventually secured a transfer to a communications subunit, where she flew the unarmed Po-2, a former training aircraft. She soon distinguished herself by skillfully evading German Messerschmitts. Her per-

sistence in applying for a transfer to an operational air unit eventually paid off. After joining the 566th Ground Attack Aviation Regiment in March 1944, she acquired a new IL-2, and, together with gunner Aleksandra Mukoseyeva, formed a cohesive and effective team.

In December 1944 Konstantinova became deputy squadron commander after transferring to the 999th Ground Attack Aviation Regiment. In West Prussia alone, she flew at least twice as many missions as other pilots in a comparable period, maintaining that she was fighting for two—her late husband and herself. By March 1945 she had flown 66 operational missions and earned many decorations. After the war she flew light passenger aircraft out of Voronezh. In 1948 Konstantinova was permanently grounded due to a serious injury received during an emergency landing. She was awarded the Hero of the Soviet Union on June 29, 1945.

Senior Lieutenant Timofeeva was chief navigator of the 805th Ground Attack Regiment, 197th Ground Attack Division, 16th Air Army, 1st Belorussian Front. Born in the Tver' region in 1916, she came to Moscow to participate in the construction of the Moscow subway and took lessons offered by a flying club operated by her employer. Subsequently, after graduating from Kherson Flying School, she became instructor at the Kalinin (Tver') Flying Club.

At the beginning of the war she flew with the 130th Independent Communication Squadron of the Southern Front. After a Messerschmitt set her unarmed machine on fire and she was forced to make an emergency landing, she became determined to fly combat aircraft so that she could defend herself. Her persistence paid off and she became an IL-2 pilot early in 1943. While learning the IL-2 she flew only twice with an instructor, mastering the aircraft more quickly than her male comrades.

Timofeeva received her baptism of fire over the Black and Azov seas. She soon became a skilled combat pilot and was appointed deputy squadron commander. With her regiment she took part in fierce air battles over the Taman'

PLATER, EMILIA

Peninsula, and flew many missions in aid of Soviet marines defending the Malaia Zemlia beachhead near Novorossiysk. She attacked enemy tanks, ships, rail junctions, and airfields while coping with fatigue and heavy losses in her unit.

On May 26, 1943, she voluntarily participated in the laying of a smokescreen to assist Soviet ground troops to break through the enemy-fortified Blue Line on the Taman' Peninsula (which stretched from Novorossiysk to Temriuk). To this end, she flew at a low level, unarmed, and without maneuvering. For her actions she was subsequently decorated by commander of the 4th Air Army, General Konstantin A. Vershinin.

After completing a two-month course for navigators in Stavropol in the North Caucasus, she received a new version of the IL-2. Dusya Nazarkina was her gunner. When their flight wing reached the 1st Belorussian Front, Timofeeva was appointed chief navigator.

On August 20, 1944, during her 277th mission, Timofeeva was shot down in flames east of Warsaw, captured by the enemy, and incarcerated in Küstrin POW camp. She had suffered severe burns, but her life was saved by fellow inmates, who offered her food, medications, and encouragement. Following liberation from the camp she was transferred to the reserves. Due to her internment—those captured by the enemy were punished by Stalin, who regarded surrender or even capture as treasonous—Timofeeva was not awarded the Hero of the Soviet Union until May 6, 1965, long after Stalin's death.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Soviet Union, 46th Taman Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment; Soviet Union/Russian Federation, Women Heroes of the; Soviet Union Air Defense, 586th Fighter Aviation Regiment

References and Further Readings

Cottam, Kazimiera J. 1998. *Women in War and Resistance*. Nepean, ON, Canada: New Military Publishing.

Timofeeva-Yegorova, Anna A. 1983. *Derzhis, sestrenka!* [Hang in, Little Sister!]. Moscow: Voenizdat.

Vershinin, Konstantin Andreevich. 1975. *Chetvertaia vozdukhnaia* [Fourth Air Army]. Moscow: Voenizdat.

PIZAN, CHRISTINE DE

See De Pizan, Christine

PITCHER, MOLLY

See Molly Pitcher

PLATER, EMILIA
(1806–1831)

Polish freedom fighter. Emilia Plater was born on November 13, 1806, in Wilno (Vilnius). Her father, Count Francis-Xavier Plater, was of Westphalian descent, but the family had become thoroughly Polish, especially in patriotic sentiment. Emilia's parents divorced when she was a child and she grew up on an Inflanty estate that belonged to her relatives, the Zyberek. Emilia was very interested in history and admired Tadeusz Kosciuszko, but she was especially inspired by Joan d'Arc, who led the French in battle against English aggressors, and Bobolina, who devoted herself and sacrificed her life to the Greek struggle for independence. Emilia had a picture of Bobolina in her room. In addition to her fascination with history, Emilia became adept at horsemanship and shooting. Following the death of her mother, she sought consolation in reading both Polish literature and poetry. She was particularly moved by Adam Mickiewicz's

“Grazyna.” She also was fascinated with the life of the common people and gathered their songs and tales. In 1829 she took a lengthy trip through Poland, visiting both Warsaw and Krakow.

When the Polish insurrection against Russia erupted in November 1830, Emilia cut her hair and, with the support of her cousins, Lucien and Ferdinand, who attended a local military academy, joined the revolutionaries. The partisans hoped to take the Russian fortress of Dynaburg (Dünaburg, today Daugavpils in Latvia), but gave up the idea because of the strength of the Russian force there. With another cousin, Cezary Plater, she then joined the Wilkierz Riflemen led by Karol Zaluski and subsequently a group of partisans led by Constantine Parczewski. On March 30 Emilia’s unit engaged a mounted Russian patrol in Dangiële, and on April 2 they forced an enemy company to pull back. On April 4 her unit attacked a relief column commanded by General Shirman and went on to occupy Jeziorosy.

After General Dezydery Chlapowski reached Lithuania, he told Emilia that there was no place for a woman in the Polish army. She reputedly responded, “I will remain a soldier and I will fight until Poland regains full independence” (Emilia Plater Polish School 2005). She stayed, and when Chlapowski organized the partisans into regular units, Emilia became commander of the 1st Company of the 1st Lithuanian Regiment. Due to her heroism in the battles at Kowno and Szawle, Emilia was promoted to captain. When Chlapowski later decided that the military situation was hopeless, Emilia rejected the idea of seeking refuge in Prussian territory. She reputedly said, “It would be better to die than to put up with such a humiliation” (Emilia Plater Polish School 2005). With her cousin Cezary, she was determined to join forces still fighting farther to the west in Poland. During her journey west, however, she succumbed to exhaustion. She was taken in first by peasants, and then by landowner Ignatius Ablamowicz, who brought her to his estate at Kopciowa, near Kapciamiestis, where she died on December 23, 1831.

After Emilia’s death, her favorite poet, the romantic nationalist Adam Mickiewicz, honored her in his 1832 work, “The Death of a Colonel.” During World War II after the German invasion of the Soviet Union, the Emilia Plater Independent Women’s Battalion, consisting of young Polish women volunteers, was founded near Moscow on June 3, 1943. Veterans of the battalion were called “Platerowki.”

—Bernard Cook

See also Polish Independent Women’s Battalion, Emilia Plater

References and Further Reading

- Angelfile.com. Prominent Poles. “Emilia Plater, Military Woman, Fighter for Poland’s Independence.” http://www.angelfire.com/scifi2/rsolecki/emilia_plater.html (accessed June 27, 2005).
- de Plater, Mervyn B. 1998. “Emilia Plater.” <http://www.platerowie.com/emilia.php> (accessed June 27, 2005).
- Emilia Plater Polish School. “Emilia Plater.” <http://www.emiliaplater.org/emilia/emiliave1.html> (accessed June 27, 2005).
- Straszewicz, Joseph. 1842. *The Life of the Countess Emily Plater*. Trans. J. K. Salomonski. New York: J. F. Trow.

PLAVSIC, BILJANA (1930–)

The first woman and most senior politician convicted by the International Tribunal for the Former Yugoslavia at The Hague of a crime against humanity and the laws and customs of war. Biljana Plavsic was born on July 7, 1930, in Tuzla, Yugoslavia (now Bosnia and Herzegovina). On October 2, 2002, Plavsic pled guilty to one count of political, racial, and religious persecution. She was the only person indicted by the Tribunal for crimes against humanity who pled guilty.

Plavsic was a leading member of the Serbian Democratic Party, headed by Radovan Karadzic, from its inception in Bosnia and Herzegovina. From 1990 until April 1992, Plavsic was a member of the collective presidency of Bosnia and Herzegovina. She and other Serbian nationalists refused to acknowledge an independent Bosnia and Herzegovina that did not recognize special rights for Bosnian Serbs, who constituted 31.4 percent of the population (Gallagher 2001a, 140). Fighting erupted between the Serbs and the government of Bosnia and Herzegovina on April 6, 1992—the day that the European Union recognized the independence of Bosnia.

From February 28 to May 12, 1992, Plavsic was one of two members of the acting presidency of the self-proclaimed Serbian Republic of Bosnia and Herzegovina, serving collectively with Radovan Karadzic. When he became sole president on December 17, she became one of his vice-presidents.

Following the 1995 Dayton Accords, which ended the war in Bosnia, Plavsic served as the Bosnian Serb president from 1996 to 1998. Though remaining a Serb nationalist, she cooperated with the North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO) occupation forces and supported Western-leaning candidates within the Serbian section of Bosnia. In 2001 she turned herself in to The Hague Tribunal, which had indicted her. Plavsic accepted ultimate responsibility for the killing of non-Serbs and the operation of concentration camps where Bosnians and Croats were mistreated and killed. She admitted that she was responsible for “forced transfer or deportation, unlawful killing, cruel and inhumane conditions in detention facilities, destruction of cultural and sacred objects, plunder, wanton destruction, forced labour and use of human shields” (Gedye 2003). On February 27, 2003, she was sentenced to eleven years imprisonment. On June 26 she was transferred to Sweden where she was to complete the remainder of her sentence.

—Bernard Cook

See also Markovic, Mirjana; Yugoslavia, Women and the Wars That Accompanied the Disintegration of Yugoslavia

References and Further Reading

- Gallagher, Tom. 2001a. “Bosnia-Herzegovina.” Pages 139–140 in *Europe since 1945: An Encyclopedia*. Edited by Bernard Cook. New York: Garland.
- . 2001b. “Bosnian War.” Pages 140–142 in *Europe since 1945: An Encyclopedia*. New York: Garland.
- Gedye, Robin. “Remorseful Plavsic Gets 11 Years’ Jail.” *The Telegraph* (London), March 1, 2003.
- United Nations. “Case No. IT-00–40-I, The Prosecutor of the Tribunal against Biljana Plavsic.” The International Criminal Tribunal for the Former Yugoslavia. <http://www.un.org/icty/indctment/english/pla-ii000407e.htm> (accessed January 13, 2004).

PLEWMAN, ELIANE
(1917–1944)

British agent during World War II. Eliane Sophy Browne-Bartoli was born in Marseilles, France, on December 6, 1917. Her family moved to England when she was a child, and she went to school in Britain and Spain. She was employed by an import firm in Leicester when the war erupted. She then went to work for the British embassies in Spain and Portugal. In 1942 she joined the Spanish Section of the Ministry of Information in London and married Tom Plewman, a British officer. Shortly afterward, she joined the British Special Operations Executive. After training, Eliane Plewman, whose codename was “Gaby,” parachuted into France on August 13, 1943, where she operated as a courier in the Marseilles area for the “Monk” network of the Resistance headed by Charles Skepper. In January 1944 “Monk” blocked the main rail line be-

tween Marseilles and Toulon by derailing a train in a tunnel. The network disabled thirty other locomotives during a two-week period. The “Monk” network was exposed in March 1944 as a result of betrayal by a Frenchman, who was executed after the war. Plewman was arrested on March 24. She was interrogated by the Gestapo for three weeks. Despite beatings she divulged nothing. Plewman was then transferred with seven other captured female agents to the Karlsruhe civil prison. On September 10, 1944, on the direct order of Ernest Kaltenbrunner, the head of the SS Security Office, Plewman was transferred with Yolande Beekman, Madeleine Damerment, and Noor Inayat Khan to Dachau. There, on September 11, 1944, the day after their arrival, all four were shot.

—Bernard Cook

See also Atkins, Vera H.; Beekman, Yolande; Damerment, Madeleine; and Khan, Noor Inayat

References and Further Reading

- “The FANY Agents—Eliane Plewman.” The Women of the Special Operations Executive. http://www.64-baker-street.org/agents/agent_fany_eliane_plewman.html (accessed September 28, 2004).
- Foot, M. R. D. (Michael Richard Daniell). 1984 (1966). *SOE in France: An Account of the Work of the British Special Operations Executive 1940–1944*. Frederick, MD: University Publications of America.
- Nicholas, Elizabeth. 1958. *Death Be Not Proud*. London: Cresset.
- Spartacus Web. “Eliane Plewman.” <http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/SOEplewman.htm> (accessed September 28, 2004).

PLSK

See Polish Auxiliary Air Force

POCOCK, LENA MARGARET

See Ashwell, Lena Margaret Pocock

POLAND, RESISTANCE DURING WORLD WAR II, WOMEN AND

The significant role of Polish women in the anti-Nazi resistance. There were three main choices for Polish women who wished to actively resist the Germans after the invasion of Poland in September 1939: join the Communist Resistance, serve with the Home Army, or become a member of the international resistance. In addition to these options, Jewish women took part in the Warsaw Ghetto Uprising in 1943 and fought alongside Jewish partisans in the forests of Poland.

Helena Wolff (Dr. Anka), and many other women were active in the Communist Resistance. When World War II broke out, she worked at the Holy Spirit Hospital in Warsaw. During the siege of Warsaw, she risked her own life to remove patients from the burning hospital building. In April 1940 she qualified as a physician. While working at the Marie Curie Radiological Institute in the spring of 1942, she joined the Polish Workers' Party and the People's Guard, and began forming underground People's Guard cells in Warsaw's hospitals. In addition to transporting weapons and Party papers, she also trained nurses for the partisans. In July 1943 she became chief of the People's Guard medical department. When the Germans discovered a People's Guard cell at the Radiological Institute, the party sent Dr. Wolff to a partisan unit in Kielce Province. Early in 1944 she was appointed medical chief of the third district (Kielce) by the headquarters of the People's Army (which succeeded People's Guard). In addition to discharging physician's duties, she fought alongside partisans. In May 1944 she participated in the rescue of fifty-six Soviet

POLISH RESISTANCE

“I was taking a message to headquarters. I had the papers hidden in my sleeve and I walked down the street pretending to be an elegant young lady out for a stroll. Then I passed by some SS men. I thought, ‘You bloody bastards. You think you are so strong and I am so weak but my work will eventually defeat you. That was my satisfaction.’ ”

—Black Barbara (Irena Kwiatkowska-Komorowska),
 Courier, Home Army, Warsaw. Quoted in Shelley Saywell. 1985.
 “Uprising: Poland, 1939–1945.” Pages 102–103 in *Women in War*.
 Markham, ON: Penguin Books Canada.
 With permission of the author and publisher.

soldiers from a POW camp. Subsequently commissioned, in July 1944 Lieutenant Wolff was appointed medical officer of the People’s Army’s 1st Brigade. She was actively involved in sabotage missions. On September 30, 1944, she was granted the rank of captain and the Grunwald Cross. Wounded in October, she was captured by the enemy. It is unclear how she died on October 31, 1944. She was promoted posthumously to the rank of major.

Eileen Garlinska (1912–1990), born Eileen Frances Short, was the daughter of a Liverpool sea captain. She came to Poland on a holiday in 1935 and decided to stay. Soon after the German invasion of Poland on September 1, 1939, she married a Polish student. She then went to work as a translator at a clandestine Warsaw office of the Polish government in exile. When her husband became a senior intelligence officer with the underground Home Army, she was given false papers and a new name (Helena). While working as an English teacher, she became a courier. The only British woman to take part in the Warsaw uprising of 1944, she also worked as a nurse. She survived her various adventures and after the war emigrated with her family to the United Kingdom.

The Home Army was split into groups specializing in intelligence and sabotage, weapons buying and manufacturing, and training. A women’s sabotage school was founded in 1942, with women becoming members of the Grey Ranks,

commando units specializing in diversionary actions and sabotage, including the theft of weapons manuals, which were translated and combined with instructions on how to build simplified models.

According to General Tadeusz Bór-Komorowski, leader of the Home Army, on the eve of the Warsaw uprising in August 1944, women constituted about one-seventh of the group’s total 40,000 membership. The revolt, which began on August 1 and lasted two months, resulted in the devastation of the city, the deaths of some 250,000 people (Saywell 1985, 103, 129), and temporary exile for the survivors.

Two all-female units were created during the uprising: a unit of demolition experts and a special detachment intended for duty in the city sewer system. Among Home Army women, many were Girl Guides who reconnoitered escape and supply routes through the sewers of Warsaw, smuggled weapons, and were members of assassination squads. Others carried messages, delivered food, or took part in smuggling small groups of people out of Warsaw and into the forests for their protection. In addition, an unknown number of women nonmembers risked their lives in helping the resisters, offering them food, hiding them in cellars, and keeping quiet. One Home Army girl courier who went to the Warsaw Ghetto regularly was eventually killed. By far the largest number of Home Army women were liaison couriers and medics.

Women did participate in armed combat during the uprising. Men, however, tended to not approve of women bearing arms. Because of the shortage of guns, women were the last to receive them. Despite the onerous tasks being assigned to women, many male veterans do not acknowledge females in the Home Army as soldiers because they did not always bear arms. Ida Dobrzanska-Kasprzak, an officer with the Home Army, later complained,

I think it is about time that people took notice. It should be said, once and for all, that women fought, too. Men believe if you don't shoot or carry a gun you are not a soldier. But we did the most tedious and most dangerous jobs. Women were injured and killed in action. Men just don't want to admit that we fought too. (Saywell, 1985, 102)

Krystyna Skarbek, born in 1915, was the multilingual daughter of a Polish count. Active in several sports, she married Jerzy Giuycki, a mountain climber and author, in 1938, and the outbreak of World War II found them in Africa. They moved to Great Britain, where Krystyna met George Taylor of the Special Operations Executive (SOE). As an alleged correspondent for a London newspaper, she left for Budapest, Hungary—then a German ally—on December 21, 1939. Subsequently she traveled to Poland to make contact with a secret group of Polish officers working for British intelligence and to visit her Jewish mother, whom she was unable to save. After returning to Hungary, she transmitted clandestine information obtained in Poland to England. When the situation in Hungary became difficult, the SOE sent Krystyna to France. She also had a lengthy assignment in Algeria. Later, known as “Pauline Armand,” she was airdropped into southern France on July 7, 1944. Disguised as an untidy peasant woman fluent in Italian, she was sent repeatedly to Italy, where she made contact with Italian partisans and proved successful in recruiting Italian soldiers.

She saved an associate named Roger, who had been arrested by the Gestapo, by daring to reveal that she worked for the SOE and offering the Germans 2 million franks for his freedom, which the SOE agreed to pay. After the war, while working as a waitress in a Polish café in Great Britain, she was stabbed to death by a jealous Irishman, who had become obsessed with her on June 15, 1952. Her funeral was attended by two generals: Stanislaw Kopanski, former chief of staff of the Polish Armed Forces, and Colin Gubbins, director of the British Special Operations Executive. Nicknamed by friends “The Queen of the European Underground,” Krystyna Skarbek-Gizycka was awarded both the Order of the British Empire and the French Croix de Guerre.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Granville, Christine, pseud.

References and Further Reading

- Bialokozowicz, Piotr. 1980. “Doktor Anka.” *Úoanierz Polski*, 45 (November 9): 16.
- Dixon, W. James. 2003. “Armia Krajowa (AK), Women in.” Pages 22–25 in *Amazon to Fighter Pilots*. Edited by Reina Pennington. Vol. 1. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- “Eileen Garlinska” (Obituary). 1990. *Sunday Telegraph*, April 1, 1990.
- Saywell, Shelley. 1985. “Uprising: Poland, 1939–1945.” Pages 102–129 in *Women in War*. Markham, ON: Penguin Books Canada.
- Stanczykiewicz, Eugeniusz. 1985. “Kim bylas Krystyno?” [Who Were You, Christine?] *Zolnierz Polski* 14 (April 7): 15.

POLISH AUXILIARY AIR FORCE (PLSK)

Women's auxiliary founded by order of the minister of defense of the Polish government in exile in mid-December, 1942. Based on the model of

the British Women's Auxiliary Air Force (WAAF), the goal of the Pomocnicza Lotnicza Sluzba Kobiet (Polish Auxiliary Air Force or PLSK, 1943–1945) was to cooperate with the Polish Air Force and replace Polish pilots in service and support roles on Polish air bases in the United Kingdom.

Initially, in May 1943 thirty-six women candidates were sent for basic training to Falkirk, Scotland. After undergoing successively higher levels of specialized training, the group qualified as flight instructors. Twelve women graduated from an officers' course and the remainder from a noncommissioned officers' (NCO) program. In October 1943 the women were awarded both Polish and British ranks. General recruitment to the PLSK began in November 1943 (Polish Women in the War 1985, 12).

Apart from Great Britain, where the PLSK recruited most of its members, the PLSK also attracted Polish women from Canada, the United States, France, Argentina, Switzerland, China, and Japan. A large number of volunteers came from Polish military units organized in the Soviet Union, the so-called Anders Army commanded by General Wladyslaw Anders. This unit was subsequently evacuated from the USSR to the Middle East. The women served in twenty-six units of the Polish Air Force.

PLSK recruits were trained in forty-five specialties to which they were directed on the basis of their abilities and preferences, including every area where they could promptly replace men. For example, women were employed in communications, laboratory work, and interpreting aerial photographs. They served as clerks, cooks, mechanics, radio and telephone operators, physicians, dentists, sentries, and parachute folders. Women officers served in administrative, logistical, intelligence, and educational capacities.

There are discrepancies in the total numbers of officers and NCOs. A more recent Polish source (Mleczak 1994, 2) cites the total strength of the PLSK as 1,436, constituting 10 percent of

the Polish Air Force on the western front of the war, with 52 officers and 110 NCOs, while an earlier source cites a total of 1,653, including 52 officers and 163 NCOs (Polish Women in the War 1985, 12).

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Polish Independent Women's Battalion, Emilia Plater

References and Further Reading

- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 2003. "PLSK." Pages 345–46 in *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*. Edited by Reina Pennington. Vol. 1. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Mleczak, Eugeniusz. 1994. "Dziewczeta z tamtych lat: Odsloniecie tablicy w Katedrze Polowej WP" [Young Airwomen of Long Ago: The Unveiling of Memorial Plaque at the Polish Armed Forces' Cathedral]. *Polska Zbrojna*, 109 (June 9) V: 2.
- "Polki na wojnie" [Polish Women in the War]. 1985. *Skrzydlatą Polska*, 10 (October 3): 12.

POLISH INDEPENDENT WOMEN'S BATTALION, EMILIA PLATER (1943–1945)

The first all-female Polish infantry unit. Following the German invasion of the Soviet Union in June 1941, and as a result of the Sikorski-Maisky Agreement of August 18, 1941, Polish citizens who had been interned in the Soviet Union following the Soviet occupation of eastern Poland in September 1941 were granted amnesty and a Polish army was formed under the command of General Wladyslaw Anders. Polish women internees were eager to serve in this army, in part due to their difficult living conditions. Soviet authorities initially objected to the recruitment of women but relented when General Anders argued that Soviet army itself consisted of many women.

General Anders favored creating a volunteer Polish women's corps based on the model of the

British women's auxiliary service. Women recruits were to receive basic and specialized training. Due to epidemics of typhus, malaria, and dysentery ravaging the personnel of the new Polish army, the main emphasis was placed on nursing. Women also produced newsletters, entertained troops on stage, taught literacy, and were employed as telephone operators.

Between September 1941 and August 1942, 4,667 Polish women in uniform were evacuated by land and sea to the western front in Europe via Central Asia and Iran (Biegun 1992, 48). The Polish Women's Auxiliary Service in Great Britain employed approximately 6,700 women (Saywell 1985, 103) and functioned akin to the Free French in cooperation with the British Auxiliary Territorial Service.

The Emilia Plater Independent Women's Battalion, consisting of volunteers from among young women left behind in the USSR, was founded on June 3, 1943, in Sel'tse near Moscow. Ironically, the battalion, named after Emilia Plater, an active participant in the 1830–1831 insurrection directed against Russia, was intended to fight alongside Soviet troops. Battalion veterans were called *Platerowki*, a name often applied to all Polish military women who served on the eastern front.

Initially attached to the 1st Tadeusz Kosciuszko Polish Division, the battalion swore its oath alongside the division on July 15, 1943. The battalion was directly subordinated to the 1st Polish Corps on August 19, 1943, and to the 1st Polish Army on July 17, 1944. Unlike auxiliary female units of Great Britain and the United States, the battalion was not governed by special military regulations. Its commanders and deputy commanders were men, while its political officers were women: Halina Zawadzka, Irena Sztachelska, and Ludwika Bobrowska.

As of August 18, 1943, the battalion consisted of a command element, one fusiliers company, two infantry companies, one machine gun company, a company of handheld anti-tank grenade launchers, and six platoons—mortar, reconnaissance, signals, medical, engineer, and logistics.

By late 1943 one transport platoon was added. The battalion's strength at the time was 691, including 48 officers, 163 noncommissioned officers, and 480 enlisted personnel (Cottam 2003, 150). Troop strength fluctuated, however, as the battalion provided basic training to women subsequently assigned elsewhere.

The alleged inability of some personnel, especially teenagers, to keep up with the very intensive training was used as a pretext to gradually transform the battalion from a first-line combat unit to one assigned mainly sentry and military police duties, which the women carried out in an exemplary fashion. Yet the organizational structure was maintained and members successfully took part in all major combat training exercises alongside male soldiers. It would seem that senior commanders were reluctant to expose women soldiers to the very heavy losses suffered by Polish troops alongside the Russians. One third of the 1st Polish Division was wiped out in the Battle of Lenino in the Smolensk region.

Only the Fusiliers Company took part in the Battle of Lenino, serving in auxiliary capacities such as sentry and police duties, administration of first aid, and escorting German POWs. The battalion as a whole remained at Sel'tse until early January 1944, at which time it was transferred to Smolensk. Two months later the battalion was based in Ukraine. After several additional moves, on October 12, 1944, the battalion was ordered to transfer to Praga, a suburb of Warsaw located on the Vistula River's eastern shore. Here the battalion was charged with guarding military and civilian property. On December 16 all detached subunits returned to the battalion. Finally, on January 17, 1945, following the liberation of Warsaw, the first group of the battalion crossed the frozen Vistula and on March 21 the battalion became directly subordinated to the Polish general staff. Its duties in Warsaw were the same as in Praga.

About 70 members of the battalion were killed during the war (Cottam 2003, 150). In

May 1945 it had roughly 500 members, representing a small percentage of the total number of Polish women serving on the eastern front, with estimates ranging widely from roughly 8,500 to 14,000 (Cottam 2003, 151). These numbers include some former members of the battalion who, like Emilia Gierczak, had been appointed platoon (or company) commanders in all-male units because many of the Polish male soldiers were not suitable to be officers.

On May 25, 1945, the battalion was disbanded in Warsaw, and on July 23, 1945, the discharged *Platerówki* were issued a complete uniform and two towels. Some of them secured employment in military institutions and about fifty became pioneer farmers in Platerówka, a village named after them in the newly acquired Western territories. On June 20, 1993, a commemorative plaque dedicated to the *Platerówki* (women soldiers of the 1st and 2nd Polish Armies formed in the USSR) was unveiled. The ceremony took place in the Cathedral of the Polish Armed Forces in Warsaw.

The following are selected prominent members of the battalion:

Halina Bielawska-Pietkiewicz. Lieutenant-colonel and former commander of the officer cadet corps in the infantry officer school in Ryazan.' She was third in her division to be promoted and her decorations included the Cross of Valor.

Helena Jablonska. Second lieutenant. As a private serving with the Fusiliers Company, she had been wounded in the Battle of Lenino. She was awarded the *Virtuti Militari*, the highest Polish military decoration, and the Cross of Valor.

Aniela Krzywon. She served as a private with the Fusiliers Company and was killed in the Battle of Lenino. She is the only Polish woman soldier awarded Hero of the Soviet Union, the highest Soviet military decoration.

Janina Wolanin. Major (Ret). She served as commander of a mortar company in the 3rd Polish Division. She was wounded three times, and was awarded the *Virtuti Militari* and the Cross of Valor.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Polish Auxiliary Air Force; Poland, Resistance during World War II, Women and

References and Further Reading

- Biegun, Kazimierz. 1992. "Kobiety w armii gen. Andersa (wrzesień 1941–sierpień 1942)" [Women in General Anders' Army (September 1941–August 1942)]. *Wojsko I wychowanie*, 3:44–48.
- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 1986. "Veterans of Polish Women's Combat Battalion Hold a Reunion." *Minerva: Quarterly Report on Women in the Military*, 4 (Winter): 1–7.
- . 2003. "'Emilia Plater' Independent Women's Battalion." Pages 149–151 in *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*. Edited by Reina Pennington. Vol. 1. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Saywell, Shelley. 1985. *Women in War*. Markham, ON: Penguin Books Canada.

POSTERS, U.S., IMAGES OF WOMEN IN WORLD WAR II

Variety of depictions of women in U.S. World War II posters. Such images, like the narratives in general, were by no means unique to U.S. propaganda. Not all women in U.S. posters were American: some were the victims of Nazi or Japanese rape, ravage, torture, and political repression. By and large, images of American women were seductively favorable. Women in nurse or Red Cross uniforms appeared assertive, attractive, patriotic, and capable. Countless images of strong, hardworking factory employees such as the Rosie the Riveter on recruiting and morale-building

posters testified to women's contributions to the war effort. Some images suggested the self-sacrificing, patient woman who stoically suffered through war's home front hardships as she waited at the hearth for a husband or son's return. But other images presented women as naively careless, or even as "enemy agents" or "saboteuses;" women whose loose lips or loose sexual ways put American men in danger, either of being torpedoed or brought down by a venereal disease.

A massive poster campaign by the United States during World War II manifested a combination of advertising, political propaganda, and art. The Office of War Information took command, working with other government agencies, the military, writers, artists, and corporate groups to produce such stunning graphics as the Four Freedom posters by realist Norman Rockwell, modernist artist Ben Shahn's exhortations to oppose fascism, or the more abstract poster urging increased production, "Give 'Em Both Barrels" by Jean Carlu. Millions of posters were slapped up on factory walls, at bus stops, in grocery stores, on billboards, in schools, and offices. They spoke to the nation's total mobilization with 10 million men in uniform, and 7 million women moving to another county or state to work. Printed in huge runs, in black and white or color, from the size of a notebook sheet to immense images, posters were part of "the most intense visual experience in the nation's history" up to that time (Roeder 1993, 62).

The posters addressed all areas of home front life, as well as personnel serving overseas. Some posters were directed at encouraging desired behavior, from daily teeth brushing to saving fats, buying war bonds to planting victory gardens. Others aimed to restrict behavior, curtailing loose talk that might aid the enemy, stopping absenteeism or sloppy work habits, or curtailing the spread of venereal diseases. Clearly the posters suggest a mobilized nation that needed to rely on men and women's conscious involvement in the war effort.

Poster and film images glorified and glamorized the roles of working women and suggested that a woman's femininity need not be sacrificed. Whether fulfilling their duty in the home, factory, office, or military, women were portrayed as attractive, confident, and resolved to do their part to win the war. (From the National Archives Records and Administration exhibit, *Powers of Persuasion 1994–1995*)

At the same time, many posters relied on restrictively gendered views. Some highlighted traditionally maligned images of women, while the men who did bad things were made to look like bumbling idiots or just plain naïve (the loose talking women and the men who chose the wrong woman). Others depicted the enemy, German and Japanese, as rats and other vicious animals.

Perhaps the most famous wartime image was the "We Can Do It" poster, which shows a muscular woman dressed for factory work. A Norman Rockwell poster shows another "Rosie the Riveter" with lunch box and welding tool at her side, fashioned after Michelangelo's *Isaiah* (initially a cover of *The Saturday Evening Post*, this image helped introduce the iconic Rosie to the nation). Countless posters showed lipsticked, well-coiffed, appealing white women, at times alongside a uniformed man, sometimes peeking out from under a Jeep, urging women to join the Red Cross, Army nursing corps, or other war services.

More sinister images in the security campaign showed women as the ultimate lures to obtain precious military information. The poster "Wanted for Murder" suggested the mugshot of a woman who had perhaps inadvertently passed on war-related information. Posters that spoke about sexual relations offered the most consistently negative images of women. "She looked clean, but . . ." one poster moaned, suggesting that the line between clean and dirty or good and bad was nearly imperceptible. "Saboteuse," a yellowish poster declared, showing an infected

U.S. WAR POSTERS

At least one viewer voiced objection to the negative depiction of women in some U.S. war posters: “American women who are knitting, rolling bandages, working long hours at war jobs and then carrying on with ‘women’s work’ at home—in short, taking over the countless drab duties to which no salary and no glory are attached, resent these unwarranted and presumptuous accusations which have no basis in fact, but from the time-worn gags of newspaper funny men.”

—A letter from a resident of Hawaii to the Office of War Information,
from NARA “Powers of Persuasion” exhibit.

http://www.archives.gov/exhibit_hall/powers_of_persuasion/powers_of_persuasion_home.html
(accessed March 4, 2005).

woman lurking in a doorway while near-innocent soldiers sauntered by. These posters, along with those urging men to “take a pro” (a prophylactic), supplemented the military and public health organizations’ extensive campaign to curtail prostitution, teenage sexual promiscuity, and the spread of venereal disease, which took a serious toll on work-hours in the military. Such posters did not appeal to any sense of sexual morality other than the underlying fears of the sexually active woman.

—Page Delano

See also Literature of World War II, U.S.,
Depiction of Women in

References and Further Reading

- Roeder, George. 1993. *The Censored War: American Visual Experience during World War II*. New Haven, CT: Yale.
- Winkler, Alan. 1972. *The Politics of Propaganda: The Office of War Information, 1942–1945*. New Haven, CT: Yale.

R

RAANC

See Australian Army Nursing Service/Royal Australian Army Nursing Corps

RANI OF JHANSI

See Lakshmi Bai and Sepoy Rebellion

RAPE: RED ARMY IN WORLD WAR II

Fate of German and other women at the hands of the victorious Red Army in World War II. Following the Russian success at the Battle of Kursk in the spring of 1943, the Russians began pushing the Germans back as they headed for Berlin. For women in the regions traversed or occupied by the Russian soldiers, this advance resulted in inescapable brutality suffered at the hands of the Soviets. Estimates of the total number of women raped by the advancing Red Army reach past 2 million (Beevor 2002, 410). Females of all ages, from girls as young as 12 to

elderly women approaching the end of their natural lifespan, experienced rape without any hope of protection or intervention. Neither age, nationality, religion, nor political association served to spare women from victimization at the hands of their occupiers or, as was often the case, liberators.

Revenge is attributed as the main motive behind the rapists' crimes. German policy toward Russians, military or civilian, allowed no mercy toward a race viewed as subhuman, and the soldiers of the Red Army used rape and other hate crimes to inflict retribution for this policy. Even some Russian women approved of rape under the same reasoning of punishing an enemy undeserving of mercy. Not all of the rape victims were German, however. Rape occurred wherever the Red Army passed, except for Bulgaria. According to Norman Naimark, the Red Army was less of a problem in Bulgaria due to the "superior leadership and discipline" of Marshal F. I. Tolbukhin and his officers and because the Bulgarians welcomed the Soviet troops, who were regarded by the Bulgarians as liberators (Naimark 1995, 70). Elsewhere the cruelty was due to out-of-control soldiers consumed with lust fueled by alcohol. Gangs of Russian soldiers raped Poles (Beevor 2002, 107), Romanians, Hungarians (Naimark 1995, 70), and even Russian and Ukrainian victims

RAPE COMMITTED BY THE RED ARMY IN GERMANY

“Beginning in East Prussia in January 1945, reaching a crescendo in the two-week battle for Berlin and continuing after the end of hostilities, rape ran at epidemic levels. The Red Army’s officers had neither the will nor inclination to stop it. During the battle, 130,000 women were raped, 10 percent of whom committed suicide. In the 1945 campaign in Germany, Beevor establishes, with unimpeachable scholarship, that at least 2 million women were ravished, many in gang rapes. Soviet soldiers violated all in their path, not just young German girls but women in their 70s, and even Russian prisoners.”

—Frank McLynn, “The Triumph of Terror,” *Independent* (London), May 2, 2002.

Quoted on the website for *Berlin: The Downfall 1945* by Anthony Beevor.

<http://www.arlindo-correia.com/040702.html> (accessed August 3, 2004).

from the Nazi-run labor camps that the Red Army was supposedly liberating (Beevor 2002, 107). Women emerging from labor camps experienced gang rape, often repeatedly, rather than liberation. Perhaps they were viewed as collaborators.

Rape of German women in Berlin was at its worst during the first week of the occupation but continued into 1948 (Naimark 1995, 79). Anthony Beevor emphasizes that the wave of rape during the initial occupation stemmed from revenge but then became a case of “the spoils going to the victor.” Stalin and other officials knew of the problem but took no major action to halt it. Official Soviet policy toward rape did not address the problem as a criminal act but rather as one damaging to the Soviets’ international image or as a health concern for the soldiers involved.

Until 1948, when orders confined Russian soldiers to their posts within the Russian zone of occupation in Germany, soldiers were rarely punished for rape. Soviet leaders wanted to halt the growing disdain for the Red Army and the communism that it was purported to represent, but the rampant occurrence of rape by their soldiers proved to be quite damaging. Following the war, women were not inclined to vote for communists, given their memory of them as rapists. Military authorities attempted to disseminate propaganda to dissuade rape, with the reasoning

that Russian soldiers should not want to “soil” themselves with the vile German enemy; this approach, however, proved ineffective. For women and their family members who dared to complain to occupying authorities, the only response was inaction. Authorities punished soldiers more often for looting, arson, and other forms of destruction of property than they punished them for rape.

Attempts of civilians to protect women were futile, but townspeople tried varying methods to warn each other of the approaching Red Army. Citizens sounded alarms, often banging pots and pans, creating a chain reaction of alarms across the town. In some instances, the sheer noise from these warnings served to hurry the exiting of the soldiers, irritated by the cacophonous onslaught of noise. Individually, men attempting to protect women suffered retribution for their actions. Women tried to protect themselves either by dressing as if they were important people or by dressing as dirty, unkempt, and unattractive individuals. These techniques proved fruitless. In some cases, a desperate woman hoping to avoid gang rape would approach a soldier and offer herself for his sole use.

The victims experienced common effects and results of rape, such as post-traumatic stress, unintended pregnancies, sexually transmitted diseases, and abandonment. Many women died, committed suicide, or obtained abortions after

being raped. Doctors, attempting to alleviate the problems, set up makeshift clinics to dole out penicillin, if it was available, or to perform abortions, despite legal restrictions on abortion. While some women preferred abortion, others kept their babies or gave them to organizations willing or able to care for their unwanted children. Men returning home also suffered when they discovered that their wives or fiancées had been raped. Their responses were often not supportive, adding to the victims' emotional trauma. Raped women soon found engagements broken off or relationships permanently changed. Though no official estimate of the number of children conceived through rape following the Red Army occupation has been calculated, people knew which children came from Russian fathers.

—*Rachael I. Cherry*

See also Rape in War

References and Further Reading

- Beevor, Anthony. 2002. *The Fall of Berlin, 1945*. New York: Viking.
- Hlihor, Constantin, and Ioan Scurtu. 2001. *The Red Army in Romania*. Oxford: The Center for Romanian Studies.
- Naimark, Norman M. 1995. *The Russians in Germany: A History of the Soviet Zone of Occupation, 1945–1949*. Cambridge, MA: The Belknap Press of Harvard University.
- Peterson, Edward N. 1999. *Russian Commands and German Occupation, 1945–1949*. New York: Peter Lang.

RAPE IN WAR

Mass rape in war. Rape in war is not a modern phenomenon. It has always occurred during warfare. Opinions explaining this vary considerably. Regardless of the reasons for its occurrence, the failure to punish the perpetrators has remained consistent over time. This lack of ac-

countability is directly linked to the gender-specific nature of the crime.

In the Middle Ages, most people believed that soldiers raped for sexual release. Many cultures and individual men believed that women existed to satisfy men's sexual appetites. Considered men's property, women were treated as part of the victor's booty.

To promote aggressive behavior, it has not been uncommon for armies or individual officers to encourage soldiers to rape or at least to tolerate their behavior. It functions as a form of male bonding. Furthermore, in a perverted way of reasoning, if it is heroic to kill enemy men during war, it must be heroic to rape an enemy woman. Since women began openly joining the military in the twentieth century, male soldiers raping female comrades has become a problem.

Rape is a sexual form of torture with the vast majority of victims being female. As a method of torture, rape (or its threat) is employed to obtain information and to display power and the ability to dominate. It may be in retaliation for the woman's own actions or those of her male compatriots. Enemy males, also sometimes sodomized, often are more reluctant to reveal the abuse than are females. The gendered nature of the crime of rape is a factor in the apparent reluctance to punish perpetrators. There is a gendered imbalance of power in the world, especially in the upper echelons of government and military, the very people with the power to prosecute such wartime offenses.

Raping a woman humiliates not only her but also her male guardian, exposing his inability to fulfill his duty to protect the women of his family. Thus, raping a woman in front of her parents or husband is common practice during war. In cultures placing a high value on women's sexual purity, rape may lead to ostracism from family and community or even to the woman's murder or suicide. In other instances, women are offered to the enemy in an attempt to protect others.

Repeated brutalization in gang rapes sometimes results in the victim's death, often from vaginal bleeding. The likelihood of permanent physical damage, including infertility, increases

RAPE IN WAR

“From conflicts in Bosnia and Herzegovina to Peru to Rwanda, girls and women have been singled out for rape, imprisonment, torture and execution. Rape, identified by psychologists as the most intrusive of traumatic events, has been documented in many armed conflicts including those in Bangladesh, Cambodia, Cyprus, Haiti, Liberia, Somalia, and Uganda.”

—UNICEF. “Sexual Violence as a Weapon of War.”
<http://www.unicef.org/sowc96pk/sexviol.htm> (accessed March 8, 2004).

Reports of Rape

“1991–1994: Serbian paramilitary troops used rape systematically as a tactic to encourage Bosnian Muslim women to flee from their land.

“1994: In Rwanda, Hutu leaders ordered their troops to rape Tutsi women as an integral part of their genocidal campaign.

“1997: Secular women were targeted by Muslim revolutionaries in Algeria and reduced to sex slaves.

“1998: Indonesian security forces allegedly raped ethnic Chinese women during a spate of major rioting.

“Late 1990s: Serbian military and paramilitary units systematically raped ethnic Albanian Muslim women during the unrest in Kosovo.”

—“Rape of Women during Wartime: Before, during, and since World War II.”
 Religious Tolerance.org. http://www.religioustolerance.org/war_rape.htm (accessed March 8, 2004).

with each assault. The chances of contracting a venereal disease also rise since military infection rates are higher than civilian (Machel 2001, 44). Rape is sometimes even employed as a means of spreading such infections.

Pregnancy can also result. Impregnation, as a means of destabilizing the opposing community, may be the desired result. Moreover, some soldiers, surrounded by the ever-present possibility of death, may rape because of a desire (conscious or not) for the perceived immortality gained by producing a child. Hatred of women’s reproductive powers may also be a factor. In addition to psychological and possible physical, social, and economic damage, pregnancy creates more problems for the rape victim. If she herself is not ostracized, the child probably will be. If

she is alone in a war-torn country, providing for another mouth will be difficult. Under such conditions, many will choose to abort.

Rape is sometimes employed as a rhetorical tool. Implications of having committed rape emasculate the accused and fuel resistance. Reports of rape are employed to garner the assistance of other neutral groups by harnessing feelings of sympathy, horror, and outrage. This rhetoric, however, can undermine reality through willful exaggeration and desensitization.

In 1998 the U.N. International Criminal Tribunal for Rwanda finally set a precedent by recognizing rape, when it occurred on a massive scale or under orders, as a form of torture. While rape had been recognized as a war crime in the past (for example, in the Fourth Geneva Conven-

tion of 1949, Article 27), no one had ever been successfully prosecuted for it until the conviction of Jean-Paul Akeyasu in 1998. At the International Tribunal at The Hague dealing with war crimes in the former Yugoslavia, genocidal rape was also declared an indictable offense.

—Tonya M. Lambert

See also Chechnya, Impact on Women of Wars in; East Timor, Abuse of Women during War; Guatemala, Civil Conflict and Women; Kashmir, Conflict in, Women and; Rape: Red Army in World War II; Sudan, Women and the Civil War in; Yugoslavia, Women and the Wars That Accompanied the Disintegration of Yugoslavia

References and Further Reading

- Machel, Graca. 2001. *The Impact of War on Children*. Vancouver and Toronto: UBC.
- Ryan, Louise. 2000. "Drunken Tans": Representations of Sex and Violence in the Anglo-Irish War (1919–1921). *Feminist Review* 46:73–94.
- Tanaka, Yuki. 1996. *Hidden Horrors: Japanese War Crimes in World War II*. Boulder, CO: Westview.
- Teo, Hsu-Ming. 1996. The Continuum of Sexual Violence in Occupied Germany, 1945–1949. *Women's History Review* 5(2): 191–218.
- Thomas, Dorothy Q., and Regan E. Ralph. 1999. Rape in War: The Case of Bosnia. Pages 203–218 in *Gender Politics in the Western Balkans: Women and Society in Yugoslavia and the Yugoslav Successor States*. Edited by Sabrina P. Ramet. University Park: Pennsylvania State University.

RASKOVA (NÉE MALININA),
MARINA MIKHAILOVNA
(1912–1943)

Woman Soviet pilot who persuaded Stalin to form three women's combat wings at a time when there was no shortage of male aircrews and combat aircraft were scarce and outdated.

Marina Raskova was a talented organizer and bold dreamer, with a personality that endeared her to subordinates. She acquired specialized knowledge of navigation while employed as draftsman at the N. E. Zhukovsky Air Force Engineering Academy. The first Soviet woman to earn the diploma of professional air navigator, she became navigation instructor at the academy. She also trained to fly at the academy's expense. A pupil of famous navigators A. Beliakov and I. Spirin, as well as a participant from 1935 in various competitive flights, Raskova became an important navigator in Moscow's May Day air shows.

She gained special fame as the navigator of an ANT-37, *Rodina* (Homeland), piloted by Valentina Grizodubova and copiloted by Polina Osipenko, during a pioneering nonstop flight from Moscow to the Pacific (6,450 kilometers) executed on September 24–25, 1938. Having failed to reach the destination airfield in Komsomol'sk on the Amur River, the pilot, running out of fuel, was forced to land immediately. (The crew suspected that their mechanics failed to refill the tanks after the aircraft had been tested on the ground.) Fearful of nosing over, the pilot ordered Raskova, located in the forward cabin, to bail out. As a result she unexpectedly spent ten days wandering in the taiga. For their feat, the crew of three were each awarded Hero of the Soviet Union, the highest Soviet military decoration, becoming the first three Soviet women to be thus honored.

After the German invasion, Air Group No. 122 was created. The recruitment of women to the air group began in October 1941 in Moscow and continued in Engels near Stalingrad. The women were at first trained as aircraft and technical support crews (1941–1942). The group evolved into three combat wings: 586th Fighter Regiment, 587th Dive Bomber Regiment (initially commanded by Major Raskova), and 588th Night Bomber Regiment. In 1943 the 588th and 587th were to be renamed, respectively, 46th Taman Guards Night Bomber Regiment and 125th M. M. Raskova Borisov Guards Dive Bomber Regiment.

After Raskova died in a crash during the heavy snowstorm of January 4, 1943, her subordinates pledged to earn the right for their unit to bear her name and qualify as a guards regiment. Both objectives were reached in 1943. Moreover, the regiment's Second Squadron's tactics, as applied in the air battle of June 4, 1943, over the Kuban area, became a model for the entire Soviet bomber aviation.

Raskova's ashes were immured in the Kremlin Wall beside those of fighter pilot Polina Osipenko, who had perished in a training accident in 1939.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Soviet Union, 46th Taman Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment; Soviet Union Air Defense, 586th Fighter Aviation Regiment

References and Further Reading

- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 1997. *Women in Air War*. Nepean, Ontario, Canada: New Military Publishing. (Original collection edited by Militsa A. Kazarinova et al., 2nd ed. 1971, under the title *V nebe frontovom*.)
- . 1998. *Women in War and Resistance*. Nepean, Ontario, Canada: New Military Publishing.
- Pennington, Reina. 2003. Raskova, Marina Mikhailovna Malinina. Pages 351–354 in *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*. Edited by Reina Pennington. Vol. 2. Westport, CT: Greenwood Press.

RAVENSBRÜCK

Nazi concentration camp for women. The camp was located 56 miles north of Berlin on swampy land near the Havel River. On May 15, 1939, the first prisoners arrived, 867 women transferred from Lichtenburg. The camp was staffed by 150 female SS supervisors (*Aufseherinnen*), male guards, and male administrators. In 1942 and 1943 Ravensbrück served as a training base for women supervisors, and 3,500 women were

trained there for work in Ravensbrück and other camps. Among them was Irma Grese.

In late 1939 the camp held 2,000 prisoners. By late 1942 there were 10,800. In 1944 the main camp contained 26,700 female prisoners and several thousand female minors grouped in a detention camp for children. Most of the camp was evacuated in March 1945 as the Russians approached, and 24,500 prisoners were marched into Mechlenburg. When the camp was liberated by Soviet troops on April 29–30, they found 3,500 ill and famished females.

During its existence, at least 107,753 (123,000 according to Tillion 1975, 17) women were interned in Ravensbrück and its satellite detention centers, most of which were industrial slave-labor sites. There was a concentration camp for men near Ravensbrück, but it was connected with the Sachsenhausen camp rather than Ravensbrück. Approximately 50,000 inmates died while imprisoned at Ravensbrück. In addition to general overwork, exposure, malnutrition, disease, and abuse, individual women were subjected to excruciating medical experimentation in the camp, including bone transplants, induced gas gangrene, and deliberately infected incisions. Early in 1945 a gas chamber was constructed at the camp, and between 2,200 and 2,400 women were gassed there. Max Koegel, who had been commandant from the opening of the camp until the summer of 1942, committed suicide in 1946. His successor, Fritz Suhren, was tried and executed in 1950.

Germaine Tillion, a member of the French resistance, was arrested on August 13, 1942. She and her mother, who was also involved in the resistance, were sent to Ravensbrück in October 1943. She wrote,

For a stipulated price the businessman or industrialist received the 500 or 1,000 women requested, along with *Aufseherinnen* who, equipped with trained dogs and clubs, could force twelve hours of work a day from exhausted and starving women, right up to the point of death. They would be replaced with more of the same, without

additional cost to the client. But thanks to the Aufseherinnen, the dogs, and the beatings, it was a perfect cycle, with no waste; the prisoners worked until they could work no more. (Tillion 1975, 42–43)

—Bernard Cook

See also Grese, Irma; Holocaust and Jewish Women; Tillion, Germaine

References and Further Reading

- Dressen, Willy. 1991. Ravensbrück. Pages 757–758 in *The Encyclopedia of the Third Reich*. Edited by Christian Zentner and Friedemann Bedürftig; translated and edited by Amy Hackett. Vol. 2. New York: Macmillan.
- Museum of Tolerance Multimedia Learning Center. “Ravensbrück.” <http://motlc.weisenthal.com/text/x28/xr2821.html> (accessed February 5, 2004).
- Spector, Shmuel. 1990. Ravensbrück. Pages 1226–1227 in *Encyclopedia of the Holocaust*. New York: Macmillan.
- Tillion, Germaine. 1975. *Ravensbrück: An Eyewitness Account of a Woman's Concentration Camp*. Garden City, NY: Anchor.

RED ARMY FACTION, WEST GERMANY, WOMEN OF THE

Leftist terrorist group in West Germany. The Red Army Faction (RAF) grew out of the West German student movement that began around 1965 as a nonviolent protest against poor conditions in universities, widespread political apathy, and, most generally, the vestiges of authoritarianism that young people perceived in their society. The German movement had at its core a unique psychological dilemma as young, idealistic Germans brought up in postwar peace and affluence felt overwhelming guilt for the crimes of their parents' generation. Within a few years the movement was espousing, in theory at least,

violent struggle against the “fascist” state in imitation of that seen in colonized lands in the Third World. The RAF, officially founded in 1970, aimed, through specifically directed violence, to induce the state to overreact, revealing a true fascist nature that it had carefully hidden behind the mask of democracy.

Women were involved in the leadership of the RAF from its inception. In 1968 Gudrun Ensslin was one of four radicals who set several fires in a Frankfurt department store. Two years later, Ensslin and journalist Ulrike Meinhof, with the help of Irene Goergens, Ingrid Schubert, and Astrid Proll, as well as several men, freed Andreas Baader, one of the arsonists, from prison. The act brought the group, called the Baader-Meinhof gang by the press, into existence. It later adopted “Red Army Faction” as its official title. Although Ensslin, Baader, and a few others formed the core of the group, Ulrike Meinhof, as a well-regarded journalist for the leftist paper *konkret* (Concrete), was the best-known member of RAF, and she wrote most of the group's manifestos and other explanatory material. In 1970 nine RAF members, including five women (Meinhof, Ensslin, Monika Berberich, Brigitte Asdonk, and Petra Schelm), traveled to Beirut to train with Palestinian militants. In the early years of the group's existence, a majority of members were women, and from 1970 to the group's dissolution in 1998, women comprised almost 40 percent of its membership.

As was the case in other left-wing terrorist groups in Europe and the United States, core members of the RAF tended to embrace radical political views and movements but forsook normal political action as they embarked on a policy of direct action. Women in the RAF felt the psychological burden of the Nazi past just as men did; their ideological construction of the state as a fascist entity to be opposed with violence demonstrated their determination to “redo” the past by responding to evil as they wished their parents had done. Of course, the government of West Germany, whatever its faults, did not in any way approach the criminality of the Third Reich.

The presence of women in the RAF had an unintended beneficial effect for the group, as members could satisfy their emotional and sexual needs through relationships with other group members. The RAF was therefore less vulnerable to betrayal by outsiders, and members' loyalties were less likely to be diluted by the pull of personal relationships outside the group. On the other hand, rocky relationships within the group consumed time and energy and at times diminished the effectiveness of the organization.

By including women, the RAF, unlike extremist right-wing groups, doubled the number of potential recruits it could reach. Some female members of the RAF became involved through their relationships with male members, such as Astrid Proll, who was drawn into the group by her brother, Thorwald. Astrid went on to play a central role in the group while Thorwald lost his nerve and was excluded. Monika Berberich was RAF founder Horst Mahler's assistant, and Petra Schelm was the girlfriend of member Manfred Grashof. Eyewitnesses noted that female RAF members were more cruel than male members; the observation may be accurate, or it may reflect a tendency to find female violence more shocking than male.

Women in the RAF carried out activities that men could never have done. Perhaps the best instance occurred in 1985, when a female member of the group met a young U.S. soldier in a bar and lured him to a nearby woods, where he was killed and his military identification stolen. The card was used by a male RAF member to gain access to Rhine-Main Air Base, where a bomb was set off, killing two.

—Anni P. Baker

See also Baader-Meinhof Gang; Peru: Shining Path; Red Brigades, Italy, Women of the

References and Further Reading

Becker, Jillian. 1977. *Hitler's Children: The Story of the Baader-Meinhof Terrorist Gang*. Philadelphia: Lippincott.

Horchem, Hans Josef. 1986. *Terrorism in West Germany*. London: Institute for the Study of Conflict.

RED BRIGADES, ITALY, WOMEN OF THE

From 1970 to 1988 the largest and most deadly left-wing terrorist organization in Italy. The Red Brigades (RB) were responsible for most of the 415 deaths through terrorism during that period, including 75 assassinations and twice as many unsuccessful attempts. It also conducted 17 political kidnappings, some of which ended in death, most famously the abduction of former Italian Prime Minister Aldo Moro in 1979. The RB tended to avoid the use of indiscriminate bombing as a tactic, preferring instead to target specific individuals, although others such as police, guards, drivers, and bystanders were wounded and killed as a result of its operations. The RB drew on Marxist ideology to define its goal of destroying the state and creating a proletarian dictatorship.

At its height in the late 1970s, the RB included 600 full-time members as well as thousands of supporters who provided logistical assistance and funds. Most members of the RB had begun with radical politics but, frustrated by inaction, broke away from former associates and took the final step into violence. The group survived four "generations," as imprisoned members were replaced by younger recruits.

As was the case in many left-wing terror groups of the period, women made up at least 30 percent of the RB, and the percentage of female leadership was even higher. They seem to have joined the group for the same combination of ideological and personal reasons as their male comrades. Many RB women grew up having artisan, working-class, or peasant backgrounds, with parents who espoused left-wing or communist views. Others came from middle-

class families where religious belief gave them their first impetus toward social transformation. A few had fractious relationships with their parents, but most came from close and contented families; family trauma has not been found to correlate with involvement in terrorism. Female RB members saw women as a distinct group experiencing a particular type of oppression, but they rejected the consciousness-raising activities of the women's movement in the 1970s as time-wasting and fruitless. Instead they embraced the concept of revolutionary violence as the only means of societal transformation and put their faith in the Marxist model that would, they expected, erase gender distinctions along with those of class. Although women often were exposed to radical ideology through boyfriends or husbands, those who became involved in RB terrorism joined the group voluntarily, and many female terrorists were more conversant than men in ideological fine points because they felt compelled to prove and reprove their dedication.

The experience of Margherita Cagol, one of the three founders of the RB in 1970, illustrates many of these trends. Cagol grew up in Trent in a stable middle-class family where she was noted for her religious sensibility and concern for the poor. She attended the University of Trent, where she embraced radical politics wholeheartedly, marrying Renato Curcio, a fellow revolutionary. Although Curcio and Carlo Franceschini are frequently named as the founders of the RB, Cagol's role was equally important. On September 8, 1974, Curcio was arrested by the police in connection with a series of bombings, but five months later, Cagol freed him. On June 5, 1975, she was killed in a shootout with the Italian gendarmerie, the Carabinieri, the first RB militant to die. Curcio was recaptured in January 1976.

Like Margherita Cagol, women in the RB participated in assassinations, bank robberies, and gun battles, but they also acted as lookouts, scouts, drivers, and in other roles where a woman, sometimes with a child in tow, would be

unlikely to attract attention. Some resented this unexciting role and wanted to be more directly involved in exciting exploits.

The RB's comradeship and sense of belonging were attractive to women and men and led many members into the group; by the 1980s, however, the RB was decimated by arrests. Many women who found themselves in prison for long periods faced the likelihood that they would not see their children for years; others struggled with the reality that they might never have children. For many RB women both in and out of prison, the years of disillusion following their involvement with the group brought depression, drug and alcohol abuse, and other mental and physical illnesses. In 1987, concerned about the generation of young people who had wasted their lives on destructive activity, the Italian government pardoned RB members who renounced violence; almost 600 men and women did so. But no pardon could retrieve the decades or bring back the hundreds of lives lost to terrorism.

—Anni P. Baker

See also Peru: Shining Path; Red Army Faction, West Germany, Women of the

References and Further Reading

- Catanzaro, Raimondo. 1991. *The Red Brigades and Left-Wing Terrorism in Italy*. New York: St. Martin's.
- Meade, Robert C. 1990. *The Red Brigades: The Story of Italian Terrorism*. New York: St. Martin's.

RED CROSS OF THE UNITED STATES: WORLD WAR I AND WORLD WAR II

U.S. component of the International Red Cross, which provided nurses to the U.S. Army and Navy and organized many war-related relief efforts during World Wars I and II. In September 1914, when an American Red Cross mercy ship

sailed out of New York harbor bound for Europe to help soldiers and civilians all over the continent, the U.S. Red Cross organization had 562 chapters and about 500,000 members. World War I transformed the American Red Cross into a powerful social force, and when the war ended in 1918, there were 3,724 chapters, 17,000 branches, and over 31 million members. Although those on the mercy ship were called back home after a year because of insufficient funds, they blazed a path of service for other Red Cross volunteers to follow.

In 1916 the surgeon general of the army and navy requested the Red Cross to organize 50 base hospitals in Europe, and the next year, when the United States entered the war, President Woodrow Wilson appointed a war council to run the Red Cross. Over 30 million Americans became actively involved in Red Cross work, including assembling comfort packages for soldiers overseas and making bandages. The Red Cross began a massive effort to raise funds and recruit members. As part of its effort, it recruited famous artists to produce posters. Alonzo E. Foringer produced a painting entitled "The Greatest Mother in the World," depicting the Red Cross as the ultimate compassionate caretaker.

Red Cross nurses were at the center of the organization's World War I efforts. Eighteen thousand Red Cross nurses served with the Army and Navy Nurse Corps, nearly half of them laboring on the home front to improve health and sanitary conditions. The rest worked at U.S. base hospitals in France, on hospital trains, or in evacuation and field hospitals. Two out of every three navy nurses and four out of five army nurses were Red Cross nurses. The Red Cross also contributed the first contingent of African American nurses certified to the military. The approximately 1,800 African American nurses were restricted by the military to "colored" cantonments, but the situation changed with the influenza pandemic that swept through the United States between 1918 and 1919. The pandemic allowed African American nurses to demonstrate their expertise and

indispensability and join the other Red Cross nurses, who worked tirelessly during the pandemic. Of the 24,000 nurses recruited for war service, 296 died in the line of duty. The Red Cross pioneered psychiatric nursing programs at veterans' hospitals, organized the manufacture of artificial limbs, and helped rehabilitate amputees and blind veterans.

In addition, Red Cross workers provided medical and recreational services for military personnel at home and overseas. The Red Cross established canteens for soldiers in the United States and in Europe. At its twenty two canteens near the front lines, Red Cross volunteers served coffee, donuts, and sandwiches. Canteen workers also comforted wounded soldiers and gave them coffee and water.

By Armistice Day, November 11, 1918, the Red Cross had compiled impressive war service statistics. Overseas, American Red Cross workers labored in over 25 countries and helped millions of civilian refugees as well as Allied soldiers. Over 2,000 American Red Cross workers stayed abroad after the war to continue their work, operating hospitals, convalescent homes, health centers, and clinics.

In the months before Pearl Harbor, Red Cross volunteers in Hawaii staged practice air raids and set up 10 emergency medical stations. When the Japanese attacked, Red Cross medical personnel were on the scene tending the wounded until the doctors could reach them. Twenty-four hours after the Pearl Harbor attack, Red Cross headquarters had organized 1,000 medically trained people for service with the military.

By the time the U.S. Marines landed on Guadalcanal in 1942, over 3 million volunteers were participating in Red Cross activities. More than 70,000 registered nurses served through the Red Cross. The organization created the Nurse's Aide Corps, a strictly volunteer program, to accommodate the nursing needs of the civilian population during World War II. The Nurse's Aide Corps, composed of volunteer women between the ages of 18 and 50, did nontechnical work that gave nurses more time for their pro-

fessional duties. Volunteers had to pledge to work a minimum of 150 hours a year. The Red Cross recruited nearly 212,000 volunteers who accumulated 42 million hours of service by 1945.

The Red Cross arranged the shipment of food packages for U.S. and Allied prisoners of war. By 1944 Red Cross ships had transported almost 26 million aid packages. The American Red Cross also worked with the International Red Cross to inspect camps and exchange ill and wounded prisoners.

On the home front, the Red Cross organized people of all ages to collect scrap, serve in hospitals, make war relief materials, teach health and safety courses, and assist military people. By 1944 the number of Red Cross volunteers had doubled to 7.5 million. Red Cross blood drives were crucially important. Donating blood for wounded soldiers appealed to the patriotism of ordinary people who were not fighting at the front. By the time the wartime blood donor service was disbanded, the Red Cross had collected 13.4 million units of blood for the wounded.

This service organization provided essential support and relief to sick and wounded combatants and to prisoners of war. It also provided needed morale boosting both for combatants and noncombatants.

—Kathleen Warnes

See also Mercy Ship; Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War I; Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War II

References and Further Reading

- Davison, Henry Pomeroy. 1920. *The American Red Cross in the Great War*. New York: Macmillan.
- Dulles, Foster Rhea. 1971. *The American Red Cross, A History*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- PBS.org. "Blood in War: Red Cross Blood Donor Service." <http://www.pbs.org/wnet/redgold/basics/redcross.html> (accessed March 17, 2004).
- Redcross.org. "History of the American Red Cross." <http://www.redcross.org/museum/19001919bhtml> and <http://www.redcrossaustin.org/historyhtml> (accessed March 19, 2004).

REED, ESTHER DE BERDT (1746–1780)

Organized women's relief work in support of the American Revolution. In 1770, Esther De Berdt, the only daughter of a London trader, married Joseph Reed of New Jersey, who was studying law in England. The newlyweds and her mother settled in Philadelphia. Joseph Reed played a prominent role in the Revolution, serving as president of the first provincial convention in Pennsylvania in 1774 and later as one of Washington's aides.

With six young children (including three born during the war), Esther Reed could have retreated into domestic duties. Instead, in 1780 she formed the Ladies Association to systematically raise money for support of the army. Reed opened their campaign by publishing a pamphlet, *The Sentiments of an American Woman*, on June 10, 1780. The pamphlet listed women in history who had defended their country and called on all women to do so in this hour of need. Members of the association went door to door raising funds and wrote to prominent women in other states urging them to join in the fund-raising. Women in New Jersey, Maryland, and Virginia responded by organizing their own fund drives. The Pennsylvania women raised over \$300,000 in Continental dollars (or \$7,500 in specie).

Originally the women intended to give each soldier cash, but George Washington opposed this, so the women instead bought cloth, hired sewers, and produced shirts for the soldiers. They sewed many garments themselves. Esther Reed, already weakened from smallpox and the birth of a son in May 1780, died from dysentery on September 18. Sarah Franklin Bache oversaw completion of the task and the delivery of 2,200 shirts to soldiers by December 1780.

—Joan R. Gundersen

See also American Revolution, Role of Women in the

References and Further Reading

- Gundersen, Joan R. 1996. *"To Be Useful to the World": Women in Revolutionary America, 1740–1790*. New York: Twayne Publishing.
- Kerber, Linda K. 1980. *Women of the Republic: Intellect and Ideology in Revolutionary America*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina Press; Institute of Early American History and Culture.
- Norton, Mary Beth. 1980. *Liberty's Daughters: The Revolutionary Experience of American Women, 1750–1800*. Boston: Little, Brown.

REIK, HAVIVA (1914–1944)

Member of an underground mission sent into Nazi-occupied Slovakia in 1944 by the Yishuv, the Jewish community of Palestine. Born in the village of Shayo Hasso near Banska-Bystrica, Slovakia, Haviva Reik was a member of the Ha-Shomer ha-Tsa'ir Zionist youth movement. In 1938, when Slovakia was annexed by Hungary, Reik became involved in the rescue activities of the Jewish National Fund and the Zionist Organization of Slovakia to help Slovak Jews relocate to Palestine. In December 1938, she left Slovakia for Palestine, joining the Kibbutz Ma'anit. Once there, Haviva enlisted in the Palmah, the fighting branch of the Hagana, the Yishuv's underground military organization.

When Haviva's service to the Palmah was over, she volunteered to become a parachutist for the Hagana, dropping into Nazi-occupied Europe to rescue Jews and to lead them to safety in Palestine. After intensive training, she and other members traveled to Italy to await air transport to Slovakia. Their mission was to reach the Slovak capital, Bratislava, and establish contact with the leaders of the Pracovna Skupina (Working Group), a semiunderground Jewish rescue organization. Although British authorities aided the three male members of her group to parachute into Slovakia, they refused to send a woman behind enemy lines. On

September 21, 1944, Haviva parachuted into Slovakia with the assistance of U.S. pilots who were flying to Banska-Bystrica, the heart of the Slovak National Uprising. At the end of September, a fifth member of the group parachuted into Slovakia carrying radio transmitters for the unit.

Because of the upheaval in Banska-Bystrica, Haviva and her Hagana comrades found their time consumed with merely staying alive. They were, however, able to gather the support of forty Jewish partisans. In late October when German Nazis suppressed the Slovak National Uprising, members of the resistance fled to the mountains. They set up a small camp near the village of Bukovice, attempting to gather weapons and fortifying their position.

Six days after they reached the village, the camp was entered by Ukrainian Galacia Waffen, a division of SS troops. Haviva was captured, interrogated, tortured, and sentenced to death as a spy. On November 20, 1944, Haviva was executed in Kremnica, her body thrown into a mass grave with 250 other Jews and Gypsies. Haviva's body was later recovered, and on September 10, 1952, her remains were buried in the Mt. Herzl military cemetery in Jerusalem.

Today, Haviva Reik is considered a Zionist hero. Her courage and loyalty are memorialized in the Kibbutz Lahavot Haviva; the ship *Haviva Reik*, which carried Jewish immigrants to Palestine after World War II; and the Givat Haviva, an Israeli educational center.

—Joann M. Ross

See also Bruskina, Masha; Holocaust and Jewish Women; Kempner, Vitka; Korczak, Rozka; Landau, Emilia

References and Further Reading

- Laska, Vera, ed. 1983. *Women in the Resistance and in the Holocaust: The Voice of Eyewitnesses*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Museum of Tolerance Online Multimedia Learning Center: Simon Wiesenthal Center. "Reik, Haviva." <http://motlc.wiesenthal.com/text/x25/xm2537.html> (accessed May 20, 2004).

Syrkin, Marie. 1947. *Blessed in the Match: The Story of Jewish Resistance*. Philadelphia: The Jewish Publication Society of America.
 Yadvashem.org. Shoah Resource Center. The International School for Holocaust Studies. "Reik, Haviva." <http://www.yadvashem.org> (accessed May 20, 2004).

REITSCH, HANNA
 (1912–1976)

German test pilot. Hanna Reitsch was the only woman to receive an Iron Cross from Hitler and was one of the last people to see him alive in 1945. Born the daughter of a prominent ophthalmologist in Hirschberg, Germany, on March 29, 1912, Reitsch was expected to attend medical school, which she began in 1930. She convinced her parents that her ambition to be a medical missionary required her to take glider lessons at nearby Galgenberg, where she quickly gained a reputation as a fearless and gifted pilot and mechanic. After setting a glider altitude record in 1933, Reitsch began an aviation career as a flying instructor, film stunt pilot, and member of several scientific crews studying air currents in South America.

In 1934, through her personal friendships with Werner von Braun, Ernst Udet (a World War I fighter ace), and General Robert Ritter von Greim, Reitsch was recruited to do government meteorology testing and public demonstrations of aircraft, including a flight over the 1936 Winter Olympics and an indoor arena flight of a helicopter. In 1937 she moved directly to the Luftwaffe testing labs at Reichlen. She was granted the title *Flugkapitan* (captain of the air) after test flying and offering design suggestions for a Storch fighter and the Messerschmidt ME163 "Rocket Plane." Reitsch's cool thinking allowed her to survive a series of catastrophic design failures that led to numerous crashes. For her bravery, she was awarded the

Gold Medal for Flying, with a special diamond addition, by Hermann Goering in March 1941, then the Iron Cross First Class in February 1943 from Hitler himself. Reitsch was only the second woman ever awarded the Iron Cross and the only one to be publicly acknowledged by Hitler.

After seeing conditions on the Russian front during a morale tour in 1943, Reitsch collaborated with Otto Skorzeny in planning suicide flights using a modified V-1 rocket outfitted with a cockpit. Although Reitsch test-flew several of the flying missiles successfully, the Reich never adopted their plan. As the war went on, political tension increased because of her mentor von Greim's rivalry with Goering. Reitsch and von Greim went to great pains to be discreet about their friendship, but it was widely rumored that they were lovers, something Reitsch denied in her memoirs.

On April 26, 1945, Reitsch and von Greim were ordered to fly into Berlin and meet senior Nazi leaders in the underground Chancellery. Von Greim was wounded during the landing approach, and Reitsch brought the plane down at the Brandenburg Gate. She suspected they were to fly out members of the staff or the Goebbels children but was disappointed when she and von Greim were ordered to rally the remaining Luftwaffe for a defense of Berlin. Convinced the city was doomed, they left for Kitzbuhel, where both surrendered to U.S. troops. Reitsch's family, refugees in Salzburg, committed suicide, as did von Greim, who took cyanide while in custody. Reitsch chose not to carry through a suicide plan and instead served as an important witness to the last days in the Berlin Chancellery bunker.

Forbidden from flying after the war, Reitsch wrote her memoirs to support herself and to defend against her portrayal in Hugh Trevor-Roper's *Last Days of Hitler*, which derided her technical skill and painted her as a shrill and besotted acolyte of Hitler and von Greim. Returning to fly gliders in 1951, she left the sport in protest after being banned from traveling to Poland for competition in 1958. Reitsch subsequently traveled to

Africa, where she trained pilots for the new government of Ghana; she became an admirer of Kwame Nkrumah but was forced to flee the country when he was overthrown in 1966. Reitsch died of a heart attack on August 24, 1979, and was buried with her family in Salzburg.

—Margaret Sankey

See also Cochran, Jacqueline; Dalrymple, Mildred Inks; Fedutenko, Nadezhda Nikiforovna; Hobby, Oveta Culp; Johnson, Amy; Leska-Daab, Anna; Lewandowska, Jania

References and Further Reading

- Piszkiwicz, Dennis. 1997. *From Nazi Test Pilot to Hitler's Bunker: The Fantastic Flights of Hanna Reitsch*. Westport, CT: Praeger.
- Reitsch, Hanna. 1954. *Flying Is My Life*. New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons.
- . 1968. *Ich Flog für Kwame Nkrumah* [I Flew for Kwame Nkrumah]. Munich: J. F. Lehmann.

RIDDLE, TOBY

See Winema

RIEDESEL, FRIEDERIKE CHARLOTTE LUISE VON MASSOW VON (1746–1808)

An astute observer and diarist who accompanied her husband, Baron Friedrich von Riedesel, during his service as the senior Hessian general serving with the British in the United States from 1776 to 1783. Delayed by the birth of a son and by transport problems, the Baroness Friederike von Riedesel and her three small children arrived in Quebec in June 1777. She then traveled 150 miles (241 kilometers) through rough countryside to reunite briefly with her

husband before returning 85 miles (137 kilometers) to her billet in Trois Rivières.

In August 1777 the baroness and her children moved forward with General John Burgoyne as he pushed into New York. During the several engagements leading to the British surrender at Saratoga, their quarters became a hospital and at times was under fire. With Burgoyne's surrender on October 17, 1777, the baroness and her husband became prisoners of war.

Although the baroness faced numerous hardships, von Riedesel's rank opened doors. U.S. General Philip Schuyler hosted the family immediately after their surrender. Later they would exchange visits with elite families in Virginia and Maryland, including Thomas Jefferson and Charles Carroll. With each move the baroness scrambled to set up a working farm to supply their table.

After the von Riedesels had been held as prisoners in Boston for a year, the Convention Army, the British army that surrendered at Saratoga, was moved to Virginia. The baroness and her family took 2 months to cover the 550 miles (885 kilometers) to Virginia. They arrived in mid-January, cold and hungry, at their un-supplied, unfurnished rented plantation. After her husband had a stroke, he and the baroness traveled to one of Virginia's hot springs to recover. It was there they learned he was to be exchanged in New York for American prisoners held by the British.

The pregnant baroness and her children set out for New York in August 1779. She arrived at the end of November, having been delayed by visits, illness, and problems with the exchange. Cleared for active service in 1780, the baroness was posted to Canada in 1781. The von Riedesels returned to Europe in 1783. The journal that Baroness von Riedesel kept during her travels and published on her return is a rich source describing the experiences of the war and the women who traveled with the army.

—Joan R. Gundersen

See also American Revolution, Role of Women in the

References and Further Reading

- Leung, Michelle. 2000. Baroness Friederike von Riedesel, "Mrs. General." Pages 267–284 in *The Human Tradition in the American Revolution*. Edited by Nancy L. Rhoden and Ian K. Steele. Wilmington, DE: Scholarly Resources.
- Riedesel, Friederike von. 1965. *Baroness von Riedesel and the American Revolution: Journal and Correspondence of a Tour of Duty, 1776–1783*. Translated by Marvin L. Brown Jr. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina.
- Thorpe, Louise Hall. 1962. *The Baroness and the General*. Boston: Little, Brown.

ROLFE, LILIAN
(1914–1945)

British agent during World War II. Lilian Vera Rolfe was born in Paris on April 26, 1914. The daughter of George Samuel Rolfe, an accountant working in Paris, she moved to Brazil with her family at the age of sixteen. She worked in the British embassy in Rio de Janeiro. After monitoring German ships in the harbor of Rio de Janeiro, she went to London to participate more actively in the war effort. Rolfe joined the Women's Auxiliary Air Force (WAAF). She was fluent in French, and the Special Operations Executive (SOE) recruited her on November 26, 1943, to be trained as a wireless operator. She was given the code name Nadine and was parachuted with a small radio transmitter and receiver to a location near the city of Orléans on April 5, 1944. She worked with the Historian network headed by Captain George Wilkinson.

Rolfe sent radio messages from the French underground to London. She dispatched sixty seven messages despite the efforts of the Gestapo to find her. Her messages enabled supply drops by the British for the French resistance and provided information on German troop movements. She also participated in missions with the French resistance against the Nazis. Rolfe was involved in a gun battle at the

small town of Olivet near Orléans and was finally arrested on July 31, 1944, in a house where her transmitter was located. She was taken to Fresnes prison and was shipped to the Ravensbrück concentration camp on August 8, 1944. After undergoing interrogation and torture, she was executed on February 5, 1945.

For her bravery and sacrifice, she was decorated with the Croix de Guerre in 1946 and listed on the Valençay SOE Memorial, and a street in Montargis was dedicated in her honor. In Great Britain her name was inscribed on the Runnymede Memorial in Surrey.

—Patit Paban Mishra

See also Atkins, Vera H.; Borrel, Andrée; Leigh, Vera; Olschanezky, Sonya; Rowden, Diana; Rudellat, Yvonne; Szabo, Violette

References and Further Reading

- Binney, Marcus. 2002. *The Women Who Lived for Danger: The Women Agents of SOE in the Second World War*. London: Hodder and Stoughton.
- Foot, M. R. D. (Michael Richard Daniell). 1984. *SOE: The Special Operations Executive, 1940–1946*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Stafford, David. 2000. *Secret Agent—The True Story of the Special Operations Executive*. London: BBC Worldwide Ltd.

ROMAN WOMEN AND WAR

Indispensable supporters of Rome's military ventures. Ancient Rome was not particularly warlike by ancient standards; what set it apart was the military system the early Romans established, which led to a series of victories that over time created one of the largest empires in world history. This history of expansion put enormous demands on Roman women, who were expected to support the senate and the people of Rome with their patriotism and their wealth, as well as by giving up their sons and husbands for ever-longer periods as the borders of Rome were

pushed farther away. Roman women in general were given greater credit than Greek women for intelligence and were often better educated than their menfolk; however, except for camp followers, actual campaigns were normally a strictly masculine pursuit. Roman women, except for very rare exceptions, played their role supporting the military might of the state from behind the scenes.

The foundation myth of Rome provides instructive insight into Roman attitudes toward women and war. When the city was first founded (traditionally dated to 753 B.C.), the community had no women, so the Roman leader Romulus came up with a clever scheme, inviting the neighboring Sabines to attend a religious festival. The Sabines trustingly came with their wives and daughters; at a signal, the Roman men each carried off a woman. The Sabine men went home for their weapons and soon attacked. But the abducted women, by this time pregnant and settled, intervened and made a lasting peace. Thus females are simultaneously presented as helpless prey and as vital peacemakers who, with intelligence and courage, intervene to save both their old and new families.

Roman women were also expected to be brave, as can be seen in the legend of the heroine Cloelia. After Rome won its independence from the Etruscans (ca. 500 B.C.), the Etruscan Porsena invaded. He was eventually forced to withdraw but took a large number of hostages, including the young woman Cloelia. Taking advantage of an opportunity, she led a band of hostage girls back to the Roman lines, swimming the Tiber in the process. Porsena was so impressed that he released half his hostages in her honor. The Romans subsequently erected a statue depicting Cloelia on horseback and wearing a toga—that very masculine symbol of full citizenship.

The role of Roman women in warfare was generally not so visible. Roman legions were originally mustered for a single short campaign, but during the Late Republic period, the rank and file could be away from home for years at a time, fighting as far away as Syria. Until the military

reforms of approximately 100 B.C., legionaries were responsible for equipping themselves and thus were normally small property owners. Their wives, therefore, had to stay behind, desperately trying to sustain the family economy in the face of growing pressure from large estates, while their husbands returned for short visits every year or two to impregnate them. Although this situation led to increasing civil rights for Roman women, the sheer workload seems to have been overwhelming in many cases.

Women also occasionally contributed to the war chest; in 390 B.C. Roman women are said to have raised 1,000 pounds (454 kilograms) of gold to bribe the Gauls to leave after troops had occupied the city. For noble women, the main pressure of war lay in the fact that their men were so often away from home for long periods. In times of intense political change such as the first century B.C., the wife often played an indispensable role by protecting her husband's political interests in his absence. Occasionally, this stretched as far as an active military role. The most notorious example comes from the period of the first triumvirate, when Fulvia (d. 40 B.C.), wife of Mark Antony, raised troops and even joined a rebellion in Italy on her husband's behalf. It is extremely clear that "decent" Romans considered her behavior outrageous. She was deeply vilified by Roman authors, as was Rome's enemy Cleopatra VII of Egypt (d. 30 B.C.), another woman who transgressed the boundaries of her gender in military matters. The model for a woman's proper role in warfare was provided by Mark Antony's next wife, Octavia, who was sister to Antony's greatest rival. Octavia refused to take a role in public affairs but put all her efforts into bringing about peace between her husband and brother. This continued to be the model for noblewomen in the imperial period. They were often very powerful behind the scenes but very rarely appeared publicly in matters that had to do with the military.

In general, the role of women in the great Roman war machine and the effects that war had on them is a matter for conjecture. Certainly, warfare would have been impossible with-

out women's religious ceremonies, raising of children, maintenance of family businesses, and fortitude in times of state emergency, but that was all part of being a Roman.

—Phyllis G. Jestice

See also Cleopatra VII, Queen of Egypt; Fulvia; Galla Placidia

References and Further Reading

- Barrett, Anthony. 2002. *Livia: First Lady of Imperial Rome*. New Haven, CT: Yale University.
- Bauman, Richard A. 1992. *Women and Politics in Ancient Rome*. London: Routledge.
- Evans, John K. 1991. *War, Women, and Children in Ancient Rome*. London: Routledge.

ROMA/SINTI

Victims of the Holocaust. During World War II the Nazis killed more than 80 percent of the Roma/Sinti (Gypsies) living in the German Reich and more than 50 percent of the Roma/Sinti living in territories occupied by Germany (Thompson 2001, 1069–1070). The Roma/Sinti had been subjected to discrimination and harassment in Germany and elsewhere before the Nazis came to power. At the beginning of the war, approximately 30,000 to 35,000 Roma/Sinti lived in the Nazi German Reich. They constituted Europe's second largest non-territorial minority, with the Jews being the largest. An estimate of the number of Roma/Sinti living in all of the territory seized by the Germans during the war is approximately 942,000 (Holocaust Museum, 5). Others believe that the figure should be larger. The 1935 anti-Semitic Nuremberg Laws were extended to the Roma/Sinti, depriving them, like the Jews before them, of their civil rights. Regarded as "racially worthless," many Roma/Sinti were forced to undergo sterilization (Stephenson 2001, 116). Beginning in June 1938 a number of Roma/Sinti living in Germany and Austria

(which had been absorbed into the Reich in March) were sent to concentration camps, including the Lichtenburg camp for women.

Heinrich Himmler, head of the Nazi SS, called for the resolution of the "Gypsy question" by the "physical separation of Gypsydom from the German nation" (Holocaust Museum, 8). Himmler later expressed his desire that "the Gypsies disappear from the face of the earth," and Joseph Goebbels held the opinion that, as with the Jews, the "Gypsies should simply be exterminated" (Hancock 2004, 163). The deportation of Roma/Sinti to the east, first to ghettos and then to death camps, began in May 1940. Roma/Sinti were among those killed by gas in mobile vans at Chelmno, Poland, in December 1941.

A Gypsy camp called Section B-IIe was set up at Auschwitz-Birkenau. Himmler, who was fascinated by the Roma/Sinti, wished them to be studied. When he lost interest in his experiment due to pressure from Martin Bormann, the Gypsy camp was liquidated. In August 1942, 2,897 Roma/Sinti men, women, and children perished in the gas chambers of Birkenau. Along with those who died in death or concentration camps and ghettos, additional Roma/Sinti, who were placed on an equal footing with Jews (Milton 2001, 225), perished at the hands of German Einsatzgruppen (operational groups) moving through Soviet territory. Others were killed by Romanian and Croatian German allies. Estimates of the number of Roma/Sinti killed by the Nazis and their allies range between 220,000 and 1.5 million (Hancock 2004, 164).

—Bernard Cook

See also Holocaust and Jewish Women; Ravensbrück

References and Further Reading

- Hancock, Ian. 2004. *O Baro Porrajmos—The Romani Holocaust*. Pages 160–165 in *Defining the Horrific: Readings on Genocide and Holocaust in the Twentieth Century*. Edited by William L. Hewitt. Upper Saddle River, NJ: Pearson/Prentice-Hall.

- Kenrick, Donald. 1999. *Gypsies during the Second World War*. Hatfield, Hertfordshire, UK: University of Hertfordshire.
- Milton, Sybil. 1995. The Holocaust: The Gypsies. Pages 209–269 in *Genocide in the Twentieth Century: An Anthology of Critical Essays and Oral History*. Edited by William S. Parsons, Israel Charny, and Samuel Totten. New York: Garland.
- . 2001. Gypsies as Social Outsiders in Nazi Germany. Pages 212–232 in *Social Outsiders in Nazi Germany*. Edited by Robert Gellately and Nathan Stoltzfus. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University.
- Stephenson, Jill. 2001. *Women in Nazi Germany*. Harlow, UK: Pearson Educational.
- Thomson, Michál. 2001. Roma. Pages 1067–1071 in *Europe since 1945: An Encyclopedia*. Edited by Bernard A. Cook. New York: Garland.
- U.S. Holocaust Museum. N.d. *Sinti and Roma (Gypsies) Victims of the Nazi Era*. Washington, DC: U.S. Holocaust Memorial Museum.

ROOSEVELT, ELEANOR
(1884–1962)

Wife of President Franklin D. Roosevelt; U.S. first lady from 1933 to 1945. Eleanor Roosevelt, a niece of U.S. President Theodore Roosevelt, was born on October 11, 1884, in New York City. After her mother died when she was ten years old, Eleanor was raised by her maternal grandmother. She was educated at Allenswood, a school in England. She married Franklin D. Roosevelt, her fifth cousin, in 1905. The contrast between the Eleanor Roosevelt's actions in three wars reveals how much she matured politically over the years. In July 1917, the U.S. Food Administration picked Assistant Secretary of the Navy Franklin Roosevelt's family as a large household model of conservation, and the *New York Times* sent a female reporter to Washington, D.C., to interview Mrs. Roosevelt about her food-saving methods. The *New York Times* quoted Mrs. Roosevelt as saying that training

ten servants to be frugal can turn out to be a highly profitable business. The political fallout from the newspaper story taught Eleanor Roosevelt to weather political storms and developed her sense of humor.

By World War II Eleanor Roosevelt had grown sophisticated enough politically to give the Office of Civilian Defense a decidedly New Deal ideological bent after she accepted a position as its deputy director. She insisted that civilian defense also depended on the degree that a community provided its citizens with decent housing, nursery schools, homes for the elderly, and recreational facilities. After she resigned as deputy director for political reasons, she continued to advocate her humanitarian ideals. She persuaded the State Department to let more refugees into the United States, agitated for fair treatment of African Americans in the armed forces and in war industries, and visited Japanese American relocation camps in Arizona to show her sympathy for internees.

Eleanor Roosevelt traveled as her husband's emissary and to boost GI morale during World War II. In 1942 she flew to Great Britain to visit U.S. soldiers. In 1943 she flew to the South Pacific, requesting that Admiral William F. Halsey grant her permission to visit Guadalcanal. The admiral postponed his final decision until she had toured some of the other islands in the area, as well as Australia and New Zealand. He monitored her activities as she made the rounds in her Red Cross uniform and marveled at her physical and mental stamina. He finally accompanied her to Guadalcanal and credited her with accomplishing more good than any other civilian visiting the area. In 1944 she toured U.S. bases in the Caribbean and Central America. Throughout her travels, Eleanor Roosevelt interacted with servicemen with genuine interest and care.

In December 1945 President Harry S Truman appointed Eleanor Roosevelt a delegate to the United Nations. As a member of the U.N. Human Rights Commission she played a major role in drafting a Universal Declaration of Human Rights and getting it adopted by the

U.N. General Assembly. In 1957 she and Soviet Premier Nikita Khrushchev had a spirited debate about the merits of capitalism and communism. Premier Khrushchev considered the debate a success because it was friendly and they did not shoot at each other.

—*Kathleen Warnes*

See also Lee, Mary Anna Randolph Custis; United States, Home Front during World War II; Washington, Martha Dandridge Custis

References and Further Reading

- Cook, Blanche Wiesen. 1999. *Eleanor Roosevelt*. New York: Viking Penguin.
- Goodwin, Doris Kearns. 1994. *No Ordinary Time: Franklin and Eleanor Roosevelt: The Home Front in World War II*. New York: Simon & Schuster.
- Lash, Joseph P. 1971. *Eleanor and Franklin*. New York: Norton.
- . 1972. *Eleanor: The Years Alone*. New York: Norton.

ROSENBERG, ETHEL (1915–1953)

Convicted of treason and executed by the United States during the cold war. During war or national emergencies, women's roles in society are typically broadened in order to meet the crises. Women become soldiers, factory workers, public speakers, and spies, to name a few. The cold war, however, was a rather unique crisis: anxiety, paranoia, and xenophobia were major characteristics of the decades-long conflict in which proxy contests replaced direct combat among the superpowers. Women were occasionally caught up in the national anxiety of the period; such was the story of Ethel Rosenberg.

Born Ethel Greenglass in New York City on September 28, 1915, her childhood was relatively unremarkable. She attended her neighborhood Hebrew school as well as public school. Her Lower East Side neighborhood was predom-

inately Jewish in character, densely populated by dilapidated tenements, and crowded with sweatshops. In 1932 Ethel, working as a clerk with a shipping company, began her union activities including a strike for better pay and shorter working hours. In 1935 she led 150 women who used their bodies to block the entrance to the company's warehouse. Her employer fired her, but the National Labor Relations Board effected her reinstatement with back pay. Her union activism resulted in the establishment of the Ladies Apparel Shipping Clerk's Union. On the eve of World War II, Ethel Greenglass married Julius Rosenberg, a fellow union activist who had recently received his bachelor's degree in electrical engineering from the City College of New York.

During the war Ethel raised money and supplies for the Allied war effort through the East Side Defense Council. Julius had a job with the Signal Corps but lost his position in 1945 when he was accused of belonging to the Communist Party. He then established his own machine shop with his brother-in-law, David Greenglass.

Although the Soviet Union was an ally of the United States during most of World War II, after the war the United States and the Soviet Union quickly became opponents following the defeat of Nazi Germany. Their opposing socioeconomic systems and objectives in Europe resulted in the cold war. A critical event in that conflict was the Soviet development of an atomic bomb in 1949. The United States was no longer the sole atomic power. U.S. decisionmakers were surprised that the Soviets were able to develop nuclear weapons as quickly as they did. There was a concern that spies must have helped the Soviet Union by delivering atomic technology developed in the United States. Klaus Fuchs, a British member of the top-secret Manhattan Project, was accused of being a spy. Hoping to receive a lesser prison sentence for helping to transfer U.S. atomic secrets to the Soviet Union, Fuchs named others involved in the spy ring. The list of names led to David Greenglass, the brother of Ethel Rosenberg. Greenglass then testified that his brother-in-law was the one who

introduced Greenglass to the spy ring. On July 17, 1950, the FBI arrested Julius Rosenberg; Ethel was arrested on August 11. With no viable evidence against her, the FBI apprehended Ethel hoping that Julius would then confess to spying for the Soviet Union to save his wife (Philipson 1988, 266).

While on the witness stand, Ethel Rosenberg repeatedly denied knowing anything about her family member's work for the Manhattan Project or her brother's espionage activities; she also denied knowing any of the other people that the U.S. and British governments had arrested on charges of selling atomic secrets to the Soviet Union apart from what she learned from the newspapers (Rosenberg 1952, 6). She proclaimed, "We are innocent and to forsake this truth is to pay too high a price for even the priceless gift of life—for life thus purchased we could not live out in dignity and self-respect" (Schneir 1965, 187).

The federal government was never able to produce any evidence that tied Ethel into the spy ring (her husband, however, was not as innocent). She was found guilty, primarily on the testimony of her brother. Ethel worked to get her two sons, Robert and Michael, into a stable home. Initially, the boys were cared for by Tessie Greenglass (the boys' maternal grandmother), but their spirits quickly soured, leading Michael to contemplate suicide while Robert began grinding his teeth (Philipson 1988, 263). As most other relatives were either unwilling or unable to take in the boys, Ethel Rosenberg had them placed in the Hebrew Children's Home in the Bronx.

The Rosenbergs' death sentences were carried out on June 19, 1953, by electrocution at Sing Sing prison in New York. Ethel was given three jolts of electricity before she finally died. According to Bob Considine, a witness to the executions, Ethel "was given more electricity which started again the kind of ghastly plume of smoke that rose from her head. After two more little jolts, Ethel Rosenberg was dead" (Philipson 1988, 352).

—Jim Ross-Nazzal

See also Mata Hari, pseud.

References and Further Reading

- Cohen, Jacob. The Rosenberg File: What Do We Really Know about the Rosenbergs and the Case against Them? *National Review*, July 19, 1993.
- Detweiler, Robert. 1996. Carnival of Shame: Doctorow and the Rosenbergs. *Religion and American Culture* 6(1):63–85.
- Meeropol, Robert, and Michael Meeropol. 1986. *We Are Your Sons: The Legacy of Ethel and Julius Rosenberg*, 2nd ed. New York: Houghton Mifflin.
- Philipson, Ilene. 1988. *Ethel Rosenberg: Beyond the Myths*. New York: Franklin Watts.
- Rosenberg, Ethel. 1952. "Testimony of Ethel Rosenberg, Witness for the Defense." http://www.law.umkc.edu/faculty/projects/ftrials/rosenb/ROS_TETH.htm (accessed June 26, 2005).
- Schneir, Walter, and Mirian Schneir. 1965. *Invitation to an Inquest*. New York: Doubleday.

ROSENSTRASSE AND INTERMARRIAGE OF JEWS AND GERMAN GENTILES

A street in Berlin where, in March 1943, several hundred German women who were married to Jewish men protested the Gestapo's detainment of their husbands at a collection center. After a tense week, the Gestapo released the men, demonstrating the potential power of protest that women held in Nazi Germany.

Intermarried couples occupied a unique and important position between Jewish and non-Jewish society. In Nazi Germany, intermarriage (which is the union of a woman and man from different racial, religious, class, or nationality groups) most often referred to marriages between Aryans and Jews (as defined by the government). National Socialism placed anti-Semitism and belief in racial separation at the top of its ideological system. Intermarried couples challenged those beliefs, committing

“racial defilement” and creating a racial hybrid, whom the Nazis termed *Mischlinge* (mixed ones). After Adolf Hitler became chancellor in 1933, Aryans were pressured to divorce their Jewish spouses. Many intermarried Germans, both Jewish and non-Jewish, used this pressure as an excuse to end unhappy marriages. Most intermarried couples, however, refused to divorce. Following the 1935 anti-Semitic Nuremberg Laws, pressure on non-Jews to divorce their Jewish spouses increased tremendously. Although many divorces did occur, most couples chose to cope with the obstacles of intermarriage and remained together.

Following the turn of the century, Jewish men overwhelmingly made up the majority of intermarried Jews, meaning most of the women in these couples were non-Jewish Germans (Meiring 1998, 94–95). Under the racial laws established at Nuremberg in 1935, intermarried households with Jewish women married to non-Jewish German men were considered privileged; Jewish women in privileged households largely escaped arrest, and those who were arrested were soon released. Households with Jewish men married to non-Jewish women were considered Jewish, and the men were subjected to many of the same restrictions and abuses as other Jews.

Non-Jewish spouses faced many hardships during the Third Reich. They were forced to be the public face of their family, undertaking all official business, doing all the shopping, and operating as the connection to German society. Restrictions on Jews forced Jewish partners to limit their time outside the home to employment. Non-Jewish women married to Jews had the Star of David posted on their front doors, and their homes were subject to Gestapo searches at any moment. Neighbors and even family members reviled them. Many Germans avoided associating with the wives of Jews for fear that others would denounce them. Non-Jewish spouses of Jews lived in a constant state of fear for their families, always worrying about sudden changes in policies that would force their loved ones to flee. For many of the non-Jewish spouses, con-

stant fear was transformed into determination. When news came that intermarried Jewish men had been included in a round-up, their spouses did not hesitate to help them.

From February 27 to March 6, 1943, the Berlin Gestapo arrested nearly 10,000 Jews, all that remained in the city, in an effort to make the city *Judenfrei* (free of Jews). Between 1,700 and 2,000 intermarried Jewish men were included in the round-up. Because of the unique social position of intermarried Jewish men, they were separated from the other Jews and were relocated and detained in the Jewish community’s administration center at 2–4 Rosenstrasse (Stoltzfus 1996, 304, n45). Only the collective public protests of their German wives saved the Jewish detainees from deportation to Auschwitz. Fighting fear and despair, these women appeared in shifts throughout a week of protest, gathering in groups outside the guarded facility. Efforts to disperse the crowd with threats of gunfire would temporarily clear the streets, but the women would return in strength. The visibility of the protests, which grew to as large as 600 people at one time, and the impassioned pleas of women for their husbands were too much to ignore. The Nazi regime, always obsessed with public image and conformity, feared that a crackdown on the protests would lead to more trouble and bad publicity. On March 6 Joseph Goebbels ordered the release of the Jewish men. He rationalized that it would be more efficient and less troublesome to delay the round-up of the remaining Jews until the difficult period following the German defeat at the Battle of Stalingrad had passed (Stoltzfus 1996, 243).

Rosenstrasse had profound implications for the power of protest and the force of women as agents of change in Nazi Germany. It is a unique example of open and successful protest against the anti-Semitic and genocidal policies of the regime. The protestors also demonstrated that even under a repressive, misogynistic regime such as the Nazis’, women were able to exert power on the government to bring about change. The concentric roles of the

women as wives, daughters, sisters, friends, and employees encouraged the regime to make a series of decisions to temporarily exempt intermarried Jews from deportations to camps until it was too late for the regime to do so. The possibility of a backlash from the families and acquaintances of the protestors was enough to make the government acquiesce to their demands.

The power and success of intermarried German women was further demonstrated at the end of the war. Of the 13,217 registered Jews in Germany in September 1944, 12,987 were married to non-Jews (Stoltzfus 1996, xxvii). By the end of the war, 98 percent of the Jews who survived in Germany were intermarried.

—Christopher Griffin

See also Holocaust and Jewish Women

References and Further Reading

- Klemperer, Viktor. 1998. *I Will Bear Witness: A Diary of the Nazi Years, 1933–1941*. Trans. Martin Chalmers. New York: Random House.
- Meiring, Kerstin. 1998. *Die Christlich-Jüdische Mischehe in Deutschland, 1840–1933* [Christian–Jewish Mixed Marriages in Germany, 1840–1933]. Hamburg: Dölling und Galitz Verlag.
- Stoltzfus, Nathan. 1996. *Resistance of the Heart: Intermarriage and the Rosenstrasse Protest in Nazi Germany*. New York: W. W. Norton.

ROSIE THE RIVETER

An icon for a propaganda campaign in the United States during World War II, promulgated by the War Manpower Commission and the Office of War Information. The campaign centered on a call for women to give up the homemaker ideal and to take up occupations that supported the war effort or fill jobs that were left vacant when the men went to war. As large numbers of American males were drafted for service in

World War II, Rosie became immortalized in songs, movies, posters, and advertisements. The messages were highly patriotic and viewed women as “production soldiers.”

Many depictions of Rosie could be found during the war. The most famous rendition of Rosie was found on the cover of the *Saturday Evening Post* in 1943. In this familiar picture by Norman Rockwell, Rosie, shown eating a sandwich, is clad in coveralls, wearing headgear and goggles, and is supporting a large riveting machine on her legs, positioned just below her massive arms. In the background of this picture is an American flag, over Rosie’s head is a halo, and beneath her work shoes is a copy of Hitler’s *Mein Kampf*. Rockwell modeled his version of Rosie after Michelangelo’s *Isaiah*, significantly modifying his real model’s small frame. In another familiar poster often considered to represent Rosie, a young woman adorned in bandana and work shirt is seen rolling up her sleeve, flexing her bicep, and exclaiming, “We Can Do It.”

The messages of this propaganda campaign were that women, especially married women who were previously relegated to working at home, should enter male-dominated occupations related to the war effort such as aircraft parts manufacturing, shipbuilding, ammunition production, and mining. Women were also asked to enter nondefense-related manufacturing occupations in industry and agriculture.

Work in the defense industry normally required long hours, often entailed grueling physical exertion, and was frequently hazardous. Airplane factories were very loud and often caused hearing problems for the workers. Riveting vibrations were rumored to cause breast cancer and other physical maladies in workers; during this period, gynecological problems came to be known as “riveter’s ovaries.” Some jobs were particularly dangerous, such as those in the munitions industry. Female munitions workers, dubbed “gunpowder girls,” worked with the threat of explosions. Those who worked around machines—a large majority of defense employees—were at constant risk of death or dismem-



We Can Do It poster, featuring Rosie the Riveter.
(National Archives)

berment. In addition, the work was often monotonous and highly repetitive, causing high levels of boredom that was often relieved through singing. This new image of femininity challenged earlier gender conceptions. Men, who were unhappy to see women do well in occupations that were previously only open to males, often subjected women to harassment and other forms of discrimination.

In spite of the occupations' drawbacks, many women enjoyed the responsibilities of the new jobs and the newfound status of wage earner. The fact that they were able to succeed in these roles opened the door to a greater number of females in traditional male occupations. Although government and industry prompted Rosie to return to the home after the war and many were reluctantly replaced by returning males, the number of women who stayed in the workplace was higher than before the war.

—Leonard A. Steverson

See also Mexican American Women and World War II; Posters, U.S., Images of Women in World War II; United States, Home Front during World War II

References and Further Reading

- Colman, Penny. 1995. *Rosie the Riveter: Women Working on the Home Front in World War II*. New York: Crown.
- Rositheriveter.org. "Rockwell's Rosie the Riveter Painting Auctioned." Rosie the Riveter Trust. <http://www.rositheriveter.org/painting.htm> (accessed April 1, 2004).
- Weatherford, Dorothy. 1990. *American Women and World War II*. New York: Facts on File.

ROSS, ISHOBEL
(1890–1965)

Served with the Scottish Women's Hospital service in the Balkans during World War I. Ishobel Ross, daughter of James Ross, was born on the Isle of Skye on February 18, 1890. She attended the Edinburgh Ladies College and the Atholl Crescent School of Domestic Science. When World War I erupted, Ross was teaching cooking at a girl's school. After hearing Dr. Elsie Inglis speak on the Scottish Women's Hospital Unit, Ross volunteered as a cook and was sent to the Salonika front (Greece) in August 1916. She later served in the Balkans for nearly a year. Her diary was published by her daughter after Ross's death.

—Bernard Cook

See also Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's Hospitals

References and Further Reading

- Ross, Ishobel. 1988. *Little Grey Partridge: First World War Diary of Ishobel Ross Who Served with the Scottish Women's Hospitals Unit in Serbia*. Aberdeen, Scotland: Aberdeen University.

ROWDEN, DIANA
(1915–1944)

British secret agent during World War II. Diana Hope Rowden was born in Britain on January 31, 1915, but her family moved to France when she was a child. As a teenager she attended school in England, but in 1933 Rowden returned to France and studied at the University of Paris before becoming a journalist. When World War II began in 1939, she joined the Red Cross and served with the Anglo-American Ambulance Corps of the British Expeditionary Force. Cut off by the rapid German victory in 1940, Rowden eventually made her way to Spain and Portugal and then back to Britain. In September 1941, she joined the British Women's Auxiliary Air Force. She was assigned to the department of the chief of air staff and in July 1942 became a section officer.

Rowden's fluency in French and her knowledge of French life led to her recruitment by the British Special Operations Executive (SOE) in March 1943. After her training Rowden was flown on June 16, 1943, to a location near Angers, France; she was accompanied by Noor Inayat Khan and Cecily Lefort. Using the code name Paulette, Rowden served as a courier for the Acrobat network headed by John Starr. Starr was apprehended a month after her arrival. Rowden and a wireless operator, John Young, took refuge in the village of Clairvaux-les-Lacs, where they were informed by SOE headquarters that a new agent was being dispatched to assist them. The expected new agent turned out to be a German spy. Rowden and Young were arrested on November 18, 1943, at Lons-le-Saunier. Rowden was interrogated by the Gestapo for two weeks at their Paris headquarters. On May 13, 1944, she was sent from the Fresnes prison with seven other captured British women agents to the Karlsruhe civil prison. On July 6, 1944, on the direct order of Ernest Kaltenbrunner, head of the SS Security Office, Rowden, Andrée Borrel, Vera Leigh, and Sonya Olschanezky were moved to the Natzweiler-Struthof concentration camp. They were executed on the day of their arrival.

Rowden was posthumously awarded the Member of the British Empire and the Croix de Guerre. A watercolor of Rowden and her three companions, painted by Brian Stonehouse, an SOE agent and fellow prisoner who witnessed their arrival at Natzweiler-Struthof, has a place of honor in the Special Forces Club in London.

—Bernard Cook

See also Atkins, Vera H.; Borrel, Andrée; Leigh, Vera; Olschanezky, Sonya

References and Further Reading

- Foot, M. R. D. (Michael Richard Daniell). 1984 (1966). *SOE in France: An Account of the Work of the British Special Operations Executive, 1940–1944*. Frederick, MD: University Publications of America.
- Kramer, Rita. 1995. *Flames in the Field: The Stories of Four SOE Agents in Occupied France*. New York: Viking Penguin.
- Nicholas, Elizabeth. 1958. *Death Be Not Proud*. London: Cresset.
- Spartacus Web. "Diana Rowden." <http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/SOErOWden.htm> (accessed September 28, 2004).

RUBBLE WOMEN

See Trümmerfrauen

RUDELLAT, YVONNE
(1897–1945)

British operative sent to France during World War II. Yvonne Claire Rudellat (née Cerneau) was born in France in 1897. On May 28, 1942, she joined the British Special Operations Executive (SOE). The SOE had been established in July 1940 to put operatives behind the enemy lines. Winston Churchill, the wartime prime

minister of Great Britain, wanted the SOE to “set Europe ablaze.” The SOE collaborated with the French resistance movement in gathering intelligence and carrying out sabotage. Because she was French by birth and fluent in French, Rudellat had been recruited to the First Aid Nursing Yeomanry (FANY) for training. With Andrée Borrel, Lise de Baissac, and other women agents, she underwent intensive training, learning about parachute drops and sabotage operations. Rudellat was initially a courier in the Prosper Circuit of F (French) Section of SOE.

Rudellat was sent to the south of France by boat on July 30, 1942. She was the second agent to arrive in France. Lise de Baissac had been parachuted to France in April 1942. Rudellat’s activity centered round the Loire Valley area, where she led a Resistance group. She lived in a cottage, working and hiding as the occasion demanded. In March 1943, Yvonne’s group blew up the Chaigny power station, two trains in the Le Mans station, and some factories. Authorities were searching frantically for the leader of the operations and zeroed in on her in June 1943. On June 21, she came to a roadblock while attempting to escape the Gestapo dragnet. She did not stop, and in the car chase that followed she was fired on and sustained a severe head injury. She was treated in a hospital in Blois and after interrogations by the Gestapo was sent to Fresnes prison. There she was known as Jacqueline Gautier, a name given her by a fellow prisoner as Rudellat was suffering from amnesia as a result of her head injury.

Rudellat was sent from Fresnes to Bergen-Belsen on April 21, 1945, and died of typhus six days later. The Member of the British Empire (MBE) was conferred on her posthumously. An obelisk at Loire Valley, France, and a plaque at St. Paul’s Church, Knightsbridge, in the United Kingdom commemorate her.

—*Patit Paban Mishra*

See also Atkins, Vera H.; Borrel, Andrée; Leigh, Vera; Olschanezky, Sonya; Rowden, Diana; Szabo, Violette

References and Further Reading

- Binney, Marcus. 2002. *The Women Who Lived for Danger: The Women Agents of SOE in the Second World War*. London: Hodder & Stoughton.
- Foot, M. R. D. (Michael Richard Daniell). 1984. *SOE: The Special Operations Executive, 1940–1946*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- King, Stella. 1990. “Jacqueline:” *Pioneer Heroine of the Resistance*. London: Arms and Armour Press.
- Kramer, Rita. 1995. *Flames in the Field: The Story of Four SOE Agents in Occupied France*. London: Michael Joseph.

RUSSIA, WOMEN IN THE ARMED FORCES (1700–1917)

Women in the Russian military prior to the Bolshevik Revolution (1917). Until World War I, women’s participation in the Russian military was sporadic and was attributable to their own efforts. Article 34 of the Russian military regulations of 1716 limited women’s service to administrative and medical duties. Those who wished to serve in nontraditional roles dressed as men. For example, Nadezhda Durova, the daughter of a cavalry captain born in 1783, took part in the Napoleonic Wars, served with distinction, and was decorated by the czar himself.

One hundred and fifty nurses served during the Crimean War (1853–1856). The nursing school founded afterward graduated 1,500 nurses for service in the Russian-Turkish War of 1876 (Herspring 1997, 43). During World War I the imperial government dismissed some disguised women soldiers following discovery of their gender, while allowing others to stay.

In June 1917 the 1st Petrograd Women’s Battalion, the so-called Women’s Battalion of Death, was formed under the command of Maria Bochkareva. Bochkareva’s intent was to shame men into not deserting. Some of the women, however, were assaulted or killed by male deserters. Other battalions modeled on Bochkareva’s



Members of the Women's Battalion of Death, a branch of the Russian military, 1917. (Underwood and Underwood/Corbis)

were formed in many regions of Russia. A women's detachment in Petrograd defended the Provisional Government (which made women equal before the law), when the Bolsheviks stormed the Winter Palace in November 1917. The number of Russian women who served in World War I was estimated at 5,000 (Herspring 1997, 44).

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Bochkareva, Maria; Russia, Women Recipients of the Order of St. George; Russian Republic, Women in the Armed Forces; Soviet Union, Women in the Armed Forces

References and Further Reading

Herspring, Dale R. 1997. Women in the Russian Military: A Reluctant Marriage. *Minerva: Quarterly Report on Women in the Military* 15, no. 3 (Summer):42–59.

RUSSIA, WOMEN RECIPIENTS OF THE ORDER OF ST. GEORGE (1808–1917)

Award created in 1769 by Empress Catherine the Great for Russian officers. Until 1856 it was awarded to officers with at least twenty-five years of service or participation in eighteen to twenty naval campaigns. Two additional awards for enlisted personnel and noncommissioned officers were later added: the Cross of St. George (1807) and a four-level variant of the Cross (1856). Among the women who received these awards were:

Maria Leont'evna Bochkareva (b. 1889). The first Russian woman commander of a military unit, designated the 1st Petrograd Women's Battalion—the so-called Battalion of Death. She was awarded the Cross of St. George, IV

Class, for her previous service with the 28th Polotsk Infantry Regiment as a noncommissioned officer.

Nadezhda Andreevna Durova (1783–1866). Durova, whose married name was Chernova, was also called Cavalry Maid/Maiden, and Alexandrov, the name assigned to her by Czar Alexander I. During the Napoleonic Wars, Durova served in three Russian cavalry regiments: the Polish Horse, the Mariupol Hussars, and the Lithuanian. She saw action against the French in East Prussia in 1807; during the invasion of Russia in 1812; and in the European campaign of 1813–1814. In 1808 Durova was decorated for bravery, at which time she was commissioned by Emperor Alexander I. She was the only woman to be awarded the Cross of St. George before the early twentieth century. In 1836–1841 she published remarkable journals and sensational fiction based on her nine years' experience serving with the Russian cavalry. Two autobiographical works drawn from her sporadic diaries, *The Cavalry Maiden* (1836) and *Notes* (1839), are considered classic contributions to military history.

Rimma Mikhailovna Ivanova (1895–1915). Although a nurse, Ivanova led a successful attack on enemy trenches on September 9, 1915, after all officers from her unit, the No. 1 Company of 108th Orenburg Infantry Regiment, were put out of action. By protesting her participation in combat, the German Military Red Cross authorities made her deed famous. She was posthumously granted the Order of St. George, IV Class, on January 7, 1916.

Antonina Tikhonovna Pal'shina (b. 1897). Disguised as a man and called Anton Pal'shin, Pal'shina served as a private in the Russian army cavalry and infantry during World War I. Pal'shina joined the Cossack cavalry at the beginning the war. After being wounded, Pal'shina's gender was discovered and she was compelled to train as a nurse in a hospital in Lvov (L'viv). She promptly ran away to join

No. 6 Company of the 75th Sebastopol Infantry Regiment. Pal'shina is the only Russian woman to have been decorated with both the Order and the Cross of St. George, receiving two of each award.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Bochkareva, Maria; Russia, Women in the Armed Forces; Soviet Union/Russian Federation, Women Heroes of the

References and Further Reading

- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 2003. Order of St. George, Women Recipients. Pages 325–326 in *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*. Edited by Reina Pennington. Vol. 1. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Pal'shina, Antonina Tikhonovna. 1988 (1836). *The Cavalry Maiden: Journals of a Russian Officer in the Napoleonic Wars*. Trans. Mary Fleming Zirin. Bloomington and Indianapolis: Indiana University.
- Privalov, Boris. 1980. Dobra i schast'ia ei! [All the Best to Her!]. *Ogonëk* 23 (June):30–31.

RUSSIAN REPUBLIC, WOMEN IN THE ARMED FORCES (1991–)

Following the collapse of communism, more women entered the Russian military, which had difficulty maintaining itself solely with males. By the end of 1992 the number of women in the Russian armed forces climbed to 100,000, including 20,000 warrant officers and 1,100 officers (Herspring 1997, 50). The majority of them served in the ground forces. About 1,000 women were admitted into the elite airborne forces (Herspring 1997, 50–51). One hundred and sixty-nine specialties were opened to women. In 1992, mixed staffing was introduced. By the end of 1992, women volunteers outnumbered male conscripts by 367 to 125 in one motorized infantry unit, and the Moscow Military District

announced that it intended to raise the percentage of women in its ranks to 10 percent (Herspring 1997, 51).

The increasingly important role women played was most evident in the Air Defense Forces (ADF), where women occupied 50 percent of key positions in 1992 (Herspring 1997, 51). It was assumed that women had better aptitude than men for detailed work and making precise calculations. When, in 1993, women were allowed to join on the basis of a voluntary contract rather than conscription, the intent was not only to alleviate manpower shortages but also to assist underpaid professional soldiers by providing employment for their wives. Thus, by 1994, the total number of women in the military approached 250,000, but only 1,500 of them were officers (Herspring 1997, 52–53).

Despite their increasing reliance on women, Russian senior officers tended to resist placing them in “men’s” jobs and dismissed them at the earliest opportunity. By mid-1997, however, the situation of Russian women soldiers had improved. Out of an army of 1,200,000, women officers numbered approximately 2,400, including 4 colonels and 300 senior officers (ranked major to colonel) (Herspring 1997, 53). Astronaut Valentina Tereshkova was the first woman to be granted the rank of major general. Meanwhile, women had been admitted to communications and chemical warfare schools. Although male commanders acknowledged women’s proficiency in carrying out technical, medical, and administrative tasks, they were reluctant to use them in combat, even when they constituted 20 percent of divisional personnel and were appropriately trained (Herspring 1997, 54). Additionally, there was no effective women’s lobby group to argue that women were full-fledged members of the Russian armed forces. The recurrent severe shortages of men, coupled with persistent praise of women in the press (citing the superior discipline of women, their more efficient work habits, and their greater devotion to duty), may improve the status of Russian military women in the future.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Chechnya, Impact on Women of Wars in

References and Further Reading

Herspring, Dale R. 1997. Women in the Russian Military: A Reluctant Marriage. *Minerva: Quarterly Report on Women in the Military* 15, no. 2 (Summer):42–59.

RUSSIAN REVOLUTION AND WOMEN

The role played by women in the Russian revolutions of 1917. In 1920 the Russian Communist feminist Alexandra Kollontai wrote, “The future historian will undoubtedly note that one of the characteristics of our revolution was that women workers and peasants played . . . an active important role” (Stites 1978, 317).

As economic, social, and political conditions across Russia worsened in early 1917, czarist officials worried that Russian women were on the verge of open revolt. It was reported that “mothers of families . . . are exhausted by the endless standing in line at the stores. . . . [O]ne spark will be enough for a conflagration to blaze up” (Miller 2001, 182). The spark took place in Petrograd on March 8, 1917, when thousands of women workers took to the streets demanding an end to the war and increases in social services. Over two weeks the crowds grew, more members of the military mutinied, and on March 15, Czar Nicholas II abdicated the throne.

Many Russian women believed that the Revolution would sweep away more than just the czar and the ruling family. Inessa Armand, the head of the Bolshevik Party’s women’s division, or Zhenotdel, proclaimed that “the bourgeois order is being abolished” and called for the removal of all strategies that maintained the ideology of separate spheres in which women had no control over their lives (Goldman 1993, 3–4).

Eventually, the Communist government would redefine gender relations through the adoption of the 1918 Code on Marriage, Family, and Guardianship. The code abolished the czarist-era status of women as subservient to men by allowing women to sue for divorce, abolishing the stigma of illegitimacy, and mandating child support (Goldman 1993, 51).

During the Revolution, women were portrayed in political iconography as enchained by the czarist policies and helpless to free themselves. For example, Communist leaders of the Petrograd Izhora Works used banners depicting women, in traditional costume and chained to rocks, set free by male workers wielding hammers with the sun shining in the background. The banners were splashed with slogans such as “All Hail the Socialist Republic,” “All Hail the Democratic Republic,” or “Free Russia.” Although the slogans changed, the imagery did not: either women in chains about to be set free by the actions of men or women, or women just set free by the actions of men, standing atop piles of chains (Clements et al. 1991, 229).

As in other conflicts, Russian women played myriad roles from the battlefield to the home front. What was different about their actions during the Revolution was the level of organization (Stites 1978, 318). Communist leaders formed gender-specific combat units such as the Communist Women’s Combat Detachment and the Communist Women’s Special Purpose Detachment. Women were even recruited into the army of the new provisional government formed after the February Revolution (Stites 1978, 318). One of these combat veterans was Larisa Reisner, who specialized in intelligence gathering. For the Lenin government, formed after the October Revolution, she helped draft the law separating church from state and the Constitution of 1918 (Stites 1978, 319). Women headed the *politotdely* (political sections) in each Red Army unit, where they developed and offered training to all soldiers with regard to the social, political, and economic goals of the Communist leadership (Stites 1978, 32).

Of the thousands of women who participated in the Revolution (such as Nadezhda Konstantinova Krupskaya, Yelena Dmitriyevna Stassova, and Klavdia Nikolayeva), many took public, but certainly not leading, roles. Konstantinova was Lenin’s wife. During the Revolution she occasionally spoke at rallies, but she primarily supported her husband. After the Bolshevik seizure of power, Konstantinova became a member of the People’s Commissariat of Education and helped launch training and education programs for women. Likewise, Dmitriyevna’s role during the Revolution was primarily one of providing support at rallies by standing near Lenin, clapping at the appropriate times. Behind the scenes she worked as secretary for the Party Central Committee. Finally, Klavdia Nikolayeva worked for Russia’s first Communist women’s magazine, *Kommunistka*. Although Nikolayeva did on occasion speak at public events, her work, like that of other leading Communist women, was primarily behind the scenes (Kollontai 1980).

Possibly the most public woman’s voice during the Revolution was that of Alexandra Kollontai, a member of the Party Central Committee. Kollontai spoke publicly in support of women in general and about motherhood in particular. Her typical audience consisted of women, however, not the masses who heard Lenin, Trotsky, and other Communist men speak. For example, on November 6, 1917, she delivered a speech to a conference of women on the necessity of protecting motherhood. Ten years later Kollontai wrote, “These theses were then passed on ‘as guidelines’ to the People’s Commissariat for State Welfare and the People’s Commissariat for Labour, which then included the Department of Social Security.” Before the end of 1917, Communist leaders issued a declaration ordering the creation of a government bureau dedicated to assessing the needs of women and providing them the necessary support. It was called the Department for the Protection of Mother and Child (Kollontai 1980).

Lenin was supposedly an ardent supporter of women’s importance at home. According to Kollontai, Lenin said:

If even the most resolute and courageous fighter on the civil war front returns home and has to listen day after day to the grumbles and complaints of his wife and face in her, as a result of her lack of political consciousness, an opponent to the continuing struggle for Soviet power, the will of even a valiant warrior hardened in battle may weaken, and he who did not surrender to counter-revolution may surrender to his wife and come under her harmful influence. (Kollontai 1980)

In November 1918, the first authorized women's congress was held under the new Communist government. Overall, the congress adopted resolutions regarding the centrality of motherhood, family, and home to Russian women and urged the new Communist government to pass legislation to protect women as mothers and wives. This was the beginning of women's emancipation in Russia. Interestingly enough, Kollontai defined *emancipation* as the ability to be mothers. In other words, emancipation for this Soviet women's activist was seen as a social construct, not a political one.

Immediately following the Revolution and in light of the devastation caused by World War I, Communist leaders cut state funding for social services such as schools and day care centers. According to one source, only 1.8 percent of eligible children attended any type of preschool (Goldman 1993, 74). Although the 1918 code provided for gender equality in all aspects of marriage, family, and divorce, the economic realities of Russia immediately after the Revolution were prohibitive for women seeking divorce. According to Wendy Goldman, "High unemployment, low wages, a lack of daycare not only reinforced women's dependence on the family, they created a sharp contradiction between the harsh reality of life and a legal vision of freedom long promulgated by reformers and socialists" (Goldman 1993, 103).

—Jim Ross-Nazzal

See also Kollontai, Alexandra

References and Further Reading

- Clements, Barbara Evans, Barbara Alpern Engel, and Christine D. Worobec, eds. 1991. *Russia's Women: Accommodation, Resistance, and Transformation*. Berkeley: University of California.
- Goldman, Wendy Z. 1993. *Women, the State and Revolution: Soviet Family Policy and Social Life, 1917–1936*. New York: Cambridge University.
- Kollontai, Alexandra. 1980. "The First Step toward the Protection of Motherhood," "V. I. Lenin and the First Congress of Women Workers," and "Women Fighters in the Days of the Great October Revolution." In *Alexandra Kollontai: Selected Articles and Speeches*. New York: Norton. Also available at www.marxists.org/archive/kollonta/works (accessed June 24, 2005).
- Miller, Martin, ed. 2001. *The Russian Revolution: The Essential Readings*. Malden, MA: Blackwell Publishers.
- Stites, Richard. 1978. *The Women's Liberation Movement in Russia—Feminism, Nihilism, and Bolshevism, 1860–1930*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University.

RWANDA: WOMEN AND THE GENOCIDE

Genocidal assault of the Hutus against the Tutsis in Rwanda. In barely 100 days between April and June 1994, some 800,000 Rwandans, out of a total population of just over 8 million, were killed by Hutu militias. Most of the victims were Tutsis, but a significant number were moderate Hutus.

Tensions between the Tutsis and Hutus predated the European colonization of East Africa. The Hutus, the majority population of the highland forests of Rwanda, Burundi, and the eastern Congo, were of medium stature physically and were for the most part engaged in subsistence farming. In the 1300s the Tutsis, cattle herders who were typically taller than the Hutus, began to migrate into the Hutu lands from the north or northeast. Between the late

seventeenth and early nineteenth centuries, Tutsi kings established hegemony over all of the Hutus. Although the differences between the two peoples have been emphasized for both political and socioeconomic reasons, the Hutus and the Tutsis are quite closely related ethnically, culturally, and linguistically.

In the 1890s Rwanda became part of German East Africa, but in the middle of World War I the colony was seized by Belgian colonials from the Congo, and for the next four decades the colony was administered by the Belgians under a League of Nations and then a U.N. mandate. Lacking any sort of extensive administrative system for managing their colonies, the Belgians found it expedient to control Rwanda through the former Tutsi rulers, compounding the majority Hutus' sense of disenfranchisement. By the late 1950s as independence loomed, the Hutus had organized several radical political parties. In 1959 the Tutsi king was forced into exile in Uganda. In 1963, the year after Rwanda achieved independence, about 20,000 Tutsis were killed by Hutu rioters, and many Rwandan Tutsis fled to Burundi and other neighboring states. In 1988 about 50,000 Hutus were forced out of Burundi as tensions between the two peoples flared in that country.

By 1990 the Tutsi-led Rwandan Patriotic Front (RPF) had amassed sufficient strength to invade Rwanda from Uganda. Within three years the RPF made enough gains to force the Hutu government to sign an agreement that guaranteed the Tutsis a substantial voice in Rwandan affairs and an equal place in Rwandan life. This fragile peace was undermined, however, by a carefully orchestrated hate campaign conducted by extremist Hutu groups that controlled Radio Télévision Libre de Mille Collines (RTLM), the country's independent radio station. This hate campaign struck all-too-familiar themes: the need for racial purity among the Hutus and the verminlike nature of the "foreign" Tutsis. Although the Hutu-dominated government did not control the Hutu extremists, it clearly did nothing to restrain or discourage them. Then, in April 1994,

Rwandan President Juvenal Habyarimana, a Hutu, was killed when the airplane in which he was traveling with the president of Burundi crashed as it approached the Rwandan capital of Kingali. Almost immediately, claims were made that the airplane had been shot down by a rocket fired by Tutsi forces.

Literally overnight, Habyarimana's presidential guard initiated an orchestrated slaughter of Tutsis and moderate Hutus in Kingali and adjacent districts. A militia organization called the Interahamwe (meaning those who attack in unison) had been organized amid the unrest of the preceding years, and it quickly emerged in every corner of the country to greatly expand the slaughter. At its height, the Interahamwe included some 30,000 well-armed militiamen—more than enough to inflame or intimidate large numbers of other Hutus, armed only with clubs, machetes, and knives, into participating in the carnage.

The international community made only token attempts to intercede in order to stop the killing. A small U.N. peacekeeping force was withdrawn after a Hutu mob killed ten of the soldiers. The killing ended only when the RPF, under Paul Kagame, seized control of Kingali and then of the country as a whole. Although a moderate Hutu, Pasteur Bizimungu, was named president of Rwanda, some 2 million Hutus fled into the Democratic Republic of the Congo (DRC, formerly Zaire), which was then on the verge of a violent civil war itself. The Rwandan refugees included many of those who had led the genocide in Rwanda and were wanted for committing crimes against humanity. These war criminals soon seized control of the refugee camps, turning them into fresh killing zones, and they began to recruit, often forcibly, troops with which they launched raids back into Rwanda.

The region and the United Nations thus suddenly faced a double crisis of almost unprecedented proportions. Not only had Rwanda been devastated by a horrible genocide but refugees from Rwanda had flooded into a remote region of a country that was itself politically unstable.

Further complicating matters, the Hutus and Tutsis were the major ethnic groups in districts of the eastern Congo; thus, when Rwanda, Uganda, and Burundi interceded in Congolese affairs, there were many layers of complexity in the political, military, and humanitarian situation. The Rwandan military helped to topple the Congolese government of Mobuto Sese Seko and then that of the rebel Laurent Kabila when both failed to control and then disband the Hutu refugee camps in the eastern Congo.

In the decade immediately following the genocide, the Rwandan government and the United Nations made extensive efforts to bring the chief perpetrators to justice. By 2004 some 500 Hutus had been sentenced to death for their parts in the genocide, and about 100,000 were either serving prison sentences or awaiting trial. In that year Paul Kagame won a landslide victory in the first fully democratic presidential election since the genocide, and the RPF won a clear majority in the legislature. The decisiveness of their victory convinced the leaders of the Forces Démocratiques de Liberation du Rwanda (FDLR), the major insurgent group among Hutu refugees, to announce that their organization would disband.

Of course, as in all terrible conflicts, many of the victims of the Rwandan genocide were women. But the long-standing ethnic tensions in Rwanda provided especially terrible complications for many Tutsi women. Because the similarities between the Tutsis and Hutus often outweighed their differences, particularly in times of relative peace between the groups, intermarriage was not uncommon. But marriages between Hutu men and Tutsi women were much more common than marriages between Tutsi men and Hutu women. Legally, the offspring of the marriages between Hutu men and Tutsi women were Hutus, but at a time of crisis, when issues of racial purity were used to inflame emotions, the Tutsi women in these marriages and their children were especially vulnerable. Indeed, when the genocide began, Hutu men married to Tutsis were often re-

quired to prove their loyalty to the Hutus by participating in the murders of their own wives and children.

More broadly, the propaganda of the Hutu extremists portrayed Tutsi women as scheming and predatory sexual figures who undermined the confidence of Hutu men, literally or figuratively seducing them into an abject submissiveness. Thus, when the genocide began, Tutsi women were often viciously gang-raped in order to demean them publicly before they were murdered. Moreover, Hutu women, having been culturally conditioned to view Tutsi women as arrogant individuals who flaunted their supposed superiority, made Tutsi women scapegoats for all sorts of perceived injustices and personal grudges. The torture of Tutsi women became a terrible sport for some Hutu women who participated in the genocide. Some Tutsi women were kept in sexual slavery by the Hutu militias even after the exodus to the eastern Congo occurred. Those women who somehow survived their victimization discovered that their own sense of shame was compounded because they were now socially ostracized. They were reminders of their own husbands' and fathers' failure to prevent their humiliation. If they had become pregnant as the result of the rapes, the stigma was intensified. Abortion and infanticide became horrible denouements to the genocide.

One interesting footnote to the Rwandan genocide is that two Rwandan women became the first plaintiffs in history to sue the United Nations for its failure to prevent a genocide. Anonciata Kavaruganda, the wife of a murdered Supreme Court justice, and Louise Mushikiwabo, the only Tutsi in Habyarimana's cabinet, both claimed that U.N. forces in Rwanda were not just ineffectual but were actually complicit when the killing began.

—*Martin Kich*

See also Herero of Namibia, Repression of the; Holocaust and Jewish Women; Sudan, Women and the Civil War in

References and Further Reading

- Barnett, Michael N. 2002. *Eyewitness to a Genocide: The United Nations and Rwanda*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University.
- Dallaire, Romeo. 2005. *Shake Hands with the Devil: The Failure of Humanity in Rwanda*. New York: Carroll and Graf.
- Eltringham, Nigel. 2004. *Accounting for Horror: Post-genocide Debates in Rwanda*. Sterling, VA: Pluto.
- Jennings, Christian. 2000. *Across the Red River: Rwanda, Burundi and the Heart of Darkness*. London: V. Gollancz.
- Prunier, Gerard. 1995. *The Rwanda Crisis, 1959–1994: History of a Genocide*. New York: Columbia University.
- Scherrer, Christian P. 2002. *Genocide and Crisis in Central Africa: Conflict Roots, Mass Violence, and Regional War*. Westport, CT: Praeger.
- Taylor, Christopher C. 1999. *Sacrifice as Terror: The Rwandan Genocide of 1994*. New York: Berg.
- Waugh, Colin M. 2004. *Paul Kagame and Rwanda: Power, Genocide and the Rwandan Patriotic Front*. Jefferson, NC: McFarland.

S

SALOMON, CHARLOTTE (1917–1943)

German Jewish artist whose autobiographical work, *Life? or Theatre?*, combines paintings, text, and musical cues in a unique chronicle of her life. Salomon's autobiography deals with her childhood in Weimar, Germany, her coming of age during the Nazi years, and her exile in France as a refugee from the Nazi regime. It reveals her battle to define her existence and identity in the face of constant personal and political conflict.

Born into a prosperous family in Berlin in 1917, young Charlotte Salomon struggled to find her own place and voice amid the turbulence of interwar Germany and the anti-Semitic policies of the Nazi regime. She quit school in 1933 but later applied and was admitted to the esteemed Berlin Art Academy. (Her openly avowed Jewish heritage would eventually lead to her dismissal from the institution.) There she learned classical, Nazi-sanctioned methods and techniques of realism, which she broke from almost completely in her own artistic work.

Increasing persecution at the hands of Hitler's government ultimately convinced the Salomon family to leave their homeland. In the immediate aftermath of the anti-Jewish pogrom known as *Kristallnacht* (Crystal Night, the Night

of the Broken Glass) on November 9, 1938, Salomon's father, Albert, along with thousands of other Jews, was sent to Sachsenhausen concentration camp outside Berlin. His family managed to secure his release, and from that point forward the Salomons prepared to leave Germany. Charlotte Salomon left in January 1939 to join her grandparents, who had fled Nazi rule in 1933, on the French Riviera. A plan to reunite with her father and stepmother in exile never materialized; her parents ended up in Amsterdam, where they survived World War II and the Holocaust.

After the German invasion of Poland in September 1939, Salomon's grandmother, distressed by the expansion of Hitler's empire, tried to commit suicide (she made another, successful attempt the following year). It was only then that Salomon learned a family secret hidden from her since childhood: six people in her family, including Salomon's mother, had taken their own lives. (Salomon had been told that her mother, who died when Salomon was eight years old, had succumbed to influenza.) Her grandmother's death, the dislocations of war, and her increasing clashes with her grandfather—including an exchange in which he angrily suggested that Salomon kill herself—provided her with the determination to paint the story of her life to avoid falling victim to this fate and as a

means of grappling with her family's history. Salomon spent more than a year crafting her autobiography in 1941 and 1942, composing over 1,300 notebook-sized gouache paintings on which text was written directly or on attached overlays. From these, she selected more than 700 for inclusion in *Life? or Theatre?*

In June 1943, Salomon married Alexander Nagler, a Jewish Austrian refugee also living in southern France. Just three months after their marriage they were arrested during intensified Nazi roundups of Jews along the Riviera. Before her apprehension, Salomon had given *Life? or Theatre?* to a friend, with whom it safely remained until war's end. After her arrest, Salomon was transported to Auschwitz, and she apparently was gassed soon after her arrival at the camp on October 10, 1943.

—Adam C. Stanley

See also Holocaust and Jewish Women

References and Further Reading

- Felstiner, Mary Lowenthal. 1994. *To Paint Her Life: Charlotte Salomon in the Nazi Era*. Berkeley: University of California.
- Salomon, Charlotte. 1998. *Charlotte Salomon: Life? or Theatre?* Trans. Leila Vennewitz; ed. Judith C. E. Belinfante, Christine Fischer-Defoy, and Ad Petersen. Zwolle, the Netherlands: Waanders.

SALVATION ARMY IN WORLD WAR I

Nondenominational Christian organization that provided assistance to Allied soldiers during World War I. The Salvation Army was founded in England in 1865 by William Booth (1829–1912), a former Methodist minister. Throughout its history, the group's purpose has been to care for the physical and spiritual needs of all people, regardless of their beliefs. The Salvation Army's effort in World War I was no exception.

Evangeline Cory Booth (1865–1950), daughter of the Salvation Army's founder, was one of the group's most influential members during World War I. Eventually becoming the organization's first woman general, Booth was awarded the prestigious Distinguished Service Medal by President Woodrow Wilson in 1919 for her wartime assistance.

When U.S. troops left for France in 1917, Evangeline Booth immediately began to formulate plans for her officers, male and female, to make the trip overseas. Women officers in the Salvation Army during World War I, commonly referred to as "lassies," were among the first women to be given positions of authority in the sector of social services and often faced physical danger in the frontline areas. Officers of the Salvation Army provided Bible classes as well as religious services for the soldiers. Salvation Army officers also mended torn clothes and helped U.S. soldiers correspond with their families back home. The affection of the "doughboys" was won by the Salvation Army, which provided doughnuts, pancakes, cupcakes, and lemonade to tired and thirsty soldiers.

—Thomas M. Ethridge

See also United States, Home Front during World War I; Young Men's Christian Association, World War I

References and Further Reading

- Lavine, Sigmund A. 1970. *Evangeline Booth: Daughter of Salvation*. New York: Dodd, Mead.
- Wilson, Philip Whitwell. 1948. *General Evangeline Booth of the Salvation Army*. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons.

SAMSON (SAMPSON), DEBORAH (1760–1827)

Veteran of the American Revolutionary War. Deborah Samson volunteered for the 4th Massachusetts Regiment disguised as a man named

Robert Shurtleff or Shirtleff. When her true gender was discovered, she was discharged.

Samson was born in 1760 in Plympton, Massachusetts. Her father died when she was five years old. Because of the family's poverty, Deborah was "bound out" to a farming family until she was eighteen. She was apparently enthused by stories of the Revolutionary War. After being emancipated, she earned enough money to buy cloth and make a man's outfit. Dressed as a male, she volunteered and was accepted into the Massachusetts militia as Timothy Thayer. This first attempt to serve in the military failed when it was discovered that she was a woman. Her second effort was more successful. She served in the 4th Massachusetts Regiment from May 20, 1782, until October 23, 1782. Years of hard work on the farm and a robust physique made her quite fit for the rigors of military life. She was wounded in an engagement near Tarrytown, New York, and again four months later. Neither of these wounds led to the discovery of her gender. When she developed a debilitating fever at Yorktown, however, it was discovered that she was a woman, and she was discharged.

In 1785 she married a farmer, Robert Gannett, and they had three children. She told her story to Horace Mann, who published a fictionalized autobiography of her life, *The Female Review: Life of Deborah Sampson the Female Soldier in the War of the Revolution*, in 1797. It was Mann who added the "p" to her name. A few years after the book was published, Mann wrote a script for Samson to recite on stage and organized a tour. In 1802 she appeared in Boston, New York City, and other towns. After reciting her narrative she would perform the manual of arms.

With the support of her former officers, Deborah received backpay from the state of Massachusetts and a pension from the U.S. government for her military service. After her death in 1827, her husband successfully petitioned for survivor benefits for himself and their children.

—Bernard Cook

See also American Revolution, Role of Women in the; Corbin, Margaret Cochrane; Molly Pitcher

References and Further Reading

- Crompton, Samuel Willard. 1999. Sampson, Deborah. Pages 230–231 in *American National Biography*. New York: Oxford University.
- De Pauw, Linda Grant. 1998. *Battle Cries and Lullabies: Women in War from Pre-history to the Present*. Norman: University of Oklahoma.
- Laffin, John. 1967. *Women in Battle*. London and New York: Abelard-Schuman.

SÁNCHEZ MANDULEY, CELIA (1922–1980)

Cuban revolutionary. A native of Manzanilla, located in the eastern province of Granma in Cuba, Celia Sánchez was born in 1922 into a middle-class family. Her revolutionary career began when she helped with the clandestine dissemination of the treatise *History Will Absolve Me*, Fidel Castro's lengthy criticism of Fulgencio Batista's dictatorship and the sole speech Castro used to defend himself after his failed 1953 attack of the Moncada barracks, the headquarters of the Cuban military in the southern part of the country in Santiago.

Charmed by the charismatic young lawyer, Sánchez joined his band of followers, and she is rumored to have been romantically involved with Fidel for many years. During Fidel's exile, Sánchez continued to work to advance the revolution and participated in the 1956 uprising in Santiago de Cuba. Sánchez helped found the July 26th Movement, whose manifesto outlined the original doctrine of the Cuban Revolution. The writings were explicitly based on ten principles taken from writings by poet and martyr for Cuban independence José Martí (Brenner et al. 1989, 35–41). In 1957 Sánchez joined the guerrilla fighters in the Sierra

Maestra, where she and Fidel Castro organized the first all-female platoon. The unit was named after national heroine Mariana Grajales. One of Fidel's closest assistants during the three years of warfare that would culminate in the 1959 victory, Sánchez was instrumental in forming *Radio Rebelde*, the voice of the rebel army. Sánchez, who never had children herself, was said to act as a mother to all rebel fighters (Corona 2004). The historian Pedro Alvarez Tabío emphasizes her high moral standards, profound humanity, and respect for others. She is considered a Heroine of the Revolution and a model for Cuban youth.

—Sara E. Cooper

See also Cuban Revolution, Women in the; Grajales Cuello, Mariana; Hernández Rodríguez del Rey, Melba; Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements in; Santamaría Cuadrado, Haydée

References and Further Reading

- Alvarez Tabío, Pedro. 2003. *Celia: Ensayo para una biografía* [Celia: A Biographical Essay]. Prologue by Armando Hart. Havana: Oficina de Publicaciones del Consejo de Estado.
- Brenner, Philip, William M. Leogrande, Donna Rich, and Daniel Siegel. 1989. *The Cuba Reader*. New York: Grove.
- Corona Jerez, Martín. "Cubans Pay Homage to Cuban Heroine Celia Sánchez on Mother's Day." AIN Cuba Web. <http://www.ain.cubaweb.cu/english/0905boletin.htm> (accessed October 26, 2004).
- Juventud Rebelde Web. Pedro Alvarez Tabío. "Auténtica flor." <http://www.jrebelde.cubaweb.cu/2004/enero-marzo/ene-11/autentica.html> (accessed October 28, 2004).
- Sánchez Manduley, Celia, and Haydée Santamaría Cuadrado. 1981. Recuerdos. In *Los dispositivos en la flor: Cuba/Literatura desde la Revolución* [Methods in Flower: Cuban Literature since the Revolution]. Edited by Edmundo Desnoes. Hanover, NH: Ediciones del Norte.
- Vega Belmonte, Belkis. 1980. *Celia*. Havana: ICAIC.

SANDES, FLORA (1876–1956)

British woman who fought in the Serbian army during World War I and became an officer. Flora Sandes was the daughter of a Scottish clergyman. When World War I began, she volunteered to work in Serbia with the ambulance service operated by the Scottish Women's Hospitals. She worked for eighteen months with the Serbian Red Cross. When the Bulgarians joined the Central Powers and a joint offensive threw the Serbs into a massive retreat, she returned to Britain to solicit material support for the Serbs. She returned to Salonika in November 1915 and, with great difficulty, made it to the front at Prilep beyond Monastir (Bitolj). There she worked in a hospital and as a nurse with a regimental ambulance corps. As the Central Powers overran the remainder of Serbia, Sandes withdrew with the Serbian army into Albania and traded her role in the ambulance service for a combat role in the regular Serbian army. She had reluctantly offered to return to Salonika rather than be a burden during the retreat, but to her delight, the Serbian



Sergeant Major Flora Sandes, reportedly the only British woman in the Serbian army. (TopFoto.co.uk)

FLORA SANDES

“We met Dr. Nikotitch there again, and he and Commandant Wasitch asked me if I really had made up my mind to go on. They said that the journey through Albania would be very terrible, that nothing we had gone through so far was anything approaching it, and that they would send me to Salonica if I liked. I was not quite sure whether having a woman with them might be more of an anxiety and nuisance to them than anything else, though they knew I did not mind roughing it; and I asked them, if so, to tell me quite frankly, and I would go down to Salonica that night. They were awfully nice, though, and said ‘for them it would be better if I stopped [stayed?], because it would encourage the soldiers, who already all knew me, and to whose simple minds I represented, so to speak, the whole of England.’ The only thought that buoyed them up at that time, and still does, was that England would never forsake them. So that settled the matter, as I should have been awfully sorry if I had had to go back, and I believe the fact that I went through with them did perhaps sometimes help to encourage the soldiers.”

—Flora Sandes, *An English Woman-Sergeant in the Serbian Army* (London: Hodder and Stoughton, 1916), 91–92.

officers said that the presence of a female Briton would be an inspiration to their men (Sandes 1916, 91). During the retreat, though it was known that she was a woman, Sandes “became attached properly to a company, and became an ordinary soldier” (Sandes 1916, 124). As a member of the 4th Company, 1st Battalion, of the Serbian army, Sandes participated in fighting, and in December 1915 she was promoted to the rank of sergeant major. She was evacuated with her unit from Durazzo to Corfu. When her unit was shipped to Salonika, she briefly returned to England. While there she wrote *An English Woman-Sergeant in the Serbian Army* in an effort to gain support in Britain for the Serbian cause.

Sandes, who later wrote, “I seemed to take to soldiering like a duck to water” (Sandes 1927, 17), rejoined her unit on the Salonika front in the fall of 1916. She was wounded by a grenade in an engagement with the Bulgarians. Though the wound put her out of action for six months, Sandes returned to her unit. She fought until shrapnel remaining in her leg caused further hospitalization and a two-month period of recuperation, which she spent in England. During this period she spoke throughout Britain and to troops in France to acquaint her audiences with

the sacrifices of the Serbs and to garner material support for them. After two months Sandes was back in Macedonia with her unit. When the war ended she remained in the Serbian army. In April 1919 she was promoted to the rank of lieutenant. Demobilized at the end of October 1922, Sandes remained in the reserves. She was promoted to captain in September 1926 and rose to the rank of major before her retirement in 1927. She married Yuri Yudenich, who had been the commander of a White anti-Bolshevik army during the Russian Civil War. He died in September 1941, and Sandes returned to England in 1945.

—Bernard Cook

See also Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women’s Hospitals; Stobart, Mabel

References and Further Reading

- Laffin, John. 1967. *Women in Battle*. London: Abelard-Schuman.
- Sandes, Flora. 1916. *An English Woman-Sergeant in the Serbian Army*. London: Hodder and Stoughton.
- . 1927. *The Autobiography of a Woman Soldier: A Brief Record of Adventure with the Serbian Army, 1916–1919*. New York: Frederick A. Stokes.

SANSOM, ODETTE

SANSOM, ODETTE
(1912–1995)

British Special Operations Executive (SOE) operative during World War II. Odette Marie Celine Brailly was born on April 28, 1912, in Amiens, France. In 1931 she married Roy Sansom, an Englishman, and moved to London. After the German occupation of France, despite the fact that she was married and had three daughters, Sansom was recruited to train for the SOE. In 1942 she was put ashore near Cannes to serve as the radio operator for the Spindle network led by Peter Churchill. When the Churchill network was betrayed by a double agent, Churchill and Sansom were imprisoned and tortured by the Gestapo at the Fresnes prison. Hoping to gain leniency, Sansom insisted that Churchill was the nephew of Win-

ston Churchill and that she was his wife. The ruse must have had some effect. Though she was condemned to death, neither she nor Churchill was executed. She was sent with seven other British operatives from the Prosper network, who were later killed, to Karlsruhe. Instead of being transferred with the other agents for execution at Dachau or Natzweiler-Struthof, Sansom was sent to the women's concentration camp at Ravensbrück on July 18, 1944. She survived her imprisonment, as did Churchill. Her husband died during the war, and she married Churchill in 1947. They were divorced in 1956, after which she married Geoffrey Hallows. For her wartime activity, Sansom was made a Member of the British Empire (MBE) and received the George Cross. She died on March 13, 1995.

—Bernard Cook



Odette Sansom, British secret agent, with her former commanding officer, Captain Peter Churchill, after their wedding. (Bettmann/Corbis)

See also Atkins, Vera H.; Beekman, Yolande; Damerment, Madeleine; Plewman, Eliane; Ravensbrück

References and Further Reading

Tickell, Jerrard. 1949. *Odette: The Story of a British Agent*. London: Chapman.

SANTAMARÍA CUADRADO, HAYDÉE (1922–1980)

Cuban revolutionary. Haydée Santamaría was born in Esmeralda, Las Villas, Cuba, in 1922. She and Melba Hernández were the only women combatants—among 165 men—in the famous attack led by Fidel Castro on the Moncada Barracks, the headquarters of the Cuban military in the southern part of the country in Santiago, on July 26, 1953. When the dissidents' assault was rebuffed, both Haydée Santamaría and her brother Abel were taken prisoner, along with most of the surviving rebels. Abel was among those tortured and killed by the Batista regime as reprisal; Haydée remained incarcerated for approximately six months. Her subsequent involvement in the underground movement included the clandestine printing of Fidel's speech *History Will Absolve Me*, direction and planning of the July 26th Movement, and participation in the 1956 uprising in Santiago de Cuba. When Fidel Castro returned to Cuba with Che Guevara to lead the rebellion against Fulgencio Batista, Santamaría joined the guerrilla troops stationed in the Sierra Maestra and made history as one of the fiercest rebel soldiers.

After the triumph of the socialist revolution in 1959, Santamaría continued to be intimately involved in Cuban political life, serving on the Central Committee of the Communist Party and the Council of State. Her principal legacy, however, was the foundation and direction of the cultural institution Casa de las

Americas, which from its inception has supported revolutionary literature and art both nationally and internationally. In a talk that Santamaría gave at the Universidad de La Habana in 1967, she told the students, "For me to be communist isn't to be a militant in a [political] party; for me, to be communist is to have an attitude toward life" (Rebelión.org 2004; translation by the author). Her writings on the Moncada assault and the Vietnam War, published posthumously, provide an interesting perspective on armed combat, ideology, and sociopolitical responsibility. Haydée Santamaría committed suicide in 1980, twenty-seven years to the day after she participated in the Moncada assault.

—Sara E. Cooper

See also Cuban Revolution, Women in the; Grajales Cuello, Mariana; Hernández Rodríguez del Rey, Melba; Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements in; Sánchez Manduley, Celia

References and Further Reading

Maclean, Betsy, ed. 2004. *Haydée Santamaría: Rebel Lives*. New York and Melbourne: Ocean Press.

Rebelión.org. "Haydée Santamaría, una mujer revolucionaria" [Haydée Santamaría, a Revolutionary Mother]. Cátedra de Formación Política de Ernesto Che Guevara (Introduction and letters from Santamaría to Che Guevara and to her parents). <http://www.rebelion.org/noticia.php?id=133> (accessed October 26, 2004).

Sánchez Manduley, Celia, and Haydée Santamaría Cuadrado. 1981. Recuerdos. In *Los dispositivos en la flor: Cuba/Literatura desde la Revolución* [Methods in Flower: Cuban Literature since the Revolution]. Edited by Edmundo Desnoes. Hanover, NH: Ediciones del Norte.

Santamaría Cuadrado, Haydée. 1985a. *Haydée habla del Moncada* [Haydée Speaks of Moncada]. Havana: Casa de las Americas.

———. 1985b. *Haydée habla del Vietnam* [Haydée Speaks of Vietnam]. Havana: Casa de las Americas.

SAUMONEAU, LOUISE
(1875–1949)

French socialist, feminist, and advocate of international peace credited with originating International Women's Day in France. Louise Saumoneau was born in France in 1875 and worked as a seamstress before becoming involved in the socialist-feminist movement in the 1890s as an opponent of class collaboration with bourgeois feminism. Saumoneau believed in class warfare and preached the annihilation of the bourgeoisie.

After the Groupe Féministe Socialiste (Socialist Feminist League) was founded in 1899, Saumoneau, then twenty-four years old, was elected as its leader. In her first speech as group leader, Saumoneau declared that the Groupe Féministe Socialiste's goal was for women to break the chains of their past and to put an end to all injustices directed toward women, as well as other individuals.

At a 1910 conference in Copenhagen, Denmark, organized by the German socialist journalist Clara Zedkin, the proposal of an International Women's Day received considerable attention. In 1914, following the ideas proposed by Zedkin, Saumoneau promoted the celebration of International Women's Day, and on March 8 of that year, 6,000 French women gathered and placed bouquets at Place de la Concorde in Paris. These women also began to voice their desire for the right to vote and for political equality, making this occasion the first public demonstration for women's suffrage in France. Based on this success, Saumoneau convinced some of the women present to participate in an international socialist women's conference for peace that was to take place in Bern, Switzerland. Saumoneau attended this conference as a private citizen in order to avoid partisan conflicts.

During World War I, Saumoneau, true to her pacifist ideals, broke with her party's support for the war and was arrested for antiwar activities. She died in 1949.

—Stephanie Longo

See also International Congress of Women: Antiwar Protest of Women in World War I; Luxemburg, Rosa

References and Further Reading

- Journée Internationale des Femmes. 2004. http://www.v1.paris.fr/fr/actualites/journee_femmes_2004 (accessed March 1, 2005).
- McMillan, James F. "Biographies: Women's Suffrage." <http://www.st-andrews.ac.uk/~jfec/cal/suffrage/coredocs/biograp3.htm> (accessed March 1, 2005).
- Saumoneau, Louise. 1923. *Principes et action féministes socialistes* [Feminist Socialist Principles and Action]. Paris: Publications de la Femme Socialiste.

SCHAFT, JEANNETJE JOANNA
(HANNIE) (1920–1945)

Dutch resister executed by the Nazis. Jeannetje Joanna (Hannie) Schaft was born on September 16, 1920, in Haarlem, the Netherlands. Her parents were teachers and socialists. Schaft was studying law in Amsterdam when the Germans invaded on May 10, 1940. Her family's political orientation had prepared her to actively oppose the Nazis. By 1942 Hannie was stealing identity papers from mailboxes and lockers in public places to provide false documentation for Jews. In 1943, when students were required to sign an oath of loyalty to the occupation regime, Hannie refused and had to leave the University of Amsterdam.

She became a member of the Haarlemse Raad van Verzet (RVV, Haarlem Resistance Council). With her friends, sisters Truus and Freddie Oversteegen, Hannie distributed underground newspapers, stole identity papers and weapons, wheedled information from German soldiers about coastal defenses, and placed Jewish children with people willing to hide them. Eventually, Hannie engaged in sabotage and the murder of Nazi agents and collaborators. In

November 1943, Hannie and three others attempted to blow up a power station in the Velsen-Noord district of the northern Netherlands, but some of the explosives failed to detonate. There was some damage to the electrical system, but only part of the electric-powered rail system was affected.

To hide her identity, Hannie dyed her red hair black and wore glasses with plain lenses. Nevertheless, during a routine identity check on March 21, 1945, Hannie was caught with resistance newspapers in her bicycle case. Under intense interrogation she admitted killing a Dutch collaborator. On April 17, 1945, shortly before the end of the war, she was executed by the Nazis on the dunes near Haarlem, where hundreds of other Dutch resisters had been shot.

In 1981 a film was produced based on Theun de Vries's book *Het meisje met het rode haar* (The Girl with Red Hair).

—Bernard Cook

See also De Jongh, Andrée

References and Further Reading

"Hannie Schaft: Im Kampf gegen Fascismus [In Struggle against Fascism]." Stiftung Nationale Hannie Schaft-Herdenking. <http://www.hannieschaft.nl/21.html> (accessed October 9, 2003).

Polsermans, Sophie. "Hannie Schaft: Symbool van vrouwenverzet [Symbol of Female Resistance]." Stiftung Nationale Hannie Schaft-Herdenking. <http://www.hannieschaft.nl/21.html> (accessed October 9, 2003).

Vries, Theun de. 1956. *Het meisje met het rode haar* [The Girl with Red Hair]. Amsterdam: Querido.

SCHINDLER, EMILIE
(1907–2002)

Worked with her husband, Oskar, to rescue Jews during World War II. Emilie Pelsl was born on October 22, 1907, to Catholic farmers in the vil-

lage of Alt Moletein, Sudetenland, presently in the Czech Republic. Emilie was convent-educated but endured an oppressive family life. She studied agriculture at college. She married fellow Roman Catholic Oskar Schindler (1908–1974) on March 6, 1928, in Zwittau in the Sudetenland after a whirlwind six-week courtship. Their marriage proved to be turbulent. Oskar Schindler had numerous mistresses and two illegitimate children soon after the marriage. He disliked working, enjoyed partying, and never made a dependable income.

In 1935 Oskar found work as a spy with German military counterintelligence, the *Abwehrdienst*. After the 1939 German invasion of Poland, Schindler was offered an administrative post in a Jewish-owned enamelware factory in Krakow that employed Jews from the local ghetto and from the Plaschow concentration camp. Emilie arrived in Krakow in 1941. Unlike Oskar, she did not enjoy the spotlight and performed major tasks at the factory behind the scenes.

Oskar promised the Nazis funds for each Jewish worker for a factory in Brünnlitz. Emilie obtained the formally signed papers from the mayor of Brünnlitz (her former swimming coach), permitting them to retain the Jews. Emilie's role at Brünnlitz was that of German hausfrau. She kept busy entertaining Nazis and secretly finding food on the black market to feed the Jewish workers, who were unable to perform any type of labor due to poor health.

In 1945 Emilie was responsible for single-handedly rescuing 120 Jews from a cattle car bound for Auschwitz concentration camp. She nursed the half frozen, emaciated victims until she became exhausted. These people never worked. By the war's end the Schindlers had spent the earnings from the factory saving over 1,200 Jews. They were penniless and moved to Buenos Aires, Argentina, with Oskar's mistress and some Jewish people they had rescued. After numerous unsuccessful business ventures, Oskar left Argentina in 1957 and returned to Germany, leaving Emilie with his debts. They never saw one another again. Oskar died in 1974. The reclusive Emilie lived

in a small cottage with a menagerie of pets. She was financially supported by the Jewish organization B'nai Brith and, eventually, by a small pension from the German government.

Emilie received Israel's Righteous among the Nations Award in 1993 for her efforts to save Jews. She traveled to the United States as director Steven Spielberg's guest at the screening of his movie based on Thomas Keneally's book *Schindler's List*. Despite the fact he gave Emilie scarce mention in the movie, Spielberg paid her \$50,000. She also met President Bill Clinton and First Lady Hillary Clinton. Thereafter she traveled to Israel, where she was well received. In 1996 Emilie wrote her autobiography, *In Schindler's Shadow: Where Light and Shadow Meet—A Memoir*. Emilie moved to Germany and lived in a nursing home after suffering several strokes. She died on October 5, 2002.

—Annette Richardson

See also Holocaust and Jewish Women;
Wertheimer, Martha

References and Further Reading

- Crowe, David. 2004. *Oskar Schindler: The Untold Account of His Life, Wartime Activities, and the True Story behind the List*. Boulder, CO: Westview.
- Keneally, Thomas. 1993. *Schindler's List*. New York: Touchstone.
- Rosenberg, Erika. 2001. *Ich, Emilie Schindler* [I, Emilie Schindler]. Munich: Herbig Verlag.
- Schindler, Emilie. 1997. *In Schindler's Shadow: Where Light and Shadow Meet—A Memoir*. New York: Norton.

SCHMIDT, KITTY
(1882–1954)

Owner of a prominent brothel taken over by the *Sicherheit Deinst* (SD, Nazi Security Service). Kitty Schmidt's establishment at 11 Giesebrecht

Strasse had a reputation for being the most luxurious and exclusive brothel in Berlin. Walter Schellenberg, head of the SD, was ordered by Reinhard Heydrich, second in command in the *Schutzstaffel* (SS, Defense Echelon), to detect security leaks by infiltrating a high-class brothel. Heydrich was concerned about the disclosure of sensitive information by German bureaucrats and officers. Schellenberg did more than infiltrate the brothel. Kitty Schmidt, the owner of Pension Schmidt, was stopped at the Dutch frontier as she attempted to leave Germany in June 1939. She was brought back to Gestapo headquarters on Prinz Albrecht Strasse in Berlin, where she was confronted with her many offenses, among which were illegally transferring money to England through departing Jews and utilizing a forged passport. She was given the alternative of being sent to a concentration camp or cooperating with the Gestapo; she opted for the latter.

Kitty Schmidt's brothel was commandeered by the SD. They placed listening devices in every room and had a recording center in the basement. After careful psychiatric and other "expert" screening of prostitutes rounded up by a vice squad, Schellenberg selected twenty physically ravishing, talented, and reliable agents. The women were given a wide-ranging seven-week course to acquaint them with domestic and foreign political issues, the significance of military decorations, and the art of extracting secrets from their customers.

In March 1940 the operation was ready. Kitty was instructed to proceed as normal with old customers, utilizing her old staff. When a new customer, German or foreign, arrived with a special referral, she was to offer him an album with pictures of the twenty prostitute-agents. When one was chosen, Kitty would call the SD, who would send the selected agent to gather information.

The British became aware of the operation, and a British spy was able to tap the house's cables from December 1940 until 1943, when the SD operation was terminated. Discipline among

the prostitute-agents had become increasingly lax, and a bomb hit the establishment in July 1942. Kitty was moved to the ground floor, but during 1943 the SD decided to end its surveillance operation at the brothel. Kitty stayed, as did many of the agents, but she was sworn to remain silent about the operation. She kept her promise, and the 25,000 disk recordings of the conversations of the brothel's clients disappeared or were destroyed as the Russians fought their way into Berlin.

—*Bernard Cook*

See also *Germany, Women and the Home Front, World War II*

References and Further Reading

Robson, Dean. "Operation Kitty's." *Third Reich Factbook*. <http://www.skalman.nu/third-reich/ss-operationkittys.htm> (accessed October 30, 2003).

SCHOLL, SOPHIE (1921–1943)

Student at the University of Munich executed by the Nazis for her activities with the White Rose resistance group. Sophie Scholl was born into a deeply Catholic family in 1921 in Forchtenberg am Kocker, where her father was mayor. She had two sisters and two brothers but was particularly close to her brother Hans. Though their father counseled caution regarding their devotion to the Nazi government, Sophie and Hans felt a deep sense of German patriotism, and they both participated in the Third Reich's youth programs. Hans became a leader in the Hitler Youth, and Sophie served as a group leader in the League of German Girls. She enjoyed the exercise, field trips, service activities, and camaraderie offered by the organization. It was not until later that she understood her father's sentiment.

In 1937 while attempting to eradicate all non-Nazi organizations, the Gestapo arrested Hans and his siblings Inge, Sophie, and Werner because of Hans's association with a group known as the Young Germans. This group only existed informally, and its activities, based on friendship, outdoor pursuits, and creative expression, were harmless to the regime, but the Gestapo suspected it of being subversively independent. For Sophie and her siblings, their arrest engendered bitterness toward the regime. Like Hans, Sophie began to lose her enthusiasm for the Third Reich and its pervasive control. She became aware of the changes in her country, the restrictions placed on its citizens, and the danger in openly criticizing Hitler and his government.

By the beginning of the war in 1939 Sophie no longer approved of the regime. Ideologically, she disapproved of a powerful nation using its strength against a much weaker nation such as Poland, and in 1940, when the military sent Hans to the front, Sophie's disapproval of the war rose to a personal level. As a student in secondary school, she was particularly interested in art, including forms of modern art regarded as offensive by the regime. Her interests provoked the disapproval of the school's principal, who unsuccessfully attempted to prevent her from graduating and entering the University of Munich, where Hans was a medical student.

Her entry into the university, however, was delayed because of the National Labor Service. In order to avoid directly participating in the war effort, Sophie opted to teach in a kindergarten, believing that six months as a teacher would exempt her from six months of wartime labor. Unfortunately for Sophie, the National Labor Service called on her to work for another six months following her period of kindergarten teaching. She worked on a farm with other National Labor Service women, and the time was not without some enjoyment. During the day she took pleasure in the company of the other women, and at night she read classic works of theology and philosophy. Reading the work of

St. Augustine reinforced her moral outrage at the war and the state of German society.

Sophie finally entered the university in 1942, but she soon became disillusioned with her education at an establishment that sought to reinforce Nazi ideology. In the same year, through one of Archbishop August von Galen's sermons, she learned of the Nazis' euthanasia program, which murdered mentally ill, disabled, and handicapped individuals regarded to be unworthy of life. Shortly after she read the copied sermon, Sophie learned of Hans's participation in the White Rose, a resistance group consisting of a professor and students at the university. She demanded that Hans allow her to participate, lest she miss her opportunity to actively resist a regime that strove to remove citizens' personal rights and integrity.

As a member of the White Rose, Sophie contributed to the production and distribution of leaflets urging opposition to the regime. On February 18, 1943, Sophie and Hans dropped leaflets in broad daylight from an interior balcony in one of the university's buildings. They were arrested, and the People's Court quickly sentenced the siblings, along with other White Rose members, to death by guillotine. Although her prosecutors offered her clemency in exchange for repentance, Sophie refused, and she was beheaded on February 22, 1943.

—*Rachael I. Cherry*

See also Ballestrem-Solf, Countess Lagi; Kirchner, Johanna; Kuckhoff, Greta; Seele, Gertrud; Terwiel, Maria; Von Thadden, Elizabeth; Yorck von Wartenburg, Countess Marion

References and Further Reading

- Hanser, Richard. 1979. *A Noble Treason: The Revolt of the Munich Students against Hitler*. New York: G. P. Putnam's Sons.
- Michalczyk, John J., ed. 2004. *Confront! Resistance in Nazi Germany*. New York: Peter Lang.
- Scholl, Inge. 1983. *The White Rose: Munich 1942–1943*. Middletown, CT: Wesleyan University Press.

SCHOLTZ-KLINK (NÉE
TREUSCH), GERTRUD
(B. 1902)

Arguably the most influential woman in the Third Reich. By 1939 Gertrud Scholtz-Klink oversaw various women's organizations comprising approximately 8 million German women and 3 million girls in the Hitler Youth. In her own words, Scholtz-Klink believed her responsibility was to "infuse the daily life of all German women with Nazi ideals" (Koonz 1986, xxiv).

When Gertrud Treusch was eighteen, she married Friedrich Klink, a teacher, and bore him six children. Friedrich, a member of the Brown Shirts, became the leader of the Nazi Party in Offenburg but in 1930 died from a heart attack during a street battle. Gertrud stayed involved in the party by organizing other wives. In 1932, she married Günther Scholtz, a country doctor, but was divorced from him in 1938.

Scholtz-Klink rose to prominence within the National Socialist Party by virtue of her contacts with powerful men, including Adolf Hitler, SS leader Heinrich Himmler, Reichsmarschall Hermann Goering, and writer Alfred Rosenberg. In 1934 Scholtz-Klink was asked by Hitler to become chief of women's affairs in the new government. In 1939 she married an SS general (SS Obergruppenführer) August Heissmeyer, further entrenching Scholtz-Klink in the National Socialist state. Historian Claudia Koonz notes that Scholtz-Klink was largely responsible for cultivating the "social side of tyranny" (Koonz 1986, xxxiii). Scholtz-Klink advocated "eugenic purification" by instructing women to choose their mates carefully (Koonz 1986, 168). She considered preserving the German "race" a priority in which women played a special role. Scholtz-Klink helped develop a marriage course that underscored the importance of race and emphasized the importance of women's participation in the domestic sphere as means to achieve a National Socialist state in accordance with Hitler's vision. Scholtz-Klink unreservedly supported the Third Reich's anti-Semitic policies.

As the widow of a Nazi martyr and a mother, Scholtz-Klink was a logical choice to assume the role of organizing German women in the Third Reich. She mobilized women for the German war economy without challenging the Nazi leadership and straying away from women's strictly defined roles of mother, nurturer, and keeper of the National Socialist faith. Scholtz-Klink was adept at cautioning women to avoid appearing careerist and becoming overly cultured, values antithetical to National Socialism.

Under Scholtz-Klink's tenure, 5 million women worked in the Nazi Labor Front, 4 million worked in the *Frauenwerk* (Women's Work) organizations, and 2 million belonged to the elite *Frauenschaft* (Women's Organization). She also supervised 100,000 teachers. Gertrud Scholtz-Klink played a vital role in sustaining the National Socialist movement and, later, the Third Reich. She rose to prominence in part because she never challenged the roles assigned to women; she simply acted as an effective bureaucrat in ensuring that women supported the National Socialist state. Although Scholtz-Klink was not a participant in any of the Third Reich's high-level discussions affecting women, she effectively implemented leadership decisions. After World War II, Scholtz-Klink went into hiding and was not arrested until 1948. Later that year she was sentenced by a French military court to 18 months in prison. In 1949 Scholtz-Klink was declared "de-Nazified" and began receiving a pension by the West German government. She remained unapologetic about her role in the Third Reich, including supporting its anti-Semitic policies.

—Brian E. Crim

See also Germany, Women and the Home Front, World War II

References and Further Reading

Koonz, Claudia. 1986. *Mothers in the Fatherland: Women, the Family, and Nazi Politics*. New York: St. Martin's.

Leck, Ralph M. 2000. Conservative Empowerment and the Gender of Nazism: Paradigms of Power and Complicity in German Women's History. *Journal of Women's History* 12(2):147–169.

SCHULZE-BOYSEN, LIBERTAS (1913–1942)

Member of the German anti-Nazi resistance. Libertas Haas-Heye was born in 1913. Her father was a professor, and her mother was the daughter of Prince Eulenburg, a friend of Kaiser Wilhelm. Libertas spent much of her childhood on the Eulenburg estate, Liebenberg. After attending school in Switzerland, she worked as a freelance journalist in the press section of Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer in Berlin and then for the Berlin Cultural Film Center. In 1936 she married Harro Schulze-Boysen, who had been the publisher of a journal, *Der Gegner*, that had been suppressed in April 1933. Their home became a gathering place for like-minded opponents of the Nazi regime. They regarded the war as an unmitigated disaster. In 1940 Greta Kuckhoff introduced Libertas to Mildred Harnack. Libertas and Harro then joined the anti-Nazi resistance group Rote Kapelle (Red Chorus), organized by the Harnacks. Libertas gathered evidence of the mass murder of Jews and other civilians in Poland and Russia. At the Cultural Film Center she made copies of damning film that came into the center so that it might be used later to identify and convict war criminals.

Nazi intelligence deciphered Russian code and discovered the existence of the large resistance group in Berlin. Harro was arrested on August 30, 1942; he was tortured and executed on December 22, 1942. Libertas was arrested on September 8, as she attempted to leave Berlin and was interrogated by the Gestapo. She was betrayed by Gertrud Breiter, a Gestapo secretary, who had convinced Libertas of her sympathy. Libertas told Breiter details of the resistance

and asked her to warn members who had not been arrested. Libertas's terrible misjudgment was later revealed to her, causing her great dismay. After the war, however, Nazi prosecutor Manfred Roeder asserted that Libertas's indiscretion had not betrayed anyone "since the officials had known everything already" (Brysac 2000, 339). Libertas was guillotined in the Plötzensee Prison on the same day that her husband was hanged. Prior to her execution she cried out, "Let me keep my young life" (Brysac 2000, 364).

—Bernard Cook

See also Harnack-Fish, Mildred; Kuckhoff, Greta

References and Further Reading

Brysac, Shareen Blair. 2000. *Resisting Hitler: Mildred Harnack and the Red Orchestra: The Life and Death of an American Woman in Nazi Germany*. New York: Oxford University.

SCHUYLER, PHILIPPA (1931–1967)

Vietnam war correspondent. While attempting in an unofficial capacity to rescue and transport schoolchildren to shelter in Da Nang, Philippa Schuyler became the second female correspondent to die during the Vietnam War. As the child of a famous interracial marriage, Schuyler, whose lifelong struggle with her identity informed her work, felt an affinity with mixed-race Vietnamese. She wrote about the demeaning treatment of African American soldiers and was disdained by white soldiers who never accepted her biracial heritage.

Born in the affluent Sugar Hill district of Harlem in 1931, Schuyler was the daughter of George Schuyler, a controversial African American journalist and leader of the Harlem Renaissance, and Josephine Codgel, a white artist

and writer. Educated primarily at home, Schuyler, a musical prodigy and genius, was exposed to her parents' intellectual circle and grew up sheltered from racial problems and the devastation of the Great Depression. Winning prizes and acclaim for her musical performances, she was judged by Detroit's Grinnel Foundation as "the brightest young composer in America." With her father's connections and her mother's determination for Philippa to succeed as an example of interracial progeny, her extraordinary activities received extensive publicity and were documented by *The New Yorker*, *Look Magazine*, *Time*, and the *New York Herald Tribune*.

As she grew older, white interest in the novelty of her achievements dissolved, and her appeal lay mainly with African American and international audiences. Performing in more than eighty countries, she never garnered attention at the same level in the United States as she did overseas. After converting to Roman Catholicism in 1958, her destinations abroad changed in focus from glamorous capitals to rustic missions in remote areas.

As her father's health declined, she struggled to support her family with earnings from piano recitals. When opportunities for performances dwindled, Schuyler followed her father's lead and became a professional journalist. As one of the few African American journalists of the 1960s whose work was syndicated by United Press International (UPI), she reached a wider audience as a writer than she had as a performer. Besides writing over 100 articles for newspapers and magazines, Schuyler published 4 nonfiction books, and she was working on a book of fiction at the time of her death. In 1962 Schuyler obtained a passport in the name of Felipa Monterro y Schuyler with the hope of obscuring her racial identity and gaining broader appeal as a performer.

By the summer of 1966 Schuyler arrived in Vietnam as a journalist and ceased working under the name Monterro. Schuyler's father, a noted conservative who supported the troops and U.S. presence in Vietnam, had retired from

the *Pittsburgh Courier* and was writing for the *Manchester (NH) Union Leader*, for which Philippa also wrote. Besides working as a foreign correspondent, Schuyler performed for the troops and helped evacuate children, nuns, and priests from besieged missions. Her account of the Vietnam War, *Good Men Die* (1969), was published posthumously.

Schuyler had delayed her departure from Vietnam so that she could bring nine homeless Vietnamese orphans from Hue to Da Nang and enroll them in school. At her request, the U.S. Army supplied her with a helicopter, a pilot, and three crewmen. It was believed that Schuyler had been knocked unconscious by the impact of the helicopter's crash, which was due to a malfunction and not enemy fire.

—*Rebecca Tolley-Stokes*

See also Chappelle, Dickey; Emerson, Gloria; Fallaci, Oriana; Higgins, Marguerite; Hull, Peggy, pseud.; Journalists, American Women, during World War I; Luce, Clare Boothe; Tomara, Sonia; Trotta, Liz; Watts, Jean

References and Further Reading

- Schuyler, Philippa. 1969. *Good Men Die*. New York: Twin Circle.
- Talalay, Kathryn. 1992. Philippa Schuyler. Pages 983–997 in *Notable Black American Women*. Vol. 1. Edited by Jessie Carney Smith. New York: Gale.

SCOTLAND: WAR WIDOWS AND REFUGEES IN, 1640S AND 1688–1690

Scottish women victims of warfare during the British civil wars of the 1640s and the Glorious Revolution of 1688–1690. Institutions such as the Scottish parliament and privy council and the institutional structure of the Church of Scotland formulated policies that dealt with women as war widows and refugees.

Scotland was faced with a significant refugee problem in the aftermath of the 1641 Ulster Rebellion. By 1641 there was a large Scottish population in Ulster, numbering 20,000 to 30,000 (Young 2001b, 53). Many migrants or descendants of migrants returned to Scotland seeking humanitarian aid. The privy council estimated that in June 1642 there were around 4,000 refugees in the presbyteries of Ayr and Irvine in southwest Scotland (Hume Brown 1906, 267). Financial aid was to be raised via church parishes and presbyteries for distribution to refugees. Regional church records indicate that women formed a core refugee group. In Elgin in northeast Scotland, for example, the widows of ministers who had been killed in the rebellion, widows of soldiers killed in military action in the Irish troubles, and widows whose husbands had been killed by the Irish rebels formed the majority of cases considered by the Elgin kirk (church) session. Often the women had dependents, and their supplications told stories of murder, mutilation, robbery, and loss of goods and property. Anna Griffith, widow of a minister in Ireland named William Murray, appeared before the kirk session on March 18, 1643, where she explained that her husband had been crucified by the Irish rebels. She received financial aid accordingly (Cramond 1908, 245). Later, on May 29, 1645, Christian Balfour, widow of Peter Sharpe, another minister in Ireland, appeared before the presbytery of Lanark. She informed the presbytery not only that her husband had died in prison but also that she herself had been “spoiled by the cruell [*sic*] enemies” (Robertson 1839, 43).

Within the wider context of the British troubles in the early 1640s, there was a Scottish covenanting military force in Ulster from 1642. In addition to receiving financial support from the English parliament, it was supported by voluntary contributions in Scotland. Women were prominent among those who contributed financially to the upkeep of the Ulster army. Merchant accounts for Edinburgh in 1643 indicate that 12 percent of individual contributions (11 of 94) came from women. Ten of these were

from widows, and one was from a daughter. Helen Gilchrist, a widow, donated £333 6s. 8d. Scots (approximately US\$5,000 in 2006 values), whereas Marion Wilkie, another widow, donated £666 13s. 4d. Scots (approximately US\$10,000) (Hume Brown 1906, 85–86).

Following the first civil war in England in 1646 and the subsequent withdrawal of a Scottish covenanting army from English soil in 1647, the financial package agreed to between the Scottish and English parliaments dealt with injured soldiers and the widows and orphans of covenanting soldiers who had been killed in action in England. This model of financial compensation for widows, orphans, and wounded soldiers was also followed in 1649, when compensation was to be provided for casualties of the military invasions of England, excluding the Royalist invasion of England in the summer of 1648 to defend Charles I (Young 2001a, 109–110).

War widows and refugees were also an important social issue in the Scottish context of the Glorious Revolution. In common with the early 1640s, there was return migration from Ulster with refugees bringing back tales of persecution. The administrative structure for raising and providing humanitarian aid was identical to that implemented in the early 1640s—raising money through the church. The records of the Scottish privy council provide many examples of war widows and their dependents seeking humanitarian aid. On May 5, 1690, for example, the council considered the case of Barbara McDonald. Her husband, William Hamilton, a Belfast seaman, had been killed in action fighting for King William at Carrickfergus. She was in a “very miserable and sterving [*sic*] condition” with no means of support for her children. She fled to Scotland to “seek bread to her cheldrein [*sic*]” (Balfour-Melville 1967, 227). On August 14, 1690, the council considered the case of Henry Carter from Coleraine. Carter had been in Londonderry during the infamous siege. He had survived but had lost a brother, sister, and young child. All his means and property had also been destroyed. He had a wife and

two small children, one of whom was five weeks old, and he was sick and unable to work due to the “long suffering he sustained” in the siege of Londonderry (Balfour-Melville 1967, 385). Thus, he was not able to provide for his wife and family. Women could therefore be victims of warfare within the context of the family unit and not just as widows.

War widows in Scotland between 1688 and 1690 were not exclusively Scottish. On September 5, 1689, the council agreed to provide financial aid to four Dutch women, Closkine Jacobs, Hester Geilmans, Kathrin McLauchlane, and Kathrin Michells. These women had married Scottish soldiers who had probably been serving in the Anglo-Dutch brigade in the Netherlands. Their husbands had been killed in action fighting for the Williamite cause at the battle of Killiecrankie on July 27, 1689, where the Jacobite forces had triumphed.

—John R. Young

See also Brittain, Vera Mary; Peasants’ War

References and Further Reading

- Balfour-Melville, Evan Whyte Melville, ed. 1967. *The Register of the Privy Council of Scotland, 1690*. 3rd series. Vol. 15. Edinburgh: Her Majesty’s Stationery Office.
- Cramond, William, ed. 1908. *The Records of Elgin, 1234–1800*. Vol. 2. Aberdeen: New Spalding Club.
- Hume Brown, Peter, ed. 1906. *The Register of the Privy Council of Scotland, 1638–1643*. 2nd series. Vol. 7. Edinburgh: His Majesty’s Stationery Office.
- Paton, Henry, ed. 1932. *The Register of the Privy Council of Scotland, 1686–1689*. 3rd series. Vol. 13. Edinburgh: His Majesty’s Stationery Office.
- Robertson, John, ed. 1839. *Ecclesiastical Records: Selections from Registers of the Presbytery of Lanark, 1623–1809*. Edinburgh: Abbotsford Club.
- Young, John R. 2001a. The Scottish Parliament and the War for the Three Kingdoms, 1639–1651. *Parliaments, Estates, and Representation* 21:103–123.

- . 2001b. The Scottish Response to the Siege of Londonderry, 1689–1690. Pages 53–74 in *The Sieges of Derry*. Edited by William Kelly. Dublin: Four Courts Press.
- . 2004. Scotland and Ulster in the Seventeenth Century: The Movement of Peoples over the North Channel. Pages 11–22 in *Ulster and Scotland, 1600–2000: History, Language, and Identity*. Edited by William Kelly and John R. Young. Dublin: Four Courts Press.

SECORD (NÉE INGERSOLL),
LAURA (1775–1868)

Canadian heroine during the War of 1812. Laura Ingersoll was born to Thomas Ingersoll and his wife, Elizabeth Dewey, in Great Barrington, Massachusetts, on September 13, 1775. In 1795 the family moved to Upper Canada, where Ingersoll received a land grant and operated a tavern in Queenston, near Niagara Falls. Laura had two stepmothers within a five-year period and numerous siblings. She married Loyalist James Secord in 1794, and the couple had four daughters and one son. During the War of 1812 between the United States and Great Britain, U.S. troops attempted to conquer Upper Canada. U.S. forces seized Fort York (present-day Toronto) and burned the parliament buildings and Government House. The troops then occupied major areas of Upper Canada and were billeted in local houses throughout the Niagara Peninsula.

The Secords provided dinner for several U.S. soldiers one evening. Laura Secord plied the soldiers with liquor. One soldier, Captain Cyrenius Chapin, imbibed too much and boasted about a forthcoming attack by Lieutenant Colonel Charles Boerstler, who was stationed at Fort George. The attack was to be at Captain John De Cew's house at Beaver Dams, which had become a British supply depot. This plan would allow the United States complete control over the Niagara Peninsula. Laura Secord overheard

the plan. After the soldiers left, the Secords decided to inform British Colonel James FitzGibbon at De Cew's house.

James Secord was bedridden, recovering from shoulder and knee wounds suffered during the Battle of Queenston Heights on October 13, 1812, so Laura Secord made the journey. After obtaining a permit to visit her half brother Charles, who was ill with fever, she walked to his house early in the morning of June 22, 1813. She had hoped he would be well enough to complete the journey and alert FitzGibbon, but he was still too ill. Laura Secord continued her journey, this time accompanied by her niece Elizabeth. In order to avoid the enemy, Secord chose to bypass main roads and walked instead through bush and swamp. The oppressive heat was unbearable. Elizabeth gave up after three hours. Laura Secord had already walked thirty-two miles when she stumbled into a camp of Mohawk warriors who were British allies. They took her to De Cew's house, where she explained the U.S. plan to FitzGibbon.

The British laid a trap for the U.S. forces. FitzGibbon, with 50 British soldiers and 400 Native Americans, won the Battle of Beaver Dams on June 24, 1813. The U.S. troops were caught in an ambush. Twenty-two officers and 462 soldiers with 2 field guns and their wagons were captured. This battle decisively ended the U.S. quest for control of the Niagara Peninsula.

Secord received no recognition for her efforts after her adventures; her mission was kept quiet, reputedly because the information would have endangered her life. In September 1860, however, she told her story to His Royal Highness Prince Albert Edward, Prince of Wales, son of Queen Victoria, who was visiting the Niagara Peninsula. Following his return to England, he sent her £100 (approximately US\$10,000 in 2006). This would be the only financial compensation she would ever receive. Laura Secord died on October 17, 1868, and was buried beside her husband at Drummond Hill Cemetery in Niagara Falls. Two monuments have been erected in her memory.

—Annette Richardson

See also Greene, Catharine Littlefield;
Ludington, Sybil; Reed, Esther De Berdt

References and Further Reading

- Bassett, John M. 2004. *Laura Second*. Rev. ed. Markham, Ontario, Canada: Fitzhenry and Whiteside.
- Crook, Connie B. 1993. *Laura's Choice: The Story of Laura Secord*. Winnipeg, Canada: Windflower Communications.
- Currie, Emma A. 1900. *The Story of Laura Secord, and Canadian Reminiscences*. Toronto, Canada: Briggs.
- McKenzie, Ruth. 1971. *Laura Secord: The Legend and the Lady*. Toronto, Canada: McClelland and Stewart.

SEELE, GERTRUD (1917–1945)

German opponent of the Nazi regime. Born in Berlin, Germany, on September 22, 1917, Gertrud Seele was executed on January 12, 1945, for assisting Jewish people during World War II and for making derogatory statements about Adolf Hitler and his Nazi regime. On October 17, 1952, the 4th Criminal Chamber of the Berlin District Court overturned the conviction.

Seele grew up in a working-class family and attended a secondary school for two years. At age eighteen, she entered nursing school and specialized in public health and social welfare service. She gave birth to a daughter, Michaela, on September 11, 1941, and raised her daughter alone.

In response to the growing persecution of the Jews by the Nazi regime, Seele began hiding Jews in her basement. Her brother Paul, a former labor union secretary, and his wife, Erika, also hid Jews and brought them food and drink. Seele and Michaela were evacuated from Berlin to Merke in 1942. While there, Seele, who had a “healthy sense of justice and fair play” (Leber

1994, 83), expressed outrage against the Nazis. According to her mother, Luise, she also helped Jews. Seele returned to Berlin in 1943 but traveled back to Merke in 1944 to retrieve her belongings. While there, she was arrested for protecting Jews, as well as for making “defeatist statements, designed to undermine the fighting morale of the people” (Leber, 1994, 84).

She was tried before the People’s Court in Potsdam, a court designed to judge political crimes. By 1944, though, the “trials [had] lost their last semblance of legitimate legal proceedings . . . [and, the] wording of statutes was systematically misinterpreted” (Jewish Virtual Library 2004). This authoritarian court meted out the death penalty for political infractions, and executions were justified after reviewing evidence that at times consisted of only one or two pages of text.

Defended by Dr. Ernst Falck, Seele was convicted and sentenced to death. Falck requested amnesty for his client, but that motion was denied. When Seele asked to see her daughter one last time, this request was also refused, and she was hanged in the Plötzensee prison.

Seven years after her death, Seele’s mother petitioned the court on behalf of Michaela to reverse the conviction and possibly provide compensation under a new law attempting to rectify injustices performed under Hitler’s dictatorship. Because many records had been lost, investigation was difficult and it is hard to say with certainty what actions Seele did or did not undertake. Nevertheless, the court eventually ruled that it was “quite clear that the decision of the former People’s Court was made on purely political grounds” (Leber 1994, 85). People such as Seele were often “guilty only of exasperated words, hostile opinions, or stray gestures” (Leber 1994, xvii).

—*Kelly Boyer Sagert*

See also Ballestrem-Solf, Countess Lagi;
Harnack-Fish, Mildred; Kirchner, Johanna;
Kuckhoff, Greta; Von Thadden, Elizabeth; Yorck
von Wartenburg, Countess Marion

References and Further Reading

- Leber, Annedore. 1994. *Conscience in Revolt: Sixty-four Stories of Resistance in Germany, 1933–1945*. Boulder, CO: Westview.
- Miniszewski, Ursula, intern for the Division of the Senior Historian, Center for Advanced Holocaust Studies, United States Holocaust Memorial Museum, Washington, DC. 2004. Personal communication.
- “The People’s Court.” Jewish Virtual Library: A Division of the American-Israeli Cooperative Enterprise. <http://www.us-israel.org/jsource/Holocaust/peoplesct.html> (accessed May 14, 2004).\Alt}

SEMMEER, MARCELLE
(1895–CA. 1944)

French heroine during World War I. Following the defeat of the French in the Battle of Charleroi in August 1914, the French were forced to retreat below the Somme River. After the French had crossed the canal at Eclusier, Marcelle Semmeer, then 19 years old, opened the lock despite enemy fire and threw the lock key into the canal. The crossing of the Germans was thus delayed nearly 24 hours. In January 1917 Semmeer was decorated by the French government with the War Cross and the Cross of the Legion of Honor. Until 1912 approximately only 100 women had received the Legion of Honor. This amounted to only 0.25 percent of the recipients (“L’Ordre Nationale de la Légion d’Honneur” 2004).

—Bernard Cook

See also France, World War I, Women and the Home Front

References and Further Reading

- “L’Ordre Nationale de la Légion d’Honneur, 2004.” <http://www.defense.gouv.fr/actualites/dossier/d29/honneur.htm> (accessed August 4, 2004).

SENEŠH, HANNAH
(1921–1944)

Hungarian Jewish partisan who spied for the British in Hungary during World War II and sought to rescue Allied airmen and Jewish people from Nazi occupiers.

In 1939 when anti-Semitism was on the rise in Hungary, Hannah Senesh (also spelled Szenes) left her home and her mother in Budapest to travel to Palestine. Soon after arriving, she began to train as a radio officer and parachutist for the British Special Operations Executive (SOE) (Binney 2002, 315).

In 1938 Senesh became a Zionist when she realized the force of anti-Jewish sentiment in her native country, which paralleled Hitler’s increasing power in Europe (Atkinson 1985, 35). Despite her Hungarian patriotism, she came to believe that Jews needed to find safety and sanctity in Palestine because the world was less and less safe for them elsewhere. Therefore, after her high school graduation, Senesh left Hungary for Palestine (Atkinson 1985, 3).

The British SOE organized teams of native speakers from central European countries. In Palestine Senesh volunteered to train as a radio operator and a parachutist with the intention of returning to Hungary with a unit of volunteers. In Egypt she was trained in sabotage and espionage (Atkinson 1985, 112). With her unit, Senesh was to enable captured and hiding Allied flyers and Jews to escape to safety (Binney 2002, 315).

In 1944 Senesh rendezvoused with five male colleagues in Italy; from there they parachuted into Hungary to join underground resisters. Senesh and her unit members were arrested after they landed. The residents of the Hungarian village where she was hiding gave in to police intimidation and turned Senesh over to the authorities. After her arrest by the Hungarian police, German soldiers discovered her radio and took her to Budapest for interrogation (Atkinson 1985, 142–143).

In custody Senesh withstood particularly severe torture but did not reveal any information

except her name. The police arrested Senesh's mother to question her about her daughter's work, but they soon realized that the mother did not even know that Senesh had been in Hungary. Once this was discovered, her mother's presence was used in an attempt to manipulate Senesh, but she still refused to give her captors information about the radio transmitter or her mission (Atkinson 1985, 143). In October 1944, Senesh was executed at the age of twenty-three (Binney 2002, 316).

—Heather E. Ostman

See also Atkins, Vera H.

References and Further Reading

- Atkinson, Linda. 1985. *In Kindling Flame: The Story of Hannah Senesh, 1921–1944*. New York: Lothrop, Lee, and Shepard Books.
- Binney, Marcus. 2002. *The Women Who Lived for Danger: The Women Agents of SOE in the Second World War*. London: Hodder and Stoughton.

SICILIAN REVOLUTIONS OF 1820 AND 1848, WOMEN AND THE

Role played by women in nineteenth-century revolutions in Sicily. Despite the subordinate role assigned them in Sicilian society, women played a significant role in the upheavals that Sicily experienced in the nineteenth century, and individual women often stood out for their initiative, bravery, and leadership. For the common people of Sicily, the revolutions of 1820 and 1848 were not primarily about the structure of the political regime. Popular involvement in these upheavals was prompted by social concerns. The people of Sicily wanted food, land, and freedom from oppressive taxation. Common Sicilians, male or female, experienced government as tax collector, ally of the landowner, and

brutal police. The violence of poor Sicilian women in 1820 and 1848 manifested their desperation, their anger, and their hope.

Between 1820 and 1821 violence erupted in villages across the island. Disturbances were spearheaded by the poorest segments of the peasant population, and the common demand was an end to taxation. At Grammichele, the town erupted when a tax official tried to impose the hated *macinato* (milling tax) on a poor woman who had come to grind a bit of barley. At Monforte, men and women poured into the square in answer to a church bell's call and forced the prince of Ruffo to abolish the milling tax. During the revolution women figured prominently in the casualties. They were among those killed by the military and police, and they were also among the upper-class victims of popular anger. The anarchic threat of social upheaval unleashed by the revolution so frightened property holders that they were relieved when the Neapolitan monarchy restored its authority.

Revolution erupted on the island again in Palermo on January 12, 1848. The participation of women from the popular strata—the artisans and the poor—was crucial. In the poorer sections of the city women fought alongside men. The broader support and encouragement of women, however, was even more important to the initial victory of the revolution.

Among the women who participated actively in the fighting, few are remembered individually. In Messina, Giuseppina and Paolina Vadalà, whose clothing set them apart as members of the bourgeoisie, fought beside their brothers in the streets. The most celebrated female combatant was Rosa Donato (b. 1808). The forty-year-old Donato came from the poorest segment of Messinan society. She played a singularly heroic role in the first two days of street fighting, and she commanded the citizen artillery during the eight-month bombardment of the city by the Bourbon garrison ensconced in Messina's St. Salvatore fortress. When Messina fell in September, Donato and a male comrade named Lanzetti made their way to Palermo. There the

revolutionary government conferred honors on Lanzetti and rewarded him with the commission and pay of a captain of the artillery. Because Rosa Donato was a woman, however, her only reward was work assisting the artillery. After the fall of Palermo in May 1849, she returned to Messina, where she was arrested, placed in solitary confinement, tortured, and then thrown on the street. She died in absolute poverty in 1867.

There is disagreement concerning the real name and background of the most notorious of the female Sicilian revolutionaries. She has been called Maria, Teresa, Maria Teresa, and even Anna but is known as *Testa di Lana* (Wool Head). She has been variously described as a goatherd, a seller of prickly pears, and a milk seller. It is probable that she was all these things. Undoubtedly, she was from the poorest strata in the countryside around Palermo, but she had contacts in town as well. At the beginning of the revolution she already headed an armed band of thirty or forty members. Among them were three of her sons, Francesco, Antonio, and Domenico. Two other sons had been killed by the Bourbon police, and that was the source of her consuming hatred for the Bourbon police administration.

From the beginning of the revolution, Testa di Lana and her band fought the Bourbons. Her service to the cause of revolutionary Sicily initially won the praise of the government and its leader, Ruggiero Settimo. The attitude of the revolutionary government and the proponents of order, however, quickly changed. Testa di Lana's force captured a large stock of weapons during the fighting. On February 21 Testa di Lana returned to the convent of St. Anna and led 4,000 enraged people against the facility, where captured Bourbon police officers were being held. The police, whom they seized, were subjected to summary trials. Those judged to be more or less humane were acquitted by acclamation, but those condemned by the crowd were summarily shot.

To the provisional government and the forces of social order, Testa di Lana became a symbol

of anarchy and criminality. Her band not only threatened order, it also represented the rage of the common people and was a constant reminder that the disturbances might transform into a truly social revolution. Once the Bourbon enemy had been vanquished, Testa di Lana became a threat to order. There was a bloody clash on April 28 between her forces and a detachment of the Civil Guard, which had been set up on January 28 to protect property and order. Testa di Lana was captured and taken to the fortress of Castellamare. Her release came only when the Bourbon government had regained control of the island; thereafter she and her family were kept under scrutiny.

Although women from the popular classes actually fought during the Sicilian revolution of 1848, groups of noble and bourgeois women took advantage of the revolution to enter the public political sphere. La Legione delle Pie Sorelle (the Legion of Pious Sisters) was created from the desire of the Princess di Scordia to offer real and public support for the revolution. With the assistance of bourgeois women, she and the Duchess of Monteleone e Gualtieri organized hospital care for the wounded. In the middle of February 1848 they established a committee to assist needy women. They saw their chosen activities as compatible with the nurturing role of women, but they were also anxious to demonstrate their ability to organize and carry out beneficial public activities.

Had the Sicilian revolutions of 1820 and 1848 succeeded, it is improbable that the general social aims of women from the poorer strata, which cannot be differentiated from those of poorer males, would have succeeded. The landowning minority, who led both revolutions, worked to thwart social revolution, to restore order, and to maintain property ownership. In the words of Francesco Crispi, they "feared more the victory of the people than that of the Bourbon troops" (Romeo 1973, 334).

—Bernard Cook

See also France, Revolution of 1848

References and Further Reading

- Cook, Bernard. 1994. Sicilian Women and Revolution in the First Half of the Nineteenth Century. Pages 82–91 in *Selected Papers of the Consortium on Revolutionary Europe 1994*. Tallahassee: Florida State University.
- Mack Smith, Dennis. 1988. *Modern Sicily after 1713*. New York: Dorset.
- Romeo, Rosario. 1973. *Il Risorgimento in Sicilia* [The Risorgimento in Sicily]. Rome and Bari: Laterza.

selfconscious candor. The result is both one woman's story and a reflection on the larger experience of war for men and women.

—Carol Acton

See also Vietnam, U.S. Women Soldiers in

References and Further Reading

- Smith, Winnie. 1994. *American Daughter Gone to War: On the Front Lines with an Army Nurse in Vietnam*. New York: Pocket Books.

SMITH, WINNIE (1944–)

Vietnam War nurse and author. Winnie Smith spent her youth in North Carolina and New Jersey. She attended nursing school in New York and joined the army in 1963. In 1966, she was sent to Vietnam for a year's duty.

Winnie Smith's account of her 1966–1967 tour of duty as a nurse during the Vietnam War is an important contribution to American women's war memoirs. Like other nurses' writing from this war, Smith's *American Daughter Gone to War* bears witness to the physical and psychological injuries borne by combatants and nurses and by Vietnamese civilians as well. The book also documents the collapse of her own prewar worldview and the attendant problems of reintegration on her return home.

In the tradition of World War I nursing accounts and Lynda Van Devanter's better-known Vietnam memoir, *Home before Morning*, Smith's book claims the legitimacy of the woman's war experience, challenging the authority of a male-centered war story while at the same time showing the extent to which her own war experience is intimately related to the men she nurses. *American Daughter Gone to War* is not overtly political; the interrogation of the war in Vietnam is primarily revealed through her relationships with her patients and with combatants. She details her own responses with a refreshingly un-

SMYRNA TRAGEDY,
CONTINUING ORDEAL FOR
WOMEN SURVIVORS OF THE

Armenian victims of Turkish oppression in Smyrna. Unlike Armenians in the rest of the Ottoman Empire, few Smyrna (Izmir) Armenians were deported or killed during the Armenian Holocaust from 1914 to 1918. This tragedy enveloped the city and its surroundings following World War I when the Kemalist forces fighting the Greeks entered Smyrna on September 9, 1922. The Greek and Armenian quarters were set on fire, and the population was driven out and subjected to a prolonged agony on the quayside squeezed between the sea and the burning city.

The lifelong memory of this cataclysmic event has affected the survivors and the generations born to them. Women survivors of the Smyrna tragedy, tape-recorded at the University of California, Los Angeles, spoke of their ordeal, the burning city, and the mass of refugees squeezed against the sea thick with corpses and parts of mutilated bodies while Allied warships stood as soulless spectators.

Atrocities by the Kemalist forces provided an opening for local Turks to join in looting and killing. Turks forced their way into Armenian and Greek homes, burning houses and a church

with hundreds of refugees inside. As a child, Malviné Khanjian lost her father and was separated from her mother and siblings during the assault on the Christians of Izmir. She speaks of a feeling of betrayal by Turkish acquaintances: “My father’s Turkish partner came to our house and drove us out, confiscating all our money and belongings. We were left in abject poverty, my mother with four orphans” (Armenian Oral History Collection, Malviné Khanjian [née Papazian], born in Aksar in 1912 and interviewed on November 23, 1982).

There was also a sense of betrayal by the Allied powers. Survivors remember how sailors turned on a water hose to chase off those who dared to swim the long distance toward their ship. The beautiful Smyrna seashore had turned into a slaughterhouse. Through it all, the Europeans walked indifferently, filming the gory scenes. Arsenouhi Vrtanessian remembers the warships turning their spotlights on while the Turks were raiding, raping, killing, and abducting pretty young girls. “What the Young Turks did to us in two years, Kemal did in 15 days,” Malviné declares. “A massacre like that of Izmir has never happened anywhere.” That conviction governed her mind and inspired her life as a survivor of “the greatest tragedy on earth.”

Some survivors have dealt with their ordeal by speaking out, telling and retelling their stories, trying to capture every detail that could help them explain the inexplicable, understand the incomprehensible. Others’ stories, although revealing from a psychological point of view, are incoherent, unclear, and sometimes contradictory. But testimonies are human documents, and the troubled interaction between past and present manifests a gravity that surpasses concern with accuracy. Occasional lapses and improbabilities are only natural. The paralysis of language is itself evidence of the ghastly ordeal. The women survivors and witnesses break into tears. They have not learned to articulate their ordeal. The mere utterance of a broken word or two draws back the curtain on a scene of utter

suffering: a Turk raping a young woman and then cutting her breasts off and leaving her to bleed to death.

Some have tried to suppress the memory by not speaking about it. Arsenouhi Vrtanessian says, “My daughter asks me to tell her my story, but I don’t want to remember my sorrows” (Armenian Oral History Collection, Arsenouhi Vrtanessian [née Martikian], born in Izmir in 1902 and interviewed by Tamar Der-Megerdichian on February 23, 1987). Yet the sorrows are there; the memory is there, deep in the layers of the mind. Arsenouhi is afraid of sharing her memories with her offspring lest she injure their innocent souls. She is afraid of those memories’ painful surging to the surface, as she “reconstructs an episode that continues to haunt” her.

These survivors’ stories can only enrich an understanding of the Armenian genocide, the childhood memories of places that ceased to exist with the blow of the holocaust, and the traditional cultural traits that were buried with 1.5 million people and forgotten in the New World. They provide a human dimension or a humanistic insight for the Smyrna tragedy, but more important, they show the lasting impact of such catastrophes on women survivors and the generations they raise.

—Rubina Perroomian

See also Armenian Holocaust

References and Further Reading

- Armenian Oral History Collection, University of California, Los Angeles (UCLA). There are more than 800 interviews of survivors of the Armenian genocide in the UCLA collection. Out of these interviews, some 15 were with survivors of the Kemalist conquest and the sacking of Smyrna. This article is based on recorded interviews totaling about 48 hours.
- Dadrian, Vahakn N. 1995. *The History of the Armenian Genocide*. Oxford: Berghahn.
- Dobkin, Marjorie Housepian. 1988 (1966). *Smyrna, 1922: The Destruction of a City*. Kent, OH: Kent State University.

SNELL, HANNAH
(1723–1792)

British woman who disguised herself as a man to become a marine. From an unremarkable background, Hannah Snell became a romanticized figure in ballads and stories for being disguised as a male marine using her brother-in-law's name, James Grey. Following her adventures and their subsequent popularity, Snell died at age 69 in the Bedlam Hospital for the mentally ill.

Snell's life is documented in her biography, *The Female Soldier: or The Surprising Life and Adventures of Hannah Snell*, published in 1750 with her permission by Robert Walker. The biography has been the source of subsequent accounts, but their veracity was questioned in the twentieth century by historians who suggested that liberties were taken with the original biography, resulting in some embellishment of the events in Snell's life (Stephens 1997, 57).

According to most accounts, Snell's history as a marine began after her husband, a Dutch sailor, deserted her when she was pregnant. Her baby died soon after birth, and Snell decided to search for her wayward husband at sea. After taking her brother-in-law's clothing and his name, Snell enlisted in the British military just as Scotland was coming under siege from Charles Edward Stuart ("the Pretender," also known as Bonnie Prince Charlie) in 1745 (Forty and Forty 1997, 96). At sea she withstood severe physical conditions, conflicts with superiors, and public punishments—all without revealing her gender.

Snell deserted, however, when she became afraid that her secret might be revealed. She then joined Frazer's Regiment of Marines. En route to India the fleet was hit by a hurricane off the coast of Gibraltar, and Snell's boat was damaged; after repairs were made, its crew joined a siege on Pondicherry. There Snell is said to have received multiple wounds (Forty and Forty 1997, 97). Despite being hospitalized for several months, she extracted the musket balls herself and was able to maintain her disguise.

After recovering, Snell discovered that her husband had died, and she decided to end her travels. She announced her true gender and, after returning to England, began to perform an account of her adventures on stage. Although she maintained a successful public house and married again twice, Snell began to show signs of mental decline and was committed to an asylum for the insane (Forty and Forty 1997, 99–100).

—Heather E. Ostman

See also Great Britain, Women in Service in the Seventeenth, Eighteenth, and Early Nineteenth Centuries; Talbot, Mary Anne

References and Further Reading

- Forty, George, and Anne Forty. 1997. *Women War Heroines*. London: Arms and Armour Press.
- Stephens, Matthew. 1997. *Hannah Snell: The Secret Life of a Female Marine, 1723–1792*. London: Ship Street Press.

SOPHIE, DUCHESS VON
HOHENBERG (1868–1914)

Wife of Archduke Franz Ferdinand, murdered with him at Sarajevo on June 28, 1914. The murder of the archduke and Sophie served as the spark that ignited World War I.

Sophie Maria Josephine Albina Chotek, Countess von Chotkova und Wognin, was the daughter of a Bohemian member of the lesser nobility, Count Bohuslaw Chotek von Chotkova und Wognin, and his wife, Countess Wilhelmine Kinsky von Wchinitz und Tettau. When Emperor Franz Josef of Austria-Hungary discovered that his nephew and heir to the throne, Archduke Franz Ferdinand, was enamored of Sophie, he forbade the marriage. The heir was required to marry a member of the house of Hapsburg or one of the royal families of Europe. Franz Ferdinand remained adamant, and appeals on his behalf were made by Kaiser Wilhelm II, Czar

Nicholas II, and Pope Leo XIII. Franz Josef relented in 1899 with the stipulation that Sophie would not share Franz Ferdinand's title and that the children of Franz Ferdinand and Sophie would be excluded from secession. The royal family boycotted the 1900 wedding, and Sophie was subjected to discrimination at court. In 1905 the emperor bestowed on Sophie the title Duchess, and in 1909 her title was changed to Duchess, Highness ad Personum, so that she could be addressed as "highness."

Sophie traveled with her husband to Sarajevo in June 1914 to emphasize Austrian resolve in the province of Bosnia-Herzegovina, which, to the dismay of Serbian nationalists, had been annexed by Austria in 1908. On the route from the railway station to a review at the city hall, terrorists threw a bomb at the open touring car in which Franz Ferdinand and Sophie were riding. The bomb exploded under the second car of the entourage, seriously wounding two passengers and nearly a dozen bystanders. After reviewing troops at the city hall the archduke insisted on visiting members of his party wounded in the morning attack. It was suggested that Sophie remain at the city hall rather than expose herself to danger. She insisted, however, on remaining with her husband.

General Oskar Potiorek, the Austrian governor of Bosnia-Herzegovina, decided that the car should avoid the city center but apparently neglected to tell the driver. When the driver made a wrong turn, he was told to stop and back up. He slowly passed within feet of one of the Serbian terrorists involved in the morning attack. Gavrilo Princip drew his revolver and shot the couple. They were rushed back to the governor's residence, where they died.

Sticklers for protocol objected to Sophie's casket being placed next to that of Ferdinand in the chapel. Franz Josef, however, intervened and Sophie's casket was placed beside that of her husband, though lower and with less decoration. The two could not be buried together in the Hapsburg crypt, so they were interred in the chapel of Franz Ferdinand's castle, Artstetten.

—Bernard Cook

See also Alexandra, Czarina of Russia; Washington, Martha Dandridge Custis

References and Further Reading

- Brook-Shepherd, Gordon. 1984. *Archduke of Sarajevo: The Romance and Tragedy of Franz Ferdinand of Austria*. Boston: Little, Brown.
- Cassels, Lavender. 1984. *The Archduke and the Assassin: Sarajevo, June 28th, 1914*. London: Frederick Muller.

SOSNOWSKA-KARPIK, IRENA (1922–1990)

Polish airwoman on the eastern front. Irena Sosnowska-Karpik served with the Polish armed forces formed in the USSR by the Union of Polish Patriots, a predecessor of the postwar Polish communist government, and became an outstanding flying instructor in Poland after World War II.

Sosnowska-Karpik completed a flying course before the war and qualified as a glider pilot, but she had an ambition to fly combat aircraft. Responding to an appeal made by the Union of Polish Patriots, she volunteered for service with the Polish armed forces in the USSR, which she joined on November 10, 1944, with the rank of second lieutenant.

At that time, a group of 717 airwomen, including 80 officers, served in the military aviation of the Polish armed forces on the eastern front. Those who served in Polish military aviation on the eastern front were mainly employed in air force communications, administration, education, staff work, and medical services, including flying medical aircraft. Altogether, almost 3,000 women wore Polish air force uniforms and served in Polish combat aviation on many fronts of World War II (Polki na wojnie 1985, 12).

Serving in the Polish air and air defense forces as a pilot-instructor after the war, Colonel Sosnowska-Karpik was deputy wing commander

and pilot-instructor of the Officer Flying School in Döblin, Poland. She trained almost 1,000 new pilots. When she transferred to the reserves, she had approximately 4,300 flying hours to her credit (Cottam 2003, 408–409), accumulated in both fixed-wing aircraft and helicopters. Decorated with the Knight's Cross of the Order of the Rebirth of Poland, Sosnowska-Karpik was also awarded the Gold and Silver Crosses of Merit as well as various air force medals and badges.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Polish Auxiliary Air Force

References and Further Reading

- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 1986. Veterans of Polish Women's Combat Battalion Hold a Reunion. *Minerva: Quarterly Report on Women in the Military* 4, no. 6 (Winter):6.
- . 2003. Sosnowska-Karpik, Irena. Pages 408–409 in *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*. Edited by Reina Pennington. Vol. 2. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Polki na wojnie [Polish Women in the War]. 1985. *Skrzydłata Polska* 10 (October 3):12.

SOULIÈ, GENEVIÈVE
(B. 1919)

Member of the French resistance during World War II. Geneviève Souliè ran the Paris section of the Burgundian Resistance network created and directed by Georges Broussine. The purpose of this network was to repatriate Allied airmen downed by the Germans in occupied territory. More than 300 airmen were returned to their bases in England.

Broussine recruited Souliè, a twenty-one-year-old young woman with blond hair in pig-tails whose mother was English. The fact that she was fluent in English was a great asset to the network. She acquired lodging for Allied airmen in Burgundy and kept constant watch on the

men under her care, making certain that that they were safe. She made sure that the men kept quiet and that neighbors did not know downed servicemen were lodging in houses next door. She also attempted to make their confinement comfortable until they could be repatriated. She visited with them and brought them cigarettes and books. After a rendezvous had been arranged, she would lead the airmen to their rescuers. She helped 136 servicemen escape France and return safely to England. Eighty-four of them were Americans.

—Leigh Whaley

See also Atkins, Vera H.; France, Resistance during World War II, Women and

References and Further Reading

- Broussine, Georges. 2000. *L'Évade de la France libre: Le Réseau Bourgogne* [The Free French Escapee: The Burgundy Network]. Paris: Tallandier.

SOVIET UNION, 46TH TAMAN
GUARDS BOMBER AVIATION
REGIMENT (MAY 1942–MAY
1945)

One of three women's air wings formed by Marina Raskova in October 1941 when male Soviet aircrews were unavailable and aircraft were outdated. Founded in Engels, near Stalingrad, the regiment was initially designated 588th Bomber Aviation Regiment. Its crews flew U-2 biplanes (redesignated Po-2 in 1944), former trainers used as short-range night bombers. The unit was the only women's aviation regiment created by Raskova to remain all-female throughout the war. Initially consisting of two squadrons, the regiment would have two additional squadrons by mid-1943, of which the last functioned as a training squadron under the command of Marina Chechneva.

SOVIET UNION, 125TH M. M. RASKOVA BORISOV GUARDS REGIMENT

Personnel of this wing were credited with having flown in excess of 24,000 combat missions on the Southern, Trans-Caucasus, North Caucasus, 4th Ukrainian, and 2nd Belorussian fronts (Cottam 1997, 114). The unit went into action in Ukraine and subsequently operated in the foothills of the Caucasus, over the Kuban area of the North Caucasus, the Crimea, Belarus, and Poland, and finally reached Berlin. Initially subordinated to the 218th Bomber Aviation Division of the 4th Air Army in the Crimea (4th Ukrainian front), the regiment was temporarily attached to the 2nd Stalingrad Guards Bomber Aviation Division of the 8th Air Army. Returned to the 4th Air Army on the 2nd Belorussian front, it was included in the 325th Bomber Aviation Division.

In addition to bombing sorties delivered at the rate of five to eighteen per night, the regiment flew liaison, reconnaissance, and supply missions in support of Soviet ground troops. It was awarded the elite status of Guards on February 8, 1943, and the honorific "Taman" on October 9 for facilitating the German defeat on the Taman Peninsula. This unit was also awarded the Order of Suvorov III Class and the Order of the Red Banner. The unit was disbanded October 15, 1945.

The unveiling of a monument dedicated to its personnel, twenty-three of whom had, by that time, acquired the prestigious title of Hero of the Soviet Union, took place on the Taman Peninsula in October 1967. (In addition, the equivalent Hero of the Russian Federation was belatedly presented to former squadron navigator Tat'iana Nikolaevna Sumarokova in 1995.)

The regiment's successes were due in part to the consistency of leadership provided by its sole commanding officer, Evdokiia Bershanskaia, a competent civil aviation pilot, and her good relationship with Evdokiia Rachkevich, the regimental commissar (deputy commander for political affairs) and one of the very few women graduates of the V. I. Lenin Military Political Academy. In addition, Bershanskaia was ably assisted by her deputy, Serafima Amosova, a former airline pilot; Irina Rakobol'skaia, her chief

of staff; and three successive chief navigators: Sofia Burzaeva, Evgeniia Rudneva, and Larissa Rozanova.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Soviet Union, 125th M. M. Raskova Borisov Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment

References and Further Reading

- Cottam, Kazimiera J., ed. and trans. 1997. *Women in Air War: The Eastern Front in World War II*. Russian edition edited by Militsa A. Kazarinova et al. Nepean, Ontario, Canada: New Military Publishing. (The Russian edition was published in 1971 under the title *V nebe frontovom.*)
- . 2003. 46th Taman Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment. Pages 513–515 in *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*. Edited by Reina Pennington. Vol. 2. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Noggle, Anne. 1994. *A Dance with Death*. College Station: Texas A&M.
- Pennington, Reina. 2001. *Wings, Women and War*. Lawrence: University Press of Kansas.

SOVIET UNION, 125TH M. M.
RASKOVA BORISOV GUARDS
BOMBER AVIATION REGIMENT
(JANUARY 1943–MAY 1945)

One of three women's air wings formed by Marina Raskova in October 1941 when male Soviet aircrews were unavailable and aircraft were outdated. Commanded by Raskova herself, the regiment was formed in Engels near Stalingrad and was initially designated the 587th Bomber Aviation Regiment. After Raskova's tragic crash during a heavy snowstorm on January 4, 1943, the unit acquired a new commanding officer, Major Valentin Markov, whose male navigator, Captain Nikolai Nikitin, was to be replaced by a woman, Valentina Kravchenko. There were only two Pe-2 dive bomber squadrons, initially commanded by Nadezhda Fedutenko and Evgeniia Timofeeva, former civil aviation pilots. Each

aircrew consisted of a pilot, a navigator-bombardier, and a radio operator-gunner. Because the Su-2 aircraft initially assigned to this unit carried a crew of two and there was no time to train female tail gunners before departing for the front, men often served as rear gunners. A replacement squadron acquired in the spring of 1944 consisted entirely of women. Men, however, partially comprised the regiment's technical personnel throughout its existence.

The regiment went into action near Stalin-grad and ended its campaign near the Baltic Sea. It operated over the North Caucasus, the Orel-Briansk sector, Smolensk, Belorussia, the Baltic littoral, and East Prussia. It carried out a total of 1,134 mission sorties on the Southern, Don, Western, 3rd Belorussian, and 1st Baltic fronts (Cottam 1997, 16). In the North Caucasus, the regiment was subordinated to 4th Air Army; on the 3rd Belorussian front to 5th Guards Air Corps of 16th Air Army; and on the 1st Baltic front to 4th Guards Bomber Aviation Division, 1st Guards Air Corps of 3rd Air Army. The regiment acquired the honorific "M. M. Raskova" on May 4, 1943, for successful operations in the North Caucasus and was assigned the new designation, 125th, on September 23, 1943. On July 10, 1944, the unit was granted the honorific "Borisovsky" for its role in the liberation of Borisov, Belarus. It was awarded the Orders of Kutuzov and Suvorov III Class at the level appropriate to aviation regiments. On August 18, 1945, three pilots and two navigators of the regiment became Heroes of the Soviet Union.

Representative participants who were not awarded the Hero of the Soviet Union honor were:

Galina Brok-Beltsova (b. 1925), Guards lieutenant and navigator. With pilot Antonina Bondareva-Spitsyna, Brok-Beltsova joined the regiment with the replacement squadron in the spring of 1944 and received her baptism of fire on June 23, 1944, during the beginning of the Belorussian operation. She flew thirty-six combat missions during the war.

Antonina Khokhlova-Dubkova (b. 1919), Guards senior lieutenant and radio operator-gunner. Khokhlova-Dubkova was the regiment's sole female gunner until the arrival of the all-female squadron in the spring of 1944. In an interview, she described her two machine guns (out of a total of five aboard her aircraft), one of which required her to manipulate 60 kilograms to rearm it.

Elena Kulkova-Maliutina (b. 1917), Guards lieutenant and pilot. She joined the regiment with the replacement squadron in the spring of 1944. On July 24, 1944, although seriously wounded in the abdomen over Lithuania and repeatedly revived by navigator Elena Iushina, Kulkova-Maliutina managed to land safely; two months later she was back in action. A participant in the Victory Parade, she subsequently flew a Tu-2 in a men's aviation regiment until her retirement in 1949.

Marta Meriuts (b. 1909), Guards lieutenant colonel and chief of communications. She was assigned to Raskova's Air Group No. 122 after recovering from a serious head wound and the loss of vision in one eye. In an interview, Meriuts stated that at a postwar Kremlin reception the front commander to whom her regiment was subordinated was unaware that its aircrews consisted of women.

Natalia Smirnova (b. 1924), Guards sergeant and radio operator-gunner. She was a member of the replacement squadron that arrived in the spring of 1944. In an interview, Smirnova told how on one mission the gunner had to stand facing the tail of the aircraft, her head emerging from the hatchway. Once, over Libava, an enemy shell blew open the lower hatch cover, and she was thrown upward out of the aircraft but managed to get back inside.

The unit was disbanded February 28, 1947.

—*Kazimiera J. Cottam*

See also Soviet Union, 46th Taman Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment

References and Further Reading

- Cottam, Kazimiera J., ed. and trans. 1997. *Women in Air War: The Eastern Front in World War II*. Russian edition edited by Militsa A. Kazarinova et al. Nepean, Ontario, Canada: New Military Publishing. (The Russian edition was published in 1971 under the title *V nebe frontovom.*)
- . 2003. 125th Borisovsky Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment. Pages 517–520 in *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*. Edited by Reina Pennington. Vol. 2. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Pennington, Reina. 2001. *Wings, Women and War*. Lawrence: University Press of Kansas.

SOVIET UNION, ORDER OF GLORY,
I CLASS, SOVIET WOMEN
RECIPIENTS (1943–1948)

Soviet award for “the bravest of the brave.” The Order of Glory (III, II, and I Class), intended for Soviet privates, noncommissioned officers, and junior lieutenants of aviation, was created on November 8, 1943. The recipients of the Order of Glory, I Class, numbering about 2,500, received the 3 levels of the order on 3 separate occasions; 4 of them were women.

Sergeant Matriona (Motia) Semenovna Necheporchukova-Nozdracheva (b. 1924) was a medical noncommissioned officer in the 100th Guards Infantry Regiment of the 35th Guards Division, which reached Berlin on May 3, 1945. She distinguished herself dispensing first aid under heavy enemy fire, repelling raids, and defending the wounded entrusted to her. She was awarded her third Order of Glory on May 24, 1945, for bravery demonstrated during the breakthrough of enemy defenses on the west bank of the Oder River and the fierce fighting in Berlin.

Nina Pavlovna Petrova (1893–1945), a senior noncommissioned officer, graduated from snipers’ school and participated in the Soviet-Finnish war. During World War II, Petrova, the

oldest sniper in the army, had the highest kill record on the entire Leningrad front; she had 100 personal kills and trained 513 new snipers (Cottam 1998, 402). Petrova advanced with the 1st Battalion, 284th Infantry Regiment, 86th Tartu Division, from her native Leningrad through the Baltic lands, East Prussia, and Poland to Schwerin, Germany, where she was killed on May 1, 1945. She was posthumously awarded the Order of Glory, I Class, on June 29, 1945.

Sergeant Danute Jurgievna Staniliéne-Markauskene (b. 1922) served as commander of a machine-gun crew in Company No. 3, 167th Infantry Regiment, 16th Lithuanian Division. She imitated the technique of Anka, a machine gunner in the Russian Civil War, which demanded exceptional self-control. Staniliéne-Markauskene would wait for the enemy to approach closely and only then open fire. She was granted the Order of Glory, I Class, on March 24, 1945, the first Soviet woman soldier so honored, for her role in the fighting for the Klaipeda-Tilsit Highway.

Nadezhda (Nadia) Aleksandrovna Zhurkina-Kiek (b. 1920), a senior noncommissioned officer, was a radio operator–gunner in the Soviet air force. She served in the 99th Independent Reconnaissance Aviation Regiment and was the only woman air gunner in the entire 15th Air Army. Zhurkina-Kiek flew eighty-seven missions, during which she displayed an exceptional ability to spot enemy aircraft and to chase them away or shoot them down. She was awarded the Order of Glory, I Class, on February 23, 1948, for outstanding performance in 1944 over Latvia, at which time she flew ten missions behind enemy lines and shot down a decorated German ace (Cottam 1998, 409).

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Russia, Women Recipients of the Order of St. George; Soviet Union, Order of the Red Banner, Women Recipients; Soviet Union/Russian Federation, Women Heroes of the

References and Further Reading

- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 1998. *Women in War and Resistance*. Nepean, Ontario, Canada: New Military Publishing.
- . 2003. Order of Glory, I Class, Women Recipients. Pages 324–325 in *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*. Edited by Reina Pennington. Vol. 1. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Mikora, V. 1976. Zhenshchiny–Kavalery Ordena Slavy [Women Recipients of the Order of Glory]. *Voenna-istoricheskii zhurnal* 3:55–56.

SOVIET UNION, ORDER OF
THE RED BANNER, WOMEN
RECIPIENTS (1918–1928)

Award initially given for bravery during the Russian Civil War (1918–1921). Instituted on September 16, 1918, this award was originally intended for the citizens of the Russian Soviet Federated Socialist Republic, with several other Soviet republics adopting their own Red Banners. After the creation of the USSR, a single Order of the Red Banner was announced by the executive committee of the new republic on August 1, 1924. There is no agreement among scholars as to how many Soviet women received the Red Banner for their participation in the civil war, with cited numbers ranging from fifty-three to sixty-three. Recent archival research indicates higher totals. Military medical and political personnel (commissars) predominated within the female component. The order was granted to many additional women during World War II (Cottam 2003, 327). Representative recipients include:

Raisa Moiseevna Azarkh (1897–1971), a senior political-medical officer. Her appointments from mid-1918 to mid-1920 included military commissar of the 1st Special Viatka Division, chief of the Main Military Medical Administra-

tion of the Ukraine, chief of the Medical Service of the 5th Army, and chief of the Main Medical Administration of the Far Eastern Republic. She was awarded the Red Banner on February 2, 1928. During the Spanish Civil War she worked with Canadian medical doctor Norman Bethune.

Aleksandra Aleksandrovna (Permiakova) Ianysheva (1894–1983), who served in the Red Guard and the Red Army during the Russian Civil War. One of the outstanding women Bolsheviks, she held the following key posts during the war: chief of the Political Section of the Red Guard Headquarters; chief of the Propaganda Section of the Political Administration of the Red Army; and chief of the Political Section of the 15th Inzenskaia Infantry Division, renamed the Sivashskaia following the division's crossing of the Sivash Gulf in the Crimea. On February 2, 1928, Ianysheva became one of the first recipients in her division of the Order of the Red Banner, which she received for her part in the legendary attack on enemy positions launched after the crossing.

Rozaliia Samoilovna (Zalkind) Samoilova-Zemliachka (1876–1947), dubbed Demon and Osipov. She was senior military commissar of the Red Army during the civil war and served as Soviet deputy premier during World War II. A dedicated revolutionary, an Old Bolshevik, and Lenin's close associate, Zemliachka held crucial military appointments during the civil war, including that of chief of the Political Section of the 8th Army and of the 13th Army. She was awarded the Red Banner on January 23, 1921, for improving the combat effectiveness of the Red Army and facilitating its final victory.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Russian, Women Recipients of the Order of St. George; Soviet Union, Order of Glory, I Class, Soviet Women Recipients; Soviet Union/Russian Federation, Women Heroes of the

References and Further Reading

- Baturina, K. S., et al., eds. 1964. *Pravda stavshaia legendoi* [Truth Became a Legend]. Moscow: Voenizdat.
- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 2003. Order of the Red Banner, Women Recipients, Civil War. Pages 326–328 in *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*. Edited by Reina Pennington. Vol. 1. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Johnson, Richard. 1980. The Role of Women in the Russian Civil War (1917–1921). *Conflict* 2(2):201–217.

SOVIET UNION, WOMEN AND
THE HOME FRONT DURING
WORLD WAR II

The impact of World War II on the women of the Soviet Union. During World War II, Soviet women were unique among the women of the great powers in their large-scale participation as fighters in the armed forces. They also played a proportionately greater economic role than the women of the other major belligerents.

Germany's invasion of the Soviet Union on June 22, 1941, led to the greatest land conflict in the history of warfare. Beginning in 1941 over half of Germany's armored units fought only on the eastern front. At the end of the war three-quarters of the forces left in Germany's 37 armored divisions were fighting on the eastern front. Hitler had asserted, "You only have to kick in the door and the whole rotten structure will come crashing down." He was mistaken. Although the Germans were welcomed in the Baltic states, newly occupied by the Soviet Union, and in parts of the Ukraine, the vast majority of Soviet citizens rallied to the defense of their homeland in its struggle for survival. Women were an essential part of the Soviet war effort and victory. Between 800,000 and 1 million women served in the Soviet armed forces (Cottam 1980, 345). Others participated as par-

tisans in the resistance. More, however, did essential war work on farms and in factories and in preparing defenses in threatened cities. By the end of the war four out of five workers on collective farms were women, and the share of women in public employment rose from two-fifths before the war to nearly three-fifths by 1944 (Harrison 2002).

The suffering of all Russians was intense, but Russian civilians were allotted fewer rations than soldiers. When rationing was instituted in July, workers were allocated 800 grams (1.76 pounds) of bread a day and 2,200 grams (4.85 pounds) of meat a month, supplemented by cereals, sugar, and fat. The ration for older women and children amounted to only 400 grams (14.11 ounces) of bread a day; by the end of 1943 this had been decreased to 300 grams (10.58 ounces). People were reduced to eating dogs and cats. Food crimes—the theft of food and the theft and forgery of ration cards—were widespread. Incidents of cannibalism were even reported. All of these crimes were harshly punished, frequently by summary execution.

In Leningrad, which was besieged by the Germans for 900 days from early September 1941 until January 27, 1944, the rations were much smaller, and the bread that was distributed contained sawdust to give it greater weight. On September 2, 1941, the bread ration for the inhabitants of the city was decreased to 600 grams (1.32 pounds). On September 8, 1941, the Germans bombed the 4-acre Badayev warehouse complex where much of the city's food supply was stored. On September 12 the bread ration was decreased to 500 grams (1.10 pounds); on November 20 it was cut to 250 grams (8.82 ounces) for workers and 125 grams (4.41 ounces), or 460 calories, for civilians. The inhabitants were without fuel, running water, and electricity. During the siege of Leningrad, 1 million of the city's 3 million inhabitants died from starvation and cold, and several hundred thousand were killed by bombing and shelling (Museum of Tolerance 2005).

It is estimated that 7 million Russian combatants, male and female, died during the war. The toll on civilians was at least twice that. Among the millions of civilians who died, women constituted at least half, if not more, of the casualties. In parts of the Soviet Union occupied by the Nazis, Jewish and Roma females and males, adults and children alike, were rounded up and systematically exterminated by mobile killing squads, or *Einsatzgruppen*.

Individual women distinguished themselves in combat. Among the women who contributed to the cultural life of the Soviet Union during the war, Anna Andreevna Gorenko Akhmatova (1889–1966), the great Russian poet, stands out. She expressed the patriotic feelings of the Russian people and their moral outrage at the ravaging of their country by its fascist enemy.

—Bernard Cook

See also Einsatzgruppen; Holocaust and Jewish Women; Soviet Union, Women in the Armed Forces; Soviet Union/Russian Federation, Women Heroes of the

References and Further Reading

- Barber, John, and Mark Harrison. 1991. *The Soviet Home Front, 1941–1945: A Social and Economic History of the U.S.S.R. in World War II*. London: Longman.
- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 1980. Soviet Women in Combat in World War II: The Ground Forces and the Navy. *International Journal of Women's Studies* 3, no. 4 (July-August):345–357.
- Glantz, David M. 2002. *The Battle from Leningrad, 1941–1944*. Lawrence: University of Kansas Press.
- Harrison, Mark. 2002. "The USSR and Total War." University of Warwick Economic Research Papers, no. 603. <http://www2.warwick.ac.uk/fac/soc/economics/research/papers/twcrp603.pdf> (accessed August 12, 2005).
- Museum of Tolerance. "Leningrad." <http://motlc.learningcenter.wiesenthalorg/pages/t04419.html> (accessed August 12, 2005).
- Pavlov, D. 1965. *Leningrad 1941: The Blockade*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.

Simmons, Cynthia, and Nina Perlina. 2002. *Writing the Siege of Leningrad: Women's Diaries, Memoirs, and Documentary Prose*. Pittsburgh: University of Pittsburgh Press.

Sparen, Pär. 2004. "Long Term Mortality after Severe Starvation during the Siege of Leningrad." *British Medical Journal* 328:11. <http://bmj.bmjournals.com/cgi/content/abridged/328/7430/11#REF3> (accessed August 12, 2004).

SOVIET UNION, WOMEN IN THE ARMED FORCES (1917–1991)

Apart from their participation in World War II, women in the Soviet Union played an auxiliary role in the Soviet military. Despite the historical record of competent military service by Russian women and recurrent manpower shortages notwithstanding, women have not been treated as a permanent component of the Russian military, and senior officers have resisted placing women in jobs traditionally held by men.

During the Russian Civil War (1918–1920) the recruitment of women was largely limited to medical and political appointments, some of a very onerous nature, as women placed in staff positions had to explain the ideological reasons for combating the opposing Whites (the collective appellation of the opponents of the Bolsheviks in the Russian Civil War). A minority of women received weapons and tactical training. The 1918 draft applied exclusively to women physicians. About 80,000 women served during the civil war, of whom approximately 40 percent were physicians, medics, orderlies, and nurses; the remaining 60 percent were employed in administrative positions, including as political workers (Herspring 1997, 45). By 1919, when the Political Administration of the Revolutionary Military Council of the Republics was created, about 27 percent of all political workers were women, and some of them occupied senior positions. Among those who served in the



The all-female crew of Minesweeper No. 611 of the Soviet Volga Naval Flotilla. Left to right: A. F. Tarasova, E. S. Parkhacheva, A. E. Kupriianova, V. S. Chapova, T. I. Dekalina, and A. P. Shabilina. (Viktorov, S. 1986. "V ekipazhe korablia—tol'ko devushki" [The Ship Crew Is All-Female]. Morskoii sbornik [Naval Anthology] 3:23–25)

Red Army during the civil war, 1,854 were killed, wounded, or taken prisoner (Herspring 1997, 45).

After the civil war ended, women were expected to go back to civilian life. Between 1925 and 1939 only men were conscripted. The interest of the military with regard to women was largely limited to food service and jobs and education for wives, some of whom received basic military training as dependents of regular military officers. About 100 women studied at military academies in the 1920s and 1930s, a number of whom were to play an important role during World War II, yet these career officers were usually employed in staff positions and had no line troops under their command.

In the late 1930s women often took part in the work of the Red Cross and Red Crescent. In addition to keeping fit through participation in military sports sponsored by the Komsomol (Young Communist's League), women were able

to engage in paramilitary training offered by the Osoaviakhim (Society for Assistance to Defense, Aviation, and Chemical Industry), founded in 1927. Women mastered a number of military specialties, especially after World War II began, when they were given enhanced access to weapons training by Osoaviakhim. Women workers also received 110 hours of military training provided by the Vsevobuch (Administration for Universal Military Training) of the ministry of defense (Cottam 1998, xix). In 1942 so-called Vsevobuch Komsomol youth subunits trained 222,000 women as mortar personnel, heavy and light machine gun and submachine gun operators, snipers, and communication specialists (Cottam 1998, xx). Such training took place both before and during the war in military schools, reserve regiments, and field units.

Initially women were sent mainly to air defense and reserve communications units, as well as rear units and establishments of the army and

navy, or they were assigned to firefighting, police, and civil defense duties. Such duties were mainly auxiliary and defensive but involved exposure to enemy fire and explosives during air-defense and mine-clearing activities. In the course of the war, women, as a result of manpower shortages as well as their own struggle for equality, moved into new military occupations, including combat duty in both mixed-sex and all-female units. The transfer of women to combat roles often took place despite, rather than because of, official policy. Women volunteering for service at the front were not always motivated by purely patriotic considerations but rather by the loss of loved ones as well as enemy-caused devastation and atrocities. At the end of 1943 the number of enlisted women reached its maximum, estimated at 800,000 to 1 million, or 8 percent of the total strength of the Soviet armed forces; at least half of these women served at the front (Cottam 1980b, 345).

In addition to those who volunteered, more than 400,000 women were mobilized. In 1942, following the state council of defense's decisions of March 23 and April 13, 100,000 women were drafted for air-defense duties. Some 30,000 were sent to logistical units and establishments of the army (decision of April 26), and 25,000 were directed to logistical and coastal units of the navy (decision of May 6) (Cottam 1998, xx). By 1943 all childless women not aiding the war effort were declared eligible for military service.

The first women to leave for the front in early July 1941 had peacetime communications experience. Some were to be charged with very important assignments. For example, the military and civilian authorities in Leningrad cooperated in the laying of an underwater cable across Lake Ladoga, which restored telephone communications with Moscow and other cities. The entire operation, including equipment trials and all installation work, was directed by V. A. Iarchevskaia, a highly qualified female engineer.

In each hero-city (cities threatened by the advancing Germans), hundreds of women volunteered to dig antitank ditches and build fortifications. In Leningrad (the City-Front), there was

an unprecedented female construction army of engineer corps, with women in command of sections and platoons. Forty-five thousand women built and maintained permanent strong points, bunkers, foxholes, trenches, and highways. In the summer of 1943 they constructed a belt of powerful fortifications, 25 kilometers (15.53 miles) long, in the 42nd Army zone, as well as five ferro-concrete pillboxes located in the avenue of the probable enemy tank approach (Cottam 1980b, 351). The women worked day and night, in all kinds of weather, under artillery fire and air strikes. Meanwhile, a pipeline for uninterrupted fuel delivery to the blockaded city was laid on the bottom of Lake Ladoga. This project was conceived and executed with the assistance of N. V. Sokolova, a female engineer and diver.

In 1944 and 1945 Leningrad's women engineers were retrained for mine-clearing duties in the huge territory comprising the Leningrad, Pskov, and Novgorod regions. Using dogs to sniff out the explosives, many women perished attempting to disarm the mines. A young woman from Minsk, Iadviga Urbanovich, distinguished herself in mine-clearing work in the Leningrad region. She trained hundreds of other women and personally disposed of more than a thousand shells and over a hundred bombs in Leningrad (Sokolov and Borchenko 1983, 162).

Senior Lieutenant Lidiia Shulaikina, who flew the IL-2 attack aircraft known as the Flying Tank, was the sole woman naval pilot during World War II. The most prominent role in the navy was assigned to women in the Volga Flotilla, created to safeguard shipping. (The Volga River had the transportation capacity of ten railroads.) In addition to working as crew members and captains of cargo ships, women operated anti-aircraft guns and served aboard passenger steamships converted to minesweepers. Entire families, including wives and adult children, operated ships in the flotilla.

Very few women served with the large-caliber Ground Forces artillery. An undefined number, however, served in armored units. Women were radio operators, turret gunners, drivers, and tank and subunit commanders. They progressed

from lighter to heavier vehicles and either volunteered for tank duty or were transferred, at their request, from other duties. Ekaterina Petliuk was too short to become a pilot so she drove a T-70 tank. Vera Bezrukova was a tank driver. Her baptism of fire took place near the Volga River, after which she fought all the way to Berlin. Managing to extricate herself from the most difficult predicaments, she survived the disabling of eight tanks. Aleksandra and Ivan Boiko, a married couple, served together as tank commander and driver, respectively. Valentina Barkhatova, a native of Siberia, was a radio operator-gunner. She died in a T-34 tank, one of the first to burst into Sevastopol in May 1944. The tank now stands on a cement base in Simferopol as a monument to those who fell during the Crimean operation of 1944. The attractive Aleksandra Samusenko was a tank school graduate, tank commander, platoon commander, and a Guards senior lieutenant. When her battalion commander fell, she led the battalion into battle and out of encirclement. She was killed on the outskirts of Berlin.

There were exceptional female machine gunners and snipers who owed their training to the Osoaviakhim and line units. About 102,333 future snipers attended special Vsevobuch courses and schools (Cottam 1998, xx). The most famous of them was the Central Women's School for Snipers, located near Moscow. Its graduates alone were credited with eliminating 12,000 enemy personnel (Herspring 1997, 46).

Women army scouts were parachuted behind enemy lines or crossed into occupied areas on skis to gather intelligence or to liaison with local underground organizations. Between 1943 and 1944, ninety-four women led underground Komsomol organizations at the regional, district, and urban levels.

By February 1944 there were 26,707 female partisans (Herspring 1997, 47). Women constituted 16 percent of the total partisan strength in Belarus (Cottam 1982, 367). They functioned as radio operators, snipers, machine gunners, and saboteurs and proved invaluable as messengers and scouts.

After the targeted call-ups of March, April, and October 1942 and the sporadic recruitment of women in 1943 and 1944, the proportion of women soldiers was greatest in the land-based Air Defense Forces (ADF), amounting to 30.5 percent in the Moscow area and 34.5 percent on the entire eastern front (Herspring 1997, 46), where women replaced 300,000 men. The average women's participation in the ADF, including in Air Defense Aviation, amounted to 24 percent (Cottam 1980a, 118).

In the spring of 1942 ADF women fully replaced men in the handling of barrage balloons, where teams of 12 were reduced to 6 or 7 women who played a major role in protecting the Soviet capital. In instrument sections of air-defense artillery, women replaced 8 out of 10 men; in machine-gun crews, 3 out of 5; in the Air Warning Service, 5 out of 6; and in the rear services, all male enlisted personnel and noncommissioned officers (Cottam 1980a, 117). The mobilizations significantly affected the entire Soviet armed forces, releasing a large number of men for service at the front and strengthening the ADF, where women constituted more than 50 percent of total strength in some regiments and divisions (Cottam 1980a, 117). During the historic Battle for Berlin massed searchlights were used to blind the enemy at night; at least half of the searchlight operators were women. Additionally, there were all-female gun batteries in the Leningrad Army of Air Defense.

The majority of Soviet women officers were political workers, many of whom served in the ADF, where by 1943 the majority of political workers were women. They involved themselves with every aspect of military life. There were many female political workers in partisan units, mainly at the lower party and Komsomol levels. Those in the underground tried to win over Soviet defectors and troops of Germany's allies, with some success. Above all, political workers were expected to set examples of fearlessness. For instance, Aleksandra Postol'skaia, radio operator and Komsomol battalion organizer of the 88th Rifle Division, replaced her

fallen commander and was killed while leading her troops in a successful attack in Rybki in the Smolensk region on August 15, 1943. It was a woman political worker, Major Anna Nikulina, who hoisted the red flag on the rooftop of the Chancellery in Berlin, at considerable danger to herself. Two soldiers in her party were killed, and one was severely wounded. Soviet female political workers of World War II were more numerous than during the civil war, and the tendency for many of them to be line rather than staff personnel was new. Hence their impact on morale was undoubtedly as great or greater than during the civil war.

Women appear to have had a qualitative impact on morale out of proportion to their numbers. Some, at least, were willing participants, full of idealism and enthusiasm. Female partisans and regular army personnel increasingly established themselves in nontraditional roles; those in support and political categories also fought and sometimes assumed command. The result was that mixed-sex crews learned to work harmoniously and all-female groups developed the team spirit and solidarity previously associated only with comradeship among men. Also, some women became attached to their equipment and weapons, which they treated as extensions of themselves. This perceived increase in their physical and mental powers was to them a liberating experience. Often women displayed a strong sense of solidarity and loyalty toward their husbands, brothers, and fathers, and they wished to avenge those who perished.

Although women partisans derailed trains, blew up bridges, and stormed enemy garrisons, they were also frequently expected to cook and do the men's laundry. In the army, women were expected to render first aid regardless of whether they were radio operators, snipers, or machine gunners. This was a wartime version of the female "double shift." Women were drafted as communications specialists or for other nonaggressive duties; even mine clearing fell in that category, though it was at least as dangerous as tank duty or service in Ground Forces artillery. Perhaps never before in the history of warfare

was the line between the combatant and non-combatant less clearly drawn than during the "Great Patriotic War," as World War II was referred to by the Soviet regime and the Russian people.

After the war most women were demobilized and banned from attending military schools and academies. A common belief reasserted itself that women should serve only when the country was endangered. By 1959 there were only 659 military women in the USSR army of 4 to 5 million, serving in women's traditional military occupations such as nursing, political work, communications, and administration (Herspring 1997, 48). The 1967 Military Service Law specified that single women, aged 19 to 40, with medical and specialized training would be accepted for military service in peacetime and could be drafted in wartime to perform auxiliary or specialized duties. By the mid-1970s the estimated number of women in the Soviet armed forces was 10,000 (Herspring 1997, 49). They were, however, prohibited from serving on combat ships and aircraft, and their access to firearms was strictly regulated.

In 1990 women were allowed to teach in military medical institutions. By the end of 1992 (after the dissolution of the U.S.S.R.) the number of women in the Russian military climbed to 100,000, including 20,000 warrant officers and 1,100 officers (Herspring 1997, 50). The majority of them served in the Ground Forces. About 1,000 women were admitted into the elite airborne forces (Herspring 1997, 50–51). One hundred and sixty-nine specialties were opened to women. In 1992 mixed staffing was introduced, and by the end of the year women volunteers outnumbered male conscripts by 367 to 125 in one motorized infantry unit. That same year the Moscow Military District announced that it intended to raise the percentage of women in its ranks to 10 percent (Herspring 1997, 51).

The increasingly important role women played was most evident in the ADF, where women occupied 50 percent of key positions in 1992 (Herspring 1997, 51). It was assumed that

women had better aptitude than men for detailed work and making precise calculations. When in 1993 women were allowed to join the military on contract, the intent was not only to alleviate manpower shortages but also to assist underpaid professional soldiers by providing employment for their wives. Thus, by 1994 the total number of women in the military approached 250,000, but only 1,500 of them were officers (Herspring 1997, 52–53).

Despite their increasing reliance on women, Russian senior officers tended to resist placing them in “men’s” jobs and dismissed them at the earliest opportunity. Yet by mid-1997 the situation of Russian women soldiers had improved. Out of an army of 1.2 million, women officers numbered approximately 2,400, including 4 colonels and 300 senior officers (major to colonel) (Herspring 1997, 53). Also, astronaut Valentina Tereshkova was the first woman to be granted a major general’s rank. Meanwhile, women had been admitted to communications and chemical warfare schools. Though male commanders acknowledged women’s proficiency in carrying out technical, medical, and administrative tasks, they were reluctant to use them in combat, even when they constituted 20 percent of divisional personnel and were appropriately trained (Herspring 1997, 54). Also, there was no effective women’s lobby group to argue that women were full-fledged members of the Russian armed forces. The recurrent severe shortages of men, coupled with persistent praise of women in the press (citing the superior discipline of women, their more efficient work habits, and their greater devotion to duty), may improve the status of Russian military women in the future.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Soviet Union, 46th Taman Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment; Soviet Union, 125th M. M. Raskova Borisov Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment; Soviet Union Air Defense, 586th Fighter Aviation Regiment; Soviet Union/Russian Federation, Women Heroes of the

References and Further Reading

- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 1980a. Soviet Women in Combat in World War II: The Ground Air Defense Forces. Pages 115–127 in *Women in Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union*. Edited by Tova Yedlin. New York: Praeger.
- . 1980b. Soviet Women in Combat in World War II: The Ground Forces and the Navy. *International Journal of Women’s Studies* 3, no. 4 (July-August):345–357.
- . 1982. Soviet Women in Combat in World War II: The Rear Services, Resistance behind Enemy Lines and Military Political Workers. *International Journal of Women’s Studies* 5, no. 4 (September-October):363–378.
- . 1998. *Women in War and Resistance*. Nepean, Ontario, Canada: New Military Publishing.
- Herspring, Dale R. 1997. Women in the Russian Military: A Reluctant Marriage. *Minerva: Quarterly Report on Women in the Military* 15, no. 2 (Summer):42–59.
- Pennington, Reina, ed. 2003. *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*. Vols. 1 and 2. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Smirnova-Medevedeva, Zoya Matveyevna. 1997. *Opalennaia iunost’* [Fire-Scorched Youth]. Translated by Kazimiera J. Cottam under the title *On the Road to Stalingrad: Memoirs of a Woman Machine Gunner*. Nepean, Ontario, Canada: New Military Publishing.
- Sokolov, V., and Nikolai Borchenko. 1983. “The Sinister Nights of Leningrad” and “The Score.” Pages 153–163 in *The Golden-Tressed Soldier*. Translated and edited by Kazimiera J. Cottam. Manhattan, KS: Military Affairs/Aerospace Historian.

SOVIET UNION AIR DEFENSE, 586TH FIGHTER AVIATION REGIMENT

One of three Soviet women’s air wings formed by Marina Raskova in October 1941 when male Soviet aircrews were unavailable and combat aircraft were outdated. An integral part of Soviet Air Defense Forces fighter aviation, the 586th



Marina Raskova, commanding officer of the Soviet 586th Dive Bomber Aviation Regiment. (V nebe frontovom [In the Sky Above the Front]. 1971. 2nd edition. Edited by M. A. Kazarinova et al. Moscow: Molodaia Gvardiia)

flew Yak-series fighter aircraft. Tasked with protecting fixed targets from enemy attacks, the unit was subordinated at various times to the 144th and 101st Fighter Aviation Divisions and the 9th Fighter Aviation Corps. In the course of 4,419 combat sorties, the regiment destroyed 38 enemy aircraft and damaged 42 in 125 air engagements (Pennington 2003, 520). It supported the Battle of Stalingrad and defended Voronezh, Kursk, Kiev, Debrecen, Budapest, and Vienna from enemy air attacks. It was most active during the middle period of the war, while based near Voronezh and Kursk.

Despite including top-ranked pilots, the regiment received little recognition both during and

after the war. Three members of a well-known prewar women's aerobatic team flew with the regiment: Raisa Beliaeva, Valeriia Khomiakova, and team leader Evgeniia Prokhorova. Fighter aces Lidiia Litviak and Katia Budanova were former members of the regiment, which had a very troubled history. The deaths of the first three women mentioned are controversial, as was the transfer of its first commander, Tamara Kazarinova. The unit failed to achieve the elite Guards status, and its pilots never received a single Hero of the Soviet Union award.

The 586th began active service at Saratov, near Stalingrad, on April 16, 1942, under the command of Major Kazarinova, who was later transferred to Air Defense Headquarters following the accidental death of Khomiakova during a night sortie in October 1942. Most of the veterans blamed Kazarinova for the accident. Kazarinova was unpopular and became resentful toward her subordinates, especially after several women pilots sought her removal. She later reputedly took advantage of her staff position to make sure that those seeking her removal received particularly hazardous assignments, and she prevented the unit from gaining the prestigious status of Guards.

On September 10, 1942, Kazarinova sent eight pilots to Stalingrad; their squadron was split into two sections and sent to two different regiments. Among the eight were Lidiia Litviak and Ekaterina Budanova, future aces, but the 586th did not receive credit for their kills (enemy aircraft they shot down). Four of the eight returned within a few months; one perished in Stalingrad. Litviak, Budanova, and Antonina Lebedeva were killed during the summer of 1943 while serving with various men's regiments.

In October 1942 the regiment acquired another squadron staffed by male pilots, as well as a new permanent commanding officer, Aleksander Gridnev. From February 13 to August 16, 1943, the unit was based at Voronezh. This was a very busy period during which pilots Raisa Surnachevskaia and Tamara Pamiatnykh engaged forty-two German bombers and shot down

four, thus preventing bombs from being dropped on troop trains passing through the important rail junction at Kastornaia en route to the decisive Battle of Kursk. Surnachevskaia and Pamiatnykh were rewarded with inscribed gold watches by King George VI of England, but they received no Soviet recognition. The regiment also flew high-profile missions escorting important people such as Nikita Khrushchev, then political officer for the Stalingrad front, and Air Defense Forces Commander Major-General Gromadin.

Among the more prominent pilots who died while serving with the regiment were:

Raisa Beliaeva (b. December 25, 1912; d. July 19, 1943, at Voronezh), senior lieutenant, pilot, and squadron commander. A member of a prewar aerobatic team, she participated in the Battle of Stalingrad and escorted Khrushchev's aircraft. Gridnev, her commanding officer, considered her to be a top-rate pilot. Beliaeva's death is attributed to aircraft malfunction.

Valeriia Khomiakova (b. August 2, 1914; d. October 6, 1942, at Saratov), pilot and deputy squadron commander. A member of a prewar women's aerobatic team, Khomiakova was the first woman to shoot down an enemy aircraft at night. On her first combat patrol, September 24, 1942, she destroyed a Ju-88 bomber over Saratov in a nighttime engagement. This was the first official kill credited to the 586th. Khomiakova died in a crash during a night flight on October 5–6, 1942, possibly as a result of being posted to night-alert duty when she was extremely tired.

Evgeniia Prokhorova (b. 1913; d. December 3, 1942, at Uralsk), senior lieutenant, pilot, and squadron commander. A leader of a prewar women's aerobatic team and holder of several world records in prewar competitions, Prokhorova was considered a very competent military pilot. While participating in a fighter escort mission, she was compelled to land during a heavy snowstorm. She was found frozen to

death the next day, trapped in her overturned plane.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Litviak, Lidiia Vladimirovna

References and Further Reading

- Cottam, Kazimiera J., ed. and trans. 1997. *Women in Air War: The Eastern Front in World War II*. Russian edition edited by Militsa A. Kazarinova et al. Nepean, Ontario, Canada: New Military Publishing. (The Russian edition was published in 1971 under the title *V nebe frontovom*.)
- Pennington, Reina. 2001. *Wings, Women and War*. Lawrence: University Press of Kansas.
- . 2003. 586th Fighter Aviation Regiment. Pages 520–523 in *Amazons to Fighter Pilots*. Edited by Reina Pennington. Vol. 2. Westport, CT: Greenwood.

SOVIET UNION/RUSSIAN FEDERATION, WOMEN HEROES OF THE (1938–1995)

The highest Soviet military award, introduced on April 16, 1934. After August 1, 1939, the title was accompanied by the Hero of the Soviet Union Medal. As of October 16, 1939, the full name of the award was changed to the Gold Star Hero of the Soviet Union Medal (HSU). The recognition was to be conferred on those who distinguished themselves by their heroic deeds. The first Soviet women awarded the title were airwomen Valentina Grizodubova, Polina Osipenko, and Marina Raskova. They were awarded the honor for their pioneering nonstop transcontinental flight to the Far East in September 1938.

As of May 5, 1990, ninety-five military women had been granted the HSU, including Aniela Krzywon (1925–1943), the only Polish woman recipient. Krzywon served with the Polish Emilia Plater Independent Women's

Battalion and was killed in the Battle of Lenino. Of this number, the following Soviet women combatants of World War II were granted the HSU on May 5, 1990, by Mikhail Gorbachev, the reformist Soviet leader and Communist party chief: pilots Lidiia Vladimirovna Litviak and Ekaterina Ivanovna Zelenko (posthumously) and marine Ekaterina Illarionovna Mikhailova-Demina. In addition, two Soviet airwomen—Tat'iana Nikolaevna Sumarokova, squadron navigator of the 46th Taman Guards Night Bomber Aviation Regiment, and Ekaterina Vasil'evna Budanova (deceased), ace fighter pilot who had served in the 73rd Stalingrad-Vienna Fighter Aviation Regiment (the former 296th Fighter Aviation Regiment)—were awarded the Hero of the Russian Federation (HRF) in 1995. In the Soviet era, two women were granted the HSU for postwar performance: Valentina Tereshkova, an astronaut who had attained the rank of major general, and Svetlana Savitskaia, pilot-astronaut, the only woman to be awarded the HSU twice.

The two largest groups of Soviet women recipients of the HSU/HRF for their World War II service were 32 airwomen and 29 partisans and resistance activists. Twelve women HSUs in the ground forces and all three in the navy were medical personnel who took part in combat as well. The total number of Soviet women who received the HSU for their World War II service, 94, appears disproportionately small when compared to the total of 11,500 HSUs earned overall by World War II combatants, considering that women comprised 8 percent of Soviet military personnel in 1943. Apparently senior commanders were not overly generous in awarding the HSU to women soldiers (for example, Mikhailova-Demina). Many women also served in so-called defensive operations, such as engineer preparation of terrain, the building of fortifications, mine clearing, or air defense. Consequently, although exposed to great danger (particularly in the last two categories of military operations), the women were unlikely to receive the HSU reserved for those exhibiting aggressive acts of heroism.

Due to their supposed political unreliability, including arrests of themselves or family members during Stalin's reign of terror, a substantial number of Soviet women who earned the HSU during the war were not decorated until the 1960s and then often posthumously. Representative recipients of the HSU/HRF are discussed, by unit, in the following sections (Cottam 1998).

46th Taman Guards Night Bomber Aviation Regiment

Raisa Ermolaevna Aronova (1920–1982), Guards major. One of several navigators in her regiment with inadequate flying experience, she became a pilot after improving her flying skills in the training squadron. Aronova flew 960 operational sorties and spent 1,148 hours in the air by night. She was awarded the HSU on May 15, 1946.

Marina Pavlovna Chechneva (1922–1984), Guards major and squadron commander. She flew up to 18 night missions and performed 810 short-range combat sorties, with about 1,000 flying hours to her credit. She was assigned especially difficult sorties, including daytime reconnoitering. Only 20 years old, Chechneva commanded a training squadron and trained 18 new pilots and navigators. She authored several books and many articles about her unit and was awarded the HSU on August 15, 1946.

Polina Vladimirovna Gel'man (1919–), Guards major. Gel'man served as her squadron's navigator and communications chief. In addition to being very competent, she managed to accomplish a great deal without any fuss and got along well with all of her female comrades. She flew 860 night operational missions, accumulating 1,300 flying hours, and was awarded the HSU on May 15, 1946.

Larissa Nikolaevna Litvinova-Rozanova (b. 1918), Guards captain. Litvinova-Rozanova was chief navigator and, initially, squadron navigator.

She became flight commander after gaining additional flying experience in the training squadron. She replaced Evgeniia Rudneva as chief navigator after the latter's death in April 1944. She was credited with having flown 816 missions and was awarded the HSU on February 23, 1945.

Evdokiia (Dusia) Ivanovna Nosal (1918–1943), Guards junior lieutenant and deputy squadron commander. At the beginning of the war Nosal lost her newborn baby as a result of the bombing of her maternity hospital, which made her determined to fly to avenge the baby's death. She volunteered for and was entrusted with the most difficult missions and was the first to be awarded the HSU in her regiment, posthumously.

Evgeniia (Zhenia) Maksimovna Rudneva (1920–1944), Guards senior lieutenant and chief navigator. In addition to training ground support personnel in navigation, Rudneva successively flew with all pilots of her unit, and she initiated new pilots into their flying duties. A former astronomy student, Rudneva kept an interesting diary. As the regiment's most prominent intellectual, she lectured on the theory of navigation. Rudneva was credited with destroying the headquarters of Field Marshal Baron Ewald von Kleist near Mozdok on the Transcaucasus front. Shot down on her 645th mission, Rudneva was posthumously awarded the HSU on October 26, 1944. An asteroid was later named after her.

*125th M. M. Raskova Borisov
Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment*

Mariia Ivanovna Dolina-Mel'nikova (1920–), Guards major, flight commander, and deputy acting squadron commander. During the initial months of the war, Dolina-Mel'nikova flew about 200 special missions aboard the U-2 in the 296th Fighter Aviation Regiment, in which Lidiia Liviak was to serve. Considered one of the best pilots in her unit, Dolina-Mel'nikova

flew 72 bombing missions. She took part in the Victory Parade on Moscow's Red Square on June 24, 1945, and became one of five in her wing to be awarded the HSU on August 18, 1945. After the war Dolina-Mel'nikova served as deputy commander of a men's aviation wing, from which she transferred to the reserves in 1950.

Galina Ivanovna Dzhunkovskaia-Markova (1922–1985), Guards major and squadron navigator. Initially Dzhunkovskaia-Markova was the navigator for deputy squadron commander Mariia Dolina. During her most memorable battle, in the course of which her squadron shot down four enemy fighters, Dzhunkovskaia-Markova survived a belly landing in her burning bomber. From the spring of 1944 she flew with Squadron Commander Klavdiya Fomicheva. A veteran of 69 medium-range operational missions, Dzhunkovskaia-Markova was resourceful, resolute, and confident. She took part in the Victory Parade on June 24, 1945, in Moscow and became one of five members of this unit to be awarded the HSU on August 18, 1945. She subsequently published several books and articles about her regiment.

Antonina (Tonia) Leont'evna Zubkova (1920–1950), Guards captain and squadron navigator. Zubkova flew 56 missions with Nadezhda Fedutenko, an experienced prewar pilot, and was frequently appointed divisional deputy leader for the duration of bombing missions. On September 2, 1943, Zubkova led fifty-four aircraft onto their target after her divisional leader was shot down, and on April 16, 1944, in the Baltic area, Zubkova again led her divisional column. During the subsequent debriefing at corps headquarters, senior officers and generals were most impressed with Zubkova's aerial photographs. She was one of five from her wing to be awarded the HSU on August 18, 1945. A postwar professor of mathematics at the N. E. Zhukovsky Air Force Engineering Academy, in 1950 she accidentally fell under a train and was killed.

*Women in the Ground Forces,
Navy, and Resistance*

Elena Fedorovna Kolesova (1920–1942), private. Kolesova, a former elementary school teacher, became a partisan leader and saboteur who served in the famous Commando Unit No. 9903, which contributed to the German defeat in the Battle of Moscow. Kolesova was one of this unit's two women members to be awarded the HSU, out of a total of five HSU recipients. (The other female recipient of the HSU, awarded posthumously on February 16, 1942, was the famous partisan Zoia Kosmodem'ianskaia.) Air-dropped in Belarus on May 1, 1942, Kolesova led a handful of young women saboteurs, mistakenly believed by the enemy to number as many as 600. She was credited with instructing hundreds of partisans in mine laying. Kolesova was killed in action and was posthumously awarded the HSU on November 21, 1944.

Natalia Venediktovna Kovshova (1920–1942) and Mariia Semenovna Polivanova (1922–1942), privates and expert snipers. Kovshova and Polivanova, despite their divergent family backgrounds, became close friends before enlisting. Kovshova was born into a family with strong revolutionary traditions, whereas Polivanova came from the nobility and was related to the anarchist Prince Peter Kropotkin and Czarist Defense Minister A. A. Polivanov. Both were graduates of the famous Women's School for Snipers. From the very beginning of their service with the 130th Rifle Division defending Moscow, they were considered model soldiers. On August 14, 1942, in a surrounded platoon decimated by the enemy, they were repeatedly wounded and committed suicide with their last grenades. They were the first Soviet women snipers to be awarded the HSU, on February 14, 1943.

Irina Nikolaevna Levchenko (1924–1973), lieutenant colonel and author. Levchenko was the daughter of a former minister of transporta-

tion and victim of Stalin's terror. Appointed as a noncommissioned officer (NCO) at the age of seventeen, senior lieutenant at twenty-one, and major at twenty-eight, Levchenko became lieutenant colonel at thirty-one. She was skilled in tank driving, firing the tank gun, handling small arms, and dispensing first aid. Levchenko received her basic tank training with the 39th Tank Brigade in the Crimea, where she served as a medical NCO. After graduating from the Stalingrad Tank School in July 1942, Levchenko became a tank platoon commander. She also served as assistant tank battalion chief of staff and was liaison officer of the 41st Tank Brigade of the 7th Mechanized Corps. Levchenko ended her army career as a tank corps liaison officer, an appointment granted to the bravest, most resourceful, and most proven in combat. A participant in a reunion of Soviet and U.S. soldiers on the Elbe in 1945, Levchenko graduated from the Moscow Academy of Armored and Mechanized Troops in 1952. The first Soviet recipient of the Florence Nightingale Medal, she was decorated twelve times. She was awarded the HSU on May 6, 1965.

Ekaterina Illarionovna Mikhailova-Demina (1925–), chief petty officer. An outstanding marine and medic, Mikhailova-Demina served in the 369th Independent Naval Infantry Battalion, which advanced from the Taman Peninsula on the Azov Sea through the Balkans to Vienna. Mikhailova-Demina took part in the capture of Belgorod-Dniestrovsky. During the storming of the Yugoslav fortress of Ilok located on the Danube near Bukovar, Mikhailova-Demina was wounded and developed double pneumonia. The recommendation from her immediate superiors that she be awarded the HSU was turned down three times. She was finally awarded the HSU by Mikhail Gorbachev on May 5, 1990.

Mariia Vasil'ievna Oktiabrskaya (1905–1944), Guards sergeant. Oktiabrskaya served as tank driver-mechanic with the 26th Tank Brigade of the 2nd Tatsinsky Guards Tank



Polina Osipenko, Valentina Grizodubova, and Marina Raskova. (Butkov, A. 1978. "Podvigu sorok let" [The Heroic Deed of Forty Years Ago]. Grazhdanskaia Aviatsiia [Civil Aviation] 9:38)

Corps on the 3rd Belorussian front. As the wife of the political commissar of an infantry regiment before the war, Oktiabrskaya became an expert driver and Voroshilov sharpshooter. After evacuation to Tomsk, Siberia, and on learning that her husband, parents, and two sons had been killed, Oktiabrskaya sent all her savings to the authorities in Moscow to cover the cost of manufacturing a tank she wished to drive. Eventually, the authorities complied with her wishes. After training in tank driving, she distinguished herself in her first battle by maneuvering her tank onto enemy positions. Mortally wounded in the head while repairing a damaged track on January 17, 1944, Oktiabrskaya was buried in Kutuzov Gardens in Smolensk with other famous war heroes. She became a posthumous HSU recipient on August 2, 1944.

Neonila (Nina) Andreevna Onilova (1921–1942), senior sergeant. Onilova defended Odessa and Sevastopol. She served in the 54th Razin Regiment of the famous 25th V. I. Chapaev Division, Independent Maritime Army, on the Crimean front. A sharpshooting machine gunner, she trained dozens of fellow soldiers, having perfected the technique of Anka, her civil war role model. Onilova allowed the enemy troops to closely approach and then delivered fire until the front rows were destroyed and those behind were forced to turn back. Initially a medical NCO at the front near Odessa in August 1941, Onilova was soon transferred to a machine-gun platoon, having proven her competence. Seriously wounded in September 1941, she was hospitalized for two months. When she recovered, Onilova insisted on rejoining her regiment situated near

Sevastopol. After learning that she had again been seriously wounded on February 28, 1942, General I. E. Petrov, the army commander, immediately ordered his medical staff to do everything in their power to save her. When her condition began to deteriorate, Petrov himself visited her to say good-bye. The severe, smart-looking, gray-haired general, reportedly with tears in his eyes, said in a slightly hoarse voice, "Well, little daughter, you fought gloriously. Thank you, on behalf of our entire Army and Nation. Everyone in Sevastopol knows about you. The entire country will learn about you, too. Thank you, little daughter" (Cottam 1998, 129). Onilova, however, was only granted the HSU posthumously on May 14, 1965.

Nina Ivanovna Sosnina (1923–1943), leader of the underground in Malin, Soviet Ukraine, during World War II. Sosnina planned and organized resistance based on missions assigned to her from the nearby Kutuzov Partisan Detachment and intelligence obtained by her brother Valentin and others. Along with her father, a surgeon, Sosnina died in a house fire set by enemy soldiers. She and her father were in the home, which belonged to a local teacher, performing an operation on a wounded partisan. Initially blamed for associating with enemies of the people, Sosnina was posthumously rehabilitated: her reputation and honor were restored after being defamed by the Stalin regime, and she was granted the HSU on May 8, 1965.

—Kazimiera J. Cottam

See also Soviet Union, Order of Glory, I Class, Soviet Women Recipients; Soviet Union, Order of the Red Banner, Women Recipients

References and Further Reading

- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 1991. Yelena Fedorovna Kolesova: Woman Hero of the Soviet Union. *Minerva: Quarterly Report on Women and the Military* 9, no. 2 (Summer):69–75.
- . 1998. *Women in War and Resistance*. Nepean, Ontario, Canada: New Military Publishing.

- Lebedev, Z. 1979. Znak osobogo otlichia [An Award of Special Distinction]. *Voenno-istoricheskyy zhurnal* 10:84–87.
- Markova, Galina Ivanovna. 1971. *Iunost' v ogne* [Youth under Fire]. Moscow: Moskovskii Rabochii.
- Smirnov, Sergei Sergeevich. 1975. Katiusha. Pages 122–138 in *Docheri Rossii* [Russia's Daughters]. Edited by I. Cherniaeva. Moscow: Sovetskaia Rossiia.
- Smirnova-Medevedeva, Zoya Matveyevna. 1997. *Opalennaia iunost'* [Fire-Scorched Youth]. Translated by Kazimiera J. Cottam under the title *On the Road to Stalingrad: Memoirs of a Woman Machine Gunner*. Nepean, Ontario, Canada: New Military Publishing.

SPANISH CIVIL WAR, WOMEN AND THE

From 1936 to 1939 Spanish women participated in a civil war that convulsed their nation. Women fought on both sides of the struggle; however, a surprisingly large number of Spanish women supported the Nationalist forces (Smith 1989, 474). The Nationalists, led by General Francisco Franco, represented conservative sectors like the Falange, a mass-based fascist organization, and were backed by much of the military, the Catholic Church, and large landowners. The Republicans, opponents of the Nationalists, were the governing coalition. They ruled Spain from their 1931 election, at which time they established the Second Republic, until their 1939 defeat. They received support from peasants, workers, and sectors of the middle class; the coalition included communists, socialists, anarchists, and liberals.

In the 1920s and 1930s most of Spain was mired in poverty. Unlike much of the rest of Europe, it had failed to industrialize, except in the north, or carry out agricultural reforms. As a result, the population was malnourished and lacked good housing or health care (Smith

1989, 472). Women worked in agriculture, sweatshops, and factories. Rates of infant mortality were high, as were the number of children born out of wedlock (Koonz 1998, 471). The Republican forces came to power pledging to modernize Spain and improve the population's standard of living.

When the Republicans took control of the government, Napoleonic legal codes and conservative Catholic practices governed how most Spaniards lived. Families could "force their daughters into marriage" (Smith 1989, 473). Divorce was illegal, and husbands could imprison their wives for "disobedience and verbal insults." Women's literacy rate (50 percent) was much lower than that of men (70 percent) (Koonz 1998, 471). As part of its modernization project, the Republican government passed a series of laws that granted women equal status as full citizens. Women obtained suffrage rights and maternity benefits, the option of no-fault divorce, and civil marriage (Koonz 1998, 472).

Republican women fought to maintain the social gains they had won and to preserve the overall political and economic program of the government. In order to counter the threat that the growing power of fascism posed, antifascist Spanish women joined the Worldwide Committee of Women against War and Fascism (Smith 1989, 473). Initially, Republican women joined militia units and took up arms against the Franco forces. Lina Odena was the first Republican to die in battle when she committed suicide rather than surrender to the Nationalists as they overran her position (Smith 1989, 454). Dolores Ibárruri, known as *La Pasionaria*, called on women and men to fight against the fascists. When the Nationalist forces attacked Madrid, one of the last Republican strongholds, she urged women and men to take up arms against them.

Neither the social changes instituted by the Republicans nor their attempts to break up the large estates and set up peasant cooperatives, increase wages, or undermine the power of the Catholic Church pleased conservative forces

within Spain. In 1936 the military under General Franco rebelled and initiated the civil war that, three years later, would defeat the Republican forces.

The majority of Spanish women rejected the Republicans and sided with the Franco forces. Unlike the Republican women, they embraced conservative ideas about gender and heeded the call of the Catholic Church to rally to its defense in opposition to the Republic. In the 1930s José Antonio Primo de Rivera started the Falange, using Benito Mussolini's fascism as a model. In 1934 Pilar Primo de Rivera, José Antonio's sister, organized the *Sección Femenina* (Women's Section) of the Falange, under the leadership of her brother. It was started to "give aid to Falangist prisoners and assistance to the families of fallen members" of the movement (Enders 2002, 86). The organization grew rapidly and exponentially: from an initial group of 300 women in 1934 it grew to 400,000 in 1938, according to its own estimates. The vast majority of these women worked in *Auxilio Social* (Social Assistance), the Falange organization that "provided food, clothing, and shelter to widows, orphans and the destitute, and taught them to 'love God and understand the Falange'" (Enders 2002, 87). They supported separate spheres for men and women and believed that the most important quality a woman could possess was *abnegación* (self-sacrifice).

Although these women engaged in very public activities, such as nursing, running soup kitchens, and in some cases taking up arms, they never did so in order to challenge male power or gender relations, as was the case with some of the Republican women. Instead, their goal was to "strengthen the family within a 'New Spain'" (Keene 2002, 184). They fought to restore conservative ideas about gender; to establish the woman's role in life as a wife and mother within the home, not in the streets; and to uphold the spiritual teachings of the church over all aspects of their lives.

In 1939 Nationalist forces defeated the Republic, and General Franco ruled Spain

dictatorially until his death in 1975. Some of the Republican women, especially the most visible leaders like Dolores Ibárruri, went into exile. The lives of most women who stayed in Spain came under the strict control of the Franco government and the Catholic Church. The fascist government rescinded women's right to vote, made divorce illegal, and instituted the Charter of Labor that said "women's only proper sphere is in the nursery" (Koonz 1998, 473). Pilar Primo de Rivera continued to head the *Sección Femenina* of the Falange, which became the official women's organization until Franco's death. If women wanted to work for the state, "obtain a driver's license, a passport, or the like, [they were] obligated to serve six months with the *Sección Femenina*" (Enders 2002, 87).

—Margaret Power

See also Ibárruri, Dolores; Kea, Salaria

References and Further Reading

- Enders, Victoria. 2002. "And We Ate Up the World": Memories of the *Sección Femenina*. In *Right-Wing Women: From Conservatives to Extremists around the World*. Edited by Paola Bacchetta and Margaret Power. New York: Routledge.
- Keene, Judith. 2001. *Fighting for Franco. International Volunteers in Nationalist Spain during the Spanish Civil War, 1936–1939*. London and New York: Leicester University.
- . 2002. Foreign Women in Spain for General Franco. In *Right-Wing Women: From Conservatives to Extremists around the World*. Edited by Paola Bacchetta and Margaret Power. New York: Routledge.
- Koonz, Claudia. 1998. The "Woman Question" in Authoritarian Regimes. Pages 463–492 in *Becoming Visible: Women in European History*. Edited by Renate Bridenthal, Susan Mosher Stuard, and Merry E. Wiesner. Boston and New York: Houghton Mifflin.
- Smith, Bonnie G. 1989. *Changing Lives: Women in European History since 1700*. Lexington, MA: D. C. Heath.

SPANISH-AMERICAN WAR, WOMEN AND THE

Role of women in the Spanish-American War. Men and masculinity dominate popular conceptions of the Spanish-American War (April to December 1898). Popular culture idolized women almost exclusively as sweethearts and mothers. Nevertheless, women played significant roles both on the home front and in the war zones. Their most crucial direct contributions to the war effort were as nurses and as relief workers. Women also helped to document and commemorate the war and were symbolically important to propaganda and mobilization.

Between 1895 and 1898 increasing calls for the United States to aid Cuba in its revolt against Spanish rule came from both women and men. Public support for intervention was aroused by newspaper reports of the brutal treatment of Cuban women by Spanish authorities. Women and children were featured prominently as victims of starvation caused by Spain's military policies. The fact that Spain had a queen regent—María Cristina, mother of the underage Alfonso XIII—who seemingly allowed such atrocities, made the situation appear all the worse to U.S. readers, who believed in women's superior morality. The U.S. press also publicized and sometimes exaggerated moral outrages such as the *Olivette* incident, during which Spanish officials in February 1897 strip-searched three Cuban women passengers aboard a U.S. ship. The Spanish press responded in kind, with cartoons of a lascivious Uncle Sam pursuing the lovely maiden Spain. Meanwhile, some Cuban women, such as Rosa Castellanos, Josefa Agueros, and Luz Noriega, served as *mambisas* (insurgents) against Spanish forces. So did Filipinas, such as Segunda Puentes Santiago and Gregoria de Jesus y Alvarez, in what would become the Pacific front of the Spanish-American War.

Eventually, the momentum of public opinion, pressure from U.S. officials including Assistant Secretary of the Navy Theodore Roosevelt, and

SPANISH-AMERICAN WAR

“[After being assigned to the army hospital at Montauk Point, Long Island, New York] we had to hustle to . . . get into uniform then we returned to the Colonel’s tent and were ordered to line up outside and a group of doctors were told to choose the nurse each wanted. It was positively funny and yet humiliating to stand there and wonder who would choose you. I don’t know how they sized us up. . . . We worked from 5 o’clock until about 8 o’clock without food of any kind, and when we went to breakfast we would get black coffee and some kind of mush, Indian meal or oat meal, then back to work [until 8 P.M.]. I remember one dinner I went to where there was nothing but boiled cabbage and black coffee.”

—Rose M. Heavren, speech given at Spanish-American War Nurses (SAWN) meeting,
Pratt High School, March 28, 1950.

SAWN Collection no. 317, Rose M. Heavren Collection,
Gift of Mary (Heavren) Budds,
Women in Military Service for America Memorial Foundation, Inc.,
Archives, Arlington, VA.

events such as the explosion of the battleship USS *Maine* in Havana’s harbor propelled the United States into war against Spain. Several women’s groups immediately stepped forward to offer their services to the federal government when Congress declared war on April 25, 1898. Existing women’s organizations, from the Daughters of the American Revolution (DAR) to the Catholic Sisterhoods, mobilized their members while new women’s groups formed specifically for war relief.

The most prominent of the new groups, the Women’s National War Relief Association (WNWRA), was formed in New York in May 1898 largely under the impetus of Ellen Hardin Walworth, previously a founder of the DAR. The WNWRA’s leadership brought together socially prominent, wealthy women such as Helen Gould, daughter of financier Jay Gould and heir to his fortune, with the wives of influential politicians from across the country. The association followed the model of the U.S. Sanitary Commission from the American Civil War. Its mission was to collect monetary donations and to provide material aid to U.S. troops, especially to the sick and wounded. Its nationwide network

of auxiliaries raised over \$50,000 to equip hospital ships, among other projects. The WNWRA also collected donations of food staples and “delicacies,” established rest homes for convalescent veterans, and produced thousands of articles of clothing and linens for the soldiers. Other local groups engaged in similar work—fund-raising, sewing, collecting supplies—without necessarily affiliating with any national associations. Similar to these organizations, the Spanish Red Cross and the Cuban White Cross balanced relief efforts with a nationalistic agenda.

The American Red Cross, by contrast, aided not only U.S. troops but also Cuban troops and refugees and Spanish prisoners of war. It engaged in relief work in Cuba and, to a lesser extent, in Puerto Rico and the Philippines, as well as in U.S. military camps. Like the WNWRA and other groups of women volunteers, it sometimes had difficulty in its relations with federal government agencies. As the public became aware of the lamentably unsanitary conditions at some military camps, women began to demand a larger part in what they called the housekeeping side of war: providing and managing food, caring for the sick and wounded, and nurturing the



*Nurses aboard an Army hospital ship doing medical work in Cuba during Spanish-American War.
(Bettmann/Corbis)*

convalescent. Red Cross president Clara Barton, already beloved for her efforts during the American Civil War, became a revered public icon, the single figure who best represented what women could and should do to alleviate suffering during wartime.

The U.S. military's search for nurses to meet its escalating needs was coordinated by Anita Newcomb McGee. As chair of the Hospital Corps Committee of the DAR, she gained a commission from the surgeon general of the army, George M. Sternberg, to screen thousands of applications from aspiring nurses. McGee later became acting assistant surgeon general in

charge of the Nurse Corps Division. The army began hiring nurses under contract in March 1898, offering compensation of \$30 per month and one daily ration. The surgeon general's initial restriction on women serving either in camps or overseas proved unsustainable in the face of disease, particularly the waves of typhoid and yellow fever that swept through army camps. Thus female contract nurses ended up playing a much more prominent role in the Spanish-American War than anyone had expected. Over 1,700 women, compared with only about a dozen men, served as contract nurses by the war's end.

Among the many who reported on the war were several women journalists, the best known being Anna Northend Benjamin and Teresa Howard Dean for *Leslie's* and Canadian Kathleen Blake Coleman for the *Toronto Mail and Express*. Coleman is believed to be the first accredited female war correspondent in the world. The *New York Journal*, *Chicago Record*, *New Orleans Picayune*, and *McClure's* also offered women's stories on the war with some regularity. Acclaimed photographer Frances Benjamin Johnston took pictures of war heroes such as the Rough Riders and Admiral George Dewey. The conflict and its imperialist aftermath became a potent theme for women writers, including Spanish authors Eva Canel and Emilia Pardo Bazán and American poets Frances E. W. Harper and Katherine Lee Bates. The most enduring U.S. image of the war, the public monument at Arlington National Cemetery called *The Hiker*, is the work of a woman: sculptor Theo Alice Ruggles Kitson, who created numerous other war memorials.

Lastly, women participated in public discussions. Although most women categorically supported the war as a humanitarian cause or a defense of national honor, others disagreed. Spanish women had staged a large antiwar demonstration in Zaragoza in the summer of 1896, demanding an end to poor men's conscription to put down the Cuban revolt. Women also led a firestorm of riots across Spain in May 1898 when the war drove up bread and flour prices. As vocal members of the peace movement and afterward of the Anti-imperialist League, U.S. women criticized the militaristic values and imperialist aggression that they believed the war enshrined. This too became a legacy of the Spanish-American War and laid the groundwork for more widespread dissent during World War I.

—Laura R. Prieto

See also Barton, Clara; Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War I

References and Further Reading

- Freeman, Barbara M. 1989. *Kit's Kingdom: The Journalism of Kathleen Blake Coleman*. Ottawa: Carleton University.
- Graf, Mercedes. 2001. Women Nurses in the Spanish-American War. *Minerva: Quarterly Report on Women and the Military* 19, no. 1 (Spring):3–38.
- Hoganson, Kristin. 1998. *Fighting for American Manhood: How Gender Politics Provoked the Spanish-American and Philippine-American Wars*. New Haven, CT: Yale University.
- Sarnecky, Mary. 1999. *A History of the United States Army Nurse Corps*. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania.

SPARTAN WOMEN

Role of women in the Spartan military state. By the sixth century B.C. the Greek state of Sparta had developed a unique military organization. Men of the elite Spartiate class engaged in no profession but war, and their whole lives were devoted to training and battle. This system, attributed to the legendary lawgiver Lycurgus, had profound implications for Spartan women. They were the state's military support staff par excellence, running estates and homes in their husbands' absence, producing future warriors of the highest possible quality, and reinforcing an ethic that preferred death to cowardice.

Unlike women in other Greek states, Spartiate females were rigorously educated from a young age. Their training included study of the classics, poetry, and philosophy but also intensive physical exercise because the Spartans believed that a strong, healthy woman was more likely to produce strong sons. Spartan girls learned to race, wrestle, throw the discus and javelin, and, in short, perform all the feats of their male counterparts except arms training. They married later than other Greek women, in their late teens, so they were prepared to take

control of their households immediately (Spartan men lived in barracks until age forty, only occasionally visiting their wives). Both men and women seem to have been taught from a young age that their bodies were at the service of the state. Thus, it was apparently not uncommon for a husband to invite a stronger man to impregnate his wife, thereby producing a stronger future warrior of Sparta.

The Spartiate matron raised her daughters until their marriage and her sons until they moved to the barracks at age seven; therefore, she provided essential early ethical training. Most prominent in the ancient Greek sources concerning Sparta are mothers' exhortations to sons, encouraging them never to show cowardice. A Spartan mother is credited with handing her son his shield before he set out to battle with the laconic statement "With it or on it." The shield was the first thing a man dropped when running from the battlefield, but, conversely, the Greek round *hoplon* could be used to carry the bodies of the slain after the battle. Mothers were expected to show pride in sons who died for the state. There are accounts of Spartan women killing sons who had disgraced themselves and their family by showing cowardice in battle.

Spartan women were not trained to bear arms themselves. This is obvious from the panic when Thebans invaded Spartan territory in 369 B.C. at a time when the Spartan army was away. In times of crisis women could, however, play an important role in resistance. When Pyrrhus attacked in the mid-third century B.C., Archidamia, the grandmother of one of the two kings who simultaneously ruled Sparta, rallied the women and prevented the men from sending them to Crete for safety. (Sparta always had two kings, who descended from two families—the Agiads and the Euryptids.) Women helped the soldiers dig a long trench as protection against Pyrrhus's war-elephants, and the next day they cheered the army on to victory.

—Phyllis G. Jestice

See also Greek Women and War in Antiquity

References and Further Reading

Pomeroy, Sarah B. 2002. *Spartan Women*. New York: Oxford University.

STARK, DAME FREYA
(1893–1993)

English Voluntary Aid Detachment (VAD) volunteer, propagandist, and author. Stark served as a VAD worker during World War I and worked extensively with British intelligence during World War II.

Although her parents were English, Stark was raised in Italy. She began training as a nurse at St. Ursula in Bologna when Italy entered World War I but left nursing in 1915. After a broken engagement and illness, Stark traveled to England in 1916. She briefly worked as a censor before training with the VAD. She served as a VAD volunteer at Villa Trento in 1917 until her hospital unit retreated to Padua. She also served at various other English hospitals in Italy until the war's close.

Stark's involvement in World War II began as a correspondent with the British Foreign Office in Aden, Yemen, providing information on the Middle Eastern situation. In 1940 she visited Yemen, smuggling, translating, and showing British propaganda films to the elite. In 1940 she relocated to Cairo, Egypt, where she worked closely on propaganda with General Wavell, the commander in chief of the British eastern forces. She established the Brotherhood of Freedom, a largely social group that perpetuated Muslim and Christian ideals while advocating British interests. In 1941 Stark moved to Baghdad, Iraq, despite an intergovernmental crisis and a siege of the British Embassy that lasted from April to June. She traveled widely through-

out the Middle East—Persia, Jerusalem, even Cyprus—and to India as well for her propaganda work.

In 1943 and 1944 Stark toured the United States and Canada. She gave speeches and socialized with influential people in an attempt to counteract Zionism. She encountered difficulty, however, due to anti-British sentiment in the United States and the unpopularity of the Colonial Office because of British involvement in India.

Stark eventually returned to her home in Italy, where she continued her propaganda work amid the ruins of the waning war and the collapse of fascism.

—*Barbara Penny Kanner*

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I

References and Further Reading

Kanner, Barbara Penny. 1997. *Women in Context: Two Hundred Years of British Women Autobiographers, a Reference Guide and Reader*. New York: G. K. Hall.

Stark, Freya. 1961. *Dust in the Lion's Paw*. London: John Murray.

STEIN, EDITH (1891–1942)

Catholic nun and convert from Judaism who was murdered in a gas chamber at Auschwitz. Edith Stein, the daughter of a timber merchant, was born on October 12, 1891, in Breslau, Germany (now Wrocław, Poland). Stein's father died when she was two, and she and her seven surviving siblings were raised by a strong and devout Orthodox Jewish mother. Stein, however, renounced Judaism and proclaimed atheism in 1904. She was among the first generation of German women to attend a university. She began her studies at the University of Breslau and continued them at Göttingen.

There she studied philosophy under Edmund Husserl. When Husserl moved to Freiburg, Germany, Stein, whose intellectual acuity had impressed him, moved as well and worked as his assistant. At Freiburg she earned her doctorate with highest honors. Drawn to Catholicism through her philosophical studies, Stein decided to convert while reading the autobiography of St. Theresa of Avila. She was baptized on January 1, 1922. She then relinquished her assistantship with Husserl to teach at a Catholic girls' school in Speyer. In 1932 she began teaching at the German Institute for Scientific Pedagogy, but in 1933, after the Nazis came to power, she was dismissed because of her Jewish ethnicity. The dismissal led her to take a step she had long contemplated. In 1934 Stein entered the cloistered Carmelite order in Cologne as Sister Teresa Benedicta of the Cross. In 1938, with the intensification of Nazi anti-Jewish measures, the order sent her to a convent in Echt in the Netherlands. The transfer did not save Stein. Germany invaded the Netherlands in May 1940. In 1942 leaders of the Catholic and Reformed churches in the Netherlands protested to the Nazi Reichs Commissioner Arthur Seyss-Inquart against the deportation of Dutch Jews. He informed them that if they did not publicize their protest, he would continue to make an exception for Jewish converts to Christianity. Nevertheless, when the Bishop of Utrecht issued a pastoral letter condemning the Nazi's anti-Jewish policy, Seyss-Inquart ordered the arrest and deportation of all Jewish Catholics (Rhodes 1973, 344–345).

On July 26, 1942, Stein and her sister Rosa, who had also converted to Catholicism, were seized and transported to Auschwitz. On August 9, 1942, they were killed in a gas chamber there. Edith Stein was canonized by Pope John Paul II on October 11, 1998. That the Catholic Church proclaimed Stein a saint angered some Jews because of Stein's status as a Jewish convert to Christianity who died in the Holocaust.

—*Bernard Cook*

See also Holocaust and Jewish Women

STIMSON, JULIA CATHERINE
(1881–1948)

References and Further Reading

- Garcia, Laura. 1977. Edith Stein—Convert, Nun, Martyr. *Crisis* 15 (June):32–35.
- Rhodes, Anthony. 1973. *The Vatican in the Age of Dictators, 1922–1945*. London: Hodder and Stoughton.
- Stein, Edith. 1991. *Edith Stein: Selected Writings by Edith Stein*. Springfield, IL: Templegate Publishers.
- . 1993. *Collected Works of Edith Stein*, vol. 5, *Self-Portrait in Letters, 1916–1942*. Translated by Josephine Koepfel. Washington, DC: Institute of Carmelite Studies Publications.

Chief nurse of American Red Cross Nursing (1918–1919) and director of nursing for the American Expeditionary Forces during World War I. Julia Catherine Stimson was born in 1881 in Worcester, Massachusetts. She was educated in St. Louis, Missouri, and in New York City and graduated from Vassar College in 1901. She entered nursing school in 1904 at New York Hospital and after graduation in 1908 worked at the Harlem Hospital in New York. From there she went to the Washington



A group of Red Cross nurses headed by the late Colonel Julia Stimson, Army Nurse Corps, during a parade in Paris, France, ca. 1920. (Bettman/Corbis)

University Hospital in St. Louis. In 1917 she joined the Army Nurse Corps and was named chief nurse of Base Hospital No. 21. She also served in that capacity in the British Expeditionary Forces Hospital No. 12 in Rouen, France. In April 1918 Stimson was appointed chief nurse of the American Red Cross in France and director of nursing of the American Expeditionary Forces. She supervised more than 10,000 nurses. She became dean of the Army School of Nursing in Washington, D.C., and superintendent of the Army Nurse Corps in 1919. In 1920, when nurses in the army were given relative rank, Stimson became the first woman to hold the rank of major. She was awarded the Distinguished Service Medal by the U.S. government, the British Royal Red Cross 1st Class, the French *Medaille de la Reconnaissance Française* and the *Medaille d'Honneur de l'Hygiene Publique*, and the International Red Cross Florence Nightingale Medal.

Stimson retired from the army in 1937 but continued in her work for the profession of nursing as president of the American Nursing Association from 1938 to 1944. She returned to active duty to assist with the recruiting of nurses during World War II. When army nurses were granted full rank she was promoted to colonel (retired) just six weeks before she died in September 1948.

Katherine Burger Johnson

See also Delano, Jane Arminda; Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War I

References and Further Reading

- Aynes, Edith A. 1973. *From Nightingale to Eagle*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall.
- Stimson, Julia C. 1918. *Finding Themselves: The Letters of an American Army Chief Nurse in a British Hospital in France*. New York: Macmillan.
- U.S. Army Center of Military History. 1995. *Highlights in the History of the Army Nurse Corps*. Washington, DC: U.S. Army Center of Military History.

STOBART, MABEL (1862–1954)

Set up hospitals for Bulgaria during the Balkan wars and on the western and Balkan fronts during World War I. Mabel Stobart was a supporter of female suffrage. She believed that in order to gain the right to vote women needed to demonstrate their active patriotism. She founded the Women's Sick and Wounded Convoy Troops (WSWCT) to provide help to soldiers at the front. The WSWCT sent women to Bulgaria in 1912 to assist Bulgarian soldiers in the First Balkan War. Stobart had approached Sir Frederick Treves, chairman of the British Red Cross Society, to allow the WSWCT to send women to Bulgaria. He had responded that there "was no work fitted for women in the Balkans" (Stobart 1935, 87). Lord Noel Buxton, however, agreed to have her accompany him to Bulgaria. Despite newspaper advertisements placed by the British Red Cross society advising women not to engage in the Bulgarian project, Stobart recruited fifteen British women volunteers—three doctors, six trained nurses, and six assistants. She and her volunteers were able, after a seven-day wagon trek over the Rhadope Mountains, to establish a hospital across the Turkish frontier at Kirk-Kilisse close to the fighting to aid wounded soldiers. Their effort was welcomed by the Bulgarian queen, Eleonora, a trained nurse who had tended to wounded soldiers during the Russo-Japanese War. Following the end of the First Balkan War, Stobart decided to disband her unit's operation. The three doctors, however, stayed behind and continued to work with the ill and, with the resumption of hostilities, with the wounded.

Although Stobart had spoken publicly against the impending war in August 1914, once Britain entered it she and Lady Muir McKenzie established the Women's National Service League (WNSL). Stobart argued, "Women are capable of taking a share, a serviceable share, in warfare, without inexpediency to any concerned, and even with direct benefit to all concerned"

(Stobart 1913, 212). The WNSL recruited volunteers to provide all of the skills necessary for the establishment of a military hospital operated entirely by women. On August 18 she headed for Brussels with her husband to prepare for the arrival of a WNSL unit. The rapid advance of the Germans preempted the operation. When Stobart attempted to reach Venlo in the Netherlands, having been given a pass by the German commandant in Brussels, she, her husband, and the unit chaplain were arrested as spies and almost summarily executed before being sent to Aachen, Germany, for trial. There a sympathetic military judge believed their story and sent them on to the Netherlands. After returning to England, Stobart led a WNSL unit to Antwerp, where they set up a hospital for wounded soldiers. After just ten days of operation, the Germans overwhelmed the city's defenses, and the hospital had to be evacuated. Stobart, who was undaunted, set up another WNSL hospital near Cherbourg, France, in November. This unit consisted of forty-five women, including six doctors, fifteen nurses, and ten orderlies as well as ambulance drivers and support personnel.

In February 1915 Stobart, feeling that her organizational work had been done, was drawn by news from Serbia to offer her services to the Serbian Relief Fund. In April she sailed to Salonika, Greece, with seven female doctors and eighteen trained nurses (Stobart 1935, 183). They set up their hospital at Kragujevatz and seven satellite dispensaries. The women had been in Serbia only three months when an orderly and a nurse died of typhus. In September Stobart was asked by the Serbians to command the First Serbian-English Field Hospital; the staff consisted of women from her WNSL unit and Serbians. Toward the end of October Stobart and the unit she commanded were forced to withdraw with the Serbian army and tend to the wounded during a three-month fighting retreat through Serbia, Montenegro, and Albania to the coast. She and the convoy she commanded reached Scutari on December 10, and from there she and her British personnel made their

way home. In London Stobart was censured by the Serbian Relief Fund for, in her words, "having exceeded my instructions, and having led my Unit to unnecessary risks in accompanying the Army to the front" (Stobart 1935, 340).

—Bernard Cook

See also Inglis, Elsie, and the Scottish Women's Hospitals

References and Further Reading

Stobart, Mabel Annie Boulton. 1913. *War and Women, from Experiences in the Balkans and Elsewhere*, by Mrs. St. Claire Stobart, Founder of the Women's Convoy Corps. London: G. Bell and Sons.

———. 1935. *Miracles and Adventures: An Autobiography*. London: Rider.

STOWE, HARRIET BEECHER (1811–1896)

Prolific writer primarily remembered for her novel *Uncle Tom's Cabin*, which dealt with issues of slavery and was published in 1850. Harriet Beecher Stowe's writings intensified the debate on the subject of slavery that raged prior to the American Civil War. According to folklore, when President Abraham Lincoln met Stowe in 1862, he reputedly said, "So you're the little woman who wrote the book that started this Great War!" (Harrietbeecherstowe.org 2004).

Harriet Beecher was born into a devoutly religious family in Litchfield, Connecticut, the youngest of seven children. Her mother died when she was five, and she and her siblings were reared by her minister father, who physically and verbally abused them. At age twelve she was sent to the Hartford Female Seminary and placed under the tutelage of her oldest sister, a strict disciplinarian who soon had young Harriet assisting in teaching duties at the seminary.

In 1832 Harriet's father moved the family to Cincinnati, where he assumed the post of president of Lane Theological Seminary. It was in Cincinnati that Harriet Beecher joined a social and literary club called the Semi-Colons, which boasted many key literary figures as members. In 1836 she married Calvin Stowe, a widowed professor and Semi-Colon member who was nine years her senior. Harriet assumed the duties of wife and mother and took care of the family home, reared the children, and wrote articles for a number of magazines, journals, and newspapers. By the early 1840s her articles on domestic life, religion, temperance, politics, and gender issues made Harriet Beecher Stowe one of the most successful authors of her era.

Stowe became increasingly interested in the growing controversy surrounding the issue of slavery. Although she was not a fervent abolitionist, her book about the horrors of slavery, *Uncle Tom's Cabin*, became a huge literary success, despite the fact that abolitionist literature was very unpopular with many people at the time. The book was based on her research of antislavery literature, and its characters were drawn from actual escaped slaves the author met in Boston. There were many condemnations of the book, for which she published a rebuttal in *A Key to Uncle Tom's Cabin* in 1853. In 1856 she published another novel about slavery, *Dred: A Tale of the Great Dismal Swamp*. The author attracted the attention of many notable people, including Britain's Queen Victoria and the author and sociologist Harriet Martineau.

Stowe took vacation trips to Europe during the 1850s, possibly to escape the barrage of criticism aimed at her controversial works on the issue of slavery. Throughout the remainder of her life, however, she continued to write. In 1864 she and her husband returned to Connecticut, and from the late 1860s until the early 1880s the couple spent their winters in Florida, where she wrote descriptive accounts of that state. Calvin Stowe died in 1886, and Harriet died in 1896.

—Leonard A. Steverson

See also Civil War, American, and Women

References and Further Reading

- Adams, John R. 1989. *Harriet Beecher Stowe*. Updated ed. Boston: Twayne Publishers.
- Gilbertson, Catherine. 1937. *Harriet Beecher Stowe*. New York: D. Appleton-Century.
- Harrietbeecherstowe.org. "Harriet's Life and Times." Harriet Beecher Stowe Center. <http://www.harrietbeecherstowe.org/life> (accessed September 29, 2004).
- Henrick, Joan D. 1994. *Harriet Beecher Stowe: A Life*. New York: Oxford University.

STREET, JESSIE (1889–1970)

Feminist, peace campaigner, and political activist. Dubbed Red Jessie, Jessie Street was a leading figure on the Australian home front during the cold war. Born in Ranchi, India, Street grew up in New South Wales and studied at the University of Sydney. Following her attendance at the 1911 International Council for Women in Rome, Street became progressively concerned with social justice and equality for women. She was deeply involved in the work of the Equal Pay Committee; her 1935 pamphlet entitled *The Justice of Equal Pay and Equal Opportunity* can be found in the Papers of Jessie Street, in the National Library of Australia, Canberra. After World War I she founded the Sydney branch of the Australian League of Nations Union (ALNU) and became increasingly involved in the campaign for equal pay for women. In 1929 she was elected the first president of the United Association of Women (UAW). During World War II she was a prominent campaigner for peace and friendship as chair of the Women's Forum for Social and Economic Reconstruction (1941) and the Russian Medical Aid and Comforts Committee in New

South Wales (1941). Street initiated a national conference that resulted in the Australian Women's Charter (1943), and she led a delegation of thirteen women that introduced the charter resolution to parliament in 1944. As an Australian delegation member to the 1945 U.N. charter meeting in San Francisco, she promoted improvements in the status of women. In 1946 Street served as president of the Australian-Russian Society (later the Australian-Soviet Society). Her admiration for the USSR became obvious from the time of her first travel to that country in 1938 and again in March 1953, when Jessie was invited to attend Stalin's funeral in Moscow. As an active member of the controversial World Peace Council, Street was nominated as a delegate to the second World Peace Conference in Warsaw in 1950; she played a key role within the Sydney section of the Australian Peace Council until 1959. A victim of censure after contesting the legitimacy of British nuclear tests in Central Australia from 1952 to 1957, in later years Street remained a tireless defender of the Aboriginal cause through a campaign to grant Aborigines the right to vote. She died in Sydney on July 2, 1970. In 1989 the Jessie Street National Women's Library was founded to promote the fight for peace and social justice.

—*Jérôme Dorvidal*

See also McDowell, Mary Stone; Mead, Lucia Ames; Moore, Eleanor May; Olmsted, Mildred Scott; Onions, Maude

References and Further Reading

- Radi, Heather. 1990. *Jessie Street: Documents and Essays*. Broadway, Australia: Women's Redress.
- Sekules, Peter. 1978. *Jessie Street: A Rewarding but Unrewarded Life*. Brisbane, Australia: University of Queensland.
- Street, Jessie. Papers of Jessie Street, folder 7. National Library of Australia, Canberra.

STREETER, RUTH CHENEY (1895–1990)

Director of the U.S. Women's Marine Corps Reserve from February 1943 until she resigned her commission in December 1945. Born on October 2, 1895, in Brookline, Massachusetts, Ruth Cheney Streeter graduated from Bryn Mawr College in 1918. Between World Wars I and II, she held a variety of public posts in health and welfare services such as on the New Jersey State Relief Council and the New Jersey Board of Children's Guardians. As the international situation grew increasingly tense by 1940, she shifted more toward defense-oriented activities. In 1941 she chaired the Citizen's Committee on the Army and Navy for Fort Dix, New Jersey. A licensed pilot, Streeter was also the only female member of the Committee on Aviation for the New Jersey State Defense Council. These activities gave Streeter invaluable experience as a leader and administrator that would benefit her future role in uniform. Meanwhile, she raised four children, three of whom served in the U.S. military during World War II.

When the Japanese attacked Pearl Harbor millions of American men and women flocked to support the war effort. Among them was Streeter. She enlisted in the U.S. Navy's auxiliary organization called the Women Accepted for Voluntary Emergency Service (WAVES). Thomas Holcomb, commandant of the U.S. Marine Corps, resisted the inclusion of women in the corps. He bowed to pressure not only from the government and public but also from the real manpower shortages suffered by the corps. In February 1943, at forty-seven years of age, Streeter transferred from the WAVES to the recently authorized Women's Marine Corps Reserve (WMCR) and assumed the rank of major as its director. The U.S. Marine Corps eventually expanded to a strength of 475,000 officers and enlisted marines by war's end, of which 820 officers and 17,640 enlisted women served in the WMCR (Stremlow 1994, 17).

Major Streeter worked tirelessly to train the women recruits and integrate them into the corps as a whole. She selected only women with high qualifications for the corps. The basic training for women at Fort Lejeune, North Carolina, included the intensive drills and physical education expected of all marines, as well as target practice with small arms and antiaircraft artillery. The female marines replaced men who were needed in combat units in the Pacific. These women competently performed tasks in many military occupational specialties, such as clerical, administrative, maintenance, supervisory, and technical duties. In general, these women possessed education and professional qualifications greater than the men of similar active duty ranks. Members of the WMCR never participated as combatants in World War II.

Streeter brought a vision to her position that looked beyond the limited years of service. Women undoubtedly made significant contributions to the U.S. war effort while serving in the corps. In addition, Streeter hoped that women would acquire new skills and develop self-confidence that they could take with them into their postwar lives. Thus Streeter saw military service as a means of empowerment for women. For her military service Streeter received the Legion of Merit, the American Campaign Medal, and the World War II Victory Medal. Following the end of World War II in August 1945, Ruth Cheney Streeter continued to lead the WMCR until December 1945, when she resigned her commission as a colonel and returned to private life.

—David J. Ulbrich

See also United States, Marine Corps Women's Reserve

References and Further Reading

Meid, Pat. 1968. *Marine Corps Women's Reserve in World War II*. Washington, DC: Historical Branch, G-3 Division, U.S. Marine Corps.

Soderbergh, Peter A. 1992. *Women Marines: The World War II Era*. Westport, CT, and London: Praeger.

Stremlow, Mary V. 1994. *Free a Marine to Fight: Women Marines in World War II*. Washington, DC: History and Museums Division, U.S. Marine Corps.

SUDAN, WOMEN AND THE CIVIL WAR IN

Suffering of women during Sudan's civil war and ethnic cleansing. Civil war in the Sudan began shortly before independence from Great Britain in 1956 and lasted until 1972. It was renewed in 1983 and continued until 2004. The main issue driving the Sudanese civil war is the attempt of the fundamentalist Islamic governments in the north to impose *Sharia* (Islamic law) and the Arabic language on the whole country. The southerners, ethnically African, are either animist or Christian. They have resisted the religious imperialism of several Islamic governments. The groups in the south, however, have also fought each other over grazing lands and perceived tribal injustices.

Women in the Sudan have suffered in a variety of ways. The loss of family members and homelands has been the common lot of women in all parts of Sudan. The suffering has been greatest in the south, where violent death, disease, and starvation have killed great numbers of women and children. The psychological trauma has been devastating for many. Of those who have survived many are physically disfigured as well as emotionally scarred.

Rape has been used as a weapon against women and girls as young as seven years old. Some rapes have been random acts; however, rape has often been used as a matter of policy to disgrace women, destroy families, and sever tribal ties. In Darfur in northwestern Sudan

during the early twenty-first century, “rape camps” contributed to the goal of ethnic cleansing of the Black-Africans via racial dilution. This has been cited as one of the justifications for calling that conflict genocide.

Human rights organizations have verified that southern women and girls have been abducted, taken to the north, and sold into slavery. Some women have been forcibly converted to Islam and married off. Boys under the age of seven are taken to the north and put into Islamic schools. Older males are slain if captured. Southerners, however, have also impressed young males into their guerrilla forces. The abuses suffered by southern women have been caused by combatants on both sides of the war.

In the decades of the civil war, homes and fields have been destroyed, crops have been seized, and hundreds of thousands of southerners have been displaced. Because African women are small-plot gardeners and the sole providers of food for their families, in subsistence economies this has been a serious loss. Seed and cultivating implements have been taken or destroyed, so if the women and children manage to escape the devastation of an attack on their village, there is nothing left when they return and no way to reestablish their livelihood.

Previous attempts to end the conflict had failed. On May 26, 2004, however, key protocols were signed by the government of Sudan and the principal south Sudanese rebel group, the Sudanese People’s Liberation Army. The agreement called for a ceasefire, a power-sharing administration over three contested areas, and autonomy for the south for six years, to be followed by a referendum on independence.

Since 2003 the Darfur region in the northwestern part of Sudan has been the scene of terrible suffering of Black-African Muslim women at the hands of the Janjaweed, government-backed Arab militias. Rape and rape camps have been part of the anti-Black-African ethnic cleansing. The Black African Muslim women who conceive as a result of the gang rapes give

birth to children who are labeled Janjaweed babies. The stigma remains with the mother and child forever. Such a child is called Devil on Horseback (the literal translation for the word *Janjaweed*) before he or she can even crawl.

One unexpected consequence of the civil war has been that some women in the south have been freed from traditional male dominance. With males either dead or gone some women have had to fend for themselves. Others have organized groups such as the Sudanese Women’s Voice for Peace (SWVP); the Widows, Orphans, and the Disabled Rehabilitation Association of New Sudan (WODRANS); the New Sudan Woman’s Federation (NSWF); and the Mundri Relief and Development Association (MRDA).

Women of the southern area have also engaged in armed conflict. Some have risen in the ranks of units into which they enlisted or into which they were forced. Some have become officers and noncommissioned officers. In 1984 the Sudanese People’s Liberation Army, which led the resistance in the second part of the civil war, formed a Girls’ Battalion, which subsequently disbanded. Since 1991 the participation of women in combat has been reduced. Former women soldiers have risen in the governmental units formed in the south.

—Andrew Jackson Waskey

See also Rape in War; Rwanda: Women and the Genocide

References and Further Reading

- Fitzgerald, Mary Anne. 2002. *Throwing the Stick Forward: The Impact of War on Southern Sudanese Women*. Nairobi, Kenya: U.N. Development Fund for Women (UNIFEM).
- Johnson, Douglas. 2003. *The Root Causes of Sudan’s Civil Wars*. London: International African Institute.
- Turshen, Meredith, and Clotilde Twargiramariva, eds. 1998. *What Women Do in Wartime: Gender and Conflict in Africa*. Vol. 1. New York: St. Martin’s.

SUMMERSKILL, EDITH CLARA
(1901–1980), AND
WOMEN'S HOME DEFENCE
CORPS

Labour member of parliament (MP) and founder of the Women's Home Defence Corps in Great Britain during World War II. Born on April 19, 1901, Edith Clara Summerskill trained as a medical doctor, gaining political experience on the Middlesex County Council before entering the House of Commons in 1938 as a Labour MP representing Fulham West and then Warrington. An advocate of women's rights during the war, in the postwar years she served as parliamentary secretary for the Ministry of Food (1945–1950), as minister of national insurance (1950–1951), and as chair of the Labour Party (1954–1955). In 1961 Summerskill was granted a life peerage and entered the House of Lords. She died on February 3, 1980.

Summerskill's involvement in the issue of home defense stemmed from the British response in May 1940 to the threat of invasion: the establishment by the government of the Local Defence Volunteers. Renamed the Home Guard by Winston Churchill, this was a part-time, armed, volunteer defense force of men not in military service. By November 1940 female MPs from across the political spectrum were asking why women were excluded from the Home Guard. The most consistent and determined advocate was Edith Summerskill, who first raised the issue in June 1940. Her demands, however, were ignored, trivialized, or met with arguments pertaining to matters of principle, organization, or the supply of the force.

Summerskill's response was double-pronged. She maintained pressure on the War Office and the government, repeatedly demanding the right for women to learn to defend themselves and their homes through membership in the Home Guard. In the absence of any satisfactory response, she founded the Women's Home De-

fence Corps (WHD). This was a force in which women were trained to handle weapons and learned field craft in order to permit them to play a role in the defense of Britain in the event of an invasion.

Although there is evidence of women's units in the summer of 1940, the first references appear in War Office files from December 1940. In January 1942 the *Times* reported that women were learning to shoot in 30 WHD units, and by December 1942 there were said to be 250 such units with 10,000 members in London alone (Summerfield and Peniston-Bird 2000, 244). The WHD was not only an unofficial organization but also technically illegal because it was a uniformed force that provided weapons training and hence constituted a private army outside the authority of the Crown. The War Office chose not to instigate legal proceedings, however, to avoid public controversy, which could only result in raising the WHD's profile.

When conscription was introduced for the Home Guard in December 1941 and single women aged twenty to thirty became liable for service in the women's auxiliary forces, the illogicality of the exclusion of women from the force in a time of labor shortages was underlined. There is evidence that some Home Guard units had from the outset incorporated women, either in auxiliary capacities or by training them alongside men. In November 1941 the War Office issued an order reiterating that training of women as unofficial Home Guard units had not been authorized and stating explicitly that women were not to be instructed with Home Guard weapons or ammunition. In the face of localized practice, continued political pressure, and the labor shortage, however, the War Office drew up a scheme during 1942 to admit women to the Home Guard under specific terms.

Implemented in April 1943, the scheme involved "nominated women" who were to be suggested by recognized organizations such as the Women's Voluntary Service. These women

were to be between the ages of 18 and 65 (preferably older than 45); they were not to wear uniforms apart from a plastic badge; and they were not to receive weapons training. Their role was to undertake noncombatant duties, including clerical work, cooking, and driving. With the assimilation of women from the WHD into the Home Guard, the pressure to train women for combat roles had successfully been thwarted. In spite of a subsequent name change to Home Guard Auxiliaries, women were never permitted membership under the same terms as men. Their numbers were officially capped; nonetheless, there were 32,000 Women Home Guard Auxiliaries when the Home Guard stood down in December 1944 (Central Statistical Office 1995). Despite women's ultimate inclusion in the force, the gender boundaries surrounding combat had been firmly redrawn.

—Corinna Peniston-Bird

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War II

References and Further Reading

- Central Statistical Office. 1995. *Fighting with Figures*. Foreword by Anthony Montague Brown; text by Peter Howlett. London: Her Majesty's Stationery Office.
- Summerfield, Penny. 2000. "She wants a gun not a dishcloth!" Gender, Service and Citizenship in Britain in the Second World War. Pages 119–134 in *A Soldier and a Woman: Sexual Integration in the Military*. Edited by Gerard J. DeGroot and C. M. Peniston-Bird. London: Pearson Education.
- Summerfield, Penny, and Corinna Peniston-Bird. 2000. Women in the Firing Line: The Home Guard and the Defence of Gender Boundaries in the Second World War. *Women's History Review* 9(2):231–255.
- . Forthcoming. *Contesting Home Defence: Men, Women and the Home Guard in the Second World War*. Manchester, UK: Manchester University.
- Summerskill, Edith. 1967. *A Woman's World*. London, Heinemann.

SUTTNER, BARONESS BERTHA SOPHIE FELICITA VON (1843–1914)

Winner of the 1905 Nobel Peace Prize. Baroness Bertha von Suttner was born Bertha Kinsky in Prague in the Austrian Empire on June 9, 1843. Her father, Count Franz Josef Kinsky von Chinic und Tettau, died before she was born. Her mother wasted her father's legacy at spas and casinos. Bertha became fluent in a number of languages and was known to European society but was forced to take a job as a governess to the young daughters of the Suttner family in Vienna. She fell in love with Arthur, one of the Suttner sons. The family strenuously objected to a marriage because of Bertha's poverty. Nevertheless, she and Arthur married and withdrew for nine years to the Caucasus, where Bertha had friends. They supported themselves giving language and music lessons but spent much time studying contemporary European developments. When Arthur had success writing articles about the Russo-Turkish War of 1877, the two turned to writing. After authoring four novels, the couple moved to Vienna, where Sophie wrote four more novels dealing with social issues before turning to nonfiction. In 1883 she published *Inventarium einer Seele* (Inventory of a Soul), a call for peace and international cooperation. In 1886 the Suttners briefly lived in Paris.

Though her husband, who shared her ideas, lived until 1902, Suttner completely eclipsed him. In Paris she renewed an acquaintance with Alfred Nobel, whom she encouraged to establish a peace prize. She also became acquainted with the International Arbitration and Peace Association, which greatly influenced her. She wrote *Machinenzeitalter* (Machine Age), in which she attacked nationalism and militarism. Her novel *Die Waffen nieder* (Lay Down Your Arms), published in 1889, established Suttner as a leading voice of the peace movement. In 1891 she founded the Austrian Peace Society, and in 1892 she was a founding member of the Bern Peace

Bureau. In 1899 she resided at The Hague during the first Hague Peace Conference and hosted a salon where she promoted her agenda for peace.

In 1905 Suttner was awarded the Nobel Peace Prize. She utilized the occasion to decry the barbarism of war and to call for arbitration. In subsequent lectures she advocated the unification of Europe to forestall war. For her efforts she was excoriated by German and Austrian nationalists. She died on June 21, 1914, thus sparing her the spectacle of the tragedy of World War I.

—Bernard Cook

See also Balch, Emily Green; Peace People Movement; Williams, Jody

References and Further Reading

- Hamann, Brigitte. 1996. *Bertha von Suttner: A Life for Peace*. Translated by Ann Dubsky. Syracuse, NY: Syracuse University.
- Lengyel, Emil. 1975. *And All Her Paths Were Peace*. Nashville, TN: T. Nelson.
- Playne, Caroline Elizabeth. 1936. *Bertha von Suttner and the Struggle to Avert the World War*. London: G. Allen and Unwin.
- Suttner, Bertha von. 1899 (1972). *Die Waffen nieder* [Lay Down Your Arms: The Autobiography of Martha von Tilling]. Translated by T. Holmes. New York: Garland Publishing.
- . 1910 (1972). *Memoiren von Bertha von Suttner* [Memoirs of Bertha von Suttner: The Records of an Eventful Life]. New York: Garland Publishing.

SVOBOD, MARIA (D. 1944)

Hungarian resistance fighter during World War II. Maria Svobod, despite her diminutive size, became a larger-than-life legend among her

fellow Hungarians. Svobod's weapon of choice was a .303 British Enfield rifle, which was nearly as long as she was tall. It was a weapon she effectively used for killing the enemy.

Svobod belonged to the Hungarian resistance fighter band that was led by her husband, Janos Halasi. She was, in Hungarian fashion, sometimes called Janos Halasi (her husband's name) in the way that a woman in English-speaking countries could be called Mrs. John Smith when she is married to Mr. John Smith.

Svobod's unit operated in the northern mountains of Hungary. Her husband had acquired a wide reputation for wearing disguises. There were special operations in which he found it necessary to masquerade as a Roman Catholic or Orthodox priest when in areas with Serbian or Romanian populations. In August 1944 her husband was killed in action.

After the death of her husband, Maria Svobod took command of his unit. She led it on a number of operations against the Nazis. She was killed in battle in late 1944. She died a respected soldier and successful leader.

—Andrew Jackson Waskey

See also Senesh, Hannah

References and Further Reading

- Pinter, Istvan. 1986. *Hungarian Anti-fascism and Resistance, 1941–1945*. Budapest: Akademiai Kiado.
- Truby, J. David. 1977. *Women at War: A Deadly Species*. Boulder, CO: Paladin.

SZABO, VIOLETTE
(1921–1945)

British secret agent during World War II. Violette Szabo, code-named Louise, was a member of the British Special Operations Executive



Violette Szabo. (Hulton Archive/Getty Images)

(SOE) during World War II. She was born Violette Reine Elizabeth Bushell in France on June 26, 1921, to a British father and a French mother. Her family moved to England, where Violette attended school in Stockwell, Brixton, South London. She married Etienne Szabo, an officer of the Free French Forces, in August 1940 and joined the Auxiliary Transport Service (ATS) when her husband's unit was shipped to North Africa. Szabo had just given birth to a daughter when her husband was killed while fighting in El Alamein on October 24, 1942. Violette was recruited to work with the SOE and trained as a member of the secret First Aid Nursing Yeomanry (FANY) unit. The training included learning observation techniques, reading maps, and building physical endurance. Ad-

vanced training included weapons handling and learning self-defense methods.

Her first field operation near Rouen, France, lasted six weeks. She worked with Philippe Liewer (code-named Clement), a correspondent with the Havas news agency. She was briefly detained by military police while determining the number of operatives still working in the area. After she completed her first mission she returned to England and went to stay in the family cottage that now houses a museum dedicated to her memory. She returned to France in June 1944.

Szabo was captured near Limoges. Accounts vary describing her capture. Szabo had been traveling with Jacques Dufour, a member of the French Resistance, when they were trapped by German soldiers. Dufour managed to escape by hiding while Szabo barricaded herself in a house. Some accounts state she kept the Germans at bay in a lengthy gun battle; others believe the story of her bravery to be true but doubt the extent of the gun battle. Szabo was taken prisoner, placed in solitary confinement, and tortured to discover information about British operations in France. Even under torture, Szabo did not divulge anything related to the resistance or the location of operatives.

Szabo was put to death in 1945 at Ravensbrück; she was twenty-three years old. The war was nearing an end when her Nazi captors executed her along with Lillian Rolfe and Denise Bloch, fellow SOE agents. Violette Szabo was posthumously awarded the French Croix de Guerre and the British George Cross. Her George Cross citation reads in part, "Violette Szabo was continuously and atrociously tortured, but never by word or deed gave away any of her acquaintances or told the enemy anything of any value" (www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/SOEszabo.htm). In 1947, Violette and Etienne Szabo's four-year-old daughter, Tania, received both medals for her mother's bravery. The Violette Szabo Museum is located in Wormelow at

SZABO, VIOLETTE

Cartref House. A nature walk from Herefordshire to the museum was dedicated to her memory in 2000. She was made a Member of the British Empire for her bravery.

—*Pamela Lee Gray*

See also Atkins, Vera H.; Ravensbrück

References and Further Reading

Binney, Marcus. 2002. *Women Who Lived for Danger: The Women Agents of the SOE in the Second World War*. London: Hodder and Stoughton.

Minney, Rubeigh James. 1956. *Carve Her Name with Pride*. London: Newnes.

Ottaway, Susan. 2002. *Violette Szabo: The Life That I Have*. Annapolis, MD: Naval Institute Press.



TACKABERRY (BLAKE), BETTY
GUILD (1920-)

U.S. Women Airforce Service pilot. Betty Guild Tackaberry (Blake), nicknamed Tack, graduated from the first class of Women Airforce Service Pilots (WASPs), class number 43-W-1, and served as a ferrying pilot while stationed in Long Beach, California, until the unit's deactivation. As a young girl in Hawaii, Betty Guild had dreamed of flying and devoured books about Charles Lindbergh and women pilots. At fourteen she attended a lecture given by famous pilot Amelia Earhart, who approached Guild and invited her to watch her flight the next day. Earhart's harsh language with her hangar mechanics prompted Guild's father to take Betty home before the flight, but the experience increased her fervor for aviation.

While in high school, flying remained Guild's passion, and she received informal lessons at John Rogers airfield in 1937. She later enrolled at the University of Hawaii to receive ground school instruction in the Civilian Pilot Training (CPT) program and was the first member of her class (which, apart from Guild, was all male) to fly solo. She earned her limited commercial license, flying tourists around the islands until the Japanese bombing of Pearl Harbor on December 7, 1941. She had received her instruc-

tor's rating and regular commercial license the previous afternoon, but civilian flights were immediately banned in Hawaii.

During the ensuing months, Guild worked at the captain of the navy yard's office in Pearl Harbor, logging positions of U.S. naval ships in the Pacific theater. In early February 1942 she married Robert Tackaberry, a naval officer who received orders to report to Philadelphia. She followed him but in November 1942 reported for WASP training at the Army Air Corps base in Houston, Texas. A member of the first class to train for the WASP, she acquired instruction in B-19, B-22, AT-6, P-51, and a twin-engine Cessna aircraft.

After graduation on April 24, 1943, Tackaberry reported to the Ferrying Command in Long Beach. Four days prior, her best friend, Cornelia Fort, was killed during flying exercises, but the incident failed to affect Tackaberry's determination to continue flying. While stationed in Long Beach, she first supervised cross-country flights of newer WASPs and then requested solo ferrying assignments, transporting aircraft directly from factories to other bases.

After the WASP disbanded on December 20, 1944, Tackaberry received instruction at the air force officer's training school in Orlando, Florida, and returned to California as a link (simulated flight) instructor for air force

trainees. During this period, Tackaberry divorced her husband, and in 1945 she terminated her career as a link instructor to transport shrimp from New Orleans to California. She later married George Blake, an officer in the Air Transport Command, stopped flying after her marriage, and moved to Arizona. She remained there after the war, had three sons, and started various successful businesses in the ensuing decades.

Amy S. Balderach

See also Hobby, Oveta Culp; United States, Women Airforce Service Pilots

References and Further Reading

Blake, Betty. Interviewed by Deanie Parrish, November 11, 2001. Wings across America Project, Waco, Texas, and the WASP WWII Museum, Sweetwater, Texas. <http://www.wasp-wwii.org/wings/information.htm> (accessed November 18, 2004).

TALBOT, MARY ANNE (1778–1808)

British woman who fought as a sailor and soldier in male attire. Known as the British Amazon, Mary Anne Talbot was the sixteenth illegitimate child of Lord William Talbot, Baron of Hensol, colonel of the Glamorgan Shire Militia. Perhaps her father spurred her interest in the military. At any rate, as reported in her biography, at the age of fourteen she was seduced by an army captain, Essex Bowen, of the 82nd Regiment of the infantry. Some accounts state that she had fallen in love with him and married him. Disguised as a page, Mary Anne, calling herself John Taylor, accompanied Bowen to Port-au-Prince, Haiti (then St. Domingo), in the West Indies. There, Bowen ordered her to return to England and apparently threatened to sell her into slavery if she refused to become a regimental drummer.

As a drummer, Talbot fought in the siege of Valenciennes, France, in 1793. She was wounded, but Bowen was killed. Free of Bowen, Talbot, hoping to return to England, deserted the army and became a cabin boy on a French ship. The ship, which she had not realized was a privateer, was captured by the *Brunswick*. On the British ship, commanded by Admiral Lord Howe, she was promptly made a powder-monkey, carrying gunpowder to the ship's guns. Talbot was seriously wounded at the Battle of the Glorious First of June in 1794, for which she received a small pension. As soon as her wounds healed, she was once again at sea. This time she was captured by the French and spent eighteen months in prison.

After being freed in a prisoner exchange Talbot signed on a British merchant ship, the *Ariel*, captained by John Field. She claimed that she kept the ship's books, paid the men, and supervised the loading of cargo. She sailed to New York and Rhode Island, where she spent time with Field's family.

Talbot's gender was discovered when she returned to London in 1796. After being seized by a press gang, she revealed her gender to avoid going into battle again. After a short stint as an actor on Drury Lane, where she performed as a man, she was employed by the London publisher Sir Robert S. Kirby as his household servant. Kirby included an account of her adventures in his extremely popular *Wonderful and Scientific Museum* (1804) and later in the book *Life and Surprising Adventures of Mary Anne Talbot in the Name of John Taylor, a Natural Daughter of the Late Earl of Talbot, Related by Herself* (1809). It is not known if Kirby interviewed her or if she wrote the account herself. Because of its popularity, the book stayed in print until 1820. Talbot's wounds and imprisonment, however, took their toll on her health. She died in 1808 at the age of thirty, the year before Kirby published her story.

There are discrepancies in Talbot's story. Captain Bowen's name has never been found on army lists, which seems to indicate that his name was false or that he did not exist. In

addition, the 82nd Regiment did not exist at that time.

—*Leigh Whaley*

See also Great Britain, Women in Service in the Seventeenth, Eighteenth, and Early Nineteenth Centuries

References and Further Reading

- Druett, Joan. 2000. *She Captains: Heroines and Hellions of the Sea*. New York: Simon and Schuster.
- Talbot, Mary Anne. 1809. *Life and Surprising Adventures of Mary Anne Talbot in the Name of John Taylor, a Natural Daughter of the Late Earl Talbot, Related by Herself*. London: R. S. Kirby.

TAMAR (1160–1213)

Queen of the kingdom of Georgia between 1184 and 1213. The eldest daughter of King Giorgi III (1156–1184), Tamar was made a co-regent in 1178 and succeeded her father six years later. Her accession, however, was not without difficulty. Powerful lords took advantage of the passing of the king to reassert themselves. Despite internal dissent, Georgia turned into a powerful kingdom and enjoyed major successes in its foreign policy. Between 1193 and 1194 Tamar led the Georgian army into southwestern Transcaucasia, and in 1195 she defeated a large Muslim coalition in the battle at Shamkhor (in modern Azerbaijan), allowing her to expand her sphere of influence. In 1203 she achieved another triumphant victory when a massive coalition of Muslim states, led by the sultan of Rum, was crushed at Basiani. Georgians annexed Ani, Arran, and Duin between 1201 and 1203, and in 1209 the combined armies captured the emirate of Kars (now in Turkey) while the mighty Armen-Shahs, the emirs of Erzurum and Erzincan (also now in Turkey), and the north Caucasian tribes became the vassals. Georgian influence also extended to the southern coastline of the Black

Sea, where the empire of Trebizond (now in Turkey), a Georgian vassal state, was established in 1204. Tamar then carried war into Azerbaijan and advanced as far as Tabriz, Qazvin, and Khoyn in northern Iran between 1208 and 1210. In 1212 she successfully campaigned against mountaineers in the Caucasus. These victories brought Georgia to the summit of its power and glory, establishing a pan-Caucasian Georgian empire stretching from the Black Sea to the Caspian and from the Caucasus Mountains to Lake Van.

Tamar's political and military successes were accompanied by an equally impressive religious and cultural expansion throughout Asia Minor and the Holy Land. The stability and strong central authority of Tamar's reign facilitated the growth of towns and the development of trade and crafts. Tbilisi, with a population of some 100,000, became one of the largest cities in the Middle East and a center of regional and international trade linking China, Central Asia, and Europe. Tamar's reign also stimulated a renaissance of Georgian sciences and art. Numerous classical Georgian scholarly and literary works such as *Amiran-Darejaniani*, *Abdulmesia*, and *Tamariani* were produced both within Georgia and abroad while the arts of illumination of manuscripts and miniature painting reached their zenith. Georgian monasteries, generously sponsored by the queen, flourished throughout the Holy Land and Asia Minor. Finally, Shota Rustaveli's epic poem, *The Knight in the Panther's Skin*, was dedicated to Tamar; it remains the greatest cultural achievement of Georgia in that age.

—*Alexander Mikaberidze*

See also Guljamal-Khan(um); Kurmanjan-Datkha

References and Further Reading

- Metreveli, Roin. 1992. *Tamar*. Tbilisi, Georgia: Metsniereba.
- Qadagidze, Marine. 2001. *Tamar mepis droindeli matiane: Tskhovreba Mepet mepeta Tamarisi*. Tbilisi, Georgia.

TAMILS, WOMEN AND THE
CONFLICT IN SRI LANKA

Impact on women of the insurgency of the Liberation Tigers of Tamil Eelam, popularly known simply as the Tamil Tigers, which began in 1983 against the Sri Lankan government. The insurgents have asserted that the Sinhalese majority, which has dominated the Sri Lankan government since independence in 1948, has continued to marginalize the Tamil minority. In 1956, Sinhala was made the official language of Sri Lanka, and legislation formalized the preference given to Sinhalese in both educational and employment opportunities. In 1977, however, well before the current Tamil insurgency began, the Sri Lankan government revoked almost all of the laws that placed Tamils at a disadvantage. Nonetheless, the Tamil insurgents have sought to force the creation of a completely independent Tamil state in northern and eastern Sri Lanka. Although the northern districts largely controlled by the Tigers have traditionally been 90 percent Tamil, the eastern districts were only 40 percent Tamil at the beginning of the conflict. In 2003, during negotiations to resolve the conflict, the Tigers did indicate a willingness to consider the creation of a largely autonomous Tamil state within Sri Lanka, but they then undermined the truce established through the negotiations by conducting an escalating series of terror attacks against Sinhalese targets.

The conflict between the Tamil Tigers and the Sri Lankan military has cost almost 70,000 lives, forced more than a million Sri Lankans from their homes, and caused serious disruptions in the national economy. Moreover, the violence has not been restricted primarily to the Tamil-dominated sections of the country: the Tigers have waged a war of terror that has, in effect, transformed the entire nation into a war zone. The Tigers have not only assassinated government officials and military officers but also set off bombs at sites throughout the country. As a result, Sri Lanka's tourist industry, a major element of the nation's economy, has been dramati-

cally affected. In combination with the Tamil insurgency, the extensive destruction caused by the 2005 tsunami has turned much of the eastern coast of Sri Lanka from a tropical paradise into a dangerous wasteland.

The Tamils have long dominated the states in southern India opposite Sri Lanka. Indeed, the Tamil presence in northern and eastern Sri Lanka originated with a Tamil invasion from the Chola Kingdom of southern India in the eleventh century. Beyond the ethnic and cultural differences between the warring parties, there are religious differences: the Tamils are largely Hindus, whereas the majority of the Sinhalese are Buddhists. In 1983 the long-standing antagonism between the two groups erupted into armed conflict. Under the leadership of Velupillai Prabhakaran, the Tamil Tigers began a guerrilla campaign that initially targeted Sri Lankan government sites and officials. In response, the size of the Sri Lankan army was increased from 16,000 men to almost 75,000 men. Defense expenditures rose from 2.5 percent to 12.5 percent of the federal budget.

Although the Indian government initially supported the Tigers, providing them with matériel (including weapons) and funds, the government of Rajiv Gandhi (prime minister from 1984 to 1989) reversed this policy. It cut off aid to the Tigers and, with the consent of the Sri Lankan government, sent a peacekeeping force of 70,000 to the Tamil areas in 1987. The Tigers' strategy shifted from selective operations against specific targets to opportunistic guerrilla warfare and terror attacks against Sinhalese communities. In the middle of the night, Tamil guerrillas would surround a Sinhalese village and then systematically slaughter the inhabitants, typically with machetes and knives. The dark lore that began to accumulate around these attacks included the shocking fact that some of the most bloodthirsty of these killers were women. By 1990 the Tigers had also killed more than 1,000 Indian soldiers, and the Indian force was withdrawn from Sri Lanka. Then, in May 1991, one of the Tigers' suicide bombers assassinated Rajiv Gandhi.

By the early 1990s the Tigers were able to field a trained force of some 3,500 fighters, and they shifted strategy from guerrilla fighting to formal operations against the Sri Lankan army. Although the army was victorious in most pitched battles and overwhelmed several Tamil strongholds, it was unable to eliminate the Tigers, who proved adept at dispersing and reconstituting their forces and in recruiting new adherents from the Tamil population. Prabhakaran has become a very talented propagandist, and he has created around his uncompromising public persona a fanatical cult of personality with all sorts of religious overtones. The Sri Lankan army has reported that more than 600 Tigers have committed suicide by biting into cyanide capsules in order to avoid capture.

The Tigers have achieved even more international notoriety for their willingness to use women and children as both combatants and terrorists. About 30 percent of the Tigers have been women, and Tamil women have carried out approximately one-third of the suicide bombings organized by the Tigers. Indeed, Rajiv Gandhi was assassinated by a young woman: while seemingly offering him a sandalwood garland as a gift, she detonated the plastic explosives that killed not only the two of them but also fifteen others nearby.

The Tamils, for their part, have compiled a long catalog of atrocities committed against their people by the Sinhalese army. They assert that Tamil women have been gang-raped by Sinhalese troops and murdered with impunity. They report abductions of young women, who have been raped, tortured, and then murdered (United Nations Division of the International Federation of Tamils 1997).

Although they speak Tamil, members of Sri Lanka's Muslim minority (Muslims constitute about 7 percent of the country's population) have had tense relations with both the Tamil Tigers and the Sri Lankan government. Yet the escalating use of terror by Islamic insurgencies throughout the world—particularly the reliance on suicide bombers, whose numbers increasingly include women—has led many people to

associate the Tamil Tigers with the Sri Lankan Muslims, an association that is stridently rejected by both groups. One of the points of contention between the groups has certainly been the Tigers' greater willingness to accord women a status more equal to that of men.

—Martin Kich

See also Terrorists, Women

References and Further Reading

- Bloom, Mia. 2005. "Terror's Stealth Weapon: Women." *Los Angeles Times*, November 29, 2005. <http://www.latimes.com/news/opinion/commentary/la-oe-bloom29nov29,0,3416302.story?coll=la-news-comment-opinions> (accessed February 6, 2006).
- Desmond, Edward W. 1987. "If This Is Peace . . . : A Four-Year War Officially Ends, but the Battle Could Rage On." *Time*, August 10.
- . 1991. "Sri Lanka's Tamil Tigers." *Time*, September 16.
- Serrill, Michael S. 1988. "Sri Lanka Blood on the Ballot Box: A Savage Ethnic Rivalry Propels the Country toward Anarchy." *Time*, October 24.
- Tamil Canadian: Tamil's True Voice. "Eliminate the Sinhala State Terrorism." 2006. <http://www.tamilcanadian.com/eelam/massacres/> (accessed February 6, 2006).
- United Nations Division of the International Federation of Tamils. 1997. "An Appeal to Chairperson and Delegates to the 53rd Sessions of the United Nations Commission on Human Rights," March-April 1997. <http://www.tamilcanadian.com/pageview.php?ID=497&SID=91> (accessed February 6, 2006).
- Walsh, James. 1991. "India: Death's Return Visit." *Time*, June 3.

TEODOROIU, ECATERINA
(1894–1917)

The Joan of Arc of Romania. Ecaterina Teodoriu was born in the northern part of the Oltenia region of Romania into a poor peasant family.

There were eight children in the family, and Teodoroiu's childhood was one of poverty and hardship. Having an extraordinary will and a strong character, she struggled to escape poverty and become a schoolteacher. After completing elementary school in her native village, she attended secondary school in Târgu Jiu and was able to continue her studies in Bucharest.

In 1913 during the Second Balkan War, Teodoroiu volunteered for a scouting group that assisted the Romanian military units. In August 1916, during the general mobilization as Romania entered World War I on the side of the Allies, Teodoroiu could not stand idle as her brothers went to war. She volunteered to tend to the wounded soldiers at the Târgu Jiu hospital.

The folk legend of the Virgin from Jiu originated with the battle at the Jiu River. On January 14, 1916, two companies of Bavarian mountain troops pushed to the Jiu bridge and threatened the defenseless city of Târgu Jiu. At that crucial moment Ecaterina Teodoroiu was the first Romanian woman to seize a weapon to save her country. Her action inspired the local population. The bridge was defended and the city saved from the Germans. Teodoroiu's action became a great symbol of Romanian national resistance against foreign invaders. Thus Ecaterina Teodoroiu became the Joan of Arc of Romania.

Subsequently serving as a volunteer in the same military unit with her brother Nicolae, she fought and became a heroic example for the other soldiers. At the beginning of November 1916, seeking revenge following the death of her brother, she fought in the Romanian effort to defend the Gorj region. After three days the Germans captured her unit. During a desperate clash, she shot a sentry and managed to escape. Fighting near the town of Filiasi on November 6, 1916, she was severely wounded in both legs by a mortar shell. She was evacuated with other wounded by hospital train to Moldavia. On March 19, 1917, she was granted the Romanian Military Medal of Honor and was promoted to second lieutenant. After recovering,

Teodoroiu returned to combat. On August 22, 1917, she died in battle while leading her platoon during the great assault on Marasesti.

During her life Ecaterina Teodoroiu became a living legend and a patriotic icon, as was reflected in the April 17, 1917, edition of the newspaper *Romania* of Iasi: "Now, you, Ecaterina, have entered forever into the fairies' ring—dance of the brave legends of our nation." Her myth grew after the 1919 unification of Romania. On June 9, 1921, on the occasion of her reburial in the national unification monument in Târgu Jiu, a great national funeral was organized in her honor.

—Miodrag Milin

See also Marie, Queen of Romania

References and Further Reading

- Grozea, Elsa. 1967. *Sublocotenentul Ecaterina Teodoroiu* [Sublieutenant Ecaterina Teodoroiu]. Bucharest: Editura Militari.
- Mocioi, Ion. 1981. *Ecaterina Teodoroiu eroina poporului Român* [Ecaterina Teodoroiu: Hero of the Romanian People]. Craiova, Romania: Editura Scrisul Românesc.

TERRORISTS, WOMEN

Women who serve as supporters of terrorism and as agents of terror. Although the idea of female terrorists is surprising and even shocking to many people, women have been supporters, active participants, and even leaders in terrorist acts throughout history. In the modern era, female terrorists have been known in all parts of the world, although their motivation may differ from that of their male counterparts.

Statistical evidence based on arrests and other reports indicates that female participation in modern terrorism, particularly in leftist terrorist groups, has been notably high. In European terrorist groups, women have typically

made up about a third of the membership (Hudson 1999, 82). At least one German terrorist group, Red Zora, recruited only women for numerous terrorist acts in the late 1970s and 1980s; the Norwegian terrorist group Valkyria also excluded males from membership. Women were prominent participants in the activities of most late-twentieth-century German terrorist groups, such as the Baader-Meinhof Gang, the Red Army Faction, and the June Second Movement. Female terrorists have been equally common in the Irish Republican Army; the Basque separatist group, Euskadi ta Askatasuna (ETA); various Italian terrorist groups; and the Kurdistan Worker's Party (PKK) in Turkey. Latin American insurgent groups have similarly recruited large numbers of women; the Sendero Luminoso (the Shining Path) and Tupac Amaru terrorist groups have reported that half their members are female. Colombian terrorist groups claim a large percentage of female participants; in the 1985 M19 (19th of April Movement) terrorist attack on Colombia's Palace of Justice, more than half the terrorists were women.

The United States has also had its share of female terrorists; about 8 percent of all persons indicted for terrorist crimes in the United States have been women (Hewett 2003, 69). In the 1970s Americans were familiar with photographs of the kidnapped heiress Patricia Hearst, posing next to the flag of the Symbionese Liberation Army with her assault weapon as she apparently prepared to carry out terrorist acts in California with the group, which had a large female component.

Nor has women's participation in terrorism been confined to Western societies. The Japanese Red Army and the religious terrorist group Aum Shin Rikyo have had numerous female members. North Korea has long-standing training programs for female terrorists, as revealed by Hyun Hee Kim, an infamous North Korean female terrorist who killed more than 100 people by bombing a South Korean airliner and who later recounted her training in a gripping book.

Female terrorists have appeared in Nepal, Sri Lanka, India, and elsewhere in Asia. Finally, the participation of women in terrorist attacks throughout the Muslim world has been increasing dramatically in the past few decades. It can generally be said that anywhere terrorists operate, there will be women supporting them and actively participating in their attacks.

Women are often prized participants in terrorist attacks because security forces are less likely to suspect them, and it is easier for women to infiltrate close to an intended target. Stereotypes about the natural role of women as life-givers and "the gentler sex" contribute to the image that women are less likely to resort to terrorism than men. There is also evidence that female terrorists are more likely to gain sympathy for their acts and to be punished less severely.

Although some scholars have opined that women are less likely than men to be leaders in terrorist acts, this does not appear to be the case. Prominent female terrorist leaders of modern times include: Dora María Téllez Argüello, who acted as second-in-command when a Sandinista terrorist unit attacked Nicaragua's National Palace in 1979; Suzanne Albrecht of the Red Army Faction, who arranged to assassinate a wealthy German businessman and family friend; Ulrike Meinhof of the Baader-Meinhof Gang, who committed suicide in prison in 1976 as an example to her followers; Soledad Iparaguirre of the ETA, who has plotted numerous terrorist attacks in Spain; and Fusako Shigenobu, who founded the Japanese Red Army, trained fellow terrorists all over the world, and evaded Japanese authorities for three decades.

The news media have prominently covered stories about female terrorists, raising awareness of their existence among the public and perhaps even encouraging other women to follow their example. In the 1970s, for example, Palestinian terrorist and hijacker Leila Khaled became internationally famous and a heroine in the Arab world when her photos appeared in major news media. The photos, in which a smiling Khaled

posed with her assault rifle, purportedly convinced other Palestinian women to train as terrorists and may even have inspired writer John Le Carré to pen the best-selling novel *The Little Drummer Girl*, about an actress who pretends to be a female terrorist in order to infiltrate a terrorist network. Le Carré's book was made into a popular film, following a cinematic tradition of celebrating the acts of female terrorists, a tradition perhaps begun by the film *Battle of Algiers*. This 1966 film by Italian director Gillo Pontecorvo depicts a female Algerian terrorist slipping easily with her bombs through French security checkpoints after dressing provocatively and flirting with the male guards.

Although women have often been recruited for terrorist acts because security forces are less likely to suspect them, they have frequently been even more ruthless in action than male terrorists. Female terrorists have also been described as more focused and practical than male terrorists and able to use their social skills to keep groups focused on their goals. Christian Lochte, a German terrorism expert, has argued that female terrorists are generally more single-minded and dangerous than male terrorists and that, for safety reasons, "it is a good idea to shoot the women terrorists first" if security forces encounter both male and female terrorists at the same time (Hudson 1999, 89).

Female terrorists are often motivated by the same anger and desire for revenge that motivate male terrorists, but studies have found some significant gender differences. Female terrorists, for example, are often more committed to their cause, more idealistic, and more prone to turn to terrorism to please others or as a way to achieve others' unfulfilled needs. Feminist ideology has also motivated female terrorists and may explain in part their observed ruthlessness.

A special category of female terrorists is composed of female suicide bombers. The first female suicide bomber to successfully carry out a major bombing attack was Dhanu, a member of the Sri Lankan terrorist group Liberation Tigers of Tamil Eelam (LTTE, also known as the Tamil

Tigers). She assassinated former Indian Prime Minister Rajiv Gandhi in 1991 by approaching him to offer flowers and then blowing herself up. She killed many bystanders as well. The Tamil Tigers have trained brigades of young girls in these techniques, and their female terrorists have carried out dozens of attacks.

Islamic terrorists have also made use of female suicide bombers. The first female Islamic suicide bomber appeared in Lebanon in the mid-1980s, when Syrian intelligence officers encouraged young Lebanese women to carry out suicide attacks against Israeli military units. The first known female Palestinian to engage in such attacks was Wafa Idris, who blew herself up in a store in Jerusalem in 2002, killing an elderly Israeli man and wounding more than 100 bystanders. She had been encouraged to commit her act by a speech made by Palestinian leader Yasser Arafat, who termed her a soldier in his "army of roses." Many other Palestinian women followed her example, and their exploits have been celebrated in Palestinian popular culture. In an interesting study of Palestinian women who have engaged in such attacks, author Barbara Victor has noted that these women have often been cajoled to carry out suicide attacks by male relatives or boyfriends who have convinced the women that, by carrying out a suicide bombing, they could atone for stains on their family honor or their inability to meet male social expectations (Victor 2003, 4, 19, 20, and 25).

In contrast, Chechen Black Widow suicide bombers have sought revenge against Russians who have killed their husbands or brothers in the wars in Chechnya, a breakaway province of Russia. These female terrorists, who sometimes dress in head-to-toe black attire with explosive belts around their waists, first came to prominence in 2002, when they seized a crowded Moscow theater in the middle of a performance and threatened to blow it up. The siege ended when Russian forces stormed the theater, killing most of the terrorists. Other Black Widows have been involved in numerous smaller

terrorist attacks throughout Russia, but their specialty is causing mass casualties. According to Russian authorities, Chechen female terrorists destroyed two Russian airliners by planting bombs on them in 2004. Also in 2004, female Chechen terrorists participated prominently in the hostage crisis and massacre of more than 300 schoolchildren and teachers in Beslan, Russia. There have been some allegations, however, that some of these women were drugged or otherwise coerced into participating in their terrorist acts.

—Margaret D. Stock

See also Algeria, Women in the War of National Liberation; Baader-Meinhof Gang; Chechnya, Impact on Women of Wars in; Colombia, Women and Political Violence in; Islamic Resistance Movements, Women and; Latin America, Women in Guerrilla Movements in; Peru: Shining Path; Red Army Faction, West Germany, Women of the; Red Brigades, Italy, Women of the

References and Further Reading

Hewett, Christopher. 2003. *Understanding Terrorism in America from the Klan to Al Qaeda*. New York: Routledge.

Hudson, Rex A., et al. 1999. "Who Becomes a Terrorist and Why? Report on Profiling Terrorists." A report prepared by an interagency agreement by the Federal Research Division, Library of Congress, Marilyn Majeske, editor, and Andrea M. Savada and Helen C. Metz, project managers. http://www.loc.gov/rr/frd/pdf-files/Soc_Psych_of_Terrorism.pdf (accessed October 28, 2004).

Kim, Hyun Hee. 1993. *The Tears of My Soul*. New York: William Morrow.

Victor, Barbara. 2003. *An Army of Roses: Inside the World of Palestinian Women Suicide Bombers*. New York: Rodale.

Zedalis, Debra D. 2004. "Female Suicide Bombers." Strategic Studies Institute. <http://www.carlisle.army.mil/ssi/pdf/PUB408.pdf> (accessed October 28, 2004).

TERWIEL, MARIA
(1910–1943)

Member of the German anti-Nazi resistance. Maria Terwiel was born in Boppard in the Rhineland on June 7, 1910. Her father was a Catholic and a senior civil servant, but because he was a Social Democrat, he was dismissed from his government post in 1933 after the Nazis came to power. The family then moved to Berlin. Because of her mother's Jewish ancestry, Maria was forced to give up studying law after the Nazis initiated their anti-Semitic program. She then took a job as a secretary in a textile factory. A dedicated Catholic, Maria joined the resistance group of Harro Schulze-Boysen. She distributed material critical of the regime and provided Jews with false passports. Arrested in the aftermath of the Nazi discovery of the Schulze-Boysen Red Orchestra group, she and her fiancé, Helmut Himple, were sentenced to death in January 1943 and were executed in August. In her last letter to her brother, who would die in an air raid, she wrote, "I have absolutely no fear of death. . . . Stay true to your principles and always stick together" (Leber 1994, 126).

—Bernard Cook

See also Harnack-Fish, Mildred; Schulze-Boysen, Libertas

References and Further Reading

Leber, Annedore. 1994. *Conscience in Revolt: Sixty-four Stories of Resistance in Germany, 1933–45*. Boulder, CO: Westview.

THADDEN, ELIZABETH VON
(1890–1944)

Executed for her spiritual resistance to the Nazi state. Elizabeth von Thadden was born in East Prussia on July 29, 1890. Her family moved to

an estate in Pomerania in 1905, and five years later, after the death of her mother, Elizabeth assumed the task of caring for her younger siblings and managing the household. She trained to be a teacher and after two teaching posts founded a Protestant boarding school near Heidelberg. In 1941 she was forced by the Nazis to hand over the direction of her school. She then worked for the Red Cross at soldiers' recreation centers.

Her convictions were conservative and Christian. She had a deep discomfort with the Nazis and sympathized with the Confessional Church, the evangelical opposition to the idolatry of the state. She invited a young man, recommended by friends, to a social at her home. He turned out to be a Gestapo agent who denounced von Thadden and her guests as defeatist opponents of the regime. She was arrested and sentenced to death. The charges were that her comments at the social gathering were detrimental to the morale of the troops and amounted to treason. She was executed on September 8, 1944.

—Bernard Cook

See also Ballestrem-Solf, Countess Lagi

References and Further Reading

Leber, Annedore. 1994. *Conscience in Revolt: Sixty-four Stories of Resistance in Germany, 1933–1945*. Boulder, CO: Westview.

THIRTY YEARS' WAR (1618–1648)

A series of devastating conflicts within the Holy Roman Empire. The conflicts caused a virtual breakdown of the economy, as well as famines and pandemics. Poorly paid mercenary armies attempted to extract supplies from the population and thus often subjected it to considerable hardships. As the empire lost about one-third of its inhabitants, the Thirty Years'

War must be regarded as one of the worst crises in German history.

Many civilians accompanied the mercenary troops. The baggage train of noncombatants could amount to more than half of the army's total strength. These noncombatants consisted in large part of women. Even though many of these women were at least part-time prostitutes, their role was much more complex. Women working as cooks, nurses, tailors, washerwomen, victualers, and dispensers of drink were an integral and indispensable part of the war economy. The camp followers received stolen goods or personally engaged in plunder. Many soldiers took their women and children with them. Part of the baggage train must be considered an accumulation of itinerant households. The women in the train were subject to military justice, and they were required to help fortify camps. Soldiers and officers who attempted to spare their female dependents this type of work caused considerable unrest. As a rule, the women and the whole train of noncombatants were under the surveillance of an officer who was misleadingly called *Hurenwaibel* (overseer of whores).

Military authorities tried to prevent sexual assaults on women in the countryside where the armies operated. Military justice imposed the death penalty for rape. Nevertheless, as it became more and more difficult for princes to pay their mercenary armies, discipline deteriorated. Rape by marauding soldiers seems to have been a common occurrence.

War propaganda used the imagery of gender. German Protestantism was depicted as a woman who turned to Gustavus Adolphus of Sweden for paternal protection. The pamphlets that described the conquest of the town of Magdeburg (maiden borough) used sexual references. They presented the city as a flirtatious girl who made fun of her would-be lovers until she was raped or forced to marry the general of the victorious army.

In his novel *Landstörtzerin Courasche* (1670) Grimmelshausen presented a camp follower as the negative heroine, an embodiment of worldliness. Usurping a male role, Courasche

(Courage) serves in the war as a female soldier. To her the war is an adventure and the opportunity to earn money. Courasche wins and loses a fortune in the war working in turn as a prostitute, a thief, a merchant, and a soothsayer. In his play *Mutter Courage und ihre Kinder* (Mother Courage and Her Children, 1941), Berthold Brecht turned Courasche into a tragic character. Even though Courage loses all of her children in the war, she is unable to overcome her own cynicism and regards the war simply as a business opportunity.

—Johannes Dillinger

See also France, Wars of Religion; Peasants' War

References and Further Reading

- Meumann, Markus. 1996. Soldatenfamilien und uneheliche Kinder: Ein soziales Problem im Gefolge der stehenden Heere [Soldiers' Families and Illegitimate Children: A Social Problem in the Train of Standing Armies]. Pages 219–236 in *Krieg und Frieden [War and Peace]*. Edited by Bernhard Kroener and Ralf Proeve. Paderborn, Germany: Ferdinand Schoeningh.
- Theibault, John. 1995. *German Villages in Crisis: Rural Life in Hesse-Kassel and the Thirty Years' War, 1580–1720*. Atlantic Highlands, NJ: Humanities.

THURSTAN, VIOLETTA (1879–1978)

A university-educated artist with an extensive military and nursing record. Violetta Thurstan served as a nurse in World War I, the Spanish Civil War, and World War II. Thurstan enlisted in the No. 46 Westminster Voluntary Aid Detachment (VAD) in 1913. In August 1914 the British Red Cross (BRC) sent Thurstan to Brussels, Belgium, as the head of a unit. She arrived just ahead of the German army and was subsequently taken prisoner and forced to work in German hospitals in Brussels and Charleroi.

When she was repatriated in October 1914, Thurstan lent her services to the Russian Red Cross and worked on the Polish front until 1915, when she was both wounded and taken ill with pleurisy.

After a brief respite in England, she was sent to Belgium as matron of a military hospital. In 1917 she transferred to a British dressing station at Coxyde where, despite being wounded again, her extraordinary work earned her the British Military Medal. She then went on to head a field ambulance unit in Macedonia before joining the Royal Air Force in 1918.

During World War II she served as an officer in the Women's Royal Naval Service. Following the war she commanded a refugee hospital in Carinthia, Austria, with the Prisoner of War and Refugee Department of the Allied Commission.

—Barbara Penny Kanner

See also Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I; Kea, Salaria; Spanish Civil War, Women and the

References and Further Reading

- Thurstan, Violetta. 1915. *Field Hospital and Flying Column: Being the Journal of an English Nursing Sister in Belgium and Russia*. London: G. P. Putnam's Sons.

TILLION, GERMAINE (B. 1907)

French ethnologist and member of the Resistance during World War II. Germaine Tillion was the daughter of Lucien Tillion, a magistrate, and Émilie (Cussac) Tillion, also a member of the Resistance. Émilie Tillion was killed in the gas chamber at Ravensbrück concentration camp in 1945.

Born on May 30, 1907, in Allègre (Haute-Loire), Tillion studied ethnology at the Institut d'Éthnologie at the Sorbonne, and it was

through her academic studies that she met future members of her Resistance network. Tillion went to Algeria in 1937 to do fieldwork among the Berbers of Chaouïas. She was there when France was defeated by the Germans. She returned to France as Marshal Philippe Pétain was signing the armistice.

Tillion opposed the Vichy regime from the start. She was therefore determined to put her career on hold and devote herself full time to the Resistance movement. In August 1940 a small network of Resistance fighters was formed in Paris, which Tillion named *Musée de l'homme* (Museum of Man) because its founding members were from the museum of that name and the network met clandestinely behind the museum's film room screen. This group was primarily composed of young left-wing intellectuals. Tillion and naturalist and escaped prisoner of war (POW) Boris Vildé were founders of the group, and art historian Agnès Humbert was in charge of recruitment. Other members of the group included Anatole Lewitsky, a Russian anthropologist, and Yvonne Oddon, a friend and colleague of Tillion. Tillion helped people get into unoccupied France by indicating places where the border could be crossed without German passes. In addition, she found people who would hide and feed evaders; she also supplied those fleeing with false papers. She enlisted teams of men and women to assist POWs in escaping from German camps in France. These prisoners included French, Asian, and African troops, as well as Jews.

Tillion was arrested on August 13, 1942. She was held at the Santé prison and then transferred to Fresnes. On October 21, 1943, she was deported to the Ravensbrück work camp, where her mother was also imprisoned. Tillion survived and was freed in April 1945, because Heinrich Himmler had made an agreement with the United States to exchange French prisoners for German prisoners who were interned in liberated France.

During her time in prison, Tillion managed to take copious notes about her life at Ravensbrück. These notes and further research re-

sulted in her book *Ravensbrück* (1946). Tillion attended the Hamburg trials of those who ran Ravensbrück. She was distressed because she felt the facts were not accurately reported. According to Tillion, “The representation—re-presentation—of crimes followed its course, and I measured the deepening of the abyss being dug between what really happened and the uncertain re-presentation we call history” (Tillion 1975, 180).

—Leigh Whaley

See also France, Resistance during World War II, Women and; Ravensbrück

References and Further Reading

- Lacouture, Jacques. 2000. *Le témoignage est un combat. Une biographie de Germaine Tillion* [Witness Is a Battle: A Biography of Germaine Tillion]. Paris: Seuil.
- Reid, Donald. 2003. Germaine Tillion and Resistance to the Vichy Syndrome. *History and Memory* 15, no. 2 (Fall):36–63.
- Tillion, Germaine. 1975. *Ravensbrück*. Translated by Gerald Satterwhite. Garden City, NY: Anchor.

“TOKYO ROSE” (IVA IKUKO TOGURI D’AQUINO) (1916–)

The nickname U.S. GIs fighting in the Pacific theater gave to an English-speaking Japanese radio announcer. Her sultry-voiced propaganda broadcasts were designed to weaken morale. In reality, there were many Tokyo Rose broadcasters engaged in different types of propaganda. Tokyo Rose was part myth and part reality. Nonetheless, a Japanese American woman, Iva Toguri, was labeled as Tokyo Rose and was convicted of treason but later pardoned.

Iva Toguri's first name in Japanese was Ikuko. She was born on July 4, 1916, in Los Angeles, California, to Japanese immigrant parents. Her father, Jun Toguri, reared her to be as “American” as possible. Iva Toguri at-

tended the University of California at Los Angeles (UCLA), earning a bachelor's degree in biology in 1940.

Toguri's parents had sent her to Japan in 1941 to help a sick aunt. In the haste to reach her aunt, she applied for a passport but was issued a Certificate of Identification instead because of the length of time needed to secure a passport. When Toguri arrived in Japan she found it difficult to adjust and wanted to return to California immediately. She could have become a citizen of Japan, but because of her loyalty to the United States, she refused official suggestions that she claim Japanese citizenship. By late 1942 Toguri was in a precarious position. Needing to support herself, she found a job as an English-language typist for Radio Tokyo. In November 1943 she was transferred from the typing pool to station NHK. There she worked with a broadcasting group led by Major Charles Cousens, an Australian prisoner of war with pro-American sympathies. Cousens chose Toguri for the job because she had very strong U.S. ties and because she had a voice unsuitable for pleasant broadcast listening.

After the occupation of Japan, reporters tried to find Tokyo Rose. A reporter for *Cosmopolitan* magazine located Toguri and offered her \$2,000 to say that she was Tokyo Rose. In dire economic straits, she agreed to the sham, but *Cosmopolitan's* editors refused to pay anything. U.S. authorities, however, acted, and Toguri was arrested and imprisoned at Sugamo Prison on a charge of treason. She was released when no solid evidence could be found to support the charge.

Toguri had been an announcer for the Tokyo-based program “Zero Hour,” which broadcast music, the reading of letters by Allied prisoners, and some news. The female disk jockey called herself Orphan Ann. There was nothing in her broadcasts that was significant enough to qualify as propaganda.

Nevertheless, Iva Toguri was tried for treason in Federal District Court in San Francisco in July 1949. She had been arrested again on August 16, 1948, charged with “a treasonable act



Correspondents interview “Tokyo Rose,” Iva Toguri, 1945. (National Archives)

... with an intent to betray the United States” while in Japan. Her arrest occurred despite the fact that she had been cleared by an investigation conducted by General Douglas MacArthur's staff after the war. Media agitation reflecting anti-Japanese sentiment had instigated the prosecution.

The pretrial investigations and Toguri's court case were tainted by prosecutorial misconduct. Witnesses were threatened, evidence was withheld, false testimony was given, and procedural rights were denied. Toguri's husband, Felipe d'Aquino, a Portuguese citizen of Japanese and Portuguese ancestry, tried to help her but was so intimidated by the harassment of federal officials that he returned to Japan and was never allowed to reenter the United States.

Toguri was acquitted of all charges except that “she spoke into a microphone about several ships that were sunk” (Duus 1990, 178). She was sentenced to ten years in prison and a fine. She served eight years. Following her release the federal government tried to strip her of her U.S. citizenship and to deport her. In 1977 President Gerald Ford granted her a pardon and restored her civil rights. She is the only American ever granted a pardon for a conviction of treason. Toguri lived in Chicago after her release from federal prison in 1958.

—Andrew Jackson Waskey

See also “Axis Sally”; “Lady Haw Haw”

References and Further Reading

- Duus, Masayo. 1990. *Tokyo Rose, Orphan of the Pacific*. New York: Harper & Row.
 Gunn, Rex B. 1977. *They Called Her Tokyo Rose*. Santa Monica, CA.
 Howe, Russell Warren. 1990. *The Hunt for “Tokyo Rose.”* Lanham, MD: Madison Books.

TOMARA, SONIA (1897–1982)

First female war correspondent of World War II. Sonia Tomara was a Russian expatriate who fled St. Petersburg during the Russian Revolution. In France she found work as a secretary to the foreign editor of the French newspaper *Le Matin* and, because of his frequent absences, often took charge of the desk herself. She was soon plunged into international political reporting as well as financial affairs, which in 1928 led to writing a weekly financial review for the *New York Herald Tribune* and to an assignment with its Paris bureau.

During the 1930s Tomara covered the rise of Adolf Hitler and spent time in Nazi Germany, where she developed the reputation of being a shrewd political commentator. In 1937 she

joined the *Herald Tribune* staff in New York; however, in 1939 she returned to Europe and became a roving correspondent. In September 1939 Tomara witnessed the German blitzkrieg in Poland and reported on the fall of Warsaw. She then moved to Paris and covered the German invasion of France. In June 1940 she was forced to flee the city on foot because of the imminent approach of the German armies. After the June 22, 1944, armistice and the establishment of the German-controlled French government at Vichy, Tomara escaped to Portugal and then to New York, where, after the important stories she had covered in Europe, her first major assignment was to write about a cat show. She later said it was humiliating, but it taught her something about reporting in the United States.

In 1942 Tomara received formal accreditation as a U.S. war correspondent. She was assigned to the Far East, where she covered the political and military situation in the China-Burma-India theater. She traveled extensively in the region and in December 1942 was in Calcutta when the Japanese bombed the city. In May 1943 she moved to China, where for three months she covered Nationalist Chinese military actions against Japan on the Yangtze River. In late 1943 Tomara left China, traveling first to Cairo and then on to Tehran, where she reported on meetings of the major powers. She was then reassigned to Algiers, where she spent six months covering the Allied Forces Headquarters in North Africa. In the summer of 1944 Tomara returned briefly to Paris, only to resign from the *Herald Tribune* in 1945 when she married U.S. federal judge William Clark, whom she met in Algiers.

—Brett F. Woods

See also Chappelle, Dickey; Emerson, Gloria; Fallaci, Oriana; Higgins, Marguerite; Hull, Peggy, pseud.; Journalists, American Women, during World War I; Luce, Clare Boothe; Schuyler, Philippa; Trotta, Liz; Watts, Jean

References and Further Reading

- Collins, Jean E. 1980. *She Was There: Stories of Pioneering Women Journalists*. New York: Julian Messner.
- Wagner, Lilya. 1989. *Women War Correspondents of World War II*. New York: Greenwood.

TOWER, ELLEN MAY
(1868–1899)

The first American woman to die on foreign soil in service to the United States. Ellen May Tower was the first nurse to die during the Spanish-American War and the first woman from Michigan to be honored with a military funeral—the third such in the United States.

Tower was born May 8, 1868, in Byron, Michigan, the daughter of Judge Samuel Spruce Tower, an American Civil War veteran, and Sarah S. Bigelow. She attended the Chaffee School and the Byron Village School, from which she graduated. The family moved to Onaway after her mother's death in 1880. Tower taught school in the Bancroft area and then worked for a female physician, Dr. Whealock. This revived her childhood dream of a nursing vocation.

Attending a nurses' training program at Detroit's Grace Hospital, the twenty-six-year-old Tower graduated on January 17, 1894, and began working at the Michigan School for the Blind in Lansing. After four years at the school, Tower returned to Grace Hospital for special training as a war nurse. She was made superintendent of nursing and became the first nurse to volunteer for duty with the U.S. Army during the Spanish-American War. After sending several letters to the surgeon general's adviser, Dr. Anita Newcomb McGee, Tower was accepted into the Daughters of the American Revolution (DAR) Hospital Corps, which acted as an examining board to help in hiring the most competent nurses to serve during the war.

After taking her oath on September 1, 1898, Tower, along with seventeen other nurses, was sent to Camp Wikoff at Montauk Point, New York, where she received thirty dollars a month and daily rations. There she earned the nickname the Camp Wikoff Angel for her devoted care of soldiers and her efforts to inform and console their families, whose concerns went unaddressed by the military. Tower was reassigned to San Juan, Puerto Rico, with four other nurses from Camp Wikoff. A few months after her arrival, Tower was the first nurse to contract typhoid fever. She died from acute pericarditis, ironically, the day before the Treaty of Paris was signed.

Dr. Sterling, who awarded Tower her nursing diploma, delivered Tower's eulogy at the Cass Avenue Methodist Episcopal Church. After her body lay in state at the Light Guard Armory in Detroit, 5,000 people, including many dignitaries, traveled to Bryon, where she was buried on January 17, 1899.

A ten-foot monument made by her cousin was placed at her grave in 1903 after friends, with help from the Women's Relief Corps, raised funds for its cost. A post office bearing her name was established near the village of Onaway, where her father resided. Tower was honored later that year when a new town, laid out west of Onaway, was named Tower in remembrance of her.

—Rebecca Tolley-Stokes

See also McGee, Anita Newcomb; Spanish-American War, Women and the

References and Further Reading

- Graf, Mercedes H. Women Nurses in the Spanish-American War. *Minerva: Quarterly Report on Women and the Military* 19, no. 1 (Spring):3–27.
- Michmarkers.com. "Ellen May Tower." Michigan Historical Markers. <http://www.michmarkers.com/startup.asp?startpage=L1619.htm> (accessed September 9, 2004).
- Seward, Kathryn E., and Jennifer D. Freese Walkling. 1980. *The Village of Byron and Its Heroine, Ellen May Tower*. Privately printed.

TRAUMA AND BRUTALIZATION
UNLEASHED BY WORLD WAR I

Psychological and social impact of World War I. World War I resulted in unprecedented levels of psychological brutality and human devastation for both men and women. One of the symbols of modern warfare's incredible violence was the diagnosis of widespread mental injuries, called shell shock, war hysteria, or war neurosis by European doctors. These terms for what is today known as posttraumatic stress disorder were used following 1914 to describe myriad physical and psychological symptoms found in both men and women, ranging from tics, tremors, and paralysis to nightmares, heightened anxiety, uncontrollable aggression, and various emotional disorders. Medical debates over the causes of shell shock resulted in revisions of long-held assumptions about the connections between mental illness, gender, and social class. Shell shock was also a uniquely politicized wound. The problem of traumatic neurosis intensified existing social and political divisions over responsibility for the war, welfare for war victims, changes in gender norms and traditional values, and class tensions.

British and German doctors were the first to define shell shock in the early phases of the war, and their diagnoses reflected prewar assumptions about gender, social class, and the origins of mental illness. Before 1914 doctors widely assumed that mental illness was physiological in origin, and they constructed hysteria as an essentially female ailment, sometimes found in "unmanly" men across social classes, especially those allegedly weakened by urbanization and the erosion of traditional gender roles, or in working-class men who lacked self-control. Doctors also theorized that war would rejuvenate a society made increasingly decadent and that men and women behind the war would strengthen their nerves as they devoted themselves to national sacrifice and traditional authority and values. Warfare experienced at the Marne, the Somme, Verdun, and other sites of mass slaughter, however, resulted in an outbreak

of widespread symptoms of neurotic disorders that crossed class lines, pushing psychiatrists to reevaluate their views on hysteria as primarily feminine or working-class in origin. The British army ultimately saw approximately 200,000 men with symptoms of traumatic neurosis, with the German and French armies suffering similar levels of such wounds.

Doctors first tried to restore masculinity through feminine tasks, including craftmaking and domestic chores, giving shell-shocked men a sense of confidence before they returned to a militarized, masculine environment that demanded discipline and obedience—namely, the front lines. Such treatment assumed that men first had to rebuild themselves through feminine paths of behavior before they could be restored to their essential, and superior, male gender identities. More severe cases were treated with electroshock therapy; when this failed, doctors experimented with forms of psychotherapy. This technique was most famously practiced by British doctor W. H. R. Rivers when he treated officers Siegfried Sassoon and Wilfred Owen, who expressed their war experiences in some of the most famous antiwar poetry of the century. In this context, Rivers acknowledged the essentially psychological nature of the wounds and the fact that even manly, healthy soldiers could be traumatized by the brutality and stress of modern combat.

Medical debates over the origins of shell shock evolved into politicized debates over responsibility for the consequences of the war and the significance of psychological trauma. Conservative interwar groups placed responsibility for shell shock on the men who suffered from it, targeting them as malingerers bent on escaping the trenches and acquiring a pension. Conservative politicians resisted paying welfare for traumatized men, and they called on women to practice traditional roles as nurturers—with assistance from the paternal authority of doctors—to restore a sense of discipline that would help men recover and become economically productive. More progressive political organizations, for example, the German Social Democra-

tic Party (SPD), emphasized combat stress as primarily responsible for inflicting mental wounds and called for the expansion of state welfare institutions in providing health care, job retraining, and assistance for men reintegrating into work and family. Despite some conservative protests, British shell shock victims received substantial compensation for mental wounds in the wake of the *War Office Report on Shell Shock* (1922). Germany's 1920 National Pension Law also provided some of the most progressive approaches to war neurosis, defining it as a legitimate injury found in both men and women stressed by total war, entitling victims to state compensation.

As a result of defeat, Germany's political battles over war neurosis were particularly divisive and bitter. The SPD spearheaded the movement for more state spending for both men and women traumatized by war. Women SPD activists such as Alma Hissfeld and Martha Harnoss argued that working-class women were the most deeply traumatized by the war's effects, forcing them to struggle as single breadwinners in an economy that provided less pay to women while they tended to the emotional well-being of children and, eventually, mentally devastated men returning home. The SPD ultimately failed to bridge divisions between men and women, exacerbated by deepening pension cuts spearheaded by conservative parties in the midst of economic crisis. Men cut from the pension rolls by doctors and finance ministers resented women who continued to receive welfare for so-called hysterical disorders caused by the Great Inflation, the economic catastrophe of 1923 during which German currency lost almost all of its value and caused immense social misery.

Organizations further to the political left, for example, the German Communist Party, claimed that working-class men were actually the most resilient in the trenches, hardened by years of exploitation in prewar factories. Communist leaders asserted that the real hysterics were military officers and doctors who sadistically sent men to war, tortured them with electroshock treatment, and then labeled them unmanly

when they broke down under inhuman levels of stress. Communists argued that conservatives invented the concept of war hysteria and neurosis to deflect from their own responsibility in starting the war and to avoid paying its costs. When the Nazis came to power in 1933, they completely cut war neurotics from the pension rolls and blamed neurosis on welfare, democracy, pacifism, and the "new woman," all of which allegedly sapped men of their essential warrior instincts and masculine character.

Many doctors, state representatives, and lay critics feared that war neurosis was only the tip of deeper social and cultural disorders brought on by brutalization in total war. Psychiatrists in Germany testified in the Reichstag just after the armistice that war neurotics were responsible for an epidemic of moral deviance and disrespect for traditional gender roles and class hierarchies. The popular press published stories about sadistic men returning to the front as criminals, sex fiends, and murderous predators, fueling public fears that veterans could never be reintegrated into work and family. In *Sexual Life in the War* (1920), German journalist Hans Georg Baumgarth argued that soldiers brought their "primitive instincts" from the trenches and inflicted "bestial sexual acts" on their wives. Sexual passion and violence also rose in women, Baumgarth argued, leading to promiscuity, divorce, and domestic conflict.

German sexologist Magnus Hirschfeld claimed that the war stimulated latent violent instincts that threatened families and the social order. In *The Moral History of the World War* (1930), Hirschfeld pointed to the war as responsible for a rise in domestic violence and murders. The economic and sexual deprivations caused by the war, combined with fear and stress, led women to mimic the violence at the front in order to escape. Hirschfeld claimed that women who killed their abusive, emotionally unresponsive husbands who had just returned from the front were themselves secondary victims of the war. Though their experiences were different, Hirschfeld argued, both men and women suffered the same violent urges and

psychological trauma stemming from the brutality of total war.

—Jason Crouthamel

See also France, World War I, Psychological Impact on French Women; Rape in War

References and Further Reading

- Hagemann, Karen, and Stefanie Schüler-Springorum, eds. 2002. *Home/Front—The Military, War, and Gender in Twentieth Century Germany*. New York: Berg.
- Leese, Peter. 2002. *Shell Shock: Traumatic Neurosis and the British Soldiers of the First World War*. New York: Palgrave Macmillan.
- Micale, Mark S., and Paul Lerner, eds. 2001. *Traumatic Pasts: History, Psychiatry, and Trauma in the Modern Age, 1870–1930*. London: Cambridge University Press.
- Showalter, Elaine. 1987. Rivers and Sassoon: The Inscription of Male Gender Anxieties. Pages 61–69 in *Behind the Lines—Gender and the Two World Wars*. Edited by Margaret Randolph Higonnet, Jane Jenson, Sonya Michel, and Margaret Collins Weitz. New Haven, CT: Yale University.
- Whalen, Robert. 1984. *Bitter Wounds: German Victims of the Great War, 1914–1939*. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University.

TRAVERS, SUSAN
(1909–2003)

The only woman to serve in the French Foreign Legion. Daughter of a retired Royal Navy admiral, Travers led the rather inconsequential life of a socialite. After attending finishing school in Florence, she resolved to leave, in her words, “the humdrum reality of . . . life” and begin to pursue men as her “ticket to . . . wealth, and happiness,” determined to “use my charms to my greatest advantage.” Between 1929 and 1939 she indulged in “a heady decade of socializing” across Europe, “embarking,” she wrote “on several affairs with wholly unsuitable men”

(Travers 2001). When war came in 1939, Travers joined the French Red Cross and became an ambulance driver. In 1940 she accompanied the French expeditionary force sent to help the Finns in the Winter War against the Russians. Later that year, shocked by France’s collapse to Nazi Germany, she was determined “to do something of value on the front lines” (Travers 2001). After hearing a powerful broadcast by General Charles de Gaulle, calling for all French soldiers and others to join with his Free French, she went to his headquarters in London and joined the Free French forces. Attached to the 13th Demi-brigade of the Foreign Legion, she sailed for West Africa, where she witnessed the abortive attack on Dakar. She was then posted to Eritrea and took on the hazardous job of driving for senior officers, including Free French General Pierre Koenig. The desert roads were often mined and subject to enemy attack; she survived a number of crashes and was wounded by shellfire. As the only woman in her company, she was given the name La Miss. In the spring of 1942 her unit was sent to hold the bleak fort of Bir Hakeim, at the southern tip of the Allied defensive line in the western desert of North Africa. Fighting against overwhelming odds, the legionnaires—Travers among them—held out for fifteen days, turning Bir Hakeim into a French symbol of hope and defiance. With all ammunition and water exhausted, Koenig led a breakout at night through the minefields and three concentric cordons of German panzers that encircled the fort. Travers drove him to safety under intense fire. She was awarded the Croix de Guerre and the Ordre du Corps d’Arme for her actions in this feat. She remained with the Legion in Italy and France until the end of the war. In May 1945 she applied to officially join the Legion, taking care to omit her gender from the form. She was appointed an officer in the logistics division, becoming the only woman ever to serve with the Legion. In 1956 she was awarded the Medaille Militaire and in 1996 the Legion d’Honneur, in recognition of her bravery at Bir Hakeim.

—Alexander Mikaberidze

See also Nirouet, Collette

References and Further Reading

- Porch, Douglas. 1991. *The French Foreign Legion: Complete History of the Legendary Fighting Force*. New York: HarperCollins.
- Travers, Susan. 2001. *Tomorrow to Be Brave: A Memoir of the Only Woman Ever to Serve in the French Foreign Legion*. New York: Free Press.

TROTТА, LIZ

Reporter during the Vietnam and Yom Kippur Wars. Liz Trotta, winner of three Emmy Awards for television broadcasting and two Overseas Press Club Awards, worked in the early twenty-first century in syndicated news broadcasting. When she began her journalism career in 1965, she was relegated to articles classified as “topics of women’s interest.” These assignments included reporting on the wedding dress of Lynda Bird Johnson, President Lyndon Johnson’s daughter, in 1967. Trotta fought the typecasting of female reporters and ended up, through sheer tenacity, covering the fighting front during the Vietnam War in 1968. She was the first U.S. female journalist to be assigned to report on tough news stories and battlefront war coverage. She returned to Vietnam on the tenth anniversary of the end of the war. Despite her excellence in reporting, Trotta lost her network news job due to age discrimination, something her male counterparts at the network did not face.

Liz Trotta graduated from Columbia University with an advanced degree in journalism. She began her career as a print journalist for the *Chicago Tribune* and *Newsday*. Her entry into broadcast news came in 1965 when she went to work for WNBC, the NBC affiliate in New York City. Trotta made her name in broadcast journalism by covering some of the most important stories of her lifetime, and in many ways she made possible the aspirations of today’s female reporters.

Among the important stories Trotta covered was Senator Edward Kennedy’s car accident at Chappaquiddick, where a campaign staff member was drowned in a car Kennedy was driving in June 1969. She reported on the George McGovern presidential campaign against Richard M. Nixon in 1972. Trotta again used her war correspondent skills in reporting on the Yom Kippur War in October 1973, exposing herself to mortar attack. When Iranian militants invaded the U.S. Embassy in Tehran on November 4, 1979, Trotta covered the hostage crisis, which at one point involved fleeing from a hostile crowd. In the early 1980s she wrote articles chronicling the media circus of the Von Bulow trial, in which husband Claus was accused of killing his heiress wife, Sunny, by drug injection. In 1983, with the U.S. invasion of Grenada, Trotta again covered the front lines of war on the island nation.

Trotta is known for her conservative views. After her dismissal from NBC in 1984, she held jobs at Hillman Periodicals, the Inter-Catholic Press Agency, *Long Island Press*, *Chicago Tribune*, *Newsday*, and the CBS Morning News. She lives in New York City, where she is a news analyst for the FOX News Channel and also serves as the New York bureau chief for the *Washington Times*. She occasionally teaches journalism, notably at Stern College of Yeshiva University. Trotta’s conservative commentary continues to create heated debate.

—Pamela Lee Gray

See also Chapelle, Dickey; Emerson, Gloria; Fallaci, Oriana; Higgins, Marguerite; Hull, Peggy, pseud.; Journalists, American Women, during World War I; Luce, Clare Boothe; Schuyler, Philippa; Tomara, Sonia; Watts, Jean

References and Further Reading

- Trotta, Liz. 1991. *Fighting for Air: In the Trenches with Television News*. New York: Simon and Schuster.
- . 1998. *Jude: A Pilgrimage to the Saint of Last Resort*. San Francisco: Harper.

TRÜMMERFRAUEN

TRÜMMERFRAUEN (RUBBLE WOMEN)

Tens of thousands of women, typically 16 to 45 years old, who removed debris from Germany's bombed-out cities after World War II. Demographic changes—over 3 million German men died in the war, and in 1945 over 11 million were prisoners in Allied camps—necessitated that women help clear the ruins. The work of the Trümmerfrauen (rubble women or women of the rubble) entailed removing rubble by hand, sorting building materials that could be reprocessed, disposing of materials that could not be recycled, cleaning mortar and cement from the salvaged material, and stacking stones and bricks for reuse.

Originally, occupation authorities forced families of National Socialist party members to clear rubble as part of the denazification process. The intense destruction of German cities, however, required authorities to compel larger sections of the populace to work removing debris. Almost all women ages 15 to 50 and men ages 14 to 65 were legally required to register with the unemployment office, although mothers of young children, students, and the disabled and sick were exempt from employment. The type of employment determined the level of ration card they received. Those involved in more strenuous labor, such as Trümmerfrauen, received a card that allowed them more calories per day. Immediately after World War II, each German received on average 1,100



*Trümmerfrauen, or rubble women, in the British section of Berlin as they leave work for the day, 1948.
(Bettmann/Corbis)*

calories per day, although the minimum daily requirement as set by the League of Nations was approximately 2,400 calories per day. During this time Germans also faced a lack of housing, crime, harsh winters without sufficient coal, political instability, and the threat of war between the Soviet Union and the United States.

Occupation and German authorities always viewed women as a temporary solution to Germany's postwar labor difficulties. Thus, they were prevented from seeking apprenticeships or higher positions within the construction industry, and health and safety officials and employers cared little for occupational injuries and other job-related health problems. Trümmerfrauen also earned less than male construction workers although Allied occupiers stated that contractors could pay women as much as men if they so desired. In reality, rubble cleanup was strenuous for women, and many did not hesitate to leave the construction industry after their mandatory service was finished or when they could find other means of supporting themselves and their families.

In the 1950s the Trümmerfrau gave way to the *Hausfrau* (housewife) as more women returned to domestic labor. This relieved many conservatives who thought that the hard work would spoil the gentle, feminine character of women and worried that women would forget their female duties, such as raising children and housework. Trümmerfrauen, however, became symbols for the creation of a new Germany after its destruction during the war and for the hard work and sacrifice that led to the *Wirtschaftswunder* (economic miracle). The pictures of devastated German cities and of women toiling among the ruins became symbols of Germany's suffering and victimization—not only for women but for men as well. In later generations, the Trümmerfrau became a symbol for the catastrophic consequences of war and the immediate postwar generation's lack of interest in confronting Germany's National Socialist past. Nevertheless, this criticism should not tarnish the amazing achieve-

ments of Germany's women during the country's reconstruction from 1945 to 1950.

—Chad Wallo

See also Germany, Women and the Home Front, World War II

References and Further Reading

- Heineman, Elisabeth. 1996. The Hour of the Woman: Memories of Germany's "Crisis Years" and the West German National Identity. *American Historical Review* 101, no. 2 (April):354–395.
- Höhn, Maria. 1997. Stunde Null der Frauen? Renegotiating Women's Place in Postwar Germany. Pages 75–87 in *Stunde Null: The End and the Beginning Fifty Years Ago*. Edited by Geoffrey J. Giles. Washington, DC: German Historical Institute.
- Kuhn, Anette, ed. 1984. *Frauen in der deutschen Nachkriegszeit. Frauenarbeit 1945–1949* [*Women in the Postwar Period of Germany—Women's Work 1945–1949*]. Vol. 2. Düsseldorf: Schwann.
- Polm, Rita. 1990. "Neben dem Mann die andere Hälfte eines Ganzen zu sein!?" *Frauen in der Nachkriegszeit—Zur Situation und Rolle der jüngeren Frauen in der Städten der Bundesrepublik (1945–1949)* ["Man's Other Half": Women in the Postwar Period—On the Situation and Role of Young Women in the Cities of the Federal Republic (1945–1949)]. Munster, Germany: Unrast.

T'SERCLAES, BARONESS
ELIZABETH DE (NÉE SHAPTER)
(1884–1978)

Ambulance driver and first-aid nurse during World War I in Belgium. Along with Mairi Chisholm, she established a frontline dressing station in Pervyse in November 1914, for which both women became renowned. Set up initially in a cellar and then in a series of abandoned houses, the post was not evacuated until the

women were severely gassed in March 1918. Both were awarded the Chevaliers de L'Ordre de Léopold II in 1915 and given the British Military Medal in 1917.

Elizabeth (Elsie) Knocker (the future Baroness T'Serclaes) went to Belgium as a member of Dr. Hector Munro's Flying Ambulance Column in September 1914. The volunteer unit was made up of six men and four women, of whom she was the only trained professional nurse. The self-financing group aimed to help the Belgian medical service, which was in disarray after the German invasion. Knocker translated her skills as an avid motorcyclist to become an ambulance driver for the unit, which collected, treated, and transported wounded Belgian soldiers. After two months she became frustrated with the group's disorganization, and she and Chisholm resolved to set up an advanced dressing station a few hundred yards from the frontline trenches, where their skills would be put to better use.

Knocker recognized that it was vital for wounded soldiers to have immediate treatment for clinical shock to prevent deaths from minor injuries. She and Chisholm gave wounded Belgian soldiers prompt treatment and rest before the long, arduous ambulance journey to a field hospital. Just as the services of the Ambulance Corps had been rejected by the British War Office and the British, American, and French Red Cross, Knocker and Chisholm initially had difficulties obtaining permission and supplies for their advanced dressing station. As news of their efforts on the front lines spread, the Heroines of Pervyse were able to muster donations for the station through their newfound fame as well as their personal connections and the proceeds from lectures they gave in Britain on visits home.

Baroness T'Serclaes was born Elizabeth Blackall Shapter on July 29, 1884, in Exeter, Devon. In 1906 she married Leslie Duke Knocker. The couple's son, Kenneth Duke Knocker, was born in 1907, and the couple

subsequently divorced. Privately educated, Knocker then undertook nurse's training at the Children's Hip Hospital, Sevenoaks, Kent, and trained as a midwife at Queen Charlotte's Hospital, London. In April 1916 she married Belgian pilot Baron Harold T'Serclaes, who died in 1919. After her evacuation from Pervyse in March 1918, she was an officer in the newly formed Women's Royal Air Force (WRAF) until it was disbanded at the end of the war. During World War II, the baroness was an assistant section officer in the WRAF, but she resigned when her son, a Royal Air Force pilot, was killed in action in 1942. She continued to be active in the Royal Air Force Benevolent Fund from 1949 to 1959, caring for the widows of airmen.

Her writings demonstrate her personal bravery and desire to be needed and esteemed, which she found in her wartime roles: "Only in time of war have I found any real sense of purpose and happiness," she wrote in her autobiography (T'Serclaes 1964, 213). Her experiences also reveal the initial official opposition to women's participation during World War I, as well as the greater freedom and opportunities available to women who could afford to volunteer their services in the war effort.

—Amy Bell

See also Chisholm, Mairi Lambert

References and Further Reading

- Department of Documents, Imperial War Museum, London. Box P404 (Baroness T'Serclaes's war diaries, brief memoirs, press cuttings, and album containing drawings and signatures of distinguished visitors to the dressing station).
- Mitton, Geraldine Edith, ed. 1917. *The Cellar-House of Pervyse: A Tale of Uncommon Things from the Journals and Letters of the Baroness T'Serclaes and Mairi Chisholm*. London: A & C Black.
- T'Serclaes, Baroness. 1964. *Flanders and Other Fields: Memoirs of the Baroness T'Serclaes*. London: George Harrap.

TUBMAN, HARRIET
(CA. 1820–1913)

A child of U.S. slavery who would become the leading advocate of emancipation in her era. Though lacking any formal education, Harriet Tubman was a successful strategist, reformer, military spy, and suffragist. She is best known for her role as the leading “conductor” of the Underground Railroad.

Tubman was born in Maryland around 1820, although the exact date of her birth and her birthplace are unknown. Named Araminta Ross at birth, as a youngster she was both a domestic worker and a field hand. Around 1844 she married a freeman named John Tubman, though little is now known about their relationship. She desired to escape to the North, but her husband, who was already free, did not want to go and thus stayed behind.

She escaped to Philadelphia with the help of several people who hid her at various points on her arduous journey. She changed her name from Araminta Ross to Harriet Tubman. Philadelphia was home to the Philadelphia Society for the Promotion of the Abolition of Slavery, an organization that had set up a “railroad” system of transporting southern slaves, called “cargo,” through various hiding places, called “depots,” into the free areas of the North. This system, normally referred to as the Underground Railroad, appealed to Tubman, who began to take a major role in smuggling slaves into Philadelphia. In her role as a conductor of this system, traveling with the fugitives at night in order to avoid notice and capture, she came to be called Moses for her part in setting her people free.

In 1858 Tubman met one of the most fervent abolitionists of the era, John Brown. She developed a close relationship with and fully sup-

ported him, including assisting in the planning of the raid at Harper’s Ferry, Virginia. Tubman had planned to be at the ill-fated raid, but due to changes of which she was not informed, she was not present.

Tubman, believing that the American Civil War would signal the end of slavery, enthusiastically supported the Union. She was asked by the governor of Massachusetts to help direct the transport of slave fugitives. She not only took on this task but also attended the wounded. In addition, she performed wartime espionage. She was attacked and injured in New Jersey by a train conductor who did not believe that she was a spy for the Union army.

Tubman returned home to Auburn, New York, and married a much younger former Union soldier. She continued to work on behalf of the rights of African Americans, especially the poor and aged. She also became very involved in the women’s suffrage movement, despite her advanced age. She died in 1913 in abject poverty. Although she was never given a Civil War pension, she was provided military honors at her funeral. Because of the racial climate in the United States, it would be years before she received appropriate acknowledgment.

—Leonard A. Steverson

See also Civil War, American, and Women

References and Further Reading

- Clinton, Catherine. 2004. *Harriet Tubman: The Road to Freedom*. New York: Little, Brown.
- Humey, Jean M. 2003. *Harriet Tubman: The Life and the Stories*. Madison: University of Wisconsin.
- Larson, Kate. 2004. *Clifford Bound for the Promised Land: Harriet Tubman, Portrait of an American Hero*. New York: Ballentine.

U

ULSTER, WOMEN DURING THE TROUBLES IN

The experience of women in Ulster, or Northern Ireland, during the three decades of “the Troubles” from 1968 to 1998. Women took on direct roles in the conflict as protesters, peace activists, militants, prisoners, and politicians. They also played indirect but equally important roles: as housewives who kept families together amid tragedy and upheaval; as churchwomen who strengthened their communities and supported the bereaved; and as quiet, sometimes secretive supporters of men on both sides involved in the fighting.

The Troubles began in 1968 with the first civil rights marches protesting discrimination against Catholics in housing, political representation, employment, and public services by the Protestant government. Following the Irish independence movement and the resulting partition of the Irish Republic in 1922, the six northern counties of Ulster remained part of the United Kingdom. Society in Ulster was segregated along sectarian lines: the indigenous Irish were traditionally Catholic, Republican, and Nationalist in religion and politics, many desiring either home rule or merger with the Irish Republic; those descended from the British colonialists who had settled in Ireland, however,

were traditionally Protestant, Unionist, and Loyalist in their wish to remain a part of the United Kingdom and maintain a majority Protestant government. Women in large part fulfilled their traditional roles in families and churches, but these responsibilities did not prevent a large number of women from rising as leaders, organizers, and active participants in the conflict.

A militant Catholic leader whose career spanned the breadth of the Troubles was Bernadette Devlin McAliskey, who emerged as a leader in the student movement of the late 1960s. She was elected as a member of parliament at the age of twenty-one and became known for her electrifying speeches and her activism in marches and protests. She was jailed twice for inciting violence and gained notoriety when she struck Home Secretary Reginald Maudling in Parliament after he claimed that the Bloody Sunday incident of 1972, in which British paratroopers shot dead thirteen unarmed Catholic protesters, was provoked by the protesters. McAliskey and her husband survived serious gunshot wounds in an attempted assassination in 1981, but she persisted in her outspoken public persona, encouraging direct action and violent struggle against the injustices of the majority Protestant government of Ulster.

In contrast, other women organized a peaceful response to the violence and tragedy of the

Troubles. Monica Patterson, a Catholic, and Ruth Agnew, a Protestant, formed Women Together in 1970, drawing women from both communities to break up mobs, hold vigils and rallies, and support the families of those killed in the conflict. Another prominent peace movement was organized by Mairead Corrigan and Betty Williams in 1976 after a widely publicized incident in which Corrigan's three young nephews were hit and killed by a car after a British soldier shot its driver. The Peace People Movement was the result, and the organization initiated peace marches and rallies across the country and abroad. Corrigan and Williams were awarded the Nobel Peace Prize of 1976 for their work with Peace People.

The conflict of the Troubles was a feature of daily life in cities such as Belfast and Derry, where Catholic and Protestant paramilitaries were particularly active and the mostly Protestant police and military responded with force to Catholic agitation. Housewives assisted paramilitaries such as the Irish Republican Army (IRA) by providing safe houses, passing messages, and even alerting the neighborhood of police or military raids by banging metal trash can lids, a practice known as bin bashing. Other women participated as fighters within these paramilitaries, taking part in bombings, assassination plots, and street violence. Republican women were imprisoned at Armagh, where they participated in prison protests and rioting concurrently with their male counterparts imprisoned elsewhere. The activities of these women were often viewed in the context of women's traditional roles: a sympathetic view saw active women as exemplars of sacrifice, whereas the opposing view saw such activity as an example of the depths of depravity to which a group would go, using "even women" for violent ends.

As the Troubles raged on, the Northern Ireland Women's Rights Movement worked to challenge traditional gender stereotypes and to address problems unique to women, such as domestic violence, sex discrimination, and birth control. Founded in 1975, the movement operated as an umbrella organization for groups on

both sides of the sectarian divide, bringing women together in common cause to improve their lives. Growing out of the movement was the Northern Ireland Women's Coalition, which sent two delegates, Monica McWilliams and Pearl Sagar, to the multiparty talks that resulted in the Belfast Agreement, or Good Friday Accord, in 1998, effectively bringing the Troubles to a close.

—Kristen L. Rouse

See also Devlin, Bernadette; Mowlam, Marjorie; Peace People Movement

References and Further Reading

- Coogan, Tim Pat. 1996. *The Troubles: Ireland's Ordeal 1966–1996 and the Search for Peace*. Boulder, CO: Roberts Rinehart Publishers.
- Galligan, Yvonne, Eilís Ward, and Rick Wilford, eds. 1999. *Contesting Politics: Women in Ireland, North and South*. Boulder, CO: Westview.
- Morgan, Valerie. 1996. *Peacemakers? Peacekeepers? Women in Northern Ireland 1969–1995*. Londonderry, Northern Ireland: INCORE.

UNITED STATES, HOME FRONT DURING WORLD WAR I

The roles of women in the United States during World War I. During its years of neutrality, the United States was not immune to the arguments for and against its participation in the European conflict, and women played key roles on both sides of the debate. Fervent pacifists such as Jane Addams led the call for women to resist the lure of armed conflict and appealed to their uniquely female sensibilities—especially those linked to their maternal role—arguing that they had an obligation to object to the human sacrifice engendered by war. Hundreds of women joined the Mass Meeting for Peace on April 2, 1917, the day the United States declared war on Germany, and though large numbers of women continued their campaign of denouncing partic-

ipation in the war, many feminists made the difficult decision to back the government once it pledged support to the Allies. Although she had been one of the founders of the Women's Peace Party in 1914 alongside Addams, Carrie Chapman Catt of the National Women's Suffrage Association was among those who favored U.S. intervention even before April 1917. Catt and her fellow suffragists hoped that women's participation in war work and patriotic activism would secure the vote and their equality.

The undercurrent of radical opinion and protest was strong enough to cause government leaders concern, and they lost no time in establishing a department to convince Americans to support the war effort. The Committee on Public Information, led by George Creel, was set up on April 13, 1917, and served as the government's propaganda bureau. Through films, posters, advertisements, and public speeches by celebrities and civic leaders, the committee encouraged women not to succumb to the temptation of keeping their sons and husbands at home. The pleas to women's patriotic selflessness went hand-in-hand with campaigns to encourage war economy in the home and war sacrifice in public. In June 1917 the National Food Administration, under Herbert Hoover, called on women to sign a pledge to conserve food through such schemes as Meatless Tuesdays and Wheatless Wednesdays. Within a month, 2 million housewives had signed the pledge cards. Public libraries were instrumental in this campaign through the Food Facts Library led by Edith Guerrier (Weigand 1989, 73).

The Committee on Public Information also enlisted the help of the movie industry, and although film historians have noted that features released between 1917 and 1918 were not overwhelmingly focused on war, films with war themes did strike a chord. The persona of patriotic American womanhood was perhaps best exemplified in Mary Pickford's *Little American* (1917) and *Johanna Enlists* (1918). Pickford, "America's Sweetheart," was also vigorously involved in campaigns to raise money for army ambulances and to encourage the purchase of Lib-

erty Bonds. The Four-Minute Men, so called because these orators spoke for four minutes, were also a feature of the cinemas' contribution to the war effort. Before a movie was shown, one might hear the orators address topics such as "Food Conservation," "Why We Are Fighting," "The Second Liberty Loan," or "Maintaining Morals and Morale."

Posters featuring such seductive female images as the Christie girls recruited both men and women to the Allied cause. While men were encouraged to enlist in the army or the navy, women were confronted with diverse outlets for their patriotism, from joining knitting bees that made socks for soldiers to volunteering for work with the Red Cross as nurses, clerical workers, and canteen staff. Magazines such as *The Ladies' Home Journal*, which had a circulation of over 1 million, propounded the role of the patriotic middle-class homemaker in wartime through editorials, advertisements, and feature articles that provided advice on thrifty household management, from food preservation to dress economy. Approximately 6,000 young women joined the U.S. Expeditionary Force as telephone operators (the "Hello Girls"), stenographers, or typists; others chose from a variety of voluntary organizations to demonstrate their patriotism (Zieger 2000, 142). The Committee on Women's Defense Work of the Council of National Defense, set up in April 1917, was led by Dr. Anna Howard Shaw of the National American Women's Suffrage Association. It sought to coordinate the various voluntary contributions women could make to the war effort—from conserving food to sewing, gardening, selling war bonds, and generally boosting morale. The Women's Section of the Navy League recruited more than 11,000 women (269 in the marines) for clerical and communications positions left vacant by men. The army, albeit reluctantly, eventually employed over 30,000 women as nurses, clerks, translators, and welfare workers (Zieger 2000, 141–142).

World War I has been credited with causing unprecedented numbers of women to enter the labor market. However, though it is true that

1 million women took up war work in the expanding munitions industries, aircraft factories, and shipyards, only 5 percent were new hires (Abrahamson 1983, 95; Kennedy 1980, 285). The real change occurred in the type of employment. The 500,000 women who had previously been domestic servants, laundresses, or seamstresses or who had menial or unskilled factory experience were now assembling equipment, running lathes and drill presses, working in tool rooms and machine shops, and operating heavy equipment (Zieger 2000, 144). Although the war opened up opportunities for employment, the armistice shut the door on most of the gains. Many women lost their jobs in 1919, and despite the call by many activists for equal pay for equal work, trade unions were reluctant to admit women or to give them the same benefits as their male members. The Women in Industry Service, led by Mary Van Kleek, had hoped to secure rights for women workers but instead found itself increasingly up against blatant discrimination and flouting of employment laws.

Of all women on the home front, African American women had the least opportunity for war service or advanced employment. Voluntary organizations were made up exclusively of white, middle-class women, and government organizations hired few black women as clerical workers. Over 1,000 African American nurses who were registered with the Red Cross were rejected for service with the army, although some eventually were allowed to nurse wounded soldiers from the segregated black regiments when they returned stateside. Hundreds may have left the drudgery of domestic and agricultural work (particularly during the Great Migration north) for better opportunities in the factories, but African American women did the menial and more physically demanding work rejected by their white sisters in the manufacturing industries (Zieger 2000, 142).

The gendered and class-bound war effort of the U.S. home front was inimical to continued political dissent. To oppose the country's involvement in the war was not an easy path to follow. Those who dared question the official line

were summarily threatened with prosecution and imprisonment. The societal pressure to conform, even to the level of buying Liberty Bonds, was enormous. The Selective Service Act, which established the first compulsory military draft since the American Civil War, went into force on May 18, 1917. The act not only provided for conscription but also made it an offense to dissuade anyone from registering for the draft. The Espionage Act followed soon after, on June 15, 1917, and targeted anyone who held antiwar sentiments or advocated radical social change. Thousands were indicted under this act, which had nothing to do with spying and everything to do with crushing dissent. The American Socialist Party and the Industrial Workers of the World (known as Wobblies) were especially targeted, as were so-called enemy aliens, particularly German immigrants and citizens of German descent. The anarchist Emma Goldman was arrested, tried, convicted, imprisoned, and eventually deported for her denunciation of the draft. Frances Witherspoon, executive secretary of the Bureau of Legal Advice from 1917 to 1920, worked tirelessly on behalf of conscientious objectors and others whose civil liberties were threatened by both acts.

The united and upbeat image of the U.S. home front in World War I as projected by wartime fiction, movies, and the now-iconic recruitment posters was only one facet of what was in reality a complex and contradictory society at war.

—Jane Potter

See also Addams, Jane; Catt, Carrie Chapman; Hello Girls; Posters, U.S., Images of Women in World War II

References and Further Reading

- Abrahamson, James L. 1983. *The American Home Front: Revolutionary War, Civil War, World War I, World War II*. Washington, DC: National Defense University.
- DeBauche, Leslie Midkiff. 1997. *Reel Patriotism: The Movies and World War I*. Madison: University of Wisconsin.

UNITED STATES, HOME FRONT DURING WORLD WAR II

- Karetzky, Joanne L. 1997. *The Mustering of Support for WWI by The Ladies' Home Journal*. Lewiston, NY: Edwin Mellen Press.
- Kennedy, David M. 1980. *Over Here: The First World War in American Society*. New York: Oxford University.
- Kennedy, Kathleen. 1999. *Disloyal Mothers and Scurrilous Citizens: Women and Subversion during World War I*. Bloomington: Indiana University.
- Wiegand, Wayne A. 1989. *An Active Instrument for Propaganda: The American Public Library during WWI*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Zieger, Robert H. 2000. *America's Great War: WWI and the American Experience*. Lanham, MD: Rowman & Littlefield Publishers.

UNITED STATES, HOME FRONT DURING WORLD WAR II

The mobilization of women in the United States during World War II. When the United States entered World War II, the need for increased production brought unprecedented numbers of women into the wage labor force. During the war, approximately 20 million women worked in defense production and civilian jobs; for 6.5 million of them, it was their first employment experience. For the first time in United States history, more married women than single women worked. In addition, the war brought a significant redistribution of women workers into jobs previously open only to men.

The War Manpower Division and the Office of War Information coordinated campaigns to encourage employers to hire women, to persuade the public that women should work, and to encourage women to work. Propaganda emphasized a woman's patriotic duty to work and linked her war work to the safety and victory of American troops. Publicity materials also assured women that they would be able to maintain their femininity and even compared the jobs they would be doing to cutting out patterns in

sewing or following a recipe in cooking. Although many women did work for the patriotic reasons encouraged by the government, many also worked because their families needed their wages.

The U.S. Congress also debated possible solutions to the labor shortage. In 1942, House Resolution 6806 proposed to require women 18 to 65 to register under the Selective Training and Service Act. Other bills were proposed in the Senate between 1942 and 1943, including Senate Bill 666, known as the Austin-Wadsworth Bill or National War Service Act, which would have required women between the ages of 18 and 50 to serve in whatever industrial or agricultural job they were assigned. Pregnant women, those with children under 18, and those with incapacitated dependents were to be exempt. In the ensuing debates about the proposals, there was little congressional discussion specifically about drafting women and more debate about questions of drafting any civilian for wartime work, the proper means to execute such a draft, whether the proposal was an attack on unions, and whether such a draft was needed. Although polls of society found a majority in favor of an industrial draft, no legislation came to a vote.

The more than 3 million women who worked in defense production came to be known as Rosie the Riveters. The number of African American women in industrial work quadrupled during the war, but these women were often hired for the dirtiest or most dangerous jobs. Many women with specialized training in fields such as mechanics, engineering, or mathematics were not hired in their fields but were employed in less skilled and lower-paying jobs (Hartmann 1982, 60, 80–82).

Women in industrial jobs typically worked a forty-eight-hour workweek, six days a week. Many worked overtime hours; vacations and most holidays were canceled for the war's duration. All women workers felt intense pressure to perform well, both to ensure that faulty equipment did not result in a war death and to prove they were capable of doing the work traditionally done by men.



Women work in a tool production plant, Chicago. (Library of Congress)

Few areas of defense production were untouched by women. Approximately 85,000 women, organized into the Women Ordnance Workers division, worked directly for the Ordnance Department, where they loaded and fired weapons to test equipment and ammunition. Other women worked in dangerous munitions factories, often located in rural areas, where they produced bombs and ammunition. Shipbuilding was a deep-rooted industry long accustomed to an all-male workforce and was slow to take on women, but the numbers of vessels needed for the war meant that women also went to work in shipyards. The relatively new aircraft industry quickly employed women to work on stamp presses and to rivet. Women also performed heavy work in the steel and mining in-

dustries. Most women who worked in the railroad industries held clerical positions. In addition, female industrial workers performed such jobs as operating cranes to move tanks and artillery, guarding plants, operating hydraulic presses, driving tractors along assembly lines, and fighting fires in industrial accidents.

The need for childcare was a problem faced by many women and one that was never adequately addressed by industry or the government. At the beginning of the war, Works Progress Administration nurseries operated in some areas, and they continued to be run throughout the war by the Federal Works Agency. These childcare centers cost nearly \$50 million and enrolled 130,000 children in more than 3,000 locations but were unable to meet

the increasing demand. In 1942 Congress passed the Lanham Act to provide funds for childcare centers in communities most affected by war production. These centers provided day-care and after-school care for children between 2 and 14 years of age and spent \$51.9 million on 3,102 centers for 600,000 children. Nonetheless, the facilities were not sufficient for the estimated 4.5 million children under the age of 14 in need of daycare in 1944. In many instances working mothers were blamed for the problem of childcare and were encouraged to fix it themselves by establishing babysitting networks and volunteering in childcare centers.

Throughout the war, no laws required equal pay for women workers. In 1944 the average salary for men was 50 percent higher than that for women. Part of the discrepancy derived from the low numbers of women in skilled and higher-paying positions, but even in unskilled positions women earned 20 percent less than did men in the same positions. Although polls showed a majority of the population supported equal pay for equal work and although the National War Labor Board ordered equal pay and frequently ruled in favor of equality in wage disputes, few employers paid equally. In some instances, employers segregated workers by gender so that they could say the workers performed different jobs. Although many of the women held union memberships, unions offered little wage protection.

For many women, though, the wages they earned were higher than what they had earned before the war or what they could earn in service jobs or office and sales work. Many women in civilian work, such as waitresses, teachers, and saleswomen, left their jobs for better-paying industrial jobs and consequently left their previous sectors short staffed. In addition, industrial jobs often provided benefits and social security, advantages that were especially valuable to African American women who left domestic service work for industry.

In addition to jobs in manufacturing or defense production, many women found wartime jobs in other sectors. In fact, approximately five

times as many women worked in civilian employment than in the war industry, but much press coverage focused on women in war industry jobs. Many civilian positions previously closed to women were opened to them because of the labor shortage, including jobs as buyers and clerks in food stores, ushers in movie theaters, cashiers, drug clerks, elevator operators, meter readers, mail carriers, and cab drivers. At least 2 million women worked in clerical jobs, many in the federal government. Even women in the music industry found opportunities in all-girl bands.

Within the Office of Civilian Defense women directed salvage projects and blood drives, publicized victory gardens, ran the Civil Air Patrol, sold war bonds, and worked as ambulance drivers. In February 1945 there were 249 women in the Office of War Information's Overseas Operations Branch. They were stationed in New York, San Francisco, and Hawaii, producing radio propaganda, newsreels, films, and various publications for use in enemy or neutral countries. In the Office of Strategic Services more than 4,000 women did clerical work, deciphered radio traffic, translated documents, and debriefed agents who had been behind enemy lines.

More than 3 million women over 18 years old worked in the Women's Land Army either during their vacation time, for an entire summer, or for a few hours each day. By the summer of 1942 the proportion of women farmworkers had risen from 1 percent to 14 percent. These women were paid between \$14 and \$18 per week, much less than industrial women workers earned, especially considering that the average worker paid \$10 per week for lodging and meals to the family with whom she lived or to the camp where she stayed. The Victory Farm Volunteers recruited close to 2.5 million high school girls for similar agricultural work from 1943 to 1945.

As the end of the war neared, the question arose as to what women working in industry and civilian jobs should do when the men returned. Beginning in 1943 the media ran articles encouraging women to leave their jobs at the end

of the war and return to housework. Nevertheless, approximately 75 percent of respondents to a 1944–1945 survey said they expected to continue working after the war, including more than 50 percent of those who had been housewives before the war and more than 57 percent of married women who said they needed to keep working to support their families. Almost 95 percent of African American women expected to continue working after war (Hartmann 1982, 90).

By 1947 women had vacated 1 million factory jobs, 400,000 jobs in the federal government, 500,000 clerical positions, 300,000 jobs in commercial service, and 100,000 jobs in sales. Many women who remained in the wage labor force often did so by moving from blue-collar work to clerical jobs or jobs in the service sector. Even with the losses, however, nearly 17 million women remained in the labor force, a higher number than had been employed in 1940 (Hartmann 1982, 90–91).

In addition to work in the wage labor force, approximately 3.5 million volunteers worked in the Red Cross, shipping food parcels, collecting blood donations, aiding war refugees, acting as a communications link between families and relatives in the military, assisting servicemen and their families in filing for pensions and other benefits, and assisting wives and families of military personnel as they moved to different posts. The Production Department assembled and shipped kit bags containing soap, shoe cleaners, cigarettes, paper, and other goods to soldiers and prisoners of war and produced and shipped knitted garments to hospitals and civilian relief centers. Gray Ladies and nurse's aides worked in understaffed military hospitals to help relieve the nursing shortage. Volunteers in the First Aid Department of the Red Cross offered courses to help the civilian population deal with medical emergencies.

By 1944 approximately 1.5 million women volunteers in the United Service Organizations (USO) had established more than 3,000 clubs in the United States and overseas to meet the

recreational and social service needs of troops and their families. USO camp shows also presented performances of well-known entertainers to military personnel. In the USO, unlike many other organizations, African Americans were included as volunteers and staff and as participants in shows and audiences. The USO also opened more than 300 clubs for African American troops and stationed workers in segregated bus and train stations and embarkation ports.

The American Women's Voluntary Services trained more than 350,000 women to drive ambulances, give first aid, and set up mobile kitchens and field hospitals in the event that the United States was bombed. In addition, women were trained in cryptography, mechanics, and translation, and they did relief work at military bases, worked with other organizations to sell war bonds, and provided services to military personnel and families.

Women who did not work outside the home also found their lives changed because of the war. Rationing changed homemaking as women devised substitutes to replace scarce goods such as sugar and red meat. Gas rationing limited how far women could drive to find groceries, supplies, and daycare and to run errands. In addition, women planted victory gardens and salvaged aluminum, tin, and rubber to be used in making war supplies.

Women also volunteered in a host of other organizations and aided the home front in numerous ways. The All-American Girls Professional Baseball League began in 1943 and provided sports entertainment as male baseball players served overseas. Female entertainers raised money by selling war bonds and promoted support of the war effort.

Other women opposed the war effort for reasons as diverse as not wanting to send their husbands or sons to war and opposition to President Franklin Delano Roosevelt or to Judaism. Many women pacifists worked in the Civilian Public Service program alongside male conscientious objectors.

—Kara D. Vuic

See also Conscientious Objectors in the United States during World War II

References and Further Reading

- Bentley, Amy. 1998. *Eating for Victory: Food Rationing and the Politics of Domesticity*. Urbana: University of Illinois.
- Carpenter, Stephanie A. 2003. *On the Farm Front: The Women's Land Army in World War II*. DeKalb: Northern Illinois University.
- Gendergap.com. "Women in War Work." <http://www.gendergap.com/military/usmil9.htm#war-work> (accessed August 23, 2004).
- Gluck, Sherna Berger. 1987. *Rosie the Riveter Revisited: Women, the War, and Social Change*. Boston: Twayne.
- Hartmann, Susan M. 1982. *The Home Front and Beyond: American Women in the 1940s, American Women in the Twentieth Century*. Boston: Twayne.
- Honey, Maureen, ed. 1999. *Bitter Fruit: African American Women in World War II*. Columbia: University of Missouri.
- Milkman, Ruth. 1987. *Gender at Work: The Dynamics of Job Segregation by Sex during World War II—The Working Class in American History*. Urbana: University of Illinois.
- Weatherford, Doris. 1990. *American Women and World War II: History of Women in America*. New York: Facts on File.
- Yellin, Emily. 2004. *Our Mothers' War: American Women at Home and at the Front during World War II*. New York: Free Press.

UNITED STATES, MARINE
CORPS WOMEN'S RESERVE
(MCWR)

The service of women in the U.S. Marines. Although 305 women marine reservists served during World War I, the Marine Corps remained an all-male service until World War II. Resistant to the inclusion of women, the Marine Corps traditionally contended that it had a lower ca-

capacity than other services to absorb women because of its relatively high ratio of combat troops to support troops and that it considered women's presence as a threat to order and discipline among male soldiers.

On July 30, 1942, the navy bill, Public Law 689, authorized the establishment of both the Navy Women's Reserve and the Marine Corps Women's Reserve (MCWR). By February 13, 1943, Major Ruth Cheney Streeter—the wife of a prominent businessman, a pilot, a mother of four (including three sons in the service), and a leader for 20 years in New Jersey health and welfare work—had led the corps to attain its recruitment goal of over 18,000 women. Female reservists filled 87 percent of the enlisted jobs at Marine Corps headquarters during World War II and comprised one-half to two-thirds of the troops posted to many marine stations (Strem-low 1986, 101). They are credited with freeing the equivalent of one male marine division to fight.

World War II demobilization plans mandated dissolution of the MCWR by September 1946. The marines resisted momentum developing in other services to create permanent peacetime cadres of women in the military, claiming that women could fill too few positions in the postwar Marine Corps to justify the administrative costs. In a policy reversal, however, the Marine Corps commandant authorized the retention of a core group of women marines at headquarters assigned to clerical and administrative duty and created a postwar corps of reserves who could be called to active duty in the event of war or national emergency. These women remained the heart of the peacetime MCWR program until passage of the Women's Armed Services Integration Act of 1948, which established a permanent place for women in the U.S. armed forces.

At that time, faced with increased personnel needs and problems with the recruitment and retention of women, the Marine Corps gradually worked to improve women's status, utilization, acceptance, and integration. Three milestones provided impetus for women's increased

presence: the war in Korea, the Women Marine Program Study Group of 1964, and the Ad-Hoc Committee on Increased Effectiveness of the Utilization of Women in the Marine Corps in 1973. By 1964, for example, women officers served in only 8 occupational fields, with about 70 percent in administrative billets. Only a handful were allowed to serve overseas, and most of those received assignment to Hawaii.

As a result of policy changes, 36 women marines served in South Vietnam during the Vietnam War, and by 1971, 9.3 percent, or 209 women, served overseas (Holm 1992, 217; Stremlow 1986, 87–88). In 1967 the marines further developed an expansion plan to bring the strength of the MCWR to 1 percent of the U.S. Marine Corps overall strength (2,750 women), with increased job and assignment opportunities and policy changes to improve enlistments and retention. In 1977 the corps dissolved gender-segregated, abbreviated 12-week basic training for women, and 22 female second lieutenants entered the 21-week basic course as members of Charlie Company (Stremlow 1986, 90). Separate command structures for women, historically administered by the director of women marines, transferred to other departments, leading to the abolishment of the directorship in 1977. In 1978 Margaret Brewer, the seventh and last director of women marines, became the first woman brigadier general in the Marine Corps, which was the last service to name a woman to an equivalent rank (Holm 1992, 278).

—Lee Ann Ghajar

See also Brewer, Lucy; Streeter, Ruth Cheney

References and Further Reading

- Holm, Jeanne M. 1992. *Women in the Military: An Unfinished Revolution*. Rev. ed. Novato, CA: Presidio Press.
- Stremlow, Mary V. 1986. *U.S. Marine Corps Women's Reserve: A History of the Women Marines, 1946–1977*. Washington, DC: U.S. Marine Corps, History and Museums Division Headquarters.

UNITED STATES, MILITARY SERVICE OF WOMEN IN WORLD WAR II

The direct contribution of women to the U.S. military during World War II. More than 350,000 women joined the U.S. armed services as auxiliaries and made significant contributions by functioning in more than 400 separate specialties during World War II, including not only work in the clerical fields but also service in logistical and technical fields (Meyer 1996, 76; Holm 1982). Women serving in the U.S. military during World War II replaced men who were then able to enter combat units.

Women have served in various capacities in every conflict in U.S. history. Most often, female nurses aided medics and doctors in military hospitals. This caregiving role represented a suitable and acceptable role for women to perform. Women in the United States struggled merely to gain basic civil rights, let alone the ability to serve in the military. Although they received the right to vote shortly after World War I, they were not truly emancipated, nor were they treated equally under the law. They had not gained parity with men in those jobs traditionally regarded as male. Men dominated the public, political, and economic spheres. Society expected males to be fathers, husbands, and protectors, with one specific male role being military service. Conversely, women occupied private, moral, and domestic spheres. Society expected them to be mothers, wives, and nurturers.

The U.S. military did allow several thousand women to join its ranks in World War I. Those women in uniform, however, were treated as auxiliaries and relegated to clerical work. They received neither equal rank nor equal pay. They served until the end of the conflict, after which they returned to civilian life. The U.S. military made no permanent place for women in its ranks. Women as regular soldiers, sailors, or marines went well beyond any socially acceptable gender roles.

As international tensions increased in the late 1930s, the U.S. military began laying plans

for mobilization of men and material. Every resource could be and would be used in the coming conflict. By 1941 U.S. involvement in World War II seemed imminent. In April of that year, Representative Edith Nourse Rogers of Massachusetts introduced legislation to establish the Women's Army Auxiliary Corps (WAAC). Her bill was not passed until after the attack on Pearl Harbor. It was finally enacted in May 1942 with the caveats that the WAAC would only be 25,000 strong and that women serving in the WAAC would be separate from the regular military in terms of units, pay, status, and rank. Later in 1942 the U.S. Congress passed legislation making women part of reserves in both the U.S. Navy and Marine Corps. All branches of the military, as well as the U.S. Coast Guard, eventually added women to their rolls. Once called to active duty, they received parity with their male counterparts in pay, status, and rank.

The problematic juxtaposition of "soldier" and "women" emerged as the key issue in the first of year of World War II and would remain important throughout the conflict. How could women be allowed to serve in the masculine environment of the U.S. military yet still be able to maintain their acceptable feminine roles in society? Put more simply, how could women be soldiers? Many citizens, men and women alike, feared that making women into full-fledged soldiers would deprive them of their femininity. They might acquire masculine traits such as aggressiveness and assertiveness; these might even affect their sexual relations with men. Worse still, women in the military would be working in close proximity with one another and might even succumb to deviant sexual urges.

The massive personnel requirements of fighting a total war were a boon for women. Millions left the domestic sphere and entered the workforce. Personnel shortages also spurred the U.S. military to expand the number of women in uniform to more than 350,000 during the next 4 years. Women flocked to military recruiting stations for many reasons. The

publicity and recruitment efforts appealed to their senses of patriotism, adventure, and sacrifice. A famous advertising quote, "Free a Man to Fight," attracted thousands of women to the military; many more women were turned away than accepted. They agreed to serve during the conflict and for 6 months after its end. Those who did join typically possessed much greater levels of experience and education than their male counterparts of similar rank. Many came from business, educational, and government backgrounds.

The commanders of each service's female component stand as examples of highly qualified individuals. All walked away from lucrative and rewarding careers to put on uniforms in 1942. Oveta Culp Hobby resigned as vice president of the *Houston Post* to become director of the WAAC, later renamed the Women's Army Corps (WAC). Mildred Helen McAfee left the presidency of Wellesley College in Massachusetts to lead the Women Accepted for Voluntary Emergency Service (WAVES), the navy's female contingent. Ruth Cheney Streeter held several positions in health and welfare services during the 1920s and 1930s before becoming director of Marine Corps Women's Reserve (MCWR). Dorothy C. Stratton served as dean of women and professor of psychology at Purdue University before entering the naval reserve and eventually leading the women reserves in the U.S. Coast Guard, known as SPARs (an acronym derived from the this service's motto, *Semper Paratus*—Always Ready). All these women rose to the rank of captain or colonel by the close of World War II.

The U.S. Army, with the personal support of Chief of Staff General George C. Marshall, formed the first units of females as part of the WAAC. Originally an auxiliary of 25,000 women, WAAC members did not receive recognized military rank, status, or privilege. They shouldered only clerical tasks at first. As the war lasted longer, however, the WAAC was renamed the Women's Army Corps in September 1943 and was given commensurate military recognition. New recruits went to training centers all

over the nation, including Florida, Massachusetts, and Louisiana. Following boot camp, they found themselves stationed throughout the continental United States working in hundreds of military occupational specialties (MOS). Many of these were traditionally male jobs. The WAC eventually grew to 150,000 women by the conflict's end, of which some 16,000 served overseas in North Africa, Europe, and the Pacific (Holm 1992, 94, 98).

The U.S. Navy and the U.S. Marine Corps followed the army's lead in establishing their own women's components. The naval reserve was the conduit through which female recruits for these units passed. They went to Hunter College in New York City or Mount Holyoke College and Smith College in Massachusetts for their training. The women then either remained in the navy with the WAVES or transferred to the Marine Corps with the MCWR. The WAVES eventually expanded to 86,000 women by war's end. The Marine Corps included some 18,000 women marines (Holm 1992, 98).

The U.S. Coast Guard added its own female element in the SPARs. Most of the 12,000 SPARs stayed on the home front, where they performed clerical or support jobs. Others, however, moved into specialties that allowed them to do traditionally male work, and some did spend time overseas (Holm 1992, 98).

Women also flew military aircraft and worked on flight lines with the U.S. Army's Women in the Air Force (WAF), commanded by Elizabeth Bandel, or with the civilian Women Airforce Service Pilots (WASPs), headed by Jacqueline Cochran. Some 40,000 women in the WAF and another 1,000 WASPs ferried military aircraft across the continental United States (Holm 1992, 64). Beyond the glamorous life of a pilot, women in the WAF acquired skills in aircraft maintenance, air traffic control, and meteorology.

Women in every service faced varying levels of suspicion, discrimination, harassment, and abuse. They found themselves attempting to prove their worth as soldiers, while still main-

taining their respectability as women. More often than not, male superiors and peers gradually discovered how competent and skilled the women soldiers, sailors, marines, and pilots were and eventually came to appreciate their contributions. The women not only performed clerical tasks such as stenography or office management but also worked in skilled and technical areas such as parachute rigging, engine maintenance, gunnery instruction, or radio operation. In all, women in the military performed more than 400 specialties. None of these was combat-related, though a few military women did come under enemy fire or were killed by enemy attacks.

Caucasian women faced many obstacles in the military because of their gender. African American women, however, faced still more because of race. Blacks were not accorded equal treatment in civilian society, and the situation in the military was no different. Approximately 4,000 highly qualified and patriotic "colored" or "Negro" women—as they were termed during World War II—found themselves in segregated WAAC units performing menial tasks such as housekeeping (Holm 1992, 78). Only late in the conflict did the other services allow African American women into their ranks.

Harassment emerged as one of the most difficult challenges for women in uniform. They could become objects of sexual advances and harassment from their counterparts or superiors. Smear campaigns against women erupted during World War II; these portrayed some servicewomen as lesbians and others as whores. Many in the United States worried that unfeminine qualities would be developed among these women and that this would cause a breakdown in the gender divisions within society as a whole. Exact numbers of lesbians in the military during World War II are not available. The suspicions and fears, however, proved to be unwarranted. Contrary to the allegations of the smear campaigns, the overwhelming majority of women in the army, navy, marines, and coast guard maintained high moral standards in their dress and conduct. They constructed their identities as

women first and as soldiers second; this represented a means of separating the two antithetical gender roles. Any accusations of lesbianism or deviant behavior were handled quickly and quietly within the given service. The overwhelming majority of women in uniform, regardless of their sexual orientation, acquitted themselves with honor while on duty.

Harassment could also become physical in the form of rape: 971 convictions for sexual assault were handed down during World War II. Most of these occurred after the conflict ended when U.S. servicemen were in occupation units (Meyer 1996, 142). Unless the charge was made against an African American man, obtaining justice in a rape case proved almost impossible because sexual assault could be depicted as the victim's fault or otherwise trivialized as normal sexual intercourse. The rules and the culture protected the accused, rather than the accuser.

Despite the challenges, women in the U.S. military played a significant role in the nation's victorious war effort. According to Captain Winifred Quick Collins, a high-ranking officer in the WAVES during World War II, "Women could no longer be look upon as merely 'replacements.' The war years proved that the work they had done contributed much to the overall efficiency of the service. . . . Women demonstrated their usefulness, patience, and thoroughness by performing many duties equal to or better than the men had done" (Collins 1997, 90). Approximately 400,000 women, including nurses, served in the U.S. military. Among those, 470 deaths occurred, including 50 killed in action or by enemy gunfire. More than 1,600 military women received medals for meritorious service (Womensmemorial.org 2004).

When World War II ended, most service-women, like their male counterparts in the military, returned to their civilian lives. Nevertheless, their experiences and accomplishments in the war left lasting impressions on them. Some went back to work in business or government; others resumed their domestic roles as mothers and wives. A small number of women remained

on duty in the U.S. military; they received official recognition with passage of the Women's Service Integration Act in 1948. Since being recognized in this official way, women have worked for more equity and equality within the armed services.

—David J. Ulbrich

See also Cochran, Jacqueline; Eskimo Scouts; Hobby, Oveta Culp; Nurses, U.S. Army Nurse Corps in World War II; Streeter, Ruth Cheney; United States, Marine Corps Women's Reserve; United States, Navy Women's Reserve; United States, Women Airforce Service Pilots; United States, Women Reserves in the Coast Guard; United States, Women's Army Auxiliary Corps; United States, Women's Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron

References and Further Reading

- Campbell, D'Ann. 1993. Women in Combat: The World War II Experience in the United States, Great Britain, Germany, and the Soviet Union. *Journal of Military History* 57 (April):301–323.
- Collins, Winifred Quick, with Herbert M. Levine. 1997. *More Than a Uniform: A Navy Woman in a Navy Man's World*. Denton: University of North Texas.
- Holm, Jeanne. 1992. *Women in the Military: An Unfinished Revolution*. Novato, CA: Presidio Press.
- Litoff, Judy Barrett, and David C. Smith. 1994. *We're in This War, Too: World War II Letters from American Women in Uniform*. New York: Oxford University.
- Meid, Pat. 1968. *Marine Corps Women's Reserve in World War II*. Washington, DC: U.S. Marine Corps, Historical Branch, G-3 Division.
- Meyer, Leisa D. 1996. *Creating G.I. Jane: Sexuality and Power in the Women's Army Corps in World War II*. New York: Columbia University.
- Treadwell, Mattie E. 1954. *U.S. Army in World War II: Special Studies—The Women's Army Corps*. Washington, DC: Department of the Army, Office of the Chief of Military History.
- Womensmemorial.org. "Women in the United States Military." <http://www.womensmemorial.org/historyandcollections/about.html> (accessed Oct 31, 2004).

UNITED STATES, NAVY
WOMEN'S RESERVE (WAVES)

Service of U.S. women in the navy reserve. On July 30, 1942, Public Law 689 authorized the Women's Reserve of the Navy for the duration of World War II and six months thereafter. The law took effect after seven months of disagreement between the navy, the executive branch, and the Congress over whether women should serve in the navy or with the service as auxiliaries. Called WAVES (Women Accepted for Volunteer Emergency Service), women in this unit received equal pay for equal rank as full members of the naval reserve. The law limited, however, the number of positions open to them in given ranks and gave women officers authority only over other women reservists. Mildred McAfee, president of Wellesley College and a liberal proponent of the rights and responsibilities of women, became the first WAVES director.

The navy originally intended that WAVES would fill administrative and clerical jobs in order to free men for duty at sea. As the war escalated and warfare became increasingly sophisticated, the navy continued to readjust perceptions about the capabilities of women, opening increasingly specialized positions to them in order to meet personnel needs. WAVES trained and worked in meteorology, aeronautical engineering, astronomy, radar operations and maintenance, ship design, navigation, intelligence, and other developing fields. By war's end, WAVES not only held jobs previously occupied by navy men but also performed hundreds of jobs that had not existed when the war began.

Navy officials realized that "lack of sufficient women service personnel [was] preventing the transfer of able-bodied males from billets which could be filled by women to duties in the combat areas" (Ebbert and Hall 1999, 97). Chafing at restrictions confining WAVES to duty in the contiguous United States, the navy petitioned Congress to remove geographic limitations. In response, Congress passed Public Law 441 in 1944, allowing WAVES to volunteer for assign-

ment to Hawaii, Alaska, the Caribbean, and Panama.

By 1945, 86,000 women served as WAVES, and by war's end, women constituted roughly 2 percent of the navy. In the navy headquarters, however, 55 percent of the uniformed personnel were WAVES, and at Radio Washington—the nerve center of the navy's entire communications system—WAVES filled 75 percent of the positions. In 1945 the navy designated 80 women officers as naval air navigators and ordered 2 women officers to serve at the all-male U.S. Naval Academy. Between December 31, 1941, and August 31, 1945, 7 women officers and 62 enlisted women died while on active duty (Holm 1998, 73–74).

Although WAVES were authorized for demobilization six months after the end of World War II, the navy recognized a continuing need for women's services and joined with the U.S. Army in the struggle to secure a permanent place in peacetime for its women. In 1948 Public Law 625, the Women's Armed Services Integration Act, created permanent status for women in regular and reserve components of the armed forces and delineated the limitations and terms of their service. Although the act officially abolished the WAVES, the acronym continued in popular and official usage by both men and women until the early 1970s, when the navy eliminated a separate women's representative system and the office of assistant chief of personnel for women (Ebbert and Hall 1999, 125).

—Lee Ann Ghajar

See also United States, Military Service of Women in World War II

References and Further Reading

- Ebbert, Jean, and Marie-Beth Hall. 1999. *Crossed Currents: Navy Women in a Century of Change*. Dulles, VA: Brassey's.
- Holm, Jeanne M., and Judith Bellafaire, eds. 1998. *In Defense of a Nation: Servicewomen in World War II*. Arlington, VA: Vandamere Press.

UNITED STATES, OPPOSITION
TO U.S. ENTRY INTO WORLD
WAR II BY RIGHT-WING
AMERICAN WOMEN

U.S. isolationists at the time of World War II. With the outbreak of World War II in September 1939, tens of thousands of U.S. women of varying political stripes rushed to join the antiwar organizations that were sprouting throughout the country. Some female leaders on the political right took advantage of the antiwar sentiment to recruit women into their organizations, which were often referred to as mother's groups. Leaders such as Elizabeth Dilling, Catherine Curtis, Lyrle Clark Van Hyning, and Frances Sherrill drew women into their organizations by appealing to their patriotism and to their fears of losing loved ones in a foreign war. The Sherrill-led National Legion of Mothers of America, for example, established a "Mother's Creed" soon after the legion's founding in Los Angeles in October 1939. Prospective members pledged to aid the organization in its opposition to the sending of U.S. troops to fight in foreign lands, to support an active national defense program, and to oppose "subversive groups, whose object [was] the destruction of the American form of government" (Benowitz 2002, 139).

The legion's pledge was in keeping with the isolationist impulse of the U.S. people during the interwar years. Women signing the pledge felt both patriotic and confident that they were doing their best to save the lives of U.S. men. Time would reveal that Sherrill and others among the group's hierarchy broadly defined subversive groups to include almost anyone who did not agree with them. Initially, the legion attracted and accepted women of varied religious and ethnic backgrounds, and leaders claimed that 1 million members had signed the pledge during the organization's first month. Although the numbers were greatly exaggerated, with the help of William Randolph Hearst's publishing firm, thousands of women throughout the nation enthusiastically joined local chapters.

Legion membership began to decline by the summer of 1940. A power struggle had erupted within the organization in the spring, and by June 1940 some of the leaders who did not agree with Sherrill's prejudices against Jews and immigrants and her antipathy toward the Franklin Roosevelt administration were being pushed out of the group. Soon other leaders and some members-at-large began resigning due to their suspicions that the remaining legion officers were fascist sympathizers. When the turmoil subsided, the legion was a predominantly right-wing extremist organization.

On the East Coast Catherine Curtis, who was for a time associated with the legion, founded the Women's National Committee to Keep US Out of War in the fall of 1939. Curtis sometimes networked with other right-wing leaders, including Elizabeth Dilling, who headed the Chicago-based Patriotic Research Bureau, and Lyrle Clark Van Hyning, leader of We, the Mothers Mobilize for America, also based in Chicago. These women shared a hatred for the Roosevelt administration, Jews, Communists, and, to a lesser extent, the British. They accused these groups of conspiring to push the United States into war and urged their followers to help them fight this "conspiracy."

Although personal arguments would occasionally lead to rifts in the leaders' relationships, their antiwar groups would sometimes rally together around a cause. The congressional debate over the Lend-Lease bill in February 1941, which proposed that the United States lease supplies to money-strapped Britain, led to the Mothers' Crusade, a march on Washington by right-wing women's groups. Believing that Lend-Lease was but another step toward U.S. entry into the war, approximately 200 women paraded and protested on Capitol Hill. The bill's passage sent the women home angry in their defeat.

With the bombing of Pearl Harbor on December 7, 1941, the National Legion of Mothers of America disbanded, but other groups, including the Patriotic Research Bureau and We, the Mothers Mobilize for America, continued to

UNITED STATES, WOMEN AIRFORCE SERVICE PILOTS

protest the war. Only those women aligned with the extreme right remained in these organizations. Most right-wing U.S. women joined their fellow citizens in support of their country's efforts to defeat the Axis powers in World War II.

—June Melby Benowitz

See also Dilling, Elizabeth; National Legion of Mothers of America

References and Further Reading:

- Benowitz, June Melby. 2002. *Days of Discontent: American Women and Right-Wing Politics, 1933–1945*. DeKalb: Northern Illinois University.
- Jeansonne, Glen. 1996. *Women of the Far Right: The Mothers' Movement and World War II*. Chicago: University of Chicago.

UNITED STATES, WOMEN AIRFORCE SERVICE PILOTS (WASP)

Women pilots who flew military aircraft for the U.S. government during World War II. The Women Airforce Service Pilots (WASP) program was created on July 5, 1943. It later merged the Women's Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron (WAFS) and the Women's Flying Training Detachment (WFTD).

Jacqueline Cochran, director of women pilots, had specific standards for WASP applicants: they had to undergo a personal interview and a thorough military physical, meet height and age requirements, and have at least 35 hours of flight time. WASP training at Avenger Field near



Women's Airforce Service pilots, assigned to the Ferrying Division. (Bettmann/Corbis)

“WOMEN CAN FLY AS WELL AS MEN”

“Frankly, I didn’t know in 1941 whether a slip of a young girl could fight the controls of a B-17 in the heavy weather they would naturally encounter in operational flying. Those of us who had been flying for twenty or thirty years knew that flying an airplane was something you do not learn overnight. But, Miss [Jacqueline] Cochran said that carefully selected young women could be trained to fly our combat-type planes. . . . Well, now in 1944, more than two years since WASP first started flying with the Air Forces, we can come to only one conclusion—the entire operation has been a success. [I]t is on the record that women can fly as well as men. . . . Certainly we haven’t been able to build an airplane you can’t handle. From AT-6’s to B-29’s, you have flown them around like veterans.”

—General Henry H. “Hap” Arnold,
commander of the Army Air Forces and founder of the WASP program,
at the graduation ceremony of the last WASP class on December 7, 1944.

“Hap Arnold,” Wasp on the Web.

http://www.wasp-wwii.org/news/press/arnold_press1.htm
(accessed February 10, 2006).

Sweetwater, Texas, lasted 5 months for each class of approximately 100 women. New classes began every 4 to 6 weeks. The flying portion of the training consisted of three phases: primary, basic (during which the women learned instrument flying), and advanced. WASP trainees also attended an extensive ground school, with classes in Morse code, navigation, simulated flight, aeronautics, math, physics, engine maintenance, and meteorology. Aviation Enterprises, Inc., a civilian company with a government contract, provided flight and ground school instructors as well as other staff needed to run the base. Chief Establishment Officer Leoti Deaton, along with 6 associate officers, carried out Cochran’s orders. Military staff at Avenger Field comprised a commander, an adjutant, 9 officers in charge of giving army flight checks, 2 flight surgeons, and a physical director.

On the flight line, WASP trainees wore khaki zip-up GI jumpsuits nicknamed zoot suits. The women purchased their own dress uniforms, consisting of khaki pants, a white blouse, and an overseas cap. In April 1944 the WASP received official uniforms (in “Santiago blue,” designed by Bergdorf-Goodman).

More than 25,000 women applied to join the WASPs. Of the 1,830 who were accepted, 1,074 got their wings. Following graduation, WASPs were sent to air bases around the country to ferry planes from factories to bases; to tow targets for ground-to-air and air-to-air gunnery training; to fly radar, strafing, and smoke-screen missions; to fly remote-control drone airplanes; and to test new aircraft and equipment. WASPs successfully flew aircraft that some male pilots refused to fly, such as the B-26 and B-29.

Many citizens were puzzled about the WASP program. Although detailed reports proved that many of the negative rumors and stereotypes about the women pilots were false, legislation designed to commission the WASP into the regular Army Air Force failed to pass Congress. On June 26, 1944, General Henry “Hap” Arnold announced that the WASP training program would be discontinued.

The last class of WASPs graduated on December 7, 1944; the program was officially disbanded on December 20, with 916 WASPs still on active duty. Thirty-eight WASPs died during the course of the program, 11 during training. In all, the WASPs flew over 60 million miles in

almost every type of plane the military used. WASPs were not eligible for the GI Bill or other military benefits because they were considered civilian employees. Congress finally granted the WASPs military status in 1977.

—*Rebekah Crowe*

See also Cochran, Jacqueline

References and Further Reading

- Douglas, Deborah G. 1990. *United States Women in Aviation: 1940–1985*. Smithsonian Studies in Air and Space no. 7. Washington, DC: Smithsonian Institution.
- Merryman, Molly. 1998. *Clipped Wings: The Rise and Fall of the Women Airforce Service Pilots (WASPs) of World War II*. New York: New York University.

UNITED STATES, WOMEN
RESERVES IN THE COAST
GUARD (KNOWN AS SPARS)

Service of American women in the U.S. Coast Guard reserve force. On November 23, 1942, Public Law 773 established the Women’s Reserve of the U.S. Coast Guard and authorized these women to serve ashore at stateside bases for the duration of World War II in order to free men for sea duty. The unit was nicknamed SPARs, an acronym drawn from the coast guard motto, *Semper Paratus*—Always Ready. The first 15 officers and 153 enlisted women withdrew from service in the U.S. Navy and entered the SPARs to form the nucleus of the new unit. Between 1942 and 1946 over 11,000 women volunteered for service (Holm 1998, 98).

In 1942 the duty and rank of women reservists was limited: lieutenant commander was the highest authorized rank, reserved for the director of the program, and no more than 18 women could serve as lieutenants. Dorothy Stratton, dean of women and professor of psy-

chology at Purdue University and the first commanding officer of the SPARs, recalled in 1992, “I had no command authority. All I had was the power of persuasion” (Thomson 1992, 1). In 1943 Congress elevated the SPAR director to the rank of captain.

Early SPAR volunteers trained at navy schools. By 1943, as the numbers of recruits grew, the coast guard leased the Palm Beach Biltmore Hotel in Florida for the duration of the war, transforming the luxury hotel into a boot camp, processing more than 7,000 enlisted women. SPAR officers became the first women to attend a military academy; beginning in 1943, the coast guard provided officer training for more than 700 women at the Coast Guard Academy in New London, Connecticut.

The first SPARs filled shore billets in every coast guard district of the continental United States. In late 1944 Congress expanded SPAR duty stations to include service in Alaska and Hawaii. Thirty-seven percent of SPAR officers held general-duty assignments, including administrative and supervisory work, and the majority of enlisted SPARs were assigned to clerical duties. Many, however, worked in specialized fields—for example, as chaplain’s assistants, boatswain’s mates, coxswains, radiomen, ship’s cooks, vehicle drivers, and pharmacist’s mates. The coast guard opened limited slots in aviation to women during World War II: 18 women became parachute riggers; 22 operated Link trainers (ground aviation trainers developed by Edward Link); and 12 were air-traffic control tower operators.

A small group of SPARs worked on one of the most highly classified and little publicized activities of the war effort: Long Range Aid to Navigation (LORAN), a newly developed system that enabled air- and surface-craft navigators to fix positions under all weather conditions. One officer and 11 enlisted SPARs selected for this classified duty trained at the Naval Training School at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology. Their work required standing twenty-four-hour watches, taking and recording radio

signal measurements at two-minute intervals. The signals emanated from shore-based stations and were picked up by receiver-indicators installed on ships and planes. In 1943 the LORAN station at Chatham, Massachusetts, became the only all-woman station of its kind in the world (Holm 1998, 108).

By July 1947 SPARs were demobilized. However, during the Korean War 40 SPAR officers and enlisted women were recalled to active duty, and approximately 24 remained on extended active duty until retirement. Additionally, approximately 200 women volunteered to return to the service on extended active duty in the 1950s, and most stayed until retirement (Thomson 1992, 20).

—*Lee Ann Ghajar*

See also United States, Military Service of Women in World War II

References and Further Reading

- Holm, Jeanne M., and Judith Bellafaire, eds. 1998. *In Defense of a Nation: Servicewomen in World War II*. Arlington, VA: Vandamere.
- Thomson, Robin J. 1992. *The Coast Guard and the Women's Reserve in World War II*. Washington, DC: Coast Guard Historian's Office.

UNITED STATES, WOMEN'S
ARMY AUXILIARY CORPS
(WAAC)

Noncombat women's arm of the U.S. Army during World War II. The Women's Army Auxiliary Corps (WAAC) was established by the U.S. Congress on May 14, 1942, authorizing the army to enroll officers and enlisted women for noncombatant service. On May 16, 1942, Oveta Culp Hobby took the oath of office as director of the WAAC, with the relative rank of colonel. The legislation limited the corps as an auxiliary to the army rather than an integral part of it. The

lack of full military status proved confusing, especially when the women began to serve overseas in December 1942 in North Africa but were ineligible to receive veterans' benefits. Auxiliary status was dropped when President Franklin D. Roosevelt signed legislation on July 1, 1943, to establish the Women's Army Corps (WAC) as an integral part of the wartime army.

Congresswoman Edith Nourse Rogers, a Republican from Massachusetts, initially introduced a bill in May 1941 to establish an all-volunteer women's corps to serve with the U.S. Army. General George C. Marshall, army chief of staff, encouraged and vigorously supported efforts to authorize women's participation in the army, and he selected Oveta Culp Hobby as the first director of the women's corps. Colonel Don C. Faith commanded the first WAAC training center, established at Fort Des Moines, Iowa, and on July 20, 1942, 440 women reported there to attend the 6-week WAAC Officer Candidate School. Ninety percent of the women in the first officer class had college training, and some had earned advanced degrees; many had been teachers. The average age of the officer candidates was 30; 99 percent had been employed. "You have a debt and a date," Director Hobby said in her address to the first officer candidate class several days later, "a debt to democracy, a date with destiny. . . . On your shoulders will rest the military reputation and the civilian recognition of this Corps" (Treadwell 1954; 58–59, 66).

Meanwhile, enlisted women attended the 4-week basic training course. The average age of the enlisted women was 24; over 60 percent had graduated from high school, and many had some college training. The WAAC basic and officer courses corresponded with courses for men except for the omission of combat subjects. The trainees drilled without weapons. The women studied military customs and decorum, army organization, first aid, supply, map reading, and defense against chemical and air attacks. They drilled and participated in parades and stood guard duty. Officer candidates also received

UNITED STATES, WOMEN'S AUXILIARY FERRYING SQUADRON

training in WAAC company administration, leadership, voice and command, court-martial procedures, and mess management (Morden 1990, 7–8).

WAAC recruiting surpassed its initial goals, and by June 1943 WAAC strength reached 60,000 (including 5,000 officers) (Treadwell 1954, 765). Additional WAAC training centers were opened at Daytona Beach, Florida; Fort Oglethorpe, Georgia; Fort Devens, Massachusetts; and the combined Camps Polk and Ruston in Louisiana.

—*Sharon Ritenour Stevens*

See also Hobby, Oveta Culp

References and Further Reading

- Morden, Bettie J. 1990. *The Women's Army Corps, 1945–1978*. Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office.
- Treadwell, Mattie E. 1954. *The Women's Army Corps*. United States Army in World War II Series. Washington, DC: U.S. Government Printing Office.

UNITED STATES, WOMEN'S AUXILIARY FERRYING SQUADRON (WAFS)

First group of women pilots to fly military aircraft for the U.S. government. In early 1940 Nancy Harkness Love, an experienced pilot, offered to recruit qualified female pilots for the recently created Ferrying Command Division of the Army Air Forces and was asked to compile a list of all U.S. women with commercial flight ratings. Love was not allowed to begin recruiting the pilots she had identified because of competition from Jacqueline Cochran, an award-winning aviatrix who also wanted to head a program of women pilots. Love and Cochran continued to have a strained relationship. In

June 1942 Love again submitted her proposal for female pilots to serve as a part of the Air Transport Command's Ferrying Division. After a series of compromises, the revived Women's Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron (WAFS) proposal was forwarded to General Henry H. (Hap) Arnold on September 3, 1942. A week later Secretary of War Henry Stimson announced the creation of the WAFS, with Love as its director.

The original 27 WAFS pilots were hand-picked by Love, who insisted on higher standards for her group than the Army Air Forces used for men being recruited at the same time: the women had to be high school graduates between 21 and 35 years of age with 500 hours of flight time (50 of those within the preceding 12 months); have a Civil Aeronautics Administration 200-horsepower aircraft rating; and provide two letters of recommendation. Love had no intention of her pilots becoming part of the military. Her subordinates would work as civilian employees and only ferry small trainer and liaison-type airplanes. The women, as civilian employees, were paid \$250 a month. The WAFS, after a brief orientation consisting of flight training and ground school, began ferrying planes on October 20, 1942. Love's pilots had to pay for their own uniforms, which consisted of an open-collared light gray shirt, slacks, and a gray-green belted jacket. Originally stationed at New Castle Army Air Force Base in Wilmington, Delaware, by February 1943 the WAFS were dispersed to Love Field in Dallas, Texas; to Romulus Field in Michigan; and to Long Beach, California. Still more bases were added later.

In August 1943 the WAFS were put under the control of Cochran, recently appointed director of women pilots, as part of a combined program called the Women Airforce Service Pilots (WASP). Love remained the head of the WAFS section of the WASP. By June 1944 all WASPs assigned to the WAFS section transferred back to the training command except for 123 women qualified to fly pursuit aircraft. Because all original 27 WAFS had commercial ratings and did

not undergo the same military-style training as most of the WASPs, many of them never considered themselves WASPs.

—*Rebekah Crowe*

See also Cochran, Jacqueline; United States, Women Airforce Service Pilots; United States, Women's Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron

References and Further Reading

Douglas, Deborah G. 1990. *United States Women in Aviation: 1940–1985*. Smithsonian Studies in Air and Space no. 7. Washington, DC: Smithsonian Institution Press.

Keil, Sally Van Wagenen. 1979. *Those Wonderful Women in Their Flying Machines*. New York: Rawson, Wade.

UNITED STATES, WOMEN'S
FLYING TRAINING DETACHMENT
(WFTD)

First U.S. program to train women to fly military aircraft. On July 30, 1941, aviatrix Jacqueline Cochran submitted a proposal to General Henry (Hap) Arnold to organize a division of women pilots to assist the Army Air Forces by ferrying airplanes, but Arnold refused her idea. In early September 1942 Cochran learned that Nancy Harkness Love, another prominent pilot, was recruiting female pilots to ferry airplanes for the U.S. government. Cochran immediately contacted General Arnold, and on September 15, 1942, Cochran received permission to direct a training program for female pilots. This program would prepare the pilots to serve in the Women's Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron (WAFS) under Love.

Cochran enlisted the help of General Barton Kyle Yount, head of the Flying Training Command in Fort Worth, Texas, to help her find a location for the Women's Flying Training De-

tachment (WFTD). On November 3, 1942, Yount and Cochran picked Aviation Enterprises at Howard Hughes Field in Houston, Texas, as home to the WFTD, then part of the 319th Army Air Forces Flying Training Detachment (AAFFTD). Leoti Deaton, a Fort Worth Red Cross administrator and swimming instructor, became the WFTD staff executive.

The first class of 50 WFTD trainees arrived in Houston in October 1942. For the first month the women in this top-secret program lived in private homes and were transported to and from the base in white buses decorated with red-and-white striped awnings and edelweiss. The WFTD spent each day in flight training, ground school, and an hour or so of physical training, including learning to march. Training eventually lasted 30 weeks, with 210 hours of aerial instruction and 560 hours of ground school.

The Aviation Enterprises hangar had neither bathrooms nor a dining hall, so the WFTD had to march half a mile to the Houston Municipal Airport Terminal for their meals. As no uniforms were provided to the women during the first month of training, the only dress requirement on the flight line was a hairnet. By mid-December, however, khaki coveralls in men's sizes 40 to 46 were provided; the women called them zoot-suits. In late March 1943 Cochran announced that WFTD training would move to Avenger Field near Sweetwater, Texas. Four classes of WFTD consisting of 230 women received at least part of their training in Houston.

On April 5, 1943, Class 43-W-4 flew 26 WFTD trainer aircraft to Sweetwater as part of their flight instruction and continued their training there. The first class of 23 Woofeds, as the WFTD women referred to themselves, graduated in April 1943 and became part of the Women Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron. At graduation the women received bombardiers' "sweetheart" wings modified to include a shield and stylized ribbon engraved with the squadron and class numbers. Over 300 additional WFTD

UNITED STATES, WOMEN'S FLYING TRAINING DETACHMENT

pilots became WAFS by the end of 1943. In July 1943 the WFTD merged with the WAFS to form the Women Airforce Service Pilots (WASP).

—*Rebekah Crowe*

See also Cochran, Jacqueline; United States, Women Airforce Service Pilots

References and Further Reading

Douglas, Deborah G. 1990. *United States Women in Aviation: 1940–1985*. Smithsonian Studies in Air and Space no. 7. Washington, DC: Smithsonian Institution Press.

Keil, Sally Van Wagenen. 1979. *Those Wonderful Women in Their Flying Machines*. New York: Rawson, Wade.

V

VAN DEVANTER (BUCKLEY),
LYNDA (1947–2002)

Vietnam combat nurse, founder and director of the Vietnam Veterans of America's Women's Project, and author of first autobiography by a female Vietnam veteran. Lynda Van Devanter was born into a politically conservative, Catholic family in 1947. She grew up in Arlington, Virginia, before she went on to nursing school in Baltimore. Shortly after her enlistment in the Army Nurse Corps in October 1968, she volunteered for deployment to Vietnam. From June 8, 1969, to June 7, 1970, she served consecutively with the 71st Evacuation Hospital and the 67th Evacuation Hospital as a nurse in the operating room. Her initial patriotism and Kennedy-inspired idealism quickly faded in the light of her experiences in Vietnam. As her tour of duty progressed, she became increasingly disillusioned, bitter, and alienated from her former values.

After her return to the United States and her honorable discharge from the army, she initially continued to work as a nurse in civilian hospitals. She was, however, increasingly affected by posttraumatic stress disorder, a psychological illness resulting from her war experiences, and she was finally forced to give up nursing. After a time of drug abuse, unemployment, intense psychological problems, and unsuccessful counsel-

ing, she got in touch with the Vietnam Veterans of America (VVA). Armed with a bachelor's degree in psychology from Antioch University, Van Devanter became the founding executive director of the VVA's Women's Project, which she headed from 1979 to 1984, and in the 1980s she married Tom Buckley. During her own therapy she began to write about her Vietnam experiences and finally published her autobiography, *Home before Morning: The True Story of an Army Nurse in Vietnam*, in 1983. It was the first autobiographical account of a female Vietnam veteran. The book reached a wide audience and encouraged many female veterans to start dealing with their own wartime memories. The book, however, was not undisputed among women veterans. Some former nurses accused Van Devanter of distorting her experiences for her own political goals; others defended her descriptions. Nevertheless, the publication of *Home before Morning* marked an important step toward the public recognition of female Vietnam veterans.

Even after her resignation as director of VVA's Women's Project, Van Devanter continued to lecture and write for numerous magazines and newspapers. During the Gulf War she also coedited a collection of writings by women veterans called *Visions of War, Dreams of Peace* (1991). For years Van Devanter suffered from several illnesses that were attributed to chemical

exposure during the war. Nevertheless, she continued her work as long as possible. Lynda Van Devanter died at the age of fifty-five on November 15, 2002, from systemic collagen vascular disease, an illness most probably resulting from her exposure to poisonous chemical substances during the Vietnam War.

—Petra Feld

See also Vietnam, U.S. Women Soldiers in

References and Further Reading

- Bates, Milton J. 1996. *Wars We Took to Vietnam: Cultural Conflict and Storytelling*. Berkeley: University of California.
- Van Devanter, Lynda. 2001. *Home before Morning: The Story of an Army Nurse in Vietnam*. Amherst: University of Massachusetts.

VAN KLEECK, MARY (1883–1972)

Industrial expert and social reformer who served as director of the U.S. Department of Labor's Women in Industry Service from 1917 through 1919. A graduate of Smith College, Mary van Kleeck became industrial studies director of the philanthropic Russell Sage Foundation in 1911. In addition, she joined the burgeoning social justice feminist movement, which used women's labor legislation as an opening wedge for the inclusion of all workers under the state's protection. Van Kleeck's pioneering studies on women bookbinders and artificial flowermakers in the United States established her national reputation as an industrial investigator. She became director of the Women in Industry Service after the United States entered World War I in April 1917.

Established by President Woodrow Wilson to both motivate women's participation in wartime industrial work and to establish labor standards for working women, the Women in Industry Service first concentrated on mobilizing women to replace the 4 million men entering military ser-

vice. By early 1918 van Kleeck began promoting gender equality within the U.S. industrial workforce, a result of her concern that women workers' weekly salaries remained at most three-fourths the compensation paid to their male counterparts.

The Women in Industry Service's efforts, however, encountered indifference and even opposition from federal government officials. The National War Labor Board, which oversaw capital-labor relations, theoretically endorsed equal pay for men and women but in reality ignored van Kleeck's recommendations. In addition, during a special conference on working women held in October 1918, U.S. Secretary of Labor William Wilson refused to make equal pay a top priority. Thus gender wage inequality continued throughout the war.

Even so, by the time she left Washington, D.C., in the summer of 1919, van Kleeck had accomplished two important goals during her directorship of the Women in Industry Service. First, she successfully lobbied Congress to establish a permanent Women's Bureau in the U.S. Department of Labor and briefly served as its first director. Second, van Kleeck developed the idea of "industrial citizenship," which emphasized the continued improvement of both productivity and working conditions in the industrialized United States. Although postwar labor chaos and resurgent conservatism ended hopes of continuing the progress made during World War I, from 1927 through 1933 van Kleeck helped promote a successful hours-and-wages agenda for working women in New York. These advances established important precedents for the New Deal.

—John Thomas McGuire

See also United States, Home Front during World War I; United States, Home Front during World War II

References and Further Reading

- Conner, Valerie Jean. 1983. *National War Labor Board: Stability, Social Justice, and the Voluntary State in World War I*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina.

McGuire, John Thomas. 2004. From the Courthouses to the State Legislatures: Social Justice Feminism, Labor Legislation, and the 1920s. *Labor History* 45, no. 2 (May):225–246.

VAN LEW, ELIZABETH LOUISE
(1818–1900)

Union spy during the American Civil War. Elizabeth Van Lew was a crucial source of information for the Union army during the War between the States. Born October 15, 1818, Van Lew was the daughter of a prosperous hardware merchant, originally from Long Island, and his Philadelphian wife. Sent to a girls' school in Philadelphia, Van Lew absorbed abolitionist principles that guided her life, even after she returned to Richmond, Virginia, and acted as a popular society hostess in the family's mansion. In protest against the secession of Virginia, Van Lew donned mourning clothes, manumitted the family's slaves, and used her personal fortune to free many of their relatives. When prisoners began arriving from the Battle of Bull Run, she demanded access to them and provided many with crucial medical care, money, and food.

As Richmond citizens increasingly harassed Van Lew, she disguised her activities by becoming increasingly eccentric, wearing stained, ragged clothing and babbling nonsense as she walked throughout the city. Dismissed as "Crazy Betty," she was free to carry on with her Unionist plans, which by 1862 included acting as the head of an intelligence network, code-named Mr. Babcock, that relayed information from federal prisoners who made careful observations of Confederate strength and river traffic, as well as members of the German and Irish communities in Richmond. Van Lew even positioned a former servant as a waitress in the Confederate White House, from where the woman relayed sensitive material discussed at dinners and observed unguarded documents.

On February 9, 1864, 110 prisoners led by Colonel Thomas Rose tunneled out of Libby Prison in Richmond and sought help from Van Lew agents to return to Union lines. Van Lew concealed some of the men in a secret room in her house for 9 days while her agents smuggled out others. Fifty-nine successfully escaped to the north. Because of her intelligence information, especially from the Pennsylvania-born superintendent of the local railroad, Generals Ulysses S. Grant, George Meade, and Benjamin Butler had extensive knowledge of troop movements and Richmond's defenses. Van Lew's continued protests regarding the condition of federal prisoners resulted in the Kilpatrick-Dahlgren raid of February 6, 1864, which failed to rescue prisoners and ended in disaster. Feeling personally responsible, she retrieved Dahlgren's body and returned it to his family in the North.

By March 1865 her network of agents was so effective that Grant's headquarters at City Point, Virginia, received fresh produce daily from Van Lew's farm, along with intelligence. During the fall of Richmond, she worked tirelessly to save archives of Confederate documents and shielded slaves and her agents from an angry Richmond mob. Van Lew continued to live in Richmond but was a social outcast and suffered financial hardship because of her spending during the war. Grant, grateful for her assistance, made her his first presidential appointee in 1869, as postmistress of Richmond, but the job ended in 1877 when President Rutherford B. Hayes refused to continue the appointment. Resigning a humiliating clerkship in the Washington, D.C., post office, Van Lew lived the rest of her life on a generous annuity raised by relatives of men she aided during the Libby prison break, particularly the Revere and Reynolds families of Massachusetts. For the last twenty years of her life, she refused to pay taxes because, as a woman, she had no representation. Van Lew died at home in Richmond on September 28, 1900.

—Margaret Sankey

See also Civil War, American, and Women

References and Further Reading

- Ryan, David P., ed. 1996. *A Yankee Spy in Richmond*. Mechanicsburg, PA: Stackpole.
 Varon, Elizabeth. 2003. *Southern Lady, Yankee Spy*. New York: Oxford University Press.

VIANNAY, HÉLÈNE (1917–)

A founder of the clandestine newspaper *Défense de la France* during the World War II era. Hélène Mordkovitch Viannay was born in Paris, France, in 1917 to Russian parents. Her mother, originally from Siberia, arrived in France in 1908 after having been exiled from Russia by the czarist regime. Her father, a journalist, returned to Russia shortly after her birth. Viannay has credited her mother, who worked as a doctor, with her strong French patriotism because she passed on to her daughter her revolutionary ideas, especially those regarding an individual's right to self-expression.

After her mother's death in 1937, Viannay began to dedicate herself to antiwar efforts and opposition to the Nazi regime in Germany. Following the fall of France in 1940, Viannay, at the time a student of physical geography at the Sorbonne, joined the resistance effort at the urging of one of her professors, who then nominated her as the interim assistant for the department laboratory, a position that would prove valuable to Viannay's resistance efforts.

While part of the resistance movement, she, along with other students at the Sorbonne, joined in the production of the clandestine newspaper *Défense de la France*, which was edited by Philippe Viannay, whom she would marry in 1942. Hélène was placed in charge of the printing machine for the newspaper as well as its distribution, all of which she handled under the guise of doing research in the physical geography laboratory. Approximately 5,000

copies of the first issue of *Défense de la France* appeared in August 1941, and a total of 47 issues of the paper were published from 1941 to 1944; with its circulation peaking at over 450,000, it was the most widely circulated of the French clandestine newspapers during the resistance.

Following World War II, Hélène and Philippe Viannay ran Les Glénans, a sailing school in South Brittany. Following her husband's death in 1986, Viannay became chairwoman of the *Défense de la France* Association. In March 2002, Viannay was presented with the De Gaulle–Adenauer Prize for her efforts in furthering cooperation between France and Germany in the postwar era.

—Stephanie Longo

See also Borrel, Andrée; Fourcade, Marie-Madeleine; France, Resistance during World War II, Women and; Moreau-Evrard, Emilienne; Souliè, Geneviève; Tillon, Germaine

References and Further Reading

- Feletin, Clarisse. 2004. *Hélène Viannay: L'instinct de résistance de l'occupation à l'école des Glénans* [Hélène Viannay: The Spirit of Resistance to the Occupation at the School of Glénans]. Paris: Editions Pascal.
 Jackson, Julian. 2003. *France: The Dark Years, 1940–1944*. Oxford: Oxford University.
 Thébaud, Veillon, and Françoise Thébaud. 1995. Hélène Viannay. *CLIO: Revue francophone d'histoire des femmes (Résistances and libérations en France, 1940–1945)* 1:1–32.

VIETNAM, U.S. WOMEN SOLDIERS IN

Women who served with the United States armed forces in Vietnam. About 10,000 U.S. female soldiers served during the Vietnam War (1965–1973). The majority, about 80 percent,



Nurses tend wounded American soldiers as they prepare to depart from a Vietnamese air base for the United States, 1967. (Bettmann/Corbis)

worked as medical personnel in the army or air force. But women were also deployed in non-medical positions, as secretaries for the Military Assistance Command, Vietnam, which was located in Saigon, and on U.S. bases throughout the country. They also served as air traffic controllers, photographers, cartographers, with the Army Signal Corps, in intelligence, and in other jobs requiring security clearance. All women held officers' ranks. With an average age of 23, the medical personnel in Vietnam were the youngest in the history of U.S. wars. Women were not subject to the draft; they joined the military voluntarily, and with a few exceptions, all female personnel deployed to Vietnam had volunteered for service in the war zone. Like their male peers, they served an individual 1-

year tour of duty in Vietnam, with the exception of the 36 female marines, who, like their male peers, had to stay 1 extra month. Women were not allowed to serve in combat units; they were officially classified as noncombatants by the military and not allowed to carry weapons. Nevertheless, female veterans experienced and described their situation as being at the receiving end of combat. Hospitals, for example, were not exempt from attacks by North Vietnamese forces.

Most women who joined the military and volunteered for service in Vietnam did so out of altruistic, patriotic, or idealistic notions; out of a sense of adventure; or following romantic, Hollywood-induced images of nursing in a war zone. Most were ignorant about the country and

the actual military and political situation in Vietnam. The grim realities of the war zone hit them as soon as they landed. Many were shocked by the constant threat to all U.S. military personnel from guerrilla fighters, mines, or satchel charges. They were appalled by the hot climate, the smells, and the poverty. The peculiar nature of the Vietnam War, a war that had no front lines and consequently no safe rear area, made the U.S. bases and hospitals constant targets of guerrilla attacks. One of the eight female soldiers killed in Vietnam, First Lieutenant Sharon Lane, died during an enemy attack on the Evacuation Hospital at Chu Lai.

A few days after arriving in Vietnam, women were sent to their duty stations around the country. Nurses joined one of the nineteen medical facilities scattered throughout South Vietnam. On most of the bases, especially in the early war years, there were few provisions for female soldiers and no separate showers or latrines, and the post exchanges (PXs) did not cater to the specific needs of female soldiers.

Duty in the war zone proved to be vastly different from all scenarios nurses had been trained for in the States. The workload and the conditions they had to face in Vietnam exceeded all expectations. The medical facilities in Vietnam were typically connected with a specific unit or firebase. Usually, the hospital staff was notified of major operations and of the estimated number of casualties in advance. Under normal conditions, nurses worked twelve-hour shifts six days a week, but during “pushes,” when battles were going on and a constant stream of wounded arrived at hospitals, the nurses stayed for days and nights on end. When the wounded arrived from the battlefield, the primary goal was to stabilize them, to operate on them, and to evacuate them to better-equipped large military hospitals at bases in Danang or Japan as soon as possible. Triage was often performed right on the helicopter pad. Nurses and doctors decided which patients were wounded so badly that they needed treatment at once, which ones could

wait, and which were “expectants”—too severely wounded to survive. Due to the constant lack of doctors and the overload of patients, nurses quickly learned to carry out many tasks usually performed by doctors, including minor operations.

Nurses had to deal with mutilated, wounded, and dying GIs. Many nurses felt that they had to repress their emotions in order to function properly. Strategies such as not talking to the wounded soldiers about their private lives or even refusing to learn their names enabled the nurses to keep emotionally uninvolved and to regard their patients merely as bodies and not as individuals. In hindsight, many nurses judge their tour of duty as the most demanding and at the same time as the most satisfying year of their professional careers. For many, Vietnam represented the peak of professionalism, and any stateside employment with the strict hierarchical delineation of duties paled in comparison.

In their spare time, many women tried to help the civilian population by working in orphanages or U.S. aid programs. Initially, many women were interested in Vietnamese culture and tried to establish relations with Vietnamese civilians. Soon, however, they were confronted with the hostility of many South Vietnamese and their lack of enthusiasm for the United States and the anticommunist cause. The impossibility of distinguishing a South Vietnamese friend from a Viet Cong sympathizer or even from a North Vietnamese foe was a major problem for all U.S. forces, and many women developed a general feeling of mistrust toward the Vietnamese. Additionally, they often displayed racist attitudes similar to those of many male U.S. soldiers. In contrast to the altruistic stereotype of the nurse and the general image of the nonviolent, forgiving woman, female soldiers often shared their male counterparts’ anger and hate for the Vietnamese, seeing them as responsible for the wounded U.S. soldiers who were their patients. In some cases, nurses even tried to avenge the deaths of sol-

diers on Vietnamese prisoners of war in their care.

Like many male soldiers, women grew more and more disillusioned as their tour of duty progressed. Many saw the official explanations for the involvement in Vietnam as not sufficiently convincing to justify the amount of suffering they witnessed. The war seemed insane and out of control, and government officials appeared either ignorant or consciously lying. Values such as patriotism or anticommunism, which many women had adhered to before they went to war, lost their validity.

To suppress the recurring memories and to endure the contradictions inherent in the war, many nurses used drugs, chain-smoked, and drank heavily in their leisure time, either alone or with their comrades. Many also became romantically involved with male soldiers or doctors. Those relationships were abruptly broken off when the tour of duty of either partner ended. Other nurses saw the men they had been dating brought into the hospital as casualties. Thus, most nurses preferred short-term, occasional affairs and avoided engaging in long-term relationships. Similar to their male peers in fighting units, many women described the intense comradeship as one of the most impressive and meaningful experiences of their entire tour of duty.

Women could not escape the negative and threatening aspect of living in the predominately male military system: many were sexually harassed by U.S. servicemen and reported problems from pranks to being threatened with disciplinary measures for refusing to engage in a sexual relationship with a superior officer. Female soldiers sometimes tried to avoid officers' clubs and invitations by fellow soldiers or officers and usually kept to themselves during their off-duty hours.

After their return to the states, women encountered the same problems as many male veterans: they were frequently confronted with indifference and even hostility by their families, friends, and U.S. society as a whole. The every-

day problems of civilian society seemed trivial for women who were accustomed to life-and-death situations. Further, due to their war-related psychological problems, many woman veterans found it difficult to readjust to civilian life. Many suffered from posttraumatic stress disorder and used drugs or alcohol to numb their feelings and to repress the recurring nightmares and flashbacks of their time in Vietnam. All in all, about 25 percent of female veterans were affected by service-connected disabilities. In contrast to male veterans, many women, military as well as civilian, additionally felt that they were not entitled to call themselves veterans and had no right to their troubled emotions because they had not experienced what society, the military, and many male veterans saw as "the real war"—combat. Consequently, many women withdrew from their friends and family. They did not admit to being Vietnam veterans and therefore did not seek help for their problems.

In the years following the end of the war, the service of female soldiers in Vietnam was largely ignored in public discussions evolving about the war and warriors. Not even the veterans' organizations took note of the contribution of female soldiers or catered to the needs of female veterans.

In 1979 Lynda Van Devanter, a former Vietnam combat nurse, founded the Vietnam Veterans of America's Women's Project, which was explicitly designed to aid women veterans in coming to terms with their war experiences and to offer psychological help to overcome the problems they had faced since their return. In the 1980s female veterans began to lobby for their rights more intensely, and they gradually became part of the public memory of the war. Twenty years after the end of the Vietnam War, in 1993, the service of women in Vietnam was publicly recognized and honored by the dedication of the Vietnam Women's Memorial on the National Mall in Washington, D.C.

—*Petra Feld*

See also Van Devanter, Lynda

References and Further Reading

- Bates, Milton J. 1996. *The Wars We Took to Vietnam: Cultural Conflict and Storytelling*. Berkeley: University of California.
- Bigler, Philip. 1996. *Hostile Fire: The Life and Death of First Lieutenant Sharon Lane*. Arlington, VA: Vandamere.
- Keen-Payne, Rhonda. 1998. United States: Nurses. Pages 741–752 in *Encyclopedia of the Vietnam War: A Political, Social, and Military History*. Vol. I. Edited by Spencer C. Tucker. Santa Barbara, CA: ABC-CLIO.
- Smith, Winnie. 1992. *American Daughter Gone to War: On the Front Lines with an Army Nurse in Vietnam*. New York: Pocket Books.
- Steinman, Ron, ed. 2000. *Women in Vietnam: The Oral History*. New York: TV Books.
- Van Devanter, Lynda. 2001. *Home before Morning: The Story of an Army Nurse in Vietnam*. Amherst: University of Massachusetts.

VIETNAM, WOMEN IN THE
BUDDHIST PEACE MOVEMENT

Efforts of Vietnamese women to restore peace to their country during the Vietnam War era. The impact of hostilities on their country and people led numerous Vietnamese women to take active roles in the peace movement despite the fact that many felt great ambivalence about entering the political arena. Driven by a desire to practice compassion by halting the conflict raging in their country, South Vietnamese Buddhists carried out a series of concerted challenges to the government of South Vietnam during the 1960s and 1970s. Vietnamese women also played an important part in these efforts to end the Vietnam War.

The antiwar commitment of these women grew out of traditional Buddhist beliefs regarding compassion and nonviolence, a desire to save their nation from a ruinous war, and the

increased sense of empowerment they felt in the twentieth century. The women constituted the critical core of Buddhist efforts to end the war. Buddhist women participated in demonstrations, placed family altars in the streets, led students out of class to protest the war, made efforts to ameliorate the human impact of the conflict, and volunteered to immolate themselves to call attention to the plight of their people. Women who joined the peace movement also risked prison, defied social norms, endured enormous pain, placed themselves in jeopardy, and made shocking sacrifices to save their country.

Buddhist nuns ignored deeply held prohibitions against leaving their convents to agitate for peace, which aptly demonstrates the desperation that many nuns felt about ending the killing in Vietnam. Yet their entry into the public realm represented a significant departure from their normal roles. Most Vietnamese assumed that nuns would shun political activity, and a variety of Vietnamese, including monks and nuns, argued that Buddhist clerics should never express political opinions. In fact, nuns are seldom mentioned in histories of Vietnam Buddhism, which makes their emergence in the peace movement even more dramatic.

In the end, as many as twenty women immolated themselves to halt the conflict in South Vietnam. Unable to respond violently to provocations, they sacrificed themselves in the most dreadful fashion to honor the Buddha's injunction to practice compassion. Ultimately, by immolating themselves, many Buddhist women also declared their complete liberation from patriarchy and the world, becoming bodhisattvas in the process. Their willingness to die for peace serves as a poignant testament to the depth of feeling they had concerning the impact of the fighting on their people.

—Robert J. Topmiller

See also Baez, Joan Chandos; Balch, Emily Green; Fonda, Jane; Hobhouse, Emily; Peace People Movement

References and Further Reading

Topmiller, Robert J. 2002. *Lotus Unleashed: The Buddhist Peace Movement in South Vietnam, 1964–1966*. Lexington: University Press of Kentucky.

VIETNAM, WOMEN IN WAR AND
RESISTANCE BEFORE 1954

Vietnamese legend, preserved in song, stories, and art, celebrates a long tradition of women warriors. Trung Trac and her sister Trung Nhi are remembered as leaders of a rebellion following the execution of Trung Trac's husband by the Chinese in A.D. 39. They raised an army of 80,000 and trained 36 women to serve as generals. One of their generals, Phung Thi Chihn, was reputedly pregnant when she led her troops into combat. She gave birth during battle, had her infant bound to her back, and, wielding a sword in each hand, continued to lead her troops. The success of the warrior Trung sisters led to the temporary collapse of Chinese authority in Vietnam. The Chinese governor, To Dihn, fled, and Trung Trac was hailed as Trung Vuong, the She-King. When the Chinese reasserted their control through a victorious campaign in A.D. 43, the sisters killed themselves rather than be captured.

The Vietnamese rose again against the Chinese in 248. According to Vietnamese tradition, their leader was Trieu Thi Trinh, a woman of tremendous energy and determination, who declared, "I wish to ride the tempest, tame the waves, kill the sharks. I want to drive the enemy away to save our people" (Bergman 1974, 54). This 20-year-old led an army composed of men and women. She was briefly successful, but when the Chinese were ultimately victorious, she too killed herself.

In the 1700s another woman, Bui Thi Xuan, led Tay Son rebels against the Nguyen dynasty.

They were temporarily victorious and established a reformist regime. When she was defeated and captured, the Vietnamese emperor Gia Long ordered her trampled to death by elephants, the degrading fate of women adulterers, and fed her heart, arms, liver, and lungs to his men in the hope that her courage would be ingested as well.

In the mid-nineteenth century the French established themselves in Vietnam. Vietnamese women played a prominent role in the anti-French resistance as they had in the anti-Chinese efforts. In 1907 Nguyen Thi Ba, a female innkeeper, poisoned 200 French soldiers. In 1931 in Nghe Ahn and Ha Tinh provinces, a guerrilla band of 120 fighters, 40 of whom were women, temporarily drove out local functionaries and established a short-lived soviet. When Nguyen Thi Ngia, a 23-year-old Nghe Tinh guerrilla fighter was captured, she cut off her tongue to avoid breaking under torture. Ming Khai, on the verge of death after being tortured by the French, wrote in her blood on the wall of her cell: "The sword is my child, the gun is my husband" (Jones 1997, 33). The French summarily executed the young guerrilla Vo Thi Sau before her fifteenth birthday. Vietnamese women continued this martial tradition, fighting both for and against the Viet Cong during the U.S. phase of the Vietnamese war. A Vietnamese saying states, "When the enemy comes, even the women should fight" (Bergman 1974, 32).

—Bernard Cook

See also China to 1911, Women Warriors in; India to 1857, Women Warriors in; Japan, Women Warriors in Ancient and Medieval Japan

References and Further Reading

Bergman, Arlene. 1974. *Women of Vietnam*. San Francisco: Peoples Press.
Buttinger, Joseph. 1958. *The Smaller Dragon: A Political History of Vietnam*. New York: Praeger.

- Duiker, William J. 1982. Vietnam: War of Insurgency. Pages 107–122 in *Female Soldiers, Combatants or Noncombatants? Historical and Contemporary Perspectives*. Edited by Nancy Loring Goldman. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Jones, David E. 1997. *Women Warriors: A History*. Washington, DC: Brassey's.

VIVANDIÈRES (ALSO KNOWN AS CANTINIÈRES) IN THE FRENCH ARMY

From 1792 until 1906 official auxiliaries of French army combat units. Throughout the medieval and early modern eras, there was a strong need for logistical support for military units above and beyond what armies could provide. This meant that most armies had a large number of camp followers who traveled with them and provided cooking, laundry, and sewing services. Often these camp followers were soldiers' wives and children, but others were prostitutes and assorted swindlers. The key problem for the high command was to get rid of the undesirable camp followers while retaining the desirable ones. By the 1780s many European armies had outlawed female camp followers. The French monarchy, however, made tentative attempts to regulate camp followers and make their status official, but these reforms were hardly under way when the French Revolution broke out in 1789. Starting in 1792 the new revolutionary government in France found itself at war with most of the rest of Europe. The size of the army increased dramatically, as did the number of camp followers. So many women and children began following the French armies that they hindered military operations. In April 1792 the French government passed a decree banning all women from the armies, except for two *vivandières* (dispensers of food) or *cantinières* (dispensers of

drink) per regiment, who would act as official auxiliaries, selling food and drink and providing sewing and laundry services to the troops. The law deemed these *vivandières* to be essential to the operations of the armies.

The French army high command regarded *vivandières* as essential to the functioning of the army. They provided services that the army could not, and they helped prevent desertion by bringing alcohol, tobacco, home-cooked meals, and female company into the camp. All of these were things a soldier might otherwise leave camp to find. Each *vivandière* was required to be married to a soldier in the regiment in which she served. This helped prevent prostitution and the spread of venereal disease. The couple's children would be born in the field and grow up on campaign. They usually became soldiers or *vivandières* themselves on reaching adulthood. Starting in 1800 sons of *vivandières* were allowed to become *enfants de troupe* (children of the regiment). These boys received a uniform, half pay, and half rations from age two to sixteen, when they enlisted as private soldiers. This system remained in place until 1885 and provided an important source of pretrained manpower.

Vivandières performed many domestic tasks, but their chief role was to sell food and alcohol to the troops. Because they often ran a canteen, they were known interchangeably as *cantinières*. During combat many *vivandières* would walk through the front lines distributing brandy to the soldiers under fire. This helped soldiers keep their courage in the face of murderous fire. Some *vivandières* gave away liquor on battle days as a type of service to the nation. Many went further and personally fought the enemy, and others acted as battlefield nurses, tending the wounded and comforting the dying. Thousands of these women were killed or wounded themselves.

Once Napoleon Bonaparte seized power in France in 1799 the army expanded again, and the numbers of *vivandières* went up. Napoleon's ambitions brought him into con-

flict with the rest of Europe, and the resulting Napoleonic Wars lasted until 1815. Millions of men and women fought all across Europe. The chief development for vivandières during this time was the French army's long-term foreign service and the consequent cutting of almost all ties with French civilian society. Because French units were often abroad for years at a time, many French soldiers married foreign women, and they too became vivandières. By 1812 there were vivandières from almost every country in Europe serving in the French army. By 1815 the French army was defeated and largely disbanded. Most vivandières were thrown into poverty and unemployment, and there was fierce competition for the few remaining posts. Those who received positions had to prove their loyalty to the newly restored French monarchy; even so, gaining a vivandière post sometimes required patronage from the royal court.

The French invasion of Algeria in 1830 returned vivandières to new prominence. Many women served in the bitter guerrilla warfare there for the next forty years. In 1832 the government reorganized vivandière regulations, and from 1830 to 1840 it reorganized education for enfants de troupe, making it much more formal and uniform. During the same period vivandières began to wear French army uniforms that were distinctly feminine but patterned on the uniforms of their regiments. These included trousers, which were illegal for French women to wear at the time. Though the law was enforced on civilian women, vivandières broke it with impunity. The mid-nineteenth century saw vivandières held up as examples of fashion and feminine virtue; ironically these examples also smoked, drank, used firearms, and wore trousers. Although some French feminist movements such as the *Vésuviennes* adopted vivandières' dress, feminism was unknown within the vivandière corps, and the women's rights movement entirely passed them by. This likely occurred because all of the feminists' demands that mattered to military



A vivandière, wearing Zouave regiment dress, during the Crimean War, 1855. (Library of Congress)

women were already granted to them. There was no need, in their eyes, for any agitation. Unlike civilian women, vivandières could already own property, travel, exercise a profession, wear pants, and effectively divorce their husbands.

By the 1870s official opinion began to turn against vivandières. They served bravely in the 1870–1871 Franco-Prussian War, and many were killed, wounded, or captured. The high command, however, engaged in scapegoating for the French defeat, and vivandières came under unwarranted suspicion as potential spies. Members of the government complained that vivandières' wagons slowed columns and blocked roads. By 1875 the Ministry of War cut the number of active service vivandières in half. In 1879 the ministry cut vivandières by a further 33 percent and at the same time authorized

units to hire male *cantiniers* in place of women. This resulted in the steady decline in the number of vivandières.

The following decade saw repeated discussions concerning completely suppressing vivandières, but traditionalists within the army high command blocked a final elimination. The so-called Three Year Law of 1889, which mandated three years of military service for all young men, created a moral and political environment that hastened the end of vivandières. Sons of the middle and upper classes now served as recruits, and alcoholism and venereal disease among them raised new public outcries against bad moral influences. By 1900 Minister of War Gaston A. A. Marquis de Gallifet ordered a ban on the sales of hard alcohol in all army canteens, cutting into the vivandières' profits. The same year, his replacement, Louis André, ordered noncommissioned officers to eat in official mess circles instead of in the vivandières' canteens, further eroding their ability to survive.

The final blow to vivandières came from the Dreyfus Affair, a scandal in which the French army proved largely hostile to the very existence of the French Republic. In response, the government passed the Two Year Law in 1905, which was designed to change the army from a largely professional, long-service entity into a short-term, citizen army composed of draftees serving two-year terms. The new idea was that the army would become a school for teaching citizenship, good morals, and love of country to every young man passing through. Vivandières, with their hereditary, long-service military families, epitomized the old professional army that the Republic wished to eliminate. As sellers of alcohol and as women in a men's world, vivandières represented a bad moral influence to many reformers at precisely the moment when moral purity seemed a life-and-death issue for the Republic. The Two Year Law mandated that all supply posts had to be reserved for male veterans who would serve as cantiniers, effectively eliminating vivandières.

To speed up the process, Minister of War Eugene Etienne ordered all commanders to report all vivandières "whose service has not been exempt from reproach and who for this reason or any other, they wish to replace" (Cardoza 2002, 21). The meaning of Etienne's message was clear: any vivandière could be replaced for any reason, and the minister of war was asking commanders to do it. A few vivandières managed to avoid termination until World War I, but by early 1906 they had been effectively eliminated as a group.

—Thomas Cardoza

See also American Revolution, Role of Women in the; Borginis, Sarah; Civil War, American, and Women; Etheridge, Anna; Great Britain, Women in Service in the Seventeenth, Eighteenth, and Early Nineteenth Centuries; Thirty Years' War

References and Further Reading

- Cardoza, Thomas J. 2001. Stepchildren of the State: Educating Enfants de Troupe in the French Army, 1800–1845. *Paedagogica Historica* 37(3):551–568.
- . 2002. Exceeding the Needs of the Service: The French Army and the Suppression of Female Auxiliaries, 1871–1906. *War and Society* 20(1):1–22.
- Rothenberg, Gunther E. 1978. *The Art of Warfare in the Age of Napoleon*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press.

VON RIEDESEL, FREDERIKE
CHARLOTTE LUISE VON
MASSOW

See Riedesel, Frederike Charlotte Luise von Massow von

VIVANDIÈRES IN THE FRENCH ARMY

VON SUTTNER, BARONESS
BERTHA SOPHIE FELICITA

VON THADDEN, ELIZABETH
(1890-1944)

See Suttner, Baroness Bertha Sophie Felicita
von

See Thadden, Elizabeth von

W

WAKE, NANCY (1912-)

Member of the French resistance and the British Special Operations Executive (SOE) during World War II. Nancy Wake was born in Roseneath, Wellington, New Zealand, in 1912, but her family moved to Sydney, Australia, when she was a baby. Her father was an Englishman who worked as a journalist, and her mother was a Maori. Nancy Wake worked as a nurse and then as a freelance journalist. She traveled widely and settled in Paris, where she met and married Henri Fiocca, a wealthy Frenchman from Marseilles. After the Nazi defeat of France in 1940, she served as a courier for the French resistance movement in Vichy-administered southern France. Wake helped fliers and prisoners escape over the Pyrenees Mountains into Spain. The Germans knew the elusive Wake as the White Mouse in recognition of her numerous disguises. After the Nazis offered a reward for her capture, she decided to leave for Britain. After she tried unsuccessfully to reach Spain, the Vichy government captured Wake. She escaped her captors, however, through an elaborate plan engineered by Patrick O'Leary, nicknamed the Scarlet Pimpernel of World War II.

The French section of the SOE recruited Wake after she arrived in England. Thirty-nine

women working with the SOE, including Wake, were officially enrolled in the First Aid Nursing Yeomanry (FANY) to hide their advanced military training and espionage work. After her British training, Wake reentered France to organize the Maquis in preparation for the D-Day invasion. Her work was instrumental in the expansion of resistance volunteers and the mounting of guerrilla attacks on factories and military installations. She fought with troops in pitched battles in the Auvergne region of France and personally led raids on Gestapo headquarters.

She was one of the few SOE female operatives to survive after operating on such a large scale and for so long behind enemy lines. Her husband did not live through the war. He was captured in France, tortured, and executed in 1943 as punishment for working with the underground.

After the war Wake returned to Australia with her second husband, John Forward, a former operative. For her bravery, Nancy Wake was awarded the George Medal from the British government; the Resistance Medal, the Legion d'Honneur, and the Croix de Guerre from France; and the Medal of Freedom from the United States. She lived and worked in Australia until 2001, when she moved to London.

—*Pamela Lee Gray*

See also Atkins, Vera H.

References and Further Reading

Fitzsimons, Peter. 2001. *Nancy Wake: A Biography of Our Greatest War Heroine*. New York: HarperCollins.

WALKER, MARY EDWARDS
(1832–1919)

Awarded the Congressional Medal of Honor for her service as a doctor during the American Civil War. Mary Edwards Walker was born on November 26, 1832, in Oswego, New York, the daughter

of Alvah and Vesta Walker. Her father, a doctor, was an enthusiastic supporter of reform movements, including women's rights, especially for his five daughters. Mary graduated from the Syracuse Medical School in 1855. In 1856 she married another doctor, Albert Miller. They established a medical practice in Rome, New York. Their practice did not succeed, however, and they divorced after thirteen years. When the American Civil War erupted, Mary went to Washington to join the Union army as a doctor. When her attempt was refused, she volunteered to serve as an assistant surgeon. She served at Fredericksburg and Chattanooga. In September 1863 she was appointed assistant surgeon. In addition to her medical work, she served as a spy, crossing the battle lines into Confederate territory. In 1864 she was taken

MARY WALKER, MEDAL OF HONOR RECIPIENT

The Medal of Honor was presented to physician Mary Walker in 1865. The U.S. government revoked the award in 1917, but President Jimmy Carter restored it sixty years later. The proclamation accompanying the presentation of the award follows:

"Whereas it appears from official reports that Dr. Mary E. Walker, a graduate of medicine, 'has rendered valuable service to the government, and her efforts have been earnest and untiring in a variety of ways,' and that she was assigned to duty and served as an assistant surgeon in charge of female prisoners at Louisville, KY, under the recommendation of Major-Generals Sherman and Thomas, and faithfully served as contract surgeon in the service of the United States, and has devoted herself with much patriotic zeal to the sick and wounded soldiers, both in the field and hospitals, to the detriment of her own health, and has endured hardships as a prisoner of war four months in a southern prison while acting as contract surgeon; and

"Whereas by reason of her not being a commissioned officer in the military service a brevet or honorary rank can not, under existing laws, be conferred upon her; and

"Whereas in the opinion of the President an honorable recognition of her services and suffers should be made;

"It is Ordered. That a testimonial thereof shall be hereby made and given to the said Dr. Mary E. Walker, and that the usual medal of honor for meritorious services be given her."

Given under my hand in the city of Washington, D.C.,
this 11th day of November, A.D. 1865.

Andrew Johnson, President

"By the President:

Edwin M. Stanton, Secretary of War"

—www.astr.ua.edu/4000WS/WALKER.html.



Dr. Mary Edwards Walker. (National Archives)

prisoner by Confederate troops. She was imprisoned in Richmond for four months until she was exchanged with other doctors for a group of Confederate doctors. She was proud to be exchanged “man for man.” She served during the Atlanta campaign and then as a doctor at a female prison and orphans’ asylum in Tennessee. After the war she received a miserly pension, which was less than a widow’s pension. On November 11, 1865, President Andrew Johnson awarded her the Congressional Medal of Honor, the highest military award of the United States.

In 1917 the U.S. Congress revoked her medal and those of 910 others, stating that the medals should be awarded only for actual combat. Walker refused to return her medal and proudly wore it until her death. It was posthumously restored in 1977. After the Civil War she wrote and engaged in speaking tours in support of women’s rights, dress reform, and temperance.

—Bernard Cook

See also Civil War, American, Women in the Medical Services in the

References and Further Reading

- Graf, Mercedes. 2001. *A Woman of Honor: Dr. Mary E. Walker and the Civil War*. Gettysburg, PA: Thomas Publications.
- Snyder, Charles M. 1974. *Dr. Mary Walker: The Little Lady in Pants*. New York: Arno Press.
- Walker, Dale L. 2005. *Mary Edwards Walker: Above and Beyond*. New York: Tom Doherty Associates.
- Walker, Mary Edwards. 2003. *Hit: Essays on Women's Rights*. Amherst, NY: Humanity Books.

WARD, NANCY
(CA. 1738–CA. 1824)

Native American warrior. Nancy Ward was the married name of a Cherokee woman whose birth name, *Nanye-hi* (One Who Goes About), was taken from *Nunne-hi* (Spirit People), the mythological name of the Cherokee. As a young person she was believed to possess spiritual powers. The identity of Nancy’s father is uncertain. One story says that he was part Delaware or Lenni Lenap. Another version says that she was the daughter of an Irishman, Francis Ward. Nancy’s second husband was also a Ward—Bryan (Briant) Ward, an English trader. They had a daughter, Elizabeth.

Nancy was born around the year 1738 in the Cherokee town of Chota, a site now covered by water behind the Tellico Dam on the Tennessee River. Her mother, Tame Doe, was from the Wolf Clan and was a sister of Chief Attakullakulla.

Nancy married in her teens and had two children, Five Killer (*Hiskitihi*) and Catherine (*Kati*), with her husband Kingfisher, of the Deer Clan. She was with him when he was killed at the Battle of Taliwa (1755). His death so outraged her that she took up his musket and joined the battle. Her war song and action so inspired

WASHINGTON, MARGUERITE PAT BEAUCHAMP WADDELL

the remaining Cherokee warriors that they soon defeated the Creeks (Muskogees). After the battle Nancy was named *Ghighau*, which can be translated as Beloved Woman or in the form *Agi-gaue* as War Woman.

As a War Woman she was responsible for preparing the Black Drink used in the purification ritual for warriors preparing for war. She also had the power to prevent the execution of captives. On one occasion she saved the life of Lydia Bean, who was about to be burned at the stake by Cherokee warriors.

In keeping with the matrilineal tradition of the Cherokee, women played an important role in Cherokee town councils. Nancy was head of the women's council and a power in the council of chiefs. She had been educated by Moravian missionaries and was one of the Cherokee who favored good relations with whites. During the American Revolution she sent warning several times to frontier settlers that Cherokee war bands, instigated by British agents, were preparing to raid.

The 1819 Hiwassee Purchase by the United States forced Nancy to leave Chota. She moved to Womankiller Ford on the Ocoee River, where she operated an inn on the Federal Road. In 1923 the Nancy Ward Chapter (Chattanooga) of the Daughters of the American Revolution put a marker on her grave. The gravesite is in a park north of Benton, Tennessee, on the Ocoee River.

—Andrew Jackson Waskey

See also Nonhelema; Winema; Winnemucca, Sarah

References and Further Reading

- Adams, Robert G. 1979. *Nancy Ward, Beautiful Woman of Two Worlds*. Chattanooga, TN: Hampton House Studios.
- Sawyer, Susan. 2000. *More than Petticoats: Remarkable Tennessee Women*. Helena, MT: TwoDot.

WARTENBURG, COUNTESS
MARION YORCK VON

See Yorck von Wartenburg, Countess Marion.

WASHINGTON, MARGUERITE
PAT BEAUCHAMP WADDELL
(B. 1900)

Member of the First Aid Nursing Yeomanry (FANY). Marguerite Washington served as a driver in World War I until an accident resulted in the amputation of her left leg. Through the use of a prosthetic limb, she was able to continue her FANY service during the interwar period and World War II. She received the French Croix de Guerre with Silver Star and the Belgian Civic Cross.

Washington joined FANY in 1913 and first began her war work in January 1915 at the Lamarck Hospital in Calais, working both as a Voluntary Aid Detachment (VAD) worker and bringing wounded from the trenches. In her spare time she joined other members of her unit as part of a group called the Fantastiks, which gave concert parties to nearby troops.

In 1916 she transferred to a special convoy unit of FANY ambulance drivers for the British Red Cross. Her main responsibility was the transport of supplies for the convoy. While on duty in May 1917, she lost her leg when her truck, which she had named Little Willie after Kaiser Wilhelm to reflect its temperamental nature, went out of control and smashed into an oncoming train. After a two-year convalescence she rejoined the FANY as adjutant in 1919.

Despite her disability, at the beginning of World War II Washington was asked to head a mobile volunteer FANY canteen convoy for the Polish army. She served in both France and Scotland.

—Barbara Penny Kanner

See also Black, Catherine; Great Britain, Women in Service during World War I; Haverfield, Evelina; Stobart, Mabel

References and Further Reading

- Beauchamp, Pat. 1940. *Fanny Went to War*. London: G. Routledge & Sons.
 ———. 1942. *Eagles in Exile*. London: Maxwell, Love.
 Popham, Hugh. 2003. *The F.A.N.Y. in Peace and War: The Story of the First Aid Nursing Yeomanry, 1907–2003*. Barnsley, South Yorkshire, UK: Leo Cooper; Pen and Sword Books.

WASHINGTON, MARTHA
 DANDRIDGE CUSTIS
 (1731–1802)

First lady of the United States as the wife of its first president, George Washington, for whom she was an invaluable ally during the Revolutionary War. Martha Dandridge was born June 2, 1731, at her father's plantation, Chestnut Grove, in Virginia. After a 1746 debut in Williamsburg, she married wealthy Daniel Parke Custis in May 1750 and bore him four children, two of whom survived his sudden death in July 1757. As a wealthy and socially influential widow, Martha chose to marry George Washington on January 6, 1759, having carefully studied him as a suitable stepfather and partner. Dandridge and Custis money allowed Washington to ascend Virginia's social ladder, spend lavishly on his estate at Mount Vernon, and purchase products from Great Britain. Martha Washington did not participate in the embargo against British goods and remained on polite terms with Royal Governor Lord Dunmore (John Murray) even during the tense years leading to the Revolution.

Martha, stunned by the death of her daughter Patsy from epilepsy in 1773, was not happy about Washington's acceptance of military command in the Revolution, but she hurried to join him when it became apparent that his enemies could interpret her absence as a weakness. Each year of the Revolution, Martha spent the winter with Washington in camp, bringing desperately needed medical supplies, clothing, and food, as well as organizing a social life that smoothed over differences between Washington, his subordinates, and their often-fractional wives. As the manager of a large plantation household, Martha was an expert on feeding, clothing, and managing large groups of people, and she served as a diplomatic emissary between the military camp and the sometimes hostile local community, organizing clothing drives and the collection of supplies. Much liked by the soldiers, Martha volunteered to have a smallpox inoculation to prove its safety to the troops, and she was affectionately addressed as Lady Washington.

After the war Martha was forced to deal with numerous visitors and the curious at Mount Vernon. The family's properties had been neglected during the war, and she struggled to right them while entertaining and dealing with Washington's political future. When he became president in 1789, she lived as first lady in New York and Philadelphia and set a respectable but elegant tone at her home, carefully balanced between a royal court and a casual social gathering. In the face of Washington's increasing alienation from his former soldiers, Martha was always available to veterans, distributing money and goodwill. At all times a warm maternal figure, Martha raised a large assortment of grandchildren, nieces, and nephews at Mount Vernon and the presidential residences.

Martha Washington survived her husband's death in 1799 by three years. She had been stunned by the defection of two of her slaves while she was living in Pennsylvania. She

became convinced that the Mount Vernon slaves planned to murder her in order to gain the manumission promised at her death in Washington's will, and as a result, she freed them in 1800. Before her death she carefully burned all of her personal correspondence, diaries, and important documents, leaving few records about her life and relationships. She died at Mount Vernon on May 22, 1802, and was buried alongside her husband.

—Margaret Sankey

See also American Revolution, Role of Women in the

References and Further Reading

- Bryan, Helen. 2002. *Martha Washington: First Lady of Liberty*. New York: John Wiley and Sons.
- Clark, Ellen McCallister. 2002. *Martha Washington: A Brief Biography*. Mount Vernon: University of Virginia.
- Conkling, Margaret. 1850. *Memoirs of the Mother and Wife of Washington*. Auburn, NY: Derby Miller.

WATTS, JEAN (1909–1968)

Canadian journalist and Communist Party activist who was the only woman to join the Mackenzie-Papineau Battalion, the Canadian contingent of the International Brigades, which fought on the Republican side in the Spanish Civil War.

Jean Watts was born into a wealthy Toronto family, but in the early 1930s she deserted her class to become a cultural activist and journalist with the Communist Party of Canada. She was working with the Communist Party at age twenty-three when she was arrested for distributing communist literature. In 1936 she used inherited wealth to help found the left-wing

cultural magazine *New Frontier* and also joined the Theatre of Action, a left-wing theatrical troupe in Toronto. After the Spanish Civil War began in July 1936, Watts became determined to join the Republican forces, but the Communist Party's male leadership frowned on the idea of a woman joining the fray. The party agreed, however, to send her as a correspondent for its newspaper, the *Daily Clarion*, and to help Canadian Dr. Norman Bethune, who had established a blood transfusion institute in Madrid.

In January 1937 she reported to the International Brigades marshaling center in New York, where, she recalled, U.S. recruiters reacted with dismay, exclaiming, "My god, are they sending women?" (Interview 1627:1 in the Dorothy Livesay Collection, British Columbia Archives). After six months in Spain she grew disenchanted with her limited role as a correspondent. She never got to the front lines and instead seemed to be relegated to what Canadian newspapers at the time described as the "women's beat," covering culture, women and children, religion, and other human interest subjects. Frustrated, she demanded to join the Mackenzie-Papineau Battalion. Once accepted, she became its first and only female member and one of no more than a handful of Canadian women in the entire International Brigades. (Other Canadian women served with non-Canadian units.) She volunteered to be a truck and ambulance driver for the British Medical Unit and served at Hueta in Cuenca Province, working as a chauffeur and "grease monkey" and doing minor repairs. An attractive woman, Watts enjoyed the easy camaraderie of the male truck drivers and mechanics in the British Medical Unit. (The Royal Canadian Mounted Police showed some interest in her sexual orientation; one surveillance report described one of her "peculiarities" as "looks and dresses like a man" [Jean Watts file, National Archives of Canada, Canadian Security Intelligence Service Access to Information request 117–95]).

Watts returned to Canada in January 1938 and went to work with the Committee to Aid Spanish Refugees. She was forced to abandon this work in 1939 when the Communist Party became effectively illegal after Canada declared war on Germany, with which the Soviet Union had signed a nonaggression pact on August 23, 1939. In 1941 Watts joined the Canadian Women's Army Corps, an auxiliary women's unit of the Canadian military. She served within Canada and attained the rank of lieutenant before being discharged in 1946. After World War II she became a mother, and her involvement with the Communist Party declined, although she remained active with left-wing women's groups such as the Voice of Women. She committed suicide in 1968.

—Larry Hannant

See also Kea, Salaria; Street, Jessie

References and Further Reading

- Parker, Douglas Scott. 1994. "Women in Communist Culture in Canada: 1932–1937." Unpublished master's thesis, McGill University, Montreal.
- Sangster, Joan. 1989. *Dreams of Equality: Women on the Canadian Left, 1920–1950*. Toronto, Canada: McClelland and Stewart.

WERNER, RUTH (SONJA)

See Kuczynski, Ursula

WERTHEIMER, MARTHA
(1890–1942)

Rescuer of Jewish children. Martha Wertheimer worked as a journalist for the *Offenbacher*

Zeitung in Frankfurt until she was fired because of Nazi anti-Jewish legislation. She became director of the office of children's affairs of the Frankfurt Jewish Community. She played a central role in the organization of the *Kindertransport* (children's transports) in 1938 and 1939. Approximately 10,000 Jewish children were transported out of Germany to refuge abroad. Though many were placed with families in the Netherlands and fell into the hands of the Nazis after the German conquest in May 1940, approximately 7,500 Jewish children from Germany were relocated to England, where they survived. The children were forced to travel without their parents and, in many cases, without their siblings, most of whom disappeared in the Holocaust. These refugee children were, of necessity, generally placed with non-Jewish families. Wertheimer accompanied a number of transports to England but always returned to Germany.

In Frankfurt, once the transports came to a halt because of the war, Wertheimer turned her attention to the Jews stranded in the Third Reich. She ran a soup kitchen and 8 homes for elderly Jews. On June 10 and 11, 1942, 1,042 Jews from Frankfurt and 450 from the surrounding area were rounded up for transport to the death camps in the east. Because of her work with the Jewish Community, the Gestapo ordered Wertheimer to take charge of organizing the group. She and the other Jews in this transport disappeared into the Nazi killing machine.

—Bernard Cook

See also Holocaust and Jewish Women

References and Further Reading

- Interlog.com. "Dr. Martha Wertheimer—Rescuer of Children." Charlotte Opfermann, Women and the Holocaust. <http://www.interlog.com/~mighty/special/Martha.htm> (accessed October 25, 2003).

WEXFORD RISING, WOMEN OF

Role of women in the 1798 rebellion against English rule in Ireland. The Society of United Irishmen, a nationalist organization, was founded in 1791. Its goal was the liberation of Ireland from British rule, and a general rising of the Irish against the British was planned for 1798.

Bloody clashes occurred in villages to the west of Dublin. There were spontaneous and uncoordinated risings in Wexford, Antrim, and Down, but they had been crushed by the time a French force landed at Killala in County Mayo in August. Although the French were joined by many peasants, they were defeated in September. Women in the north were among the fighters and survivors. Betsy Grey of Granshaw, County Down, died in battle on June 13 at Ballinahinch with her brother and her lover, Willie Boal. The participation of

women in these rebellions was particularly evident in the Wexford rising, which began on May 28. Led by Father John Murphy of Boolavogue, the rebels quickly gained control of County Wexford. The rebels were later defeated at Arklow and New Ross, and their forces were finally overrun at Vinegar Hill, near Enniscorthy, on June 21.

Women of Wexford played various roles. They supported their kin, smuggled ammunition, and sustained the rebels in battle by providing ammunition, drink, and succor. They fought, they were brutalized by the British, and they died. Confronting the growing sentiment of resistance, the British outlawed wearing of the color green in 1798. Wexford women who defied this order were reviled by British soldiers and had their offending ribbons, caps, and even petticoats ripped off. When Ann Ford of Garrysackle was confronted by a Hessian offended by her wearing of the green, she dispatched him

WEXFORD RISING

When the tyrant's hand was laid
Upon the true and brave,
In the tender pride of womanhood
They rose to help and save.

—John Keegan Casey

Then a figure rose above us,
'twas a girl's fragile frame,
And among the fallen soldiers there
She walked with eyes aflame,
And her voice rang o'er the clamour
Like a trumpet o'er the sea:
"Who so dares to die for Ireland,
Let him come and follow me."

—William Rooney,

"Heroine of Ross (Mary Doyle)."

1789 Homepage,

<http://homepages.iol.ie/~fagann/1798/songs7.htm>.

with a blow from the hammer she was carrying. At one point during an engagement with the British, Mary Doyle of Castleboro reputedly shamed the rebel men who were about to abandon an artillery piece by sitting on it and refusing to move unless they took the piece with them. At the Battle of New Ross, Mary Doyle, in the midst of the fighting, cut the cartridge belts off dead soldiers and passed them to the rebels and urged on faltering insurgents. She probably died as New Ross was overrun and burned.

Many women were involved in the climatic fighting when approximately 10,000 rebels—men, women, and children—gathered on Vinegar Hill. Women fought fiercely alongside their male relatives and died with them. Following the battle many surviving women were raped by the victorious British troops. After their defeat Michael Dwyer, Joseph Hall, and other surviving rebels took to the Wicklow Mountains. Peg Kavanagh was among the women who brought them food and information. Another courier was Susan Toole, the daughter of a blacksmith, who in addition to food and information brought the insurgents ammunition hidden in her dress.

—Bernard Cook

See also Ireland, Easter Rising of 1916;
Ireland, War of Independence

References and Further Reading

- Gahan, Daniel. 1995. *The People's Rising: Wexford, 1798*. Dublin: Gill & MacMillan.
- _____. 1997. *Rebellion! Ireland in 1798*. Dublin and Enniscorthy, Ireland: O'Brien Press/Comóradh '98.
- Kavanagh, Patrick F. 1898. *A Popular History of the Insurrection of 1798: Derived from Every Available Record and Reliable Tradition*. Cork, Ireland: Guy.
- Keogh, Dáire, and Nicholas Furlong, eds. 1998. *The Women of 1798*. Dublin. Four Courts Press.

WHITTLE, REBA ZITELLA (1919–1981)

A flight nurse for the U.S. Army who was captured by the enemy in 1944 when her plane crashed in German territory. Reba Zitella Whittle was the only U.S. female prisoner of war (POW) captured by the Germans during World War II. She was a POW for almost four months.

Born on August 19, 1919, Whittle requested a position as an army reserve nurse in June 1941. In January 1943 she applied for training with the Army Air Force School of Air Evacuation and was taught how to handle in-flight medical emergencies. On January 22, 1944, she began her European service with the U.S. military.

On September 27, 1944, Whittle, a second lieutenant, and her comrades from the 813th Aeromedical Evacuation Transportation Squadron in England were flying to pick up casualties from France. Whittle had already flown in forty missions, and she expected the current one to be routine. While flying over Aachen, their C-47 plane was shot down. Although she survived the crash, German soldiers captured her and marched her to a detention site.

Whittle was wounded in the crash, receiving a concussion and a deep forehead gash. When she was examined in a German hospital, the doctor admitted to being puzzled, saying, “Too bad having a woman as you are the first one and no one knows exactly what to do” (Kelly Patrick 2004). Her fiancé, Lieutenant Colonel Stanley Tobiason, received permission to do a voluntary search and rescue mission for Whittle but failed in his attempt. On October 6 she was transferred to the POW camp, Stalag 9C, at Meiningen, and while in captivity she nursed others. She was not officially acknowledged as a POW by the U.S. government, which found the situation highly embarrassing and a potential public relations nightmare. On January 25, 1945, she was sent to Switzerland, accompanied by members of the German Red Cross, and was then allowed to fly home.

The injuries sustained in the crash prevented Whittle from flying again, and the U.S. government requested that she not talk about her experiences, a typical practice to protect those still in captivity. She obeyed the orders. She seemed to display no bitterness about her experiences; her diary recorded many instances of German kindnesses. Whittle was promoted to first lieutenant but was then released from active duty in 1946.

She married Tobiason on August 3, 1945, and they raised two sons. They struggled to have POW status granted to Whittle, something that would not occur in her lifetime. She was, however, awarded the Purple Heart and the Air Medal in 1945. The second award, established in 1942, is given for meritorious achievement while participating in aerial missions.

Whittle spent several years during the 1950s seeking physical and psychological disability compensation and finally received a partial retirement settlement. She died of cancer on January 26, 1981, and was buried in the National Cemetery in San Francisco, California. In 1983 she was posthumously recognized as a POW, a designation that her husband said would have delighted her.

—*Kelly Boyer Sagert*

See also Bullwinkel, Vivian; Cornum, Rhonda

References and Further Reading

Military.com. "2nd Lt. Reba Whittle: Army Flight Nurse Was Only U.S. Woman POW in WWII Europe." Bethanne Kelly Patrick. http://www.military.com/Content/MoreContent?file=ML_whittle_bkp (accessed July 31, 2004).

WILHELMINA, QUEEN OF
THE NETHERLANDS
(1880–1962)

Queen of the Netherlands during World War II. In 1940 when Germany invaded the Nether-



Wilhelmina, Queen of the Netherlands. (Ridpath, John Clark, Ridpath's History of the World, 1901)

lands, Wilhelmina escaped to Great Britain and led the Dutch government-in-exile in London.

Wilhelmina Helena Pauline of Orange-Nassau was born on August 31, 1880, the daughter of King William III and his second wife, Queen Emma, who had been the German princess of Waldeck-Piermont. When Wilhelmina's father died in 1890, a special law was required to permit female succession. With its passage, Wilhelmina became queen. Her mother served as regent until Wilhelmina's eighteenth birthday.

Wilhelmina was a constitutional monarch but, unlike the kings and queens of England, had considerable governmental powers. During her first year as queen, she offered a palace at The Hague to the world as the site for the first Hague Conference, which met in 1899 in an effort to promote peace. The palace eventually became home to the International Court of Jus-

tice, which attempted to avoid conflict through international arbitration. When Wilhelmina was twenty, she gained international attention for intervening in the Boer War. Despite a British blockade of Boer Transvaal, the queen sent a Dutch warship to rescue the Boer president, Paul Kruger. In 1901 she married Hendrik, Duke of Mecklenburg-Schwerin. The marriage was an unhappy one, but it produced a daughter, Juliana, on April 30, 1909. Wilhelmina personally devoted herself to the upbringing of her daughter and at the same time became very wealthy through her investments, including those in Royal Dutch Shell.

When the Germans launched their Schlieffen Plan in August 1914, they decided not to violate Dutch territory. The Netherlands, though surrounded by German forces, was able to remain neutral, and following the collapse of the German war effort, Wilhelmina accorded Kaiser Wilhelm of Germany asylum in her country.

Germany did invade her kingdom on May 10, 1940. On May 13, following the advice of the Dutch government, Wilhelmina sent her daughter and others in her family to England on a British destroyer. The next day the Dutch military admitted its inability to stop the Germans. Wilhelmina had attempted to join her troops while they were still fighting near the coast in Zeeland, but the British ship she boarded at the Hook was ordered by the British navy to Harwich on the English coast. Wilhelmina was outraged, but after speaking with King George of Britain, she reluctantly agreed to join him in London. She stayed in England and led the Dutch government-in-exile. During the long German occupation of her country, Wilhelmina's weekly radio addresses encouraged the Dutch people to hope for liberation. The queen narrowly escaped injury when a German bomb hit her country residence in England. On her return to the Netherlands at the end of the war, she was welcomed by the people as the symbol of Dutch resistance to Nazism and of Dutch national identity. The queen toured the country on a bicycle, assessing the needs of her people and the reconstruction effort. Until the

infrastructure was repaired and electricity was provided to the country, Wilhelmina did not allow heat or electricity to be turned on in her palace. Following her golden jubilee in 1948, the queen passed the crown to her daughter, Juliana. Wilhelmina died on November 28, 1962.

—Bernard Cook

See also Schaft, Jeannetje Joanna

References and Further Reading

Wilhelmina, H.R.H. Princess of the Netherlands. 1960. *Lonely but Not Alone*. Translated by John Peereboom. London: Hutchinson.

WILLIAMS, JODY (1950–)

Winner of the Nobel Peace Prize in 1997 for her effort to gain an international banning of land mines. Jody Williams, who was born on October 9, 1950, in Brattleboro, Vermont, was the founding coordinator of the International Campaign to Ban Land Mines (ICBL). Before earning a master's degree in International Relations at the Johns Hopkins School of Advanced International Studies, she had campaigned to educate the public about the policy of the U.S. government in Latin America. From 1986 to 1992 she was director of the nongovernmental organization (NGO) Medical Aid for El Salvador. In October 1992 the ICBL was set up with the assistance of six NGOs. As ICBL coordinator, she spoke about the problem of land mines before the United Nations, the European Parliament, and the Organization for African Unity. She coauthored a study based on field research in countries afflicted with the problem of land mines. In September 1997 her efforts bore fruit in an international treaty banning antipersonnel mines. The United States refused to support the treaty.

Land mines are an ongoing problem in areas that experienced civil war and ethnic conflict in

the late twentieth and early twenty-first centuries. Especially plagued are Cambodia, Angola, Mozambique, Bosnia, Kosovo, Afghanistan, and Chechnya. Land mines kill and maim thousands of noncombatants annually.

—Bernard Cook

See also Balch, Emily Green; Peace People Movement; Von Suttner, Baroness Bertha Sophie Felicita

References and Further Reading

Roberts, Shawn, and Jody Williams. 1995. *After the Guns Fall Silent: The Enduring Legacy of Landmines*. Washington, DC: Vietnam Veterans of America Foundation.

WINEMA (TOBEY RIDDLE) (CA. 1848–1920)

Native American warrior and intermediary with the United States. Born about 1848 along the Link River in what is today Oregon, Winema's childhood exploits established her as a woman-chief among the Modoc Indians. As a young girl, Winema was paddling a canoe with several other children when the small boat was pulled into treacherous white water. Winema steered the canoe for several miles, keeping the others calm and giving them directions. Her bravery and stoicism in the face of danger, along with her exhibition of leadership, gave her status among the male warriors in her village. She was encouraged to learn from the men, acquiring proficiency with firearms, fist fighting, and hunting, as well as traditional female skills. She was perceived in adolescence to be a strong and powerful woman.

In 1862, at about the age of fourteen, Winema married a miner named Frank Riddle. Assuming the anglicized name Tobey Riddle, she adopted Euro-American dress and customs and was considered an excellent housekeeper by

white standards. In 1863 the couple had a son, Jefferson C. Davis Riddle, who would later write *The Indian History of the Modoc War*. The Riddles lived as trappers and farmers, becoming a significant part of the multicultural conflicts arising from Native American diaspora and white settlement. As interpreters and diplomats, the Riddles worked with the U.S. government and the Modoc Indians to establish peaceful relations.

The Klamath Reservation was a site of ethnic fighting, starvation, and disease. Diverse groups of indigenous people were placed together, and traditional rivalries prevented peaceful coexistence. By 1865 the Modocs, reduced to fewer than 300 individuals, were driven from the reservation by their long-standing enemies and more powerful neighbors, the Klamaths. During this period Tobey Riddle led an armed raid against the Klamaths to retrieve stolen livestock. Her bravery under fire brought her further prestige among the Modocs.

Led by Tobey Riddle's cousin Captain Jack, the Modocs lived off the reservation for four years. The Riddles helped negotiate their return, but by 1870 the Modocs once again left the Klamath Reservation. Frank and Tobey Riddle worked for the U.S. government, offering not only linguistic skills but also cultural interpretation and diplomatic advice. Relations between whites and the Modocs deteriorated. Raids led to the Modoc War in 1872.

On Good Friday, April 11, 1873, a peace commission met with Captain Jack in an effort to end the bloody fights in the Lava Beds. Tobey Riddle had warned the commissioners, including General E. R. S. Canby and A. B. Meacham, that their lives were in danger, but the army officers refused to heed her advice. Meacham was a friend of the Riddles. They had previously worked with him and appreciated his advocacy of Indian rights, as well as his enforcement of legal marriages between white men and Native American women. The Modocs attacked the U.S. delegation, killing Canby and several others. Tobey Riddle interceded and rescued Meacham.

Tobey Riddle survived the Modoc War and lived the remainder of her life near the Klamath Reservation. She died in 1920.

—*Dawn Ottevaere*

See also Nonhelema; Ward, Nancy;
Winnemucca, Sarah

References and Further Reading

- Dillon, Richard. 1973. *Burnt-Out Fires*. Englewood Cliffs, NJ: Prentice-Hall.
- Meacham, Alfred Benjamin. 1876. *Wi-ne-ma (the Woman-Chief) and Her People*. Hartford, CT: American Publishing.
- Murray, Keith A. 1959. *The Modocs and Their War*. Norman: University of Oklahoma.
- Quinn, Arthur. 1997. *Hell with the Fire Out: A History of the Modoc War*. Boston: Faber and Faber.
- Riddle, Jefferson C. Davis. 1914. *The Indian History of the Modoc War*. Repr., Mechanicsburg, PA: Stackpole Books, 2004.

WINNEMUCCA, SARAH (CA. 1844–1891)

Native American army scout. Born about 1844 near the Humboldt Sink in what is today western Nevada, Sarah Winnemucca began life as *Thocmetony* (Shell Flower), daughter of Northern Paiute chief Old Winnemucca. Her early years were characterized by brief encounters and conflicting attitudes toward Euro-Americans. As settlers traveled through Northern Paiute subsistence areas, Sarah's maternal grandfather, Chief Truckee, worked with white landowners and the military as a powerful advocate for multiethnic cooperation. Old Winnemucca, however, initially resisted Truckee's acceptance of settlement, and Sarah's personal experience inspired an early fear of white populations.

When Sarah was six, Truckee took her, along with her mother and siblings, to live on a California ranch. Sarah's older sister Mary experi-

enced many difficulties with the white men there, developing a strong dislike of Euro-Americans. Discrimination against indigenous populations, negative attitudes toward interracial marriage, and a frontier exchange economy utilizing Native American slaves and concubines created a tenuous existence for the Paiute women. At the same time, Sarah's older brothers Natchez and Tom gained both economically and socially from the livestock they acquired working on the ranch. For several years the family passed back and forth between white and Paiute society. When she was thirteen Sarah and her sister Elma were adopted by whites and worked in the town of Genoa for Major William Ormsby, becoming acquainted with the Indian agent system. Sarah grew to adulthood in this gender frontier and cultural borderland, establishing her ability to move between ethnic groups and traditional expectations.

The combination of gold, religion, land settlement, and cultural diversity made the late-nineteenth-century California-Nevada border a center of conflict. Miners, Mormons, ranchers, entrepreneurs, and Native Americans existed in a difficult cultural crucible. White settlers constantly encroached on Indian lands, creating bloody battles, retaliations, and diplomatic missions. The Northern Paiutes suffered from starvation and disease on and off the reservation as they struggled to adapt. Sarah Winnemucca found herself both an active participant and a cultural mediator in these ongoing clashes.

In the 1860 Pyramid Lake War, Sarah's patron, Major Ormsby, was killed, and her family became subject to more rigorous military oversight. Influenced by these experiences, Sarah began her life's work as an interpreter, scout, lecturer, and Native American rights advocate, providing a middle ground between government agents, the military, and Northern Paiutes. She was fluent in many languages, including Spanish, and had taught herself to read and write English. With these skills, she was able to travel between white settlements, reservations, and government centers, including Washington, D.C.

WITHERINGTON, PEARL



Sarah Winnemucca. (Library of Congress)

In 1868, as a scout and interpreter at Camp McDermit, Sarah Winnemucca worked with the U.S. Army, peacefully bringing in her father and his followers. She distributed rations to the displaced Paiute refugees and arranged transportation for the women and children. During the Bannock War in 1878 Sarah again worked as an army scout and an advocate for the Northern Paiutes. Her family, along with a number of others, found themselves trapped with Bannock insurgents. Sarah and her brother attempted to free them and help them to safety before the

army arrived. At the center of conflict her entire life, Sarah died on October 17, 1891.

—*Dawn Ottevaere*

See also Nonhelema; Ward, Nancy; Winema

References and Further Reading

- Brooks, James. 2002. *Captives and Cousins: Slavery, Kinship, and Community in the Southwest Borderlands*. Chapel Hill: University of North Carolina.
- Canfield, Gae Whitney. 1983. *Sarah Winnemucca of the Northern Paiutes*. Norman: University of Oklahoma.
- Senior, Siobhan. 2001. *Voices of American Indian Assimilation and Resistance: Helen Hunt Jackson, Sarah Winnemucca, and Victoria Howard*. Norman: University of Oklahoma.
- Zanjani, Sally. 2001. *Sarah Winnemucca*. Lincoln: University of Nebraska.

WITHERINGTON, PEARL
(B. 1914)

British special agent and a leader of the French Maquis during World War II. Pearl Witherington was born in Paris on June 24, 1914. When the war broke out she was working in Paris for the British air attaché and was engaged to a Frenchman, Henri Cornioley, who had been conscripted at the beginning of the war. Witherington, her widowed mother, and three younger sisters went south to Marseilles and were able to make their way to England by July 1941. In Britain Witherington joined the Women's Auxiliary Air Force and became a flight officer. She joined the Special Operations Executive, where her fluency in French was a valued asset. She was trained in the use of explosives and under the code name Marie was parachuted into occupied France on September 22, 1943. Witherington was assigned to serve as a courier for the Stationer network headed by Maurice South-

gate. To her surprise, she discovered that Cornioley, who escaped from a German prisoner-of-war camp, was part of the network.

When Southgate was arrested by the Gestapo in May 1944, Witherington and Amédée Maingard stepped in. They divided the network into two sections. Witherington took over as leader of the new Wrestler network and had nearly 2,000 armed Maquis under her command. They carried out sabotage and even engaged German units. In support of the D-Day landing, her units disrupted the movement of German forces by attacking railways between Paris and Bordeaux. Witherington's Wrestler network and Maingard's Shipwright group interrupted the rail lines in the Indre department 800 times in June 1944 and completely severed German telephone lines around Orleans (Foot 1984, 389, 440). The Germans, who posted placards with Witherington's photograph, offered a million francs for her capture (Foot 1984, 381). On June 10 Witherington and approximately 150 of her Maquis were surrounded by Germans but survived a 14-hour firefight. Witherington herself did not fire; she saw her role as that of organizer and leader. She subsequently said, "I don't think it's a woman's role to kill" (Rossiter 1986, 180). Her reticence did not impair the performance of her network. At Issoudun on September 11, 1944, a large German force surrendered to Maquis units, including those led by Witherington.

Following the German withdrawal to the north and east, Witherington returned to Britain and subsequently married Cornioley. Although she was recommended for the Military Cross, it was not given to women. She was bestowed the civil Member of the British Empire (MBE) but returned it, stating that "she had done nothing civil" (Foot 1984, 48). She was then given an MBE—Military by the Air Ministry, and she accepted that award. She was also awarded the Legion of Honor, the Croix de Guerre, and the Medal of Resistance by the French government.

—Bernard Cook

See also Atkins, Vera H.

References and Further Reading

- 64-baker-street.org. "The WAAF Agents—Pearl Witherington," The Women of the Special Operations Executive. http://www.64-baker-street.org/agents/agent_waaf_pearl_witherington.html (accessed September 28, 2004).
- Foot, Michael Richard Daniell. 1984 (1966). *SOE in France: An Account of the Work of the British Special Operations Executive, 1940–1944*. Frederick, MD: University Publications of America.
- Rossiter, Margaret L. 1986. *Women in the Resistance*. New York: Praeger.
- Spartacus Web. "Pearl Witherington." <http://www.spartacus.schoolnet.co.uk/SOEWitherington.htm> (accessed September 28, 2004).

WOHLAUF, VERA

A willing eyewitness to the Holocaust. Vera Wohlauf married Captain Julius Wohlauf on June 29, 1942, in Hamburg. Julius was second in command of the First Company of Police Battalion 101, consisting of policemen from Hamburg and assigned to Poland. He had taken special leave to celebrate his wedding with Vera, who was already pregnant. The couple had a belated honeymoon in the town of Józefów in eastern Poland, where Captain Wohlauf would direct an operation intended to exterminate the town's Jews. In addition to Vera, Lucia Brandt, wife of Lieutenant Paul Brandt of the same police battalion, was there. After some days the unit, accompanied by the four-months-pregnant Vera, moved toward Radzyn. Early on the morning of August 25, 1942, the battalion marched toward the town of Miedzyrzec to conduct a clearing operation and to organize the deportation of Jews to the Treblinka death camp. The Wohlaufs rode in the front of a truck beside the driver. At Miedzyrzec Captain Wohlauf ordered the killing of the sick and elderly, as they could not be sent to the railway station. Many were

ordered to stand still in the town square and were killed at the slightest movement. Vera, who had been indoctrinated in the Hitler Youth, witnessed the battalion kill 960 people and deport Jewish men and women in a jam-packed train. In the evening she and Lucia Brandt joined others for a party with their spouses.

The operation continued until July 1943, with more killings and the shipment of 13,000 to Treblinka. Miedzyrzec came to be known as *Menschengeschenk* (human gift) by the Nazis. Although Vera did not take part in any killings, she was seen moving with a riding whip in the town's public square. The presence of the women was tolerated by the Nazi officers, but because Vera was pregnant, her presence was resented by Major Wilhelm Trapp, the battalion commandant. Afterward women were prohibited from being spectators at operations. But as they were living with their husband in married quarters, the wives were privy to all happenings by evening time. After the war Julius was imprisoned for 8 years. By the time of his release Vera had died.

—Patit Paban Mishra

See also Holocaust and Jewish Women

References and Further Reading

- Browning, Christopher. 1993. *Ordinary Men: Reserve Police Battalion 101 and the Final Solution in Poland*. New York: HarperCollins.
- Cosner, Sharon. 1998. *Women under the Third Reich: A Biographical Dictionary*. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Goldhagen, Daniel Jonah. 1997. *Hitler's Willing Executioners: Ordinary Germans and the Holocaust*. New York: Random House.

WRNS

See Great Britain, Women's Royal Naval Service

Y

YORCK VON WARTENBURG,
COUNTESS MARION (1904–)

Member of the anti-Nazi resistance Kreisau Circle. Marion Winter, after earning a law degree, married Count Peter Yorck von Wartenburg. Their apartment became the meeting place for the Kreisau Circle, which plotted the July 20, 1944, assassination attempt against Hitler. Peter Yorck von Wartenburg was arrested the day of the failed attempt. Following repeated interrogations he was tried on August 8, sentenced to death, and executed that same day. The countess had participated in all the major conferences of the Kreisau Circle and had attended its meetings at her residence. Her appeals to see her husband were denied, and she was arrested on August 10. She was incarcerated and interrogated at the Gestapo headquarters at Prinz-Albrecht Strasse. She was then transferred to the Moabit prison before her release in November.

After the war she served as a judge in Berlin and ultimately became a presiding judge of Berlin's Superior Court.

—Bernard Cook

See also Ballestrem-Solf, Countess Lagi;
Thadden, Elizabeth von

References and Further Reading

- Wickert, Christl, ed. 1994. *Frauen gegen die Diktatur: Widerstand und Verfolgung im nationalsozialistischen Deutschland* [Women against Dictatorship: Resistance and Persecution in National Socialist Germany]. Berlin: Hentrich.
- Yorck von Wartenburg, Marion. 1982. Es ist eine gute Erfahrung für einen Strafrichter, das Gefängnis von innen zu kennen [It Is a Good Experience for a Criminal Judge to Know the Inside of a Prison]. Pages 131–141 in *Juristinnen: Berichte, Fakten, Interviews* [Female Jurists: Reports, Facts, Interviews]. Edited by Margarete Fabricius-Brand, Sabine Berghahn, and Kristine Sudhölter. Berlin: Elefanten Press.
- . 1985. *Die Stärke der Stille: Erinnerungen an ein Leben im deutschen Widerstand* [The Strength of Silence: Memories of a Life in the German Resistance]. Cologne, Germany: Diederichs.

YOUNG MEN'S CHRISTIAN
ASSOCIATION (YMCA), WORLD
WAR I

A service organization that assisted soldiers during World War I. The Young Men's Christian Association (YMCA) was founded in England in 1844 and was first organized in the United States in 1851. From the time of the American Civil War, the YMCA helped soldiers and civilians through social programs and entertainment. When the United States entered World War I in April 1917, the YMCA was the first of the civil or social welfare organizations to offer its services to the government. In August 1917 U.S. Commander in Chief John Pershing issued a general order supporting YMCA work among his troops.

The YMCA refocused from civilian to military operations and concentrated on serving soldiers in any way possible. It established permanent posts and staff in all 16 National Guard camps, setting up shop in huts that were to substitute for home, school, theater, and church. Soldiers thronged to these huts day after day, looking for the feel and comforts of home. Eventually the YMCA operated 4,000 huts and tents for recreation and religious services, and YMCA volunteers served snacks to those aboard 8,000 troop trains. YMCA volunteers worked as surgeons, nurses, chaplains, chaplains' assistants, and distributors of emergency medical supplies, food, and clothing. YMCA volunteers served on battlefields with horse-drawn canteens, built and staffed special kitchens in hospitals, brought books and prefabricated chapels to soldiers, taught enlisted men to read and write, maintained a hotel in England for soldiers on furlough, and provided free meals.

The YMCA had a paid staff of 26,000 men and women and 35,000 volunteers to attend to the spiritual and social needs of soldiers at home and abroad. Initially, the army needed every soldier in the ranks, so the YMCA willingly assumed the burden of running canteens. The

YMCA operated 1,500 canteens and post exchanges under policies and restrictions that the army established until it took them over later in the war.

The YMCA operated 26 rest and relaxation leave centers in France, which accommodated 1,944,300 U.S. officers and enlisted men. In London the YMCA opened the Eagle Hut on September 3, 1917, and staffed it with about 800 volunteers. The Eagle Hut offered overnight accommodations and food for U.S. servicemen, and by February 1919 about 134,566 meals had been served. The YMCA had initiated overseas entertainment for the troops during the Spanish-American War, and it expanded this program during World War I. It mobilized 1,470 entertainers and sent them overseas to perform for the troops. It also organized educational programs for soldiers in Europe and after the war continued this effort by awarding 80,000 educational scholarships to veterans of World War I, an action that prefigured the GI Bill.

—Kathleen Warnes

See also Furse, Lady Katherine Symonds

References and Further Reading

- Firstworldwar.com. The Eagle Hut. <http://www.firstworldwar.com/atoz/eaglehut.htm> (accessed March 15, 2004).
- Hopkins, Charles Howard. 1951. *History of the YMCA in North America*. New York: Association Press.
- Hungerford, Edward. 1920. *With the Doughboy in France: A Few Chapters of an American Effort*. New York: Macmillan.
- Taft, William Howard, and Frederick Harris, eds. 1922. *Service with Fighting Men: An Account of the Work of the American Young Men's Christian Association in the World War*. New York: Association Press.
- WorldwarI.com. "The History of the YMCA in World War I." Doughboy Center. Presented by the Great War Society, Captain Ralph Blanchard, USN, Ret. <http://www.worldwarI.com/dbc/ymca.htm> (accessed March 15, 2004).

YUGOSLAVIA, MOTHER
AND BRIDE IMAGES OF
MILITANT SERBIAN
NATIONALISM

Mythic images inspiring militant Serbian nationalism. The theme of defeat at the hands of the Turks in Kosovo stands at the very heart of Serbian heroic poetry, and the mythical character of the mother of the Jugovic brothers represents the tragic motif of sacrifice for the lost freedom of the national state.

The mother is in fact the motherland of the nine brothers, who, in turn, are allegorical figures of martyred King Lazar's knights. They serenely led their 12,000 soldiers despite the prospect of their own imminent death on the Field of the Blackbirds in Kosovo in 1389.

Two black ravens, representing death and misfortune, bring the mother the torn hand of her youngest son, Damjan, still bearing his wedding ring, a symbol of new life and hope. The allegorical character of the mourning motherland, crushed by the loss of her sons, then fell down and disintegrated. She had sent her sons to death for their country and its freedom, all that was precious. Once these were lost on the Kosovo Plain, nothing remained to be valued and loved. Thus she dematerialized.

The other image of the motherland is the Kosovo Girl. She is the perpetual fiancée of the fallen hero, whose never-to-be-healed wounds she dresses in vain. Even when she seeks comfort under a green fir tree, it withers. The Kosovo Girl is the archetype of the unfortunate destiny of the Serbian Christian motherland during its armed confrontation with the aggressive Islam of the Middle Ages.

—*Miodrag Milin*

See also *Yugoslavia, Women in the Military during World War II*; *Yugoslavia, Women and the Wars That Accompanied the Disintegration of Yugoslavia*

References and Further Reading

- Gjuric, Milos. 1918. *Smrt majke Jugovica. Knjicevno—filozofjska studija* [The Death of the Mother of the Jugovitch—A Philosophical Study]. Zagreb: Izdanja Grica.
- Nogo, Rajko Petrov, ed. 1987. *Srpske junacke pjesme* [Serbian Heroic Poems]. 3rd ed. Belgrad: Beogradski Izdavacki Graficki Zavod.

YUGOSLAVIA, WOMEN IN THE
MILITARY DURING
WORLD WAR II

Significant role played by Yugoslav women in the Yugoslav Partisan resistance following the German conquest of Yugoslavia in April 1941. South Slav women had performed military service before; in 1858, for example, a battalion of women fought with the Montenegrin army against the Turks. It was the desperate situation during World War II, however, that led to the inclusion of so many women in the Communist Partisan forces. The initial Partisans came from the ranks of the Communist Party and the Communist Youth Organization. Many young, educated women were drawn to what they regarded as the liberating vision of the Communist Party. Most women Partisans, however, came from the peasantry, and 80 percent of Yugoslav women at the time were illiterate (Jancar-Webster 1990, 49, 65). Young women, motivated by camaraderie and a sense of purpose, enthusiastically volunteered for military action in the National Liberation Movement. Seventy percent of the women were under the age of 20, and the majority were Serbian (Jancar-Webster 1990, 48–49). Personal loss propelled many into the Partisan movement. Life was so perilous in occupied Yugoslavia that joining the Partisans seemed for many preferable to the insecurity of powerlessness. For many, joining the Partisans opened the prospect of new experiences and opportunities. Women learned to read and gained skills, which

served them after the war if they survived. Many, however, did not. The casualty rate for female Partisans exceeded that for males.

One hundred thousand women served as soldiers in the National Liberation Army (NLA). Initially, 1 out of 10 NLA soldiers was a woman, but the proportion rose to 1 out of 8. In addition 2 million women were mobilized in the Anti-Fascist Front of Women (Anti-Fashisticki Front na Zenite, AFZ). These women ran local governments, provided support to the frontline fighters, and engaged in sabotage. According to Barbara Jancar, "From 1941 to 1945 8.5 percent of the total female population of Yugoslavia was killed or died" (Jancar 1982, 91). Twenty-five percent of the women who joined the NLA died, versus 11 percent for males, but there was an even higher casualty rate among the AFZ (Jancar 1982, 93). Though AFZ members were not formally soldiers, the war was a guerrilla one, and the front was elusive. When the Nazis and their allies overran villages, AFZ women fought and were killed or captured. Often capture led to rape, torture, and murder. Some have asserted that the higher casualty rate for women fighters resulted from their inexperience. Other observers, however, have asserted that the women, in general, fought more bravely than the men (Djilas 1977, 210).

Although 2,000 women did become officers in the NLA, women officers were few and predominantly limited to lower ranks. Of the 92 women fighters proclaimed national heroes by the postwar Yugoslav government, only 13 were officers, and 10 of these were political officers. Of these, only 3 served as unit commanders, and only 1 of these commanded a unit as large as a *ceta* (a detachment of approximately 300 fighters) (Jancar-Webster 1990, 92). Though there were more female fighters than female medics, women in the NLA disproportionately served in medical roles. In this guerrilla war, however, medics fought and died as regularly as other categories of combatants. After the victory of the Partisans, women were demobilized. Their participation in war, as far as the Yugoslav People's

Army leadership was concerned, had been an emergency measure. When the Warsaw Pact forces invaded Czechoslovakia in August 1968, expedience again required the militarization of women. To deter Soviet intervention in Yugoslavia, the state organized the Territorial Defense Forces. Women as well as men were given military training in school, and two females became Territorial Defense Force generals. Women were also allowed to volunteer for service in what had previously been an all-male national army.

—Bernard Cook

See also Kuftrin, Milka; Milosavljevi, Danica

References and Further Reading

- Djilas, Milovan. 1977. *Wartime*. New York: Harcourt Brace Jovanovitch.
- Jancar, Barbara. 1982. Yugoslavia: War of Resistance. In *Female Soldiers—Combatants or Noncombatants? Historical and Contemporary Perspectives*. Edited by Nancy Loring Goldman. Westport, CT: Greenwood.
- Jancar-Webster, Barbara. 1990. *Women and Revolution in Yugoslavia, 1941–1945*. Denver, CO: Arden.

YUGOSLAVIA, WOMEN AND THE WARS THAT ACCOMPANIED THE DISINTEGRATION OF YUGOSLAVIA

Fate of women during the wars in the former Yugoslavia (1991–1999). The wars that arose from the breakup of Yugoslavia in the 1990s precipitated a humanitarian crisis of epic proportions. A vibrant multicultural and ethnically diverse society suddenly imploded, reflecting religious and ethnic feelings that were fueled by corrupt and ambitious politicians seeking to exploit these conflicts for their own ends. Women at all levels of society were caught in



Bosnian Muslim women cry as their relative is buried in Potocari, July 11, 2005. Relatives wept over more than 600 coffins of victims of the Srebrenica massacre, dug out of death pits at a ceremony to mark the tenth anniversary of Europe's worst atrocity in 50 years. The coffins contained the latest identified remains found in mass graves dug by Bosnian Serb forces to hide their slaughter of 8,000 Muslim men between July 11 and July 18, 1995. (Damir Sagolj/Reuters/Corbis)

savage fighting in which they were both the targets of and the justification for ethnic cleansing. How women suffered and how they responded reflects cultural, economic, social, and political issues that went to the heart of their position in Muslim, Serbian, and Croat communities and were central to the international response to the conflicts in Bosnia, Croatia, and Kosovo.

The Communist era marked a period of social, economic, and political stability that benefited women. Under Marshal Tito, Yugoslavia was an ordered society with clear rules and norms. In a socialist society with no capitalistic economic fluctuations, low divorce and child

mortality rates, and relatively low unemployment, ethnic and religious conflict was minimal. Serbs, Croats, and Muslims lived together, often in the same villages and neighborhoods, as they had for generations. Tito had established a delicate balance among Yugoslavia's ethnic groups, preaching an ideology of "peace and brotherhood." A complicated constitution had created six republics and two autonomous regions (within Serbia), tied together through their common loyalty to the president and reinforced by a repressive police state. Despite the high degree of political control from the top, Yugoslav women enjoyed comparative freedom and social equality. Higher education and the professions

were open to them along with social services. Although they rarely reached the top of the ruling hierarchy, women were active in politics at the village, district, and provincial levels.

The stability of the Tito era evaporated following the president's death in 1980. Economic decay and drift led to rising unemployment that heightened both ethnic and gender tensions. Tito's successors tried rotating the presidency among the five ethnic republics, but this revolving-door system triggered conflicts among Yugoslavia's senior political figures and did not work. Ambitious politicians—most notably Slobodan Milosevic—revived ethnic nationalism for their own purposes. By the late 1980s Milosevic was using the Serb media to stir up Serbian nationalism along with anti-Croat and, particularly, anti-Muslim feelings. The Croats, led by Franjo Tudjman, a former general of the Yugoslav national army, responded with their own brand of nationalism. Tudjman was openly anti-Serb and anti-Muslim.

The brand of nationalism that Milosevic, Tudjman, and their adherents preached had heavily gendered overtones involving the subordination of women. The prevailing concern of these new ethnic-national ideologies with the establishment of cultural and religious values associated with an idealized past meant that women were to be assigned traditional roles. Foremost among these were responsibilities for the reproduction of the group and for the nurturing of cultural values and group identity. This new nationalism marked a revival and celebration of traditional gender codes and male power. Any notions of women's emancipation developed during the state socialist regime (better access to education, equal employment, equal pay, liberal abortion rights, and so forth) were demonized as unnatural and destructive to the group.

The effects of the wars surrounding Yugoslavia's dissolution were magnified by their sudden outbreak and, particularly in Bosnia, by the violent onslaught of the federal army and the Serb militias. Fighting had already occurred in

June and July 1991 after Slovenia and Croatia declared independence from Yugoslavia. Hostilities erupted in the Bosnian capital, Sarajevo, in April 1992 after Bosnia and Herzegovina, with a plurality of Muslims and a majority of Muslims and Croats, also declared independence from Yugoslavia. Fearing the consequences of Bosnian independence and infused with nationalist propaganda and material support from Milosevic, the large Serb minority in Bosnia resorted to force.

The war's socioeconomic impact on women in Bosnia was immediate and devastating. The violence they faced was economic, social, and psychological as well as physical. Women in all of the affected areas had to deal with food shortages; loss of their homes due to shelling and bombing; dislocation; loneliness as their men were mobilized into the ethnic militias, killed in the fighting, executed, or sent into exile; and the possibility of being raped or murdered. They lived in constant fear for their own lives and futures as well as those of their families. If their men survived, women had to confront the reality of living with the psychological damage caused by their experiences.

Physical violence, most often in the form of the systematic rape of Muslim women in Bosnia by Serb forces, was central to the strategy of ethnic cleansing. Instances of women being specifically targeted in war zones is not new. In the case of the new ethnically-based nation building in the former Yugoslavia, however, this practice has a specific meaning. It was part of a massive gendered population transfer, if not outright genocide, that operated as a crucial symbolic and material element in the forging of new boundaries between ethnic collectives. This massive forced transfer resulted in women and children being exposed to various forms of violence. The worst attacks on women happened in the areas of the bloodiest fighting—those regions of Bosnia-Herzegovina and Croatia where Serbs, Croats, and Muslims had lived in close proximity to one another before Yugoslavia's collapse. The concept of women as

symbols and reproducers or nurturers of the nation and its cultural identity made them important in the destruction of the opposing ethnic-national group. War reinforced the influence of religious traditionalism that demanded the withdrawal of women from policymaking positions where they might moderate the extreme nationalistic tendencies that surfaced in all of the camps. Thus Croatian nationalism gave the Catholic Church in Croatia greater influence, reinforcing its traditional view of the role of women. In Bosnia Islamic extremists demanded that women receiving aid cover their heads, a step toward keeping them “in their place” (Hunt 2004, 139). Women’s subordinate status left them unprotected and made them targets. Reinforcing the practice of directing violence specifically toward women was the stigma that rape carried in highly patriarchal family structures. Men in all of the warring ethnic groups viewed their specific patriarchal family structures as the ideal they were fighting for. The effectiveness of this strategy—as well as its appalling human consequences—is reflected in the fact that nearly 70 percent of the refugees from the fighting in Bosnia-Herzegovina were women and children (Korac 1998, 163).

The suffering of these refugees and their portrayal in the Western news media generated pressures on the international community to intervene. The initial international reaction to the wars in the former Yugoslavia and reports of mass rape and ethnic cleansing was tentative and ineffective. The United States and the European Community both recognized Bosnia’s independence. The United Nations sent small peacekeeping forces (mostly from the Netherlands, France, and Canada) to protect refugee sanctuaries and provide food and medical supplies to war victims. These measures did not deter Serb atrocities or protect refugees from marauding Serb forces. The United Nations recognized Bosnian independence and admitted Bosnia to the United Nations while barring Milosevic’s rump Yugoslav state. The United Nations also ordered trade sanctions against Ser-

bia. The U.N. Security Council, however, refused to order the use of force. Similarly, the United States and the North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO) were reluctant to get involved militarily. An arms embargo against both sides hindered Muslim efforts to get weapons even as the Bosnian Serbs received arms from Serbia and Russia. This ineffective reaction on the part of the United Nations and the Western powers further undermined U.N. and NATO credibility among all of the warring ethnic factions, thus jeopardizing peace efforts. U.N. weakness was shown at its worst on July 11, 1995, when Serb forces entered a supposed U.N. safe zone in Srebrenica, pushed aside a small U.N. force, and rounded up 25,000 unarmed Muslim men, women, and children. They tortured and killed the men and boys, and the women and girls were forced to flee. The international outcry over the Srebrenica atrocity finally triggered military action by the United States and NATO that forced the Serbs into negotiations at Dayton, Ohio.

Exposed to the ravages of war and unable to rely on international efforts or protection from their own men, politically active women in Bosnia-Herzegovina and Croatia began to take matters into their own hands. Ironically, the wars and genocide that Serb and Croatian ethnic nationalists unleashed shattered the credibility of their notions of traditional women’s roles and led to a heightened group consciousness among women on all sides. Their suffering led many into increased political and social activism.

Despite the gender-restrictive nationalist ideologies that pervaded all sides, the wars afforded women opportunities for service outside their traditional roles. Women with medical training as doctors and nurses were in demand to staff military hospitals. In these positions, they often helped negotiate local cease-fires to evacuate wounded soldiers and civilians. The absence of the male family head often left women in charge of harvesting crops and running family businesses.

The greatest opportunities for women, however, grew out of their suffering. Refugee camps in particular provided organizing opportunities for female activists. Women in the camps found that their efforts to find the basic elements of survival—food, clothing, housing, and money—depended on their sticking together and organizing. Local self-help groups such as the Association of Displaced Persons and Refugees of Bosnia and Herzegovina (formed during the siege of Sarajevo) not only facilitated communication among women in the camps but also served as avenues for refugee women to mobilize international human rights groups (such as Amnesty International) and women’s organizations (such as Women Waging Peace) to help alleviate their plight and facilitate the peace process. Women’s groups both on the scene and in the United States were active in contradicting the Balkan nationalists’ contention that ethnic hatreds were deep-seated and inevitable, in agitating for stronger intervention in the wars of the former Yugoslavia, and in facilitating a peace process. Swanee Hunt, who served as U.S. ambassador to Austria from 1993 to 1997, was responding in part to reports from women in the refugee camps when she hosted negotiations and several international symposia to facilitate peace efforts in Bosnia-Herzegovina.

Despite intensifying female activism both in the war zone and internationally, women were excluded from the peace negotiations that commenced in Dayton, Ohio, in the fall of 1995. Many women activists believe that the warmakers intentionally shut them out of the Dayton talks because they feared women would give peace priority over nationalist aims. In any case, the Dayton negotiations allowed Serbian and Croatian nationalists to carve Bosnia up along unworkable ethnic lines. Most women activists were unhappy with the Dayton Accords because their implementation depended on the very elements responsible for the war to begin with. Although women comprised over half of the adult population of Bosnia, the elements charged with implementing the Dayton Accords did not seek

or welcome their opinions. This omission undermined international peace efforts before, during, and after the Serb-Bosnian war. The Dayton negotiators ducked the war crimes issue by not requiring the parties to turn over Milosevic, Ratko Mladic (the senior commander of the Bosnian Serb army), and other accused war criminals to the Hague Tribunal for trial. In the view of many observers, the omissions of the Dayton Accords sent a signal to the Serb leadership that the international community would not take decisive action in the face of ethnic cleansing in other parts of the former Yugoslavia. Thus the same issues appeared in the brutal Serb attempt to stop the predominately Albanian–Muslim province of Kosovo from breaking away from Serbia in 1999—leading to a massive U.S.-NATO bombing campaign against Serbia.

The flaws of the Dayton Accords, as well as the hope they symbolized, galvanized women to organize to gain a greater voice in postwar Balkan politics and to create a stronger political and economic base to protect themselves. In June 1996, 500 women convened a meeting in Sarajevo to organize Women Transforming Themselves and Society. Funded by Women Waging Peace, it was the first effort following the Dayton agreement to bring citizens together across ethnic lines. The fall of Milosevic in the face of international economic sanctions and the Serbian withdrawal from Kosovo and his extradition to The Hague for war crimes trials (along with several other major accused war criminals) served as partial vindication for the victims of the Balkan wars of the 1990s. The success of the victims in highlighting their suffering is reflected in rulings from the World Court and the International Criminal Tribunal for the Former Yugoslavia that mass rape is a war crime. Their courage and resourcefulness in the face of horrific conditions and their development of a common sense of identity present a moving story. Their political significance for women in similar circumstances is even greater.

—Walter Bell

See also Markovic, Mirjana; Plavsic, Biljana;
Rape in War

References and Further Reading

Cohen, Roger. 1998. *Hearts Grown Brutal: Sagas of Sarajevo*. New York: Random House.

Hunt, Swanee. 2004. *This Was Not Our War: Bosnian Women Reclaiming the Peace*. Durham, NC: Duke University.

Korac, Maja. 1998. Ethnic-Nationalism, Wars and the Patterns of Social, Political, and Sexual

Violence against Women: The Case of the Post-Yugoslav Countries. *Identities* 5(2):153–171.

Kunovich, Robert M., and Katherine Deitelbaum. 2004. Ethnic Conflict, Group Polarization, and Gender Attitudes in Croatia. *Journal of Marriage and the Family* 66:1089–1107.

Ogata, Sadako. 2005. *The Turbulent Decade: Confronting the Refugee Crisis of the 1990s*. New York: W. W. Norton.

Power, Samantha. 2002. *A Problem from Hell: America and the Age of Genocide*. New York: Basic Books.

Z

ZANE, ELIZABETH (BETTY) (1766–1831)

Heroine of the Virginia frontier during what has been called the last battle of the American Revolution. Schooled in Philadelphia, sixteen-year-old Elizabeth Zane had recently returned to the town of Wheeling in Western Virginia. The town had been founded by her five brothers in 1769. When Zane returned from Philadelphia, she lived with her brother Ebenezer, whose cabin was located near Fort Henry. This garrison had already been used to defend against British and Indian attack in 1777.

One day in September 1782 a group of about 300 Indians and 50 British Rangers were spotted approaching the area. Betty and the rest of the townspeople were quickly herded into the fort as the attack began. Zane tended to the wounded and served food and drink. On the third day morale dwindled among the townsfolk as their supply of gunpowder petered out. Colonel Zane had a keg of gunpowder hidden in his cabin but did not know how to safely retrieve it. Betty Zane volunteered, saying she could run fast enough to make it to the cabin. She told her friends and neighbors that men were needed in the fort and that other women could help care for the wounded if anything happened to her. In the end it was agreed that

she could make the attempt, and Zane removed her skirts so she could run faster. After she was let out of the fort she dashed the approximately 50-yard (45-meter) distance to the cabin, surprising enemy forces. On arrival at the cabin, she found the powder keg under the floorboards but realized it was too heavy to carry. She then packed the powder in a carpet that lay nearby. As she ran back to the fort with the powder wrapped in the carpet, she was fired on but arrived at Fort Henry unscathed except for a hole in her clothes where a bullet had grazed her. The townspeople used the new powder to hold off the attackers that night, and by the fourth day the Indians and British gave up and retreated.

Not much else is known about the remainder of her life. It is thought that she died in Ohio. Zane's story was first recorded in 1831, with the publication of Alexander S. Withers's *Chronicles of Border Warfare*. Her story was disputed by the last survivor of the siege at Fort Henry, who claimed Zane did not perform any heroics that day. Zane's legend later grew thanks to the great-grandson of Colonel Zane, the popular writer Zane Gray, who in 1903 wrote a fictional account of her life and heroics based on the actual events. The novel, called *Betty Zane*, helped cement a place for Zane in history.

—Richard Panchyk

See also American Revolution, Role of Women in the

References and Further Reading

- Anticaglia, Elizabeth. 1975. *Heroines of '76*. New York: Walker.
- Hintzen, William. 1995. Betty Zane, Lydia Boggs, and Molly Scott: The Gunpowder Exploits at Fort Henry. *West Virginia History* 55:95–109.

ZENOBIA, QUEEN OF PALMYRA (D. AFTER 274)

Warrior queen who fought against the Romans. In the third century Palmyra was a Roman client kingdom, a prosperous city on the Roman-Persian frontier that controlled several important caravan routes. The story of Palmyra's rebellion against Rome, led by Queen Zenobia (also Septima Zenobia and, in Aramaic, Znwbya Bat Zabbai), provides one of the very few examples of women actively engaging in battle in the ancient world.

Zenobia's husband, King Odenathus of Palmyra, was assassinated around A.D. 266. Zenobia, his second wife, then took power, officially as regent for her son Wahballat. She presented herself from the first as a warrior queen, claiming descent from Queen Cleopatra VII of Egypt.

Rome was in a chaotic state during this period. Emperor Valerian had been defeated and captured by the Persians in 260; worse, the empire had descended into a cycle of civil wars as rival generals fought for the imperial title. Zenobia soon began to take advantage of this Roman weakness, successfully claiming a number of neighboring Roman territories. By 269 Zenobia's general, Zabdas, had gained control of most of Egypt, and Zenobia herself annexed most of

Syria. Her armies were victorious as far north as the Black Sea. Zenobia declared herself independent of Rome and claimed for herself the title of empress.

A lull in Rome's civil wars came with the reign of Emperor Aurelian (270–275). In 271 and 272 he turned his attention to the grievous losses in the eastern empire. A good general, he quickly reconquered Egypt and moved on to other lands Zenobia had taken. The Romans met the Palmyrene army of about 70,000 men and 1 woman near Antioch. Zenobia personally commanded the forces, riding her horse in the thick of battle—the only woman known to have done so in the Greco-Roman world. She maintained a minimum of propriety by transmitting her orders through her generals. Defeated by the more highly trained Roman troops at Antioch and again at Emesa, Zenobia took refuge in the city of Palmyra. She was soon captured while attempting to escape the city with her son.

Aurelian took the captive Zenobia back to Rome, where, following tradition, she was paraded in chains at his triumph in 274. Aurelian was apparently impressed by the queen and after the triumph allowed her to retire to a villa near Tivoli. She soon married a Roman senator and became noted for her frequent and elaborate entertainments in Rome. The queen spent the rest of her life quietly, and the year of her death is not known. Roman writers were fascinated by Zenobia. They compared her to Cleopatra VII and told of her beauty, chastity, learning, and enormous wealth.

—Phyllis G. Jestice

See also Roman Women and War

References and Further Reading

- Stoneman, Richard. 1992. *Palmyra and Its Empire: Zenobia's Revolt against Rome*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan.

ACRONYMS

AAFFTD	Army Air Forces Flying Training Detachment (U.S.)
AANS	Australian Army Nursing Service
ADF	Air Defense Forces (USSR)
AFF	American Friends of France (Comité Americain de Secours Civil)
AFL	Actresses' Franchise League
AFZ	Anti-Fascist Front of Women (Yugoslavia)
AIDS	Acquired Immunodeficiency Syndrome
ALNU	Australian League of Nations Union
AMES	Asociación de Mujeres Salvadoreñas (Association of Salvadoran Women)
AMNLAE	Asociación de Mujeres Nicaraguenses "Luisa Amanda Espinoza" (Association of Nicaraguan Women "Luisa Amanda Espinoza")
AMPRONAC	Asociación de Mujeres ante la Problemática Nacional (Association of Nicaraguan Women Confronting the National Problem)
AMS	Auxiliary Military Service (UK)
ANAPO	National Popular Alliance (Colombia)
ANC	African National Congress (South Africa)
ANC	Army Nurse Corps (U.S.)
ANFASEP	Asociación Nacional de Familiares de Secuestrados (Relatives of the Disappeared) (Peru)
ANL	Army of National Liberation (Algeria)
AP	Associated Press
APA	Australian Peace Alliance
APO	Ausserparlamentarische Opposition (Extraparliamentary Opposition) (Germany)
ARC	American Red Cross
ATA	Air Transport Auxiliary (UK)
ATG	Alaska Territorial Guard (U.S.)
ATS	Auxiliary Territorial Service (UK); also Auxiliary Transport Service
AWAS	Australian Women's Army Service
BDF	Federation of German Women's Associations (Germany)

ACRONYMS

BFT	Bomber Flight Test Branch (U.S.)
BR	Brigate Rosse (Red Brigades) (Italy)
BRC	British Red Cross
CA	Church Army (UK)
CBCs	Comunidades Eclesiasticas de Base (Christian Base Communities) (El Salvador)
CBE	Commander of the British Empire
CBPP	contagious bovine pleuropneumonia
CCP	Chinese Communist Party
CND	Campaign for Nuclear Disarmament (UK)
CP	Communist Party
CPA	Communist Party of Australia
CPS	Civilian Public Service (U.S.)
CPT	Civilian Pilot Training program (U.S.)
CUC	Comité Unidad Campesina (Peasant Unity Committee) (Guatemala)
DACOWITS	Defense Advisory Committee on Women in the Services (U.S.)
DAG	Democratic Army of Greece
DAR	Daughters of the American Revolution
DBE	Dame Commander of the British Empire
DCPC	Direct Combat Probability Coding System (Risk Rule) (U.S.)
DDP	German Democratic Party (Germany)
DRC	Democratic Republic of the Congo (formerly Zaire)
EA	Ethniki Allilegyi (National Solidarity) (Greece)
EAM	Ethniko Apeleftherotiko Metopo (National Liberation Front) (Greece)
EDSNN	Ejército Defensor de la Soberanía Nacional de Nicaragua (Army in Defense of the National Sovereignty of Nicaragua)
EGP	Ejército Guerrillero de los Pobres (Guerrilla Army of the Poor) (Guatemala)
ELAS	Ellinikos Laikos Apeleftherotikos Stratos (Greek People's Liberation Army)
ELF	East London Federation of Suffragettes (UK)
ELN	Ejército de Liberación Nacional (National Liberation Army) (Colombia)
ENSA	Entertainment National Service Association
EPON	Eniaias Panelladikis Organosis Neon (United Panhellenic Organization of Youth) (Greece)
ETA	Euskadi ta Askatasuna (Basque Country and Freedom) (Spain)
EZLN	Ejército Zapatista de Liberación Nacional (Zapatista Army of National Liberation) (Mexico)
FANY	First Aid Nursing Yeomanry (UK)
FAR	Fuerzas Armadas Rebeldes (Revolutionary Armed Forces) (Guatemala)
FARC	Fuerzas Armadas Revolucionarias de Colombia (Revolutionary Armed Forces of Colombia)

ACRONYMS

FDLR	Forces Démocratiques de Liberation du Rwanda (Democratic Forces for the Liberation of Rwanda)
FEC	Far East Command Headquarters (U.S. and UK)
FFT	Fighter Flight Test (U.S.)
FMLN	Frente Farabundo Martí para la Liberación Nacional (Farabundo Martí National Liberation Front) (El Salvador)
FPO	Fareynigte Partizaner Organizatsie (United Partisan Organization) (Jewish)
FSA	Farm Security Administration (U.S.)
FSLN	Frente Sandinista de Liberación Nacional (the Sandinista National Liberation Front) (Nicaragua)
GAM	Grupo de Ayuda Mutua (Mutual Support Society) (Guatemala)
GPO	General Post Office
GUIW	General Federation of Iraqi Women
HIV	human immunodeficiency virus
HRF	Hero of the Russian Federation
HSU	Hero of the Soviet Union
IACHR	Inter-American Commission on Human Rights
ICA	Irish Citizen Army
ICBL	International Campaign to Ban Land Mines
ICW	International Congress of Women
ICWPP	International Committee of Women for Permanent Peace
IDF	Israeli Defense Force
INC	Indian National Congress
IRA	Irish Republican Army
JWOPY	Jewish Warring Organization of Pioneer Youth
KAU	Kenya African Union
KMT	Kuomintang (Guomindang) Nationalist Party (China)
KPD	Kommunistische Partei Deutschlands (German Communist Party)
LORAN	Long Range Aid to Navigation (U.S.)
LTTE	Liberation Tigers of Tamil Eelam (Tamil Tigers)
LWV	Women's League of Voters (U.S.)
M19	19th of April Movement (Colombia)
MASH	Mobile Army Surgical Hospital Unit (U.S.)
MBE	Member of the British Empire
MCWR	Marine Corps Women's Reserve (U.S.)
MI5	Military Intelligence 5, Counterespionage (UK)
MIFTAH	Palestinian Initiative for the Promotion of Global Dialogue and Democracy
MOS	Military Occupational Specialties (U.S.)
MP	member of Parliament (UK)

ACRONYMS

MRDA	Mundri Relief and Development Association (Sudan)
MSTS	Military Sea Transport Service (U.S.)
MUFC	Mandela United Football Club (South Africa)
NAACP	National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (U.S.)
NACA	National Advisory Committee for Aeronautics (U.S.)
NATO	North Atlantic Treaty Organization
NAWSA	National American Women's Suffrage Association
NCO	noncommissioned officer
NEA	Newspaper Enterprise Association (U.S.)
NGO	nongovernmental organization
NLA	National Liberation Army (Yugoslavia)
NLMA	National Legion of Mothers of America (U.S.)
NSBRO	National Service Board for Religious Objectors (U.S.)
NSF/DFW	National Socialist Frauenschaft/Deutsches Frauenwerk (Women's Organization/Women's Work) (Germany)
NSK	Nasjonal Samlings Kvinneorganisasjon (National Gathering Women's Movement) (Norway)
NSWF	New Sudan Woman's Federation
NUWSS	National Union of Women's Suffrage Societies (UK)
OBE	Order of the British Empire (UK)
ORPA	La Organización del Pueblo en Armas (Organization of People in Arms) (Guatemala)
OSS	Office of Strategic Services (U.S. intelligence organization during World War II)
PDF	Panamanian Defense Forces
PFM	Popular Feminine Movement of Ayacucho (Peru)
PGT	Partido Guatemalteco del Trabajo (Guatemalan Labor Party)
PKK	Partiya Karkeren Kurdistan (Kurdistan Worker's Party) (Turkey/Iraq)
PLO	Palestine Liberation Organization
PLSK	Pomocnicza Lotnicza Sluzba Kobiet (Polish Auxiliary Air Force)
POW	prisoner of war
PX	post exchange
QAIMNS	Queen Alexandra's Imperial Military Nursing Service (UK)
RAANC	Royal Australian Army Nursing Corps
RAF	Rote Armee Faktion (Red Army Faction) (Germany)
RAF	Royal Air Force (UK)
RB	Red Brigades (Italy) (see BR)
ROC	Reserve Officer Candidate program (U.S.)
ROKWAC	Republic of Korea Women's Army Corps
RPF	Rwandan Patriotic Front

ACRONYMS

RSFSR	Russian Soviet Federated Socialist Republic
RTLTM	Radio Télévision Libre de Mille Collines (Rwanda)
RVV	Haarlemse Raad van Verzet (Haarlem Resistance Council) (Netherlands)
SACP	South Africa Communist Party
SAS	Special Air Services (UK)
SAWN	Spanish-American War Nurses (U.S.)
SD	Sicherheit Deinst (Nazi Security Service)
SIP	Sisterhood of International Peace
SL	Sendero Luminoso (the Shining Path) (Peru)
SOE	Special Operations Executive (British secret operatives during World War II)
SPARs	Women Reserves in the U.S. Coast Guard (from <i>Semper Paratus</i> —Always Ready)
SPD	Sozialdemokratische Partei Deutschlands (Social Democratic Party of Germany)
SS	Schutzstaffel (Defense Echelon) (Nazi Germany)
SSAFA	Soldiers', Sailors' and Airmen's Families Association
SWH	Scottish Women's Hospitals
SWSF	Scottish Women's Suffrage Federation
SWVP	Sudanese Women's Voice for Peace
TRC	Truth and Reconciliation Commission (Peru and South Africa)
UAW	United Association of Women (Australia)
UCLA	University of California at Los Angeles
UFR	Unión Feminista Revolucionario (Revolutionary Women's Union) (Cuba)
UNICEF	United Nations International Children's Emergency Fund
URNG	Unidad Revolucionaria Nacional de Guatemala (Guatemalan National Revolutionary Unity)
USAREUP	U.S. Army Headquarters, Europe
USMAG/ROK	U.S. Military Advisory Group/Republic of Korea
USO	United Service Organizations (U.S.)
USPD	Unabhängige Sozialdemokratische Partei Deutschlands (Independent Socialist Party) (Germany)
VAD	Voluntary Aid Detachment (Australia, UK)
VVA	Vietnam Veterans of America
WAAC	Women's Army Auxiliary Corps (UK, U.S.)
WAAF	Women's Auxiliary Air Force (UK)
WAC	Women's Army Corps (U.S.)
WAC(I)	Women's Auxiliary Corps (India) (UK)
WAF	Women in the Air Force (U.S.)
WAFS	Women's Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron (U.S.)
WASP	Women Airforce Service Pilots (U.S.)

ACRONYMS

WAVES	Women Accepted for Voluntary Emergency Service (U.S. Navy Women's Reserve)
WCCA	Wartime Civil Control Authority (U.S.)
WDM	World Disarmament Movement
WEC	Women's Emergency Corps (with fellow members of the Actresses' Franchise League [AFL])
WFTD	Women's Flying Training Detachment ("Woofteds") (U.S.)
WHC	Women's Hospital Corps
WHD	Women's Home Defense Corps (UK)
WILPF	Women's International League for Peace and Freedom
WLV	Women's League of Voters (U.S.)
WMCR	Women's Marine Corps Reserve (U.S.)
WNSL	Women's National Service League (UK)
WNWRA	Women's National War Relief Association (U.S.)
WODRANS	Widows, Orphans, and the Disabled Rehabilitation Association of New Sudan
WPA	Women's Peace Army (Australia)
WPA	Works Progress Administration (U.S.)
WRA	War Relocation Authority (U.S.)
WRAF	Women's Royal Air Force (UK)
WRL	War Resisters League (U.S.)
WRNS	Women's Royal Naval Service (referred to as the Wrens) (UK)
WSPU	Women's Social and Political Union (UK)
WSWCT	Women's Sick and Wounded Convoy Troops (UK)
WVS	Women's Volunteer Service (UK)
WWC	Women's Work Committee
WWM	Women's Workers' Movement
YMCA	Young Men's Christian Association

SELECT BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Adie, Kate. 2003. *Corsets to Camouflage: Women and War*. London: Hodder and Stoughton (published in association with the Imperial War Museum, London). Written by a British war correspondent, this book deals primarily with the role of British women in war and the impact that war has had on the women of Britain in general. Many photographs are included.
- Binney, Marcus. 2003. *The Women Who Lived for Danger: The Agents of the Special Operations Executive*. New York: HarperCollins. A study of the women who served in the British Special Operations Executive during World War II.
- Blanton, DeAnna, and Lauren M. Cook. 2002. *They Fought Like Demons: Women Soldiers in the American Civil War*. Baton Rouge: Louisiana State University Press. The story of women who fought during the American Civil War. An additional source for this subject is Elizabeth D. Leonard, *All the Daring of the Soldier: Women of the Civil War Armies* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1999).
- Bochkareva, Maria L., with Don Levine. 1919. *Yashka: My Life as a Peasant Officer and Exile*. New York: Frederick A. Stokes. This book purports to be an account of Bochkareva's life as recounted to Levine while she was in the United States. Because Bochkareva was illiterate, it can be assumed that Levine exercised a degree of creativity in the account.
- Boyd, Belle. 1968 (1865). *Belle Boyd in Camp and Prison, Written by Herself*. Edited by Curtis Carroll Davis. New York: Thomas Yoseloff. The personal account of a famous Southern spy.
- Brittain, Vera. 1978 (1933). *Testament of Youth*. London: Virago. The famous lament of a survivor from World War I.
- Bryson, Shareen Blair. 2000. *Resisting Hitler: Mildred Harnack and the Red Orchestra—The Life and Death of an American Woman in Nazi Germany*. New York: Oxford University Press. The history of Harnack and the Red Orchestra resistance group in Nazi Germany.
- Chang, Iris. 1997. *The Rape of Nanking: The Forgotten Holocaust of World War II*. New York: Basic Books. A notable book on this Japanese atrocity during World War II.
- Cottam, Kazimiera J. 1980. "Soviet Women in Combat in World War II: The Ground Forces and the Navy." *International Journal of Women's Studies* 3, no. 4 (July-August 1980): 345–357. Other works by Cottam, a leading authority on the combat roles of Soviet women during World War II, include *Women in War and Resistance* (Nepean, Ontario, Canada: New Military Publishing, 1998) and *Soviet Airwomen in Combat in World War II* (Manhattan, KS: MA/AH Publishing, 1983).

SELECT BIBLIOGRAPHY

- De Pauw, Linda Grant. 1998. *Battle Cries and Lullabies: Women in War from Pre-history to the Present*. Norman: University of Oklahoma. A comprehensive study that should be read in conjunction with other works on the roles women have played in wartime.
- DeGroot, Gerard J., and Corinna Peniston-Bird, eds. 2000. *A Soldier and a Woman: Sexual Integration in the Military*. Harlow, UK: Pearson Education. A study of women in the contemporary military.
- Dombrowski, Nicole Ann, ed. 1999. *Women and War in the Twentieth Century*. New York: Garland. A compelling and useful series of papers from a conference at New York University. Of particular interest are articles on the Chinese Communist Army before 1949; on the rape of German women at the end of World War II; on women in the Soviet army; and on the internment of Japanese American women.
- Farmborough, Florence. 1975. *With the Armies of the Tsar: A Nurse at the Russian Front, 1914–1918*. New York: Stein and Day. A fascinating account of the experiences of an English nurse in the service of the Russian army during World War I.
- Fraser, Antonia. 1989. *The Warrior Queens*. New York: Knopf. Beginning with Boadicea, Fraser writes artfully of women military leaders, including Isabella of Spain, Elizabeth I, Catherine the Great, the Rani of Jhansi, Golda Meir, Indira Gandhi, and Margaret Thatcher.
- Goldman, Nancy Loring. 1982. *Female Soldiers—Combatants or Noncombatants: Historical and Contemporary Perspectives*. Westport, CT: Greenwood. This book contains a number of excellent studies, including chapters on the former Yugoslavia, Algeria, Israel, and Vietnam.
- Gundersen, Joan R. 1996. *To Be Useful to the World: Women in Revolutionary America, 1740–1790*. New York: Twayne. A helpful survey of the history of women during the Revolutionary era. According to Gundersen, the American Revolution “appears as a series of trade-offs. Women both gained and lost, but not equally, and one woman’s gain might be intimately tied to another’s loss.”
- Isakson, Eva, ed. 1988. *Women and the Military System*. New York: Harvester Wheatsheaf. An interesting compilation, including Marie-Aimee Helie-Lucas’s “The Role of Women during the Algerian Liberation Struggle and After.”
- Jancar, Barbara. 1982. “Yugoslavia: War of Resistance.” In *Female Soldiers—Combatants or Noncombatants? Historical and Contemporary Perspectives*. Edited by Nancy Loring Goldman. Westport, CT: Greenwood. This informative survey of the role of women in the Yugoslav Partisan movement has been expanded in Barbara Jancar-Webster, *Women and Revolution in Yugoslavia, 1941–1945* (Denver, CO: Arden, 1990). Jancar points out that despite their crucial performance in World War II, women were not given adequate recognition during that struggle and after the war were excluded from the Yugoslav military.
- Jones, David E. 1997. *Women Warriors: A History*. Washington, DC: Brassey’s. Despite this work’s deficiencies as a historical study, Jones removes any doubts as to the fighting ability of women.
- Kinchen, Oscar A. 1972. *Women Who Spied for the Blue and the Gray*. Philadelphia: Dorrance. A history of women spies in the service of the Union and the Confederacy during the American Civil War.
- Laffin, John. 1967. *Women in Battle*. London: Abelard-Schuman. An interesting work but one that should be read with caution because legend and history are at times intermingled.

SELECT BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Leneman, Leah. 1994. *In the Service of Life: The Story of Elsie Inglis and the Scottish Women's Hospitals*. Edinburgh: Mercat. A biography of the important leader of the Scottish Women's Hospitals (SWHs). See also Eva Shaw McLaren, ed., *History of the Scottish Women's Hospitals* (London: Hodder and Stoughton, 1919), for personal memories of women who served in the SWHs.
- Marlow, Joyce, ed. 1999. *The Virago Book of Women and the Great War, 1914–1918*. London: Virago Press. A useful compilation of contemporary newspaper articles, journal articles, and extracts from memoirs, arranged chronologically by year.
- Matthews, Jenny. 2003. *Women and War*. Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press. In photographs and text, Matthews depicts the roles that war has imposed on women around the world, including places such as Nicaragua, Sierra Leone, Afghanistan, Burma, Chechnya, Haiti, the United Kingdom, Guatemala, and Sudan.
- Pennington, Reina. 2001. *Wings, Women and War*. Lawrence: University Press of Kansas. An authoritative and fascinating account of Russian women aviators during World War II.
- Sandes, Flora. 1927. *The Autobiography of a Woman Soldier: A Brief Record of Adventure with the Serbian Army, 1916–1919*. London: H, F and G Witherby. The autobiography of a redoubtable medical volunteer who joined the Serbian army in World War I.
- Saywell, Shelley. 1985. *Women in War*. Markham, Ontario: Penguin Books Canada. Compelling stories of women engaged in war in the twentieth century.
- Stark, Suzanne J. 1996. *Female Tars: Women aboard Ship in the Age of Sail*. Annapolis, MD: Naval Institute Press. A lively account of women sailors on military vessels.
- Stephenson, Jill. 2001. *Women in Nazi Germany*. Harlow, UK: Pearson Education. A comprehensive study of the experience of women in Nazi Germany, their role in World War II, and that conflict's impact on them.
- Stobart, Mabel Annie Boulton. 1935. *Miracles and Adventures: An Autobiography*. London: Rider. The biography of a woman who spearheaded volunteer medical services both in the Balkan Wars and in World War I. Her *War and Women, from Experiences in the Balkans and Elsewhere*, by Mrs. St. Claire Stobart, Founder of the Women's Convoy Corps, with a preface by Viscount Escher, GCB (London: G. Bell and Sons, 1913), provides a Western glimpse into the Balkan Wars and recounts the accomplishments and trials of English women serving as volunteer medical workers with the Bulgarian army.

CONTRIBUTORS

Rafis Abazov
Harriman Institute, Columbia University
New York, NY

Carol Acton
St. Jerome University
Waterloo, Ontario
Canada

Susan R. Allan
Independent Scholar
Sydney
Australia

Nancy Fix Anderson
Loyola University, New Orleans
New Orleans, LA

Rolando Avila
University of Texas, Pan American
Edinburg, TX

Tracey J. Axelrod
Temple University
Philadelphia, PA

Anni P. Baker
Wheaton College
Norton, MA

Laura Balbuena-González
New School for Social Research
New York, NY

Amy S. Balderach
Baylor University
Waco, TX

Bethany A. Barratt
Roosevelt University
Chicago, IL

Roger B. Beck
Eastern Illinois University
Charleston, IL

Amy Helen Bell
Huron University College
University of Western Ontario
London, Ontario
Canada

Walter Bell
Lamar University
Beaumont, TX

Judith Bellafaire
Women in Military Service for America
Memorial Foundation
Arlington, VA

June Melby Benowitz
University of South Florida, Sarasota-Manatee
Sarasota, FL

Christiana Biggs
Baylor University
Waco, TX

CONTRIBUTORS

Avital H. Bloch
Center for Social Research, University of
Colima
Colima
Mexico

Olivier Buirette
Université de Paris III, Sorbonne-Nouvelle
Paris
France

David Cahill
University of New South Wales
Sydney
Australia

Laura M. Calkins
Vietnam Archive, Texas Tech University
Lubbock, TX

Susanna Calkins
Searle Center for Teaching Excellence
Northwestern University
Evanston, IL

Aurélie Campana
Institut d'Etudes Politiques
Université Robert Schuman
Strasbourg
France

Thomas Cardoza
Truckee Meadows Community College
Reno, NV

Elaine Carey
St. John's University
Queens, NY

David M. Carletta
Michigan State University
East Lansing, MI

Dennis A. Castillo
Christ the King Seminary
East Aurora, NY

Jolynda Brock Chenicek
Florida State University
Tallahassee, FL

Rachael I. Cherry
Florida State University
Tallahassee, FL

Donna Coates
University of Calgary
Calgary, Alberta
Canada

Sara E. Cooper
California State University, Chico
Chico, CA

Kazimiera J. Cottam
Independent Scholar
Ottawa, Ontario
Canada

Brian E. Crim
Joint Personnel Recovery Agency
Ft. Belvoir, VA

J. Keri Cronin
Queen's University
Kingston, Ontario
Canada

Jason Crouthamel
Grand Valley State University
Allendale, MI

Rebekah Ann Crowe
Baylor University
Waco, TX

Page Dougherty Delano
Borough of Manhattan Community College
City University of New York
New York, NY

CONTRIBUTORS

Johannes Dillinger
Universität Trier
Trier
Germany

Paul W. Doerr
Acadia University
Wolfville, Nova Scotia
Canada

Jérôme Dorvidal
Université Montpellier III
Montpellier
France

Megan Elias
Queensborough Community College
Bayside, NY

Nancy Driscoll Engle
Eastern Washington University
Spokane, WA

Thomas M. Ethridge
Eastern Illinois University
Charleston, IL

Petra Feld
Johann-Wolfgang Universität
Frankfurt
Germany

Gilbert G. Fernandez
Tennessee Technological University
Cookeville, TN

Laura Finger
Houston Metropolitan Research Center
Houston, TX

Rachel Finley-Bowman
Delaware Valley College
Doylestown, PA

Andrew K. Frank
Florida Atlantic University
Boca Raton, FL

Lisa Tendrich Frank
Florida Atlantic University
Boca Raton, FL

Gregory Fremont-Barnes
Independent Scholar
Salisbury
United Kingdom

Lee Ann Ghajar
Women in Military Service for America
Memorial Foundation
Arlington, VA

Amanda Gibbens
Lakeview Centennial High School
Dallas, TX

Pamela Lee Gray
Indiana University, Purdue University
Fort Wayne, IN

Christopher Griffin
Florida State University
Tallahassee, FL

Catherine D. Griffis
Loyola University Chicago
Chicago, IL

Richard Grossman
Northeastern Illinois University
Chicago, IL

Joan R. Gundersen
Independent Scholar
Aspinwall, PA

Larry Hannant
Camosun College and the University of
Victoria
Victoria, British Columbia
Canada

CONTRIBUTORS

Oliver Benjamin Hemmerle
Rumms Universität
Mannheim
Germany

Neil M. Heyman
San Diego State University
San Diego, CA

Marcie L. Hinton
Middle Tennessee State University
Murfreesboro, TN

Paula K. Hinton
Tennessee Technological University
Cookeville, TN

Charles F. Howlett
Molloy College
Rockville Centre, NY

Glen Jeansonne
University of Wisconsin, Milwaukee
Milwaukee, WI

Tricia Jenkins
Michigan State University
East Lansing, MI

Phyllis G. Jestice
University of Southern Mississippi
Hattiesburg, MS

Katherine Burger Johnson
University of Louisville
Louisville, KY

Barbara Penny Kanner
Center for the Study of Women, University of
California, Los Angeles
Los Angeles, CA

Martin Kich
Wright State University, Lake Campus
Celina, OH

David Kieran
George Washington University
Washington, DC

Tonya M. Lambert
University of Alberta
Edmonton, Alberta
Canada

Eve-Marie Lampron
Université de Montréal
Montréal, Quebec
Canada

Caressa Lattimore
Baylor University
Waco, TX

Keith A. Leitich
North Seattle Community College
Seattle, WA

Claudia Lenz
Independent Scholar
Hamburg
Germany

Sarah Hilgendorff List
Independent Scholar
Reading, MA

Stephanie Longo
University of Scranton
Scranton, PA

David Lührssen
University of Wisconsin, Milwaukee
Milwaukee, WI

John Thomas McGuire
College at Oneonta, State University of New
York
Oneonta, NY

Howard N. Meyer
Independent Scholar
New York, NY

CONTRIBUTORS

Alexander Mikaberidze
Independent Scholar
Santa Barbara, CA

Miodrag Milin
Tibiscus University
Timisoara
Romania

Dimitre Minchev
Bulgarian Association of Military History
Sofia
Bulgaria

Patit Paban Mishra
Sambalpur University
Burla, Orissa
India

Danelle Moon
San Jose State University
San Jose, CA

Irina Mukhina
Boston College
Boston, MA

Deanne Stephens Nuwer
University of Southern Mississippi
Hattiesburg, MS

Heather E. Ostman
Empire State College
State University of New York
New York, NY

Kazuo Ota
Tokyo Jogakkan College
Machida-shi, Tokyo
Japan

Dawn Ottevaere
Michigan State University
East Lansing, MI

Richard Panchyk
Independent Scholar
Westbury, NY

Edy M. Parsons
Iowa State University
Ames, IA

Corinna Peniston-Bird
Lancaster University
Lancaster
United Kingdom

Rubina Perroomian
University of California, Los Angeles
Los Angeles, CA

Lisa Porter
Cheekwood Museum of Art
Nashville, TN

Jane Potter
Wolfson College
Oxford
United Kingdom

Margaret Power
Illinois Institute of Technology
Chicago, IL

Cora Ann Presley
Georgia State University
Atlanta, GA

Laura R. Prieto
Simmons College
Boston, MA

J. Lyndsey Rago
University of Delaware
Newark, DE

Annette Richardson
University of Alberta
Edmonton, Alberta
Canada

CONTRIBUTORS

Giselle Roberts
La Trobe University
Melbourne, Victoria
Australia

Joann M. Ross
University of Nebraska, Lincoln
Lincoln, NE

Jim Ross-Nazzal
Montgomery College
Houston, TX

Kristen L. Rouse
Tallahassee Community College
Tallahassee, FL

Markku Ruotsila
University of Tampere
Tampere
Finland

Kelly Boyer Sagert
Independent Scholar
Lorain, OH

Brian Sandberg
Medici Archive Project
Firenze
Italy

Margaret Sankey
Minnesota State University
Moorhead, MN

Estela Schindel
Freie Universität Berlin
Berlin
Germany

Marc L. Schwarz
University of New Hampshire
Durham, NH

Brenda L. Sendejo
University of Texas at Austin
Austin, TX

Mona L. Siegel
California State University, Sacramento
Sacramento, CA

Shawn Smallman
Portland State University
Portland, OR

Adam C. Stanley
Purdue University
West Lafayette, IN

Stephen K. Stein
University of Memphis
Memphis, TN

Sharon Ritenour Stevens
George C. Marshall Foundation
Lexington, VA

Leonard A. Steverson
Valdosta State University
Valdosta, GA

Pamela J. Stewart
Arizona State University
Tempe, AZ

Margaret D. Stock
U.S. Military Academy
West Point, NY

Gregory M. Thomas
Independent Scholar
New York, NY

Barbara L. Tischler
Horace Mann School
Bronx, NY

Rebecca Tolley-Stokes
East Tennessee State University
Johnson City, TN

Robert J. Topmiller
Eastern Kentucky University
Richmond, KY

CONTRIBUTORS

Georgia Tres
Oakland University
Rochester Hills, MI

Pamela Tyler
North Carolina State University
Raleigh, NC

David J. Ulbrich
Temple University
Philadelphia, PA

Anastasia (Tasoula) Vervenioti
ASPAITE
Athens
Greece

Kara D. Vuic
Indiana University
Bloomington, IN

Michael C. Wallo
The Pennsylvania State University
University Park, PA

Margaret Ward
Democratic Dialogue
Belfast
Northern Ireland

Kathleen Warnes
University of Toledo
Toledo, OH

Andrew Jackson Waskey
Dalton State College
Dalton, GA

Leigh Whaley
Acadia University
Wolfville, Nova Scotia
Canada

Jacqueline Woodfork
Loyola University New Orleans
New Orleans, LA

Brett F. Woods
Independent Scholar
Santa Fe, NM

John R. Young
University of Strathclyde
Glasgow
Scotland

INDEX

- AANS. *See* Australian Army Nursing Service
- abaiya* (veil), 306
- Abdullah, 407
- Abdyldebek, 357
- Abenaki, 157
- Abimelech, 329
- Ablamowicz, Ignatius, 469
- abortion, 337
- Abraham Lincoln Battalion, 338
- Abu Aisha, Darine, 19–20, 315
- Abu Bakr of Mecca, 7
- Abu Ghraib prison (Baghdad, Iraq), xxxvi
- Achilles, 12
- acquired immunodeficiency syndrome. *See* AIDS
- Action Party (Italy), 318
- Actium, Battle of, 258
- Actresses' Franchise League (AFL), 33, 273
- Adams, Elisabeth May, 132
- Addams, Jane, 1–2, 2 (photo), 49, 293, 402, 602
- and American suppression of Philippines
 Insurrection, 466
- Hull House, 150
- as ICWPP president,
 303–304, 306
- International Manifesto of Women, 305–306
- ADF. *See* Air Defense Forces administrators, xxxix
- See also specific women by name*
- Adult Suffrage Society, 286
- Aenor, 165
- AFF. *See* American Friends of France
- Afghanistan, 2–4, 374
- Revolutionary Association of the Women of Afghanistan, 4
- Soviet invasion of, 371
- war coverage, 370
- AFL. *See* Actresses' Franchise League
- African American press, 378
- African Americans
- Korean War, 352
- nurses, 352, 488, 604
- in U.S. Armed Forces, 159
- in U.S. frontier army, 210
- in U.S. literature, 378
- in Women's Army Auxiliary Corp (WAAC), 612
- in Women's Army Corps (WAC) (US), 159
- World War I, 604
- World War II military service, 612
- African Mine Strike (1946), 186
- African National Congress (ANC), 390–391
- Afrika Corps (Germany), 211
- Afrikaners, 286–288
- After the War, What?* (Walsh), 453
- AFZ. *See* Anti-Fashisticki Front na Zenite
- Aga, Achmed (Ahmed), 91–92, 92–93
- Agaja, 142
- age discrimination, 595
- Aglauros, 257
- Agnew, Ruth, 602
- Agosti, Ramón, 23
- Agueros, Josefa, 558
- Aguinaldo, Emiliano, 465
- Agustina de Aragón (née Agustina Zaragoza y Domenech), 4–6
- aid societies, 115
- AIDS, spread of, 6–7
- Aikoku Fujin Kai (Patriotic Women's Association), 324
- Air Defense Aviation (Soviet Union), 547
- Air Defense Forces (ADF) (Soviet Union), 547–549
- 46th Taman Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment, 387, 483, 538–539, 552–553
- 125th M. M. Raskova Borisov Guards Bomber Aviation Regiment, 182, 188, 483–484, 539–541, 553
- 586th Fighter Aviation Regiment, 549–551
- Air Group No. 122 (Soviet Union), 182
- Air Ministry (Britain), 332
- Air Transport Authority (Britain), 333
- Air Transport Auxiliary (ATA) (Britain), 242, 374–375
- Air Transport Command (U.S.), 620
- Air Transport Service (ATS) (Britain), 458
- Air Warning Service (Soviet Union), 547
- Aishah (Aisha), 7–8
- Akeyasu, Jean-Paul, 483

INDEX

- Akhmatova, Anna Andreevna
Gorenko, 544
- Akiba movement, 146
- Al Qaeda, 105
- Alabama, 404
- al-Aqsa Martyr's Brigade, 21
(photo), 314
- Alaska National Guard,
170–171
- Alaska Natives, 170–171
- Alaska Territorial Guard (ATG)
(U.S.), 170
- Alay Queen, 357
- Albanian Muslims, 482
- Albanian war, 252
- Albert, Louis, 417
- Albert Edward, 529
- Albrecht, Berty, 193
- Albrecht, Susanne, 44
- Albrecht, Suzanne, 583
- Aldrich, Mildred, 334
- al-Dulaymi, Lutifiya, 308
- Aleksandrov, Aleksandr
Andreyevich, 156
- Alexander II, xxxvi
- Alexander the Great, 257, 298
- Alexandra, 8–9, 9 (photo)
- Alexandrov, 505
- al-Fatah, 314
- Alfonsín, Raúl, 23, 25
- Alfonso XIII, 6
- Algeria
Army of National Liberation
(ANL), 10
Battle of Algiers, 10
Battle of Algiers, 584
French invasion of, 633
Muslim revolutionaries in,
482
People's Army, 10
War of National Liberation,
9–11
- Ali Pasha of Joannina, 255
- Alianza Nacional Popular
(ANAPO) (National
Popular Alliance)
(Colombia), 127
- Alicia Dean, 416
- Alien Tort Claims Act (U.S.),
348
- Alikhanov-Avarskii, 268
- All But My Life* (Klein), 378
- All-American Girls Professional
Baseball League, 608
- Allen, Eliza, 11–12
- Alliance network, 192–193
- All-Japan Women's Economic
Convention, 323
- al-Mousawi, Sagidah, 307
- ALNU. *See* Australian League
of Nations Union
- Alsop, Joseph, 132
- Alymbek-Datkha, 356
- Amazon battalions (French
Revolution), 208
- Amazon River, 13
- Amazons
ancient Greece, 12–13,
256–257
women warriors of Dahomey,
141–143, 142 (illus)
*See also specific women by
name*
- Ambulance Corps (Belgian Red
Cross), 113
- ambulance drivers, 341
Flying Ambulance Column,
598
French Army, 382
London Auxiliary Ambulance
Service, 288
Scottish Women's Hospitals
(SWH), 288, 300–301,
516
Women's Reserve Ambulance
Corps (Britain), 277
- America First Committee, 153
- American Civil War, xl, 54,
115–117, 380, 415
Battle of Bull Run, 625
The Boys in Blue (Hoge),
289
casualties, xxviii
Kilpatrick-Dahlgren raid, 625
Louisiana Red River
Campaign, xxviii
Mr. Babcock network, 625
Underground Railroad, 599
women combatants, xxxiii,
118–120
women disguised as men,
xxxiii
- women in medical services,
120–122
- American Committee for
Devastated France, 418
- American Daughter Gone to War*
(Smith), 534
- American Friends of France
(AFF) (Comité
Americain de Secours
Civil), 71, 418
- American Friends Service
Committee, 150, 445
- American Fund for French
Wounded, 418
- American House (Monterrey,
Mexico), 72
- American House (Saltillo,
Mexico), 72
- American Indian Movement,
190
- American Jewish Congress, 406
- American Mothers National
Weekly*, 424
- American Red Cross (ARC), 56,
149–150, 404,
487–489
Correspondence Exchange,
70
First Aid Department, 608
in France, 564 (photo), 565
Production Department, 608
Spanish-American War,
559–560
War Relief Board, 408–409
World War I, 439
- American Relief for France,
418
- American Revolution, xxxix,
641
Battle of Monmouth, 414,
414 (illus)
British attack on Whitemarsh
(attempted), 145–146
first battle, 47
Fort Randolph siege, 434
last battle, 663
role of women in, 13–15,
384, 396, 434
vivandières, xxxiii
women intelligence riders, 14
(photo)

INDEX

- American Socialist Party, 604
 American Telephone and Telegraph Company, 279
 American University of Beirut, 368
 American Women's Voluntary Services, 608
 Americanizing Cherokee, 107
 AMES. *See* Association of Salvadoran Women
 Ames, Lucia, 404
 Amnesty International, 46, 660
 AMNLAE. *See* Association of Nicaraguan Women "Luisa Amanda Espinoza"
 Amosova, Serafima, 539
 AMPRONAC. *See* Association of Nicaraguan Women Confronting the National problem
 AMS. *See* Auxiliary Military Service
 ANAPO. *See* Alianza Nacional Popular
 ANC. *See* Army Nurse Corps
 ancient Greece, 256–258
 Amazons, 12–13, 256–257
 female imagery in warfare, 251–252
 ancient Japan, 326–327
 ancient Near East, 329–331
 ancient Rome, 493–495
 Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth Century, 15–18
 Anders, Wladyslaw, 474–475
 Anders Army (Poland), 474
 Anderson, Elizabeth Garrett, 18, 300
 Anderson, Louisa Garrett, 18–19
 Andersonville Prison (Georgia), 56
 ANDES, 164
 André, Louis, 634
 Andromache, 257
 anesthetists, xxviii, 350
 ANFASEP. *See* Asociación Nacional de Familiares de Secuestrados
 Angola, 374
 Anielewicz, Mordecai, 362
 Anka, 541
 "Anne Bailey's Ride" (Robb), 46–47
Anthem for Liberty (Solomos), 251
 Anthony, Susan B., 99
 Anti-Comintern League, 90
 Anti-Enlistment League, 293
 Anti-Fashisticki Front na Zenite (AFZ, Anti-Fascist Front of Women) (Yugoslavia), xxxiv–xxxv, 656
 Anti-Imperialist League (U.S.), 405
 antinuclear activism, 283
 Antiope, 12
 antiquity, xxxix
 Amazons, 12–13, 256–257
 ancient Greece, 256–258
 ancient Japan, 326–327
 ancient Rome, 493–495
 female imagery in warfare, 251–252
 Greek women, 256–258
 Jewish women, 329–331
 anti-Semitism, 359, 524
 Antonian, Aram, 30–31
 Antonius, Lucius, 213
 Antony, Mark, 123–124, 212, 213 (photo), 258
 APA. *See* Australian Peace Alliance
 apartheid, 186–187
 opposition to, 66, 390
 Apasa, Gregoria, 16–18
 April 19 Movement (M-19), 127, 583
 Aquino, Melchora, 466
 Arab Women's Congress, 20
 Arab Women's Union, 308
 Arab-Israeli Peace Conference (Madrid 1991), 33
 Arab-Israeli wars, xxxv, 19–22, 220
 Arafat, Yasser, 177, 584
 Aragon, Yolande of, 331
 Arbenz, Jacobo, 264
 arbitration movement, 404–405
 ARC. *See* American Red Cross
 Archer, Theresa, 377
 Archibald, Katharine, 377
 Archidamia, 562
 Arenas, Jacobo, 126
 Arévalo, Juan José, 264
 Argentina
 Dirty War against civilians, 22–24
 Falklands War, 176–177
 Grandmothers of Plaza de Mayo (Argentina), 26
 guerrilla movement, 366
 independence struggle against Spain, 40
 Madres de la Plaza de Mayo (Mothers of the Plaza de Mayo), 23, 24–26
 United Provinces of Río de la Plata, 40
 Argüello, Dora María Téllez, 583
 Ariel, 578
 Arizona Japanese internment camp, 327
 Arkansas Japanese internment camp, 327
 Armagh Women's Prison, 180
 Armand, Inessa, 506
 Armand, Pauline, 473
 Armenian Holocaust, 26–28
 Smyrna Tragedy, 534–535
 women victims of genocide, 29–31
 Army in Defense of the National Sovereignty of Nicaragua (Ejército Defensor de la Soberanía Nacional de Nicaragua, EDSNN), 426
 Army Nurse Corps (ANC) (U.S.), 150, 339, 404, 564 (photo), 565
 Korean War, 350–352, 354
 World War I, 439–441
 World War II, 441–443, 442 (photo)
 Army Nurses' Pension Act (U.S.), 120
 Army of National Liberation (ANL) (Algeria), 10

INDEX

- “army of roses,” 584
 Army of the Potomac, 54, 161, 172
 Army of the West (Union), 119
 Arnold, Henry H. “Hap,” 124, 617, 620–621
 Arnow, Harriet, 379
 Aronova, Raisa Ermolaevna, 552
 Arridaios, 257
 Arsinoë, 258
 arsonists (*pétroleuses*), 455
 art, 344–346, 377, 513–514
 Artemis, 12
 Artemisia of Caria, 31–32
 Arthur, Ethel Roxana, 440
 Aryans, 498–499
 Asaturof, Sonia, 30
 Asdonk, Brigitte, 44, 485
 Ashwari, Hanan, 32–33, 315
 Ashwell, Lena Margaret Pocock, 33–34
 Asian Women’s Conference (1949), 109
 Asociación Madres de Plaza de Mayo (Association of the Mothers of Plaza de Mayo), 25
 Asociación Nacional de Familiares de Secuestrados (ANFASEP; National Association of Relatives of the Disappeared), 463
 Asquith, Herbert Henry, 452
 Associated Press (AP), 282, 370–371
 Association of Displaced Persons, 660
 Association of Mothers and Widows of the Fallen (Associazione Madri e Vedove dei Caduti in Guerra) (Italy), 322
 Association of Nicaraguan Women Confronting the National problem (AMPRONAC), 427
 Association of Nicaraguan Women “Luisa Amanda Espinoza” (AMNLAE), 427
 Association of Salvadoran Women (AMES), 164
 Association of WRENS, 214
 Associazione Madri e Vedove dei Caduti in Guerra (Association of Mothers and Widows of the Fallen) (Italy), 322
 ATA. *See* Air Transport Auxiliary
 ATG. *See* Alaska Territorial Guard
 Athaulf, 215
 Athena, 257
 Athens, Greece, 257
 Atkins, Vera H., 34–35
Atlantic Monthly, 220
 atomic weapons
 antinuclear activism, 283
 Campaign for Nuclear Disarmament (CND), 97–98
 French testing, 382
 Hiroshima Peace Festival, 283
 U.S. bombing of Hiroshima and Nagasaki, 283–284
 atrocities, xxxix
 by German Armed Forces of World War II, 221–222
 See also specific events, places by name
 ATS. *See* Air Transport Service; Auxiliary Territorial Service
 Aubrac, Lucie, 35–36, 193
 Aubrac, Raymond, 35
 Audisio, Walter, 463
 Augspurg, Anita, 223
 Aum Shin Rikyo, 583
 Aurangzeb, 299
 Aurelian, 664
 Auschwitz concentration camp, 291 (photo), 495
 Austin-Wadsworth Bill (National War Service Act) (U.S.), 605
 Australia
 Armed Forces, 36 (photo)
 Korean War, 353–355, 354
 peace movement, 416–417
 Victoria Senate, 231
 women in service during World War II, 36–37
 Australian Army
 Medical Women’s Service, 36
 Voluntary Aids Detachments (VADs), 36
 Australian Army Nursing Service (AANS), 36, 37–38
 Banka Island Massacre, 93–94
 Australian Army Nursing Service Reserve, 37
 Australian League of Nations Union (ALNU), 567
 Australian Peace Alliance (APA), 231
 Australian Peace Council, 568
 Australian Women’s Army Service (AWAS), 36
 Australian Women’s Charter, 568
 Australian-Russian Society, 568
 Australian–Serbian Canteens, 341
 Australian-Soviet Society, 568
 Austria, 495
 Austrian Peace Society, 572
 auxiliary (term), 243
 See also specific corps
 auxiliary corps, xxxix–XL
 Auxiliary Military Service (AMS) (Britain), 246–247
 Auxiliary Territorial Service (ATS) (Britain), 242–244, 246–247, 268–269
 Auxiliary Women’s Royal Air Force (Britain). *See* Women’s Royal Air Force (WRAF)
 Auxilio Social (Social Assistance) (Spain), 557
Avalanche (Boyle), 378
 Avantibai, Rani, 299
 Avenger Field, 38–39
 Aviation Enterprises, 621
 AWAS. *See* Australian Women’s Army Service

INDEX

- “Axis Sally” (Mildred Elizabeth Gillars), 39–40
- Ayacucho, Popular Feminine Movement of (PEM), 461
- Azarkh, Raisa Moiseevna, 542
- Azim Shag, 299
- Aziz, Tuha, 315
- Azurduy de Padilla, Juana, 40–41
- B-26 Martin Marauder, 456
- Baader, Andreas, 43–44, 485
- Baader-Meinhof Gang, 43–44, 583
- Baath Party, 307–308
- Babi Yar Massacre, 162–163, 163 (photo)
- Babylift, Operation, xxviii
- Bache, Sarah Franklin, 489
- Baden National Assembly, 223
- Badoglio, Pietro, 318
- Baez, Albert V., 44
- Baez, Joan Chandos, 44–46, 45 (photo)
- Bagot, Lady Theodosia, 46
- Bailey, Anne Trotter, 46–47
- Bailey, John, 47
- Baissac, Claude de, 48
- Baissac, Lise de, 48, 73, 503
- Baker, E. H. (Mrs.), 48–49
- Baker, George, 83
- Baker, James, 33
- Baker, Louisa, 83
- Balch, Emily Green, 49–50, 50 (photo), 402
- International Manifesto of Women, 305–306
- Balfour, Christian, 527
- Balguy, John, 277
- Balkan Wars, xxxi, xxxiv, 50–52
- First Balkan War, 565
- Second Balkan War, 582
- Ballestrem-Solf, Countess Lagi, 52
- Ballif, O., 393
- Bangladesh, Republic of, 217
- Banka Island Massacre, 93–94
- Bannock War, 650
- Barak, 330
- Barayev, Arbi, 106
- Barayev, Movsar, 106
- Barayeva, Khava, 106
- Barbara, Black, 472
- Barbie, Klaus, 35
- Barkhatova, Valentina, 547
- Barry, James Miranda, 53–54, 300
- Barstow, Montague, 449
- Barton, Clara, xxvii, 54–56, 56 (photo), 560
- Baruch, Bernard, 383
- Basayaev, Shamil, 106
- Basayev, Shamil, 103
- baseball, 608
- Baseden, Yvonne, 56–57
- Bashi-Bazouks, 91–92
- Basque separatists, 583
- Bastidas, Micaela, 16–18
- Batak, Bulgaria, 91–93
- Bates, Katherine Lee, 561
- Batista, Fulgencio, 135, 233, 281
- Battalion, Emilia Plater. *See* Plater, Emilia
- Battle Cry* (Uris), 377
- Battle of Algiers*, 584
- Battle of the Glorious First of June, 578
- Baucq, Philippe, 100
- Bäumer, Gertrud, 223–224
- Baumgartner, Ann, 57–58
- Baxter, Metta, 406
- Bazán, Emilia Pardo, 561
- BDF. *See* Federation of German Women’s Associations
- Bean, Lydia, 640
- Bean na hÉireann*, 394
- Beatty, Bessie, 58–59, 334
- Beaumont, Andrea, 334
- Beauregard, P. G. T., 78, 260
- Beaver Dams, Battle of, 529
- Becquerel, A. Henri, 136
- Beecher, Harriet, 567
- Beekman, Jaap, 59
- Beekman, Yolande, 34, 59–60, 145, 340, 471
- Beirut, Lebanon, 368
- Belfast Agreement, 602
- Belgian Red Cross Ambulance Corps, 113
- Belgian Resistance, xlvi, 146
- Belgium
- German invasion and occupation of, 60–62, 62 (illus), 221
- Korean War, 354
- Pervyse dressing station, 597–598
- World War I, 60–62, 597–598
- Beliaeva, Raisa, 379, 550–551
- Beliakov, A., 483
- Belik, Vera Luk’ianovna, 387–388, 388
- Bell, Gertrude Margaret Lowthian, 63
- A Bell for Adono* (Hersey), 377
- Bell Syndicate, 334
- Belsen Trial, 261
- Bendix, Clara, 397
- Benford, Henry, 116
- Ben-Gurion, David, 19, 407
- Benjamin, Anna Northend, 561
- Benjamin, Walter, 188
- Benkovski, Georgi, 91
- Benn, Tony, 419
- Bennett, Agnes Elizabeth Lloyd, 63–64
- Bennett, H. Gordon, 94
- Ber Zeit University, 32
- Berberich, Monika, 485–486
- Bergdorf Goodman, 125, 617
- Berlin, Germany
- Battle for Berlin, 547–548
- Cultural Film Center, 525
- Pension Schmidt, 522–523
- Rosenstrasse Protest, 228, 498–500
- Soviet invasion of, 229, 431
- Soviet occupation of, 480
- trümmerfrauen* (rubble women), 596–597, 596 (photo)
- Bern Peace Bureau, 572–573
- Bernadotte, Desirée, 423
- Bernadotte, Jean Baptiste, 423
- Bershanskaia, Evdokiia, 388, 539
- Bessières, Adele, 423
- Bessières, Jean Baptiste, 423
- Betancourt, Ingrid, 128
- Bethune, Norman, 542, 642

INDEX

- Betrayed* (Walsh), 453
 Betts, F. N., 77
Betty Zane (Gray), 663
 Bezrukova, Vera, 547
 Bhindranwale, Jarnail Singh, 218
 Biafrans, 166
 Bialystok Ghetto revolt, 263
 Bickerdyke, Mary Ann Ball, xxvii, 121
 Bickerdyke, Robert, 121
 Bielawska-Pietkiewicz, Halina, 476
 Biéler, Gustave, 59
 Biesterfeld, Beatrice Yvonne, 131
 Big Tooth Gregory, 107
 Bigart, Homer, 282
 Bilien, Valentina, 64–65
 Bill of Rights March, 277
 Billings, William, 11
 bin Laden, Osama, 419
 biological warfare
 experimentation, Japanese, 65
 Bir Hakeim, Battle of, 594
 Birkenau concentration camp, 495
 Bizimungu, Pasteur, 509
 Black, Catherine, 65–66
 Black, Winifred, 334
 Black Panther Party, 190
 Black Parents' Association, 390
 Black Sash, 66–67
 Black Widow suicide bombers, 104 (photo), 584–585
 black widows myth, 106
 Black Women's Federation, 390
 Blackwell, Elizabeth, 67
 Blaikie, Jane Currie, 289
 Blair, Anna, 172
 Blair, Tony, 419
 Blake, George, 578
 Blanche of Castile, 67–68, 134
 Blobel, Paul, 163
 Bloch, Denise, 574
 blood drives, 489
 Bloody Sunday, 601
 Blue Star, Operation (India), 218
 Boal, Willie, 644
 Bobolina, 468
 Bobrowska, Ludwika, 475
 Bochkareva, Afansi, 68
 Bochkareva, Maria (Mariya or Yasha), xxxiii, 58, 68–70, 70 (photo), 503–505
 Boer War, 37, 232, 647
 condemnation of British policy during, 286–287
 nurses, xxxiv, 401
 opposition to, 181, 286–287
 Treaty of Vereeniging, 288
 Boerstler, Charles, 529
 Bofors gun, 247
 Bohec, Jeanne, 193
 Boiko, Aleksandra, 547
 Boiko, Ivan, 547
 Boland, Harry, 313 (photo)
 Bolivia, 95
 independence struggle against Spain, 40
 Túpac Catari uprising, 15, 18
 United Provinces of Río de la Plata, 40
 Bolshevik Party, 506
 Bolshevik Revolution, 334, 343–344, 504, 506–508
 Bolshevism, 178
 Bonaparte, Marie-Louise, 423–424
 Bonaparte, Napoleon, 167, 229
 Bondareva-Spitsyna, Antonina, 540
 Bondin, Guza, 389
 Bonney, Therese, 70–71
 Bonney Service, 70–71
 Bonnici, Censa, 389
Book of Deeds of Arms and of Chivalry (de Pizan), 148
 Booth, Evangeline Cory, 514
 Booth, William, 514
 Borden, Mary, 71–72
 Border Police (MaGav) (Israel), 317
 Borel, Andrée, 144
 Borginis, Sarah, 72–73
 Bór-Komorowski, Tadeusz, 472
 Bormann, Juana, 261
 Bormann, Martin, 495
 Borrel, Andrée, 48, 73–74, 373, 446, 502–503
 Bosazza, Jean, 66
 Bosnia, 470
 conflicts in, 657, 659
 independence from Yugoslavia, 658–659
 Srebrenica massacre, 657 (photo), 659
 Bosnia-Herzegovina, 658–659
 Boso, Maria, 322
 Boston Tea Party, 212
 Botev, Hristo, 91
 Bouboulina, Laskarina, 252, 255
 Boudicca, Queen of the Iceni, xxxi, 74–75, 75 (photo)
 Boudinot, Elias, 146
 Boulanger, Geneviève, 196
 Bourke-White, Margaret, 76, 353, 378
 Bowen, Essex, 578
 Bower, Ursula Graham, 76–77
 Bower's Force, 77
 Bowles, Sydney, 413
 Bowling, Tom, 245
 Bowman, Albert, 72
 Bowman, Sarah A., 73
 Boyce, Westray Battle, 285
 Boyd, Isabelle (Belle), 77–78, 79 (photo), 117, 260–261
 Boyle, Kay, 378
The Boys in Blue (Hoge), 289
 Bradley, Omar N., 86
 Brandt, Lucia, 651
 Brandt, Paul, 651
 Brant, Mary (Molly), 79–80
 Brant, Niklaus, 79
 Brant Canagaraduncka, 79
 Brar, Kuldip Singh, 218
 Braun, Eva, 80–81, 81 (photo)
 Braunsteiner, Hermine, 81–82
 Bray, Linda, 82–83
 Brazil, 218–219, 366
 BRC. *See* British Red Cross
Bread and Rice (Johnston), 378
 Brecht, Berthold, 587
 Breiter, Gertrud, 525–526
 “Bremen Sender,” 39
 Brethren, 129

INDEX

- Brewer, Lucy, 83
 Brewer, Margaret, 610
Brewsie and Willie (Stein), 378
 bride imagery, 655
 Bridge, Joan, 44
 Brighenti, Maria, 322
 Brion, Hélène, 84–85, 202
 Brisse, Irene, 48
Britannia, 452
 British Empire. *See* United Kingdom
 British Information Services, 417
 British Red Cross (BRC), 587
 Brittain, Edward, 85
 Brittain, Vera Mary, xxxii, 85–86
 broadcast media, 595
 Brokaw, George T., 383
 Brok-Beltsova, Galina, 540
 Brossolette, Pierre, 209
 Brotherhood of Freedom, 562
 Broussine, Georges, 538
 Brown, David R. C., 88
 Brown, John, 599
 Brown, Mary-Agnes, 86–87
 Brown, Ruth Humphries, 87–88
 Brown, William, 245
 Browne-Bartoli, Eliane Sophy, 470
Brunswick, 578
 Bruskina, Masha, 88–89
 Brutus network, 418
 Bryant, Alice Frank, 378
 Bryant, Louise, 334
 Bublely, Esther, 89–90
 Buch, Eva Maria, 90
 Buchanan, James, 259
 Buchenwald concentration camp, 76, 282, 342
 Buckmaster, Maurice, 34
 Buckmasters, 34
 Budanova, Ekaterina (Katia) Vasilievna, 379, 550, 552
 Buddhist peace movement, 630–631
 Bui Thi Xuan, 631
 Buk, Yakov, 68
 Bulgaria, 565
 Anti-Comintern League, 90
 Balkan Wars, 50
 Central Committee of the Assisting Organization, 91
 Fatherland Front, 90–91
 horrors (1876), xxxi, 91–93
 independent, 92
 National Guard, 90
 National Women's Union, 91
 occupation of Greece, 249–251
 People's Women's Union, 91
 Red Army in, 479
 Soviet declaration of war on, 90
 World War II, 90–91
 Bulgarian horrors, xxxi, 91–93
 Bull Run, Battle of, 260, 625
 Bullwinkel, Vivian, 93–94
 Bund der Deutschen Mädchen (League of Young German Women), 284
 Bund deutscher Mäde (League of German Girls), 261
 Bundeswehr, 221
 Bundeswehr (German Armed Forces), 221
 Bunke, Tamara, 95
 Bureau Concordia, 359
 Bureau of Legal Advice (U.S.), 604
 Burger, S. W., 287–288
 Burgoyne, John, 492
 Burgundian network, 538
 Burma, 7
 Burn, John Horne, 377
 Burnside, Ambrose, 415
 Burundi, 510
 Burzaeva, Sofia, 539
 Bush, George, 267, 308–309, 328
 Bushell, Violette Reine Elizabeth, 574
 Bushido ideal, 326
 Bushy Run, Battle of, 434
 Butler, Benjamin, 625
 Butler, Richard, 434
 Buxton, Lord Noel, 565
 Byck, Muriel, 95–96
 bystanders, xl
See also specific women by name
 CA. *See* Church Army
 Cabizolles, Antonin, 432–433
 Caesar, Augustus, 123
 Caesar, Julius, 123, 258
 Cagol, Margherita, 487
 Cairo Conference, 63
 Calayon, Thérèse, 196
 Caldwell, Erskine, 76
 California, 583
 California Japanese internment camp, 327
 Calvinists, 197–198
 Camel, Battle of the, 7
 Cammaerts, Francis, 234, 372
 Camp Davis, North Carolina, 57–58
Camp Follower, The Story of a Soldier's Wife (Klaw), 377
 camp followers, xxxiii
See also specific women by name
 camp sisters, 292
 Campaign for Nuclear Disarmament (CND), 97–98, 382
 Campos, Pedro Albizu, 370
 Canada
 declaration of war on Germany, 643
 Korean War, 353–355
 Royal Canadian Mounted Police, 642
 Canadian Women's Army Corps, 643
 canary girls, xxxiv, 237
 Canby, E. R. S., 648
 Canel, Eva, 561
 Cannan, May Wedderburn, 98–99
 canteens, 341, 488
cantinières (dispensers of drink), xxxiii, 414, 632–634
See also vivandières
 Capra, Robert, 282
 Caria, Artemisia of, 31–32
 Carl, Bill, 58
 Carlu, Jean, 477

INDEX

- Carnegie Foundation, 50–51
 Carney, Winifred, 311
 Carr, Josephine, 249
 Carroll, Charles, 492
 Carter, Henry, 528
 Carter, Jimmy, 122, 279, 370, 427, 638
Casa del Soldato (Soldiers' Home), 321
 Casey, John Keegan, 644
 Castellanos, Rosa, 558
 Castillo, Carlos, 264
 Castro, Fidel
 attack on Moncada Barracks, xxxv, 519
 and Celia Sánchez, 515–516
 Cuban Revolution, 134–135
 in exile, 171
 July 26 Movement, 135
 overthrow of Batista, 281
 Castro, Marcela, 17
 Castro, Raúl, 171
 casualties, xxviii
 See also specific wars
Casualty (Lowry), 377
 Casualty Clearing Stations, 175
 Catari, Túpac, 16–17
Catch 22 (Heller), 377
 Catherine de Medici, 198
 Catherine the Great, 504
 Catholic Church. *See* Roman Catholic Church
 Catt, Carrie Chapman, 99–100, 603
 Catt, George, 99
 Catus Decianus, 74
 Cauer, Minna, 223
The Cavalry Maiden (Durova), 505
 Cavanagh (Davies), Christian
 “Kit,” 244–245
 Cavazza, Countess Lina, 321
 Cavell, Edith Louisa, 100–101, 100 (photo), 240
 Caxton, William, 148
 CBCs. *See* Christian Base Communities
 CCP. *See* Chinese Communist Party
 Ceannt, Aine, 312, 313 (photo)
 Celts, 74
 Center of Italian Women, 319
 Central Asia, 267–268
 Central Bureau of News (Italy), 321
 Central Intelligence Agency (CIA) (U.S.), 264, 272, 427
 Central Women's School for Snipers (Soviet Union), 547
 Cerro Gerdo, battle of, 11
 Cetchwayo, 125
 Chalbur, Vera de Cottani de.
 See Eriksen, Vera
 Chamberlain (Tamblin), Margaret Lenora, 102
 Chamorro, Violetta, 427
 Chapelle, Dickey (aka Georgia Lou Meyer, G. L. Meyer), 102–103
 Chapelle, Tony, 102–103
 Chapin, Cyrenius, 529
 Chapman, Leo, 99
 Chapova, V. S., 545 (photo)
 Charles (dauphin), 331–332
 Charles II, 331
 Charlie Company, 610
 Charmy's, 46
 Chechen terrorists, 103–104
 Black Widows, 104 (photo), 584–585
 suicide bombers, 103, 104 (photo), 105–106, 584–585
 Chechneva, Marina, 538, 552
 Chechnya wars, xxxvi, 103–106
 Cheeney, William, 49
 Chel Nashim (Women's Corps) (Israel), 20, 317
 Chen Yunshang, 112
 Chennamma, Kittur Rani, 299
 Chernov, Vasily, 156
 Cherokee War Woman, 107, 639–640
 Cheron, Marie-Madeleine, 196
 Chesham, Francis, 142 (illus)
 Chiapas, Mexico, 364, 366
 Chiba auxiliary police (Israel), 317
 Chibás, Eduardo, 281
Chicago Record, 561
Chicago Tribune, 334, 424
 Child Welfare Scheme, 295–296
 childcare, 606–607
 children's transports (Kindertransport), 643
 Chile guerrilla movement, 366
 Ch'in Liang-Yu, 113
 China, 374
 Communist revolution, 107–109
 First Congress of Women, 109
 First United Front Period, 108
 Guangxi Province Women's Brigade, 111
 Hunan War Service Corps, 111
 Indonesian rape of women in, 482
 invasion of Vietnam, 631
 Japanese attack on, 295
 Japanese occupation of, 110–112, 324
 Japanese rape of Nanking, 110, 112, 421–422, 422 (photo)
 Long March, 108
 Northwest Women's Battlefield Group, 111
 women warriors in, 112–113
 Women's Defense Corps (China), 111 (photo)
 World War II home front, 110–112
 Yunnan Women's Battlefield Service Unit, 111
 China Liberated Areas Women's Federation, 109
 Chinese Communist Party (CCP), 107–110
 Central Committee, 109
 war against Japan, 110–112
 Women's Bureau, 108
 Women's National Salvation Association, 111–112
 Chios, xxxi, 252, 256 (illus)
 Chisholm, Mairi Lambert, 113–114, 597–598
 Ch'iu Chin, 113

INDEX

- Chlapowski, Dezydery, 469
 Christian Assemblies, 459
 Christian Base Communities (CBCs), 164
 Christian Democrats (Italy), 318
 Christian Peace Movement Radio, 359
 Christie girls, 603
 Chun Pao, 113
 Church Army (CA), 46
 Churchill, Jack, 114
 Churchill, Jennie, 114–115
 Churchill, Peter, 518, 518 (photo)
 Churchill, Randolph, 114
 Churchill, Winston, 114, 502–503, 571
 Cicero, 212–213
Citizen 13660 (Okubo), 377
 Citizen Relief Committees (Italy), 321
 Civil Air Patrol (U.S.), 607
 civil war. *See specific countries*
 Civilian Public Service (CPS) (U.S.), 129, 294, 608
 Clalin, Frances, 122
 Clark, James, 415
 Clark, William, 590
 Clarke, Amy, 119
 Clarke, Kathleen, 311–312
 Clarke, Tom, 311
 “Claude,” 193
 Clawson, Augusta, 377
 Clay, Charles M., 415
 Clay, Henry, 259
 Clayton, Frances, 122–123
 Clemenceau, Georges, 411
 Cleopatra VII, 123–124, 213, 258, 494
 Cleveland, Martha E., 352
Cleveland (Ohio) Press, 294
 Clifton, Tony, 374
 Clinton Lane, Carrie, 99
 Clodius, Publius, 212
 Cloelia, 494
 Club Femenino, 135
 CND. *See* Campaign for Nuclear Disarmament
 Cochran, Jacqueline, 124–125, 612, 616, 620–621
 Cochrane, Robert, 130
 Codgel, Josephine, 526
 Cohn, Marianne, 193
 Cold War, 217, 282
 Cole, Walter, 313 (photo)
 Coleman, Kathleen Blake, 561
 Colenso, Harriette, 125–126
 Colenso, John William, 125
 collaborationists, XL
 See also specific women by name
 Colliers, 220
 Collins, Canon John, 97
 Collins, Michael, 312, 313 (photo), 395
 Collins, Quick, 612
 Colombia
 Ejército de Liberación Nacional (ELN) (National Liberation Army), 126–127
 guerrilla movements, 364–365
 National Front, 126
 political violence, 126–128
 terrorist groups, 583
 Colorado Japanese internment camp, 327
 combat units (female), XLI
 See also specific units by name
 combatants, XL–XLI
 17th, 18th, and early 19th century Great Britain, 244–245
 agents, 243
 American Civil War, 118–120
 in Army of the West, 119
 in Colombia, 127
 Gulf War (1990–1991), 266
 titles for female officers, 239
 World War II, 243, 548
 See also women warriors;
 specific women by name
 Comet Line, 147
 Comfort, 38
 comfort women, 112, 347–348, 349
 Comité Americain de Secours Civil (American Friends of France, AFF), 71, 418
 Comité des Droits de la Femme (Committee of the Rights of Woman), 195
 Commission on the Status of Women (UN), 254
 Commissioned Ladies of the Queen’s Fund (Greece), 253
 Committee of Union and Progress (Young Turks), 26–28
 Committee on Public Information, 603
 Committee to Aid Spanish Refugees (Canada), 643
 Commons, John, 275, 355
 Communist Party, Chinese (CCP), 107–108, 110
 Communist Party (CP) (Spain), 297–298
 Communist Party (Italy), 318
 Communist Party (Yugoslavia), 655
 Communist Party of Canada, 642–643
 Communist Party of Greece, 249–250, 253
 Communist Resistance, 471
 Communist revolution (China), 107–109
 Communist Women’s Combat Detachment, 507
 Communist Women’s Special Purpose Detachment, 507
 Communist Youth Movement, 412
 Communist Youth Organization (Yugoslavia), 655
 companions, XLI–XLII
 See also specific women by name
The Company She Keeps (McCarthy), 378
 concentration/death camp guards/personnel, XLII
 See also specific women by name

INDEX

- concentration/detention camps
 and internees, XLII
 camp sisters, 292
 German camps, 291–292
 Japanese interned in U.S.
 camps, 327–328
 Jehovah's Witnesses in Nazi
 Germany, 329
*See also specific women by
 name*
- The Concept of the Urban
 Guerilla* (Baader-
 Meinhof Gang), 43
- Condor*, 261
- Confederate Army, 116,
 119–120, 260
- Confessional Church, 586
- Congo, 7, 282, 509
- Congress O, 216
- Congress (I) Party, 218
- Congress Party (India),
 217–218
- Congressional Medal of Honor,
 639
- Congy, Geneviève, 193
- Conley, Perry, 276
- Connactacu*, 78
- Connecticut, 13
- Connolly, Ina, 310
- Connolly, James, 310
- Connolly, Nora, 310
- Conquest, Joan, pseud. (Mary
 Eliza Louise Gripper
 Martin-Nicholson), 128
- conscientious objectors, XLII,
 294
 in U.S. during World War II,
 128–130
 World War I, 402–403
*See also specific women by
 name*
- Considine, Bob, 498
- Constantius, 215
- Continental Army (American),
 13–15, 47
- Contras, 220, 427
- Cooke, Edith, 232
- Coordination Committee of
 Seven Cooperating
 Unions (Greece), 254
- Copperheads, 415
- Corbin, John, 130
- Corbin, Margaret Cochrane, 13,
 130
- Corday, Charlotte, xxxvi
- Cormeau, Charles Edouard
 Emile, 131
- Cormeau, Yvonne, 131
- Cornblossom, 107
- Cornioley, Henri, 650–651
- Cornstalk, 47, 434
- Cornum, Rhonda, 131–132
- Corps des Surveillantes
 Auxiliares (Corps of
 Auxiliary Inspectors)
 (France), 205
- Corps of Invalids (U.S.), 130
- correspondents, 220, 294, 367
 Korean War, 353
 Pulitzer Prize for, 282
 Spanish-American War, 561
 Vietnam War, 370–371
 World War I American
 women, 333–334
 World War II, 590
 Yom Kippur War, 371
*See also photographers;
 specific women by name*
- Correspondents' Association,
 133
- Corrigan (Maguire), Mairead,
 458, 602
- Cosmopolitan*, 589
- Coughlin, Charles, 153, 425
- Council of National Defense
 Committee on Women's
 Defense Work, 603
- Courasche (Courage), 586–587
- couriers, XLII
*See also specific women by
 name*
- Cousens, Charles, 589
- CP. *See* Communist Party
- CPS. *See* Civilian Public
 Service
- Craig, Donald A., 132
- Craig, May, 132–133
- Craig, Thomas, 146
- Craigie, Laurence, 58
- Creeks (Muskogees), 640
- Creel, George, 603
- Crimean War, 428–429, 503
- vivandières* (dispensers of
 food), 633 (photo)
- Croatia, 657–659
- Cross of St. George (Russia), 504
- Crowdy, Edith, 239
- cruise missiles, 98
- Crusades, 133–134
 Second Crusade, 165
- CSS *Virginia* (*Merrimack*), 49
- Cuba
 attack on Moncada Barracks,
 281, 519
 Ejército Rebelde (Rebel
 Army), 281
 guerrilla movement,
 364–365, 519
 Mariana Grajales Brigade,
 xxxv, 134, 136, 233,
 516
 National Women's Congress
 (1923), 135
 Oriente National Action, 171
 Partido del Pueblo Cubano
 (Party of the Cuban
 People), 281
 Revolutionary National
 Action, 171
 Revolutionary National
 Movement, 171
 Spanish-American War,
 558–559, 560 (photo)
- Cuban Revolution, xxxv,
 134–136, 135 (photo),
 233, 281, 519
 Second Eastern Guerilla
 Front, 171
- Cuban White Cross, 559
- CUC. *See* Peasant Unity
 Committee
- Cuello, Teresa, 233
- Cuhtalatah, 107
- Cultural Film Center (Berlin,
 Germany), 525
- Cumann na mBan (The League
 of Women) (Ireland),
 310–314, 394
- Curcio, Renato, 487
- Curie, Eve, 378
- Curie, Marie Skłodowska
 (Madame Curie),
 136–137

INDEX

- Curie, Pierre, 136
 Curio, Gaius Scribonius, 212
 Curitibanos, Battle of, 219
 Curtis, Cathrine, 137–138, 615
 Cushman, Pauline, 138–140, 140 (photo)
 Custis, Daniel Parke, 641
 Cyprus, 374
 Czech Resistance, XLVI, 271
 Czechoslovakia, 376, 656
- Dabayle, Anastasio Somoza, 407
 Dachau concentration camp, 282
 Dafur, XXXI–XXXII
 DAG. *See* Democratic Army of Greece
 Dagestan, 103
 Daggett, Mabel Potter, 334
 Dahalan, Mohammad, 314–315
 Dahomey, women warriors of, 141–143, 142 (illus)
 Dáil Eireann, 312, 395
Daily Clarion, 642
Daily News, 334
 Dainihon Fujin Kai (Greater Japan Women’s Association), 324–325
 Dalrymple, Edwin, 144
 Dalrymple, Mildred Inks Davidson, 143–144
 Damerment, Madeleine, 34, 60, 73, 144–145, 340, 471
 Dansey, Claude, 147
 d’Aquino, Felipe, 589
 d’Aquino, Iva Ikuko Toguri. *See* “Tokyo Rose”
 DAR. *See* Daughters of the American Revolution
 d’Arc, Isabelle, 331
 d’Arc, Jacques, 331
 D’Arezzo, Kay McBride, 144
 Darfur, Sudan, 569–570
 D’argent, Christine, 455
 Darragh, Charles, 145
 Darragh, Lydia, 145–146
 Darragh, William, 145
 Das Reich SS Armored Division (Germany), 447–448
- Daughters of Ireland (Inghínidhe na hÉireann), 232, 394
 Daughters of the American Revolution (DAR), 153, 403, 591, 640
 David, Hortense, 455
 Davidson, Bill, 143–144
 Davies, Christian “Kit” Cavanagh, 244–245
 Davis, Jefferson, 121, 260–261
 Dawidson (Draenger), Justina, 146–147
 Dayton Accords (1995), 470, 660
 de Baudricourt, Robert, 331
 de Braganca, Aquino, 186
 De Cew, John, 529
 de Cottani de Chalbur, Vera, 168
 de Deeker, Francois, 168
 de Gaulle, Charles, 192, 393
 de Gouges, Olympe, 183
 de Greef, Elvire (Tante Go), 147
 de Jesus y Alvarez, Gregoria, 558
 de Jongh, Andrée (Dédée), 147
 de Jongh, Frederic, 147
 de Jongh, Micheline, 147
 de Mericourt, Théroigne, 207
 De Pauw, Linda Grant, 286, 414
 de Pizan, Christine, 147–148, 332
 de Saint-Aulaire, Charles, 393
 de Tremoille, Georges, 332
 de Valera, Eamon, 310, 313 (photo), 395
 Dean, Teresa Howard, 561
Dear Fatherland, Rest Quietly (Bourke-White), 378
 death camp guards/personnel, XLII
See also specific women by name
 Deaton, Leoti, 617, 621
 Deavers, Bridget, 148–149
 Debeurgrave, Elisa, 197
 DeBoisgelin, Louis, 388–389
 Deborah, 330
 Decker, Evelyn, 352
- Defense Advisory Committee on Women in the Services (DACOWITS) (U.S.), 353
Défense de la France, 626
 d’Eglantine, Fabre, 208
 Dehmel, Richard, 344
 Dekalina, T. I., 545 (photo)
 del Rosario, Hilaria, 465
 Delacroix, Eugene
Liberty Leading the People, 392, 392 (illus)
The Massacre at Chios, XXXI, 252, 256 (illus)
 Delano, Jane Arminda, 149–150, 150 (photo)
 Delilah, 330
 Democratic Army of Greece (DAG), 253–254
 Democratic Front for the Liberation of Palestine, 21
 Democratic Republic of the Congo (DRC, formerly Zaire), 7, 509
 Deng Xiaoping, 177
 Deng Yingchao, 108, 110
 Deniken army, 431
 Denmark, 354
 Denny, Ludwell, 151
 Der-El-Zor, desert of, 30
 Derham, A. P., 93–94
 Deroin, Jeanne, 196–197
 Derry antiinternment rally (January 30, 1972), 151
 Desai, Moraji, 217
 Desert Shield, Operation, 266
 Desert Storm, Operation, 131, 266
 Despo, 255
 detention camps and internees, XLII
 camp sisters, 292
 German camps, 291–292
 Japanese interned in U.S. camps, 327–328
 Jehovah’s Witnesses in Nazi Germany, 329
See also specific camps; specific women by name
 Detzer, Dorothy, 150–151, 445

INDEX

- Deuell, Harvey, 295
 Deuell, Henrietta Eleanor
 Goodnough, 294–295
 Devlin, Bernadette, 151–152
 Dewey, Elizabeth, 529
 Dewey, George, 561
 Dexter, Mary, 382
 Dhanu, 584
 Dickmann, Otto, 447–448
Die Waffen nieder (Lay Down
 Your Arms) (Suttner),
 572
 Dien-Bien-Phu, Battle of, 209
 Dierks, Hilmar, 168
 dieticians, 405
 Dietrich, Marlene, 152–153
 Dilling, Elizabeth, 153–154,
 615
 Dillon, Dr., 313 (photo)
 Dinah, 330
 Ding Ling, 111
 Dinuzulu, 125–126
 diplomatic services, XLVII–XLVIII
 *See also specific services by
 name*
 dirty protests, 180
 Dirty War against civilians
 (Argentina), 22–24
 discipline, 244
 disguises, XXXIII
 *See also specific women by
 name*
 dive bombers, 182
 Dix, Dorothea, 54, 120,
 154–155, 154 (photo)
 Djilas, Milovan, XXXV
 Djukic, Slavoljub, 395
 Dmitriyevna Stassova, Yelena,
 507
 Dobrzanska-Kasprzak, Ida, 473
 Dolina, Mariia, 553
 Dolina-Mel'nikova, Mariia
 Ivanovna, 553
The Dollmaker (Arnow), 379
 Domestic Revolution (France),
 204
 Domontovich, Alexandra, 343
 Donato, Rosa, 532–533
 Dooley, John, 275–276
 d'Orléans, Louis-Philippe, 183
 Dorr, Rheta Childe, 58, 334
 Dorrian, Cecil, 334
 dos Santos, Juliana, 161
 Doty, Madeleine Zabriski, 334
 Double V campaign, 378
 Douglas, Adele, 259
 Douglas, Stephen, 259
 Douglas-Pennant, Violet, 155
 Dowbor-Musnicki, Jozef, 375
 Doyle, Mary, 644–645
 Doyrell-Browning, Muriel, 240
 Draenger, Justina. *See*
 Dawidson (Draenger),
 Justina
 Draenger, Shimon, 146–147
 DRC. *See* Democratic Republic
 of the Congo
 Dreyfus Affair, 634
 drivers, 594
 See also ambulance drivers
 Dromgoole, Will Allen,
 155–156
 Druze, 368
 Du Bois, Doug, 350
 du Castel, Étienne, 148
Dubuque Herald, 119
 Duchêne, Gabrielle, 304
 Dudayaev, Dzhokhar, 105
 Duemlein, Christine, 44
 Duff, Peggy, 97
 Dufour, Jacques, 574
 Dufour, Maurice, 73
 Dugan, Joyce, 107
 Duggan, E., 313 (photo)
 Dulinsky, Barbara, XXVIII
 Dumas, Alexandre, 456
 Duncker, Käte, 223
 Dunn, James, 55
 Durgautti (Durgawati) of
 Gurrah (Gondwana),
 XXXI, 298
 Durova, Nadezhda Andreyevna,
 156–157, 503, 505
 Dustin Island, 158
 Duston, Hannah, 157–158
 Duston, Martha, 157
 Duston, Thomas, 157
 Dutch Resistance, XLVI,
 520–521, 647
 Dwyer, Michael, 645
 Dyer, Nellie, 353
 Dylan, Bob, 44
 Dzhunkovskaia-Markova, Galina
 Ivanovna, 189, 553
 EA. *See* Ethniki Allilegyi
 Eagle Hut, 654
 EAM. *See* Ethniko
 Apeleftherotiko Metopo
 Earley, Charity Adams,
 159–160
 East African Association, 399
 East London Federation of
 Suffragettes (ELF),
 452–453
 East Pakistan, 217
 East Prussia, 229
 East Side Defense Council, 497
 East Timor, 160–161
 Easter Rising, 232, 310–311,
 312
 Eastern Abenaki, 157
 Ebert, Friedrich, 386
 Eckes, Christa, 44
 Eddy, Mary Baker, 340
 Edmonds, Sarah Emma, 117,
 161–162, 172
 EDSNN. *See* Ejército Defensor
 de la Soberanía
 Nacional de
 Nicaragua
 Edwardian cultural norms, 273
 EGP. *See* Guerrilla Army of the
 Poor
 Egypt
 Arab-Israeli wars, 20
 Cleopatra VII, 123–124,
 213, 258, 494
 Fourth Syrian War, 258
 Gulf War (1990–1991),
 266–267
 revolt against Turks, 63
 War of Attrition, 407
 Eichmann, Adolph, 220
 Einsatzgruppen (Special Action
 Groups) (Germany),
 162–163, 163 (photo),
 495
 Eisenhower administration, 264
 Ejército de Liberación Nacional
 (ELN) (National
 Liberation Army)
 (Colombia), 126–127

INDEX

- Ejército Defensor de la Soberanía Nacional de Nicaragua (EDSNN, Army in Defense of the National Sovereignty of Nicaragua), 426
- Ejército Rebelde (Rebel Army) (Cuba), 281
- Ekstein, Lisa, 187
- El Paso, Texas, 72
- El Paso Morning Times*, 294
- El Paso Times*, 334
- El Salvador, 163–165, 265
- ELAS. *See* Ellinikos Laikos Apeleftherotikos Stratos
- Eleanor of Aquitaine, 133–134, 165–166
- Eleonora, 565
- ELF. *See* East London Federation of Suffragettes
- Elizabeth I, 75
- Ellinikos Laikos Apeleftherotikos Stratos (ELAS; Greek People's Liberation Army), 249–250
- Elliot, Enid, 382
- ELN. *See* Ejército de Liberación Nacional
- Elsie Inglis Memorial Maternity Hospital, 302
- emancipation, 508
- Emergency Peace Campaign, 151
- Emerson, Gloria, 166–167
- Emilia Plater Independent Women's Battalion (Poland), 230, 469, 474–476
- Employment of Women Order (1942) (Britain), 246
- Emslie, Isabel. *See* Hutton, Lady Isabel Galloway
- End Conscription Campaign, 66
- Endell Street Military Hospital (London, England), 19
- Engel, Regula, 167–168
- Engel von Langwies, Florian, 167
- England
- siege of Orleans, France, 331–332
- Wexford rising, 644–645
- See also* Great Britain; United Kingdom
- England, Lynndie, xxxvi
- English, Ada, 312
- Eniaias Panelladikis Organosis Neon (EPON; United Panhellenic Organization of Youth) (Greece), 249
- ENSA. *See* Entertainment National Service Association
- Ensslin, Gudrun, 43–44, 485
- entertainers, XLII
- Spanish-American War, 654
- See also specific women by name*
- Entertainment National Service Association (ENSA), 34
- Época*, 374
- EPON. *See* Eniaias Panelladikis Organosis Neon
- Equal Pay Committee, 567
- Eriksen, Vera (aka Vera de Cottani de Chalbur), 168
- Eritrea, xxxvi, 169–170
- Eritrean Liberation Front, 169 (photo)
- Ermelin, Claude, 35
- Ernst, Barbara, 44
- Erleben, Father, 52
- Esayan, Zapel, 30
- Eshkol, Levi, 407
- Eskimo Scouts, 170–171
- Espín Guillois, Vilma, 171–172
- Espionage Act (U.S.), 604
- Estaban y de la Cruz, Agueda, 465
- ETA. *See* Euskadi ta Askatasuna
- Etheridge, Anna, xxxiii, 172–173
- Etheridge, James, 172
- Ethiopia
- Eritrean struggle for independence from, xxxvi, 169–170
- Italian invasion of, 453
- ethnic attacks, XLII
- Balkan Wars, 51
- See also specific ethnic groups, attacks by name*
- ethnic cleansing, 658–659
- Ethniki Allilegyi (EA; National Solidarity) (Greece), 249
- Ethniko Apeleftherotiko Metopo (EAM; National Liberation Front) (Greece), 249–250, 252–253
- Etienne, Eugene, 634
- Etruscans, 494
- Eugenie, 261
- Euripides, 279
- Europe in the Spring* (Luce), 383
- European Convention on Human Rights, 180
- European Court of Human Rights, 180
- Eurydice, 257–258
- Euskadi ta Askatasuna (ETA), 583
- evacuation hospitals, 439, 442
- Evrard, Just, 417–418
- Executive Order 9066 (Roosevelt), 327, 364
- Exemplary Women's Platoons (ELAS) (Greece), 250
- Expeditionary Forces (Britain), 401, 439–440
- Expeditionary Forces (French Union), 209
- Expeditionary Forces (U.S.), xxvii, 175, 294
- Hello Girls, 603
- World War I nurses, 439
- experimentation, biological warfare, 65
- Fa Mu Lan, 112
- facilitators, XL
- See also specific women by name*
- Fairchild, Helen, 175–176, 176 (photo)
- Faisal, 63

INDEX

- Faith, Don C., 619
 Falange, 557–558
 Falck, Ernst, 530
 Falklands War, 75, 176–177
 Fallaci, Edoardo, 177
 Fallaci, Oriana, 177–178
 Fanon, Frantz, 10
 Fantastiks, 640
 FANY. *See* First Aid Nursing
 Yeomanry
 FAR. *See* Revolutionary Armed
 Forces
 Farabundo Martí National
 Liberation Front
 (Frente Farabundo
 Martí para la Liberación
 Nacional, FMLN) (El
 Salvador), 163–164
 FARC. *See* Fuerzas Armadas
 Revolucionarios de
 Colombia
 Fareynigte Partizaner
 Organizatsie (FPO;
 United Partisan
 Organization), 339, 346
 Farmborough, Florence,
 178–179
 Farrell, Mairead, 179–180
 Farwell, Mildred, 334
 fascism
 German resistance against,
 187–188
 Italian Resistance against,
 318–320
 in Norway, 438
 Spanish antifascism, 297
 in U.S. literature, 378
 Fatah, al-, 314
 Fawcett, Henry, 180
 Fawcett, Millicent, 180–181,
 181 (photo), 235, 288
 Fazquez, Fabio, 126
 FBI. *See* Federal Bureau of
 Investigation
 FDLR. *See* Forces
 Démocratiques de
 Liberation de Rwanda
 Fede nuova (New Faith), 321
 Federal Bureau of Investigation
 (FBI) (U.S.), 327
 Federal Works Agency (U.S.),
 606
 Federation of Cuban Women,
 171
 Federation of German Women's
 Associations (BDF),
 224–225
 Federation of South African
 Women, 66
 Federici, Ricardo, 463
 Fedutenko, Nadezhda
 Nikiforovna, 181–182,
 182 (photo), 539
 Feiffer, Jules, 190
 Fellowship of Reconciliation,
 293
 Felstiner, Mary Lowenthal, 290
 female holy warriors
 (*mujahedat*), 308
 female samurai, 326
femme au foyer (mistress of the
 home), 204–205
 Ferdinand, 393
 Ferdinand, Franz, 536–537
 Ferdinand VII, 5–6
 Fernández, Rosario, 135
 Fernig, Félicité, 183, 207
 Fernig, Théophile, 183, 207
 Fianna (Warriors), 394
Fianna Eireann, 313
 Fianna Fáil (Warriors of
 Destiny), 395
 Field, John, 578
 field hospitals
 First Serbian-English Field
 Hospital, 566
 Scottish Women's Hospitals
 (SWH), 64, 277–278,
 295, 300–303, 341,
 501
 World War I, 439
 Figgis, Farrell, 313 (photo)
 Fighting French Relief, 418
Filiki Etaireia (Society of
 Friends) (Greece), 255
 Filipinas, 558
 Filipino Republic, Army of the,
 465
 filmmaking, 112, 603
 Final Solution, xxxii
See also Holocaust
 Finnish Defense Forces
 Lotta Svärd, 184–185
 White Civil Guards, 184
 Finnish War of 1808–1809, 184
 Finnish War of 1941–1944, 184
 Finnish Women's Welfare
 Association (Naisten
 Huoltosäätiö), 185
 Fiocca, Henri, 637
 First, Heloise Ruth, 186–187
 First Aid Nursing Yeomanry
 (FANY) (Britain), 243,
 373, 425, 503, 637
 reorganization for overseas
 service, 402
 training, 574
 First Michigan Cavalry, 148
 First Serbian-English Field
 Hospital, 566
 Fish, Mildred, 355
 Fittko, Hans, 187–188
 Fittko, Lisa, 187–188
 Fitzgerald, Charles, 449
 FitzGibbon, James, 529
 Fleming, Margaret (Zane),
 350–351
 Fletcher, John, 75
 Fletcher, Walter, 333
 flight nurses, 443
 Florence Nightingale Medal,
 554
 Flying Ambulance Column, 598
 Flying Tigers, 383
 FMLN. *See* Frente Farabundo
 Martí para la Liberación
 Nacional
 Foley, Ruth, 66
 Fomicheva-Levashova, Klavdiia
 Iakovlevna, 188–189,
 553
 Fon society, 141
 Fonda, Jane, 189–190
 Fontenoy, Battle of, 245
 Food Facts Library, 603
 forced labor
 American Civil War slave
 women, 117
 in Nazi Germany, 191
 slave labor, 221

INDEX

- See also* sex slavery
- Forces Démocratiques de
Liberation de Rwanda
(FDLR), 510
- Ford, Ann, 644–645
- Ford, Gerald, 590
- Ford, Henry, 49
- Forever Amber* (Winsor), 379
- Forgotten War, 77
- Foringer, Alonzo E., 488
- Forrest, Nathan Bedford, 140,
416
- Fort, Cornelia, 577
- Fort Randolph siege, 434
- Forward, John, 637
- Foundation of Mother's Day,
323
- Four Freedom posters, 477
- Fourcade, Marie-Madeleine,
191–192, 193
- Fourcaud, Pierre, 418
- Four-Minute Men, 603
- Fourth Syrian War, 258
- FPO. *See* Fareynigte Partizaner
Organizatsie
- France, 68
- Algerian War of National
Liberation, 9–11
- Amazon battalions, 208
- cantinières* (dispensers of
drink), 632–634
- Corps des Surveillantes
Auxiliares (Corps of
Auxiliary Inspectors),
205
- Domestic Revolution, 204
- Dreyfus Affair, 634
- Expeditionary Forces, 209
- femme au foyer* (mistress of
the home), 204–205
- First French Empire, 229
- Free France, 393, 594
- German occupation of, 205
- Gulf War (1990–1991),
266–267
- Hello Girls, 279–280
- invasion of Algeria, 633
- Italian Campaign, 229
- June Days (1848), 196–197
- Korean War, 354
- Legion of Honor, 229
- Lowther-Hackett ambulance
unit, 288, 382
- Marianne, 392, 392 (illus)
- marraines de guerre* (war
godmothers), 200, 202
- Married Women's Work act,
205
- Mothers Day, 204
- munitioinettes*, 201–202
- National Guard, 411
- National Revolution, 204
- nuclear weapons testing, 382
- Oradour-sur-Glane massacre,
447–448, 448 (photo)
- Orleans liberation from
English siege, 331–332
- Paris Commune, 454–456
- Peninsular War, 229
- psychological impact of
World War I on women
in, 199–200
- regulation of prostitution,
205
- Resistance against Germany.
See French Resistance
- Revolution (1789-1799),
xxxvi, 183, 207–208,
632
- Revolution (1848),
195–197
- sans-culotterie*, 207
- Scottish Women's Hospital
(SWH) service, 301
- Three Year Law, 634
- Two Year Law, 634
- U.S. aid to, 418
- U.S. nurses in World War I,
439
- Valençay SOE Memorial, 48
- Vichy France, 205, 393
- Vietnamese resistance
against, 631
- vivandières* (dispensers of
food), 632–634, 633
(photo)
- Wars of Religion, 197–198
- women's clubs, 208
- women's suffrage movement,
195–196, 203
- World War I homefront,
200–204, 201 (photo)
- World War II homefront,
204–206
- World War II radio operators,
340
- France, Battle of, 71
- France Fights, 418
- Franceschini, Carlo, 487
- Franco, Francisco, 178, 297,
556–558
- Franco-Prussian War, 199, 411,
415
- Paris Commune, 454–456
- vivandières* (dispensers of
food), 633
- Frank, Anne, 206–207
- Frank, Edith, 206–207
- Frank, Margot, 206
- Frank, Otto, 206
- Frank País underground, 171
- Frankfurt am Main, 223
- Fraser, Helen Isabella Charlotte,
268
- Frauenschaften (Women's
Organization)
(Germany), 525
- Frauenwerk (Women's Work),
525
- Frazer's Regiment of Marines,
536
- Fredericka, 253
- Free France, 393, 594
- Freikorps, 223
- Freisler, Roland, 52
- French Foreign Legion, 594
- French Provisional Assembly
(Algiers), 418
- French Red Cross, 594
- French Resistance, xlvi, 95–96,
192–195, 272
- Acrobat network, 502
- Alliance or Noah's Ark
network, 192–193
- Brutus network, 418
- Burgundian network, 538
- Défense de la France*, 626
- Historian network, 493
- Inventor network, 373
- Jewish wing, 446

INDEX

- French Resistance (*cont.*)
 Jockey network, 234, 372
 Liberation of the North
 network, 417
 Maquis, 194, 194 (photo),
 637, 650–651
 Monk network, 470–471
 Musée de l'homme (Museum
 of Man), 588
 PAT escape line, 144
 Prosper network, 446
 radio operations, 340
 radio operators, 131
 Scarlet Pimpernel of World
 War II, 637
 Shipwright group, 651
 Stationer network, 425,
 650–651
 in U.S. literature, 377–378
 Wrestler network, 651
- French Revolution (1789-1799),
 xxxvi, 183, 632
 impact on women's protest,
 207–208
- French Revolution (1848),
 195–197
- French Underground. *See*
 French Resistance
- Frente Farabundo Martí para la
 Liberación Nacional
 (FMLN) (Farabundo
 Martí National
 Liberation Front) (El
 Salvador), 163–164
- Frente Sandinista de Liberación
 (FSLN, Sandinista
 Front of National
 Liberation), 426
- Friang, Brigitte, 209
- From Here to Eternity* (Jones),
 377
- frontier fighters, XLII
 wives of soldiers, 209–211
*See also specific women by
 name*
- Fry, Varian, 188
- FSLN. *See* Frente Sandinista de
 Liberación
- FTA (“Fox Trot Alpha,” “Free
 the Army,” “Fun, Travel,
 and Adventure”) shows,
 190
- Fuchs, Klaus, 497
- Fuerzas Armadas
 Revolucionarias de
 Colombia (FARC)
 (Revolutionary Armed
 Forces of Colombia),
 126–127, 127 (photo)
- Fujimori, Alberto, 462
- Fujinoye, 326
- Fuld, Bracha, 211–212
- Fulton, John, 212
- Fulton, Sarah Bradlee, 212
- Fulvia, 212–213, 213 (photo),
 494
- Furse, Charles Wellington, 213
- Furse, Lady Katherine Symonds,
 155, 213–214, 239,
 248
- Gaddafi, Muammar Muhammad
 al-, 177
- Gage, Frances, 55
- Gahan, Stirling, 100–101
- Gaidiliu, 77
- Gaitán, Jorge Eliécer, 126
- Galacia Waffen (SS), 490
- Galla Placidia, 215–216
- Gallagher, Wes, 371
- The Gallery* (Burn), 377
- Gallifet, Gaston A. A. Marquis
 de, 634
- GAM. *See* Mutual Support
 Society
- Gandhi, Feroze, 216
- Gandhi, Indira, 177, 216–218
- Gandhi, Rajiv, xxxvi, 216, 218,
 580–581, 584
- Gandhi, Sanjay, 216–217
- Gandhi, Sonia, 218
- Gannett, Robert, 515
- Garibaldi, Anita, 218–219, 219
 (illus)
- Garibaldi, Giuseppe, 218–219
- Garlinska, Eileen, 472
- Garrett, Louise, 180
- Garrett, Millicent, 180
- Garrett (Anderson), Elizabeth,
 180
- Gaskell, Elizabeth, 430
- Gautier, Jacqueline, 503
- Gavin, James, 152
- Gay, Désirée, 196–197
- Gedankbläh für Karl Liebknecht*
 (Memorial for Karl
 Liebknecht) (Kollwitz),
 344
- Geilmans, Hester, 528
- Gelfman, Gesia, xxxvi
- Gellhorn, Martha, 220–221,
 378
- Gel’lman, Polina Vladimirovna,
 552
- General Federation of Iraqi
 Women, 307
- General Union of Iraqi Women
 (GUIW), 307
- General Union of Palestinian
 Women, 20
- Geneva Convention, 56
- genocide
 Armenian Holocaust, 26–28
 Armenian women victims of,
 29–31
 first of twentieth century, 280
 of Herero of Namibia, 280
 Holocaust, xxxii, 290–292,
 378
 in Rwanda, 508–511
 in Sudan, 569–570
- Genthe, Arnold, 362
- Geo*, 408
- George, David Lloyd, 237
- George V, 65, 449
- George VI, 551
- Georgia, 579
- Gérard, Georgette, 194
- Gerike, Heinrich, 64
- German Armed Forces
 (Bundeswehr), 221
- German Armed Forces
 (Wehrmacht)
 Das Reich SS Armored
 Division, 447–448
- Einsatzgruppen (Special
 Action Groups),
 162–163, 163 (photo),
 495
- Galacia Waffen (SS), 490

INDEX

- loyalty to Hitler, 221
 Oradour-sur-Glane massacre (France), **447–448**
 Waffen-SS (Der Führer), **447–448**
 World War II atrocities, **221–222**
- German Communist Party (KPD), 223, 386
 German Military Red Cross, 505
 German Protestantism, 586
 German Radio Service, 39
 German Red Cross, 645
 German Resistance, XLVI, 342, 415, 428, 525
 antifascist, 187–188
 Harro Schulze-Boysen, 585
 German Revolution (1918–1919), **222–224**
 German Southwest Africa. *See* Namibia
 German-American Bund, 153, 425
 Germanic invasion of Roman Empire, 215
 Germanization of children, 376
 Germany, 227–228
 Baader-Meinhof Gang, 583
 British declaration of war on, 237
 Bund deutscher Mäde (League of German Girls), 261
 Bureau Concordia system, 359
 collaboration during occupation of Norway, **438–439**
 collaborators, 360
 concentration camps, 291–292
 Czech Resistance against, 271
 English voice of, 360
 forced labor in, **191**
 Frauenschaft (Women's Organization), 525
 Frauenwerk (Women's Work), 525
- French Resistance against, **192–195**
 German Resistance against, XLVI, 342, 415, 428, 525, 585
 German resistance against fascism, 187–188
 intermarriage of Jews and German gentiles, **498–500**
 invasion and occupation of Belgium, **60–62**, 62 (illus)
 invasion of the Netherlands, 206, 647
 invasion of Poland, 221–222
 invasion of Soviet Union, 222, 543
 Investiture Contest, 398
 Jehovah's Witnesses in, **329**
 Jewish resistance against, 146–147, 187–188, 339–340, 346
 Jewish women during Holocaust in, **290–292**
 July 1944 bomb plot, 228
 June Second Movement, 583
 Lidice massacre, **376**
 National Labor Service, 523–524
 National Pension Law, 593
 occupation of France, 205
 occupation of Greece, 249–252
 occupation of the Netherlands, 647
 occupation of Norway, 435–437, **438–439**
 radio propaganda, 359
 rape by Red Army in World War II, xxxii, **479–481**
 Red Army Faction (RAF), xxxvi, 583
 Red Zora, 583
 regulation of prostitution, 205
 Reichs Rundfunk radio station, 359
 repression of Herero of Namibia, **280–281**
- resistance against, 275
 Roma/Sinti, **495**
 Rosenstrasse Protest, 228
 Schlieffen Plan, 647
 Sicherheit einst (SD, Nazi Security Service), 522–523
 Soviet invasion of, 229
 sympathizers, 413
 Third Reich, 499
 Thirty Years' War, **586–587**
trümmerfrauen (rubble women), **596–597**, 596 (photo)
 Turnip Winter, 226
 U.S. invasion and occupation of, 378
 Vaterländische Frauenverein (Union of Women of the Fatherland) (Kaiserin's [Empress's] army), 225
 view of women, 290
 Weimar Constitution, 224
 Weimar Republic, 223–224
 World War I, 223–224
 World War I atrocities, 221
 World War I homefront, **224–226**
 World War II homefront, **227–229**
 Gestapo, 222, 228
 Rosenstrasse Protest against, **498–500**
- Gezo, 141
 Ghana, 492
 Ghesquière, Virginie, **229–230**
G.I. Nightingale (Archer), 377
 Gia Long, 631
 Gibraltar Three, 180
 Gibson, Hugh, 60, 101
 Gibson, Winnie, 352
 Gierczak, Emilia, **230–231**, 476
 Gies, Miep, 206–207
 Gifford, Grace, 311
 Gil, Elena, 135
 Gilchrist, Helen, 528
 Gillars, Mildred Elizabeth, **39–40**, 39 (photo)
 Giorgi III, 579

INDEX

- Girl Guides, 239, 472
 Girls' Battalion (Sudanese People's Liberation Army), 570
 Gizycki, Jerzy, 233, 473
 Gizycki, Krystyna Skarbek (Christine Granville, pseud.), 233–234
 Glass, Vera, 373
 Glorious Revolution (Scotland), 527–528
 Gobert, Maurice, 464
 Godoy, Rosario, 265
 Goebbels, Joseph, 152, 229, 495, 499
 Goergens, Irene, 43–44, 485
 Goering, Hermann, 491, 524
 Goethe, Johann Wolfgang von, 255
 Golding, Samuel, 245
 Goldman, Emma, 604
 Goldstein, Vida, 231
 Gonne, Iseult, 232
 Gonne, Maud, 232, 394
 Gonne, Thomas, 232
 Good Friday Accords, 152, 419, 602
Good Housekeeping, 334
 Goodenough, E. M. (Angela), 248
 Goodman, Bergdorf, 125
 Goodnough, Henrietta Eleanor, 294, 333–334
 Gorbachev, Mikhail, 552
 Gotthold, Helene, 329
 Gouün, Jules Edouard, 301
 Gould, Helen, 559
 Gould, Jay, 559
 Goussery, Anne, 197
 governmental figures, XLII
 See also specific women by name
 Goyon, Marie, 196
 Gozen, Tomoe, 326
 Grajales, José, 233
 Grajales, Mariana, 135, 516
 Grajales Cuello (also Coehlo), Mariana, 233
 Grandmothers of Plaza de Mayo (Argentina), 26
 Grant, Ulysses S., 121, 172, 404, 625
 Granville, Christine, pseud. (Krystyna Skarbek Gizycki), 233–234, 234 (photo)
 Grashof, Manfred, 486
 Gray, Zane, 663
 Gray Ladies, 608
 Great Britain
 1st Parachute Regiment, 151
 army. *See* Royal Army
 Auxiliary Military Service (AMS), 246–247
 Bill of Rights March, 277
 Boer War, 181, 286–287
 civil war war widows and refugees (1640s), 527–529
 Easter Rising, 310–311, 312
 Employment of Women Order (1942), 246
 Expeditionary Forces, 401, 439–440
 Good Friday Accords, 419
 Home Guard, 246
 Home Guard Auxiliaries, 572
 Korean War, 354
 Local Defense Volunteers, 246
 Mau Mau rebellion, 398–401
 Ministry of Information, 247
 National Service Act, 242, 246
 National Togetherness campaign, 247
 National Union of Women's Suffrage Societies (NUWSS), 181, 235, 300–301
 navy. *See* Royal Navy
 Restoration of Employment Order (1941), 246
 Royal Flying Corps, 239
 social impact of World War I on women, 235–236
 Soldiers', Sailors' and Airmen's Families Association (SSAFA), 269
 Special Air Services (SAS), 179
 Special Operations Executive (SOE), 243, 340, 372–373, 425–426, 502–503
 Suffragettes (Women's Social and Political Union—WSPU), 235
 Suffragists (National Union of Women's Suffrage Societies—NUWSS), 235
 Union of Fascists, 413
 Voluntary Aid Detachments (VADs), 85, 213–214, 236, 239, 240 (photo)
 War of Spanish Succession, 244–245
 War Service for Women campaign, 237
 war with Ireland, 312–314
 women in service in 17th, 18th, and early 19th centuries, 244–245
 women in service in World War I, 237–241
 women in service in World War II, 241–244
 Women's Emergency Corps (WEC), 33, 113, 237, 277
 Women's Home Defence Corps (WHD), 571–572
 Women's Hospital Corps (WHC), 18
 Women's Legion, 237
 Women's Reserve Ambulance Corps, 277
 Women's Volunteer Force, 237
 Women's Volunteer Reserve, 277
 Women's Volunteer Service (WVS), 246
 World War II homefront, 246–248
 See also United Kingdom
 Great Cattle Killing, 433–434

INDEX

- Great Cherokee Children
Massacre, 107
- Great Depression, 220
- Great Inflation, 593
- Great Northwest Conspiracy,
415
- Great Rebellion of 1780-1782
(Andean Rebellion),
15–18
- Great Revolt of 1936–1939
(Palestine), 19–20
- Greater East Asia War campaign
(Japan), 324
- Greater Japan Allied Women’s
Society, 323
- Greater Japan National Defense
Women’s Association,
323
- Greater Japan Women’s
Association (Dainihon
Fujin Kai), 324–325
- Greater Japan Young Women’s
Association, 323
- Greece
Albanian war, 252
Amazons, 12–13
in antiquity, 256–258
Balkan Wars, 50
Commissioned Ladies of the
Queen’s Fund, 253
Coordination Committee of
Seven Cooperating
Unions, 254
Democratic Army of Greece
(DAG), 253–254
Ellinikos Laikos
Apeleftherotikos Stratos
(ELAS; Greek People’s
Liberation Army), 249
Eniaias Panelladikis
Organosis Neon
(EPON; United
Panhellenic
Organization of Youth),
249
Ethniki Allilegyi (EA;
National Solidarity),
249
Ethniko Apeleftherotiko
Metopo (EAM;
National Liberation
Front), 249–250,
252–253
female imagery in warfare,
251–252
feminine character of, 251
first woman minister of, 254
German, Italian, and
Bulgarian occupation
of, 249–251, 252–253
Korean War, 354
League for Women’s Rights,
253–254
League of Greek Women
Scientists, 253
The Massacre at Chios
(Delacroix), xxxi, 252,
256 (illus)
National Council, 250
Scottish Women’s Hospital
(SWH) service,
300–302, 341
Greek Civil War (1946–1949),
252, 253–254
Greek Federation of Women’s
Unions, 254
Greek People’s Liberation Army
(Ellinikos Laikos
Apeleftherotikos
Stratos, ELAS),
249–250
Greek Resistance, XLVI,
249–251
Greek Revolution (1821–1830),
217, 251, 255–256
Greene, Catharine Littlefield
(Caty), 258–259
Greene, Nathanael, 258–259,
396
Greenglass, David, 497
Greenglass, Ethel, 497
Greenglass, Tessie, 498
Greenham Common air base,
98
Greenham Common Women,
97–98
Greenhow, Robert, 259
Greenhow, Rose O’Neale,
259–261, 259 (photo)
Gregory VII, 398
- Grenada, 364
Grenadier Squaw, 434–435
Grese, Irma, 261–262, 484
Gressart, Perrinet, 332
Grey, Betsy, 644
Grey, James, 245, 536
Grey, Sir George, 434
Grey Ranks (Poland), 472
Greyhound, 78
Gridnev, Aleksander, 550
Griffith, Ann, 527
Griffiths, Arthur, 313 (photo)
Grizodubova, Valentina
Stepanovna, 262, 387,
483, 551, 555 (photo)
Grobas, Mordecai, 362
Groover, Gordon Lewis, 87
Groover, Mary-Agnes Brown, 87
Grossman, Chaika, 263
Groupe Féministe Socialiste
(Socialist Feminist
League), 520
Guangxi Province Women’s
Brigade, 111
Guardia Nacional (Nicaragua),
426
The Guardian, 220
Guatemala
civil conflict in, 263–265,
365
Guerrilla Army of the Poor
(EGP), 264–265
Mutual Support Society
(GAM), 265
Organization of People in
Arms (OPRA), 265
Peasant Unity Committee
(CUC), 265
Revolutionary Armed Forces
(FAR), 264
Self-Defense Patrols, 265
Ten Years of Spring, 264
Guatemalan Labor Party (PGT),
264, 266
Guatemalan National
Revolutionary Unity
(URNG), 266
Gubbins, Colin, 473
Guddorf, William, 90
Güemes, Martín, 40

INDEX

- Guerisse, Albert, 144
 Guerrier, Edith, 603
 Guerrilla Army of the Poor
 (EGP) (Guatemala),
 264–265
 guerrillas, XLII
 in Algeria, 633
 *The Concept of the Urban
 Guerrilla* (Baader-
 Meinhof Gang), 43
 in Latin America, 364–367
 Mau Mau rebellion,
 398–401
 Nicaragua, 426–427
 Peninsular War, 423
 Vietnamese, 631
 *See also specific women by
 name*
 Guevara, Ernesto (Che), 95,
 134–136, 365–366,
 519
 Guild, Betty, 577
 GUIW. *See* General Union of
 Iraqi Women
 Gulf War (1990–1991), 131,
 266–267
 impact on women of Iraq,
 306–310
 media coverage, 370–371
 Operation Desert Shield, 266
 Operation Desert Storm,
 131, 266
 protests against, 308
 Royal Australian Army
 Nursing Corps
 (RAANC), 38
 Guljamal-Khan(um), 267–268
 gunpowder girls, 500
 Guomindang or Kuomingtang
 (KMT), 108–110, 111
 (photo), 421–422
 Gusmao, Kirsty Sword, 161
 Gusmao, Xanana, 161
 Gustavus Adolphus, 586
 Guzmán Reynoso, Abimael, 461
 Gwynne-Vaughan, Helen, 155,
 268–269
 Gwynne-Vaughan, T. G., 268
 Gypsies (Roma/Sinti), 228,
 495–496
 H-21, 397
 Haakon VII, 435
 Haarlemse Raad van Verzet
 (RVV, Haarlem
 Resistance Council),
 520–521
 Haas, Elena, 271
 Haas-Heye, Libertas, 525
 Habyarimana, Juvenal, 509
 Hackett, Norah, 382
 Hackett-Lowther ambulance
 unit, 288, 382
 Haganah, 211, 316, 490
 Hague Conference, 646
 Hague Peace Conference,
 573
 Haig, Sir Douglas, 417
 Halasi, Janos, 573
 Hall, Joseph, 645
 Hall, Virginia, 271–273, 272
 (photo)
 Hall, William, 282
 Hallows, Geoffrey, 518
 Halsey, William F., 496
 Hamas, 20, 314–315
 Hamilton, Alexander, 258
 Hamilton, Alice, 402
 Hamilton, Cicely Marie,
 273–275
 Hamilton, William, 528
 Hammill, Cecil, 273
 Hamrick, Tom A., 350–351
 Hanbury, Jock, 458
 Hancock, Joy Bright, 352
 Hangaku, 326
 Hardinge, Samuel Wylde
 (Wilde), Jr., 78–79
 Harmindar Sahib (Golden
 Temple) (Amritsar,
 India), 218
 Harnack, Arvid, 90, 275, 355
 Harnack-Fish, Mildred, 90,
 275, 525
 Harnoss, Martha, 593
 Harper, Florence, 334
 Harper, Frances E. W., 561
 Harris, Corra, 334
 Harris, David V., 45
 Harro Schulze-Boysen, 585
 Hart, Benjamin, 275
 Hart, Nancy (1735–1830),
 275–276, 276 (illus)
 Hart, Nancy (ca. 1841–ca.
 1902), 276–277
 Hashim, Fawzia, 169
 Hashomer, 316
 HaShomer HaTzair (Jewish
 Self-Defense/Jewish
 Armed Group) (Young
 or Youth Guard), 263,
 339, 346, 362, 490
 Haskell, Ruth, 377
 Hasket, Caroline, 247
 Hasselaer, Kenau, xxxi
 Haule-Frimpong, Eva Sybille,
 44
Hausfrau (housewife), 597
 Haverfield, Evelina, 277–278
 Haverfield, Henry, 277
 “Haw Haw,” Lady (Margaret
 Cairns Joyce), 359–360
 “Haw Haw,” Lord, 359
 Hawes, Elizabeth, 377
 Hawthorne, Nathaniel, 158
 Hayden, Tom, 190
 Hayes, Rutherford B., 625
 Hays, Mary, 13
 Hays, Mary Ludwig, 414 (illus)
 H-Block Committee, 152
 Hearst, Patricia, 583
 Hearst, William Randolph, 424,
 615
 Heavren, Rose M., 559
 Hebrew women of antiquity,
 329–331
 “Hedgehog.” *See* Fourcade,
 Marie-Madeleine
Heike Monogatari (Tale of the
 Heike), 326
Heim og Ætt (Home and Kin),
 438
 Heissmeyer, August, 524
 Helbing, Monika, 44
 Helen of Troy, 278–279
 Heller, Andre, 335
 Heller, Joseph, 377
 Hello Girls, 279–280, 603
Helmets and Lipstick (Haskell),
 377
 Hemingway, Ernest, 220

INDEX

- Hendrik, Duke of Mechlenburg-Schwerin, 647
- Hennis, Anne, 46
- Henry II, 166
- Henry IV, 198, 398
- Henry VII, 148
- Heracles, 12
- Herbert, Sidney, 429
- Herero, repression of, 280–281
- Hernández Rodríguez del Rey, Melba, xxxv, 135–136, 281–282, 519
- Heroes of the Russian Federation (HRF), 552
- Heroes of the Soviet Union (HSU), 551–556
- heroic imagery in Greek warfare, 251–252
- heroine cults, 257
- heroine mothers, 19
- Herrera, Francisca, 17
- Hersey, John, 377
- Herve, German violence against civilians in, 61
- Herzegovina, 470, 658
- Hessel, Phoebe, 245
- Hessel, Thomas, 245
- Heydrich, Reinhard, 162, 376, 522
- Heymann, Lida Gustav, 223, 304
- Hezbollah, 314
- Higgins (Hall), Marguerite, 282, 353
- the Highest and Most Venerated Association of the Sons and Daughters of the Land (Kataastaasan Kagalang-galang na Katipunan nang manga Anak ng Bayan, the Association), 464–467, 465
- The Hiker* (Kitson), 561
- Himmler, Heinrich, xxxii, 162, 495, 524, 588
- Himple, Helmut, 585
- Hindus, 337–338
- Hindustan, 298
- Hinsdale, Jane, 172
- Hippolyta, 12
- Hiroshima, U.S. bombing of, xxxiv, 283–284
- Hiroshima Maidens, 283–284
- Hirsch, Ilse, 284
- His Human Majesty* (Boyle), 378
- Hissfeld, Alma, 593
- Histadrut, 406
- Historian network, 493
- Hitler, Adolf, 227, 491
- alliance with Mussolini, 319
- and Eva Braun, 80, 81 (photo)
- and Eva Maria Buch, 90
- and Gertrud Scholtz-Klink, 524
- and intermarriage of Jews and German gentiles, 499
- July 1944 bomb plot against, 228
- loyalty to, 221, 335
- suicide of, 80–81
- and Traudl Junge, 334–335
- view of women, 290
- Hitler Youth, 284, 524
- Hlubi people, 125
- HMS *Haslemere*, 333
- Hobby, Oveta Culp, 86, 284–286, 285 (photo), 611, 619
- Hobby, William P., 284
- Hobhouse, Emily, 181, 286–288
- Hobhouse, Leonard, 286
- Hobson, Bulmer, 394
- Hodges, Katherine, 288, 382
- Hoffmann, Heinrich, 80
- Hofmännin, Black, 460
- Hoge, Abraham, 289
- Hoge, Jane Currie Blaikie, 289–290, 380
- Hogefeld, Birgit, 44
- Hojo, Masaki, 326
- Holcomb, Thomas, 568
- Holloway, Edith, 277–278, 302
- Holocaust, xxxii
- Armenian Holocaust, 26–28
- Jewish women during, 290–292
- U.S. literature of, 378
- Holocaust education, 346
- Holocaust victims, XLII
- See also specific women by name*
- Holofernes, xxxvi, 329–330
- Holtby, Winifred, 85–86
- Holy Roman Empire
- Peasants' War, 459–460
- Thirty Years' War, 586–587
- holy warriors, female
- (*mujahedat*), 308
- Home Army (Poland), 471–473
- Home before Morning: The True Story of an Army Nurse in Vietnam* (Van Devanter), 623
- Home Front (Japan), 323–325
- Home Guard (Britain), 246, 571
- Home Guard Auxiliaries (Britain), 572
- Homer, 278–279
- Honorius, 215
- Hooks, Charles, 172
- Hoover, Herbert, 1–2, 202, 603
- hoplites, 256
- Hospital Corps (DAR), 403, 591
- Hospital of Friendship (Adinkerke, Belgium), 46
- hospital ships, 408–409, 442
- hospital trains, 442
- Hottentots (Nama), 280
- The House Near Paris: An American Woman's Story of Traffic in Patriots* (Tatier), 378
- House of Sharing, 348
- Howard Hughes Field (Houston, TX), 621
- Howe, William, 145–146, 578
- Hsi Kai Ching, 113
- Hua Mulan Joins the Army*, 112
- Hua Mulan or Fa Mu Lan, 112
- Hughan, Jessie Wallace, 292–294
- Hull, George, 295
- Hull, Peggy, pseud. (Deuell, Henrietta Eleanor Goodnough), 294–295, 295 (photo), 333–334

INDEX

- Hull House, 150
Hulme, Kathryn, 378
human experimentation,
 biological, 65
human immunodeficiency virus
 (HIV). *See* AIDS
Humanistas, 46
Humbert, Agnès, 588
Humphries, Albert, 87
Humps, Gertraud (Traudl),
 334–335
Hunan War Service Corps, 111
Hundred Years' War, 331
Hungarian Resistance, XLVI, 573
Hungary, 479–481
hunger strikes, 180
Hunt, Swanee, 660
Hurenwaibel (overseer of
 whores), 586
Husband, Mrs. M. M., 149
Hussein, 20
Hussein, Saddam
 Gulf War (1990–1991),
 306–310
 Iran-Iraq War, 306–310
Husserl, Edmund, 563
Hutton, Lady Isabel Galloway
 (née Isabel Emslie),
 295–296
Hutu assault against Tutsis,
 genocidal, 482,
 508–511
Hydaspes, Battle of, 298
hydrogen bomb, 97
Hyun Hee Kim, 583
I Served in Bataan (Redmond),
 377
I Took a War Job (von Miklos),
 377
IACHR. *See* Inter-American
 Commission on Human
 Rights
Ianysheva, Aleksandra
 Aleksandrovna
 (Permiakova), 542
Iarchevskaia, V. A., 546
Ibárruri, Dolores (*La*
 Pasionaria), 297–298,
 557–558
Ibn Khaldun, 308
Ibo tribe, 166
ICA. *See* Irish Citizen Army
ICBL. *See* International
 Campaign to Ban Land
 Mines
Iceni, 74
ICW. *See* International
 Congress of Women
ICWPP. *See* International
 Committee of Women
 for Permanent Peace
Idaho Japanese internment
 camps, 327
IDF. *See* Israeli Defense Force
Idris, Wafa, 19, 314–315, 584
Ignatieff, Sergei, 168
IL-2 pilots, 467–468
imagery
 Greek warfare, 251–252
 mother and bride, 655
 Rosie the Riveter, 500–501
 U.S. posters, 476–478
 World War II, 476–478
Imperial Grain Authority, 226
INC. *See* Indian National
 Congress
The Independent, 338
Independent Maritime Army,
 457
Independent Socialist Party
 (USPD), 223
India
 Battle of Hydaspes, 298
 British Empire, 216–217
 Cold War, 217
 conflict in Kashmir,
 337–338
 Congress O, 216
 Congress Party, 217–218
 Green Revolution, 217
 Janata Party (the People's
 Front Party), 217
 nuclear program, 217
 Operation Blue Star, 218
 Operation Woodrose, 218
 Protect the Tiger campaign,
 217
 Rani of Jhansi Regiment, 360
 State of Emergency, 217
 terrorists, 583
 women warriors, 298–299
Women's Guild of Service,
 338
Indian National Army, 360
Indian National Congress
 (INC), 216
Indian Passive resistance
 campaign, 186
Indian (Sepoy) Rebellion,
 360–361
Indian Red Cross Welfare
 Service, 296
Indochina Peace Campaign, 190
Indochina war, 209
Indonesia, 482
industrial citizenship, 624
Industrial Workers of the World
 (Wobblies), 604
Infidada (al-Aqsa Intifada),
 314–315
Ingalls, Laura, 138
Ingersoll, Laura, 529
Ingersoll, Thomas, 529
Inghínidhe na hÉireann
 (Daughters of Ireland),
 232, 394
Inglis, Elsie, 277–278,
 300–303, 501
“Inside in Washington,” 132
Institute for the Study of
 Nonviolence, 45
intelligence riders, 14 (photo)
Interahamwe (Rwanda), 509
Inter-American Commission on
 Human Rights
 (IACHR), 25
intermarriage of Hutus and
 Tutsis, 510
intermarriage of Jews and
 German gentiles,
 498–500
Intermediate Nuclear Forces
 Treaty, 98
international arbitration, 405
International Arbitration and
 Peace Association, 572
International Brigades, 642
International Campaign to Ban
 Land Mines (ICBL),
 647
International Committee of
 Women for Permanent

INDEX

- Peace (ICWPP),
303–304
- International Congress of
Women (ICW),
303–305
- The Hague (1915), 49,
303–304, 453
- International Manifesto of
Women, 305–306
- Zurich (1919), 50, 231,
304–305, 416–417
- International Court of Justice,
305–306, 646–647
- International Manifesto of
Women, 305–306
- International Red Cross, 489
- International Suffrage Alliance,
1
- International Tribunal for the
Former Yugoslavia at
The Hague, 469, 483
- International Woman Suffrage
Conference
(Washington, D.C.,
1902), 231
- International Women’s Day,
343, 520
- International Workers Aid, 344
- Internationale, 386
- internment camps, U.S.,
327–328
- Intifada, 19–21, 314–315, 318
- Inventarium einer Seele*
(Inventory of a Soul)
(Suttner), 572
- Inventor network, 373
- Investiture Contest, 398
- Iowa Woman Suffrage
Association, 99
- Iparraguirre, Soledád, 583
- Ipsilandis, Dimitrios, 255
- IRA. *See* Irish Republican
Army
- Iran, 267, 374
- Iran, Shah of, 177
- Iran-Iraq War, 306–310
- Iraq, xxxvi, 63, 374
- Abu Ghraib prison
(Baghdad), xxxvi
- General Federation of Iraqi
Women, 307
- General Union of Iraqi
Women (GUIW), 307
- Gulf War (1990–1991),
266–267, 306–310
- invasion of Kuwait, 308, 371
- Iran-Iraq War, 306–310
- Martyr Mothers, 308
- Martyrs Museum, 307
- National Museum (Baghdad),
309
- Patriotic Mothers, 308
- United Nations sanctions
against, 308–309
- war in, xxvii, xxviii
- Iraqi Women’s Federation, 307
- Ireland
- Battle of New Ross, 645
- Civil War, 395
- Cumann na mBan (The
League of Women),
310–314, 394
- Dáil Eireann, 312
- Easter Rebellion of 1916,
394
- Easter Rising, 232,
310–311, 312
- Good Friday Accords, 419
- Inghínidhe na hEireann
(Daughters of Erin),
232
- League of Women Delegates,
311
- People’s Democracy, 151
- Proclamation of the
Republic, 310
- Second Dáil, 312
- U.S. Commission into
Conditions in Ireland,
312
- U.S. Committee for Relief in
Ireland, 312
- War of Independence, 232,
312–314
- Wexford rising, 644–645
- Women’s Prisoners Defence
League, 232
- Ireland, Mary, 424
- Irgun, 316
- Irish Bulletin*, 313
- Irish Citizen Army (ICA), 394
- Easter Rising, 310–311
- Irish Civil War, 395
- Irish Free State, 395
- Irish Republic, 601
- Irish Republican Army (IRA),
180, 232, 583, 602
- cease-fire, 419
- Easter Rising, 310–311
- War of Independence,
312–314
- Irish Republican Socialist party,
152
- Irish Volunteers, 312
- Cumann na mBan (Council
of Women), 310–311
- Easter Rising, 310–311
- Irish Women’s Franchise
League, 311
- Iroquois, 80
- Irving, Sybil, 36
- Irwin, Inez Haynes, 334
- Ishii, Shiro, 65
- Islamic Jihad, 314–315
- Islamic law (*Sharia*), 569
- Islamic Resistance Movement or
Hamas, 20, 314–315
- Islamic resistance movements,
314–316
- Islamic terrorists, 584
- Israel
- 1956 war, 317
- Arab-Israeli wars, 19–22
- birth of, xxxv
- Chel Nashim (Women’s
Corps), 20, 317
- Chiba auxiliary police, 317
- and civil wars in Lebanon,
368
- invasion and occupation of
Lebanon, 317
- Jewish women of antiquity,
329–331
- MaGav (Border Police), 317
- Six-Day War (1967 War), 20
- War of Attrition, 407
- War of Independence, 316,
406–407
- Women against the Invasion
of Lebanon, 22
- women in military, xxxv,
316–318
- Yom Kippur War, 371

INDEX

- Israeli Air Force, 318
 Israeli Defense Force (IDF), 316–318
 Chel Nashim (Women’s Corps), 20, 317
 Karakal Brigade, 318
 Israeli Women against Occupation, 20
 Italian Red Brigades, xxxvi
 Italian Resistance, 318–320, 320 (photo)
 Italy
 Albanian war, 252
 Ancient Rome, 493–495
 Central Bureau of News, 321
 Citizen Relief Committees, 321
 invasion of Ethiopia, 453
 Investiture Contest, 398
 Korean War, 354
 occupation of Greece, 249–251
 Red Brigades, 486–487
 Sicilian revolutions, 532–534
 Socialist Party, 318
 terrorist groups, 583
 Ufficio Notizie Militari (Office of Military News), 321
 unification of, 219
 Union of Italian Catholic Women, 319
 Union of Italian Women, 319
 women in service during World War I, 321–322
 Women’s Defense Groups, 319–320
 World War I homefront, 321–322
 World War II resistance, 318–320, 320 (photo)
 Iushina, Elena, 540
 Ivanova, Rimma Mikhailovna, 505
 Iwane, Matsui, 421
 Iyeyoshi, Uchida, 326
 Jablonska, Helena, 476
 Jackson, Thomas Stonewall, 78
 Jacobs, Aletta, 303, 305–306
 Jacobs, Closkine, 528
 Jael, 330
 Jakobsmeier, Ingrid, 44
 Janata Party (the People’s Front Party) (India), 217
 Janjaweed, xxxii, 570
 Japan
 All-Japan Women’s Economic Convention, 323
 attack on Pearl Harbor, 324
 Banka Island Massacre, 93–94
 biological warfare
 experimentation by, 65
 comfort women, 347–348
 Dainihon Fujin Kai (Greater Japan Women’s Association), 324–325
 food shortages, 324
 Greater East Asia War campaign, 324
 Greater Japan Allied Women’s Society, 323
 Greater Japan National Defense Women’s Association, 323
 Greater Japan Young Women’s Association, 323
 Home Front, 323–325
 Joshi Teishintai Kinrou Rei (Women’s Volunteer Labor Corps Work Ordinances), 325
 Kokumi Giyu Heieiki Hou (Volunteer Army Military Service Code), 325
 Kokumin Giyu Sentou Tai (National Volunteer Army Combat Corps), 325
 Kokumin Kinrou Houkoku Kyouryoku Rei (Ordinance for Cooperation with the National Patriotic Labor Corps), 325
 Korean Council for the Women Drafted for Sexual Slavery in Japan, 347–348
 Korean occupation, 349
 Meiji era, 323
 occupation of China, 110–112, 324
 pacification methods, 110
 Peace Restoration Festival (Hiroshima), 283
 rape of Nanking by, 110, 112, 421–422, 422 (photo)
 Russo-Japanese War, 403
 surrender to U.S., 328
 U.S. atomic bombing of Hiroshima and Nagasaki, xxxiv, 283–284
 U.S. declaration of war on, 327
 U.S. strategic bombing of, 324
 women warriors in ancient and medieval Japan, 326–327
 World War II home front, 323–325
 Japanese interned in U.S. camps, 327–328, 362, 363 (photo)
 Executive Order 9066 (Roosevelt), 327, 364
 in literature, 377
 Japanese Red Army, 583
 Jason, 333
 Jeanne d’Arc. *See* Joan of Arc
 Jeep, 477
 Jefferson, Thomas, 492
 Jehovah’s Witnesses, 228, 329
 Jerome, Leonard, 114
 Jerusalem, 584
 Jewish Catholics, 563
 Jewish Council of Elders, 290–291
 Jewish Legion, 406
 Jewish National Fund, 490
 Jewish Resistance, xlvi, 146, 187–188, 339–340, 361–362

INDEX

- Bialystok Ghetto revolt, 263
in Palestine, 211
Warsaw Ghetto Uprising,
361–362, 471
- Jewish Self-Defense/Jewish
Armed Group
(HaShomer HaTzair),
263, 339, 346, 362,
490
- Jewish Warring Organization of
Pioneer Youth
(JWOPY), 146
- Jewish women
German Armed Forces
(Wehrmacht) atrocities
against, 222
Holocaust victims, XLII
intermarriage with German
gentiles, 498–500
women during Holocaust,
290–292
women in Israeli military,
316–318
women of antiquity,
329–331
World War II, 206
*See also specific women by
name*
- Jewish women’s groups, 22
- Jhansi, Rani of. *See* Lakshmi
Bai
- Jiang Jieshi (Chiang Kaishek),
108, 110
- jihad fardi* (personal initiative
attacks), 314
- Jingo-Kogo, 326
- Joan of Arc (Jeanne d’Arc),
331–332, 468
- Joannina, Ali Pasha of, 255
- Jockey network, 234, 372
- Jogiches, Leo, 385
- Johanna Enlists*, 603
- Johnson, Amy, 332–333
- Johnson, Andrew, 638–639
- Johnson, William, 79
- Johnston, Doris rubens, 378
- Johnston, Frances Benjamin,
561
- Jones, James, 377
- Jordan, 20, 407
- Jordan, Pallo, 186
- Jordan, Thomas, 260
- Josef, Franz, 537
- Joshi Teishintai Kinrou Rei
(Women’s Volunteer
Labor Corps Work
Ordinances) (Japan),
325
- journalists, XLIII, 220, 294, 367
- Korean War, 353
- Pulitzer Prize for war
correspondence, 282
- Spanish-American War, 561
- Vietnam War, 370–371
- World War I American
women, 333–334
- World War II, 590
- Yom Kippur War, 371
*See also specific women by
name*
- Journey among Warriors* (Curie),
378
- Joyce, Margaret Cairns (“Lady
Haw Haw”), 359–360
- Joyce, William, 359–360
- Juchacz, Marie, 223
- Judith, xxxvi, 330
- July 26 Movement, 135, 171
- June Days (Paris, 1848),
196–197
- June Second Movement, 583
- Junge, Gertraud (Traudl),
334–335, 335 (photo)
- Junge, Hans, 335, 335 (photo)
- Junot, Jean-Andoche, 229
- Just Cause, Operation, 82–83
- JWOPY. *See* Jewish Warring
Organization of Pioneer
Youth
- Kagame, Paul, 509–510
- Kahabagan y Iniquinto, Agueda,
465
- Kaiserin’s (Empress’s) army
(Vaterlandische
Frauenverein) (Union of
Women of the
Fatherland) (Germany),
225
- Kalle, Arnold, 397
- Kaltenbrunner, Ernest, 60, 73,
145, 373, 446, 471,
502
- Kämpffe, Helmut, 447
- Karadzic, Radovan, 470
- Karaiskaki, Georgios, 256
- Karakal Brigade (Israel), 318
- Kari, Rebecca Njeri, 400
- Karnavatti of Chitor, 298
- Kashmir conflict, 337–338
- Kataastaasan Kagalang-galang
na Katipunan nang
manga Anak ng Bayan
(Katipunan, the
Association, the Highest
and Most Venerated
Association of the Sons
and Daughters of the
Land), 464–467, 465
- Katherine (Nonhelema), 434
- Katipunan (the Association;
Kataastaasan Kagalang-
galang na Katipunan
nang manga Anak ng
Bayan, Highest and
Most Venerated
Association of the Sons
and Daughters of the
Land), 464–467, 465
- Katyn Forest massacre,
375–376
- Katyn List, 376
- KAU. *See* Kenya African Union
- Kaul, Kamala, 216
- Kavanagh, Peg, 645
- Kavaruganda, Anonciata, 510
- Kazarinova, Tamara, 550
- Kazickas, Jurate, 371
- Kea, Salaria, 338–339
- Kearns, Linda, 313
- Kearny, Phil, 172
- Keip, Otto, 52
- Kemal, Mustafa, 26–28
- Kemalist forces, 534–535
- Kempner, Vitka, 339–340, 346
- Kenya, 398–401
- Kenya African Union (KAU),
399
- Kenyatta, Jomo, 399–400
- Keogh, Margaretta, 310–311

INDEX

- Kerensky, Alexander, 68, 70, 452
- Khadija, 8
- Khaled, Leila, 583
- Khalifeh, Sahar, 21
- Khalistan, 218
- Khan, Asaf, 298
- Khan, Mohabat, 298
- Khan, Noor Inayat, 60, 145, 340–341, 372, 471, 502
- Khanjian, Malviné, 535
- Khazal, Suhaila, 307
- Khiva Khanate, 267
- Khokhlova-Dubkova, Antonina, 540
- Khomeini, Ayatollah, 177
- Khomiakova, Valeriia, 550–551
- Khrushchev, Nikita, 497, 551
- Kiafa, battle of, 255
- Kibbutz Ein Hahosh, 340, 346
- Kikuyu Central Association, 399
- Killiecrankie, battle of, 528
- Kim Il Sung, 354
- Kindertransport (children's transports), 643
- King, Coretta Scott, 45
- King, Martin Luther, Jr., 44
- King, Olive, 295, 341
- King, Sunny, 341
- King William's War, 157
- Kinley, John, 295
- Kinsky, Bertha, 572
- Kirby, Sir Robert S., 578
- Kirby-Smith, Edmund, 415
- Kirchner, Johanna, 342
- Kirschner, Karl, 342
- Kirtland, Helen Johns, 334
- Kissinger, Henry, 177
- Kitchener, Horatio Herbert, 114, 286, 288
- Kitson, Linda, 176
- Kitson, Theo Alice Ruggles, 561
- "Kitty," 206
- Klamath Reservation, 648
- Klaw, Barbara, 377
- Kleeck, Mary van. *See* van Kleeck, Mary
- Klein, Gerda, 378
- Klink, Friedrich, 524
- Klinker, Mary, xxviii
- Knight, Dame Laura, 247
- Knocker, Elizabeth "Elsie." *See* T'Serclaes, Baroness Elizabeth de
- Knocker, Leslie Duke, 598
- Knox, Henry, 258
- Knox, Lucy, 258
- Koch, Ilse, 342–343
- Koch, Karl Otto, 342
- Kocheva, Nedialka, 90
- Koegel, Max, 484
- Koenig, Pierre, 594
- Köhler, Ilse, 342
- Koinange, Peter, 399
- Koischwitz, Max Otto, 39
- Kokand Khanate, 357
- Kokumi Giyu Heieiki Hou (Volunteer Army Military Service Code) (Japan), 325
- Kokumin Giyu Sentou Tai (National Volunteer Army Combat Corps) (Japan), 325
- Kokumin Kinrou Houkoku Kyouryoku Rei (Ordinance for Cooperation with the National Patriotic Labor Corps) (Japan), 325
- Kolesova, Elena Fedorovna, 554
- Kollontai, Alexandra, 343–344, 344 (photo), 506–508
- Kollontai, Vladimir, 343
- Kollwitz, Karl, 344
- Kollwitz, Kathe, 344–346
- Koman, 326
- Kommunistka*, 507
- Komsomol (Young Communist League), 387, 431, 545
- konkret* (Concrete), 485
- Konstantinova, Tamara Fedorovna, 467
- Konstantinova Krupskaya, Nadezhda, 507
- Koñwatsi-tsiyaiéñni, 79
- Kopanski, Stanislaw, 473
- Koprishtitsa horrors, 92
- Korczak, Rozka, 339, 345–346
- Korea
 comfort women, 347–348
 Japanese occupation of, 349
 South Korea, 353–354
 Women's Volunteer Labor Corp, 349
 World War II homefront, 349
- Korean Council for the Women Drafted for Sexual Slavery in Japan, 347–348
- Korean War, 353–355
 American Army nurses, 350, 354
 American women and, 350–353
 female war correspondents, 353
 marines, 609–610
 media coverage of, 282
 War in Korea (Higgins), 282
- Kornilov, Lavr, 69
- Korumdevi of Aureent, 298
- Kosmodem'ianskaia, Zoia, 89, 554
- Kosovo, 660
 conflicts in, 482, 657
 Serbian withdrawal from, 660
 Turkish defeat of, 655
- Kosovo Girl, 655
- Kovner, Abba, 339–340, 346
- Kovshova, Natalia Venediktovna, 554
- Kowerski, Andrew, 234
- Kozel'sk POW Camp for Polish Officers, 375
- KPD. *See* German Communist Party
- Kravchenko, Valentina, 539
- Kreisau Circle, 653
- Krippner, Monica, 300
- Kruger, Paul, 647
- Krupp works, 225
- Krupskaya, Nadezhda Konstantinova, 507
- Krzywon, Aniela, 476, 551–552
- Kuckhoff, Adam, 355
- Kuckhoff, Greta, 355, 525
- Kuczynski, Jürgen, 356

INDEX

- Kuczynski, Ursula (aka Ruth [Sonja] Werner), 355–356
- Kufrin, Milka, 356
- Kugler, Victor, 206
- Kulkova-Maliutina, Elena, 540
- Kuomintang (KMT), 108–110, 111 (photo), 421–422
- Kupriianova, A. E., 545 (photo)
- Kurdish People's Union, 314
- Kurdistan Worker's Party (PKK), 583
- Kurds, 308
- Kurmanjan Mamatbai-Kyzy, 357
- Kurmanjan-Datkha, 356–357
- Kursk, Battle of, 551
- Kuwait
 Gulf War (1990–1991), 266–267
 Iraqi invasion of, 308, 371
- Kuznetsova, Mariia, 379
- Kvinnekorps (Women's Corps) (Norway), 438
- Kwame Nkrumah, 492
- Kwiatkowska-Komorowska, Irena, 472
- Kyrgyz tribes, 356–357
- Kyrgyzstan, 356
- La Legionne delle Pie Sorelle (the Legion of Pious Sisters), 533
- La libre Belgique (Free Belgium), 464
- La Mano Blanco (the White Hand), 264
- La Pasionaria*, 297
- La Sociable*, 455
- La Sociale*, 411–412
- La Violencia*, 126
- Labour party, 97
- Labriola, Theresa, 321
- Ladies Apparel Shipping Clerk's Union, 497
- Ladies Association, 489
- The Ladies' Home Journal*, 603
- Ladoux, Georges, 397
- "Lady Haw Haw" (Margaret Cairns Joyce), 359–360
- Laechert, Hildegard, 82
- Lafayette, Marquis de, 258
- Lakshmi Bai, 299, 299 (illus), 360–361
- Lalin, Frances, 122
- Land and Freedom Army (Kenya), 399
- Land Army (Australia), 36
- Land Girls, 246
- land mines, 647
- Landau, Alexander, 362
- Landau, Emilia, 361–362
- Lane, Sharon, xxviii, 628
- Langalibalele, 125
- Lange, Dorothea, 362–364, 363 (photo)
- Lange, Helene, 223
- Lanham, May, 440
- Lanham Act (U.S.), 607
- Lannes, Jean, 423
- Lannes, Louise, 423–424
- Lanzetti, 532–533
- Latin America
 guerrilla movements, xxxv, 364–367
 insurgent groups, 583
 See also specific countries by name
- Laurie, Annie, 334
- Lawrence, Dorothy, 367
- Lawrence, T. E., 63
- Le Carré, John, 584
- League for Soldiers and Soldiers' Wives, 453
- League for Women's Rights (Greece), 253–254
- League of German Girls (Bund deutscher Mäde), 261, 523
- League of German Women, 223
- League of Greek Women Scientists, 253
- League of Nations, 151, 305–306, 417
- The League of Women (Cumann na mBan) (Ireland), 310–314, 394
- League of Women Delegates (Ireland), 311
- League of Young German Women (Bund der Deutschen Mädchen), 284
- Lebanese Christians, 368
- Lebanese Council of Women, 368
- Lebanon, 103
 civil wars in, 367–369, 374
 Israeli invasion and occupation of, 317, 374
 terrorists in, 584
 Women against the Invasion of Lebanon, 22
 World War II, 211
- Lebedeva, Antonina, 550
- Lebensborn program, 191
- Lebrón, Lolita, 369–370, 369 (photo)
- Lederer, Edith, 370–371
- Lederer, Frieda R., 371
- Lee, Mary Anna Randolph Custis, 371–372
- Lee, Robert E., 371–372
- Lefebvre-Desnoettes, Charles, 4–5
- Leffe, German attack on, 62
- Lefort, Alex, 372
- Lefort, Cecily, 234, 372–373, 502
- the Legion of Pious Sisters (La Legionne delle Pie Sorelle), 533
- Leicester, Louise Bonney, 71
- Leigh, Eugene, 373
- Leigh, Vera, 34, 73, 373, 446, 502
- Leighton, Roland, 85
- Leinster*, 249
- Leitgeb, Sepp, 284
- Lejkin, Jacob, 361–362
- Lemel, Nathalie, 455
- Lend-Lease Act, 153, 424, 615
- Lenin, Vladimir, 59, 343–344, 386
- Leningrad, German siege of, 262, 543
- Leningrad Army of Air Defense (Soviet Union), 547
- Lenino, Battle of, 475
- Lennardson, Samuel, 157
- Leo, André, 455
- Leo XIII, 537
- Leon, Pauline, 207
- Leroy, Catherine, 373–374

INDEX

- Leska-Daab, Anna, 374–375
Leslie's Magazine, 334, 561
 Lessing, Doris, 97
 Leutwein, Theodor, 280
 Levchenko, Irina Nikolaevna, 554
 Levine, Isaac Don, 69
 Lew, Elizabeth Louise van. *See* van Lew, Elizabeth Louise
 Lewandowska (née Dowbor-Musnicki), Jania, 375–376
 Lewis, Sinclair, 153
 Lewitsky, Anatole, 588
 Li Gua Dao (Salvationist Sect of the Goddess form the Southern Sea), 111
 Li-2 (modified DC-3), 262
Liana (Gellhorn), 378
 Libby Prison (Richmond, Virginia), 625
Libération, 35
 Liberation of the North network, 417
 Liberation Tigers of Tamil Eelam (LTTE, Tamil Tigers), 580–581, 584
 Libération-Sud movement, 35, 193
 Liberty Bonds, 603
Liberty Leading the People (Delacroix), 392, 392 (illus)
 Libeskind, Aaron, 146
 Libya, 374
 Lichtenburg (concentration camp), 495
 Lidice massacre, 376
 Liebknecht, Karl, 223, 344, 386
 Liewer, Philippe, 574
Life magazine, 353, 374, 383
Life? or Theatre? (Salomon), 513–514
 Lincoln, Abraham, 259, 566
 literature, U.S. World War II, 377–379
 Lithuanian Uhlan Regiment, 157
Little American, 603
 Little Curies, 136–137
The Little Drummer Girl (Le Carré), 584
 Littlefield, Catherine “Caty” or “Kitty,” 258
 Litviak, Lidiia (Liliia) Vladimirovna, 379–380, 550, 552
 Litvinova-Rozanova, Larissa Nikolaevna, 388, 552–553
 Liu Chin Ting, 113
 Livermore, Mary Ashton Rice, 289, 380–381, 381 (photo)
 Lloyd George, David, 452
 Local Defense Volunteers (Britain), 246
 Lochner, Christian, xxxvi
 Locke, Elsie, 381–382
 Locke, J. Gibson, 381
 Loftus, Ruby, 247
 Logan, Benjamin, 434
 London Auxiliary Ambulance Service, 288
 Long, Margaret, 378
 Long March, 108
 Long Range Aid to Navigation (LORAN), 618–619
Look, 374
 Loos, France, Lady of, 417
 LORAN (Long Range Aid to Navigation), 618–619
 Lord, Mary, 353
 Lorke, Greta, 355
 Lotta Svärd (Finland), 184–185
 Lotta Svärd Perinneliitto (Heritage Association) (Finland), 185
 Louis IX, 68, 134
 Louis VII, 133, 165–166
 Louis VIII, 68
 Louisiana Red River Campaign, xxviii
 Louis-Philippe, 183, 195
Louisville Saturday (Long), 378
 Loustaunau-Lacau, Georges, 192
 Louvain (Leuven), German attack on, 60, 62
 Love, Nancy, 124
 Love, Nancy Harkness, 620–621
 Lowry, Robert, 377
 Lowther, Barbara (Toupie), 382–383
 Lowther-Hackett ambulance unit, 288, 382
 Loyalists, 396
 LTTE. *See* Liberation Tigers of Tamil Eelam
 Lubeck, Gustav, 385
 Luce, Clare Boothe, 383–384
 Luce, Henry R., 383
 Ludington, Henry, 384
 Ludington, Sybil, 384–385
 Luna, Antonio, 465
 Lupfen, Countess of, 459
 Lusik, 30–31
 Luxembourg Commission, 196
 Luxemburg, Rosa, 223, 385–386, 385 (illus)
 Lycurgus, 561
 Lynn, Kathleen, 310–311, 313 (photo)
 Lyons, George, 313 (photo)
 M-19 (April 19 Movement), 127, 583
 Ma’anit (Israel), 490
 Maathai, Wangari, 400
 MacArthur, Douglas, 282, 383
 MacBride, John, 232
 MacBride, Maud Gonne, 312
 MacBride, Séan, 232
 MacCaoilte, Sean, 313 (photo)
 MacDonald, Elizabeth, 377
 Macedonia, 50, 300–301
 Maceo, Antonio, 233
 Maceo, Marcos, 233
 MacGahan, Januarius, 92–93
Machinenzeitalter (Machine Age) (Suttner), 572
 Mackenzie, Cecily Marie, 372
 Mackenzie-Papineau Battalion, 642
 MacLeod, Margaretha Gertruida, 397
 MacLeod, Rudolph, 397
 Macmillan, Chrystal, 305–306
 Macnaughtan, Sarah, 46
 MacSwiney, Mary, 312

INDEX

- Mad Anne, 47
 Mademoiselle D, 199
 Madikizela, Nkosikazi Nobandle
 Nomzano, 390
 Madikizela-Mandela, Winnie,
 391
 Madison, Dolley, 259
 Madres de la Plaza de Mayo
 (Mothers of the Plaza
 de Mayo) (Argentina),
 23, 24–26
 Madres de la Plaza de Mayo—
 Línea Fundadora
 (Founding Line)
 (Argentina), 25
 MaGav (Border Police) (Israel),
 317
 Magbanua y Ferraris, Teresa,
 465
 Maginot Line, 383
 Magnum, 408
 Magruder, Helen, Lady Abinger,
 277
 Mahal, Hazrat, 299
 Maherero, Saamuel, 280
 Mahler, Horst, 486
 Mailer, Norman, 377
 Maine, 114
 Maingard, Amédée, 651
 Majdanek Trial, 82
 Makarova, Tat'iana Petrovna,
 387–388
 Malaysia, 38
 Malraux, André, 209
 Malraux, Clara, 193
 Malta, 388–389
 Mama Maquín, 265
Man in the Gray Flannel Suit
 (Wilson), 377
Manchester Guardian, 238
 Manchuria, 110–112
 Mandela, Nelson, 187, 390
 Mandela, Winnie, 390–391
 Mandela, Zindzi, 390
 Mandela United Football Club
 (MUFC) (South Africa),
 390–391
 Mangele, Josef, 261
 Manhattan Project, 497–498
 Manikarnika, 360
 Mann, Horace, 515
 Mannerheim, Carl Gustav, 186
 Mao Zedong, 108
 Maori wars, 382
 Mapai, 407
 Maputo, Mozambique, 186
 Maquis, 194, 194 (photo), 637,
 650–651
 Marat, Jean Paul, xxxvi
 Maratha warriors, 299
 March, Peyton C., 334
 María Cristina, 558
 Mariana Grajales Brigade, xxxv,
 134, 136, 233, 516
 Marianne, 392–393, 392 (illus)
 Marie, Queen of Romania,
 393–394
 Marie de Medici, 198
 Marín, Olga Lucía, 127
 Marine Corps Women's Reserve
 (MCWR) (U.S.),
 609–610, 611–612
 Mariupol Hussar Regiment,
 156–157
 Markievicz, Casimir Dunin,
 394
 Markievicz (née Gore-Booth),
 Countess Constance,
 310–313, 394–395,
 394 (photo)
 Markov, V. V., 188
 Markov, Valentin, 539
 Markovic, Draza, 395
 Markovic, Mirjana, 395–396
marraines de guerre (war
 godmothers), 200, 202
 Marrast, Armand, 195
Marriage as a Trade (Hamilton),
 273
 Married Women's Work act
 (France), 205
 Marshall, George C., 619
 marshals, Napoleon's, wives of,
 422–424
 Martí, José, 515
 Martin, Elizabeth Marshall, 396
 Martin, Grace, 396
 Martin, Rachel, 396
 Martin, William, 396
 Martineau, Harriet, 567
 Martínez, Ana Guadalupe, 165
 Martínez, Rogelia Cruz, 264
 Martin-Nicholson, Mary Eliza
 Louise Gripper. *See*
 Conquest, Joan
 Martson, Marvin R. "Muktuk,"
 170
 Martyr Mothers (Iraq), 308
 martyrdom, 315
 al-Aqsa Martyr's Brigade, 21
 (photo), 314
 Martyr Mothers (Iraq), 308
 Martyrs Museum (Iraq), 307
 Women for Wafa Idris
 Martyr's Brigade, 315
 Martyrs Museum (Iraq), 307
 Marulanda, Manuel, 126
 Maryland, 15
 Masaga, 298
 MASH Units. *See* Mobile Army
 Surgical Hospital Units
 Maskhadov, Aslan, 103
 Masloff, Vladimir, 397
 Masons, 465
 Mass Meeting for Peace (April
 2, 1917), 602
 Massachusetts Regiment, 55,
 514–515
The Massacre at Chios
 (Delacroix), xxxi, 252,
 256 (illus)
 Massera, Emilio Eduardo, 23
 Mata Hari, pseud. (Margaretha
 Gertruida MacLeod,
 née Zelle), 397
 Mather, Cotton, 157
 Matilda of Tuscany, 397–398
 Matthews, Dame Vera
 Laughton, 248–249
 Mau Mau rebellion, 398–401
 Maudling, Reginald, 152, 601
 Maurogenous, Manto, 252, 255
 Mayama, Tomiichi, 348
 Mazzini, Giuseppe, 321
 McAfee, Mildred Helen, 611,
 614
 McAliskey, Bernadette Devlin,
 601
McCall's Magazine, 59
 McCann, Daniel, 180
 McCarthy, Emma Maud, 401
 McCarthy, Mary, 378
 McCauley, Mary Hays, 414

INDEX

- McClellan, George, 161
McClure's, 561
 McConnell, Viola, 351–352
 McCormick, Robert, 424
 McCrady, Anna Grace, 440
 McCuller, Carson, 379
 McDonagh, Thomas, 311
 McDonald, Barbara, 528
 McDonald, Country Joe, 190
 McDougall, Grace Ashley-Smith, **402**
 McDowell, Mary Stone, **402–403**
 McGee, Anita Newcomb, **403–404**, 560, 591
 McGee, William John, 403
 McGovern, George, 190
 McKay, Charlotte, 149
 McKeown, Ciaran, 458
 McLaren, Elizabeth, 66
 McLauchlane, Mc, 528
 McWilliams, Monica, 602
 MCWR. *See* United States Marine Corps Women's Reserve
 Meacham, A. B., 648
 Mead, Edwin A., 405
 Mead, George, 11
 Mead, Lucia Ames, **404–405**
 Meade, George, 625
 Meatless Tuesdays, 603
 Medical Aid for El Salvador, 647
 medical services, XLIII–XLIV
 American Civil War, 120–122
 Mercy Ship, 408–409
 Scottish Women's Hospitals (SWH), 277–278, 295, **300–303**, 341
 Vietnam War, 628
 volunteers in Russia, 179
 World War I volunteers, 179
 See also specific service by name
 medical specialist corps, **405–406**
 medieval warfare, 148
 Investiture Contest, 398
 rape, 481
 women warriors in Japan, **326–327**
 Meier, Ingrid Jakob, 44
 Meinhof, Ulrike, 43–44, 485, 583
 Meir, Golda (née Golda Mabovitz), 22, 177, **406–407**
 Meisel, Hilda, **415**
 Meiselas, Susan, **407–408**
 Mélen-la-Bouxhe, Belgium, 61
 Mélin, Jeanne, 304
Member of the Wedding (McCuller), 379
 Memorial Hall for Comfort Women, 348
 Menchú, Rigoberta, 264 (photo), 265
 Menelaus, 278–279
 Menem, Saúl, 23
 Mennonites, 129
 Mensheviks, 343
 Mercy Ship, **408–409**
 Meriuts, Marta, 540
 Meskeneh concentration camp, 31
 Mesopotamia, 63
 Metro-Goldwyn-Mayer, 525
 Meunier, Evelyne, 432
 Meuse, Battle of the, 71
 Mexican American women, **409–411**
 Mexican War, 11
 Mexico, 364, 366
 Meyer, Dickey, 102
 Meyer, G. L. *See* Chapelle, Dickey
 Meyer, Georgia Lou. *See* Chapelle, Dickey
 Mhlakaza, 433
 Michel, Louise, **411–412**, 412 (photo), 455
 “Michele.” *See* Byck, Muriel
 Michells, Kathrin, 528
 Michener, James, 377
 Michigan Brigade, 149
 Michigan Cavalry, 148
 Michigan Infantry, 172
 Michigan Voluntary Infantry, 172
 Mickiewicz, Adam, 469
 Middle East, 562–563
 midwives, 283
 Miedzyrzec, Germany, 651–652
 Mikhailova-Demina, Ekaterina Illarionovna, 552
 Hero of the Soviet Union, 554
 Miles, Wesley, 414
 militant Serbian nationalism, **655**
 military awards, XLIV
 See also specific awards; specific countries by name
 military conscription, 294
 military hospitals, 428–430
 base hospitals, 441
 dressing stations, 439
 evacuation hospitals, 439, 442
 field hospitals, 439
 hospital ships, 442
 hospital trains, 442
 mobile hospitals, 439–441
 station hospitals, 443
 Vietnam War, 628
 Military Intelligence 5, Counterespionage (MI5) (Britain), 239
 military leaders, XLIV
 See also specific women by name
 military personnel, XL–XLI
 See also specific women by name
 Mill, John Stuart, 180
 Miller, Albert, 122
 Miller, Alice, 318
 Miller, Phineas, 259
 Millevoye, Lucien, 232
Millions Like Us, 247
 Milord, 436
 Milosavljevic, Danica, **412**
 Milosevic, Slobodan, 395, 658–660
 Milroy, Sean, 313 (photo)
 Milton, John, 75
 Minerva, 251
Minesweeper No. 611, 545 (photo)
 Ming Khai, 631
 Miriam, 330
mischlinge (mixed ones), 499

INDEX

- Miss Muriel and Other Stories* (Petry), 378
- Missouri Volunteers, 122
- Mitford, David, 413
- Mitford, Unity, **413–414**
- Mladic, Ratko, 660
- Mobile Army Surgical Hospital (MASH) Units (U.S.), 351–353
- mobilization of women, 274
Korean War, **350–353**
- Mobuto Sese Seko, 510
- Moccasin Raiders, 276
- Modoc Indians, 648
- Modoc War, 648
- Moeller, Irmgard, 44
- Mohawk Indians, 79–80, 157, 212, 529
- Mohnhaupt, Brigitte, 44
- Molly Pitcher, xxxiii, **414**, 414 (illus)
- Molly Pitcher Rifle Legion, 424
- Moluntha, 434
- Moncada Barracks attack (Cuba), xxxv, 281, 519
- Money Penny, Miss, 34
- Monk network, 470–471
- Monmouth, Battle of, 414, 414 (illus)
- Montana Japanese internment camps, 327
- Monte, Hilda, pseud. (aka Hilda Meisel), **415**
- Monte Carlo, 449
- Montenegro, 50, 655
- Monterro y Schuyler, Felipa, 526
- Montes, Melida Anaya, 164
- Montfort, Simon de, 134
- Moon, Ginnie, **415–416**
- Moon, Lottie, **415–416**
- Moore, Eleanor May, **416–417**
- Moore, Treadwell, 259
- mop-up or cleansing operations, 104
- Morales, Victoria, 410
- Moreau-Evrard, Emilienne, **417–418**
- Morgan, Anne Tracy, 71, **418–419**
- Morgan, J. P., 418
- Morgan, John Hunt, 140
- Morgenthau, Henry, 30
- Moro, Aldo, 486
- Moro massacre (Philippines), 466, 466 (photo)
- Moscho, 255
- Moscoso, Ramón, 17
- Moscow, Russia
Battle of Moscow, 554
Chechen terrorists, 103–104, 104 (photo), 584–585
Victory Parade (1945), 189
- Mosley, Sir Oswald, 413
- mother and bride imagery of militant Serbian nationalism, **655**
- Mother's Creed, 615
- Mothers' Crusade to Defeat H.R. 1776 (U.S.), 153, 615
- Mothers Day (France), 204
- mothers' movement (U.S.), 138, 153
- Mothers of the Plaza de Mayo (Madres de la Plaza de Mayo) (Argentina), 23, **24–26**
- Mothers of the Revolution—Heroes and Martyrs, 427
- Mothers of the U.S.A., 425
- Motor Transport Service (Britain), 243
- Mottin de la Balme, Augustin, 434
- Moulin, Jean, 35
- Mount Vernon, 641–642
- Mountain Pindos, 252
- Mourning Parents* (Kollwitz), 344
- Mowlam, Marjorie (Mo), **419**
- Mozambique, 186
- MRDA. *See* Mundri Relief and Development Association
- Mu Guiying, 113
- Mucho, Waclaw, 376
- MUFC. *See* Mandela United Football Club
- mujahedat* (female holy warriors), 308
- Mukoseyeva, Aleksandra, 467
- Mulan*, 112
- "Mulan Play," 112
- Muldowney, Dennis George, 234
- Mumbi Central Association, 399
- Mundri Relief and Development Association (MRDA), 570
- munition girls, 237–238, 274
- munitionettes*, 201–202, 235
- Muñoz Marin, Luis, 370
- Munro, Hector, 113, 598
- Müntzer, Thomas, 459–460
- Murnaghan, Mr., 313 (photo)
- Murphy, John, 644
- Murray, Flora, 19
- Murray, John, 47, 641
- Murray, William, 527
- Musashi, Miyamoto, 326
- Musée de l'homme (Museum of Man), 588
- Museo del Nunca Más (Never Again Museum), 25
- Mushikiwabo, Louise, 510
- "Music While You Work" (BBC), 247
- Muslims
Albanian, 482
conflict in Kashmir, 337–338
Islamic resistance movements, **314–316**
Islamic terrorists, 584
rape by, 482
Shiites, 308–309, 368
Sri Lanka, 581
Sunnis, 368
terrorists, 583
- Mussolini, Benito, 252, 318–319, 453, 463
- mustard gas, 176
- Muszynski, Adam, 376
- Mutual Support Society (GAM) (Guatemala), 265
- My Story of the War* (Livermore), 380
- Myconos, 255
- Mydans, Shelley, 378
- Myerson, Morris, 406
- Mygatt, Tracy, 293

INDEX

- N. E. Zhukovsky Air Force Engineering Academy, 483
- NAACP. *See* National Association for the Advancement of Colored People
- Nagaland, 77
- Nagas, 77
- Nagasaki, U.S. bombing of, xxxiv, 283–284
- Nagler, Alexander, 514
- Naisten Huoltosäätiö (Finnish Women’s Welfare Association), 185
- Nakam, 339–340
- The Naked and the Dead* (Mailer), 377
- Nama (Hottentots), 280
- Namibia, 187
repression of Herero of, 280–281
- Nanking, rape of, 110, 112, 421–422, 422 (photo)
- Nanye-Hi. *See* Ward, Nancy
- Napoleon, Louis, 197
- Napoleon Bonaparte, 167, 229
- Napoleon I, 422–424
- Napoleon III, 261
- Napoleonic Wars, 156–157, 229, 423, 503, 632–633
- Nashville Dispatch*, 139
- Nasjonal Samling (National Gathering) (Norway), 438
- Nasjonal Samlings Kvinneorganisasjon (NSK) (Norway), 438
- National American Women’s Suffrage Association (NAWSA), 99, 603
- National Association for the Advancement of Colored People (NAACP) (U.S.), 151, 445
- National Association of Relatives of the Disappeared (ANFASEP; Asociación Nacional de Familiares de Secuestrados), 463
- National Civic Federation, 418
- National Committee for Italian Intervention, 321
- National Committee for the Liberation of Northern Italy, 319
- National Committee on the Cause and Cure of War, 151
- National Council for the Cause and Cure for War, 100
- National Council for the Prevention of War, 151
- National Council of Women, 231
- National Defense Authorization Act (1991) (U.S.), 267
- National Food Administration (U.S.), 603
- National Gathering (Nasjonal Samling) (Norway), 438
- National Guard (France), 411
- National Guard (U.S.), 654
- National Labor Relations Board (U.S.), 497
- National Labor Service (Germany), 523–524
- National Legion of Mothers of America (NLMA) (U.S.), 138, 153, 424–425, 615
- national liberation, XLIV
- National Liberation Army (Ejército de Liberación Nacional, ELN) (Colombia), 126–127
- National Liberation Army (NLA) (Yugoslavia), xxxiv–xxxv, 656
- National Liberation Front (Ethniko Apeleftherotiko Metopo, EAM) (Greece), 249–250, 252–253
- National Liberation Front (Vietnam), 209
- National Liberation Movement (Yugoslavia), 655
- National Museum (Baghdad, Iraq), 309
- National Peace Conference, 151
- National Peace Federation, 1
- National Pension Law (Germany), 593
- National Popular Alliance (Alianza Nacional Popular, ANAPO) (Colombia), 127
- National Revolution (France), 204
- National Service Act (1941) (Britain), 246
- National Service (No. 2) Act (Britain), 242
- National Service Board for Religious Objectors (NSBRO) (U.S.), 129
- National Socialism, 498
- National Socialist *Frauenschaft/Deutsches Frauenwerk* (Women’s Organization/Women’s Work, NSF/DFW), 228
- National Socialist Party (Germany), 524
- National Solidarity (Ethniki Allilegyi, EA) (Greece), 249
- National Togetherness campaign (Britain), 247
- National Union of Women’s Suffrage Societies (NUWSS) (Britain), 181, 235, 300–301
- National Volunteer Army Combat Corps (Kokumin Giyu Sentou Tai) (Japan), 325
- National War Labor Board (U.S.), 607, 624
- National War Service Act (Austin-Wadsworth Bill) (U.S.), 605
- National Women Suffrage Federation, 321
- National Women’s Congress (1923) (Cuba), 135
- National Women’s Organization/Women’s

INDEX

- Work (National Socialist *Frauenchaft/Deutsches Frauenwerk*) (NSF/DFW) (Germany), 228
- nationalism, militant Serbian, 655
- Nationalist Army (Vietnam), 209
- Nationalist Party (Guomindang or Kuomintang [KMT]), 108–110, 111 (photo), 421–422
- Nationalist Party (Puerto Rico), 369–370, 369 (photo)
- Nationalists (Spain), 178, 556–557
- Native Americans
 Battle of Beaver Dams, 529
 Puritan brutality against, 157–158
 warriors/scouts/
 intermediaries, XLIV
See also specific tribes; specific women by name
- Natzweiler-Struthof
 concentration camp, 502
- Navy League (U.S.), 603
- Naxos, Greece, 257
- Nayanika, 298
- Nayars, 298
- Nazarkina, Dusya, 468
- Nazi Labor Front, 525
- Nazi Party, 227
- NEA. *See* Newspaper Enterprise Association
- Near, Holly, 190
- Nearne, Eileen, 425
- Nearne, Jacqueline, 425–426
- Necheporchukova-Nozdracheva, Matriona (Motia) Semenovna, 541
- Neff, Mary, 157
- Nehru, Indira Priyadarshini, 216
- Nehru, Pandit Jawaharlal, 216
- Nepal, 583
- Netherlands, the
 Boer War, 647
- Dutch Resistance, XLVI, 520–521, 647
- German invasion of, 206, 647
- Korean War, 354
- Neutral Conference for Continuous Mediation, 49
- Never Again War* (Kollwitz), 344
- New Deal, 624
- New Frontier*, 642
- New Jersey, 13–15
- New Mexico Japanese internment camps, 327
- New Orleans Picayune*, 561
- New Republic*, 220
- New Ross, Battle of, 645
- New Sudan Women's Federation (NSWF), 570
- New Times and Ethiopian News*, 453
- New York American*, 334
- New York Daily News*, 295
- New York Evening Mail*, 334
- New York Herald Tribune*, 353, 590
- New York Infirmary, 67
- New York Journal*, 561
- New York Legislature, 293
- New York Post*, 272
- New York Times*, 27–28, 496
- The New York Times Magazine*, 408
- New York Tribune*, 282
- New York World*, 415
- The New Yorker*, 378
- New Zealand, 64, 381–382
- New Zealand Womans' Convention, 381
- Newark Evening News*, 334
- Newspaper Enterprise Association (NEA), 294, 333–334
- Newton, Agnes Keith, 378
- Newton-Thompson, Helen, 66
- Ney, Aglaé, 423
- Ney, Michel, 423
- Nguyen Thi Ba, xxxvi, 631
- Nguyen Thi Ngia, xxxvi, 631
- Niboyet, Eugénie, 195–197
- Nicaragua, 426–428
- AIDS, 7
- Ejército Defensor de la Soberanía Nacional de Nicaragua (EDSNN, Army in Defense of the National Sovereignty of Nicaragua), 426
- guerrilla war, 220, 265, 364–366
- Sandinistas, 365, 407–408, 583
- U.S. withdrawal from, 151
- Nicholas II, 8, 506, 537
- Nichols, Mike, 190
- Nie Yin-Niang, 113
- Niederkirchner, Käthe, 428
- Nigerian Civil War, 166
- Nightingale, Florence, 67, 428–431, 430 (photo)
- Nike, 251
- Nikitin, Nikolai, 539
- Nikolayeva, Klavdia, 507
- Nikulina, Anna Vladimirovna, 431–432, 548
- Nirouet, Collette, 432–433
- Nisei Daughter* (Sone), 377
- Nitobe, Inazo, 326
- Nixon, Richard, 217
- NLA. *See* National Liberation Army
- NLMA. *See* National Legion of Mothers of America
- “No More War” parades (New York), 294
- Noah's Ark network, 192
- Nobandle, Nkosikazi, 390
- Nobel, Alfred, 572
- Nobel Peace Prize winners, XLIV
See also specific women by name
- Nobel Prize, 137
- Nokaze, 326
- Nongqawuse, 433–434
- Nonhelema (or Grenadier Squaw), 434–435
- nonviolent resistance, 403
- Noor-un-nisa, 340
- Noriega, Luz, 558
- Norman, Gilbert, 73
- Norris, Kathleen, 424–425

INDEX

- North Atlantic Treaty
Organization (NATO),
98, 660
- North Dakota Japanese
internment camps, 327
- North Korea, 354, 583
- North Vietnamese Army, 209
- Northern Civil Rights
Association, 151
- Northern Ireland, 374, 419,
601–602
Peace People Movement, **458**
- Northern Ireland Women’s
Coalition, 602
- Northern Ireland Women’s
Rights Movement, 602
- Northern Paiutes, 649–650
- Northumberland Fusiliers, 245
- Northwest Women’s Battlefield
Group, 111
- Northwestern Sanitary
Commission, 289, 380
- Northwestern Soldier’s Fair,
289
- Norville, Josette, 425
- Norway
Korean War, 354
resistance during World War
II, XLVI, **435–436**
school battle (1942), 435
Valkyria, 583
women’s collaboration during
World War II German
occupation of,
438–439
World War II homefront,
436–437
- Nosal, Evdokiia (Dusia)
Ivanovna, 553
- Notes (Durova), 505
- Now It Can Be Told* (RAF),
425–426
- NSBRO. *See* National Service
Board for Religious
Objectors
- NSF/DFW. *See* National
Socialist
*Frauenschaft/Deutsches
Frauenwerk*
- NSK. *See* Nasjonal Samlings
Kvinneorganisasjon
- NSWF. *See* New Sudan
Women’s Federation
- nuclear weapons
antinuclear activism, 283
Campaign for Nuclear
Disarmament (CND),
97–98
French testing, 382
Hiroshima Peace Festival,
283
U.S. bombing of Hiroshima
and Nagasaki, **283–284**
- Nur Jehan, 298
- Nurberdy-Khan, 267–268
- Nuremberg concentration camp,
340
- Nuremberg Laws, 495, 499
- Nuremberg War Trials, 282
- nurse (term), 120
- nurses, xxxiv, 71–72
American Civil War, 120–122
American Red Cross,
487–489
benefits of, 351
drafting, 441
*Home before Morning: The
True Story of an Army
Nurse in Vietnam* (Van
Devanter), 623
in Italy, 321–322
Korean War, 354 (photo)
Mobile Army Surgical
Hospital (MASH), 352
Spanish-American War, 560,
560 (photo), 591
U.S. Army Nurse Corps
(ANC)
World War I, **439–441**
World War II, **441–443**
in U.S. literature, 377
Vietnam War, 534, 623, 627
(photo), 628
- Nurse’s Aide Corps (U.S.),
488–489
- Nurses’ Associated Alumnae,
404
- Nurses Selective Service Act
(U.S.), 441
- NUWSS. *See* National Union of
Women’s Suffrage
Societies
- Nye, Gerald P., 151
Nye Commission, 151
- O’Brennan, Lily, 313
- O’Callaghan, Kate, 312–313
- occupational therapists, 406
- Octavia, 494
- Octavian, 212–213, 258
- October War, 20
- Oddon, Yvonne, 588
- Odena, Lina, 557
- Odenathus of Palmyra, 664
- “Odile.” *See* Baissac, Lise de
- O’Donnell, Leopoldo, 233
- O’Farrell, Elizabeth, 311
- Offenbacher Zeitung*, 643
- Office of Civilian Defense
(U.S.), 496, 607
- Office of Military News (Ufficio
Notizie Militari) (Italy),
321
- Office of Strategic Services
(OSS) (U.S.), 71, 377,
607
- Office of War Information
(OWI) (U.S.), 89, 362,
477–478, 605, 607
- O’Hanrahan, P., 313 (photo)
- Ohio National Guard Women’s
Auxiliary, 294
- O’Keefe, P., 313 (photo)
- Oktiabrskaya, Mariia Vasil’ievna,
554–555
- Okubo, Mine, 377
- O’Laughlin, Bridget, 186
- O’Leary, John, 232
- O’Leary, Patrick, 637
- Olivette* incident, 558
- Olmsted, Mildred Scott,
445–446
- Olschanezky, Sonya, 34, 73,
373, **446**, 502
- Olympias, 257–258
- Omdurman, Battle of, 114
- 125th M. M. Raskova Borisov
Guards Bomber
Aviation Regiment. *See*
Soviet Union, 125th M.
M. Raskova Borisov
Guards Bomber
Aviation Regiment

INDEX

- Onilova, Neonila (Nina)
Andreevna, 555–556
- Onions, Maude, 447
- Open City* (Mydans), 378
- Operation Babylift, xxviii
- Operation Blue Star, 218
- Operation Desert Shield, 266
- Operation Desert Storm, 131, 266
- Operation Just Cause, 82–83
- Operation Woodrose, 218
- Opinion des femmes* (Opinion of Women), 197
- Oppenhoff, Franz, 284
- OPRA. *See* Organization of People in Arms
- Oradour-sur-Glane massacre (France), 447–448, 448 (photo)
- Orczy, Baroness Emma, 448–449
- Orczy, Felix, 448
- Orczy-Barstow, John, 449
- Order of Glory, I Class (Soviet Union) recipients, 541–543
- Order of St. George (Russia) recipients, 504–505
- Order of the Red Banner (Soviet Union) recipients, 542–543
- Order of the White Feather movement, 449
- Ordinance for Cooperation with the National Patriotic Labor Corps (Kokumin Kinrou Houkoku Kyouryoku Rei) (Japan), 325
- Oregon Japanese internment camps, 327
- O'Reilly, John, 339
- O'Reilly, Mary Boyle, 334
- Orenstein, Dietl, 290–291
- Organization of People in Arms (OPRA) (Guatemala), 265
- Organization of Working Mothers, 22
- Organized Reserve Corps (U.S.), 350
- Organizing Council of French Relief Societies, 418
- Oriente National Action (Cuba), 171
- Orleans, liberation from English siege, 331–332
- Ormsby, William, 649
- Orozco, Aurora, 410
- Orphan Ann, 589
- orphans, 202
- ORTF (French state-owned radio and television), 209
- Osipenko, Polina, 262, 387, 483–484, 551, 555 (photo)
- Osoaviakhim (Society for Assistance to Defense, Aviation, and Chemical Industry), 545
- Ottoman Empire
Armenian Holocaust, 26–28
Greek Revolution against (1821–1830), 255–256
- Overman, Lee, 293
- Overseas Press Club, 294
- Owen, Wilfred, 592
- OWI. *See* Office of War Information (OWI)
- P-51 Mustang fighter, 58
- Pace, Virginia Pincellotti, 321
- Pacha, Hafiz, 92
- pacifism, 344
See also peace movements
- Pacifist Teachers League, 294, 403
- pacifists, XLIV
See also specific women by name
- Padilla, Juana Azurduy de. *See* Azurduy de Padilla, Juana
- Padilla, Manuel Ascencio, 40
- Paget, Lady Muriel, 295
- Paiutes, 649
- Pakistan, 217–218, 374
conflict in Kashmir, 337–338
- Palamas, Kostis, 251
- Palestine, xxxvi, 211
- Arab-Israeli wars, 19–22
“army of roses,” 584
Great Revolt of 1936–1939, 19–20
Jewish immigration to, 211
Jewish resistance in, 211
women in Israeli military, 316–318
Women’s Centers, 21
- Palestine Liberation Organization (PLO), 314–315
- Palestine National Council, 20
- Palestinian Independent Commission for the Occupied Territories, 33
- Palestinian Initiative for the Promotion of Global Dialogue and Democracy, 33
- Palestinian Liberation Organization (PLO), 20
- Palestinian resistance movements, 315
- Palestinian terrorists, 584
- Palestinian Women’s Association, 20
- Palestinian Women’s Union, 20
- Palestinians, 314
and civil wars in Lebanon, 368
Israeli treatment of, 308–309
terrorists, 583–584
- Palmach, 211, 316, 490
- Palmyra, 664
- Pal’shina, Antonina Tikhonovna, 505
- Pamiatnykh, Tamara, 550–551
- Panagurishta horrors, 91–92
- Panama, 82–83
- Panamanian Defense Forces (PDF), 82
- Paniagua, Valentín, 462
- Pankhurst, Christabel, 451–454
- Pankhurst, E. Sylvia, 451–454
- Pankhurst, Emma, 273
- Pankhurst, Emmeline, 69, 237, 451–454, 454 (photo)
- Pankhurst, Sylvia, 235
- Pankhurst family, 451–454
- Papua New Guinea, 38

INDEX

- Paraguay, 40
 Parczewski, Constantine, 469
 Parents against Silence, 22
 Paris, France, 196–197, 340
 Paris Commune, 196, 411, 454–456
Paris Match, 374, 408
 Paris of Troy, 279
Paris Underground (Shiber), 377
 Parker, Dorothy, 379
 Parkhacheva, E. S., 545 (photo)
 Parrish, Bill, 457
 Parrish, Marie O’Dean Bishop (Deanie), 456–457
 Partevian, Suren, 29–30
 Partido del Pueblo Cubano (Party of the Cuban People), 281
 Parwin, 308–309
 Pasha, Abdul Hamid, 91
 Pasha, Aziz, 91
 PAT escape line, 144
 Patriot missiles, 266
 Patriotic Mothers (Iraq), 308
 Patriotic Research Bureau (U.S.), 615–616
 Patriotic Women’s Association (Aikoku Fujin Kai), 324
 Patterson, Monica, 602
 Patton, George, 76, 152
 Paul, Alice, 99
 Pavliuchenko, Liudmila Mikhailovna, 457–458
 Payen, Alix, 455
 PDF. *See* Panamanian Defense Forces
 Peace, Nancy Greene, 352
 peace activists, XLIV–XLV
See also specific women by name
 peace movements, XLV, 344, 572
 Australia, 416–417
 Buddhist peace movement, 630–631
See also specific movements
 Peace People Movement (Northern Ireland), 458, 602
 Peace Quilt, 20
 Peace Restoration Festival (Hiroshima, Japan), 283
 Peace Ship, 1
 peace through arbitration, 405
 Peake, Felicity, 458–459
 Peake, Harald, 459
 Pearse, Margaret, 312
 Pearse, Patrick, 310
 Peasant Unity Committee (CUC) (Guatemala), 265
The Peasant War (Kollwitz), 344–345
 Peasants’ War, 459–460
 Pejot, France, 193
 Pelley, William Dudley, 153
 Pelsl, Emilie, 521
 PEM. *See* Popular Feminine Movement of Ayacucho
 Peninsular War, 229, 423
 Pennsylvania, 15
 Pension Schmidt (Berlin, Germany), 522–523
 Penthesilea, 12
 People’s Army (Algeria), 10
 People’s Army (Poland), 471
 People’s Democracy (Greece), 250–251
 People’s Democracy (Ireland), 151
 People’s Front Party (Janata Party) (India), 217
 People’s Guard (Poland), 471
 People’s Republic of China, 107
People’s Voice, 378
 people’s wars in Latin America, 365
 Perez Esquivel, Adolfo, 25
 Perón, Isabel, 22–23
 Perón, Juan, 22–23
 Perovskaya, Sophia, xxxvi
 Pershing, John, 279, 294, 334, 654
 Pershing II missiles, 98
 Persian Empire, 267
 Persian Gulf. *See* Gulf War
 Peru, 371
 Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth Century, 15–18
 Popular Feminine Movement of Ayacucho (PEM), 461
 Shining Path, 460–462
 Truth and Reconciliation Commission (TRC), 462–463
 Túpac Amaru uprising, 15, 583
 Upper Peru, 40
 Perusine War, 213
 Pervyse dressing station (Belgium), 597–598
 Petacci, Clara, 463–464
 Pétain, Henri Phillipe, 192
 Petilius Cerealis, 74
 Petit, Gabrielle, 464
 Petite Curies (Little Curies), 136–137
 Petliuk, Ekaterina, 547
 Petrograd Izhora Works, 507
 1st Petrograd Women’s Battalion (Women’s Battalion of Death) (Soviet Union), 58, 68–70, 503–504, 504 (photo)
pétroleuses (arsonists), 455
 Petrov, I. E., 556
 Petrova, Nina Pavlovna, 541
 Petry, Ann, 378
 Pfeffer, Fritz, 206
 PGT. *See* Guatemalan Labor Party
Philadelphia Ledger, 465
 Philadelphia Society for the Promotion of the Abolition of Slavery, 599
 Philhellenist movement, 255
 Philip II of Macedon, 257
 Philippines, 378, 405
 Moro massacre (Philippines), 466, 466 (photo)
 Santo Tomas Internment Camp, 406
 Philippines Insurrection, 464–467, 466 (photo)
 photographers, XLV, 70–71, 76, 89, 373, 407
 in Afghanistan, 371
 Korean War, 353
 World War II, 362
See also specific women by name

INDEX

- Phung Thi Chihn, 631
 physical therapists, 405
 Piaf, Edith, 205
 Pickford, Mary, 603
Pictorial Review, 334
 Piers, Maud, 273
 Pile, Sir Frederick, 247
 pilots, XLV
 See also specific women by name
 Pilsudska, Jadwiga, 375
 Pinkerton, Allan, 49, 260
 Pitcher, Molly. *See* Molly Pitcher
Pittsburgh Courier, 378
 Pius IX, 219
 Pizan, Christine de. *See de* Pizan, Christine
 PKK. *See* Kurdistan Worker's Party
 Plata, Carlos Toledo, 127
 Plater, Cezary, 469
 Plater, Emilia, 230, 468–469
 Platerówka, Poland, 476
Platerowki, 475
 Plavsic, Biljana, 469–470
 Plewman, Elaine, 34, 60, 145, 340, 470–471
 Plewman, Tom, 470
 PLO. *See* Palestinian Liberation Organization
 PLSK. *See* Polish Auxiliary Air Force
 Plunket, Eileen, 382
 Plunkett, Joseph, 311
 Po-2 planes, 538
 Pocock, Lena Margaret. *See* Ashwell, Lena Margaret Pocock
 poetry, 98–99, 415
The Point of No Return (Gellhorn), 378
 Poirier, Jeanne, 418
 Poland
 army, 230
 Auschwitz concentration camp, 291 (photo)
 Bialystok Ghetto revolt, 263
 German invasion of, 221–222
 Home Army, 471–473
 Jewish resistance against German occupation of, 146–147
 People's Army, 471
 People's Guard, 471
 Polish resistance against German occupation of, 234
 rape by Red Army in World War II, 479–481
 siege of Warsaw, 471
 Soviet invasion of, 375
 Union of Polish Patriots, 537
 Wilna ghetto, 263, 339
 Warsaw ghetto, 263, 361–362
 Warsaw Ghetto Uprising, 471
 Polikarpov's Po-2, 387
 Polish Air Force, 374, 537
 Polish Auxiliary Air Force (PLSK), 473–474
 Polish Horse Uhlan Regiment, 156
 Polish Independent Womens' Battalion, Emilia Plater, 230, 469, 474–476
 Polish Resistance, XLVII, 234, 471–473
 Polish Women's Auxiliary Service, 475
 Polish Workers' Party, 471
 political clubs, 196–197, 208
 political violence, XLV
 See also specific countries
Politique des femmes (Women's Politics), 196–197
 Polivanova, Mariia Semenovna, 554
 Polk, James K., 72
 Polykrite, 257
 Pomocnicza Lotnicza Sluzba Kobiet (Polish Auxiliary Air Force or PLSK), 473–474
 Pondicherry, siege on, 536
 Pontecorvo, Gillo, 584
 Popular Feminine Movement of Ayacucho (PEM) (Peru), 461
 Porsena, 494
 Porta, Carmen Castro, 135
 portable X-ray machines (Little Curies), 136–137
 Portland Hospital (Bloemfontein, South Africa), 46
 Porus, 298
 posters, U.S., 476–478
 Postol'skaia, Aleksandra, 547–548
 posttraumatic stress disorder. *See* shell shock
 Potiorek, Oskar, 537
 Pouzache, Anna, 194
 Power, Mrs. Wyse, 313 (photo)
 Prabhakaran, Vilupillai, 580–581
 Pracovna Skupina (Working Group), 490
 Prasutagus, 74
 Price, Sterling, 415–416
Primer for Combat (Boyle), 378
 Primo de Rivera, José Antonio, 557
 Primo de Rivera, Pilar, 557–558
 Princess Mary's RAF Nursing Service (Britain), 242
 Princip, Gavrilo, 537
 prison camps, XLII
 Japanese interned in U.S. camps, 327
 See also specific camps
 prisoners of war (POWs), XLV
 aid packages to, 489
 Gulf War (1990–1991), 266
 medical specialist corps, 406
 World War II, 645
 See also specific women by name
 prisoners of war (POWs) status, 646
Pro Patria, 321
 Proclamation of the Republic, 310
 Prokhorova, Evgeniia, 550–551
 Proll, Astrid, 485–486
 Proll, Thorwald, 43, 486
 propaganda, 562–563
 Rosie the Riveter, 500–501
 Thirty Years' War, 586
 propagandists, XLV–XLVI
 See also specific women by name

INDEX

- Prosper network, 446
 prostitution
 comfort women, 112,
 347–348, 349
 Pension Schmidt (Berlin,
 Germany), 522–523
 regulation of, 205
 Protect the Tiger campaign, 217
 protest movements, XLVI
 See also specific movements
 Protestant Committee of Non-
 Jewish Women against
 the Persecution of the
 Jews in Germany, 100
 Protestants, 586
 French Wars of Religion,
 197–198
 Psorokostaina, 256
 psychological impact of World
 War I on women,
 199–200
 Ptolemy XII, 123, 258
 Ptolemy XIII, 123
 Ptolemy XIV, 123
 publicists, XLVI
 *See also specific women by
 name*
 Puebla, Teté, 233
 Puentes Santiago, Segunda, 466
 Puerto Rican Nationalist Party,
 369–370, 369 (photo)
 Pulitzer Prize for war
 correspondence, 282
Punch Magazine, 238
 Puritans, 158
Put up the Sword (Walsh), 453
 Pybus, Tertia, 66
 Pylos, 257
 Pyramid Lake War, 649
 Pyrrhus, 562
 QAIMNS. *See* Queen
 Alexandra's Imperial
 Military Nursing
 Service
 Quakers, 402–403
 Quebec, siege of, XXVIII
 Queen Alexandra's Imperial
 Military Nursing
 Service (QAIMNS), 65,
 242, 401
 Queen Alexandra's Royal Navy
 Nursing Service, 241
Queen Charlotte, 245
 Queen Mary's Cross Medal, 393
 Quiller-Couch, Bevil, 98
 Quisling, Maria, 438
 Quisling, Vidkun, 435, 437–438
 RAANC. *See* Royal Australian
 Army Nursing Corps
 Rabaul, Gele, 80
 Rachkevich, Evdokiia, 539
 radar plotters, 242
 radiation exposure, 283
 Radio Berlin, 39
 Radio Caledonia, 359
 Radio Moscow, 428
 radio operators, 340
 radio propaganda, 359
Radio Rebelde, 516
 Radio Télévision Libre de Mille
 Collines (RTL), 509
 Radio Tokyo, 589
 Radio Washington, 614
 RAF. *See* Royal Air Force (RAF)
 Rakobol'skaia, Irina, 539
 Rani of Jhansi. *See* Lakshmi Bai
 Rani of Jhansi Regiment (India),
 360
 Rao, Gangadhar, 360
 rape, XXXI–XXXII, XLVI, 481–483
 in Bosnia, 658–659
 convictions for sexual assault
 during World War II, 612
 as form of torture, 481–482
 as means of terror, 337–338
 of Nanking, 421–422, 422
 (photo)
 as policy, 569–570
 by Red Army in World War II,
 XXXI–XXXII, 479–481
 in traditional Chechen
 Muslim context, 104
 as weapon of intimidation,
 160–161
 rape camps, 569–570
 Raphia, Battle of, 258
 Raskova (née Malinina), Marina
 Mikhailovna, 379, 387,
 483–484, 550 (photo),
 555 (photo)
 46th Taman Guards Bomber
 Aviation Regiment,
 538–539
 125th M. M. Raskova Borisov
 Guards Bomber
 Aviation Regiment, 182,
 188, 483–484,
 539–541, 553
 586th Fighter Aviation
 Regiment, 549–551
 as Hero of the Soviet Union,
 551
 Raspe, Jan-Carl, 44
 Rasputin, 8
Rauhine, 234
 Ravensbrück (concentration
 camp), 484–485
Ravensbrück (Tillion), 588
 Raymond of Antioch, 165
 Raziyya, 298
 RB. *See* Red Brigades
 Reagan, Nancy, 190
 Reagan, Ronald, 190, 427
 Rebel Army (Ejército Rebelde)
 (Cuba), 281
 Red Army (Soviet Union), 229
 politotdely (political section),
 507
 rape in World War II by, XXXII,
 479–481
 Red Army Faction (RAF) (West
 Germany), XXXVI,
 43–44, 485–486, 583
 Red Banner, Order of the
 (Soviet Union),
 542–543
 Red Brigades (Italy), 486–487
 Red Chorus (Rote Kapelle),
 355, 525
 Red Clubs, 411
 Red Crescent, 545
 Red Cross, 465, 545
 American Red Cross,
 487–489. *See also*
 American Red Cross
 (ARC)
 Belgian Red Cross
 Ambulance Corps, 113
 British Red Cross (BRC),
 587
 French Red Cross, 594

INDEX

- German Military Red Cross, 505
 German Red Cross, 645
 Indian Red Cross Welfare Service, 296
 International Red Cross, 489
 in Italy, 321–322
 Serbian Red Cross, 516
 Serbian Red Cross Society, 278
 Spanish Red Cross, 559
 U.S. imagery, 477
 World War I, 202
The Red Network (Dilling), 153
 Red Orchestra (Rote Kappelle), 90, 275, 585
 Red Scare, 293
 Red Zora, 583
 Redmond, Juanita, 377
 Rée, Harry, 425
 Reed, Esther De Berdt, 489–490
 Reed, Joseph, 489
 Refugees of Bosnia and Herzegovina, 660
 Regueyferos, Fructuoso, 233
 Reichs Rundfunk radio station, 359
 Reik, Haviva, 490–491
 Reisner, Larisa, 507
 Reitsch, Hanna, 491–492
 Reitz, F. W., 287–288
 religion
 brutality against Christians, 308
 French Wars of Religion, 197–198
 See also Holocaust
 Renner, Margarethe, 460
 Republic of Korea Women's Army Corp (ROKWAC), 354
 rescuers, XLVI
 See also specific women by name
 Resistance, 45
 Restoration of Employment Order (1941) (Britain), 246
 revolutionaries, XLVII
 See also specific women by name
 Revolutionary Armed Forces (FAR) (Guatemala), 264
 Revolutionary Armed Forces of Colombia (Fuerzas Armadas Revolucionarias de Colombia, FARC), 126–127, 127 (photo)
 Revolutionary Association of the Women of Afghanistan, 4
 Revolutionary National Action (Cuba), 171
 Revolutionary National Movement (Cuba), 171
 revolutions, XLVII
 See also specific countries, revolutions by name
 Reynolds, Mrs., 119
 Rhodes, Cecil, 126
 Rice, Mary, 380
 Richard I, 166
 Riddle, Frank, 648
 Riddle, Jefferson C. Davis, 648
 Riddle, Tobey, 648
 Riedesel, Friederike Charlotte Luise von Massow von, 492–493
 Riedesel, Friedrich von, 492
 Riemeck, Renate, 43
 Riffaud, Madeleine, 194
 Rinehart, Mary Roberts, 334
 Ring around the Congress (1972), 46
 Ríos Montt, Efraín, 265
 Rivas, Henrietta, 409–410
 Rivers, W. H. R., 592
 Robb, Charles, 46–47
 Robertson, John, 121
 Robertson Hospital, 121
 Robespierre, Maximilian, 167
 Roca Vilaseca, Juan, 4
 Rockwell, Norman, 477, 500
 Rodina (Homeland), 262
 Rodriguez, Corina, 281
 Rodriguez, Paula, 127 (photo)
 Roeder, Manfred, 526
 Roentgen, Wilhelm, 137
 Rogers, Edith Nourse, 611
 Rohe, Alice, 334
 Rojas de Moreno, María Eugenia, 127
 Rojas Pinilla, Gustavo, 127
 ROKWAC. *See* Republic of Korea Women's Army Corp
 Roland, Pauline, 195, 197
 Rolfe, Lilian, 493, 574
 Roma/Sinti (Gypsies), 228, 495–496
 Roman Catholic Church, 203, 398
 in Croatia, 659
 in France, 205
 French Wars of Religion, 197–198
 Jewish Catholics, 563
 in Spain, 557–558
 Roman Empire, 215
 Roman Republic, 219
 Roman women, 493–495
 Romania
 Balkan Wars, 50
 Queen Mary's Cross Medal, 393
 rape by Red Army in World War II, 479–481
 Second Balkan War, 582
 World War I, 393, 582
 Rome, Ancient, 123–124
 Rommel, Erwin, 211
 Rooney, William, 644
 Roosevelt, Eleanor, 124, 132, 383, 457, 496–497
 Roosevelt, Franklin D., 496
 criticism of, 383
 Executive Order 9066, 327, 362
 Executive Order 9102, 327
 Nurses Selective Service Act, 441
 and Philippines Insurrection, 464
 press coverage, 132
 and Women's Army Corps (WAC), 285, 619
 Roosevelt, Theodore, 558
 Rosas, Juan Manuel de, 219
 Rose, Thomsa, 625
 Rosenberg, Alfred, 524
 Rosenberg, Anna, 353

INDEX

- Rosenberg, Ethel, **497–498**
 Rosenberg, Julius, 497
 Rosenberg, Michael, 498
 Rosenberg, Robert, 498
 Rosenberg, Vera Maria, 34
 Rosencrans, William Starke, 122
 Rosenstrasse Protest, 228, **498–500**
 Rosie the Riveter, xxxiv, 247, 476–477, **500–501**, 501 (photo), 605
 Ross, Araminta, 599
 Ross, Ishobel, **501**
 Rosser, Helen, 353
 Rote Kapelle (Red Chorus), 355, 525
 Rouchy, Victorine, 455
 Rough Riders, 561
 Rowden, Diana, 34, 73, 372–373, 446, **502**
 Royal Air Force (RAF) (Britain), 239
 Air Ferrying Command, 124
 Air Ministry, 332
 Air Transport Authority, 333
 Air Transport Auxiliary (ATA), 242, 374–375
 Air Transport Service (ATS), 458
 Film Unit, 425
 Women’s Auxiliary Air Force (WAAF), 34, 236, 242–244, 268, 458, 493
 Women’s Royal Air Force (WRAF), xxxiv, 155, 214, 237, 239, 242, 268, 458
 Royal Army (Britain)
 Auxiliary Territorial Service (ATS), 242–244, 246–247, 268–269
 First Aid Nursing Yeomanry (FANY), 243, 373, 402, 425, 503, 574, 637
 Medical Corps, 295
 Motor Transport Service, 243
 nurses component, 430
 Special Air Services (SAS), 179
 Territorial Army Nursing Service, 242, 401
 Women’s Army Auxiliary Corp (WAAC), 155, 214, 235, 237, 239, 268, 447
 Royal Australian Army Medical Corps, 38
 Royal Australian Army Nursing Corps (RAANC), 37–38
 Royal Canadian Mounted Police, 642
 Royal Dutch Shell, 647
 Royal Flying Corps (Britain), 239
 Royal Irish Constabulary, 312
 Royal Marines (Britain), 249, 536
 Royal Naval Air Service (Britain), 239
 Royal Navy (Britain)
 accompanying women in 17th, 18th, and early 19th centuries, 244
 Women’s Royal Naval Service (WRNS), xxxiv, 155, 213–214, 239, 241, 244
 reorganization before World War II, **248–249**
 World War I, 235–237
 World War II, 242–243
 Royal Scots Greys, 244–245
 Royaumont Abbey Auxiliary Hospital, 274, 301
 Rozanova, Larissa, 539
 Rozanski, Eliyahu, 362
 RPF. *See* Rwandan Patriotic Front
 RTL. *See* Radio Télévision Libre de Mille Collines
 rubble women (*trümmerfrauen*), **596–597**, 596 (photo)
 Rudellat, Yvonne, **502–503**
 Rudneva, Evgeniia, 539, 553
 Rudninkai Forest, 346
 Ruff, Cheryl Lynn, xxvii
 Ruiz, Julián, 298
 Ruiz, Vicky, 410
Rundfunk, 39
 Russell, Bertrand, 97
 Russell, William Howard, 299, 430
 Russia
 Air Defense Forces (ADF), 506
 American women journalists who reported on, 334
 armed forces, **503–504**, **505–506**
 Civil War, 296, 542
 Code on Marriage, Family, and Guardianship (1918), 507
 Crimean War, 503
 Department for the Protection of Mother and Child, 507
 February Revolution, 507
 Heroes of the Soviet Union/Russian Federation, **551–556**
 Imperial Army, 357
 medical volunteers in, 179
 Napoleonic Wars, 156–157, 503
 October Revolution (1917), 334, 343–344, 386, 504, **506–508**
 Order of the Red Banner recipients, 542
 Order of St. George recipients, **504–505**
 People’s Commissariat for Labour, 507
 People’s Commissariat for State Welfare, 507
 Provisional Government, 504
 rape by Red Army in World War II, **479–481**
 women Heroes of the Soviet Union/Russian Federation, **551–556**
 World War I, 178, 504
 See also Soviet Union
 Russian Medical Aid and Comforts Committee, 567–568
 Russian-Turkish War, 92, 503
 Russo-Chechen wars, **103–106**, 104 (photo)

INDEX

- Russo-Finnish War, 70–71, 220
- Russo-Japanese War, 403–404
- Russo-Turkish War (1877), 572
- RVV. *See* Haarlemse Raad van Verzet
- Rwanda, 482, **508–511**
- Rwandan Patriotic Front (RPF), 509
- RWD-13, 374
- Ryan, Russell, 81–82
- Sabines, 494
- saboteuses*, 477
- Sachsenhausen concentration camp, 484
- SACP. *See* South African Communist Party
- sacrificial virgins, 257
- Sagar, Pearl, 602
- Sahgal, Lakshmi, 360
- Saigon, fall of, 374
- Saint Bartholomew's Day Massacre, 198
- Salamis, Battle of, 32
- Salas Pachacuti, Catalina, 17
- Salman, Suhayla, 308
- Salomon, Charlotte, **513–514**
- El Salvador, 365–366
- Salvation Army, XLVII, **514**
- Samoilova-Zemliachka, Rozaliia Samoilovna (Zalkind), 542
- Samson (Sampson), Deborah, **514–515**
- samurai, female, 326
- Samusenko, Aleksandra, 547
- San Francisco Bulletin*, 58, 334
- San Francisco Examiner*, 334
- Sánchez Manduley, Celia, xxxv, 134–136, **515–516**
- Sand, George, 195–196
- Sandes, Flora, xxxiii, 239, 278, 295, **516–517**, 516 (photo)
- Sandinista National Liberation Front (Frente Sandinista de Liberación, FSLN), 407–408, 426, 583
- Sandinista Popular Army, 427
- Sandinistas, 220, 265, 365, 407–408, 426
- Sandino, Augusto C., 426
- Sandperl, Ira, 44
- Sanitary Commission, 54
- sans-culotterie*, 207
- Sansom, Odette, 34, **518–519**, 518 (photo)
- Sansom, Roy, 518
- Santa Vitória, Battle of, 219
- Santamaría Cuadrado, Abel, 519
- Santamaría Cuadrado, Haydée, 134, 136, 281, **519**
- Santiago, Segunda Puentes, 558
- Santo Tomas Internment Camp (Philippines), 406
- São José do Norte, Battle of, 219
- Sarhili, 433
- SAS. *See* Special Air Services
- Sassoon, Siegfried, 592
- Satavahana Empire, 298
- Saturday Evening Post*, 334, 500
- Saudi Arabia, 306
- Gulf War (1990–1991), **266–267**
- Saumoneau, Louise, **520**
- Sauromatians, 12
- Savage, Clara, 334
- Savage, Sean, 180
- Savannah Republican* (Georgia), 116, 139
- Savitskaia, Svetlana, 552
- SAWN. *See* Spanish-American War Nurses
- The Scarlet Pimpernel* (Orczy), 449
- Scarlet Pimpernel of World War II, 637
- Scarlett, William, 277
- Schaft, Jeannetje Joanna (Hannie), **520–521**
- Schellenberg, Walter, 522
- Schelm, Petra, 485–486
- Schiller, Margrit, 44
- Schindler, Emilie, **521–522**
- Schindler, Oskar, 521
- Schmiderer, Othmar, 335
- Schmidt, Kitty, **522–523**
- Scholl, Hans, 523–524
- Scholl, Inge, 523
- Scholl, Sophie, 228, **523–524**
- Scholl, Werner, 523
- Scholtz, Günther, 524
- Scholtz-Klink (née Treusch), Gertrud, 228, **524–525**
- school battle, 435
- School for Danger* (RAF), 426
- Schroeder, Patricia, 83
- Schubert, Ingrid, 485
- Schultz, Sigrid, 334
- Schulze-Boysen, Harro, 90, 275, 355, 525
- Schulze-Boysen, Libertas, 355, **525–526**
- Schuyler, Eugene, 92–93
- Schuyler, George, 526
- Schuyler, Philip, 492
- Schuyler, Philippa, **526–527**
- Schwimmer, Rosika, **305–306**
- Scotland
- Glorious Revolution, 527–528
- Ulster Rebellion, 527
- war widows and refugees in, **527–529**
- Scott, Winfield, 11
- Scottish Women's Hospitals (SWH), 277–278, 295, **300–303**, 501
- 7th Medical Unit, 64
- ambulance service, 288, 300–301, 516
- formation of, 301
- Girton and Newnham Unit, 295, 341
- Transport Unit, 288
- Scottish Women's Hospitals Committee, 274
- Scottish Women's Suffrage Federation (SWSF), 301
- Scribner's*, 334
- Sea Rangers, 214
- Secord, James, 529
- Secord (née Ingersoll), Laura, **529–530**
- secret agents, XLVII–XLVIII
- See also specific women by name*
- Section B-II3, 495

INDEX

- Seeds for the Sowing* (Kollwitz), 344–345
- Seele, Erika, 530
- Seele, Gertrud, **530–531**
- Seele, Luise, 530
- Seele, Michaela, 530
- Seele, Paul, 530
- Selassie, Haile, 453–454
- Selective Service Act (1917) (U.S.), 604
- Selective Training and Service Act (1940) (U.S.), 129
- Self-Defense Patrols (Guatemala), 265
- self-help groups, 290
- Semmer, Marcelle, **531**
- Sender, Toni, 223
- Sendero Luminoso (the Shining Path; SL), **460–462**, 583
- Senesh, Hannah, **531–532**
- The Sentiments of an American Woman*, 489
- separation women, 311
- Sepei, Stompie Moeketsi, 391
- Sepoy Rebellion, **360–361**
- Serb militias, 658
- Serb-Bosnian war, 660
- Serbia, xxxii, 395
- Balkan Wars, 50, 482
- mother and bride imagery of militant nationalism in, **655**
- Scottish Women’s Hospital (SWH) service in, 277–278, **300–303**, 341
- U.S.-NATO bombing campaign against, 660
- Serbian army, 341, 482, 516–517
- Serbian Democratic Party, 470
- Serbian Red Cross, 516
- Serbian Red Cross Society, 278
- Serbian Relief Fund, 566
- Serbian Republic of Bosnia and Herzegovina, 470
- Sergeant, Elizabeth Shepley, 334
- Serra, Clementina, 135
- service organizations, xlvii
- See also specific organizations by name*
- Servicemen’s Dependents Allowance Act (U.S.), 129
- Settimo, Ruggero, 533
- Seventeen*, 103
- sex, 292
- Sex Hygiene and Birth Regulation Society (New Zealand), 381
- sex slavery, 161
- in Algeria, 482
- comfort women, **347–348**, 349
- forced labor in Nazi Germany, **191**
- in Rwanda, 510
- in Sudan, 570
- sexual violence, xxxi–xxxii
- sexual assault convictions during World War II, 612
- See also rape*
- sexually transmitted diseases, 244
- Seyss-Inquart, Arthur, 563
- Shabilina, A. P., 545 (photo)
- Shah of Iran, 177
- Shahidki battalions, 105
- Shahn, Ben, 477
- Shanghai, China, 295
- Shapovalov, F. K., 431
- Shapter, Elizabeth Blackall, 598
- Sharia* (Islamic law), 569
- Sharpe, Peter, 527
- Shastri, Lal Bahdur, 216
- Shaw, Anna Howard, 603
- Shaw, Irwin, 377
- Shawnee, 434
- Shcherbachevich, Volodia, 88
- Shechem, 330
- Sheldon, Mary M., 424
- shell shock, 592–593
- Shelley, Percy Bysshe, 255
- Sherman, William T., 121
- Sherrill, Frances, 424, 615
- Shestakov, Lev, 379
- Shiber, Etta, 377
- Shigenobu, Fusako, 583
- Shiite Muslims, 308–309, 368
- Shining Path, **460–462**
- Shipyard Diary of a Woman Welder* (Clawson), 377
- Shurtleff, Robert, 514–515
- Shiubhlaigh, Maire nic, 311
- Shooting the Russian War* (Bourke-White), 378
- Shore Leave* (Wakeman), 377
- Short, Eileen Frances, 472
- Shubert, Ingrid, 43–44
- Shulaikina, Lidiia, 546
- Shurtleff, Robert, 514–515
- Sicherheit einst (SD, Nazi Security Service), 522–523
- Sicilian revolutions, **532–534**
- Sidor, Jozef, 375
- Sieber, Rudolph, 152
- sieges, xlvii
- See also specific places, sieges by name*
- signalers, 447
- Simpson, Sir Henry, 33
- Since You Went Away ... Letters to a Soldier from His Wife* (Wilder), 377
- Sinclair, Jean, 66
- Singh, Beant, 218
- Singh, Satwant, 218
- Sinn Féin, 232, 311–312, 395, 419
- Irish Bulletin*, 313
- Standing Committee, 313 (photo)
- Sinti/Roma (Gypsies), 228, **495–496**
- SIP. *See* Sisterhood of International Peace
- Siranush, 30
- Sisa, Bartolina, 16–18
- Sisera, 329–330
- Sisterhood of International Peace (SIP), 416
- Sisulu, Walter, 187
- Six-Day War (1967 War), 20, 209
- Six-Triple-Eight battalion (U.S. WAC), 159–160
- Skarbek, Krystyna, 233, 473
- Skeffington, Frank Sheehy, 311
- Skeffington, Hanna Sheehy, 311

INDEX

- Skeffington, Mrs. Sheehy, 313
(photo)
- Skepper, Charles, 470
- Skinnider, Margaret, 310, 394
- Skłodowska, Manya, 136
- Skorzeny, Otto, 491
- SL. *See* Sendero Luminoso
- slave labor, 221
- slavery
abolition of, 599
American Civil War, 117
Uncle Tom's Cabin (Stowe),
566–567
See also sex slavery
- Slovak National Uprising, 490
- Slovenia, 658
- Slovo, Gillian, 186
- Slovo, Joe, 186
- Slovo, Shawn, 186
- Smirnova, Natalia, 540
- Smith, Constance Babington,
242
- Smith, Denis, 367
- Smith, Genevieve, 352
- Smith, Gerald L. K., 153
- Smith, Lillian, 378
- Smith, Winnie, 534
- The Smoking Mountain* (Boyle),
378
- Smyrna Tragedy survivors,
534–535
- Snell, Hannah, 245, 245 (illus),
536
- snipers, 457, 547
- Social Democratic Party (SPD)
(Germany), 223,
385–386, 592–593
- Socialist Party (Italy), 318
- Socialist Party (U.S.), 293
- Socialist Students League, 187
- Société de la *Voix des femmes*
(Society of the *Voice of*
Women), 195–196
- Society for Assistance to
Defense, Aviation, and
Chemical Industry
(Osoaviakhim), 545
- Society of Friends, 129
- Society of Revolutionary
Republican Women,
207
- Society of Spanish-American
War Nurses, 404
- Society of United Irishmen, 644
- Söhnlein, Horst, 43
- Sokolova, N. V., 546
- Soldiers', Sailors' and Airmen's
Families Association
(SSAFA) (Britain), 269
- Solf, Wilhelm, 52
- Solf Circle, 52
- Solomos, Dionysius, 251
- Sombart, Werner, 355
- Somoza García, Anastasio,
426–427
- Sone, Monica, 377
- Soong Quingling, 108
- Sophie, Duchess von
Hohenberg, 536–537
- Sorge, Richard, 355
- Sosnina, Nina Ivanovna, 556
- Sosnowska-Karpik, Irena,
537–538
- Souliè, Geneviève, 538
- Souliotisses, 251–252
- South Africa
African Mine Strike (1946),
186
apartheid, 186–187
assassination of Ruth First,
186
Boer War, 181, 232,
286–287
Eighth Frontier War, 433
Great Cattle Killing,
433–434
Indian Passive resistance
campaign, 186
Mandela United Football
Club (MUFC),
390–391
Seventh Frontier War, 433
Soweto uprising, 390
struggle against apartheid,
390
Treason Trial (1956), 187
Treaty of Vereeniging, 288
Women's Monument, 288
Zulu people, 125–126
- South African Communist Party
(SACP), 186
- South African Company, 126
- South African Women and
Children Distress Fund,
287
- South American independence
struggle against Spain,
40
- South Carolina, 14 (photo)
- South Korea, 353–354
- Southern Confederacy* (Atlanta),
119
- Southgate, Maurice, 650–651
- Soviet Resistance, XXXIV, XLVII,
88
- Soviet Union
31st Krasnosel'sky Guards
Bomber Regiment
(101st Long-Range Air
Regiment), 262
46th Taman Guards Bomber
Aviation Regiment, 387,
483, 538–539,
552–553
125th M. M. Raskova Borisov
Guards Bomber
Aviation Regiment, 182,
188, 483–484,
539–541, 553
586th Fighter Aviation
Regiment, 549–551
Air Defense Aviation, 547
Air Defense Forces (ADF),
547–549
Air Group No. 122, 182
Air Warning Service, 547
armed forces, 543, 544–549
Battle of Stalingrad, 550
declaration of war on
Bulgaria, 90
German invasion of, 222,
543
Heroes of the Soviet
Union/Russian
Federation, 551–556
intelligence service, 355–356
invasion of Afghanistan, 371
invasion of Germany, 229
invasion of Poland, 375
Kozel'sk POW Camp for
Polish Officers, 375
Krasnosel'sky Guards Bomber
Regiment, 262

INDEX

- Soviet Union (*cont.*)
 Leningrad Army of Air Defense, 547
 Military Service Law (1967), 548
 occupation of Berlin, 480
 Order of Glory, I Class recipients, 541–543
 Order of the Red Banner recipients, 542–543
 partisan cells, 88
 rape in World War II by, xxxii, 479–481
 Red Army, xxxii, 229, 479–481, 507
 Stalingrad-Vienna Guards Fighter Aviation Regiment, 379
 Volga Flotilla, 545 (photo), 546
 Vseobuch (Administration for Universal Military Training), 545
 Winter War of 1939–1940, 184, 185–186
 World War II homefront, 543–544
- Spain
 American suppression of Philippines Insurrection against, 464–467
 Andean Rebellion of the Eighteenth Century, 15–18
 antifascism in, 297
 Charter of Labor, 558
 Communist Party (CP), 297
 Nationalists, 178, 556–557
 Peninsular War, 423
 terrorist attacks in, 583
 War of Independence, 4–6
 Spanish Civil War, 178, 319, 556–558, 642
 Abraham Lincoln Battalion, 338
 coverage of, 220
 International Brigades, 642
 Second American Medical Unit, 339
 U.S. literature of, 378
 Spanish Red Cross, 559
- Spanish-American War, 403, 558–561
 entertainers, 654
 nurses, xxxiv, 591
 Society of Spanish-American War Nurses, 404
 Spanish-American War Nurses (SAWN), 559
 SPARs (*Semper Paratus*—Always Ready) (U.S.), 352, 611–612, 618–619
 Sparta, xxxii, 257, 561
 Spartacus League, 386
 Spartacus revolt, 385–386
 Spartan women, 561–562
 Spartacist movement, 223
 SPD. *See* Social Democratic Party
 Spears, Edward, 71
 Special Air Services (SAS) (Britain), 179
 Special Operations Executive (SOE) (Britain), 243, 340, 373, 502
 establishment of, 502–503
 F Section (France), 372, 425–426, 503. *See also* French Resistance
 Spetses, 255
 spies/secret agents/diplomatic services/women accused of spying, XLVII–XLVIII
See also specific women by name
 Spirin, I., 483
 spiritual resistance, 585–586
 Srebrenica massacre, 657 (photo), 659
 Sri Lanka conflict, 298, 580–581, 583
 SS *Aguila*, 241, 249
 SSAFA. *See* Soldiers', Sailors' and Airmen's Families Association
 Stachowiak, Illse, 44
 Stack, A., 313 (photo)
staffettas (messengers), 319
 Stage Door Canteen, 152
 Stalingrad, Battle of, 550
 Stambolic, Ivan, 395
 Standard Oil, 89
- Standing Fern, 107
 Staniliéne-Markauskene, Danute Jurgievna, 541
 Staritzka, Vera, 168
 Stark, Dame Freya, 562–563
 Starr, John, 502
 Starr, William C., 277
 Stassova, Yelena Dmitriyevna, 507
 Stationer network, 425, 650–651
 Staufenberg, Klaus von, 335
 Stebbing, E. P., 300–301
 Stein, Edith, 563–564
 Stein, Gertrude, 378
 Stein, Rosa, 563
Stern, 374
 Sternberg, George M., 404, 560
 Stimson, Henry, 620
 Stimson, Julia Catherine, 564–565, 564 (photo)
 Stobart, Mabel, 565–566
 Stokes, Graham, 293
 Stokes, J. G. Phelps, 293
 Stone, Lucy, 404
 Stonehouse, Brian, 73–74, 446, 502
 Stowe, Calvin, 567
 Stowe, Harriet Beecher, 566–567
Strange Fruit (Smith), 378
 Stratton, Dorothy C., 611, 618
 Street, Jessie, 567–568
The Street (Petry), 378
 Streeter, Ruth Cheney, 568–569, 609, 611
The Stricken Field (Gellhorn), 378
 Strong, Charles, 416
 Stryker, Roy, 89
 Sturm, Beate, 44
Stürmer, 413
 Stürmer, Boris, 9
 style, 125
 Su-2 aircraft, 540
 Suchet, Honorine, 423
 Suchet, Louis Gabriel, 423
 Sudanese civil war, xxxii, 114, 569–570
 Sudanese People's Liberation Army, 570
 Sudanese Women's Voice for Peace (SWVP), 570

INDEX

- Suetonius, 74–75
 Suez Crisis, 209
 suffrage movement, women’s,
 99–100
 Adult Suffrage Society, 286
 Bill of Rights March, 277
 in France, 195–196, 203
 in Germany, 224
 International Suffrage
 Alliance, 1
 International Woman
 Suffrage Conference
 (Washington, D.C.,
 1902), 231
 Iowa Woman Suffrage
 Association, 99
 National American Women’s
 Suffrage Association
 (NAWSA), 99
 National Union of Women’s
 Suffrage Societies
 (NUWSS) (Britain),
 181, 235
 World War I, 451
The Suffragette, 452
 Suffragettes (Women’s Social
 and Political Union—
 WSPU), 235
 Suffragists (National Union of
 Women’s Suffrage
 Societies—NUWSS),
 235
 Sugala of Sri Lanka, 298
 Suhren, Fritz, 484
 suicide bombers, xxxvi, 19
 Al-Aqsa Martyrs’ Brigade
 unit, 21 (photo)
 Black Widows, 104 (photo),
 584–585
 Chechen, 103, 104 (photo),
 105–106, 584–585
 Hamas, 315
 Islamic resistance movement,
 314
 Sultan, Tipu, 340
 Sumarokova, Tat’iana
 Nikolaevna, 539, 552
 Summerskill, Edith Clara,
 571–572
The Sun Was Darkened
 (Bryant), 378
 Sun Yat-sen, 108, 113
The Sunday Times, 374
 Sunni Muslims, 368
 Suratman, Tono, 160
 Surnachevskaia, Raisa, 550–551
 survivors, XLVIII
 *See also specific women by
 name*
 Sutherland, Donald, 190
 Suttill, Francis, 73
 Suttner, Arthur, 572
 Suttner, Baroness Bertha Sophie
 Felicita von, 572–573
 Svärd, Lotta, 184
 Svobod, Maria, 573
Swallow, 245
 Sweden, 354
 Sweetwater Municipal Airport
 (Texas), 38
 SWH. *See* Scottish Women’s
 Hospitals
 SWSF. *See* Scottish Women’s
 Suffrage Federation
 SWVP. *See* Sudanese Women’s
 Voice for Peace
 Symbionese Liberation Army,
 583
 symbols, XLVIII
 *See also specific symbols,
 countries by name*
 Symonds, John Addington, 213
 Symonds, Katherine, 213
 Syria
 Arab-Israeli wars, 20
 and civil wars in Lebanon,
 368, 584
 Fourth Syrian War, 258
 invasion of Jordan, 407
 Palmyra, 664
 World War II, 211
 Syrian War, 258
 Szabo, Etienne, 574
 Szabo, Violette, 34, 573–575,
 574 (photo)
 Szenes, Hannah, 531–532
 Szerynski, Josef, 362
 Sztachelska, Irena, 475
 Tackaberry, Robert, 577
 Tackaberry (Blake), Betty Guild,
 577–578
 Tagalog y Monson, Bernarda,
 465
 Talbot, Mary Anne, 578–579
*Tale of the Heike (Heike
 Monogatari)*, 326
Tales of the South Pacific
 (Michener), 377
 Talib, Aliya, 308
 Taliban Northern Alliance, 2–3
 Taliwa, Battle of, 639
 46th Taman Guards Bomber
 Aviation Regiment
 (Soviet Union). *See*
 Soviet Union, 46th
 Taman Guards Bomber
 Aviation Regiment
 Tamar, 579
 Tamil Tigers, 218, 580–581,
 584
 Tamils, 218, 580–581
 tank drivers, 547
 Tarabai, 299
 Tarasova, A. F., 545 (photo)
 Târgu Jiu, Romania, 582
 Tatier, Doris, 378
 Tat’ung School of Physical
 Culture, 113
 Tay Son, 631
 Taylor, George, 473
 Taylor, John, 578
 Taylor, Walter, 415
 Taylor, Zachary, 11, 72
 Tedder, Lord Arthur William,
 459
 Teke tribes, 268
 Ten Years of Spring
 (Guatemala), 264
 Teodoroiu, Ecaterina, 581–582
 Teodoroiu, Nicolae, 582
 Teresa Benedicta of the Cross,
 Sister, 563
 Tereshkova, Valentina, 506, 549,
 552
 Terrell, Mary Church, 445
 Territorial Army Nursing Service
 (Britain), 242, 401
 Territorial Defense Forces
 (Yugoslavia), 656
 terrorists, XLVIII, 582–585
 *See also specific women by
 name*

INDEX

- Teruel, French siege of, 5–6
 Terwiel, Maria, 585
 Testa di Lana (Wool Head), 533
Testament of Youth (Brittain), 85–86
 Tet Offensive, 209
 Texas Japanese internment camp, 327
 Thadden, Elizabeth von, 52, 585–586
 Thailand, 354
 Thanassekoou, Vasso, 254
 Thatcher, Margaret, 75, 176–177
 Thayer, Timothy, 515
 Theatre of Action, 642
 Theodosius the Great, 215
 Theresienstadt concentration camp, 291
 Theseus, 12
 Thiers, Adolph, 411, 455
The Thin Red Line (Jones), 377
 Thirty Years' War, xxxiii, 586–587
 Thomas, Danny, 152
 Thomas, Robert L., 144
 Thompson, Franklin, 161, 172
Three Who Came Home (Newton), 378
 Three Year Law (France), 634
 Thuku, Harry, 399
 Thuliez, Elizabeth, 100
 Thunderbolt Cherokee, 107
 Thurstan, Violetta, 128, 587
 Tietjens, Eunice, 334
 tigers, 217
 Tillion, Émilie (Cussac), 587
 Tillion, Germaine, 484, 587–588
Time, 374, 383
Times (London), 429
 Timofeeva, Anna Aleksandrovna (née Egorova), 467–468
 Timofeeva, Evgeniia, 188, 539
 titles for female officers, 239
 Tito, Condemaita, Tomasa, 17
 Tito, Marshal, 657–658
 To Dihn, 631
 Tobiasson, Stanley, 645–646
 Toguri d'Aquino, Iva Ikuko ("Tokyo Rose"), 588–590, 589 (photo)
 Tokyo, Japan, xxxiv
 "Tokyo Rose" (Iva Ikuko Toguri d'Aquino), 588–590, 589 (photo)
 Tolbukhin, F. I., 479
 Toma, Najiba Elias, 308
 Tomara, Sonia, 590–591
 Tompkins, Christopher, 121
 Tompkins, Maria Patterson, 121
 Tompkins, Sally Louisa, 121
 Tondi, Signora Alvina Albini, 321
 Toole, Susan, 645
 Tories, 275–276, 276 (illus)
Toronto Mail and Express, 561
 Torres, Camilo, 127
 Tortosa, French siege of, 5–6
 torture, 481–482
 Tower, Ellen May, 591
 transportable X-ray machines (Little Curies), 136–137
 Transvaal Committee, 232
 Trapp, Wilhelm, 652
 Travers, Susan, 594–595
 TRC. *See* Truth and Reconciliation Commission
 Treadwell, Sophie, 334
 Tredegar Iron Works, 49
 Treves, Sir Frederick, 565
 Trieu Thi Trinh, xxxi, 631
 Tristan, Flora, 197
 Trojan War, 12, 278–279
 Trotobas, Michael, 144
 Trotsky, Leon, 59
 Trotta, Liz, 595
 Trotter, Richard, 46–47
 the Troubles (Ulster), 601–602
 Troxell, Peter, 107
 Troy, Helen of, 278–279
 Troy, Paris of, 279
 Truman, Harry S, 496
trümmerfrauen (rubble women), 596–597, 596 (photo)
 Trung Nhi, 631
 Trung Trac, 631
 Trung Vuong, 631
 Trus, Kirill, 88
 Truth and Reconciliation Commission (TRC) (Peru), 462–463
 Tsagaroeva, Sveta, 106
 Tsaldari, Lina, 254
 T'Serclaes, Baron Harold, 598
 T'Serclaes, Baroness Elizabeth de (née Shapter), 113–114, 597–598
 Tsukudu, Adelaide, 390
 Tubman, Harriet, 117, 599
 Tubman, John, 599
 Tadjman, Franjo, 658
 Túpac Amaru, Andrés, 16
 Túpac Amaru, Andrés (Mendigure), 17
 Túpac Amaru, Cecilia, 17
 Túpac Amaru, José Gabriel, 16
 Túpac Amaru uprising (Peru), 15, 583
 Túpac Catari uprising (Charcas, present-day Bolivia), 15
 Tupamaros, 365–366
 Turkey
 Arab revolt against, 63
 Armenian Holocaust, 26–28
 Balkan Wars, 50
 defeat of Kosovo, 655
 invasion of Malta, 388–389
 Korean War, 354
 Kurdistan Worker's Party (PKK), 583
 The Massacre at Chios (Delacroix), xxxi
 Russian-Turkish War, 92, 503
 Smyrna Tragedy, 534–535
 Turkish irregulars, 91–93
 Turkmen tribes, 267–268
 Turkmenistan, 267
 Turnip Winter, 226
 Tuscany, Matilda of, 397–398
 Tutsis, genocidal assault against, 482, 508–511
 Two Year Law (France), 634
 Tyron, William, 384
 U-2 biplanes, 538
 UAW. *See* United Association of Women
 Udet, Ernst, 491
 Udugov, Movladi, 106
 Ufficio Notizie Militari (Office of Military News) (Italy), 321
 Uganda, 6–7, 510

INDEX

- Ukraine, rape by Red Army in
World War II, 479–481
- Ulster
Bloody Sunday, 601
the Troubles in, 601–602
- Ulster Rebellion, 527
- Umar, 7
- UNAIDS, 7
- Uncle Tom's Cabin* (Stowe),
566–567
- Undercover Girl* (MacDonald),
377
- Underground Railroad, 599
- Union Army (U.S.), xxviii, 120,
372
- Union of Fascists (Britain), 413
- Union of Italian Catholic
Women, 319
- Union of Italian Women, 319
- Union of Polish Patriots, 537
- Union of Women of the
Fatherland
(Vaterlandische
Frauenverein) (Kaiserin's
[Empress's] army)
(Germany), 225
- Union of Zemstva, 288
- United Association of Women
(UAW), 567
- United Democratic Front, 66
- United Farm Workers, 190
- United Front Against Fascism,
417
- United Fruit Company, 264
- United Kingdom
anti-nuclear weapon protests,
97–98
Falklands War, 176–177
Gulf War (1990–1991),
266–267
hydrogen bomb, 97
India and, 216–217
Korean War, 353–355
See also England; Great
Britain; Northern
Ireland; Scotland
- United Nations, 445
Commission on the Status of
Women, 254
Committee on
Decolonization, 370
and genocide in Rwanda, 510
Gulf War (1990–1991), 266
International Criminal
Tribunal for Rwanda,
482
Korean War, 353–355
peacekeeping forces, 659
sanctions against Iraq,
308–309
World Environmental
Conference
(Stockholm), 217
- United Nations Decade for
Women, 307
- United Nations Human Rights
Commission, 496
- United Pacifist Committee, 294
- United Panhellenic
Organization of Youth
(Eniaias Panelladikis
Organosis Neon,
EPON) (Greece), 249
- United Partisan Organization
(Fareynigte Partizaner
Organizatsie, FPO),
339, 346
- United Press International
(UPI), 526
- United Provinces of Río de la
Plata, 40
- United States
988th Military Police
Company, 82
Air Transport Command,
620
Alaska Territorial Guard
(ATG), 170
Alien Tort Claims Act, 348
American Red Cross,
487–489
arbitration movement,
404–405
Army Nurses' Pension Act,
120
atomic bombing of
Hiroshima and
Nagasaki, 283–284
biological warfare program,
65
Central Intelligence Agency
(CIA), 264, 272, 427
Civil War, xl, 54, 115–117,
380, 415
Battle of Bull Run, 625
The Boys in Blue (Hoge),
289
casualties, xxviii
Kilpatrick-Dahlgren raid,
625
Louisiana Red River
Campaign, xxviii
Mr. Babcock network,
625
Underground Railroad,
599
women combatants, xxxiii,
118–120
women disguised as men,
xxxiii
women in medical
services, 120–122
Civilian Public Service
(CPS), 129, 294, 608
colonial frontier wars, 434
Combat Exclusion Act, 266
combat restrictions, 267
Commission into Conditions
in Ireland, 312
Congressional Medal of
Honor, 639
conscientious objectors
during World War II,
128–130
Corps of Invalids, 130
declaration of war on
Germany, 602
declaration of war on Japan,
327
declaration of war on Spain,
403
Draft Law (1863), 117
Eisenhower administration,
264
Espionage Act, 604
Expeditionary Forces, xxvii,
175, 294, 439, 603
Federal Bureau of
Investigation (FBI), 327
Great Depression, 220
Gulf War (1990–1991),
266–267
industrial citizenship, 624

INDEX

- United States (*cont.*)
- invasion and occupation of
 - Germany, 378
 - invasion of Panama, 82–83
 - Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor, 324
 - Japanese Detention, 327–328, 363 (photo)
 - Japanese relocation centers, 327–328
 - Japanese surrender to, 328
 - Korean War, 353–355
 - Lanham Act, 607
 - medical specialist corps, 405–406
 - military conscription, 294
 - Military Police Company, 83
 - military service of women in World War II, 610–613
 - mobilization of American women during Korean War, 350–353
 - Mothers' Crusade to Defeat H.R. 1776, 153, 615
 - mothers' movement, 138, 153
 - Mothers of the U.S.A., 425
 - National Defense
 - Authorization Act (1991), 267
 - National Food
 - Administration, 603
 - National Labor Relations Board, 497
 - National Legion of Mothers of America (NLMA), 138, 153, 424–425, 615
 - National Service Board for Religious Objectors (NSBRO), 129
 - National War Labor Board, 607, 624
 - National War Service Act (Austin-Wadsworth Bill), 605
 - Nurse's Aide Corps, 488–489
 - Nurses Selective Service Act, 441
 - Office of Civilian Defense, 607
 - Office of Strategic Services (OSS), 71, 377, 607
 - Office of War Information (OWI), 89, 362, 477–478, 605, 607
 - Operation Just Cause, 82–83
 - opposition to World War II entry, 425, 615–616
 - Ordnance Department, 606
 - Patriotic Research Bureau, 615
 - Puerto Rican Nationalist Party attack on Congress, 369–370
 - Revolutionary War, xxviii, 641, 641
 - Battle of Monmouth, 414, 414 (illus)
 - British attack on Whitemarsh (attempted), 145–146
 - first battle, 47
 - Fort Randolph siege, 434
 - last battle, 663
 - role of women in, 13–15, 384, 396, 434
 - vivandières*, xxxiii
 - women intelligence riders, 14 (photo)
 - Rosie the Riveter, 500–501
 - Selective Service Act (1917), 604
 - Selective Training and Service Act (1940), 129, 605
 - Servicemen's Dependents Allowance Act, 129
 - Socialist Party, 293
 - strategic bombing of Japan, 324
 - suppression of Philippines
 - Insurrection against, 464–467
 - U.S.-NATO bombing campaign against Serbia, 660
 - Vietnam War, 626–630. *See also* Vietnam War
 - War Manpower Division, 605
 - War on Drugs, 128
 - War Relocation Authority (WRA), 327–328, 362–363
 - war resistance movement, 292–294
 - We, the Mothers Mobilize for America, 615–616
 - wives of frontier soldiers, 209–211
 - women in military service in World War II, 405–406
 - women journalists during World War I, 333–334
 - Women's Armed Services Integration Act, 350, 609, 612, 614
 - Women's Peace Party, 1, 99, 304, 402
 - women's suffrage movement, 99–100
 - Works Progress
 - Administration, 606
 - World War I entry, 402
 - World War I homefront, 602–605
 - World War II homefront, 89, 605–609, 606 (photo)
 - World War II literature, 377–379
 - World War II posters, 476–478
 - United States Air Force
 - Bomber Flight Test (BFT) Branch, 58
 - Ferrying Command Division, 620
 - Fighter Flight Test (FFT) Branch, 58
 - Gulf War (1990–1991), 266
 - Korean War, 351
 - Nurse's Aide Corps, 488
 - Women Airforce Service Pilots (WASP), 616–618. *See also* Women Airforce Service Pilots (WASP)
 - Women in the Air Force (WAF), 350, 612
 - Women's Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron (WAFS), 620–621

INDEX

- Women's Flying Training Detachment (WFTD), 124, 616, **621–622**
- United States Air Force Nurse Corps, 352
- United States Armed Forces, xxvii
- African Americans in, 159
- Induction Center (Oakland, CA), 45
- United States Army
- 7th Army, 282
- 38th Colored Infantry, 210
- Alaska National Guard, 170–171
- Direct Combat Probability Coding (DCPC) system, 82, 266
- Fifth United States Army Corps, 44
- frontier army, 210
- Gulf War (1990–1991), 266
- Hello Girls, **279–280**
- Medical Department, 405
- Mobile Army Surgical Hospital (MASH) Units, 351–352
- Reorganization Act, 404
- Signal Corps, 627
- Spanish-American War, 560 (photo)
- superintendent of nurses, 154
- Union Army, xxviii, 120, 372
- Women in the Air Force (WAF), 612
- Women's Army Auxiliary Corp (WAAC), xxxiv, 87, 159, 274, 284–285, 611–612, **619–620**
- Women's Army Corps (WAC), 86–87, 125, 159, 285, 350
- Women's Land Army, 607
- Women's Medical Specialist Corps, 406
- United States Army Corps of Nurses, 403
- United States Army Headquarters Europe (USAREUP), 44
- United States Army Nurse Corps (ANC), xxvii, 150, 339, 404, 560, 564 (photo), 565
- Korean War, 350–352, 354
- World War I, **439–441**
- World War II, **441–443**, 442 (photo)
- United States Army Reserve, 350
- United States Coast Guard, 611
- SPARs (*Semper Paratus—Always Ready*), 352, 611–612, **618–619**
- United States Committee for Relief in Ireland, 312
- United States Constitution, 99
- United States Department of Labor
- Women in Industry Service, 604, 624
- Women's Bureau, 624
- United States Embassy, Tehran, 595
- United States General Federation of Women's Clubs, 254
- United States Marine Corps (USMC), xxviii, 83, 568
- Ad-Hoc Committee on Increased Effectiveness of the Utilization of Women in the Marine Corps, 609–610
- Combat Action Ribbons, 266
- Gulf War (1990–1991), 266
- Korean War, 609–610
- in Lebanon, 103
- withdrawal from Nicaragua, 426
- Women Marine Program Study Group, 609–610
- Women Marines, 350
- World War II, 103
- United States Marine Corps Women's Reserve (MCWR), 568–569, **609–610**, 611–612
- United States National Guard, xxxvi
- United States Navy, 156
- Gulf War (1990–1991), 266
- Nurse Corps, xxvii, 352
- Women Accepted for Voluntary Emergency Service (WAVES; Navy Women's Reserve), 350, 352, 568, 609, 612, **614**
- United States Organizations (USO), 608
- United States Sanitary Commission, 115, 120, 380
- United States Signal Corps, **279–280**
- United States War Department
- Bureau of Public Relations, 285
- Japanese internment in U.S. camps by, 327
- women journalists during World War I, 333–334
- Universal Declaration of Human Rights, 496
- Universidad Popular de las Madres (Popular University of the Mothers), 25
- Unternährer, Yolande Elsa Maria, 59
- UPI. *See* United Press International
- Upper Peru, 40
- urban guerilla warfare, 43
- Urban II, 133
- Urbanovich, Iadviga, 546
- An Urgent Duty for Women*, 304
- Uris, Leon, 377
- URNG. *See* Guatemalan National Revolutionary Unity
- Uruguay
- civil war in, 219
- guerrilla combatants, 366
- independence struggle against Spain, 40
- Tupamaros, 365
- United Provinces of Río de la Plata, 40

INDEX

- Usher, Rebecca, 149
 USO. *See* United States
 Organizations
 Usov, Pavel Sergeievich, 178
 USPD. *See* Independent
 Socialist Party
 USS *Acadia*, 405
 USS *Benevolence*, 352
 USS *Consolation*, xxviii, 352
 USS *Constitution*, 83
 USS *Enterprise*, 217
 USS *Haven*, 352
 USS *Maine*, 559
 USS *Minnesota*, 49
 USS *Red Cross*, 408–409
 USS *Repose*, 352
 USS *Seminole*, 405
 Utah Japanese internment
 camps, 327
 Uthman, 7
- Vadalà, Giuseppina, 532
 Vadalà, Paolina, 532
 Vadim, Roger, 189
 VADs. *See* Voluntary Aid
 Detachments
 Valençay SOE Memorial, 48
 Valentinian III, 215
 Valerian, 664
 Valkyria, 583
 van Bredow, Countess Hanna,
 52
 van der Meulen, Antje, 397
 Van Devanter (Buckley), Lynda,
 623–624, 629
 Van Hying, Lyril Clark, 615
 van Kleeck, Mary, 604,
 624–625
 Van Lew, Elizabeth Louise,
 625–626
 van Pels, Auguste, 206
 van Pels, Hermann, 206
 van Pels, Peter, 206
 Vander-Boom, Kathleen, 351
Vanity Fair, 383
 Varuzhan, Daniel, 29
 Vaterlandische Frauenverein
 (Union of Women of
 the Fatherland)
 (Kaiserin's [Empress's]
 army) (Germany), 225
- Velpke children's home
 (Germany), 64
 Vembo, Sofia, 252
 Verdier, Jean-Antoine, 5
 Vereeniging, Treaty of, 288
 Versailles Treaty protest, 305
 Vesuvians, 195, 197
 Vesuviennes, 633
 Veterans Administration, 86–87
 Viannay, Hélène, 626
 Viannay, Philippe, 626
 Vichy France, 205
 Corps des Surveillantes
 Auxiliares (Corps of
 Auxiliary Inspectors),
 205
 French Resistance against,
 192–195
 and Marianne, 393
 Married Women's Work act,
 205
 National Revolution or
 Domestic Revolution,
 204
 regulation of prostitution,
 205
 Victoria, 261, 567
 Videla, Jorge Rafael, 23
 Vieques, Puerto Rico, 370
 Viet Cong, 631
 Vietnam, xxxv–xxxvi, 374
 anti-French resistance, 631
 Buddhist peace movement,
 630–631
 Chinese invasion of, 631
 Royal Australian Army
 Nursing Corps
 (RAANC), 38
 women in war and
 resistance before
 1954, 631–632
 Vietnam Veterans Against the
 War, 190
 Vietnam Veterans of America
 (VVA) Women's Project,
 623, 629
 Vietnam War, XLVIII, 103
 Battle of Dien-Bien-Phu,
 209
 casualties, xxviii
 combat photography, 373
 coverage of, 166, 220, 282,
 370–371, 595
 criticism of, 189–190
 Hill 881, 373
 *Home before Morning: The
 True Story of an Army
 Nurse in Vietnam* (Van
 Devanter), 623
 marines, 610
 nurses, 534, 627 (photo),
 628
 protests against, 403
 student protest movement
 against, 371
 Tet Offensive, 209, 373
 U.S. literature of, 377
 U.S. women soldiers in,
 626–630
 Vietnam Women's Memorial,
 629
 Vildé, Boris, 588
 Villa Trianon, 418
 Villaflor de Devicenzi, Azucena,
 24
 villagization, 400
 Villameur, Henri, 48
 Villard, Oswald Garrison, 293
 Vilna ghetto, 263, 339, 346
 Vinegar Hill, 645
 Vinogradov, Nikolai, 431
 "Violette." *See* Byck, Muriel
 Virginia, 15
 Visigoths, 215
vivandières (dispensers of food),
 xxxiii, 632–634, 633
 (photo)
 Vo Thi Sau, 631
Vogue, 383
 Voice of Women, 643
 Voilquin, Suzanne, 196–197
Voix des femmes (*Voice of
 Women*), 195–197
 Volga Flotilla (Soviet), 545
 (photo), 546
 Volkenrath, Elisabeth, 261
 Voluntary Aid Detachments
 (VADs) (Australia), 36
 Voluntary Aid Detachments
 (VADs) (Britain), 85,
 213–214, 236, 239,
 240 (photo)

INDEX

- Volunteer Army Military Service Code (Kokumi Giyu Heieiki Hou) (Japan), 325
- Vomécourt, Philippe de, 96
- von Bernstorff, Albrecht, 52
- von Bissing, Moritz Ferdinand, 397
- von Braun, Werner, 491
- von dem Bach-Zelewski, Erich, 162
- von Galen, August, 524
- von Greim, Robert Ritter, 491
- von Jagow, Traugott, 397
- von Losch, Maria Magdalene.
See Dietrich, Marlene
- von Miklos, Josephine, 377
- von Riedesel, Friederike
Charlotte Luise von Massow. *See* Riedesel, Friederike Charlotte Luise von Massow von
- von Suttner, Baroness Bertha Sophie Felicita. *See* Suttner, Baroness Bertha Sophie Felicita von
- von Thadden, Elizabeth. *See* Thadden, Elizabeth von
- von Trotha, Lothar, 280
- von Wedel, Hans Friedrich, 168
- Vorse, Mary Heaton, 334
- Vrtanessian, Arsenouhi, 535
- VVA. *See* Vietnam Veterans of America
- Vyner Brooke, 94
- WAAC. *See* Women's Army Auxiliary Corp
- WAAF. *See* Women's Auxiliary Air Force
- WAC. *See* Women's Army Corps
- Wachacha, Maggie Axe, 107
- WAF. *See* Women in the Air Force
- Waffen-SS (Der Führer), 447–448
- WAFS. *See* Women Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron
- Wahballat, 664
- Waiyaki, Wambui, 400
- Wake, Nancy, 73, 144, 637–638
- Wakeman, Frederic, 377
- Wakeman, Rosetta, XXVIII
- Wald, Lillian D., 293
- Walker, Alvah, 121
- Walker, Mary Edwards, 121–122, 638–639, 639 (photo)
- Wallace, Tilla, 239
- Walling, William English, 293
- Walsh, Adela Pankhurst, 451–454
- Walters, Bernice, XXVIII
- Walti, Werner Heinrich, 168
- Walworth, Ellen Hardin, 559
- Wang Huiwu, 108
- Wangarama, Wambui, 400
- War (Kollwitz), 344
- War Artists Advisory Committee, 247
- war babies, 236
- war correspondents, 220, 294, 367
- Korean War, 353
- Pulitzer Prize for, 282
- Spanish-American War, 561
- Vietnam War, 370–371
- World War I American women, 333–334
- World War II, 590
- Yom Kippur War, 371
- See also* photographers; *specific women by name*
- war crimes, XLVIII
See also specific crimes
- war criminals, XLVIII
See also specific women by name
- war godmothers (*marraines de guerre*), 200, 202
- war hysteria, 592–593
- War in Korea* (Higgins), 282
- war neurosis, 592–593
- war novels, 377
- War of 1812, 83, 529
- War of Independence (Ireland), 312
- war orphans, 202
- war posters, U.S., 476–478
- War Relocation Authority (WRA) (U.S.), 327–328, 362–363
- war resistance movement, 293–294
- War Resisters League (WRL), 292–294
- War Service for Women campaign (Britain), 237
- war services/women's reserves, XLIX
See also specific countries; specific reserves by name
- war supporters, XLIX
See also specific women by name
- War Tax Resistance Movement, 403
- war widows and refugees in Scotland, 1640s and 1688–1690, 527–529
- war work, XLIX
See also specific types of work
- Ward, Bryan (Briant), 639
- Ward, Mary, 449
- Ward, Nancy, 107, 639–640
- Warner, Jemima, XXVIII
- warriors, women
of Dahomey, 141–143, 142 (illus)
female samurai, 326
Fianna Fáil (Warriors of Destiny), 395
in India to 1857, 298–299
mujahedat (female holy warriors), 308
in Vietnam before 1954, 631
- Warriors of Destiny (Fianna Fáil), 395
- wars, XLVIII–XLIX
- Wars I Have Seen* (Stein), 378
- Wars of Religion (France), 197–198
- Warsaw Ghetto Uprising, 361–362, 471
- Warsaw Pact, 656
- Wartenburg, Countess Marion Yorck von. *See* Yorck von Wartenburg, Countess Marion

INDEX

- Wartime Civil Control Authority (WCCA) (U.S.), 327
Wartime Shipyard: A Study in Social Disunity (Archibald), 377
 Washington, George, 14–15, 146, 212, 489
 and Catharine Littlefield Greene, 259
 and Martha Washington, 641
 and Molly Pitcher, 414
 Washington, Marguerite Pat Beauchamp Waddell, 640–641
 Washington, Martha Dandridge Custis, 258, 641–642
 Washington Japanese internment camps, 327
 WASP. *See* Women Airforce Service Pilots
 Wass, Emma, 448
 Watson, Clement G., 382
 Watts, Jean, 642–643
Wave Me Goodbye, Stories of the Second World War (Parker), 379
 WAVES. *See* Women Accepted for Voluntary Emergency Service
 WCCA. *See* Wartime Civil Control Authority
 We, the Mothers Mobilize for America, 615–616
 “We Can Do It,” 500, 501 (photo)
The Weavers’ Rebellion (Kollwitz), 344
 Weber, Marianne, 223
 Weber, Max, 355
 WEC. *See* Women’s Emergency Corps
 Wehrmacht (German Armed Forces)
 Das Reich SS Armored Division, 447–448
 Einsatzgruppen (Special Action Groups), 162–163, 163 (photo), 495
 Galacia Waffen (SS), 490
 loyalty to Hitler, 221
 Oradour-sur-Glane massacre (France), 447–448
 Waffen-SS (Der Führer), 447–448
 World War II atrocities, 221–222
 Weil, Jacques, 446
 Weimar Republic, 222–223
 Weiner, Samuel B., 371
 Weir, William, 155
 Weissenberg, Catherine, 79
 Wenzel, Herbert, 284
 Werewolf Trial (Aachen, Germany), 284
 Werner, Ruth (Sonja), 355–356
 Wertheimer, Martha, 643
 West German Red Army Faction (RAF), 43, 485–486
 Western Abenaki, 157
 Wexford rising, 644–645
 WFTD. *See* Women’s Flying Training Detachment
 Wharton, Edith, 334
 WHC. *See* Women’s Hospital Corps
 WHD. *See* Women’s Home Defence Corps
 Wheatless Wednesdays, 603
 White Cross, 312
 White Feather, Order of the, 449
 the White Hand (*La Mano Blanco*), 264
 White Lotus Society, 113
 White Mouse, 637
 White Rose movement, 228, 523–524
 White Squaw of Kanawha, 47
 Whitlock, Brand, 61
 Whitney, Eli, 259
 Whittle, Reba Zitella, 645–646
Why Women Cry, or Wrenches with Wrenches (Hawes), 377
 Widows, Orphans, and the Disabled Rehabilitation Association of New Sudan (WODRANS), 570
 Wiesenthal, Simon, 82
The Wild Place (Hulme), 378
 Wilder, Margaret Buell, 377
 Wilhelm II, 536–537
 Wilhelmina, Queen of the Netherlands, 646–647, 646 (photo)
 Wilkie, Marion, 528
 Wilkie, Wendell, 424
 Wilkinson, George, 493
 Wilkomierz Riflemen (Poland), 469
 William X, 165
 Williams, Betty, 458, 602
 Williams, Jody, 647–648
 Williams, Laura J., 116
 WILPF. *See* Women’s International League for Peace and Freedom
 Wilson, Katherine, 350
 Wilson, Sloan, 377
 Wilson, Woodrow
 and American Red Cross, 488
 Fourteen Points, 306
 and ICWPP, 304
 International Manifesto of Women to, 305–306
 Women in Industry Service (U.S. Department of Labor), 624
 and World War I, 178
Wine of Astonishment (Gellhorn), 378
 Winema, (Tobey Riddle), 648–649
Wingate, 211
 Wings Across America, 457
 Winnemucca, Sarah, 649–650, 650 (photo)
 Winrod, Gerald, 153
 Winsor, Kathleen, 379
 Winter, Marion, 653
 Winter Soldier Investigation (Vietnam Veterans Against the War), 190
 Winter War, 184, 185–186, 594
 wireless operators, 340
 Wirz, Henry, 56
 Witbooi, Hendrik, 280
 “Witch of Buchenwald,” 342
 Witherington, Pearl, 650–651
 Witherspoon, Frances, 293, 604

INDEX

- wives of frontier soldiers, 209–211
- wives of Napoleon’s marshals, 422–424
- WLV. *See* Women’s League of Voters
- WMCR. *See* Women’s Marine Corps Reserve
- WNSL. *See* Women’s National Service League
- WNWRA. *See* Women’s National War Relief Association
- Wobblies (Industrial Workers of the World), 604
- WODRANS. *See* Widows, Orphans, and the Disabled Rehabilitation Association of New Sudan
- Wohlauf, Julius, 651–652
- Wohlauf, Vera, 651–652
- Wojtulanis, Barbara, 375
- Wolanin, Janina, 476
- Wolff, Helena, 471
- Wollcombe, Dame Jocelyn, 249
- The Woman’s Dreadnought*, 453
- Woman’s Journal*, 404
- Woman’s Peace Party, 405
- Women Accepted for Voluntary Emergency Service (WAVES; Navy Women’s Reserve) (U.S.), 611, 614
- Korean War, 350, 352
- World War II, 612
- Women against the Invasion of Lebanon, 22
- Women Airforce Service Pilots (WASP) (U.S.), 38, 57–58, 87–88, 102, 144, 457, 616–618
- admission to, 456
- combined program, 620
- Ferrying Division, 616 (photo)
- formation of, 124–125, 622
- National WASP World War II Museum, 457
- uniforms, 125
- Wings Across America, 457
- World War II, 612
- Women Auxiliary Ferrying Squadron (WAFFS) (U.S.), 124, 616, 620–621
- women combatants, XL–XLI
- 17th, 18th, and early 19th century Great Britain, 244–245
- agents, 243
- American Civil War, 118–120
- in Army of the West, 119
- in Colombia, 127
- Gulf War (1990–1991), 266
- titles for female officers, 239
- World War II, 243, 548
- See also* women warriors; *specific women by name*
- “Women for Life on Earth,” 98
- Women for Wafa Idris Martyr’s Brigade, 315
- Women for Women Political Prisoners, 20
- Women in Black, 20
- Women in Industry Service (U.S. Department of Labor), 604, 624
- Women in Military Service for America Memorial Foundation, xxviii
- Women in the Air Force (WAF) (U.S.), 350, 612
- Women Investors Research Institute, 138
- Women Marine Program Study Group, 610
- Women Marines (U.S.), 350
- Women of the First Circle, 22
- Women Ordnance Workers, 606
- Women Strike for Peace, 45–46
- Women Together, 602
- Women Transforming Themselves and Society, 660
- The Women Voter*, 231
- Women Waging Peace, 660
- women warriors
- Amazon battalions (French Revolution), 208
- Amazons, 12–13, 256–257
- in ancient and medieval Japan, 326–327
- of Dahomey, 141–143, 142 (illus)
- female samurai, 326
- Fianna Fáil (Warriors of Destiny), 395
- in India to 1857, 298–299
- Jewish women of antiquity, 329–331
- mujahedat* (female holy warriors), 308
- in Vietnam before 1954, 631
- Women Writers Suffrage League, 273
- Women’s Action Committee for Victory and Lasting Peace, 100
- Women’s Armed Services Integration Act (U.S.), 350, 609, 614
- Women’s Army Auxiliary Corp (WAAC) (Britain), 155, 214, 235, 237, 239, 268, 447
- Women’s Army Auxiliary Corp (WAAC) (U.S.), xxxiv, 87, 159, 274, 619–620
- establishment of, 284–285, 611
- training centers, 285
- veterans’ benefits for, 285
- World War II units, 611–612
- Women’s Army Corps (WAC) (US), 86–87, 125, 611
- establishment of, 285, 619
- first all-black unit, 159
- Korean War, 350–351
- Six-Triple-Eight battalion, 159–160
- World War II, xxvii
- World War II units, 611–612
- Women’s Auxiliary (Ohio National Guard), 294
- Women’s Auxiliary Air Force (WAAF) (Britain), 34, 236, 242–244
- development of, 268
- World War II, 458, 493
- Women’s Auxiliary Corps (India)—WAC(I), 77

INDEX

- Women's Battalion of Death (1st Petrograd Women's Battalion) (Soviet Union), 58, 68–70, 503–504, 504 (photo)
- Women's Centers (Palestine), 21
- Women's Central Association of Relief, 67
- Women's Central Relief Association, 115
- Women's Christian Temperance Union, 99
- women's clubs, 208
- Women's Corps (Chel Nashim) (Israel), 20, 317
- Women's Defence of the Constitution League, 66
- Women's Defense Corps (China), 111 (photo)
- Women's Defense Groups (Italy), 319–320
- Women's Emergency Corps (WEC) (Britain), 33, 113, 237, 277
- Women's Employment Service (Theresienstadt concentration camp), 291
- Women's Flying Training Detachment (WFTD) (U.S.), 124, 616, 621–622
- Women's Forum for Social and Economic Reconstruction, 567
- Women's Freedom League, 273
- Women's Guild of Service (India), 338
- Women's Home Defence Corps (WHD) (Britain), 571–572
- Women's Hospital Corps (WHC) (Britain), 18–19
- Women's International Committee for Permanent Peace, 49
- Women's International League for Peace and Freedom (WILPF), 49–50, 129, 305, 344, 405, 445–446, 453
- Australian section, 417
- Pennsylvania branch, 445
- U.S. Section, 150–151
- Women's Land Army (U.S.), 607
- Women's League of Voters (WLV), 99–100
- Women's Legion (Britain), 237
- Women's Marine Corps Reserve (WMCR) (U.S.), 568–569
- Women's Martí Civic Front, 135
- Women's Medical College (New York Infirmary), 67
- Women's Medical Specialist Corps (U.S.), 350, 406
- Women's Movement of Christian Democracy (Italy), 319
- Women's National Committee to Keep the U.S. Out of War, 138, 425, 615
- Women's National Press Club, 133
- Women's National Salvation Association (CCP), 111–112
- Women's National Service League (WNSL), 565–566
- Women's National War Relief Association (WNWRA) (U.S.), 559
- Women's Organization (Frauenschaften) (Germany), 525
- Women's Party (Israel), 22
- Women's Peace Army (WPA), 231
- Women's Peace Net, 20
- Women's Peace Party (U.S.), 1, 99, 304, 402
- Women's Peace Society, 293
- Women's Peace Union, 293
- Women's Political Association, 231
- Women's Prisoners Defence League (Ireland), 232
- Women's Project (VVA), 623, 629
- Women's Relief Corps, 591
- Women's Reserve Ambulance Corps (Britain), 277
- Women's Royal Air Force (WRAF) (Britain), 155, 214, 237, 239, 242, 458
- development of, 268
- formation of, xxxiv
- Women's Royal Naval Service (WRNS) (Britain), xxxiv, 155, 213–214, 239, 241, 244
- reorganization before World War II, 248–249
- World War I, 235–237
- World War II, 242–243
- Women's Service Integration Act (1948) (U.S.), 612
- Women's Sick and Wounded Convoy Troops (WSWCT), 565
- Women's Social and Political Union (WSPU) (Britain), 18–19, 235, 273, 451–452
- Britannia*, 452
- The Suffragette*, 452
- women's suffrage movement, 99–100
- Adult Suffrage Society, 286
- Bill of Rights March, 277
- in France, 195–196, 203
- in Germany, 224
- International Suffrage Alliance, 1
- International Woman Suffrage Conference (Washington, D.C., 1902), 231
- Iowa Woman Suffrage Association, 99
- National American Women's Suffrage Association (NAWSA), 99
- National Union of Women's Suffrage Societies (NUWSS) (Britain), 181, 235
- World War I, 451
- Women's Suffrage Society (Britain), 268

INDEX

- Women's Union (UFR) (Cuba), 135
- Women's Voluntary Services for Civil Defense, 64, 571–572
- Women's Volunteer Force (Britain), 237
- Women's Volunteer Labor Corp (Korea), 349
- Women's Volunteer Labor Corps Work Ordinances (Joshi Teishintai Kinrou Rei) (Japan), 325
- Women's Volunteer Reserve (Britain), 277
- Women's Volunteer Service (WVS) (Britain), 246
- Women's War Service Auxiliary, 64
- Women's Work (Frauenwerk) (Germany), 525
- Women's Work Committee (WWC), 21
- Women's Workers' Movement (WWM), 21–22
- Women's World Committee against War and Fascism, 453
- Wonder Woman, 13
- Wooden, John P., 350
- Woodrose, Operation (India), 218
- Woodward, Mary, 382
- Woofteds. *See* Women's Flying Training Detachment (WFTD)
- Wool Head (Testa di Lana), 533
- Wooster, David, 385
- Worker-and-Peasant Red Guard (North Korea), 354
- Workers' Challenge Radio, 359
- The Worker's Dreadnought*, 453
- Workers' Socialist Federation, 453
- Workers' Suffrage Federation, 453
- Working Girls' Vacation Association, 418
- Works Progress Administration (U.S.), 606
- World Association of Girl Guides and Girl Scouts, 214
- World Disarmament Movement, 417
- World Peace Conference, 568
- World Peace Council, 568
- World War I, XXVII–XXVIII, 531
- Ally refugees, 178
- American Red Cross, 487–489
- American women journalists during, 333–334
- antiwar protests, 303–305
- Australian Army Nursing Service (AANS), 37
- Casualty Clearing Stations, 175
- French homefront, XXXII–XXXIII, 200–204, 201 (photo)
- French Resistance, 417
- German Armed Forces atrocities, 221
- German homefront, 224–226
- Hello Girls, 279–280
- Italian homefront, 321–322
- medical volunteers, 179
- munitionettes*, 201–202
- nurses, XXXIV
- Nye Commission, 151
- opposition to, 288
- Pervyse dressing station (Belgium), 597–598
- poetry, 98–99
- psychological impact on French women, 199–200
- rape, XXXI–XXXII
- Salvation Army, 514
- Scottish Women's Hospitals (SWH), 277, 300–303
- Smyrna Tragedy, 534–535
- social impact on women in Great Britain, 235–236
- start of, 536–537
- Testament of Youth* (Brittain), 85–86
- trauma and brutalization unleashed by, 592–594
- U.S. antiwar activity, 293
- U.S. Army Nurse Corps (ANC), 439–441
- U.S. domestic base operations, 155–156
- U.S. homefront, 602–605
- women disguised as men in, XXXIII
- women in service in Belgium, 60–62
- women in service in Great Britain, 237–241, 238
- women in service in Italy, 321–322
- women's suffrage movement, 451
- World War II, XXVII–XXVIII
- American Red Cross, 487–489
- Australian Army Nursing Service (AANS), 37
- Australian women in service during, 36–37
- Banka Island Massacre, 93–94
- Battle for Berlin, 547–548
- Battle of Bir Hakeim, 594
- Battle of France, 71
- Battle of Kursk, 551
- Battle of Lenino, 475
- Battle of Moscow, 554
- battle of Oberwald, 432
- Battle of Stalingrad, 550
- Battle of the Meuse, 71
- Belgian Resistance, 147
- Bulgaria, women and, 90–91
- China home front, 110–112
- concentration camps, 291–292
- conscientious objectors in U.S. during, 128–130, 294
- convictions for sexual assault during, 612
- coverage of, 220
- Czech Resistance, 271
- effort against Axis powers, 57
- Europe in the Spring* (Luce), 383

INDEX

- World War II (*cont.*)
 French homefront, 204–206
 French Resistance, 192–195.
 See also French Resistance
 German Armed Forces
 (Wehrmacht) atrocities, 221–222
 German homefront, 227–229
 German Resistance, XLVI, 342, 415, 428, 525, 585
 as “Great Patriotic War,” 548
 images of women in U.S. posters, 476–478
 Italian Resistance, 318–320, 320 (photo)
 Japanese Detention or internment, 362, 363 (photo)
 Japanese homefront, 323–325
 Jewish resistance, 146–147
 Jewish women during Holocaust, 290–292
 Korean homefront, 349
 Mexican American women in, 409–411
 North African campaigns, 406
 Norwegian homefront, 436–437
 Norwegian resistance, 435–436
 nurses, XXXIV
 opposition to U.S. entry, 425, 615–616
 Polish resistance against, 471–473
 rape by Red Army, XXXII, 479–481
 Rosie the Riveter, 500–501
 Soviet homefront, 543–544
 Soviet partisan cells, 88
 Soviet underground resistance, 88
 U.S. Army Nurse Corps (ANC), 441–443
 U.S. atomic bombing of Hiroshima and Nagasaki, 283–284
 U.S. homefront, 605–609
 U.S. literature, 377–379
 U.S. military service of women in, 610–613
 U.S. poster campaign, 477
 U.S. prisoners of war, 645
 U.S. women in military service in, 405–406
 US homefront, 89
 war correspondents, 590
 Werewolf Trial, 284
 women Heroes of the Soviet Union/Russian Federation, 552
 women in service during, XXXIV–XXXV
 women in service in Great Britain, 241–244
 women in the military in Yugoslavia, 655–656
 Worldwide Committee of Women against War and Fascism, 557
 WPA. *See* Women’s Peace Army
 WRAF. *See* Women’s Royal Air Force
 WRENS. *See* Women’s Royal Naval Service
 Wrens. *See* Women’s Royal Naval Service
 Wrestler network, 651
 Wright, Laura Beltz, 170
 Wright, Orville, 58
 Wright, Rawdon, 77
 Wright Field, 58
 writers, XLIX
 See also specific women by name
 WRL. *See* War Resisters League
 WRNS. *See* Women’s Royal Naval Service
 WSPU. *See* Women’s Social and Political Union
 WSWCT. *See* Women’s Sick and Wounded Convoy Troops
 Wu Chao, 113
 WVS. *See* Women’s Volunteer Service
 WWC. *See* Women’s Work Committee
 WWM. *See* Women’s Workers’ Movement
 Wyoming Japanese internment camps, 327
 Xerxes I, 31–32
 Xhosa (South Africa), 433–434
 Xiang Jianguy, 108
 XP-59A, 58
 XP-82, 58
 X-ray machines, portable (Little Curies), 136–137
 XU, 436
 Ya’akobi, Keren, 318
 Yamada, Kinko, 283
 Yamamoto, Hisaye, 377
 Yassin, Sheik, 315
 Yatsushiro, 326
 Yeats, William Butler, 232
 Yehuda, Nativa Ben, 316
 Yeltsin, Boris, 103
 Yemen, 562
 Yishuv, 490
 YMCA. *See* Young Men’s Christian Association
 Yolande of Aragon, 331
 Yom Kippur War, 371, 595
 Yorck von Wartenburg, Count Peter, 653
 Yorck von Wartenburg, Countess Marion, 653
 Yoriye, 326
 Young, John, 502
 Young Communist League (Komsomol), 387, 431, 545
 Young Germans, 523
 Young Guard (HaShomer HaTzair; Jewish Self-Defense/Jewish Armed Group), 263, 339, 346, 362, 490

INDEX

- The Young Lions* (Shaw), 377
 Young Men's Christian Association (YMCA), 288
 World War I, **654**
 Young Turks (Committee of Union and Progress), 26–28
 Yount, Barton Kyle, 621
 Youth Guard (HaShomer HaTzair; Jewish Self-Defense/Jewish Armed Group), 263, 339, 346, 362, 490
 Yovitchitch, Milan, 341
 YP-59A, 58
 Yudenich, Yuri, 517
 Yugoslav People's Army, 656
 Yugoslavia, xxxii, xxxiv–xxxv, 412
 disintegration of, **656–661**
 mother and bride images of militant Serbian nationalism, **655**
 Partisan resistance to German occupation of, 356, 655
 rape in, 483
 Territorial Defense Forces, 656
 women in the military during World War II, **655–656**
 Yunis, Manal, 307–308
 Yunnan Women's Battlefield Service Unit, 111
 Zabdas, 664
 Zaire, 509
 Zaluski, Karol, 469
 Zambrano, Laura, 461
 Zane, Elizabeth (Betty), **663–664**
 Zane, Margaret, 350–351
 Zangrandi, Giovanna, 319
 Zapatistas (EZLN), 364
 Zaragoza, French siege of, 4–6
 Zaruhi, 30
 Zawadzka, Halina, 475
 Zedkin, Clara, 520
 Zelenko, Ekaterina Ivanovna, 552
 Zelle, Adam, 397
 Zemi Naga people, 76–77
 Zena the Warrior Princess, 13
 Zenobia, Queen of Palmyra, **664**
 “Zero Hour,” 589
 Zetkin, Clara, 223
 Zhenotdel (Bolshevik Party women's division), 506
 Zhou Enlai, 108
 Zhurkina-Kiek, Nadezhda (Nadia) Aleksandrovna, 541
 Zietz, Luise, 223
 Zionist Organization of Slovakia, 490
 Znwbya Bat Zabbai, 664
 Zoss, Ann B., 351
 Zubkova, Antonina (Tonia) Leont'evna, 182, 553
 Zulu people, 125–126
 Zuroff, Efraim, 335

ABOUT THE EDITOR

Bernard Cook is Provost Distinguished Professor of History at Loyola University New Orleans. After studying at the Gregorian University in Rome and at the University of Marburg on a Fulbright Fellowship, he received his PhD in modern European history from Saint Louis University. He is the author of *Belgium: A History* and editor of *Europe since 1945: An Encyclopedia*.

RH